THE

HISTORY

OF

THE UNITED STATES

OF

NORTH AMERICA,

FROM THE

PLANTATION OF THE BRITISH COLONIES

TILL

THEIR ASSUMPTION OF NATIONAL INDEPENDENCE.

By JAMES GRAHAME, LL. D.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

SECOND EDITION, ENLARGED AND AMENDED.

PHILADELPHIA:
BLANCHARD AND LEA.
1852.

Entered according to act of Congress, in the year 1845, by
LEA AND BLANCHARD,
in the Clerk's office of the District Court for the Eastern District of Pennsylvania.

Printed by T. K. & P. G. Collins.

CONTENTS

OF

THE SECOND VOLUME.

BOOK VIII.

PROGRESS OF THE STATES OF NORTH AMERICA, TILL THE FOUNDATION OF GEORGIA, IN 1733.

CHAPTER I.

The American Provinces dissatisfied with the Fruits of the British Revolution. — Affairs of Virginia and Maryland. — Character and Policy of Governor Nicholson. — Affairs of Massachusetts. — Administration of Lord Bellamont — and of Dudley. — Queen Anne's War. — Policy of New York. — Affairs of Connecticut. — Attempts to subvert her Charter. — Invasion of South Carolina. — Progress of the War in New England. — Indian Embassy to Britain. — Conquest of Port Royal and Acadia. — Invasion of Canada by a British and Provincial Force. — Failure of the Expedition. — Indian War in North Carolina. — Affairs of New York. — Peace of Utrecht. — Effects of the War in New England. — British Legislation. 1

CHAPTER II.

Affairs of Virginia. — Passage across the Appalachian Mountains ascertained. — Affairs of New England. — Attempt to subvert the New England Charters. — Indian War in South Carolina. — Affairs of Pennsylvania. — Administration of Sir William Keith. — Affairs of Carolina. — Piracy on the American Coasts. — Theach, or Blackbeard, the Pirate. — Revolt of South Carolina against its Proprietary Government. — Affairs of New York. — Administration of Burnet. — South Sea Scheme and commercial Gambling in Britain. — Affairs of New England. — Administration of Shute. — Disputes — and War with the Indians. — Massachusetts incurs the Displeasure of the King — and receives an explanatory Charter. — Dispute respecting fixed Salary between the Assembly and royal Governor — terminates in Favor of the Assembly. — Affairs of New York. — Transactions in Carolina. — Surrender of the Charter of Carolina to the Crown. — Affairs of Pennsylvania. — British Legislation. — Bishop Berkeley's Project. . 41

APPENDIX II.

State of Population, Laws, Trade, and Manners in the North American Provinces. — Virginia. — New England. — Comparison of New England and Canadian Manners. — Maryland. — Carolina. — New York. — New Jersey. — Pennsylvania and Delaware. — The Tunkers. 90

33216

BOOK IX.

PLANTATION AND PROGRESS OF GEORGIA, TILL THE YEAR 1752.

Unpeopled and defenceless State of the southern Frontier of Carolina. — Situation of imprisoned Debtors in England — Colonization of Georgia suggested for their Relief — by Oglethorpe. — The Moravian Brethren — agree to send a Detachment of their Society to Georgia. — Royal Charter of Georgia. — First Resort of Emigrants to the Province. — Oglethorpe's Treaty with the Indians. — Legislative Constitutions enacted by the Trustees of Georgia. — Negro Slavery prohibited. — John and Charles Wesley — accompany Moravian Emigrants to the Province. — Emigration of Scotch Highlanders. — Discontents in the Colony. — The Scotch Colonists remonstrate against Negro Slavery. — Negro Insurrection in South Carolina. — Spanish War. — The Moravians forsake Georgia. — Oglethorpe's Invasion of Florida. — The Spaniards invade Georgia — and are foiled by Oglethorpe — who returns to England. — Change in the civil and political Constitution of Georgia. — Flourishing State of South Carolina. — Surrender of the Charter of Georgia to the Crown — and Introduction of Negro Slavery. — Condition of Georgia — Trade, Manners, &c. 109

BOOK X.

PROGRESS OF THE STATES OF NORTH AMERICA, TILL THE PEACE OF PARIS, IN 1763.

CHAPTER I.

Affairs of New York. — Zenger's Trial. — Prosperous State of New England. — Controversy between Massachusetts and New Hampshire. — Intrigues for the Removal of Governor Belcher. — New England Missions. — Jonathan Edwards. — David Brainerd. — Affairs of Pennsylvania. — Benjamin Franklin. — George Whitefield. — Disputes respecting a military Establishment. — Discontent of the Indians. — War with France. — Louisburg — the Invasion of it projected by New England — and undertaken. — Siege — and Surrender of Louisburg. — Jealousy of Britain. — Effects of the Enterprise in America. — Rebellion in Behalf of the Pretender in Britain. — Armament despatched from France against the British Colonies — discomfited. 113

CHAPTER II.

Progress of the War. — Tumult excited by naval Impressment in Boston. — Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle. — Regulation of Paper Currency in New England. — Policy of the British Government relative to America. — Political Sentiments and Speculations of the Americans. — Condition of America, and miscellaneous Transactions. — Origin of Vermont. — The Ohio Company. — American Science and Literature. 182

CHAPTER III.

View of the colonial Dominion and Policy of Britain and France in America. — Renewal of Disputes between the French and English Colonists. — Hostilities on the Virginian Frontier. — Benjamin Franklin — his Plan for a federal Union of the American Provinces. — Discontents in Virginia — North Carolina — and New York. — Preparations of France and Britain for War. 218

CHAPTER IV.

Hostilities in Nova Scotia — Expulsion of the French Neutrals. — Braddock's Expedition — and Defeat. — Battle of Lake George. — Transactions in South Carolina. — Dissensions in Pennsylvania. — Resignation of political Power by the Quakers. — Quaker Proceedings respecting Negro Slavery. — War declared between France and Britain. — Success of the French at Oswego. 240

CHAPTER V.

Incapacity of the British Commander in America. — Loss of Fort William Henry. — Dispute between Massachusetts and the British Commander. — State of Parties in New England. — Change of the British Ministry and Measures. — Affairs of Pennsylvania. — Political Exertions of Franklin in England. — Conquest of Cape Breton. — Repulse at Ticonderoga. — Reduction of Fort Frontignac — and Fort Duquesne. — Effect of the British Successes upon the Indians. — Plan of the Campaign of 1759. — Reduction of Ticonderoga — and Crown Point. — Battle of Niagara — and Capture of Fort Niagara. — Siege of Quebec. — Battle of the Heights of Abraham — and Surrender of Quebec. 262

CHAPTER VI.

Progress of Hostilities in America. — Entire Conquest of Canada. — War with the Cherokees. — Affairs of Massachusetts. — Death of George the Second. — Conclusion of the Cherokee War. — Affairs of South Carolina. — Discontents in Massachusetts — and in North Carolina. — Peace of Paris. — Affairs of Virginia. — Patrick Henry. — Indian War. — Affairs of Pennsylvania. 300

APPENDIX III.

Condition of the North American States — Virginia — New England — Maryland — the Carolinas — New York, New Jersey, and Pennsylvania — Georgia. — Political Feelings and Ideas in Britain and America. — Benjamin West. — Indian Affairs. — Moravian Missions. 336

BOOK XI.

PROGRESS OF THE STATES OF NORTH AMERICA, TILL THEIR ASSUMPTION OF NATIONAL INDEPENDENCE.

CHAPTER I.

Relative Position of Britain and her Colonies. — Policy of the British Court — Severe Enforcement of the existing commercial Restrictions — Aggravation of the commercial Restrictions. — Project of the Stamp Act. — Remonstrances of the Americans. — Idea of American Representatives in the House of Commons. — The Stamp Act debated in England — and passed. — Act for quartering British Troops in America. — Proceedings in Massachusetts — and Virginia. — Ferment in America. — Tumults in New England. — The Stamp Officers resign. — Convention at New York. — Political Clubs in America. — Tumult at New York. — Non-importation Agreements. — The Stamp Act disobeyed. — Deliberations in England — Act declaratory of parliamentary Power over America — the Stamp Act repealed. 363

CHAPTER II.

Sentiments of the Americans. — Leading Politicians in America — Randolph — Jefferson — Adams — Hancock — Rutledge, and others. — Renewed Collision between British Prerogative and American Liberty. — New York resists the Act for quartering Troops. — Acts of Parliament taxing Tea and other Commodities in America — and suspending the Legislature of New York. — Policy of France. — Progress of American Discontent. — Circular Letter of the Massachusetts Assembly. — Governor Bernard's Misrepresentations. — Royal Censure of the Massachusetts Assembly. — Riot at Boston. — Firmness — and Dissolution of the Massachusetts Assembly. — Convention in Massachusetts. — Occupation of Boston by British Troops. — Violence of the British Parliament. — Resolutions of the Virginian Assembly — and Concurrence of the other Provinces. — Remonstrance against British Troops in Massachusetts. — Miscellaneous Transactions — Dr. Witherspoon — Dartmouth College — Methodism in America — Origin of Kentucky — Daniel Boon. 412

CHAPTER III.

Impolicy of the British Measures. — Affray between the Troops and the People of Boston — Partial Repeal of the Tea-duty Act — unsatisfactory to the Americans. — Perplexity of the British Ministry. — Tucker's Scheme. — Writers on the American Controversy. — Insurrection of the Regulators in North Carolina. — Resistance in Rhode Island. — Governor Hutchinson. — Proceedings in Massachusetts — and in Virginia. — Attempt of Massachusetts to abolish the Slave-trade — resisted by the British Government. — British Attempt to exact the Tea-duty — successfully resisted in America — tumultuously defeated at Boston. — Disclosure of Hutchinson's Letters. — Dismissal of Franklin from the British Service. — Taunting Language in England. — The Shakers. — European Emigrations to America. 449

CHAPTER IV.

Boston Port Bill — and other British Measures — their Effects in America. — Proposition of a general Congress. — Suffolk Resolutions. — Meeting of the first American Congress — its Proceedings. — Transactions in New England. — Proceedings of the British Ministry and Parliament. — Defensive Preparations in America. — Affair of Lexington. — The Americans surprise Ticonderoga and Crown Point. — Battle of Bunker's Hill. — Second American Congress — prepares for War — elects a Commander-in-chief. — George Washington. — Transactions in Virginia. — Progress of Hostilities. — American Invasion of Canada. 483

CHAPTER V.

Popular Feeling and public Policy in America. — American Negotiations with France. — La Fayette. — Condition of the American Army. — Operations of Washington. — Retreat of the British Army from Boston. — Hostilities in South Carolina. — The Americans declare their Commerce free. — Conduct of the American Quakers. — Proceedings in Congress. — Declaration of American Independence. — Conclusion. . . . 530

NOTES. 557

THE

HISTORY

OF

NORTH AMERICA.

BOOK VIII.

CHAPTER I.

The American Provinces dissatisfied with the Fruits of the British Revolution. — Affairs of Virginia and Maryland. — Character and Policy of Governor Nicholson. — Affairs of Massachusetts. — Administration of Lord Bellamont — and of Dudley. — Queen Anne's War. — Policy of New York. — Affairs of Connecticut. — Attempts to subvert her Charter. — Invasion of South Carolina. — Progress of the War in New England. — Indian Embassy to Britain. — Conquest of Port Royal and Acadia. — Invasion of Canada by a British and Provincial Force. — Failure of the Expedition. — Indian War in North Carolina. — Affairs of New York. — Peace of Utrecht. — Effects of the War in New England. — British Legislation.

When the first agitations of hope and fear that were engendered by the British Revolution had subsided, this great event proved least satisfactory in the very quarters in which its operation was the most beneficial. The church of England, which owed its preservation as a Protestant establishment to the revolt which it had countenanced against its own temporal head, received the boon with a sullen acquiescence in disagreeable necessity; and continued, for many years, estranged more or less from a government, whose origin, however disguised by the theories of political sophists, practically confessed, or at least forcibly suggested to mankind, the legitimate control of popular will and reason over the most authoritative principles and the most venerable institutions of national policy. It was not from love of civil or religious liberty, but for the protection of their own special privileges and emoluments, that the English prelates abetted the revolutionary movement; for their deep desire was, that kings should reign by a *divine right*, which laymen were not entitled to scan, and of which the ecclesiastical expositors of the divine will were the sole, or, at least, the most competent, judges. The Scottish Covenanters, who were rescued by the Revolution from the extremity of barbarous oppression and political degradation, less rejoiced at the signal deliverance, than repined at the inadequate compensation they obtained; and, thankless for a bare toleration, without triumphant ascendency of those principles which heroic sacrifice and the glory of their martyred friends had so mightily endeared to them, they regarded the revolutionary government with anger and aversion, and even in some instances conspired with the partisans of their deposed oppressor to accomplish its overthrow. From the peculiar sources, however, of these domestic discontents there was derived a reasonable prospect of their progressive mitigation. The lapse of time, as it invested the remodelled mon-

archy of Britain with a semblance of antiquity, tended to abate the jealousy of the Tories and prelates, by veiling what they deemed its dangerous features from the grossness of the general gaze; and the descendants of the Covenanters, even when they inherited the principles of their fathers, lost a portion of that enthusiastic zeal, which, like the ardor of maternal affection, must originate from a personal experience of trouble, anguish, and danger.

In no part of the British empire did the Revolution of 1688 produce more beneficial consequences than in the provinces of North America; yet nowhere did the immediate fruits of that revolution excite greater or more general disgust. Some of these colonies had been previously reputed peculiarly loyal to the fallen dynasty; others had always regarded it with apprehensive dislike; some had endured but little, and others had endured a great deal, of molestation from its tyranny. Several of the provinces had suffered only the apprehension occasioned by a threatened abrogation of their privileges; others had been actually deprived of them all. Virginia, though devoid of the safeguard of a charter, had been merely subjected to a tyrannical governor, without being deprived of her representative assembly. The New England States, though possessing chartered systems of liberty, had been deprived both of their charters and their assemblies. Various, however, as the sentiments consequently were, which the first tidings of the British Revolution excited in these several provinces, they were all pervaded by common feelings of disappointment and discontent, after a very short experience of the dominion of the new authorities that had arisen in the parent state. From the reasonableness of these feelings, and the relative prospects of the two countries, a mutual estrangement of regard was more likely to be increased than diminished by the lapse of time.

The insurrections, by which some of the provinces coöperated with the revolutionary proceedings in England, were provoked not by English, but by American, grievances; the purpose of the insurgents (except in Maryland) was to obtain the restoration of American liberty; and the approbation, which King William at first bestowed very readily on every province and every party which took arms against the authority of his father-in-law, was interpreted by the colonists into a sanction of the objects to which their movements had been immediately directed. Considering their own interests associated with the cause of William, they expected from his triumph a willing and immediate restitution of every provincial privilege which had been unjustly withheld or tyrannically invaded by his predecessor. But their expectations were completely disappointed. The establishment of William's authority induced a manifest alteration of his regard for the promoters of popular insurrection; the acquisition of power had no tendency to conciliate his patronage of claims for its limitation; and the expediency of retaining those functionaries of the old government, who were willing to transfer the benefit of their official experience to the new, prompted him to engage the service and embrace the counsels of men who had signalized themselves by overthrowing liberal institutions and administering tyranny in North America. Not one of the aggrieved provinces received an entire redress of its wrongs; nor did any of them succeed in procuring even a partial restoration of its violated liberties, without an arduous struggle against the opposition of the court. Connecticut and Rhode Island, which were enabled by the Revolution to resume the charters of which they had been

deprived, were compelled to defend them against the envy of the revolutionary government in the parent state, whose ineffectual hostility at once diminished her own influence, and endeared to the colonists a system of liberty exposed to continual peril and jeopardy, and only preserved by their own firmness and vigor against the encroachments of superior power. According to the dictates of liberal justice, Massachusetts was equally entitled to the restoration of her old charter; and her claim was strengthened by the gallant stand which she had made in defence of those principles of liberty which the British Revolution professed to vindicate. But the technical formalities, which her virtuous inflexibility had compelled the oppressor of her liberties to employ, furnished a legal pretext for obstructing her claims, which King William and his ministers did not hesitate to embrace.

Though the English parliament, in its first revolutionary fervor, prepared a bill for restoring the old charter of Massachusetts, this act of national justice was defeated by the dexterity of the court; and though a new charter was extorted from the king by the interest and importunity of the colonists, it withheld from the people some of the most valuable privileges which they enjoyed under their original constitution. New Hampshire, which earnestly petitioned to be annexed to Massachusetts, was erected into a separate jurisdiction, without obtaining a charter,—for the convenience of a wealthy merchant of London, who purchased the vexatious claims of Mason against the occupiers of the soil. New York had been deprived of its assembly and defrauded of its promised charter by James the Second. The restoration of the assembly was accomplished by the popular insurrection promoted by Leisler. But no charter was procured from the crown; and Leisler, for an act importing rather folly than guilt, was condemned to the fate of a traitor by Dudley, who had been chased from New England for abetting the tyranny of King James, and whom William, nevertheless, appointed chief justice at New York. Though William was encouraged by his advisers to lay claim to every advantage, however unfairly acquired, which might be supposed legally to accrue to him as the successor of the British crown, he was far from acknowledging a corresponding obligation to fulfil the engagements which had been tyrannically violated by his predecessors. Though a charter was promised to Virginia by Charles the Second, this promise obtained no more respect from the government which succeeded than from that which preceded the Revolution; and though Lord Effingham had been guilty of such tyranny in Virginia that the people confidently expected his dismissal even from the justice of King James, he was retained in his office by the policy of William. The same expediency, however, which prolonged his dignity, forbade the exasperating measure of his return to Virginia,—where his personal presence was supplied by the lieutenancy of Francis Nicholson, another agent of King James, who, flying from the revolutionary commotion at New York, received welcome and patronage from the revolutionary sovereign of England.

By what arguments Lord Effingham was enabled to prevail over the complaints of the Virginians at the court of King William we have no means of ascertaining; but the presumptive credit of his vindication of himself is impeached by the notorious fact, that he was permitted to stipulate with Nicholson that no legislative assembly should be convoked in Virginia, unless this measure were commanded by the most urgent and palpable necessity.[1] The promotion of Dudley and of Nicholson served to pave the

[1] Beverly. Burk.

way to a measure by which King William loaded his own administration with all the odium and jealousy that the government of his royal predecessors had excited. This was the appointment of Sir Edmund Andros, in the year 1692, to the office of supreme governor both of Virginia and Maryland. Andros, as the superior officer both of Nicholson and Dudley, had been appointed by King James to conduct his arbitrary system of government in New England and New York, and had excited the unanimous hatred of the people over whom he presided. Deposed, imprisoned, and impeached by the colonists of New England, he was acquitted by King William; and, after a little prudential delay, was despatched to assume the government of Maryland. Here, from the oppression to which the Roman Catholics were doomed by the policy of Britain, he found himself once more the delegate of injustice and tyranny; and, tempted, perhaps, by the distracted state of the province, he endeavoured to enrich himself by peculations that enlarged his own disgrace and dishonored his new master.[1] The temporary usurpation by King William of the rights of the proprietary of Pennsylvania, and the arbitrary proceedings of Fletcher, to whom he committed the presidency both of that colony and of New York, tended still farther to impeach the justice and diminish the popularity of the British government in the American provinces.

Yet many gratifying circumstances contributed at the time to countervail the sense and restrain the expression of the colonial discontents. The benefit of actual deliverance from oppression and danger was universally acknowledged; and the general effect in America of the British Revolution was an increased attachment to liberty, and a jealousy rather prudent and vigilant, than bitter or indignant, of the designs and policy of the parent state.

In Virginia, however, a good deal of address and conciliation was necessary to reduce the prevailing sentiments of disaffection to this moderate strain. The continuance of Lord Effingham in office, and the appointment of another instrument of King James's tyranny to act as the lieutenant of this nobleman, created so much disgust and irritation [1690], that Nicholson, on his arrival in the province, clearly perceived that his commission was insufficient to administer effectual support to his authority, and that the colonists were actually ripe for revolt. Nicholson, who now resumed in America a career which was to procure him, for many years, a conspicuous place in its history, though naturally headstrong, restless, and impetuous, was yet endowed with considerable shrewdness and address; devoured by vanity and immoderate ambition, he was destitute of steady principle and comprehensive wisdom. With skilful and assiduous exertions, he strove to soothe and conciliate the minds of the Virginians, who, remembering the haughty and sullen austerity that characterized the deportment of his predecessors, Culpepper and Effingham, were the more captivated by the obliging and affable demeanour of Nicholson, from its dissimilarity to the manners which they were accustomed to associate with tyranny. In order to extend the influence of his courtesy, as well as to ascertain, without expressly demanding, the sentiments of the planters on the important point of a representative assembly, he made a tour through the several counties of the province; lavished attentions and commendations on the people and all their establishments; solicited their opinions with regard to local im-

[1] Oldmixon. Formerly, the first edition of Oldmixon's work is referred to, unless when the second is expressly specified. Now, and hereafter, reference is made to the second edition alone. The two publications differ not a little in their contents from each other.

provements; and seemed cordially to embrace the views and suggestions which they imparted. To promote the gayety and amusement of the colonists, and divert their leisure hours and stirring spirits from political debate and inquiry, he instituted public games, and distributed prizes to those who excelled in riding, running, shooting, wrestling, and backsword.

Finding that the erection of a college was a favorite object of the planters, he zealously promoted their wish, and gained a great accession of popularity by procuring and delivering to them the royal donative which contributed to the establishment of William and Mary College.[1] But amidst all the respect and good-will which his elaborate civility and politic benevolence attracted, he discerned a deep-seated and vigilant jealousy; and was made sensible, by many unequivocal symptoms, that it would be impossible for him to gain the general confidence or preserve the public tranquillity, without restoring to the colonists their representative assembly; and thereupon, with equal prudence and promptitude, he scrupled not to disappoint the wish of Lord Effingham, and to allay the prevalent solicitude, by a regular convocation of assemblies. Before the close of his first presidency, which lasted only two years, his efforts to compose the dangerous ferments by which Virginia was agitated at the period of his arrival [1691] were crowned with a success equally creditable to his own dexterity and to the moderation and placability of the people. His popularity, however, was latterly somewhat impaired by a sudden change of sentiment which he displayed in relation to a matter which excited much interest in the colony. The richer class of planters had for some time entertained the design of establishing manufactures in Virginia; and this project was eagerly espoused by the leading politicians of the province, who regarded it as a measure calculated to diminish the dependence of their country on the parent state. To this end, it was necessary that the system of straggling inhabitation that prevailed in the colony should be abandoned, and the people induced to live together in villages or towns. After an obstinate struggle with the current of popular inclination in this respect, the promoters of the design succeeded in obtaining from the assembly what was termed an *Act of Cohabitation*, proposing encouragements to the formation of towns and the introduction of manufactures; and Nicholson endeared himself not a little to a powerful party by zealously abetting the scheme and affirming the act. A present of three hundred pounds was voted to him shortly after by the assembly, who entreated him to accept it as a testimony of the deep sense they entertained of his virtues and obliging demeanour.[2] But no sooner did he learn that the measure which he had thus supported was disagreeable to the king, than he hastened as zealously to retract his declarations in its favor; with ineffectual and ungracious importunity, he labored to persuade the assembly to rescind its enactment; and impaired his own credit

[1] The plan of the college buildings was the composition of Sir Christopher Wren. Wynne. "There was a commencement at William and Mary College in the year 1700, at which there was a great concourse of people; several planters came thither in their coaches, and several in sloops from New York, Pennsylvania, and Maryland; it being a new thing in America to hear graduates perform their academical exercises. The Indians themselves had the curiosity to come to Williamsburg on this occasion; and the whole country rejoiced as if they had some relish of learning." Oldmixon. Fifty-eight years before, a similar ceremonial was performed in the younger province of Massachusetts.

[2] King William's instructions about this time to the American governors having strictly prohibited their acceptance of donatives, an address was presented to him by the Virginian assembly, beseeching that Nicholson might have leave to accept their present; and the royal permission was accordingly granted. Beverly.

by demonstrating to the people that his interest in their prosperity would ever be subordinate to his obsequious devotion to the pleasure of the crown and the policy of the parent state.[1]

The continuance of Lord Effingham in the office of governor of Virginia, which at one time was deeply resented by the colonists, had latterly been rendered a matter of indifference to them by the mild administration of Nicholson; and when the event of that nobleman's dismission at length occurred [1692], it was rendered even unwelcome to Virginia by the concomitant intelligence that the vacant dignity was conferred on Sir Edmund Andros. After a short stay in Maryland, of which also he was appointed governor, and where he appears to have again indulged his wonted severity and rapacity, Andros, repairing to Virginia [1692], resumed the government of a people who regarded him with alarm and dislike, and were prepared to watch his conduct with the most jealous attention. Nicholson straightway repaired to Maryland, where, in the station of lieutenant-governor, he continued for six years; during which he is said to have displayed a spirit more eager and intemperate than stern or illiberal, and to have promoted measures that happily conduced to the encouragement of industry and the advancement of religion.[2]

Whether in consequence of information communicated by Nicholson, or from a sagacious discernment and appreciation of his own altered interests and circumstances, Andros now evinced a remarkable change of deportment; and during his presidency in Virginia, he extorted the public approbation both of the liberality of his sentiments and the mildness of his manners. Prompt, judicious, and methodical, he introduced into all the offices and institutions of government improvements that contributed to the simplification and despatch of public business. He promoted the cultivation of cotton in the province; and though he succeeded, by the auxiliary influence of the merchants of London who traded with Virginia, and the concurrent habits and inclinations of a majority of the colonists, in persuading the assembly to suspend the *Act of Cohabitation*, he was yet celebrated for his active patronage of every other feasible project for the introduction and domestication of manufactures. Devoid of Nicholson's inordinate vanity and ambition, and greatly his superior in talent and understanding, Andros contented himself with endeavouring to redeem his public character, and associate his administration with provincial improvement and prosperity, — without studying to extend his influence, or greedily courting popularity by suppleness and intrigue. His useful labors were interrupted by the revocation of his commission after an endurance of six years; when Nicholson, promoted

[1] Oldmixon. Burk.

[2] A letter written to the Royal Society of London by an intelligent Englishman, who visited Maryland during the administration of Nicholson, contains the following statements: — "The church of England is now pretty well established. Churches are built; and there is an annual stipend allowed to every minister by a perpetual law; which is more or less, according to the number of taxables in each parish. Every Christian male sixteen years old, and negroes, male and female, above that age, pay forty pounds of tobacco to the minister; and this makes their revenues, one with another, about two thousand pounds of tobacco, or one hundred pounds sterling, a year. It has been the unhappiness of this country, that they had no Protestant ministers, hardly, among them, till the time of Governor Nicholson, who has been a great promoter and encourager of the clergy." "Now, by Colonel Nicholson's protection, the orthodox churches are crowded as full as they can hold. The people grow sensible of the Romish superstition and the enthusiasm of the Quakers. Indeed, the Quakers struggle hard to maintain their footing; and their teachers (especially of the female sex, who are the most zealous) are very free of their reflections and scandal against the orthodox divines and professors." Oldmixon.

to the vacant dignity, returned once more to preside in Virginia. [1698.] In the government of Maryland, Nicholson was succeeded first by Colonel Blackiston, and afterwards [1703] by Colonel Seymour, — whose administrations obtained the praise of liberal and honorable policy, and the recompense of general satisfaction and esteem.[1]

The advancement of Nicholson to a station of greater dignity than he had ever before enjoyed served rather to inflame than to gratify his thirst for distinction. Elevated to the supreme command of the most ancient and wealthy province of the British empire in America, he now suffered himself to be transported, by the eagerness of his ambition, beyond the modesty of reasonable hope and the safeguard of politic demeanour. The project of a general government, embracing all the colonies, which had been devised by James the Second, but rendered abortive by the Revolution, was now revived by this enterprising politician, who beheld in it at once the most effectual means of securing the absolute authority of the parent state, and the fairest promise of his own ascent to the pinnacle of provincial greatness. By his merit in promoting an object so agreeable to the English cou , added to his boasted influence and experience in America, he hoped to entitle himself to claim the appointment of governor-general; and this ambitious vision seems to have mainly influenced his language and actions during his second presidency in Virginia. One of the first transactions in which he engaged convinced him very disagreeably that he had underrated the resistance which the colonists might be expected to oppose to such designs, and that, in laboring to accomplish them, he had no aid to expect either from his own personal influence or the supposed tractability of the people. Three years before this period, King William had concerted a plan for the general defence of the American settlements against the French forces in Canada and their Indian allies; in conformity with which, every British colony was required to furnish a pecuniary contingent proportioned to the amount of its population,[2] — to be administered according to the directions of the king. This plan was submitted to all the provincial legislatures, and disregarded or rejected by every one of them; the colonies most exposed to attack being desirous of employing their forces in the manner most agreeable to their own judgment and immediate exigencies, and those which were more remote from the point of danger objecting to participate in the expense.

The Quaker assembly of Pennsylvania, from which the most inflexible opposition might naturally have been expected, was the only one which finally consented to aid, by a subscription, the military operations in New York, which preceded the peace of Ryswick.[3] Governor Nicholson clearly perceived the utility of King William's plan as a preparative of the ulterior design of a general government of the colonies; and though peace was now established, he determined to signalize his recent promotion by reviving the royal project and retrieving its failure. He ventured accordingly to introduce this unwelcome proposition to the assembly of Virginia, and employed all the resources of his address and ingenuity to procure its adoption. He affirmed that a fort on the western frontier of New York was essential to the security of Virginia; and insisted that the legislature of this province was consequently engaged, by every consideration of prudence, equity, and generosity, to contribute to its erection and support. But his

[1] Oldmixon. Beverly. Burk.
[2] See Book VII., Chap. II., *ante*.
[3] See Book V., Chap. II., *ante*.

arguments, though backed by all the aid they could derive from reference to the wish and suggestion of the king, proved totally unavailing; and the proposition experienced an unqualified rejection from the assembly. Nicholson, astonished and provoked at this discomfiture, hastened to transmit to the king a report of the affair, in which he strongly censured the refractory spirit of the Virginians, and urged the propriety of compelling them yet to acknowledge their duty and consult their true interests. [1698.] William was so far moved by this representation, as to recommend to the provincial assembly a more deliberate consideration of the governor's proposition; and he even condescended to repeat the arguments which Nicholson had already unsuccessfully employed. But these reasons gained no additional currency from the stamp of royal sanction. The king's project encountered again the most determined opposition, and was a second time rejected; while his argument elicited from the assembly only a firm, but respectful, remonstrance, in which they declared their conviction, "that neither the forts then in being, nor any other that might be built in the province of New York, could in the slightest degree avail to the defence and security of Virginia; for that either the French or the Northern Indians might invade this colony, and yet not approach within a hundred miles of any of those forts."

Nicholson had relied with undoubting assurance on the success of this attempt; and the issue of it, which disconcerted his aspiring hopes, destroyed his popularity, and discredited the policy of his counsels by lowering the dignity of the king, inspired him with the most vindictive feelings of rage and mortification. Henceforward, he took no pains to conceal his antipathy to the institution of representative assemblies, and to the democratical frame of the provincial governments. He represented to the British ministers that the dissent of the Virginian assembly from his Majesty's desire and opinion proceeded entirely from a spirit of rebellion, and a propensity to national independence and republican government;[1] — charges, which, as they coincided with the apprehensions of the parent state, were most likely to provoke her jealousy and malevolence towards the colony. Blending a regard to policy with the gratification of his resentment, and hoping to impress the credulous with a high opinion of his munificence and public spirit, he protested that neither the king nor New York should be disappointed, for that he himself would rather furnish the quota due by Virginia from his own private estate. He repaired soon after to New York, where he labored to regain the reputation which he had heretofore forfeited with its citizens, by passionate declamations on his efforts to serve them, and on the sordid and disobliging spirit with which the Virginians obstructed his purpose; and he succeeded for a while in buying golden opinions in this quarter by an impudent deceit, whereby he pretended to grant his own bills of exchange for the sum that had been ineffectually solicited from the Virginian assembly. Notwithstanding his resentment against the people, and his hostility to the institutions over which he continued for some years longer to preside, he found his power insufficient for any open violation of public rights; and was obliged to content himself with conveying to the English government secret counsels and complaints, which, under pretence of guarding the interest and honor of the parent state, aimed at the destruction of every liberal and popular institution in Virginia. He cöoperated with his friend,

[1] See Note XXVIII., Vol. I., *ante*.

Colonel Quarry, another functionary of the crown in North America, in the composition of the *Memorials* which were presented in Quarry's name to the Commissioners of Trade and Plantations in England. These *Memorials* represented the colonists of America, and particularly the Virginians, as deeply imbued with republican principles; strongly counselled immediate recourse to the most rigorous measures for preserving the ascendency of the royal prerogative; and especially suggested "*that all the English colonies of North America be reduced under one government and one viceroy, and that a standing army be there kept on foot to subdue the enemies of royal authority.*" The success of his exertions corresponded better with his vindictive sentiments than with his ambitious designs; for, though he was able to excite mutual distrust and jealousy between the parent state and the colony, he could not succeed in persuading the English ministers to embrace the energetic measures which he recommended. The vehemence of his language, perhaps, led them to doubt the soundness and prudence of his views. His career in America was suspended in the year 1704, by his recall from Virginia;[1] but he afterwards resumed it, in the conduct of various military expeditions, and in a short occupation of the government of Carolina.

In New York, where liberal institutions had enjoyed but a brief existence, and where the boundaries of royal authority and popular rights were not defined by a charter, King William showed as little respect for the wishes of the people, in the selection of his public officers, as he had done in relation to Virginia. He conferred the highest judicial office at New York on Dudley, a victim of the revolution in New England; and bestowed the government of the province on Fletcher, whose intemperate efforts to stretch the royal prerogative proved, however, more beneficial than hurtful to public spirit and the interests of freedom. But in Massachusetts, where the people regarded liberty as their undoubted birthright, and, next to religion, their peculiar glory, and where the most formidable approaches of tyranny had ever been encountered with heroic fortitude and inflexible opposition, the king and his ministers were sensible that greater deference was due to public opinion, and that a conciliating policy was necessary to mitigate the discontent excited by the innovations in the frame of the provincial constitution. Though some of the obnoxious officers of James were countenanced and retained by William, not one of them had yet been employed in New England; and the first royal governor of Massachusetts after the Revolution, as we have seen, owed his appointment by the king to the previous favor and express recommendation of the colonists and their agents. This politic condescension was in a great degree successful; though, from unforeseen and unhappy circumstances, the administration of Sir William Phips did not produce all the satisfactory consequences that were expected to ensue from it; and at its close, and for some time after, so much discontent and irritation prevailed in the province, as forcibly to inculcate on the king and his ministers the utmost prudence and moderation in the exercise of the royal prerogative. It was never more wisely exercised by them, than in the subsequent appointment of Richard, Earl of Bellamont, to the government of Massachusetts and New Hampshire; to which was added the government of New York, where some remedy was urgently required for the abuses that had signalized Fletcher's administration. The conduct of Lord Bellamont at New York has already engaged our attention.

[1] Beverly. Oldmixon. Quarry's *Memorial*, in the British Museum.

Lord Bellamont was the first and the only British nobleman who ever exercised the functions of governor in New England; and even in this region of republican usages and Puritanic sentiments, his rank enhanced the reverence which his merit inspired. Endowed with sound sense and judgment, a liberal and magnanimous disposition, a calm, yet resolute temper, — grave, incorrupt, religious, open, and sincere, — he embellished these estimable qualities by an address replete with courtesy and benignity. [1699.] On his arrival at Boston, he found that his reputation had preceded him; and he experienced the most gratifying demonstrations of welcome and esteem from all classes of the inhabitants, who assembled to greet his approach in throngs so numerous and so uniformly respectable in aspect, that he was struck with surprise at the unexpected wealth and population of the province, — and, doubtless, touched with a generous pleasure at the unexampled display of extended happiness and civility. His popularity was not confined to the immediate scene of his administration; the inhabitants of Connecticut, esteeming the appointment of such a man a favorable indication of the policy of the parent state, expressed in a congratulatory address their sympathy with the gratification of their neighbours in Massachusetts. The mutual satisfaction of Lord Bellamont and his people was confirmed by a farther acquaintance with each other. Regarding them collectively with respect,[1] and treating them individually and invariably with affability and benevolence, he commanded esteem and was judged with candor. They forgave, or rather, perhaps, they did not feel it necessary to forgive, his attachment to the church of England; and while the desire of ingratiating himself with the people could not induce him to disguise this predilection, the force of it could not prevent his discerning and acknowledging the worth of those provincial institutions of which the extraordinary piety and virtue of the people of New England was either the cause or the effect. Though he paid his Sunday devotions in an Episcopal chapel, he attended the weekly lectures of the Congregational church at Boston;[2] and professed the highest regard and esteem for the Congregational preachers. Hutchinson, a ruler and historian of this province, whose own unpopularity has rendered him extremely skeptical with regard to the merit of a popular governor, ascribes the success of Lord Bellamont to his *avoiding offence to particular persons, and disputes with the assembly; and his general conformity to the cast or prevailing disposition of the people.* Certain it is,

[1] "A speech of his to his lady, when their table was filled with the representatives from the country towns, is yet remembered: — *Dame, we should treat these gentlemen well; they give us our bread.*" Hutchinson.

[2] The General Court always adjourned its sitting to attend the lecture. This strictness of religious observance, however, though generally, was not universally, prevalent in Boston. Among those who were estranged from it was one Bullivant, an apothecary, who had been a justice of the peace under Andros. "Lord Bellamont, going from the lecture to his house, with a great crowd round him, passed by Bullivant standing at his shop-door loitering: *Doctor*, says his Lordship with an audible voice, *you have lost a precious sermon to-day.* Bullivant whispered to one of his companions who stood by him, *If I could have got as much by being there as his Lordship, I would have been there too.*" Hutchinson.

The least pleasing trait in the demeanour of Lord Bellamont is one which reproaches the prevalent taste and language of the contemporary partisans of the British Revolution. In his speeches to the assembly, he extolled the character and achievements of King William in a strain of the most exaggerated and almost impious commendation; and in his unsparing, though juster, censure of the princes of the House of Stuart, he loaded their real or supposed religious faith with all the blame of their corrupt or careless policy. In his last speech to the Massachusetts assembly, he declared that "the parting with Canada to the French, and the Eastern country called Acadia or Nova Scotia, with the noble fishery on that coast, were most execrable treacheries to England, and intended, without doubt, to serve the ends of popery." Ibid.

that, whatever was the source of Lord Bellamont's influence, he obtained from the provincial assembly a larger remuneration of his services than was ever bestowed on any of his predecessors or successors in the administration of royal prerogative. During his residence in the province, which lasted only fourteen months, he received from the General Court grants amounting to £2,500 of the provincial money, or £1,875 sterling. The appointment of this excellent person would reflect more honor on King William and his ministers, if it were not evident, from their correspondence with him, that they were more desirous to render his previous reputation instrumental to the credit of royal authority, than to secure to the colonists the benefit of his virtues. Infected, themselves, by the reports of Nicholson and Quarry, with distrust and jealousy of the Americans, they endeavoured to impart these sentiments to Lord Bellamont; and, assuring him that the people were notoriously disaffected to the parent state, and inclined to mutiny and independence, urged him to watch and curb the symptoms of this dangerous spirit.[1]

His unexpected death prevented him from receiving the communication of these ignoble suspicions and pernicious counsels, which were repugnant alike to the dignity of his disposition and the tenor of his experience. Continuing to treat the colonists with merited confidence and unaffected respect, he pursued the policy most honorable and advantageous to them, to himself, and to the parent state. While he demonstrated a generous confidence, he succeeded in inspiring it; of which a remarkable instance has been preserved in the annals of New Hampshire. He had recommended to the assembly of this province the execution of a public work, of which the expense appeared to them disproportioned to the advantage that would accrue from it, and to the pecuniary circumstances of the people. They submitted this objection to his consideration; but declared, at the same time, that, if he would acquaint himself a little farther with their actual condition and resources, they would readily submit to any burden that he should reckon conducive to their advantage and compatible with their ability. The annals of this province, for several years, consist of little else than a record, no longer interesting, of the disputes and litigations between the successors of Mason and the colonists who had improved the soil by their own industry and defended it by their valor.

During the administration of Lord Bellamont, the only circumstances that occurred to disquiet the inhabitants of Massachusetts were the territorial encroachments of the French. Louis the Fourteenth had already projected, and even commenced, the conduct of that ambitious scheme of policy, which was afterwards pursued by France with so much steadiness and address, for the aggrandizement of her colonial empire. Laying claim to the vast territory of Louisiana, the French monarch despatched two vessels, with a troop of adventurers, for the purpose of establishing a colony there, in the year 1698. King William, convinced of the preferable claim of the English to Louisiana, endeavoured to anticipate the project of Louis by hastily assembling a force composed of French Protestant exiles, who sailed from London with the intention of forming a settlement on the banks of the Mississippi. But this emulous attempt was rendered abortive by the vigor and celerity of the French, who first assumed possession of the country, and erected forts at well selected spots for defending

[1] See Note XXVIII., Vol. I., *ante*.

their occupation. The grand project of the French government was to open a communication from the mouth of the Mississippi to the colony of Canada, and so to hem and environ the colonies of the English as to enable the subjects of France to engross the whole of the Indian trade. This enterprising design, however, was not immediately disclosed to the English colonists by the first insignificant link in so great a chain of operations; and their present uneasiness was occasioned by an act of resolute usurpation committed by their rivals in a quarter very remote from Louisiana.

Almost immediately after the peace of Ryswick, the French openly avowed the intention of restraining the English from occupying any part of the country comprehended within the Massachusetts charter to the eastward of Kennebec, and of engrossing to themselves the sole possession of the fishery on the relative coast.[1] It was understood by the English court, that by the treaty of Ryswick all the country westward of St. Croix was recognized as the property of England, from being included within the chartered designation of the province of Massachusetts; and an exact adjustment of all questionable limits was left to be subsequently accomplished by commissioners, whose appointment never took place. In opposition to the understanding and the rights of the English court, Villebon, the governor of a French settlement on St. John's River, gave notice to the government of Massachusetts that he was commanded by the king of France to take possession of and defend the whole country as far as Kennebec, and that English vessels attempting to fish on the coast would forthwith be seized; and in concert with this policy, the Norridgewock Indians, a tribe allied to the French, and implicitly devoted to a French priest whom they accepted for their pastor, began to establish a fixed settlement and erected a church on the banks of Kennebec River. Lord Bellamont communicated information of these transactions to the English court, by which they were so negligently considered and so languidly resented, that, had it not been for the war which more interesting disputes soon after enkindled between England and France, the encroachments of the French (who were actively supported by their king) would in all probability have proved entirely successful. The administration of Lord Bellamont was terminated by his death at New York in the beginning of the year 1701.[2]

The wise and liberal policy of King William towards New York and New England was exhausted by the appointment of Lord Bellamont; and the vacated dignities of this nobleman were now conferred on successors whom we might almost suppose to have been selected for the express purpose of counteracting the impressions produced by his virtue and reputation. The command of New York and New Jersey, as we have already seen, was intrusted to Lord Cornbury, — one of the most odious and contemptible of mankind; and the government of Massachusetts and New Hampshire,

[1] The French appear to have been more jealous of the advantage derived by the English from the American fishery, than judicious in their exertions to render it advantageous to themselves. From the letters of Charlevoix, it appears, that the fisheries on the coasts, whether of the English or the French settlements, were beneficial to the English alone, and generally proved ruinous to the French who engaged in them. The resident English colonists, themselves undertaking the fishery, ascertained the proper seasons and stations for fishing with advantage, and wasted no time on the sea which they could profitably employ on shore. The French colonists preferred to devote themselves to the fur trade (which was one cause of their more extended connection with the Indians), and left the fishery to be conducted unskilfully and expensively by fishing-vessels despatched annually from France to the American coast.

[2] Charlevoix, *Histoire de la Nouvelle France*. Hutchinson. Belknap. Trumbull. Anderson's *History of Commerce*. Holmes.

which Lord Cornbury had also unsuccessfully aspired to engross, was committed to a man whose previous history tended to reawaken the most irritating recollections of regal injustice and usurpation. Joseph Dudley was originally destined by his friends to the office of a minister of religion in his native country of Massachusetts; but his taste did not correspond with his education; and, declining to assume a function, which, in New England, was divested of all temporal pomp and splendor, he applied a vigorous understanding, and a genius more comprehensive than elevated, to civil and political pursuits. It is difficult to form a satisfactory estimate of the character of an individual, however illustrated by conspicuous station and vicissitudes of fortune, of whom it has been justly remarked, that few men were ever pursued by their enemies with fiercer virulence, or supported by their friends with fonder zeal. He extorted even from his opponents the praise of indefatigable application, sagacity, and ability, in the conduct of public affairs; and endeared himself to his partisans by the charm of agreeable manners, and the genuine grace of as many virtues as could consist with an overweening desire of power and distinction.

At that interesting period when Charles the Second made his final attempt to subvert the liberties of Massachusetts, Dudley had attained a consideration in the eyes of his countrymen that recommended him to the arduous and delicate office of envoy, to represent the province and defend its interests at the English court. Here his native thirst for grandeur and authority was inflamed by the dazzling display of regal and aristocratical state; and despairing of the cause of his country, which had been intrusted to him, he was seduced into a partial desertion of it. His acceptance of the temporary commission of government, which was tendered to him by King James, completely extinguished his popularity, notwithstanding the moderate strain of his administration, and the liberal measures which he recommended to the king; and his subsequent association with the tyranny of Andros, in whose grand council he occupied a place, not only loaded him with additional obloquy and aversion, but entailed, as we have already seen, the shipwreck of his political fortunes. Driven from his office by the revolutionary explosion in Massachusetts, and conveyed a prisoner to England, he was not only absolved from blame, or at least screened from punishment, by King William, but, through the interest of powerful connections at court, was appointed to the office of chief-justice of New York, — where he increased the odium that already attached to him, by presiding on the trial and pronouncing the condemnation of Leisler, who had given the first impulse to the revolution in this province. But this contracted sphere was very ill suited to his aspiring character, and equally uncongenial to that patriotic attachment with which his ambition, though the preponderating sentiment, was inseparably blended. Returning to England, he obtained, by the interest of his friends, a seat in the House of Commons, and the post of lieutenant-governor of the Isle of Wight. Yet even this elevation, though more exalted than any promotion that was attainable in America, could not divert his wishes from their original determination, or reconcile him to the condition of an exile. To all his countrymen whom he met with, from time to time, in England, he expressed a longing desire to end his days and obtain a grave in the land of his nativity; and all the interest which he possessed at court was assiduously exerted to procure his restoration to official dignity in Massachusetts. He endeavoured to gain the favor of the

party, who, in this province, were opposed to Sir William Phips, by abetting their complaints and intrigues for his removal from office; and when at length the envied eminence was vacated by that governor's death, the pretensions of Dudley to succeed to it were so powerfully supported at court, that, but for a politic device of his adversaries, they would probably have prevailed. The colony had now adopted the practice of maintaining resident agents at the court of London, to defend its interests and watch the policy and proceedings of the parent state.

Sir Henry Ashurst, a member of parliament, and Constantine Phips, afterwards Lord Chancellor of Ireland, who then discharged this important function, in order to obstruct the elevation of an individual so obnoxious to their constituents as Dudley, strove to injure his credit in England, by stimulating and aiding the exertions of the son of Leisler to procure a parliamentary reversal of his father's attainder. Young Leisler eagerly united with them in denouncing the character of the judge by whom his parent had been condemned; and, chiefly by their assistance, the act of reversal was obtained. The real object of the agents for Massachusetts was not less effectually promoted by this transaction, which, as it impeached Dudley's credit, so it relaxed the zeal of his English partisans, — and, betokening a determined opposition to his authority in America, contributed to persuade King William to bestow the government of Massachusetts on Lord Bellamont. Undaunted by this defeat, Dudley labored with the most adroit and persevering assiduity to reinforce the interest by which he hoped to repair it. He cultivated with particular care the good-will of the Protestant Dissenters in England, who had derived a great accession of political weight and consideration from the British Revolution, and were always ready to interpose its efficacy in the councils and arrangements of the court with respect to the people of New England, whose interests they regarded as identified with their own. By a grave and serious deportment, and a conversation well seasoned with piety, good sense, and politeness, Dudley succeeded in recommending himself to this powerful party; and not only engaged their domestic influence in support of his pretensions, but by their good offices was reconciled to the most influential personages among the clergy and politicians of Massachusetts. He was still regarded with enmity and aversion by a great portion of the inhabitants of this province; while the sentiments of those whose hostility he had been enabled to overcome partook rather of hope than confidence. It was manifestly improbable that the administration of such a man would tend to promote harmony and contentment among the colonists, or to improve their regards for the parent state; yet, by the increase of his interest, and the diminished weight of the opposition to his advancement, he finally prevailed on King William to appoint him the successor of Lord Bellamont in the government of Massachusetts and New Hampshire. The king's death following almost immediately after, the appointment was confirmed by Queen Anne; and Dudley, gladly resigning his dignities in England, repaired once more to Boston [1702], where he was received with much ceremonious respect by a provincial council, among whom were several of the persons who had been most actively instrumental to his deposition, imprisonment, and exile.[1]

His administration, as might easily have been anticipated, proved neither agreeable to Massachusetts nor advantageous to the parent state. Treating

[1] Hutchinson.

the people with less courtesy, and urging the royal prerogative with less moderation, than Lord Bellamont had displayed, he provoked very speedily a keen and determined spirit of opposition, of which the vehemence must appear disproportioned to the immediate cause, if we overlook the old resentments and jealousies which renewed collision with the same individual tended inevitably to reproduce. In New Hampshire this spirit was repressed by the anxious desire of the people to propitiate the favor of the English government, with the hope (which was not altogether disappointed) of engaging its protection against the legal, but iniquitous, claims with which they were incessantly harassed by the successors of Mason. Dudley was specially directed by the queen to require from the provincial assemblies the establishment of competent and permanent salaries to the governor, the lieutenant-governor, and the judges appointed by the crown; and this requisition was complied with very readily by New Hampshire. But the Massachusetts assembly not only reduced the emoluments of Dudley to about a fourth part of the remuneration they had bestowed on Lord Bellamont, but positively refused to attach a fixed salary to his office, — declaring that it had ever been their privilege to raise and distribute the provincial supplies according to existing emergencies; and that the imposition of permanent burdens was a measure totally unsuitable to the fluctuating circumstances of the people. Dudley made free and frequent use of the power of rejecting members of council nominated by the assembly, — a privilege, which, though doubtless conferred on the governor by the existing charter, had been suffered by his predecessors to remain almost entirely dormant; and he endeavoured, without any warrant from the charter, to appropriate the power of controlling the assembly in the choice of their speaker. Opposed and thwarted in these and various other attempts to enlarge the royal prerogative beyond its legitimate proportions, or to extend its practical efficacy beyond the limits which the patriotism of Sir William Phips and the moderation of Lord Bellamont had prescribed to them, — Dudley was so far bereft of liberality and discretion, as to express a wish that the province might be again deprived of its charter. Only this was wanting to rekindle all the hatred and indignation which his conduct in the reign of King James had engendered; and henceforward, his power and reputation were assailed by a numerous party with the most passionate and implacable animosity; while, in his own defence, he courted the adherence of a friendly faction, and degraded his character by adopting the crooked and illiberal devices of a party leader. Honor and integrity were violated alike by the policy of the governor and the rage of his opponents.

In the course of the war that ensued with France, he connived at an illicit trade which some merchants who adhered to his party carried on with the French settlements, and he was strongly, though unjustly, suspected of having himself participated in this traffic, by which the military resources of the enemy were increased. During the whole of his administration, many respectable inhabitants, including several of the clergy of Massachusetts, resorted to the most unworthy arts and scandalous intrigues, with the view of supplanting him in the government of the province. To this end, they persuaded Sir Charles Hobby, a man of reputed influence and licentious character, to solicit Dudley's office from Queen Anne; and besides supporting this worthless candidate with all their might, they prevailed with a committee of the ministers of the church of Scotland to intercede with the queen in his

behalf; — apologizing for, or rather defending, their conduct with loathsome hypocrisy and casuistical cant. These applications of his adversaries to have him displaced from his office were counteracted by petitions for his continuance in it, not only from his own partisans in Massachusetts, but from a great majority of the inhabitants of New Hampshire, who warmly espoused his interests, in return for the honest or politic favor which he demonstrated for theirs in their controversies with the successors of Mason.[1] Nothing could be more impolitic than the conduct of the British government, in employing such an instrument as Dudley to make the first essay in Massachusetts of straining to its utmost height a prerogative, which he had previously forfeited his popularity by assisting to introduce into the provincial constitution, and which his predecessors in authority were suffered practically to lower and relax. The measures he pursued were, doubtless, calculated of themselves to create discontent; but, promoted by him, and recalling the remembrance of his former apostasy, they provoked a warmth of resentment and bitterness of apprehensive jealousy which the advocacy of no other individual could have excited; and the pretensions of the parent state were henceforward identified in the minds of the colonists, by strong historical association, with treachery and tyranny. Never did any man labor with greater assiduity than Dudley for the attainment of official dignity in his native land; nor ever did any one find a more painful preëminence in the gratification of his ambition.

In addition to the rage of domestic dissension, the rekindled flame of foreign war signalized the commencement of Dudley's administration. By the treaty of Ryswick, Louis the Fourteenth had acknowledged the regal title of King William; and on the death of James, he determined, in conformity with the advice of his minister, not to recognize the claims of the royal exile's son. But, yielding to the entreaties of his mistress, Madame de Maintenon, he abandoned this wise purpose, and openly proclaimed the accession of the Pretender to the crown that had been forfeited by his father. The insult thus offered to the English people betokened the termination of the peace of Ryswick; and in the month of May, 1702, war was declared by Queen Anne and her allies, the emperor of Germany and the States General of Holland, against France and Spain. This intelligence prepared the English colonists of America for a renewal of hostilities with the colonial settlements of the enemy; and excited, especially in New England, an anxious desire to ascertain how far they might rely on the continuance of their pacific relations with those Indian tribes, who, in previous wars, had been the allies and instruments of the French. To this end, Dudley, accompanied by a deputation of the magistrates of Massachusetts, held a conference with the

[1] Hutchinson. Belknap. Sir Henry Ashurst, the provincial agent at London, at first expressed disgust and surprise at the recommendation of such an individual as Hobby by clergymen and other professors of superior piety in New England. But finding that faction rendered his constituents deaf to sober truth and reason, he adopted their views, conducted their negotiation with the church of Scotland, and observed, that, though Hobby was not in all respects the man he could wish to see governor of Massachusetts, yet *the earth must help the woman!* — "which," says the historian of Massachusetts, "too often means no more than *we must do evil that good may come of it.*" Hutchinson. In Sir H. Ashurst's letters we find frequent complaints of an ungrateful disregard of his services by the colonists. "I see," he declares, on one occasion, "that he who is faithful to his religion and his country must expect his reward above." Hutchinson pronounces these complaints well founded, and declares that the colonial agents were invariably treated with ingratitude and injustice. We have already seen (Note X., at the end of Vol. I.) a similar testimony from Cotton Mather. Sir Henry Ashurst was succeeded in the agency for the province, in 1710, by his brother, Sir William Ashurst.

Indians inhabiting the eastern parts of New England, who readily consented to renew their former treaties, and, with a guileful semblance of candor, avowed that the French had labored to engage their assistance, but protested that they had not the most distant thoughts of breaking the peace, and that their friendship with the English was *firm as a mountain and durable as the sun and moon*. [1703.] These protestations did not gain implicit or general credit; but, unhappily, from their coincidence rather with the general wish than with repeated experience and manifest probability, they succeeded in lulling some of the colonists into an unguarded security, from which they were first aroused by the fury and havoc of a general attack by those Indians, a few weeks after the conference, on all the frontier settlements of New Hampshire and Massachusetts. So indiscriminate was the hostility of the assailants, that they put even Quakers to the sword; and so unreasonable was the surprise which their treacherous assault created in some of the colonists, that the anticipations, which wiser persons had entertained and vainly endeavoured to communicate to their neighbours, were ascribed to supernatural agency and impression.

A fierce and desolating warfare ensued between New England and the Eastern Indians, reinforced by the Indian tribes of Canada, and frequently aided by detachments of French troops. The scene of this warfare was confined to Massachusetts and New Hampshire; for Rhode Island was completely sheltered from attack by the intervention of Massachusetts; and though a part of Connecticut was considered in danger, the irruptions of the enemy never actually reached this territory. New York secured the benefit of an entire exemption from hostilities, by directing the Five Nations, which were interposed between her territories and Canada, to negotiate for themselves with the French a treaty of strict neutrality between the belligerent powers. The French very willingly agreed to an arrangement which enabled them to concentrate the force of their Indian auxiliaries against New England, and deprived the English colonists in this quarter of the advantage they would have obtained from the coöperation of the Five Nations. The Indian allies of New England, from the means that had been employed to reduce them to a state of civilization, were become an enervated race, or at least had generally lost the habits and qualities that would have rendered their assistance valuable against Indian foes; and the Five Nations, whose neutrality was thus sold to the French for the benefit of New York, were the most efficient native allies that the English possessed in America. The injury that New England sustained at this period from New York, where Lord Cornbury presided as governor, was not bounded by the operation of the mean and selfish policy which was thus permitted to debase the public councils of this province. Even during the last war,[1] it was strongly suspected that the Dutch merchants at Albany, with their national preference of commercial profit to political or patriotic considerations, had traded with the Indians who ravaged New Hampshire, supplied them with arms, and promoted their depredations by affording a market for the spoil. This disgraceful practice was now carried on to a large extent, and combined with proceedings still more treacherous and injurious to the English interests. The inhabitants of Albany not only purchased

[1] The war which was closed by the peace of Ryswick has been denominated by some American writers King William's War. The war which we are now considering has more generally obtained the title of Queen Anne's War.

in the most open manner the plunder taken from their fellow-subjects in New England by the Canadian Indians, but even suffered these marauders to pass through their territory in order to attack the New England frontiers.

There were, indeed, some respectable citizens of Albany who regarded the base policy of their fellow-colonists with detestation, and diligently endeavoured to counteract it. Colonel Schuyler, in particular, exerted his interest with the Five Nations for the purpose of discovering the projected expeditions of the French and their allies, and was able on some occasions to afford timely notice to Massachusetts of approaching danger. Thus deprived of an efficient Indian ally, and betrayed by their own fellow-subjects,[1] the inhabitants of Massachusetts and New Hampshire conducted their military operations with great disadvantage against an enemy consisting of numerous flying hordes, divested of those restraints of honor and humanity which mitigate the ferocity of civilized warriors, and whose object was not victory or conquest, but plunder and extermination. Though the Indians received premiums from the French government for the English scalps which they produced in Canada, they did not invariably destroy their victims. They preserved, in particular, a number of children, of whom some were adopted into Indian families, and others were sold, or gratuitously consigned to French priests, who eagerly desired to convert them to the church of Rome; nor was it the least afflicting calamity entailed by the war on the New England colonists, that their offspring were frequently carried into a captivity where they were educated by Catholic priests or heathen savages, and incorporated with a people the enemies of their kindred and of the Protestant faith.

At first the military operations of the colonists were merely defensive, and confined to small parties scattered along the wide frontiers exposed to attack. Of the nature of these hostilities, and the difficulty of overcoming an enemy who warily avoided fighting except with the attendant advantages of assault and surprise, some notion may be derived from the enormous bounty of forty pounds for every Indian scalp, which was proffered by the assemblies of Massachusetts and New Hampshire. In the year 1704, more extended operations were attempted; and Colonel Church, who had distinguished himself in Philip's War,[2] was despatched by Dudley, at the head of six hundred men, and with an auxiliary naval force, against the French and Indians in Acadia. The French settlers in this quarter now endured a severe retribution of the devastations with which their countrymen in Canada had afflicted New England; but the Indians escaped with very little injury; and much discontent and evil surmise were excited in Massachusetts, when it was discovered that Dudley had prohibited any attack upon Port Royal, the capital of the French settlement, — though he was aware of the general hope and belief that the subjugation of this place was the main object of the expedition, and though Church had earnestly solicited the governor's permission to attempt it. Dudley asserted in his defence that he could not venture to undertake an operation of such importance without express instructions from England; but his forbearance was generally imputed to regard for the interests of an illicit traffic with Port Royal, in which some of his own political partisans were engaged.[3]

[1] "Thus our own enemies," says Charlevoix, "assisted our most faithful allies in their difficulties, and whilst they were daily hazarding their lives in our service."

[2] Book II., Chap. IV., *ante*.

[3] Voltaire's *Age of Louis the Fourteenth*. Hutchinson. Belknap. W. Smith's *History of New York*. Dwight's *Travels*. In the year 1704, Sawyer, a respectable colonist of New England,

The province of Connecticut, on this occasion, displayed a spirit diametrically opposite to that which prevailed in the councils of New York. With equal vigor and liberality, the assembly of Connecticut prepared to defend the vulnerable points of its territory, and to succour the other States more exposed to the brunt of war. To prevent the encouragement which the enemy were likely to derive from the influence of the panic that began to prevail in the frontier settlements, it was ordained by an act of the legislature, that all persons deserting their habitations in any of the frontier towns should forfeit the lands and houses from which they withdrew. Prompt and liberal assistance was rendered to Massachusetts and New Hampshire by levies of men and money, which were despatched to coöperate with the military force of those provinces. While the inhabitants of Connecticut were laboring under the weight of these generous exertions, they were incessantly harassed with the most impudent solicitations from Lord Cornbury for pecuniary subsidies in aid of the pretended defence of New York, which his own ignoble policy had already secured from attack by land at the expense of the colonies of New England. But affecting to dread the invasion of a French naval force, he succeeded in rendering the colonists of Pennsylvania, and endeavoured also to render the people of Connecticut, tributary to the defensive measures of erecting batteries at New York. The Pennsylvanian Quakers were induced to depart from their religious principles, on this occasion, by the apprehension of affording a pretext to the British government for abrogating or altering their provincial constitutions. The people of Connecticut had much greater reason to entertain the same apprehension, and, by their refusal to submit to Lord Cornbury's exactions, they stimulated the hostile activity which he was exerting to realize it.

The preservation of the original charter of Connecticut had always been a subject of regret to the revolutionary government of England; and various attempts were successively made to withdraw or curtail the popular franchises which it conferred. We have remarked the encroachment attempted by King William, in the year 1693, on the chartered rights of the province, and the determined opposition by which his policy was defeated.[1] In the year 1701, a more sustained and deliberate effort was made to undermine those rights altogether, by a bill which was introduced into the English House of Lords for rescinding all the existing American charters, and subjecting the relative provinces to the immediate dominion of the crown. The preamble of the bill declared that the charters which had been bestowed on certain of the English colonies were prejudicial to the trade and customs of the kingdom, no less than to *the welfare of those settlements which had not obtained charters*; and that piracy, smuggling, and other illegal practices were countenanced and encouraged by the governments of the chartered colonies. An address of remonstrance against this measure was transmitted to England by the province of Massachusetts; but the principal opposition which it received proceeded from Connecticut, against whose charter it was more especially directed. Sir Henry Ashurst, who was the agent at London for this prov-

was carried alive by the Indians to Canada, and condemned to expire in torture. An application for his release by the French governor was rejected; and the unfortunate man was already attached to the stake, when a French priest, rushing into the circle, held forth a key, with which, he declared, that, unless the Indians desisted from their purpose, he would instantly unlock the gate of purgatory, and let out all the diabolical plagues of that place on their heads. Even the stubborn ferocity of the Indians was overcome by the terror of this threat; and without asking to see the gate or its lock, they surrendered their prisoner with great humility. Dwight.

[1] *Ante*, Book V., Chap. II.

ince as well as for Massachusetts, having obtained leave to defend the interests of his constituents at the bar of the House of Lords, represented that the rights and privileges established by the charter of Connecticut had been granted on weighty considerations, and as the meed of valuable services actually performed; that the colonists had, at a great expense, purchased, subdued, and planted an extensive country, and defended it against the Dutch, the French, and other public enemies; and that the fruit of their exertions had been a great enlargement of the English dominions and commerce; that on the charter there was reposed not only the stability of the municipal institutions of the province, but the security of the titles by which the inhabitants enjoyed their private estates; that Connecticut had never been accused, far less convicted, of abetting piracy or smuggling, and was willing to reform any illegal practice which might have inadvertently sprung up within her jurisdiction, whenever such illegality should be specifically indicated; and that the abolition of so many charters was calculated to destroy all confidence in the crown and its patents and pledges, to discourage all future enterprise in colonizing and defending North America, to create universal discontent and disaffection in the colonies, and to produce effects more prejudicial to the British nation than any of those which were enumerated in the preamble of the bill.

The force of these reasons, backed by the support which the New England colonists received from the English Protestant Dissenters, operated so powerfully against the bill, that it was withdrawn by its promoters. Lord Cornbury and Dudley, who had supported this measure, now labored assiduously to retrieve its failure, and to furnish Queen Anne and her ministers with some plausible pretext that would justify them in the public opinion for again attempting by judicial process or legislative act to annul the charter of Connecticut. Dudley engaged a venal scholar to compose a treatise, which was entitled *The Doom or Miseries of Connecticut*, and contained a tissue of slanderous charges against this colony, an exposition of the advantages of a general government for New England, and a warm panegyric on the administration of Sir Edmund Andros, prior to the British Revolution. Among other accusations, the assembly of Connecticut was reproached with an entire denial of succour to Massachusetts, — at the very time when Dudley's letters to them were filled with grateful acknowledgments of the liberal aid they afforded. The charges contained in this volume were communicated in a formal shape to the queen by Dudley and Cornbury; and there was presented along with them a complaint which these personages had instigated certain discontented litigants before the courts of Connecticut to prefer, and which imputed to the assembly of this province the most fraudulent and oppressive conduct towards an Indian tribe named the Mohegans or Mohicans. Lord Cornbury assured the queen that her authority would never be respected in Connecticut as long as the people retained the power of appointing their own governor; and Dudley directed her attention to an opinion which King William obtained from one of his crown lawyers, importing that "the crown might send a governor to Connecticut." The queen readily availed herself of this last pretext, and intimated to the provincial agent that she would proceed forthwith to exercise the prerogative which was thus ascribed to the crown; but she was compelled to arrest the execution of her purpose by a forcible remonstrance, in which, from facts and arguments quite incontrovertible, it was clearly deduced that the opinion of King Wil-

liam's adviser had reference to a hypothetical case, and was founded on the assumption that the colony was unable to defend itself. Lord Cornbury and Dudley were thereupon remitted to the proof of the complaints which they had preferred, and which, after harassing Connecticut with a vexatious and expensive controversy, were shown to be entirely destitute of foundation. The investigation of the complaint respecting the Mohegans, which involved a territorial dispute, was protracted for many years, but finally terminated in like manner in the triumph of Connecticut.

The animosity of Lord Cornbury and Dudley against this province seemed to be rather inflamed than exhausted by their successive defeats. [1705.] Aware that their exertions were seconded by the wishes of the queen, whose forbearance was dictated solely by the obstructions of legal formalities and the force of public opinion, they continued to produce against the government of Connecticut a variety of charges, some of which were so manifestly incapable of abiding parliamentary scrutiny or judicial investigation, that they could not have been intended to serve any other purpose than that of depreciating the colonists in the regards of their English fellow-subjects, and abating the general sympathy by which they were aided in the defence of their liberties. Among other proceedings of this description was the charge they derived from one of the laws published by the Connecticut assembly more than fifty years before, against the Quakers, during the general persecution of Quakerism in New England; and which, as it had been framed before the Connecticut charter was in existence, could never imply an abuse of the power which this charter conferred. A complaint against that law was presented to the queen in council, describing it as an ordinance recently enacted, and beseeching her Majesty's interposition to prevent the injustice which it threatened from being carried into effect. In vain the provincial agent endeavoured to prevent the sanction of a royal order from being imparted to this charge, by offering to prove that the law was enacted half a century before; that it had never been executed even at that time, and was long since deemed obsolete; and that no suspicion could now be reasonably entertained of an attempt to revive or enforce it, as there was not a single Quaker living in the colony. An order of council was issued nevertheless, describing the complaint precisely in the terms in which it had been presented, and annulling the law as a recent enactment, and an abuse of the powers conferred by the provincial charter. To give greater efficacy to this proceeding, the Quakers of London, who had been persuaded to support the complaint, and must, therefore, have known the explanation which it had received, presented a public address of thanks to the queen, for her gracious interposition in behalf of their brethren in New England; taking especial care so to express their acknowledgment of what she had done, that the public should not be undeceived as to the actual date of the law that was repealed.[1]

This transaction appears the more surprising, when we recollect, that, at the time of its occurrence, the only American persecution of which the Quakers had reason to complain was that which was inflicted on their brethren by

[1] The vindictive dislike which was long cherished by many of the Quakers towards the people of New England appears on several occasions to have obscured their moral discrimination. More than seventy years after this period, Robert Proud, the Quaker and American historian, with astonishing ignorance or shameful equivocation, published a copy of the queen's order in council and of the Quakers' address, with the preliminary remark, that "About this time (anno 1705), the Quakers in America seem to have reason to be alarmed by a singular act of assembly passed in the colony of Connecticut; the substance or purport of which appears by the order of Queen Anne in council, made upon that occasion."

Lord Cornbury himself in New Jersey.[1] Yet so strong was the hereditary resentment of these sectarians against New England, as not only to enfeeble their sense of justice, but to overpower their sense of present interest, and render them the willing tools of their only existing oppressor. Notwithstanding all the falsehood and intrigue that was exerted in this affair, it yielded no other satisfaction to its promoters than what their malignity might derive from wounding the feelings and calumniating the reputation of the people of Connecticut. This people, meanwhile, retained their virtue uncorrupted and their spirit undepressed, and encountered every variety of trouble with unconquerable patience, resolution, and magnanimity. Menaced at once by national and political enemies, and burdened with a heavy expenditure for the succour of their allies, the defence of their own territory, and the preservation of their chartered rights, they cheerfully continued, and even augmented, the liberality by which the ministers and the ordinances of religion were supported. They contemplated the varied scene of peril and déliverance depicted in their past history, and supplied by their present experience, with solemn and grateful elevation of regard; and, rejoicing in the preservation of their liberty, ascribed this blessing, and the victorious virtue which it rewarded, to the favor and beneficence of the great Arbiter of destiny and Parent of good.[2]

Although the policy of New York produced the effect of restricting the hostilities of the French and their Indian allies, during this war, to the northern colonies of Britain, there was another hostile power to whose attack the most southerly of the colonial settlements was peculiarly exposed. The Spaniards in Florida had been for some time preparing an expedition for the reduction of Carolina [1706]; and at length despatched against it a force by which they confidently expected to overpower all resistance, and victoriously establish the ancient pretensions of the Spanish crown to the dominion of this territory. Apprized of their design, Sir Nathaniel Johnson, the governor of South Carolina, exerted much skill and vigor to put the colony in a posture of defence. His efforts were seconded by the spirit of the colonists, who heard with undaunted firmness that the approaching armament of Spain was reinforced by a junction with some French ships of war. On the arrival of the combined fleet at Charleston, Le Feboure, the French admiral, who assumed the command of the expedition, sent a message with a flag of truce into the place, requiring its instant surrender to the arms of France and Spain, and threatening its capture by storm, if a submissive answer were not returned within an hour. Johnson, anticipating this step, had arranged the provincial militia, and the warriors of a friendly Indian tribe who marched to their assistance, in a disposition which was ingeniously adapted to convey to a hasty glance a very exaggerated notion of the strength of the besieged; and precluding the hostile messenger from the opportunity of more deliberate observation, dismissed him abruptly with the disdainful reply, that the enemy needed not to wait one minute for the answer to their summons;

[1] *Ante*, Book VI.

[2] Trumbull. Hutchinson. "Is it possible to review the sufferings, dangers, expense of blood and treasure, with which our liberties, civil and religious, have been transmitted to us, and not to esteem them precious? Can we contemplate the sobriety, wisdom, integrity, industry, economy, public spirit, peaceableness, good order, and other virtues, by which this republic hath arisen from the smallest beginnings to its present strength, opulence, beauty, and respectability, and not admire those virtues, and acknowledge their high importance to society? Shall we not make them our own; and by the constant practice of them, hand down our distinguished liberties, dignity, and happiness to the latest ages?" Trumbull.

that he was ready to sustain the threatened attack; and that, commanding a people who preferred death to submission, he would willingly shed the last drop of his blood in their defence. This dexterous parade of simulated force, which induced the invaders to proceed with more caution than they at first supposed to be necessary, was followed by an active and successful exertion of valor that consummated the deliverance and triumph of Carolina. A detachment of the enemy's troops, which were disembarked with the view of seconding by land the operations of the fleet, were unexpectedly attacked at daybreak by Captain Cantey and a chosen band of the provincial militia, who routed them in an instant, and, having slain a considerable number of them, compelled the remainder to surrender as prisoners of war. Animated by this success, the courage of the Carolinians could no longer be confined to defensive conflict; and, yielding to their ardor, the governor permitted Captain Rhett, an able and intrepid officer, who commanded six small vessels that formed the naval force of Charleston, to try the fortune of a bold assault on the superior strength of the invading squadron. But the enemy, disheartened by the check which they had received on shore, and the unexpected emergency of sustaining instead of inflicting attack, declined the overture of farther battle, and, weighing anchor, retired from Rhett's approach, and abandoned the expedition. A few days after, a French ship of war, arriving to join the combined fleet, and unacquainted with the discomfiture of the enterprise, landed a number of troops in Seewee Bay, where they were attacked and put to flight by Captain Fenwick and a party of the provincial militia; and they had hardly regained their vessel, when she was surrounded and captured by the little armament of Rhett. Thus terminated the invasion of Carolina, in a manner that reflected the highest honor on the conduct and courage of the colonists. The loss of men that they sustained was very inconsiderable; but the public satisfaction was not a little depressed by the heavy taxes which were imposed to defray the expense of the military preparations.[1]

The war, of late, had languished in New England. Vaudreuil, the governor of Canada, doubting the ability of the French monarch to dispense with a portion of the strength of his European armies for the reinforcement of the provincial troops, and perceiving that his Indian allies ceased to combat with their wonted alacrity and were desirous of peace, had, in the preceding year, sent a commissioner to Boston, with propositions of a treaty of neutrality between Canada and New England. These propositions were communicated by Dudley to the General Court, who declined to take any step in promoting an arrangement so inconsistent with their favorite and long cherished hope of an invasion and conquest of Canada. Dudley, however, continued artfully to protract a correspondence with Vaudreuil, and vaunted to his countrymen the repose which their frontier settlements derived for some time from his policy. But Dudley had now become an object of incurable jealousy and dislike to the majority of the colonists; and the intermission of hostilities served to increase his unpopularity, when it was ascertained that the chief benefit of it resulted to the French, who obtained an accession to their military stores from certain merchants of Boston, who were stanch adherents of Dudley, and whose illicit traffic he plainly appeared to have sanctioned, and was generally suspected of having partaken. Vaudreuil, finding himself duped by Dudley,

[1] Hewit.

endeavoured to rekindle the flame of war, and with much difficulty prevailed on his savage auxiliaries to resume their predatory inroads upon the frontiers of New England. With the view of stimulating their ardor, and increasing their attachment to the French interest, he despatched Nescambouit, a noted Indian chief, to the court of France, to receive from the king's own hands the reward of those cruelties that had rendered him the terror of the English frontiers. On his appearance at Versailles, Nescambouit held up his hand, and boasted that it had been the messenger of death to a hundred and fifty of the enemies of the Most *Christian* King. Louis received him with courteous demonstrations of friendship and esteem; loaded him with caresses; conferred on him a pension of eight livres a day; presented him with a sword; and, according to the report of some writers, elevated him to the dignity of knighthood.

It was not a mere vague desire or visionary speculation of the conquest of Canada that prevented the Massachusetts assembly from accepting Vaudreuil's proposition of neutrality. [1707.[1]] They had repeatedly urged the British government to undertake this enterprise; and their applications were seconded by Colonel Nicholson and other partisans of arbitrary government in America, who judged that an extended system of military operation, the presence of a British army, and the necessity of united contributions of the several colonies for its support, would promote their own ambitious views, and invigorate the authority of the parent state. The British government seemed at length to have acceded to the wishes of the colonists, who were encouraged to expect that an armament would be despatched in the commencement of the present year from England, for the reduction of the French settlements in Canada and Acadia. In reality, a considerable detachment of troops, under the command of General Macartney, had been destined by the English ministers to undertake this enterprise; but their services were diverted and the expedition intercepted by the defeat of the English and their allies at the battle of Almanza, in Spain. The government of Massachusetts, meanwhile, had made active exertions to assemble an auxiliary force to coöperate with the armament expected from the parent state; and though the detention of the English troops rendered the attack which had been contemplated on Canada impracticable, it was still hoped that the native force already collected might, with the assistance of the other New England States, be employed to strike an important blow, and perhaps achieve the conquest of Acadia. Rhode Island and New Hampshire willingly contributed to reinforce the troops of Massachusetts for this purpose; but Connecticut, alarmed by intelligence from Colonel Schuyler of a projected invasion of French and Indians from Canada, and engrossed with the defence of her own and the New Hampshire frontiers, declined to take any part in an enterprise to which the concurrence of her councils had not been previously invited.

Two regiments, composed of the forces supplied by the other States, and amounting to about a thousand men, commanded by Colonel March, were embarked at Nantasket, whence they sailed to Acadia under convoy of an English ship of war. [May, 1707.] Arriving at Port Royal, they made an attempt to bombard it; but displayed in all their operations a defect of discipline and skill which courage alone was insufficient to counterbalance.

[1] The union which took place this year between England and Scotland extended the licensed trade of the North American colonies to all parts of the island of Great Britain.

At a council of war, it was resolved, "that the enemy's well disciplined garrison in a strong fort is more than a match for our ill disciplined militia"; and, abandoning the siege, the troops retired to Casco Bay. Dudley was greatly provoked at this result; and the more so, because the attack on Port Royal had on the present occasion been specially enjoined by himself in opposition to the wishes of the General Court, which preferably recommended the devastation of the territory of Acadia. With more of headlong pertinacity than of considerate wisdom, he ordered the dispirited troops to return to Port Royal and resume the siege they had abandoned; and distrusting the capacity of March, but afraid to displace a popular officer, he adopted a practice familiar to the military councils of the Venetians and the Dutch,[1] and despatched three commissioners to the camp with power to superintend and control the proceedings of the nominal commander. So much insubordination and discontent now prevailed among the troops, that it was with difficulty they were induced to obey the mandate to return again to the scene of their recent repulse; and when they actually reached it a second time, the season was so far advanced, and sickness was spreading so fast among them, that success was plainly more improbable than before. Some sharp encounters ensued between them and the enemy, in which both sides claimed an insignificant victory; but the position of the invaders becoming more perilous every day, they finally abandoned the enterprise and returned to New England,—where their conduct was universally lamented and more generally than justly condemned.

While this expedition was in progress, the frontiers of Massachusetts and New Hampshire were ravaged by the Indians; and in the following year [1708], the intelligence that had been communicated by Colonel Schuyler was authenticated by the assemblage of a formidable band of French troops and Indian auxiliaries, who marched from Canada to invade New England. A scene of extensive ravage, rather than conquest, was portended by this expedition; but the force of the blow was broken, and the plans of the enemy disconcerted, by the abrupt desertion of two Indian tribes; one of which was terrified from advancing by an incident which they construed into an augury of evil,[2] and the other was induced by the influence and negotiations of Colonel Schuyler to decline a prosecution of the campaign, under pretence that they had contracted an infectious disease, which they were afraid of communicating to their allies by longer association with them. [August, 1708.] Disconcerted as well as extenuated by these desertions, the invading forces attempted nothing more important than an attack on the village of Haverhill, in Massachusetts, which they plundered and set fire to. Satisfied with this paltry triumph, they commenced a hasty retreat, but were compelled to abide a sharp skirmish with a party of the Massachusetts militia, before the woods afforded them shelter from farther pursuit.[3]

The disappointment which New England sustained by the diversion of the troops of the parent state from the invasion of Canada, and the mortification which attended the abortive attempt on Port Royal, served to enhance the general hope and joy produced by the intelligence that the English government had resumed its suspended designs against the French colonies

[1] This practice was likewise imitated at a later period by the chiefs of the revolutionary republic of France.

[2] One of the tribe had accidentally killed his companion.

[3] Charlevoix. When Charlevoix's *Travels* (Letters) are not expressly specified, it is to his *History of New France* that I refer. Hutchinson. Belknap. Trumbull.

on a larger scale of operation than was formerly contemplated, and with an activity and minuteness of preparatory arrangement that betokened immediate performance. [1709.] Letters from the Earl of Sunderland announced to the provincial governments of all the English colonies, except Virginia, Maryland, and Carolina, to which no communication was addressed, that the queen was preparing to attack the settlements of France in Canada, Acadia, and Newfoundland. The plan of operation (devised by Colonel Vetch, who had acquainted himself with the condition of the French settlements), and the extent to which the several colonies were required to cooperate with it, were distinctly unfolded. An English squadron was to be despatched in time to reach Boston by the middle of May, with five regiments of regular troops, which were to be joined by twelve hundred auxiliaries required from Massachusetts, Rhode Island, and New Hampshire, whose respective quotas were defined, and who were directed to provide transports and provisions for three months' service of their forces. This armament was destined to attack Quebec. A levy of fifteen hundred men was required at the same time from Connecticut, New York, New Jersey, and Pennsylvania ; and this corps was appointed to proceed by Lake Champlain to the invasion of Montreal. So little was the spirit of the colonists understood by the British court, that a general reluctance to comply with the royal mandate was anticipated ; and Colonel Vetch, who was despatched to superintend the arrangements of the provincial governments, was most superfluously authorized to offer the boon of a preferable interest in the trade and soil of Canada to those colonies which should actually contribute to its conquest.

The mandate, however, was received not only with acquiescence, but with the most cordial satisfaction, by all the colonies except Pennsylvania, where the Quakers, who composed the majority of the assembly, protested to Gookin, their governor, that the fundamental object and purpose of their provincial settlement was, to afford an inviolable sanctuary to the principles of peace and philanthropy ; that their principles and consciences would not suffer them to contribute a farthing for the purpose of hiring men to slay one another ; but that they cherished, nevertheless, a dutiful attachment to the queen, and in demonstration of this sentiment now voted to her Majesty a present of five hundred pounds, which was all they could afford to bestow, — and for the application of which (says a Quaker historian) they did not account themselves responsible. The zeal of the other colonies surpassed the limits of the royal requisition. Thanks were voted by the provincial assemblies to the queen for the promised armament from England ; and besides the quotas that were specified, independent companies were raised and added to the provincial forces. None of the States demonstrated more ardor than New York. The inhabitants of this province had been recently delivered from the sway of Lord Cornbury ; and had experienced only a gratifying liberality of treatment from his successor, Lord Lovelace, whose sudden death, after an administration of a few months, intercepted a dissension that would infallibly have been produced by the queen's instructions to him to insist for a permanent salary, and by the determination of the assembly to make no such arrangement. The command was now exercised by Ingoldsby, the lieutenant-governor, and the council, who manifested a zeal and liberality in the common cause that atoned for the selfish policy with which this province had previously been re-

proached.[1] Aided by the powerful influence of Colonel Schuyler, the provincial authorities negotiated so successfully with the Five Nations, as to induce them to consent to violate their neutrality, and contribute an auxiliary force of six hundred Indian warriors to accompany the expedition against Montreal.

Colonel Nicholson, whose experience and ability were highly commended by the queen to the provincial governments, was intrusted with the command of the forces destined to this enterprise, and marched with them at the appointed time to Wood Creek, where he awaited the arrival of the English fleet at Boston [May, 1709], — in order that the attack of Quebec and Montreal might take place at the same time. The troops of Massachusetts, Rhode Island, and New Hampshire were embodied with equal punctuality, and, under the command of Colonel Vetch, assembled at Boston, with their transports and stores, — eager to behold the signal of action in the arrival of the promised fleet from Britain, and fixed in expectation of a decisive and successful campaign. But the hopes of America were fated to be again deferred. The two armaments continued, in this state of preparation, and without the slightest intelligence from England, to await the arrival of her fleet till the month of September, when the advanced season of the year finally terminated the public suspense, and proclaimed that the expedition was no longer practicable. About a month after, a vessel arrived at Boston with despatches from the British government, which announced that the troops prepared for America had been suddenly required in Portugal to reinforce the defeated armies of the English and their allies in that quarter of Europe. Nicholson, meanwhile, after seeing his forces wasted by sickness during his inactivity at Wood Creek, had retreated, in compliance with orders from New York, whose assembly expressed the liveliest indignation at the public disappointment; and Vetch, after vainly attempting to promote a substitutional enterprise against Port Royal, which the ministerial despatches suggested to him, but which the English ships of war in the neighbourhood refused to assist, was compelled to disband the forces of New England. The chagrin and discontent which this catastrophe produced in the British colonies was proportioned to the ardor of the hopes that were disappointed, and the magnitude of the preparatory efforts that were rendered abortive. All hearts had at first been gladdened with the joyful prospect of a final deliverance from the encroachments and ravages of the French and their Indian allies, — of a victorious aggrandizement of the British empire, and a vast enlargement of the national commerce. And if the English ministry had fulfilled the encouraging assurances recently held forth by them, instead of sacrificing the wishes and interests of America to the most insignificant branch of their connection with the continental politics of Europe, it is impossible to doubt that this prospect would have been realized, and the French empire in America completely overthrown. It redounded, perhaps, to the lasting advantage of the American provinces, that events were otherwise ordered.

Among other topics of regret which were suggested to the Americans by this signal disappointment, was the mortality which had wasted the forces at Wood Creek. If we may credit the representation of the historian of the French colonies, the English owed this calamity to the treachery of their Indian auxiliaries, — whom the selfish policy formerly pursued

[1] The expenditure of New York on this occasion amounted to twenty thousand pounds; that of New Jersey to three thousand pounds. W. Smith. S. Smith.

by New York had taught to calculate the advantage of their own neutrality between France and England, and of preventing either of these rival powers from obtaining a complete ascendency over the other. According to the statements of this author, the Five Nations, or at least some of their leading politicians (whether from French suggestion or their own unaided sagacity), had embraced the opinion, that, situated between two powerful states, either of which was capable of totally extirpating them, they would infallibly be destroyed by the one, which, by conquering the other, should cease to depend on the aid or intervention of the Five Nations. Entertaining these views, and apprehending the conquest of Montreal by the arms of the English, a party of the Indians are said to have insidiously corrupted the water of which their unsuspecting allies drank, by throwing the skins, and other refuse, of the game which they procured by hunting, into the river on whose banks the forces of Nicholson were posted.[1]

A congress (as this memorable term was then, for the first time, employed in America) of the governors and delegates of the colonies which had sustained loss and disappointment from the late enterprise was assembled in the close of the year at Rehoboth, in Massachusetts, and attended by Vetch and Nicholson. Addresses of remonstrance and solicitation to the parent state were recommended by this assembly, and adopted by the respective provincial governments. Nicholson repaired shortly after to England, for the purpose of aiding the petitions of the colonists by his own personal influence and counsel; and Colonel Schuyler, whom the recent events inspired with equal surprise and dissatisfaction, resolved, at his own private expense, to undertake a similar mission; and conceived the idea of enhancing its efficacy by the imitation of a politic device, of which the example had been given by the French governor, Vaudreuil. With the approbation of the assembly of New York, which bestowed the highest praise on his patriotism and generosity, and made him the bearer of an address to the queen, he prevailed on five sachems or chiefs of the confederacy of the Five Nations to accompany him as ambassadors from their people to the court of England, and unite in soliciting the aid of a British force for the invasion of Canada. The object of this embassy (which appears strangely irreconcilable with the alleged transactions at Wood Creek) was not merely to second the application of the colonists to the queen, but to impress the Indian tribes with a lofty idea of the power and greatness of the English monarchy, and counteract the representations by which the French depreciated its claims to respect, and magnified the glory and advantage of an alliance with the sovereign of France. [1710.] The arrival of the Indian sachems strongly excited the interest and curiosity of the people of England; nor could a more effectual means have been devised of awakening a general attention in the parent state to the condition and wishes of the colonies. Vast multitudes of people continually followed the sachems with wondering gaze; engravings of their figures were circulated through the whole kingdom; the principal nobility displayed to them the magnificence and hospitality of England, in the most sumptuous banquets; they were conducted to a review of the guards in Hyde Park by the Duke of Ormond, and entertained on board the admiral's ship, in the midst of a fleet that was riding at anchor near Southampton. The skill of the directors of the London theatre, and the resources of its wardrobe, were employed

[1] Charlevoix. Oldmixon. W. Smith. Hutchinson. S. Smith. Belknap. Proud. Trumbull

to deck the persons of the ambassadors in apparel at once appropriate to their barbarian character and suitable to European conceptions of royalty. They were introduced to the queen with extraordinary solemnity [April, 1710], and addressed her in a speech importing that they had waged a long war, in conjunction with her children, against her enemies, the French, and had formed a defensive bulwark to her colonies, even at the expense of the blood of their own bravest warriors; that they had mightily rejoiced, on hearing the intention of their great queen to send an army to invade Canada, and had thereupon, with one consent, hung up the kettle of peace, and grasped the hatchet of war in aid of General Nicholson; but that, when they heard that their great queen was diverted by other affairs from her design of subduing the French, their hearts had been saddened by the apprehension of the contempt of an enemy who had hitherto regarded them with dread. They declared, in conclusion, that they were deeply interested in the reduction of Canada; and that, if their interests should be disregarded by the great queen to whose gracious consideration they were now commended, the Five Nations must either forsake their territories, or dissolve their alliance with England by a treaty of perpetual peace with France.

In compliance with the solicitations of the provincial assemblies and their Indian allies, the English government once more engaged to despatch an armament for the invasion of Canada; but only faint hopes were afforded of its arrival in America before the following year. These hopes, however, backed by the arrival of Nicholson from Europe with five small ships of war, were sufficient to induce the New England States once more to collect a naval and military force, which again assembled at Boston to await the succour of the parent state, and to endure another disappointment. Nicholson, discerning at last that no farther aid was this year to be expected from England, in order to lessen the mortification and animate the spirit of the colonists, determined to lead his forces against Port Royal, on which he had reason to believe, that, notwithstanding the advancement of the season, a bold attack could hardly fail of success, from the mutinous and extenuated condition of the French garrison. Arriving at Port Royal [September 24, 1710], the troops were landed with little opposition; and Subercase, the governor, perceiving, that, from the superiority of the invaders and the temper of his own soldiers, neither victory nor an honorable resistance was to be expected, waited only till a few discharges of the British artillery afforded him a decent pretext for capitulation. The fort and settlement of Port Royal, together with the whole province of Acadia, were accordingly surrendered to the crown of Great Britain. [October 2, 1710.] Colonel Vetch was appointed by Nicholson to the command of Port Royal, which, in honor of the queen, now received the name of Annapolis; and intimation was made to Vaudreuil, the governor of Canada, that, if he should continue to despatch his Indian allies to ravage the frontiers and slaughter the colonists of New England, the most ample retribution would be inflicted on his subjugated countrymen in Acadia. This threat, which Vaudreuil entirely disregarded, was never carried into effect by the people of New England. Harassed by the continual depredations on their frontiers by the Canadian Indians, they applied to Hunter, who was now appointed governor of New York, and besought him to engage the Five Nations to act for the common behoof, and check those

hostilities which were prompted by the instigation and waged by the auxiliaries of the common enemy. But as the Five Nations, notwithstanding all the demonstration of enmity to the French that was recently elicited from them, had never yet by actual warfare departed from their treaty of neutrality, and as New York was indebted for the repose of her frontiers to the respect which was still professed for this treaty by France and her allies, Hunter refused to embroil the Five Nations, for the sake of New England, with an enemy whom the pretext of neutrality still precluded from carrying hostilities into the territory of New York.[1]

Elated by his recent successful exploit, and by the popularity which rewarded his exertions to accomplish the favorite object of the colonists, Nicholson again repaired to England, in order to urge upon the British government the fulfilment of its promise to undertake the invasion of Canada. But, in consequence of the signal change that the ministerial cabinet of Queen Anne had now undergone, the colonists no longer expected a favorable issue to this application. A contest, of which the interest was extended to America, had prevailed ever since the Revolution between the Whigs and the Tories of England, and was inflamed of late years by the near probability of an emergence which promised to develope the farthest efficacy of the revolutionary principles, and once more to illustrate their features in broad and living display. It was now manifest that Queen Anne would die without leaving issue; and, according to the *Act of Settlement* of the crown, the principle of hereditary succession was, in that event, again to be violated, and the Elector of Hanover called to the throne in preference to the exiled brother of the queen. This was a catastrophe which all the Tories contemplated with reluctance, and which a considerable party among them sought to avert with assiduous exertion and intrigue. This party was opposed to the continuance of the war with France, and endeavoured, neither unsuccessfully nor altogether groundlessly, to persuade their countrymen that the hostilities on the continent of Europe had been latterly prolonged at a heavy and unprofitable expense to England, for the advantage of the Whig ministers, the commanders of their armies, and their continental allies. In the speeches and writings of the Tory politicians, though the Revolution was not expressly arraigned, the legitimacy of the principles on which it reposed, and of any farther extension or practical application of them, was openly disowned.

A violent controversy ensued between the two parties; in which the one defended the principles of the Revolution,—maintaining that they were indissolubly blended with the political system of England, and urging the people to contend for them as the national property and glory;—while the other, with a passionate and contagious zeal, strove to pledge the public sentiment to an abjuration of principles which they reproached as repugnant alike to the English constitution and the Christian religion. Sacheverell, the pulpit champion of the Tories, proclaimed that monarchy was of divine origin, and hereditary succession to the crown an indefeasible right; he denounced the Presbyterians and other Dissenters, who were universally favorable to the Revolution, as the enemies of England; and, exclaiming that *the church was in danger*, sounded an alarm which has often transported Englishmen beyond the bounds of reason and moderation.

The University of Oxford, at the same time, in full convocation, affixed

[1] Oldmixon. W. Smith. S. Smith. Hutchinson. Trumbull. Belknap.

its sanction to a decree that passive obedience and non-resistance were fundamental principles of the English constitution.[1] And though the House of Lords condemned both Sacheverell's sermons and the Oxford decree to be burned by the hands of the common executioner, and requested the queen to promote Dr. Hoadley, who had preached a discourse in vindication of the right of resistance to evil rulers, — it was obvious that the sentiments of the Tories were cordially espoused both by the queen and by a numerous party among the people. The mass of mankind, when unenlightened by education or experience, have always been partial to royalty, and susceptible of impressions favorable even to its most arrogant pretensions, — not only from their proneness to idolize visible greatness, but from the concurrent, though seemingly opposite, sentiment of a jealous aversion to brook the superiority of those who seem not to be lifted a great way above themselves. The grandeur and peerless supremacy of the master seem at once to elevate the general condition and to efface the particular distinctions of his slaves; and the maxim of the father of epic poetry, that *one prince is preferable to a number of princes*, may be regarded as expressing the universal persuasion of mankind that equality is more perfectly realized under a monarchical than under an aristocratical system of government. The queen had been swayed all her life by female favorites; and the influence which the Whigs at first enjoyed with her, and which her attachment to the Duchess of Marlborough contributed not a little to preserve, incurred a proportional detriment from her quarrel with this imperious favorite, and the transference of her regards to Mrs. Masham, who was devoted to the Tories. The expulsion of the Whigs from office followed very soon after, and was beheld with much regret and disapprobation by the people of New England. One of the first acts of the Tory ministry was the abandonment and reprobation of a policy which had proved highly advantageous to the American provinces. By the advice of her Whig counsellors, the queen had encouraged and assisted a great number of Palatine exiles to emigrate to her dominions in America; and several thousands of useful and industrious settlers were latterly added to the population of New York and Pennsylvania. Whether from apprehension that these people would render America a manufacturing country, or from mere enmity and contradiction to the Whigs, the Tory ministers prevailed with the House of Commons to pass a vote of censure of the assistance which the Palatines had received, and to declare that the advisers of this measure were enemies to the queen and the realm. It was the recent change of ministry which led the people of New England to doubt the success of Nicholson's mission, and to despair of receiving aid for extended warfare on France from the Tory ministers who now guided the councils of the queen.

The utmost surprise was consequently excited by the return of Nicholson to Boston [June, 1711], bearing the royal command to the several governments of New England, New York, Pennsylvania, and New Jersey, again to collect their forces to act in conjunction with an English fleet which they were desired forthwith to expect, and which actually arrived a very few days after. It was further remarked as extraordinary, that the fleet was not victualled, and that a supply of provisions for ten weeks was abruptly required from Massachusetts, for the use of the English troops. These circumstances, conspiring with the idea entertained by the colonists of the

[1] And yet this University sent its plate to the Prince of Orange, when he invaded England.

policy of the royal cabinet, induced a general suspicion that the British government had never seriously contemplated the conquest of Canada, and that the design of the present ministers was that the expedition should prove abortive, and the blame of its miscarriage be imputed to New England. This suspicion served only to excite the provincial governments to increased diligence of preparation; in which their activity was amply seconded by the ardor of the people, who, especially in New England, readily incurred every sacrifice that their rulers proposed, and even zealously anticipated and exceeded their requisitions. Even the Pennsylvanian assembly, with somewhat less delay than usual, voted a *present* of two thousand pounds to the queen. The neighbouring colonies exerted all their vigor and ability; New York once more prevailed with the Five Nations to send six hundred of their warriors to join her militia; Connecticut, in addition to her own share in the general equipment, aided New York with provisions; and in the other New England States, so active and industrious was the preparation, that, little more than a month after the arrival of the English fleet, it was enabled to set sail from Boston for Canada. [July 30, 1711.] The fleet consisted of fifteen ships of war, forty transports, and six store-ships, with a complete train of artillery; while the land army on board was composed of five regiments drawn from England and Flanders, and two which had been raised in Massachusetts, Rhode Island, and New Hampshire. Sir Hovenden Walker commanded the fleet; and Brigadier Hill, brother to the queen's favorite, Mrs. Masham, commanded the land force, amounting to about seven thousand men, and consequently very nearly equal to the army, which, under Wolfe, subsequently reduced Quebec, when the defensive resources of this city were much greater than what it now possessed. On the same day on which the fleet sailed from Boston, General Nicholson commenced his march from New York to Albany, where he shortly after appeared at the head of four thousand men levied in the colonies of Connecticut, New York, and New Jersey. He had advanced but a little way towards Canada, when tidings of the failure of the naval enterprise compelled him to return.

Admiral Walker, on arriving in the mouth of the river St. Lawrence, betrayed a want of judgment in needlessly staying the progress of the voyage for some days. [August 14, 1711.] Soon after it was resumed, the fleet was overtaken by a thick fog and a heavy gale, in the most perilous part of the navigation. The admiral, disregarding the advice of the New England pilots, preferred to consult certain French pilots whom he had procured; and, whether from receiving treacherous or erroneous counsel from these persons, or from his own jealous conceit and obstinacy in not adhering punctually to their directions, — for thus differently has the matter been represented by different writers, — the fleet was manœuvred so unfortunately as to be driven on shore in circumstances of imminent and general danger. Some of the ships sustained considerable damage; eight or nine of the transports were wrecked, and nearly a thousand men buried in the waves. The wind, instantly after, shifted to a point which would have speedily conveyed the fleet to Quebec; but, in consequence of the disaster that had befallen him, the admiral bore away for Spanish River Bay. Here a council of naval and military officers was assembled, and, after a short deliberation, resolved, that, as they had but ten weeks' provisions on board, and could not expect a farther supply from New England, it was expedient to abandon the enterprise altogether. The British fleet accordingly set sail for England, where

it had hardly arrived, when one of its vessels, the Edgar, a ship of seventy guns, with a crew of four hundred men, blew up; and as all the admiral's papers and journals were on board of her at the time, the real circumstances of the expedition and the causes of its failure were never satisfactorily explained. Admiral Walker and the other English officers endeavoured to exculpate themselves, by reproaching the provincial governments with unnecessary delay in raising their forces and victualling the fleet, and with negligence in supplying unskilful pilots. Nothing could be more unjust or more irritating to the colonists than such calumnious charges. The Whigs in England generally censured the ministry for the conduct of the enterprise: and Harley, Earl of Oxford, although a member of the ministerial cabinet by which it was undertaken, subsequently affirmed, in a memorial to the queen, that the whole affair was a contrivance of Lord Bolingbroke and the Lord Chancellor Harcourt to defraud the public of twenty thousand pounds. Lord Harcourt, in particular, was reported to have said that "no government was worth serving that would not admit of such jobs."

In America, the failure of the enterprise and the circumstances with which it was attended excited the keenest emotions of grief and indignation. Retorting the injustice with which they were calumniated by the English commanders, many of the colonists declared their conviction that they had been wantonly duped, betrayed, and pillaged by the queen and her officers; they insisted, with more circumstantial plausibility than so violent an imputation might be thought to admit, that the disaster in the river St. Lawrence was wilfully incurred; and some persons entertained farther the monstrous conjecture that the Edgar had been designedly blown up in order to conceal the documents of disgrace and treachery from public view. Persons of greater moderation rejoiced, in the midst of their pecuniary embarrassments, that none of the provincial troops had perished. A journal of all the relative proceedings of the New England governments and their forces was transmitted by Massachusetts to the queen; and three of the pilots were sent to Britain, in the hope that they would be examined by a court of inquiry. But no public investigation whatever took place of the causes of the disastrous issue of the expedition. Many pious people in New England, astonished at the numerous disappointments of their favorite project, renounced all farther expectation of the conquest of Canada; concluding that it was not the design of Providence that the northern continent of America should ever wholly belong to any one European nation.[1]

At New York, the public disappointment was aggravated by the apprehension of vindictive hostilities from the enemy. The most active endeavours were now employed by numerous emissaries of the French authorities in Canada to seduce the Five Nations from their attachment to Britain; and nothing could have more effectually contributed to aid their machinations than the recent instances of the retreat of the English from an encounter with the forces of France. Even the wisest of the Indian tribes were rather susceptible of politic impressions, than equal to the comprehension, espousal, and steady prosecution of an extended scheme of judicious and considerate policy. Strong symptoms of disaffection were manifested by some of the confederated tribes; and demonstrations were even made of an intention to embrace the French interest and declare war against Eng-

[1] Charlevoix. Smollett's *History of England.* Oldmixon. Hutchinson. W. Smith. S. Smith. Trumbull. Belknap. Proud. Holmes.

land. This extremity, however, was eluded for the present; though the probability of its occurrence at a subsequent period was strengthened by an event which distinguished the following year, and which at once augmented the forces of the Indian confederacy, and communicated to it an additional savor of unfriendly feeling towards the English.

The province of North Carolina, which had been totally sequestered from the hostilities by which so many of her sister colonies were harassed, now sustained a severe and dangerous blow from a conspiracy of the Coree and Tuscarora tribes of Indians [1712], who, resenting a real or supposed encroachment on their hunting lands, formed an alliance and project, with amazing secrecy and guile, for the total destruction of the European settlements in their neighbourhood. A general attack, in which a hundred and thirty-seven of the colonists of North Carolina were massacred in one night,[1] gave the first intelligence of Indian displeasure and hostility. Happily, the alarm was communicated before the work of destruction proceeded farther; and, after an obstinate resistance, the colonists were able to keep the enemy in check till a powerful force was despatched to their assistance by the assembly of South Carolina, and by Craven, who had recently been appointed governor of this province. An expedition was then undertaken by the combined forces of the two provinces against the hostile Indians, who were defeated with great slaughter, and compelled to abandon the country. The assembly of South Carolina appropriated four thousand pounds to the service of this war; and during the continuance of it, the assembly of the northern province was compelled to issue bills of credit to the amount of eight thousand pounds. Before a decisive ascendency was obtained over the Indians in North Carolina, the colonists fled from this province in such numbers, that, to prevent its entire desertion, a law was enacted prohibiting all persons from quitting the territory without a passport from the governor. In coöperation with this ordinance, the government of Virginia issued an edict, commanding that all fugitives from Carolina, unprovided with passports, should be apprehended and compelled to return.[2] Of the two Indian tribes which were expelled from the vicinity of North Carolina, the Tuscarora fugitives proposed, and were permitted by the Five Nations, to repair their broken political estate by engrafting it on this powerful confederacy: and as, in consequence of a supposition (founded on similarity of language) of their being a cognate race derived from the stock to which they now reannexed themselves, they were associated as a new member of the general union, instead of being intermingled with any particular portion of it, the confederacy soon after obtained the name of *The Six Nations*.[3]

The frontiers of New England still continued to sustain occasional ravages

[1] The Indians took a number of prisoners on this occasion, among whom were John Lawson, surveyor-general of the province, and author of a descriptive account, which has been improperly termed a history, of Carolina; and Baron Graffenried, the leader of a troop of Palatine emigrants. Lawson was murdered at leisure by the savages; but Graffenried extricated himself from the same fate, to which he was designed, by persuading the Indians that he was the king or chief of a distinct tribe, lately arrived in the province, and totally unconnected with the English.

[2] W. Smith. Hewit. Williamson. To defray the expenses of their military operations, as well as to promote domestic trade, the assembly of South Carolina now established a public bank, which issued bills of credit that were lent at interest on landed or personal security. By the same assembly the common law of England was declared to be the common law of South Carolina. Hewit. Drayton's *View of South Carolina*.

[3] Colden's *History of the Five Nations*.

from the incursions of the Indian allies of the French. Without the actual experience of similar calamity, the inhabitants of New York endured the continual apprehension of it; and their uneasiness derived no small increase from a series of disputes with Governor Hunter, which at first threatened to render his administration extremely unpopular. This man, the fugitive apprentice of an apothecary of his native country of Scotland, had enlisted in the British army as a common soldier. His wit recommended him to the friendship of Swift and Addison; and the graces of his person and manners enabled him to marry a peeress, by whose interest he was advanced to the dignity of governor of New York. In one of his first speeches to the assembly, he signified to them a repetition of the queen's commands, that they should attach an augmented and permanent salary to his office; vainly attempting to cloak the obnoxious purpose of rendering the governor independent of the people, by protesting that her Majesty was actuated solely by a tender regard to her colonial subjects, and an anxious desire to relieve them from the oppressive burden of occasional and uncertain grants to her officers; and asserting, with little regard to accuracy, that the royal wishes in this respect had received a cheerful and grateful compliance from every other colony in North America. The people of New York, he declared, had been distinguished above all the other provincials by an extraordinary measure of the queen's bounty and care; and he advised them to express their sense of this grace by suitable returns, "lest some insinuations, much repeated of late years, should gain credit at last, that, however your resentment has fallen upon the *governor*, it is the *government* you dislike." "It is necessary, at this time," he continued, "that you be told, also, that giving money for the support of government, and disposing of it at your pleasure, is the same with giving none at all. Her Majesty is the sole judge of the merits of her servants." He concluded with a hint that they were to obey and not argue with him, by observing, — "If I have tired you by a long speech, I shall make amends by putting you to the trouble of a very short answer." The arbitrary tone of this harangue, coupled with an encroachment which the provincial council attempted shortly after on the privileges of the assembly, and which they supported by a declaration that the assembly, like the council, existed "by the mere grace of the crown,"[1] threatened to revive all the disgust that had been excited by Lord Cornbury's administration.

The assembly refused to comply with the governor's demand, and adhered to their favorite system of providing by temporary arrangements for the expenses of government. To the doctrine propounded by the council they opposed a spirited resolution, importing that the council, indeed, not consisting, like the English House of Lords, of a distinct order or rank of persons in the constitution, owed *their* functions to the mere pleasure of the crown; but that the assembly enjoyed *its* privileges, and especially its

[1] This pretension was never abandoned by the British court, which, in conformity with the opinions of the crown lawyers, maintained that the constitutions of all the unchartered provinces arose from and depended upon the mere will and pleasure of the king. "On a question from New Jersey, in 1723, with respect to the number of representatives from certain counties or places, the attorney-general, Raymond, advised the king that he might regulate the number to be sent from each place, or might *restrain them from sending any, at his pleasure.* In 1747, on a similar question from New Hampshire, the crown lawyers, Ryder and Murray, informed his Majesty that the *right* of sending representatives to the assembly was founded originally on the commissions and instructions given by the crown to the governors of New Hampshire." Pitkin. These questions, Pitkin very justly observes, could be settled only by a revolution.

exclusive control over the public money, by inherent right, derived "not from any commission, letters patent, or other grant from the crown, but from the free choice and election of the people, who ought not to be divested of their property (nor justly can) without their consent." Hunter, who was exceedingly bent on accumulating a fortune, and was often reduced to straits by the failure of gambling speculations which he pursued for this purpose, found means to increase his emoluments by establishing a provincial court of chancery, in which he himself presided as judge. This was resented by the assembly as an unconstitutional act of power, inferring dangerous consequences to the liberty and properties of the colonists. But the dissensions which seemed likely to ensue from these occurrences were intercepted by the policy of the governor and the generosity of the people, whose conduct plainly showed that a resolute spirit is by no means incompatible with moderation and placability. Hunter — prudently lowering the haughty tone which he at first assumed, expressing both in New York and New Jersey an increased deference to the public will, and cultivating popularity by the exercise of those graceful accomplishments which had elevated him from the obscurity of his primitive condition — succeeded in establishing a harmonious correspondence with the provincial assembly, and in rendering himself the object of general and even affectionate regard.[1]

The conduct of Great Britain during the war was productive of disappointment and disgust to all the American colonies to which the sphere of hostilities extended; and the intelligence which now arrived of the peace of Utrecht was far from communicating general satisfaction. [1713.] Many of the colonists united with the English Whigs in regarding the treaty, which Britain concluded on this occasion with France and Spain, as a treacherous desertion of the allies, and of the purposes she had pledged herself to support, and as a preparatory step to the great design of the Tories to counteract the principle of the British Revolution, and exalt the Pretender to the throne of his ancestors, on the demise of the queen. Some articles in the treaty of peace related expressly to America. The conquered settlement in Annapolis, with the relative province of Acadia or Nova Scotia, was ceded to England, but the French were permitted to retain a settlement at Cape Breton; the Five Nations, or, as they came now to be termed, the Six Nations, were recognized as the subjects of England; and the French and English governments respectively engaged not to molest or interfere with the other Indian tribes, claimed as the subjects of either of the crowns. But the appropriation of this latter provision, as well as the precise definition of the boundaries of Nova Scotia and of the territories of the Six Nations, were deferred for the present by common consent, and with a great defect of good policy on the part of England. After numerous ineffectual attempts of the Duke of Shrewsbury and Prior the poet, who were the English plenipotentiaries, to adjust these important points with the ministers of France, they were professedly remitted to the adjudication of commissioners to be subsequently appointed, and practically reserved as the subjects of future contention. One of the provisions of the treaty reflects the deepest dishonor on the commercial policy of England, and illustrates the deplorable change that English sentiment and opinion had undergone on the subject of the slave-trade, since the sceptre of this kingdom had last been swayed by a female sovereign.[2] A French mercantile corporation, established in

[1] W. Smith. S. Smith.

[2] See the account of the rise of the slave-trade, *ante*, Book I., Chap. I.

the year 1701, with the title of the Assiento Company, or Royal Company of Guinea, had contracted to supply the Spanish settlements in South America with negroes, in conformity with a relative treaty between the crowns of France and Spain.[1] By the treaty of Utrecht, the Assiento contract, as it was termed, was transferred from the French to the merchants of England; the king of Spain granting to them for thirty years the exclusive privilege of supplying his colonies with negroes; and Queen Anne (who had already signalized her patronage of the slave-trade[2]) engaging that her subjects should, during that period, transport to the Spanish Indies one hundred and forty-four thousand of what were called, in trade language, *Indian pieces*, by which was meant *negro slaves*, on certain specified terms, and at the rate of four thousand eight hundred negroes a year.[3] For such purposes, *the Most Catholic King*, as the Spanish monarch was proud to style himself, and *the Defender of the Faith*, as the Protestant sovereign of England was denominated, could lay aside their religious and political jealousies and unite in terms of commercial amity.

When the peace of Utrecht was known in America, the Indians who adjoined and had so long harassed the eastern frontiers of New England, perceiving that they must no longer expect assistance from the French, or the Canadian tribes dependent upon France, sent a deputation to the government of New Hampshire, to propose that friendship might also be reëstablished between the English and them, and that a conference for this purpose should be holden at Casco. But Dudley judged it more accordant with the dignity of his government, that the Indian delegates should attend the English commissioners at Portsmouth; and there, accordingly, the chiefs of the several hostile tribes again executed a formal treaty, wherein they acknowledged the repeated perfidy they had committed, besought the queen's pardon for their unprovoked rebellion, and engaged to demean themselves in future as faithful and obedient subjects of the British crown. [July 13, 1713.] The frequent repetition and no less frequent breaches of these engagements had by this time much impaired the sense of obligation on the one side, and of confidence on the other. Both parties, however, had suffered so greatly from the war, as to render a present deliverance from its evils mutually welcome; and with the view of preventing its recurrence, and obviating the most ordinary occasions of quarrel and complaint, the provincial governments prohibited the colonists from holding private traffic with the Indians, and undertook to establish barter-houses, where public agents should be appointed to conduct or superintend all the commercial transactions between the two races of people. Unfortunately, this judicious purpose was not at present carried into effect.[4]

The war proved exceedingly burdensome to all the American provinces which engaged in it, and left the New England States, New York, and South Carolina embarrassed with the debts they had contracted to defray the ex-

[1] It was entitled, "Traité fait entre les deux rois *très chrétien* et *catholique* avec la compagnie royale de Guinée établie en France, concernant l'introduction des Nègres dans l'Amérique." Holmes.

[2] See the royal instructions to Lord Cornbury, *ante*, Book VI.

[3] This arrangement ended in the ruin of the British merchants who attempted to take advantage of it. It was stipulated that they should have leave to erect a factory on the Plata, and that, in case of war between England and Spain, eighteen months should be allowed to them for the removal of their effects. But on the breaking out of the war excited by Cardinal Alberoni, when as yet the British traders had made but one voyage, their persons and their property were instantly seized by the Spanish government.

[4] Smollett. W. Smith. Hutchinson. Belknap.

pense of their military operations. None of the other provinces suffered so severely as Massachusetts and New Hampshire. It was ascertained, during the eighteenth century, that, from the mere progress of native increase, a term of twenty-five years was generally sufficient to double the population of the North American colonies. But during the latter part of the seventeenth and the earlier part of the eighteenth century, the principle of increase was less efficient in Massachusetts and New Hampshire than in any of the other colonial settlements; and in the year 1713, Massachusetts did not contain double the number of inhabitants which it possessed fifty years before. The heavy taxes, occasioned by the wars which prevailed during that period, doubtless induced some of the inhabitants to transfer their residence to other provinces; but the actual carnage of war appears to have chiefly contributed to repress the growth of people. From the year 1675, when Philip's War began, till the close of Queen Anne's War, in 1713, about six thousand of the youth of the country had perished by the stroke of the enemy, or by distempers contracted in military service. From the frequency and fertility of marriages in New England, nine tenths of these men, if they had been spared to their country, would have become fathers of families, and in the course of forty years have multiplied to nearly a hundred thousand souls.

But the financial burdens entailed by the late war bequeathed mischiefs more durable and afflicting than the regret occasioned by the destruction of life. In imitation of the policy of Britain, most of the colonies adopted the practice of mortgaging their resources for the purpose of raising larger military supplies than immediate taxation could produce; and a copious issue of paper money enabled the provincial governments to render the future tributary to the present, and extend the consumption of war to wealth not yet realized. This dangerous practice was carried to a great extent in Massachusetts, where the current paper money very soon underwent a considerable depreciation, and produced much commercial fraud and gambling.[1] Public engagements which had been contracted, or at least enlarged, on the principle of evading the immediate pressure of their burden, found no generation willing fairly to fulfil them; and an increasing reluctance was naturally created by the lapse of time, and by the interest acquired by stock-jobbers and knavish speculators in various delusive expedients by which the public were induced to temporize with the evil, and which, seeming at first to palliate, always eventually increased its malignity. The pernicious influence thus exercised on the character of a numerous portion of the inhabitants of Massachusetts obtained an unhappy coöperation from the idleness

[1] "A public credit paper currency," says Dr. Douglass, of Boston, "is a great promoter of military expeditions. I have observed that all our paper money-making assemblies have been legislatures of *debtors*, the representatives of people who, from incogitancy, idleness, and profuseness, have been under a necessity of mortgaging their lands. Lands are a real, permanent estate; but the debt, in paper currency, by its multiplication, depreciates more and more. Thus their land estate, in nominal value, increases, and their debt, in nominal value, decreases; and the large quantity of paper money is proportionably in favor of the debtors, and to the disadvantage of the creditors, or industrious, frugal part of the colony. This is the wicked mystery of this iniquitous paper currency."—Douglass's *Summary*. An American writer far superior in sense and genius to Douglass, after a forcible exhibition of the evils of a large emission of paper money, remarks, that, "on the other hand, it was the occasion of good to many; it was at all times the poor man's friend. While it was current, all kinds of labor very readily found their reward; none were idle from want of employment, and none were employed without having it in their power to obtain ready payment of their services. No agrarian law ever had a more extensive operation. The poor became rich, and the rich became poor. Young persons were taught by salutary lessons to depend rather on their own industry and activity than on paternal acquisitions." Ramsay's *American Revolution*.

and vice which a military life promotes in its followers, and from the faction and intrigue engendered by Dudley's administration.

In Connecticut, the evils that attended the progress, and remained to be endured after the cessation of the war, proved a great deal less afflicting, from the energy of wisdom and virtue that was exerted to counteract them. The assembly of this province had labored during the war, by extending education and cultivating an increased strictness in the practice of moral and religious duties, to resist the contagion of that profaneness and impiety congenial to the habits and propagated by the example of soldiers. To facilitate the exertions of the clergy, they were released from all public taxes; and a similar exemption was extended for a certain number of years to all infant towns and settlements, on condition of their forthwith erecting institutions for religious education. Voluntary associations were formed to animate the public zeal; and addresses were circulated by these bodies, recommending "that there be a strict inquiry which and what are the sins and evils that provoke the just majesty of Heaven to walk contrary unto us in the ways of his providence; that thereby all possible means may be used for our healing and recovery from our degeneracy." For a considerable period of time, both during and subsequent to the war, the acts of the government of Connecticut consisted chiefly of a series of pious and judicious measures for cherishing religion and morality, and for discharging the public engagements that had been contracted by the issue of paper money. The government of Massachusetts was by no means entirely negligent of similar attempts to elevate and purify the character of its people. A few years after the peace of Utrecht, the pernicious institution of lotteries, which had been created by the spirit of gambling, and was contributing to spread and strengthen it by exercise, was suppressed by the assembly of Massachusetts; which at the same time passed a law restoring the primitive ordinances against idleness and immorality, and enacting that "no single persons of either sex, under the age of twenty-one years, shall be suffered to live at their own hand, but under some orderly family government." But in Connecticut, piety was now more widely and warmly prevalent than in Massachusetts; and was happily preserved from the insidious and depraving influence of domestic faction and political intrigue. The leading persons in Connecticut, too, were distinguished by the soundness of their views and the prudence and vigor of their measures in relation to the circulating medium of the province. A stable currency they clearly perceived to be essential alike to the civil and the moral prosperity of every commonwealth. Without it, the principles of commutative justice are unhinged, and the property and rights of the citizens rendered insecure. It serves to guard public morality by withholding numerous temptations to injustice, and disabling gamblers and speculators from perpetrating those frauds to which a fluctuating state of the currency affords scope and temptation. An unstable and depreciating currency is an engine of public injustice, imposing an unfair and injurious tax on the sober and industrious part of every community where it prevails. It disappoints all men, who are supported by salaries, of a part of their due; and tempts debtors to defraud their creditors, by withholding payment of their debts as long as possible, and then paying them with paper depreciated far below its nominal value.[1]

[1] "The Novanglians in general, the Rhode Islanders in particular," says Dr. McSporran, a writer whom we shall afterwards have occasion to notice, "are the only people on earth who have hit on the art of enriching themselves by running in debt."

It tends thus to impoverish the fair-dealing, laborious, and useful members of society, for the benefit of dishonest adventurers, whose gains and practices it is the interest of society to discourage; and in these and a great variety of other ways, proves a source of public and private injustice, and of incalculable injury to the morals of a people. Sensible of these truths, the legislature of Connecticut acted with the most scrupulous caution in limiting the issues of their bills of credit, and with the strictest honor and resolution in providing funds and imposing taxes for their seasonable redemption. The consequence of this wise policy (aided by the general addiction of the people to agricultural instead of mercantile pursuits) was, that, amidst the gambling and embarrassments that prevailed in Massachusetts, there was no redundance and little or no depreciation of the circulating medium in Connecticut, where a well regulated issue of paper money proved rather beneficial than injurious to the industry and prosperity of the people.[1]

Various statutory enactments relative to the American colonies were framed by the parent state since the accession of Queen Anne. The shipbuilders of England had long depended for their chief supplies of pitch and tar on Sweden, which, in the year 1703, was so blind to her own interest as to confer a monopoly of this important commerce on a mercantile corporation. The sudden and unreasonable increase in the price of those commodities, which ensued upon this measure, suggested to the English merchants and ministers the policy of drawing the national supplies of them from a different quarter; and the result of their deliberations was the adoption of a parliamentary statute,[2] in 1704, for encouraging the importation of naval stores from the American plantations. It was stated in the preamble of this act, that the stores required for the mercantile shipping and the royal navy of England were imported from foreign states, but might be obtained more advantageously from certain quarters of the queen's own dominions, and in particular from the American colonies, which, says the act, "*were at first settled, and are still maintained and protected, at a great expense of the treasure of this kingdom*, with a design to render them as useful as may be to England, and the labor and industry of the people there profitable to themselves." Truth was never more grossly outraged than by this pretence of the expenditure of the public resources of England in founding and protecting colonies, of which every one (except New York) was gained to the English empire by the unaided efforts of private individuals; all of which had defended themselves, without assistance from the parent state; and most of which were actually struggling with the expense and danger of a war in which the parent state herself had involved them. Premiums were tendered by this statute to all persons who should import (in vessels manned according to the requirements of the Acts of Navigation) into England, from America, masts, tar, hemp, and other naval stores; and in order to secure the materials of a part of this supply, the colonists of New Hampshire, Massachusetts, Rhode Island, Connecticut, New York, and New Jersey were prohibited, under high penalties, from cutting down any pitch, pine, or tar trees, of certain dimensions, growing on lands not already appropriated by private owners, and actually inclosed within their fences. By a subsequent act of the British parliament,[3] in the year 1710, the surveyor-general of the royal woods in those parts was

[1] Hutchinson. W. Smith. Trumbull. Holmes.
[2] 3 and 4 Anne, Cap. X. Raynal.
[3] 9 Anne, Cap. XVII.

required to affix a mark on the trees which he considered fit for naval purposes; and all persons, presuming to cut down trees so marked, were subjected to a heavy fine. In the year 1707, an act[1] was passed by the British parliament "for encouraging the trade to North America." The chief purpose of this act was to regulate the duties payable by the captors of hostile vessels carried into American ports, and to confer upon mariners employed in merchant ships trading to any of the North American settlements a temporary exemption from impressment into the service of the royal navy.

CHAPTER II.

Affairs of Virginia — Passage across the Appalachian Mountains ascertained. — Affairs of New England — Attempt to subvert the New England Charters. — Indian War in South Carolina. — Affairs of Pennsylvania — Administration of Sir William Keith. — Affairs of Carolina — Piracy on the American Coasts. — Theach, or Blackbeard, the Pirate. — Revolt of South Carolina against its Proprietary Government. — Affairs of New York — Administration of Burnet. — South Sea Scheme and commercial Gambling in Britain. — Affairs of New England — Administration of Shute — Disputes — and War with the Indians. — Massachusetts incurs the Displeasure of the King — and receives an explanatory Charter. — Dispute respecting fixed Salary between the Assembly and Royal Governor — terminates in Favor of the Assembly. — Affairs of New York. — Transactions in Carolina — Surrender of the Charter of Carolina to the Crown. — Affairs of Pennsylvania. — British Legislation. — Bishop Berkeley's Project.

Virginia and Maryland were the only two of the North American provinces, which, during the period that elapsed from the British Revolution till the peace of Utrecht [1713], enjoyed an entire exemption from the cost and the spoil of war. On the removal of Nicholson from the presidency of Virginia in 1704, this dignity was conferred as a sinecure office on George, Earl of Orkney, who enjoyed it for thirty-six years, and received forty-two thousand pounds of salary[2] from a people who never once beheld him among them. This arrangement, notwithstanding the praise which it obtained from some courtly writers and politicians,[3] appears discreditable alike to the justice and the wisdom of the parent state, which encumbered the colonists with the attendant burdens, without entertaining them with the show and splendor, of aristocratical institutions. But the mischievous effects of this policy were counteracted by the wisdom and prudence of the lieutenants to whom the actual administration of the government was confided by the English ministry. Edward Nott, the first of these, was rendered acceptable to the colonists by the moderation of his sentiments and the mild-

[1] 6 Anne, Cap. XXXVII.

[2] The annual salary was two thousand pounds, of which one thousand two hundred pounds was paid to the earl as chief governor, and eight hundred pounds to the lieutenant-governor, who was also appointed by the crown.

[3] Sir William Keith, in particular, who, though he admits that worthless and incapable men were frequently appointed by the British court to the government of the American colonies, extols the appointment of Lord Orkney, as a measure which must have proved beneficial to the Virginians, by rendering a powerful courtier the advocate of their interests in England. But "I must own," says Oldmixon, in reference to the doctrine of Keith, "I have different sentiments of the fitness of a nobleman to be agent for a colony in England; and as the inhabitants of the American colonies have a natural right to the protection of their mother state in all cases, and do otherwise pay well for it, they surely will never stand in need of any other mediation than the justice and reason of the thing."

ness of his manners; and, in the year 1710, he was succeeded by Colonel Alexander Spottiswoode, a Scottish gentleman of upright and honorable character, who had already distinguished himself by his attainments in science and his military valor and skill, and who now acquired additional celebrity by the ardor of his exertions and the genius and compass of his views for the improvement of the condition of Virginia, and the enlargement and security of the British empire in America. He applied his mathematical knowledge to the construction of roads and other works of public utility and convenience; he promoted establishments for the education of the Indians, and introduced the most judicious regulations of the Indian trade.

Outstripping the sagacity of all the contemporary politicians of Britain, Spottiswoode was the first of his countrymen who penetrated the great design of France for uniting her scattered settlements in America, which, though explicitly unfolded at a later period, was still, and continued for many years after to be, disguised from general perception by the insignificance of its initial operations. His attention was early directed to the means of extending the western frontier of Virginia, in order to intercept the communication of the French between Canada and the Mississippi. For this purpose it was necessary, as a preliminary step, to explore a practicable route over the Appalachian Mountains,—an object which had formerly engaged the consideration, but baffled the exertions, of Sir William Berkeley. The French alone were acquainted with the geography and resources of the regions beyond those mountains; and they made it a capital maxim of their American policy that this knowledge should be carefully withheld from the English, who had no farther acquaintance with the country than what they derived from the imperfect reports of a few straggling travellers and erratic savages. It had long been a prevalent opinion with the Virginians, that an insurmountable barrier to their progress was interposed by the Appalachian Mountains, whose rugged and desolate heights were trodden only by the wolf, the bear, the panther, and the Indians. Animated, however, by the spirit of Governor Spottiswoode, the assembly of Virginia consented to defray the expense of an expedition, which he offered personally to lead, for the discovery of a passage over this long respected barrier; and which, being reinforced by the accession of some of the most considerable persons in the province, who desired to partake the peril and honor of the attempt, was conducted with a great deal of parade and solemnity. The enterprise was crowned with success; a passage across the Appalachian ridge ascertained [1714]; and an increasing scope of British colonization suggested by a view of the fertile and beautiful region of which the barrier was thus surmounted, and which, as it was beheld for the first time by the colonists from the summits of the mountains, appeared to stretch on every side to an immeasurable distance.

When the public solicitude, which had been strongly excited by the supposed danger and difficulty of the expedition, was dispelled by the safe return of the adventurers, with the tidings of their successful achievement, Spottiswoode was hailed by the Virginians with acclamations of grateful, and, indeed, hyperbolical praise, which exalted him to an approach to the glory of Hannibal. His genius, however, was most conspicuously displayed in a project of which the honor was greater than the success. The passage of the Appalachian Mountains, and the knowledge he acquired of the territory beyond them, suggested to him the means of anticipating and defeating

the latent purposes of aggrandizement which he discerned in the colonial enterprises of the French; and in a memorial to the British government, he predicted the course of operations, by which the system of the rival power, unless seasonably counteracted, would be progressively developed; and strongly, but vainly, suggested the precautionary measure of constructing a chain of forts along a line and in positions which he himself had examined with the eye of a skilful engineer. His conjectures were subsequently verified; and the event more fully demonstrated his sagacity than if readier credit had been given to it. No better success attended the counsels he repeatedly addressed to the British government to adopt the prudent and liberal policy of indemnifying the Virginians for the expenses of the Appalachian expedition, — a policy which the parent state might have plainly perceived to be essential to her dignity and her consideration with the colonists, and which she could not neglect without suggesting to them the idea of distinct and separate interests. With less wisdom, Spottiswoode himself established a temporary order of knighthood in Virginia, under the title of "The Tramontane Order, or the Knights of the Golden Horseshoe." Each of the knights was entitled to wear a golden horseshoe on his breast, as a mark of distinction for having surmounted the Appalachian ridge. For many years after the expedition, this province continued to advance in a steady, but silent and monotonous, course of increasing culture and population, — so barren of remarkable incident, and so totally destitute of the irradiation of literature, that an ingenious historian has termed this the Dark Age of Virginia.[1] During this mute, inglorious interval, however, the foundations of national strength and greatness were securely laid; and a generation of statesmen, orators, patriots, and heroes begotten.

The accession of George the First to the British throne excited very little interest in any of the North American provinces, except New England, where it was joyfully hailed as a triumph of revolutionary principles over the views and designs which the Tories had entertained, and hoped to accomplish on the demise of Queen Anne. In consequence of this event, the English friends of Governor Dudley were deprived of their interest at court, and the government of Massachusetts and New Hampshire was shortly after withdrawn from his hands, and conferred on Colonel Burgess, as a recompense of this officer's services in the late continental campaigns of the British army. [1715.] This intelligence was wholly unexpected by Dudley, who had lately gained a considerable accession to his provincial partisans; but it announced a fall from which he could not hope to rise again; and calmly resigning himself to the final farewell of ambition, hope, and political fortune, he withdrew for ever from public life; bequeathing to his country a long continuance of party rage and cabal; and having excited a vehement jealousy of British prerogative, which lasted as long as the connection between Massachusetts and the parent state. The last official acts which terminated his administration seemed to denote an extinction in his own bosom of the interests and animosities which he had hitherto cherished, and graced his political demise with an unwonted show of forgiving mildness and liber-

[1] Oldmixon. Carver's *Travels in North America*. Wynne. Burk. Campbell. The historian of *The Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, in alluding to a particular era, ascribes to it "*the rare advantage* of furnishing very few materials for history; which is, indeed, little more than the register of the crimes, follies, and misfortunes of mankind." Gibbon. This is a just enough view of the actuality, but not of the capability, of history. Every social scene presents a spectacle and movement which genius and opportunity might interestingly portray. It is easier to paint a hilly than a flat landscape.

ality.[1] Sir William Ashurst and Jeremiah Dummer, the agents for the province at London, conceived somehow an apprehension that the appointment of Burgess would prove unacceptable to the colonists; and in conjunction with Jonathan Belcher, a wealthy inhabitant of Massachusetts, who was in England at the time, endeavoured to prevail with him to resign his pretensions in favor of another individual. Burgess, in consideration of one thousand pounds, which was contributed for the purpose by Belcher and Dummer, consented to gratify their wish; and the office, thus again vacated, was conferred on Colonel Shute, who, in addition to the reputation of principles friendly to liberty, and of a humane and generous temper, enjoyed the advantage of being connected with that party in England which was most esteemed by the colonists, and formed their chief engine of influence at the British court. He was the descendant of a family long distinguished among the dissenters from the established church; and his brother, afterwards Lord Barrington, was at this time a member of parliament and a leading supporter of what was termed *the Dissenting interest* in England. Shute had served with distinction under the Duke of Marlborough in Germany; and the address with which his arrival at Boston was greeted by the provincial assembly contained a flattering allusion to the honorable wounds he had received in the cause of liberty and religion. Tranquillity and harmony attended the commencement of his administration.

But the satisfaction with which the colonists of New England beheld the accession of the House of Hanover to the throne, and which a wise policy might have improved to the advantage of the parent state, was soon diminished by measures which demonstrated to them that their liberties were no dearer to the new dynasty than they had been to the old. In the very first year of the king's reign, a bill was introduced into the British parliament for abolishing all the charters of the various provinces of New England. Connecticut, on this occasion, distinguished herself by her exertions in the common cause. Her alarm was increased by the coöperation which the enemies of American liberty received from the descendant of the Winthrops, who was discontented, because an honorable reputation was the sole reward of the patriotic virtue of his ancestors. But his defection was more than counterbalanced by the generosity and public spirit of Governor Saltonstall, who, enjoying a large pecuniary credit in England, cheerfully transferred the command of it to the province and its English agent, and risked all his fortune in defence of the liberties of his country.

Dummer, the provincial agent, was instructed to employ every possible engine of influence to defeat the bill, and to spare no expense for this purpose. He was also employed to compose and publish a *Defence of the New England Charters*; and, being an accomplished and ingenious man, he acquitted himself of this duty in a manner highly creditable to himself and satisfactory to his constituents. He maintained that the colonists of New England, by the dangers and difficulties they had braved and surmounted for the enlargement of the British empire and commerce, had given a valuable consideration to the parent state for all the benefits that her charters conferred; that these benefits consisted solely of the privileges attached to the provincial constitutions; for the property of the soil had been purchased by the colonists themselves from the aboriginal inhabitants, to whom, and not to England, it rightfully belonged; and hence, to abolish

[1] He died in the year 1720, at the age of seventy-three. He was an accomplished scholar, and proved a zealous patron and liberal benefactor of Harvard College.

the provincial constitutions was to defraud the colonists of all the stipulated reward that they had earned from the parent state, and accepted in reliance on her honor and justice. He derided the supposed expediency of guarding against the independence of the colonies; protesting that a father might as rationally propose to plant a guard of soldiers around his new-born child, to prevent the infant from sallying from its cradle to cut his throat; and that, besides the feebleness of their estate, the several colonies were so much estranged from each other by religious and political distinctions, that it was impossible they should ever unite in an enterprise of so much magnitude and danger as opposition to Great Britain.[1] By the cogency of these arguments, and the powerful support which the colonial cause received from the English Dissenters, the promoters of the bill were ultimately compelled to withdraw it. Nothing could have been devised of more effectual tendency to foster in America the growth of sentiments and ideas unfavorable to British supremacy, than the prosecution and the failure of such projects; which left the colonists in possession of the animating impulse and enjoyment of liberty, and taught them, at the same time, to regard it as a benefit they had preserved by resistance to the wishes and pretensions of the parent state. Disputes of such a nature, and so adjusted, have a procreative faculty, and invariably leave behind them a quarrelsome posterity of jealousies and discontents.

New Hampshire, not possessing a charter, had been no farther interested in the attempt which was thus defeated, than as it betokened the encroaching policy of the British government and the general insecurity of American liberty. But a spirit of discontent and opposition was now provoked in this province by the conduct of the individual who was appointed the deputy of Colonel Shute. George Vaughan, the son of one of the most popular and public-spirited citizens of New Hampshire, had been employed for some time as the provincial agent at London, where he forsook the interests of his constituents, and cultivated the favor of the court, by suggesting measures calculated for the advancement of the royal authority. In a memorial which he presented to the king and ministry, he recommended the extension of the *land-tax* of Great Britain to New England; and, proposing that a receiver of this tribute should forthwith be appointed by the crown, devised an office which he probably hoped would be conferred on himself. His counsel was not embraced; but his subserviency was rewarded by the royal appointment of deputy-governor of New Hampshire. Here the peremptory style in which he admonished the assembly to establish a perpetual revenue to the crown excited general disgust and impatience, which he increased by his arbitrary conduct in suspending counsellors and dissolving assemblies.[2] Happily for the peace of the province,

[1] "It is for this reason I have often wondered to hear some great men profess their belief of the feasibleness of it, and the probability of its some time or other actually coming to pass, who yet with the same breath advise that all the governments on the continent be formed into one, by being brought under one viceroy and into one assembly. For, surely, if we in earnest believed that there was, or would be hereafter, a disposition in the provinces to rebel and declare themselves independent, it would be good policy to keep them disunited; because, if it were possible that they could contrive so wild and rash an undertaking, yet they would not be hardy enough to put it in execution, unless they could first strengthen themselves by a confederacy of all the parts." Dummer's *Defence of the New England Charters.*

[2] One of his speeches at the council board of New Hampshire is preserved by Belknap, and forms a most ridiculous specimen of pompous pretension, domineering insolence, and bombastic elocution. Personal slanders against himself he declares to be unworthy of his regard, — "but when revenge's mother utters bold challenges, raiseth batteries, and begins to cannon-

his administration was but shortlived. Prompted by vaulting ambition and insolent confidence, he attempted to restrict the control which Shute was entitled to exercise by his superior command; and asserted his own rival pretensions in a style so impetuous and disrespectful, that Shute was provoked to suspend him from his office. Vaughan then found that he had presumed too far on the support of the British court. The justice of the case, and the stronger interest of Shute, caused him to be divested of his ill-earned dignity, which was conferred on John Wentworth, a wealthy and respectable inhabitant of New Hampshire. The spirit that was thus excited in this province was probably the cause why Shute was unable to obtain, like his predecessor, a fixed salary from its assembly.[1]

The province of South Carolina was this year reduced to the brink of ruin by an extensive conspiracy of Indian tribes, which exploded in a furious and formidable war [1715], inflicting a bloody retribution of the wrongs that the Indian race sustained heretofore from the planters of Carolina. The numerous and powerful tribe of the Yamassees, who possessed a large territory adjacent to Port Royal Island, stretching along the northeast side of Savannah River, were the most active promoters of the conspiracy. By the Carolinians this tribe had long been regarded as friends and allies; they admitted English traders to reside in their towns, assisted the military enterprises of the colonists, and displayed a fierce and inveterate enmity towards the Spaniards. For many years they were accustomed to make incursions into the Spanish territories, for the purpose of warring with their own Indian enemies in that region. In their return from these southern expeditions, it was a frequent practice with them to lurk in the woods round Augustine, till they surprised some of the Spaniards, whom they carried off as prisoners to their towns, and put to death with the most barbarous and excruciating tortures. To prevent such atrocities from being committed and endured by human beings, the legislature of South Carolina passed a law offering a reward of five pounds for every Spanish prisoner whom the Indians should surrender alive and unhurt at Charleston. The Yamassees, tempted by this reward, sacrificed cruelty to avarice, and on various occasions delivered up their Spanish captives to the governor of South Carolina. Charles Craven, who now held this office, was distinguished alike by humanity and valor. He invariably sent back the ransomed prisoners to Augustine, charging the governor of this settlement with the expenses of their passage and the reward to the Yamassees. But this practice, while it illustrated English humanity, begot an intercourse between the Indians and their ancient enemies, of which the issue was injurious in the highest degree to the interests of Carolina, and not less discreditable to Spanish honor and gratitude. The Carolinian traders among the Yamassees had observed for some time past, that the chiefs of this tribe made unusually frequent journeys to Augustine, and returned from it, not with prisoners, but with presents.

ade the powers established by my sovereign, I acknowledge myself alarmed, which I will in no wise tolerate or endure." — "I cannot but wonder at the arrogance and pride of those who do not consider I am a superior match, as being armed with power from my prince, who doth execution at the utterance of a word," &c.

[1] Oldmixon. Hutchinson. Trumbull. Dummer's *Defence*, &c. There is a great deal of interesting information and ingenious argument in Dummer's little tract. Belknap. John Wentworth received his commission in 1717. "The celebrated Mr. Addison being then secretary of state, this commission is countersigned by a name particularly dear to the friends of liberty and literature." Belknap.

It was obvious that pacific relations were formed by the Yamassees with their enemies, without any communication of this important event to the governor of Carolina; and at length some of the Indians were heard to boast that they had dined at the table of the governor of Augustine, that they had washed his face, in token of intimate friendship, and that they now considered him their king. As this was an honorary title which they formerly ascribed to the governor of South Carolina, the transference of it to the commander of a rival settlement ought reasonably to have excited more attention and suspicion than it appears to have done. From the jealous rivalry that subsisted between the two European races, it was impossible that the Indians should cleave to the one, without falling off from the other. But the English, at peace with the Spaniards, and remembering their recent claims on Spanish benevolence, regarded with indifference the close connection that was formed between their rivals and an apostate ally, of whose ferocious and sanguinary disposition they had received numberless proofs. A short time before the security of the Carolinians was fatally dispelled, a Scotch Highlander, named Fraser, who traded among the Yamassees, was visited by Sanute, one of these people, with whom he had contracted a solemn covenant of friendship, refreshed, on various occasions, by mutual gifts and tokens of esteem. To Fraser's wife, a beautiful woman, whom Sanute had recently admitted into the covenant by the ceremony of washing her face, he communicated the warning intelligence that Spain had completely supplanted England in the friendly regards of the Yamassees, who now acknowledged the sway and the faith of the governor of Augustine; that they had learned to account the English a race of hell-doomed heretics, and were apprehensive of sharing their spiritual perdition if they should suffer them to live any longer in the country; that the Spaniards had confederated with the Yamassees, the Creeks, the Cherokees, and many other Indian nations, to wage a terrible war with the colonists of Carolina; and that they waited only the return of *the bloody stick*[1] from the Creeks as the signal for its commencement. He acquitted himself of his debt of friendship by counselling Fraser and his wife to fly from the approaching danger; offering them the use of his own boat for this purpose; and withal assuring them, that, if they were determined to remain, he himself, at the approaching crisis, would claim from his countrymen the privilege of acting as their executioner, and would despatch them with his tomahawk, in order to prevent them from expiring in tortures.

The imputation of such designs to the Spaniards induced Fraser at first to distrust the whole story; but, infected at last with the terrors that alarmed his wife, he collected his goods in haste, and took shelter in Charleston. Whether from his doubts, or from the hurry of his flight, he foolishly or selfishly neglected to propagate the warning he had himself received; and no precautions were taken by his fellow-traders to avoid or repel the impending blow. But about a week afterwards, Captain Nairn, the provincial agent for Indian affairs, who resided along with several Carolinian traders at Pocotaligo, the largest town of the Yamassees, was startled by observing an unusual gloom on the savage countenances of these people, accompanied with a demeanour that indicated at once constraint and agitation of spirit. Foreboding evil from these moody symptoms, Nairn and a deputation of the

[1] This symbol ought to have the more strongly impressed Fraser, from its resemblance to the Highland ceremonial of summoning clansmen to war by sending *the fiery cross* from station to station.

traders repaired to the Indian chiefs, and begged to know the cause of their uneasiness; assuring them, that, if they had sustained injury from any of the people of Carolina, they had only to demand, in order to obtain, redress and satisfaction. The chiefs replied, that they had no complaints whatever to make, but were busied in preparation for *a great hunt* the next morning; and the traders, deceived by the perfidy of this enigmatical expression, retired at night to their unguarded huts, and resigned themselves to a sleep from which many of them were never to awaken. The next morning, at break of day, the cries of war resounded on all sides; and in a few hours above ninety persons were massacred in Pocotaligo and the neighbouring settlements. A captain of militia, escaping to Port Royal, communicated the alarm to this small town; and an English vessel happening seasonably to enter the harbour, the inhabitants rushed precipitately on board of her, and, sailing for Charleston, were narrowly snatched from destruction. A few other planters and their families on the island, not having received timely notice of the danger, fell into the hands of the savages.

While some Indian tribes were thus spreading havoc along the southern frontiers of the province, numerous parties detached by other tribes were penetrating into the settlements on the northern borders; for every savage tribe from Florida to Cape Fear had united in the hostile confederacy. The safety of Charleston itself seemed precarious; and the whole province was desolated by the ravage, or agitated by the rumor, of war and massacre. In the midst of the general panic, and though the muster-roll of the capital enumerated, it is said, little more than twelve hundred free men fit to bear arms, Governor Craven resolved at once to make head against the enemy. He proclaimed martial law; laid an embargo on all ships, to prevent the transportation of aught that might be subservient to the common defence; and obtained an act of assembly empowering him to impress men, and seize arms, ammunition, and stores, wherever they could be found; to arm trusty negroes; and to do every thing that might be requisite to bring the struggle to a speedy and successful issue. Agents were sent to England to solicit assistance; and bills were stamped for the pay of the army and other necessary expenses. The application to England proved ineffectual; neither aid to sustain the war, nor supplies to repair its ravage, being afforded by the selfish proprietaries of Carolina. Yet, in this hour of need, the people were not left entirely destitute of friendly support. North Carolina now showed her willingness to repay the seasonable succour which she obtained three years before from her sister province, and promptly despatched a body of troops to her assistance. A liberal contribution of arms and ammunition was also furnished to South Carolina by the States of New England.

The Indian invaders who advanced from the northern quarter of the province having destroyed a settlement about fifty miles from Charleston, Captain Barker, with a party of provincial cavalry, was despatched to attack them. But, trusting to the information of an Indian guide, who betrayed him into an ambush of the enemy, this officer was circumvented and slain with several of his men; and the rest were compelled to retreat in confusion. A troop of four hundred Indians now penetrated as far as Goose Creek; where seventy of the colonists and forty negroes had surrounded themselves with a breastwork, and seemed determined to maintain their post. But, disheartened by the first attack, they rashly agreed to a capitulation, which the enemy readily tendered, and then violated without

scruple, by the prompt assassination or lingering torture of all the prisoners, whom their assurance of safety induced to submit. The Indians now advanced still nearer to Charleston; but their treachery and cruelty had roused the energy of despair, and eradicated all notions of treaty or surrender; and after some sharp encounters, the invaders in this quarter were finally repulsed by the provincial militia and their allies.

In the mean time the Yamassees, and the tribes united with their forces, spread destruction through the parish of St. Bartholomew, and advanced as far as Stono. Governor Craven, dispersing in his march the straggling parties of this wily foe, advanced with cautious steps to Saltcatchers, where they had pitched their principal camp in a situation which was well adapted to their peculiar style of warfare, by enabling them to shelter their troops behind trees and bushes. Here was fought an obstinate and bloody battle, in which the Indians, animating their fury by the terrific sound of the war-whoop, successively attacked, retreated, and again returned to the charge. Craven, undismayed by their ferocious rage, and supported by the steady intrepidity of his people, succeeded in totally vanquishing their force; drove them from their position, pursued them across Savannah River, and finally expelled them from the territory of South Carolina. This victory put an end to the war, which occasioned a vast destruction of property, and the slaughter of at least four hundred of the inhabitants of South Carolina. The Yamassees, expelled from their own proper territories, retired to the Spanish possessions in Florida, where they were received with the strongest demonstrations of friendship and hospitality, which convinced the Carolinians of the accession of Spain to the recent war, though they were unable to tax her with any overt act of hostile interposition. Two statutes were subsequently framed by the assembly of South Carolina, appropriating the lands that were gained by conquest from the Yamassees to the use of such British subjects as would adventure to occupy them. Relying on this assurance, a troop of five hundred men from Ireland transported themselves to Carolina; but they had scarcely taken possession of the lands, when, to their entire ruin, and with the most audacious disregard of the provincial faith and interest, the proprietaries caused the whole district to be surveyed and partitioned into domains reserved for their own private advantage. They reaped, indeed, no actual benefit from the appropriation of lands which there were no tenants to cultivate; but, unfortunately, it was the unoffending colonists who were the chief sufferers by this act of selfish injustice. The old settlers, losing the protection they had hoped to derive from the new comers, deserted their plantations, and again left the frontiers of the province exposed to the enemy; while the deceived and disappointed Irish emigrants either miserably perished, or retired to the northern colonies.[1]

Pennsylvania, meanwhile, blessed with liberty, prosperity, and a total exemption from the flames of war, and chiefly colonized by a race of men distinguished by the sobriety of their manners and the moderation of their sentiments and views, seemed to possess all the elements of national contentment. [1716.] Yet even this fortunate scene was not entirely unvisited by the bitter waters of strife and spleen; and in the present year an address to Governor Gookin by the assembly, of which a majority still

[1] Hewit. Williamson. Dummer's *Defence of the New England Charters*. Hewit is a most perplexing writer. A phrase of continual recurrence with him is "about this time," — the meaning of which he leaves to the conjecture of readers and the laborious investigation of scholars, as he scarcely ever particularizes a date.

continued to be Quakers, after a prolix detail of their petty grievances, concluded with the preposterous lamentation that they were debarred from participation in the happiness which was so plentifully enjoyed by the other American colonies. There was, indeed, one subject of just complaint which the Quakers in Pennsylvania shared with their brethren in New Jersey. In both these States, the affirmation of a Quaker had been accepted by the provincial tribunal as equivalent to an oath, till the year 1705, when this privilege was withdrawn by Queen Anne, and Quaker testimony excluded (except by inevitable connivance) from the courts of justice, till the year 1725, when the British government, after numerous petitions and remonstrances, consented to the revival of the original regulation.[1] This serious grievance, however, produced no abatement of Quaker loyalty to the crown, which was attested by frequent expressions of dutiful homage, and particularly, in the present year, by an address of cordial congratulation on the suppression of "the unnatural rebellion" which, in 1715, broke forth in Scotland and the North of England. But no share of the reverence entertained for the king was extended to the provincial governor; against whom every cause of complaint, however trivial or inapplicable, served to minister occasion of ill-humor and obloquy. The high repute of the province, as a scene of ease, abundance, and well rewarded industry, had latterly attracted increasing numbers of settlers who did not belong to the Quaker persuasion; some of whom were persons of very loose morals, and all of whom were averse to the policy by which the Quakers interwove their own sectarian usages and principles into the fabric of the general provincial law. Gookin, who was neither a votary of the principles nor a courtier of the especial favor of the Quakers, was suspected by them of inclining to their rivals, and favoring, in the distribution of office and otherwise, the recent settlers and poorer classes of people, in preference to the more ancient and wealthy Quaker aristocracy of Pennsylvania.

Numberless disputes and recriminations occurred between the governor and the assembly; in which he strongly denied the justice of their suspicions, and sharply reprehended their disrespectful behaviour to himself, while they retorted upon him with a ready flow of grave yet fretful rhetoric, and indefatigable reiteration. One of their most important disputes was occasioned by a riotous assemblage of people at Philadelphia, who interposed to prevent the trial of a clergyman of the Episcopal persuasion by the Quaker laws and judges, on a charge of fornication. The rioters insisted that the Quakers had no right to convert a charge, which, by the laws of the parent state, was reserved exclusively for ecclesiastical inquiry and censure, into a secular felony or misdemeanour, cognizable by courts of common law; and though the governor asserted the claims of the provincial jurisprudence, and suppressed the tumult, he was rated by the assembly for its occurrence with as much austerity and perseverance of rebuke as if he himself had been its open ringleader. The governor solemnly and indignantly repelled these insinuations; and the Quakers repeated them with their usual pertinacity and prolixity. In the commencement of his administration, Gookin heard himself extolled by this people, and William Penn decried by them as an unjust, ambitious, and illiberal man. But now he was assured by the assembly that all their grievances were occasioned by the eclipse of the proprietary's understanding, which abandoned the governor,

[1] The affirmation of Quakers had been previously declared admissible in Britain, in all civil suits, by an act of parliament in 1714.

whom he would have wisely controlled, to the pernicious counsels of evil men. Shortly after this disagreeable communication, Gookin, in a brief address to the assembly, apprized them that he was now to take his last leave of them, as he was assured that he would presently be superseded in his office; he requested them to consider the expensive voyage that awaited him; and without farther reflection on their conduct, declared that the remembrance of the prospects he had sacrificed in the hope of serving the proprietary and the people of Pennsylvania, the disappointments he had sustained, and the uncertainty of obtaining in England any provision for his old age, altogether weighed so heavily on his spirits, that he must pray the assembly to excuse him for the fewness of his words. Though possessed with a spirit of peevish, pragmatical disputation and self-conceit, the assembly was not entirely divested of a sense of justice even towards the objects of its jealousy; and this touching address elicited an immediate vote of two hundred pounds to the governor, to defray the expenses of his homeward voyage.

Gookin was succeeded in the government of Pennsylvania by Sir William Keith [1717], formerly surveyor-general of the customs in America; a man of insinuating address; a shrewd, plausible, supple, and unprincipled adventurer; devoid of honor and benevolence; governed entirely by mean vanity and selfish interest. His political career presents a moral picture not unworthy of attention. Owing his appointment to the crown, and intrusted with the protection of the interest of the proprietary, he began by devoting himself skilfully, but unreservedly, to the pleasure of the most powerful party in the province; and by his blandishments and dexterity soon gained in a very high degree the favor and good-will of the Pennsylvanian Quakers. In the prosecution of this policy, and aided by his natural sagacity, he promoted many useful measures, and became a popular governor. But he sacrificed without scruple the interest of the proprietary; and when, by the death of William Penn, this interest devolved to persons who were capable of discerning and asserting it, the wishes and orders of the proprietary family experienced equal neglect from the governor. Keith, perceiving that the Pennsylvanian Quakers were bent on promoting the absolute authority of their provincial assembly, lent himself cordially to their design; and in spite of the remonstrances of the widow and children of Penn, who insisted that he was bound to conform his conduct to the opinion of the provincial counsellors whom they appointed, he continued to be guided solely by the wishes and views of the majority of the assembly, and treated the injunctions of the council with the most open disregard, whenever they dissented from this standard of his policy. He occupied the chair of government for nine years; and when at length he was displaced by the proprietaries, the same cause that produced this mark of their displeasure procured him a seat and the possession of considerable influence in the assembly. Here he indulged the hope of being again elevated to honor and distinction by the subsidiary rage of party zeal, which he forthwith essayed to enkindle by intrigues that caused the second act of this political drama to prove shorter than the first, and quickly rendered him as odious to the people as he had already become to the proprietaries. Forsaken, then, by every provincial party and authority, he returned to England; and, as a last resource, betook himself to the favor of the crown, which he studiously cultivated by suggesting and advocating measures for

the advancement of royal prerogative in the colonies. He recommended, in particular, the immediate taxation of America by the British parliament. But his counsels obtained no contemporary notice; his servility was permitted to be its own sole reward; and he closed his life at London in poverty, obscurity, and contempt.[1]

One of the first transactions that signalized the administration of Governor Keith was suggested by the numerous influx of strangers into the province. Perceiving that the wealthier class of the inhabitants were less desirous of increasing the strength and population of Pennsylvania than of preserving the Quaker ascendency, which was endangered by the increasing resort of foreigners and necessitous persons of a different religious persuasion, he proposed to the assembly that some legislative ordinance should be enacted for obstructing such unlimited infusion of heterogeneous sentiments and manners. This illiberal counsel, clothed with the specious pretext of danger to the British dominion, and to the stability of peace with the Indians, from the number of German emigrants[2] who resorted to Pennsylvania, proved exceedingly palatable to the assembly, who urged the governor to adopt or suggest some measure for carrying his judicious policy into immediate effect. But Keith, having gained his end by demonstrating a spirit so agreeable to the views of a powerful party which he studied to please, was too prudent to proceed farther in a matter of such importance, without consulting the British government; and apprising the assembly that he had besought the king's ministers to interpose in the defence of the province against an inundation of foreigners, he gratified them with this additional proof of zeal, and with the hope that they might obtain the benefit they desired, without being compelled themselves to undertake the ungracious measure which they contemplated. But the British government would lend no encouragement to Keith's propositions; and the Pennsylvanian Quakers were not yet prepared to incur the odium of closing the resources of their large vacant territories against destitute strangers, and fugitives from misery and persecution.

Keith's counsel, however, was not forgotten; and we shall find that it was actually carried into effect a few years after he was displaced from the government. He continued meanwhile to gratify the assembly by an entire devotion to its wishes; restored to the Quakers (of whom many have always demonstrated a far stricter fidelity to the manners than to the principles of their sectarian society) their interrupted privilege of wearing their hats in courts of justice; and extolled with the warmest praise their "dutiful loyalty and amiable spirit with respect to government." The only instance in which he dissented from the opinion of the prevailing party in the province was in the support he gave to the proposition of a paper currency, which was eagerly desired by the poorer and more enterprising classes of the inhabitants; and which, though carried into effect, was restricted within very narrow limits by the apprehensive caution of the Quakers and other wealthy planters. In renewing the provincial treaties with the Indians, he commended to them the philanthropy of their old friend, William Penn,

[1] He died in 1749. His scheme for taxing America was published in a periodical work, entitled *The Citizen*. Some account of it is preserved in another periodical work, which, though replete with curious matter, is now almost entirely forgotten, — *The Political Register for* 1767. The original draught of the scheme is published in Burk's *History of Virginia*.

[2] Proud, the Quaker historian, suggests, apologetically, that the persecuted *Mennonists* of Germany were at this time resorting in considerable numbers to Pennsylvania.

and the pacific principles of Quakerism, to which he imputed the early advancement of Pennsylvania to a wealthy and powerful estate; but he enforced his recommendation of their continued friendship with the colonists, by assuring them that he could bring several thousands of armed men into the field for the defence of his people and their Indian allies. Some manifestation was made of the repugnance of Quaker principles to negro slavery by an act of assembly [1722] which imposed a duty on the importation of negroes into the province. Exempted now from political broils, and continuing happily unacquainted with the rage and desolation of war, Pennsylvania enjoyed a rapid increase of agricultural improvement, commercial enterprise, and the wealth and numbers of her people. But amidst this flourishing scene, the controversial leaven of human nature disclosed its virulence in a great increase of forensic litigation; a civil strife prevailed, less fatal, but more inglorious, than martial broil; and notwithstanding the institution of *Peacemakers*,[1] and the solemn and repeated remonstrances of the more pious members of the Quaker society, the surprising number of lawsuits, and the unchristian keenness and pertinacity with which vexatious claims and frivolous disagreements were pursued and prolonged, continued to afford a theme of sincere regret and benevolent counsel to all wise and good men.[2]

The situation of Carolina at this time exhibited a deplorable contrast to the prosperous condition of Pennsylvania. Recently afflicted with the scourge of war, embarrassed by their public debt, yet alarmed with the rumors of farther hostile designs of the Spaniards and the Indians, and filled with aversion and contempt for the selfish and oppressive proprietaries who claimed the sovereignty of the province, the Carolinians had now to endure a heavy accession to their calamities from the prevalence of piracy on their coasts. The commercial restrictions imposed by Great Britain gave rise to a great deal of smuggling in almost all the American colonies; and, under color of aiding in the evasion of those obnoxious restrictions, pirates were able, not unfrequently, to induce many of the colonists to traffic with them in their nefarious acquisitions. Some of the provincial smugglers, too, became pirates. Exasperated by seizures of their vessels and cargoes, and by the persuasion they entertained, in common with many of their countrymen, of the injustice of British policy, — hardened by the disgrace of detected fraud, and depraved by a life of lawless gambling and danger, — a slight exaggeration, rather than a startling change, of their habits was sufficient to transport them from the practice of illicit trade to the guilt of piratical depredation. These gangs of naval robbers were likewise frequently recruited by British sailors, who had been trained to ferocity and injustice by the legalized piracy of the slave-trade. Undeterred by the fate of Kidd, Captain Quelch, the commander of a brigantine which had committed numerous piracies, ventured to take shelter, with his crew, in Massachusetts, in the year 1704. A discovery soon took place of their guilty practices; and having been brought to trial at Boston, Quelch and six of his accomplices died by the hands of the executioner. In the year 1717, several vessels were captured on the coast of New England by Captain Bellamy, a noted pirate, who commanded a vessel carrying twenty-three guns, and a crew of one hundred and thirty men This vessel being wrecked shortly after on Cape Cod, the captain perished in the waves with the whole of his naval banditti, except six, who, gaining

[1] See Book VII., Chap. II., *ante*.

[2] Oldmixon. Proud.

the shore, were tried and executed at Boston. During the first presidency of Nicholson, a piratical band was captured on the coast of Virginia; and during the presidency of Spottiswoode, a troop of pirates were detected, in the disguise of merchants, in the same province, and four of them were executed and hung in chains. In consequence of repeated complaints, from the British merchants trading to the West Indies and America, of the depredations of these freebooters, who had formed their principal station and a regular settlement in the island of New Providence, George the First issued a proclamation, offering pardon to all pirates who should surrender to any of his colonial governors within twelve months, and, at the same time, despatched a few ships of war, under Captain Woods Rogers, who, repairing to New Providence, assumed possession of this insular den of robbers. Almost all the pirates, who were stationed there at the time, took the benefit of the royal proclamation, and desisted from their lawless pursuits.[1] [1718.]

None of the colonies was more harassed by the resort and the depredations of pirates than Carolina; and here, notwithstanding the proclamation of the king and the operations at New Providence, the evil continued to prevail with undiminished extent and malignity. Charles Craven, who, next to Archdale, was the most respectable and popular governor whom the Carolinians ever yet obeyed, had recently been succeeded in the presidency of South Carolina by Robert Johnson, the son of a previous governor, Sir Nathaniel Johnson. The new governor was a man whose wisdom, integrity, and moderation might have rendered the people contented and happy; but he was fettered by instructions from the proprietaries that provoked universal impatience and disaffection. Yet the people were discriminating enough to acknowledge Johnson's personal claims on their respect: and the vigor and courage he exerted for the extirpation of piracy gained him a great accession of popularity. Steed Bonnet and Richard Worley, two pirate chiefs who had fled from New Providence at the approach of Woods Rogers, took possession, with their vessels, of the mouth of Cape Fear River, where they again attempted to form a stronghold of piracy, and kept all the adjacent coast in terror. The governor with one vessel, and Captain Rhett with another, sailed from Charleston against these marauders; and, attacking them with superior bravery and skill, compelled them, after a severe engagement, to surrender. Steed Bonnet, who was a man of letters, and had held the rank of major in the British army, together with forty-one of his accomplices, was executed at Charleston. But piracy prevailed still more extensively on the coast of North Carolina; and this region had been for some time the haunt of the most desperate adventurer of the age, in piratical enterprise, and in every kindred crime.

John Theach was the name of this barbarous miscreant; but he was more commonly designated by his favorite appellation of *Blackbeard*, derived from his attempt to heighten the ferocious aspect of his countenance, by suffering a beard of unusually dark hue to grow to an immoderate length, and adjusting it with elaborate care in such an inhuman disposition as was calculated to excite surprise, aversion, and horror. He had once been acknowledged supreme commander of the banded pirates at New Providence; but for some reason forsook that preëminence, and, confining himself to the sway of a single crew, preferred to retire to the mouth of Pamlico River, in North Carolina, whenever he desired to refit his vessel or refresh himself on

[1] Oldmixon. Hutchinson. *Universal History*. Holmes. Howell's *State Trials*.

shore. In battle, he has been represented with the look and demeanour of a fury, carrying three brace of pistols in holsters slung over his shoulders, and lighted matches under his hat, protruding over his ears. The authority and admiration which the pirate chiefs enjoyed among their fellows was proportioned to the audacity and extravagance of their outrages on humanity; and none in this respect ever challenged a rivalship with Theach. The force of his pretensions may be conceived from the character of his jests and the style of his convivial humor. Having frequently undertaken to personify a demon for the entertainment of his followers, he proposed on one occasion to gratify them still further by an anticipated representation of hell; and in this attempt he nearly stifled the whole crew with the fumes of brimstone under the hatches of his vessel. In one of his ecstasies, whilst heated with liquor, and sitting in his cabin, he took a pistol in each hand, and, cocking them under the table, blew out the lights, and then with crossed hands fired on each side at his companions, one of whom received a shot that maimed him for life. He kept fourteen women whom he called his wives, and who were alternately the objects of his dalliance and the victims of his cruelty.

The county of Bath, adjacent to the scene of his retirement in Pamlico River, was thinly peopled; and Theach, protected by a strong guard, repaired frequently on shore, and visited some of the inhabitants who did not disdain to associate with such a monster, or who dreaded to provoke his vengeance by rejecting his advances. But his chief security was derived from the profligacy of Charles Eden, the governor, and Tobias Knight, the secretary, of the province, who were corrupted by the pirate's gold, and consented to protect him in return for a share of it. The notoriety of this league between the principal officers of the proprietary government and the most infamous ruffian of the age discouraged and disgusted every honest man in North Carolina, relaxed the bonds of civil government, and promoted a general depravation of manners. Enriched with his guilty spoil, and apprized of the operations of Woods Rogers at New Providence, Theach judged it expedient to secure an indemnity for the past, by accepting the benefit of the king's proclamation; and for this purpose surrendered himself with twenty of his men to his patron, Governor Eden, who administered the oath of allegiance to wretches by whom oaths were habitually employed as the instruments of fraud, the expressions of rage and fury, and the concomitants of rapine and bloodshed. A few of the pirates betook themselves to honest pursuits; while the greater number, still at war with human welfare, insulted and contaminated, by the spectacle of their wealthy impunity and the example of their vices, the society which they had plundered by their maritime robberies.

But it was impossible for a man like Theach, whose mind was loaded with such a weight of dark and horrible remembrance, to exist without madness or compunction in a state that admitted even the shortest intervals of calm reflection; and seeking a substitute for the vehement interest of battle, and a refuge from the torment of his conscience, in the excitement of gambling and the stupefaction of debauchery, he soon dissipated his riches and was reduced to want. Without a moment's scruple, he determined on a return to his former occupation; and having enlisted a suitable crew, and fitted out a sloop which he entered at the custom-house as a common trader, he embarked, as he said, for a commercial adventure. In

a few weeks he returned to North Carolina, bringing with him a French ship in a state of perfect soundness and with a valuable cargo, which he deposed on oath that he had found deserted at sea; — a statement which Eden and Knight accepted without hesitation. But it obtained credit from no body else; and some of the Carolinians who had formerly suffered from Theach's depredations, instead of vainly invoking the justice of a governor who openly connived at his villany, despatched information of this occurrence to the government of Virginia. Colonel Spottiswoode and the Virginian assembly straightway proclaimed a large reward for the apprehension of the pirate; and Maynard, the lieutenant of a ship of war which was stationed in the Bay of Chesapeake, collecting a chosen crew in two small vessels, set sail in quest of Theach, with instructions to hunt down and destroy this plague and disgrace of humanity, wherever he could be found. Approaching Pamlico Sound in the evening, Maynard descried the pirate at a distance, watching for prey. [November 21, 1718.] Theach, surprised by the sudden appearance of an enemy, but determined to conquer or die, prepared his vessel over night for action, and then, sitting down to his bottle, proceeded to stimulate his spirits to that pitch of frenzy in which he had often passed victorious through a whirlwind of danger and crime. From the difficult navigation of the inlet through which the assailants had to penetrate in order to approach him, and from his own superior acquaintance with the soundings of the coast, Theach was able next day to manœuvre for a while with advantage, and maintain a running fight. At length, however, a close encounter ensued; in which, after great slaughter on both sides, the steady, deliberate valor of Maynard and his crew prevailed over the rage and desperation of the pirates. Such is generally the result of contests in which the courage of the one party is supported by sentiments of justice, honor, and duty, while the spirit of the other is corrupted by conscious wrong and divided by ignoble and bewildering impressions of disgrace and shame. Foreboding defeat, Theach had posted one of his followers with a lighted match over his powder magazine; that, in the last extremity, he might defraud human justice of a part of its retributive triumph. But some accident or mistake prevented the execution of this act of despair. Theach, himself, surrounded by slaughtered foes and followers, and bleeding from numerous wounds, in the act of stepping back to cock a pistol, fainted from loss of blood, and expired on the spot. The few survivors of the piratical crew threw down their arms, and, suing for life, were spared from the sword, and delivered over to a more suitable death.[1] Though piracy sustained an important check from the various operations to which we have adverted, it still continued to linger in the American seas; and about five years after this period, no fewer than twenty-six pirates were executed at the same time by the sentence of an admiralty court in Rhode Island.[2]

The extirpation of the pirates who had infested the coasts of Carolina, though it delivered the inhabitants from a grievous calamity, nowise tended to mitigate the discontent which the conduct of their proprietary sovereigns had provoked. In the southern province, the people subdued the pirates

[1] Oldmixon. Wynne. Hewit. Williamson. M'Kinnen's *Tour through the British West Indies*. Howell's *State Trials*. One of the earliest literary compositions of Dr. Franklin (at this time apprentice to a printer in Massachusetts) was a ballad on the death of the pirate Theach, which was sung through the streets of Boston. Franklin's *Memoirs*.

[2] Oldmixon. Holmes. Some of the pirates executed on this last occasion were natives of Rhode Island, Connecticut, New York, and Virginia.

and defended themselves against the Spaniards and the Indians by their own unassisted exertions; and in the northern province, piracy had been abetted by the unprincipled venality of the proprietary officers. Yet it was in South Carolina that impatience and disaffection most strongly and generally prevailed. To this, as the wealthiest of the two provinces, the proprietaries devoted the largest share of their attention; and their policy of late years was increasingly offensive to the people. They not only repealed some useful and important laws which had been ratified by their own provincial deputies and suffered for a while to endure, but latterly commanded the governor to give assent to no law whatever till after a draught of it had been submitted to themselves in England and sanctioned by their express approbation. Among other measures which the colonists were desirous of adopting was one intended to counteract the inconvenience arising from the scarcity of money occasioned by the late wars, to the expenses of which the proprietaries had contributed nothing, though they owed the preservation of their large estates to the repulse of the enemy. The assembly proposed to appreciate the exchangeable value of country commodities, and declare them, at such estimated price, a legal tender for the payment of all debts. But this was firmly resisted by the proprietaries. Instead of demonstrating a liberal confidence in the people, they sought to divide them by party spirit, and manage them by corruption and intrigue.

Of the agents whom they employed for this purpose the most notable was Nicholas Trott, a man whose talents, information, and apparent zeal for provincial liberty had gained him a high consideration with his fellow-colonists of South Carolina. Finding Trott willing to exchange honor for profit, the proprietaries appointed him chief justice of the province, and added to this promotion various other offices of power and emolument. In return for their favors, he traduced to them the people whose interests he had deserted, encouraged their most unjust pretensions, and reinforced by his counsel their objections to every liberal and popular design. Universal disgust attended the detection of Trott's perfidious intrigues; and the proprietaries gained nothing from their connection with him but a copious supply of pernicious counsel, and a just share of the detestation with which his apostasy was regarded. In addition to his other demerits, Trott, who had now contracted an insatiable appetite for money, was guilty of gross partiality and corruption in the discharge of his judicial functions. The assembly proposed to impeach him for this offence; but he defied their resentment, and, relying on his commission from the proprietaries, protested that he was answerable to them alone for the manner in which he discharged the trust conferred by it. Governor Johnson and a majority of the council united with the assembly in strongly reprobating the judicial malversation of Trott, but lamented their inability to suspend his functions. They offered, however, to join with the assembly in demanding redress in a competent form; and a commissioner was accordingly deputed from the province to England, to solicit from the proprietaries the removal of their chief justice, and a remission or modification of the illiberal instructions which had been lately communicated to the governor. On the arrival of the commissioner at London [1719[1]], he found that Lord Carteret, the

[1] Londonderry, in New Hampshire, was colonized this year by about a hundred families of emigrants from Ulster, in Ireland. They were the descendants of Scotch Presbyterians, who were induced, in the reign of James the First, to settle in Ireland; and, sharing the sufferings of that unhappy country in the reigns of Charles the First and James the Second,

palatine of the province, was absent as the ambassador of Great Britain at the court of Sweden; and after an attendance of three months on the other proprietaries, he was at last informed by them that they had ascertained from Trott's letters that the complaints against him originated solely in a factious opposition to the proprietary government; and that, confiding in the fidelity of their minister and the wisdom of their own policy, they would neither displace the one nor retract the other. They signified in haughty strains to the governor, the council, and the assembly, that the proprietaries had received their disloyal and presumptuous application with the highest displeasure and surprise. In farther testimony of these sentiments, they commanded the governor to displace all the counsellors who had united with him and the assembly in promoting the late deputation, and to fill the vacated offices with certain individuals whom they particularized, and who had been gained by Trott, and recommended by him to their favor. On receiving this communication, Johnson plainly foresaw, from the temper of the people, that a social convulsion would ensue; but, true to imagined duty, he shrunk not from executing his orders.

About this time a rupture having taken place between the courts of Great Britain and Spain, a project of invading South Carolina and the island of New Providence was formed at Havana, the capital of the Spanish settlements in the island of Cuba, and an armament was collected there for the expedition. Johnson, apprized of the danger, summoned the provincial assembly to assist him in putting their country in a posture of defence. This requisition brought the dissensions between the proprietary government and the people to a crisis. The assembly refused to bestow the smallest pittance of the public money; and their resolution, far from being weakened, was confirmed and precipitated by the officious interposition of the chief justice in support of the governor's demand. But, though determined no longer to spend their resources in defence of the proprietary system, it was not their intention to leave the colony a defenceless prey to the Spaniards. An association was promptly formed by them for uniting the whole provincial population in opposition at once to the foreign enemy and the proprietary government; and the instrument of union which expressed this purpose was instantly circulated through the province, and subscribed by every one of the inhabitants, except a very few retainers of the disowned authority. Governor Johnson, after a fruitless altercation with the assembly, who vainly solicited him to unite with them, and accept a delegation of supreme authority from their hands, attempted to dissolve them by proclamation, and retired from Charleston to the country, in the hope that the popular ferment would gradually subside. But the assembly ordered the proclamation to be wrested from the marshal's hands; and allowing no time for a relaxation of the general ardor, proceeded vigorously to consummate the provincial revolt. Meeting on the summons of their own speaker, and with the entire acquiescence of their fellow-citizens, they chose Colonel Moore,

had conceived an ardent and inextinguishable thirst for civil and religious liberty. Notwithstanding the triumph of the Protestant cause at the British Revolution, some penal laws which were still permitted to subsist against Protestant Dissenters in Ireland, together with the inconveniences of tithes and high rents, prompted a number of these people to emigrate to North America. They regarded the residence of their race in Ireland as a state of bondage, and nothing was more offensive to them than to be termed Irish people. They introduced the foot-spinning-wheel and the culture of potatoes into America. Thus Ireland repaid America for her original boon. Belknap. *Ante*, Book I., Chap. I. In the same year the Aurora Borealis was first descried in New England, and beheld with general alarm; being regarded as a sign of the last judgment. Holmes. See Note I., at the end of the volume.

a man of bold, enterprising temper, to fill the office they had tendered to Johnson; and on a day which they previously announced, proclaimed him governor of South Carolina, not under the proprietaries, but *in the name of the king*. To the new governor, and to the individual whom they appointed chief justice, they assigned salaries twice as large as the emoluments which were attached to these offices under the proprietary system. They next chose twelve counsellors, of whom Sir Hovenden Walker (who had emigrated to this province) was named president; and thus completed the structure of a provincial government framed in conformity with the general will.

The late governor, who had attempted meanwhile to disconcert their measures, and succeeded in creating some embarrassment, now made his last and boldest effort to compel the recognition of his authority. He engaged the commanders of some British ships of war to bring their vessels in front of Charleston; and threatened to lay the city in ashes, unless an immediate submission to the proprietary dominion were declared. But the people, having arms in their hands and forts in their possession, bade defiance to his menace; and now finding the proprietary cause hopeless, he abandoned all farther attempts to support it. The conduct of Rhett, who had more than once distinguished himself as a naval officer in the service of his fellow-colonists, was, during this revolution, strangely equivocal. He had accepted offices of emolument from the proprietaries, and for some time prior to the revolt was accounted their partisan and the coadjutor of Trott. But he refused to act in concert with Johnson; and, uniting with the insurgents, obtained their confidence, and preserved his emoluments. Notwithstanding this, Rhett preserved his credit with the proprietaries, to whom he represented his acceptance of a popular commission as a device to which he resorted for the purpose of more effectually serving their interests; protesting, moreover, that the inflexibility of Johnson was one of the main sources of the discontent and defection of the people, and utterly inconsistent with good policy; and that, in the experience of every country, there were seasons when the minds of men would not bend to mere customary authority, when the rigid exertion of official power tended inevitably to defeat its own object, and when lenity proved a far more efficacious remedy than severity to counteract the stream of disaffection against existing rulers and established institutions.

During this revolutionary movement, the Spaniards sailed from Havana with a fleet of fourteen ships, and a land force consisting of twelve hundred men, against South Carolina and the island of New Providence. Johnson represented to the Carolinians the dangerous consequences of military operations under illegitimate command, assuring them, that, in case of defeat, they could expect only the treatment of pirates; but the people adhered firmly to their purpose; and the provincial assembly, or convention (as they styled themselves), continued to transact business with the governor whom they had appointed. Martial law was proclaimed; all the inhabitants of the province were summoned to Charleston, for the defence of the capital; and heavy taxes were imposed,—from which, by a rare instance of generous forbearance, the late Governor Johnson and his estates alone were exempted. This magnanimous people were averse to render the fortune of a brave and honorable man, whom circumstances, rather than his own disposition, had placed in a state of controversy with them, tributary to a

triumph over his own principles and dignity. Happily for Carolina, the Spaniards, eager to acquire possession of the Gulf of Florida, resolved that their expedition should commence with the attack of New Providence. They were vigorously repulsed from this island by Commodore Rogers; and soon after lost the greater part of their fleet in a storm. From a repetition of their enterprise, which they subsequently prepared to undertake, they were deterred by the arrival on the provincial coast of a British ship of war commanded by Captain (afterwards Lord) Anson, so renowned at a later period by his voyage round the world, who displayed a skill and vigor in behalf of the province that procured him the most flattering and valuable testimonials of grateful approbation from its inhabitants.

What might have been the result of these revolutionary measures of the people of South Carolina, if they had been disallowed by the British government, it is impossible to divine. During the absence from Britain of George the First, who was visiting his Hanoverian dominions [1720], the agent for the people of South Carolina and the proprietaries of this province maintained their controversy before the Lords of Regency and Council at London, who pronounced as their opinion that the proprietaries had forfeited their charter. In conformity with this censure, the attorney-general was ordered to institute legal proceedings for accomplishing the formal dissolution of the charter; and in the mean time, that active and ambitious adventurer, who now bore the rank of general and the title of Sir Francis Nicholson, was appointed governor of South Carolina by a commission from the king. Thus the colonists of this province, after an irksome endurance of the odious and despicable sway of their proprietaries, by one bold and irregular effort, succeeded in emancipating themselves from the proprietary system, and in placing their country under the immediate protection of the crown of Great Britain. It had long been suspected that the spirit of discontent and turbulence, so strongly manifested in both the provinces of Carolina, was nourished in a great measure by the nature of their government; and that the colonists scanned the administration of an officer appointed by their own fellow-subjects with less reverence and indulgence than they might be expected to bestow on the conduct of one who claimed the dazzling title of the representative of royalty. In South Carolina, though the forms of proprietary government were abolished, the legal substance of proprietary right still subsisted. In North Carolina, the forms of obedience to proprietary jurisdiction were still observed; but the people continued sullen, disorderly, and discontented with their situation.[1]

Hunter was succeeded this year in the government of New York and New Jersey by William Burnet, son of the celebrated English bishop and historian; a man of superior sense, talent, and address; pious, though of a convivial disposition; a learned scholar and astronomer, and yet a shrewd politician and both active and skilful in the conduct of business. He labored with equal wisdom and assiduity to promote the welfare of the province, and cultivated the favor of the people with a success which only the clamors and intrigues of an interested faction prevented from being as entire and immediate as it proved lasting and honorable. Though, in the close of his administration, his popularity was eclipsed by the artifices of those who opposed his views, the testimony that farther experience afforded of the tendency of these views to promote the general good gained him a

[1] Hewit. Ramsay's *History of the Revolution of South Carolina.* Williamson. *Life of Lord Anson.*

time-honored name, and a reputation coequal with his deserts; and more than twenty years after his death, the Swedish philosopher Kalm, during his travels in America, heard Burnet's worth commemorated with grateful praise by this people, who lamented him as the best governor they had ever obeyed. He had been comptroller-general of the customs at London, and now made an exchange of official position with Governor Hunter. Aided by the counsels of Livingston and Alexander, two of the most considerable inhabitants of New York, Morris, the chief justice, and the learned and ingenious Dr. Colden, author of the history of the Five Nations, and afterwards deputy-governor of the province, — Burnet pursued with indefatigable zeal and industry the most judicious plans for improving the relations between the colonists and their ancient Indian allies.

In the competition that prevailed between the English and the French colonies for the possession of trade and influence with the Indians, the English (as Charlevoix remarks) enjoyed the advantage of being able to afford their commodities to the Indians at much cheaper prices than the French were constrained to demand. But the important benefit that might have been derived from this advantage was almost wholly intercepted by a commercial intercourse that had been formed since the peace of Utrecht, and by which the French became the purchasers, at Albany and New York, of the commodities imported by the English for the Indian market. The increased communication and superior influence which the French were thus enabled to acquire with the Indian race was perceived by some friendly chiefs of the Six Nations, and pressed by them on the attention of Governor Hunter and the officers whom the government now employed under the title of Commissioners for Indian Affairs.[1] But no remedy was applied to the mischief, till Burnet prevailed on the assembly to pass an act for a temporary suspension of trade between New York and Canada. As the immediate operation of this act was to diminish the importation of the English goods which heretofore were customarily sold to the French, till substitutional relations of commerce were formed with the Indians, it excited the complaints of the American importers and the London merchants, whose intrigues affected the governor's popularity, and proportionally embarrassed his administration; and notwithstanding the penalties attached to a transgression of the act, it was repeatedly violated by the contraband dealings of the traders of Albany. But the beneficial consequences of the measure ere long became sensibly apparent; and when the duration of the act expired, the assembly renewed its provisions by a law to which no period was assigned.

Burnet cultivated the favor of the Indians by presents, treaties, and complimentary attentions; and having acquainted himself with the geography of the country, he was struck with the expediency of obtaining the command of Lake Ontario, as well for the appropriation of the trade and the security of the friendship of the Six Nations, as to frustrate the French design of confining the British dominion to narrow limits along the sea-coast, by means of a chain of forts stretching from Canada to Louisiana. To that

[1] The residence of the governors at New York rendered it necessary that some persons should be commissioned at Albany to maintain immediate communication with the Indians, receive intelligence from them, and treat with them in sudden emergencies. This gave rise to the office of Commissioners for Indian Affairs, who ordinarily represented the British government in transactions with the Indians. These functionaries received no salaries; but considerable sums were deposited in their hands for occasional presents to the savages

end, he commenced the erection of a trading-house at Oswego, in the country of the Senecas, one of the confederated tribes of the Six Nations, — a measure which the French, whose vigilant jealousy it failed not to awaken, promptly endeavoured to counteract; and by their interest with the Onondagas, another of the confederated tribes, they obtained permission to rebuild a fort which France had once possessed in their peculiar territory at Niagara, and also to erect a mercantile storehouse at the same place. As soon as this latter transaction was known to the other members of the Indian confederacy, they declared the permission granted by the Onondagas absolutely null and void, and sent deputies to the French, commanding them forthwith to discontinue the operations which they had hastily begun. The French, however, advanced their buildings with increased activity, while the Indians were amused and beguiled of their purpose by the arts and influence of the Chevalier Joncaire, a French gentleman, whom the force and pliancy of his genius, concurring with the bent of his taste, rendered a masterly practitioner of diplomacy and intrigue. He had lived among the Indians from the beginning of Queen Anne's reign, — assuming their manners, and speaking their language, with an eloquent embellishment of their peculiar style that captivated their highest admiration. He was adopted as a brother by the Senecas, and enjoyed much consideration with the Onondagas. All these advantages he improved to the advancement of his country's influence and dominion; facilitating the admission of French missionaries to the Indian settlements, and excelling the most industrious and accomplished of the Jesuits in the zeal and success of his endeavours to dissolve the existing relations of friendship between the Indians and the English. Governor Burnet exerted himself with great diligence and ability, and not entirely without success, to counteract the intrigues of Joncaire, and rouse the British government and the Six Nations to a resolute opposition to the encroachments of France. At his own private expense he completed the building of a fort and trading-house at Oswego, in defiance of the menaces of the governor of Canada. But, unfortunately, his influence was now impaired and his administration embarrassed by the factious intrigues of the Albany traders and their commercial correspondents at London, who, for the sake of a few years' immediate gain, were willing to sacrifice the lasting prosperity of New York, and the security of the British colonial empire. While the Albany traders labored to destroy his popularity in the province, the merchants of London who were connected with them exerted all their interest at the British court to obtain his removal from New York, — an object which their unworthy machinations finally succeeded in accomplishing.[1]

Burnet, whose patrimony had fallen a prey to the fraud and delusion of the famous adventure, called the *South Sea Scheme*, was originally induced to accept the government of New York by circumstances not more creditable to the character of England in that age, than the narrow policy and mean intrigue which ultimately deprived him of his command. France and England had been plunged for some time in a national delirium not less wild, and far more fatal, than the mania of the *tulip trade*, which broke forth in Holland about a century before. The frenzy that signalized the present epoch was excited by that spirit of commercial gambling to which the first impulse was given by the projects of the notorious John Law, a Scotchman, and the son of an obscure goldsmith in Edinburgh.

[1] Charlevoix's *Letters*. Kalm's *Travels*. Oldmixon. W. Smith. *Laws of New York* (edited by Livingston and Smith), *from* 1691 *to* 1751.

This extraordinary person was endowed by nature with a wonderful capacity of profound and extensive calculation, and a strong concurrent taste for every pursuit and research that was fitted to cultivate and develope his peculiar genius. He applied himself to the investigation of every branch of knowledge relative to banks, lotteries, and the trading companies of London; he studied the means of supporting them, and of cherishing the public hope and confidence on which they mainly depended. Having penetrated the innermost secrets of the policy of these establishments, he increased his knowledge by obtaining a mercantile situation in Holland, where he succeeded in fully acquainting himself not only with the springs and principles, but with the minutest practical details, of the system pursued in that masterpiece of financial establishments, the Bank of Amsterdam. By dint of reflecting on the information he had acquired, and of combining such a variety of knowledge, he composed a system which was admirable for its order and the concatenation of the numerous and diversified operations which it involved, — a system founded at least as much upon skilful acquaintance with the human mind, as upon the science of numbers, — but which implied an entire disregard of good faith, equity, and humanity, and afforded the amplest scope to fraud, perfidy, and injustice. The author of this scheme was an abandoned villain, devoid of all sense of religion, morality, or real honor. Having slain a man in a duel, he fled from Britain,[1] and was accompanied in his exile by an adulterous paramour, whom he had seduced from her husband. His avarice was insatiable; and all his extensive schemes and combinations were subservient to the gratification of that ignoble passion. His taste for gaming (in the practice of which he was remarkably successful), together with his elegant manners and sprightly conversation, procured him the intimate acquaintance of many persons of distinction, who disgraced their rank and impaired their fortunes by their commerce with such an associate. In the exhausted state to which the late war had reduced the exchequers of all the European potentates, he foresaw that they must necessarily adopt some extraordinary measures to recruit their finances; and the hopes he indulged of successfully realizing his great project were increased by the allurement which it presented to any government that would not scruple to prefer a speedy to an honest extrication from financial embarrassment. His system was calculated to enable a sovereign to pay his debts, not by retrenching his luxury and profusion, but by attracting, under specious pretences, to himself, all the gold and silver of his subjects; and the machinery by which this end was to be accomplished consisted of a bank, the real capital of which was to be the revenues of the state, and the accruing capital some branch of commerce little known, and therefore easily misrepresented and exaggerated. The engines on which he mainly relied were the covetousness and credulity of mankind. Law the less regretted his exile, when he reflected that such a scheme would be most efficaciously conducted in a country where the sovereign enjoyed absolute power.

Repairing to France, he unfolded his views to Louis the Fourteenth, who, notwithstanding the extenuated condition of his treasury, is reported, on the bare exposition of the project, to have rejected it with expressions of abhorrence. But Law found a less scrupulous patron in the regent, Duke of Or-

[1] It appears from Wood's *Life of Law* that this adventurer was actually tried and condemned to be hanged, but escaped from prison while his fate was in suspense.

leans; and in the year 1717, with the encouragement of this infamous prince, he commenced his operations by the establishment of a national bank, which was followed soon after by the memorable *Western*, or *Mississippi Company*. The professed object of this association was the aggrandizement and cultivation of the colonies of France in North America; and the French government enhanced its delusive credit by assigning to it the whole territory of Louisiana.[1] The detail of the projector's success, — of the frantic eagerness with which Frenchmen of all ranks plunged their fortunes into the gulf which his profound and masterly villany had prepared for them, — and of the wide-spread ruin and misery that ensued, — is foreign to our purpose, and belongs to the historian of France. But the operation of Law's evil genius was not confined to that country. There is a diffusively contagious influence in the ferment of any strong passion among a multitude of people; and while the French delusion lasted, a kindred spirit of daring fraud and desperate gambling was awakened in England.

From the Mississippi Scheme of Law, the project, scarcely less famous, of the *South Sea Company* of England was borrowed, by the imitative craft of Sir John Blunt, a member of the House of Commons, and successfully recommended to the inhabitants of this country by the coöperation of a crew of artful and rapacious associates. A frenzy ensued, which, if more transient, was also more general and more extravagant, than that which possessed the French; and productive of scenes and adventures, in which it is difficult to discriminate the mingling shades of crime and folly, — to distinguish between the gambling of fools and knaves, alike transported with a rage for sudden enrichment. New projects were proclaimed, and joint-stock companies[2] were formed every day for carrying them into effect, under the patronage of many of the royal ministers and the chief nobility, and even of the Prince of Wales. The most chimerical designs were embraced and seconded by persons of all ranks, high and low, rich and poor, professional, commercial, and literary; and one obscure projector, in particular, received in a single morning the subscriptions of a thousand persons for the execution of a project which he declined to explain at the time, but promised to disclose a month after, — as he effectually did, by decamping with his booty. Some persons, whom sincere delusion had originally plunged into the prevalent speculations, were ultimately hurried by the temptation of gain, or driven by the fear of ruin, consciously to promote the general error, in order to sell their stock with advantage, or shift from themselves the consequences of its approaching depreciation. In other instances a contrary progress of sentiment was manifested; and the South Sea Scheme, in particular, at one time raised such a flood of eager avidity

[1] A great many persons were induced by Law's representations to repair to this territory and undertake its colonization. Of these, a body of German emigrants alone succeeded in rearing a flourishing settlement. Most of the others, ruined or disappointed by the fall of the Mississippi Company, forsook the province. Jefferys' *History of the French Dominions in North and South America*. To recruit the colonial population, an edict was issued by the French government, commanding the apprehension and transportation to America of all the vagabonds by whom the streets and highways of France were infested. To this edict an excellent man and admirable philosopher, George Edwards, the famous British ornithologist, during his travels in France, in the year 1720, had very nearly fallen a victim. *Annual Register for* 1776. Law, revisiting his native country, acquired a small estate, under the name of which his descendants not only veiled their ancestral infamy, but actually procured a title of *nobility*, in France! One of them attained the rank of Marshal, under the Emperor Napoleon.

[2] About a hundred years later we have seen this commercial gambling reappear as a national epidemic in England; though, happily, with less extent and mischief.

and extravagant hope, that the majority of the directors were themselves swept along with it, in opposition to their own better knowledge and original purpose and inclination. With the rapacity there was blended the prodigality and improvidence congenial to habits of ignoble hazard; sudden wealth, actually amassed, or immediately expected, was spent or anticipated with reckless profusion; and tasteless luxury, extravagance, and sensuality prevailed with unprecedented sway in England.

At length the various *Bubbles*, as they were aptly termed, burst, one after another, in rapid succession [September, 1720]; public credit received a staggering shock, and mercantile character and morality an odious and pernicious taint; vast multitudes of people found themselves reduced from affluent or competent estate to absolute beggary; and all England resounded with the wailing of grief and disappointment, or the raving of indignation and despair. The spirit of commercial gambling, which had lately prevailed in some of the American colonies, was doubtless animated in some degree by the contagious fervor of the delusion that reigned in the parent state; and an additional excitement to it was at one time portended by an overflowing of the stream of folly and frantic enterprise in England. A joint-stock company was formed at London for the purchase and cultivation of waste lands in Massachusetts. But the project dissolved in the general wreck of kindred speculations, before there was time to obtain the accession of any tributary associates in America.[1] The monstrous fraud and folly displayed by the people of England, and the infamy reflected by the foregoing transactions on their princes, nobles, statesmen,[2] and merchants, were calculated to promote other sentiments than respect and attachment to the parent state in the minds of the sensible and discerning part of the colonial population. We shall find in the sequel, that the deplorable scene to which we have now adverted was attended with consequences important to the progress of society in America, by suggesting, or at least promoting, the project which issued in the plantation of Georgia.

It was happy for New England that the seasonable close of the British commercial frenzy prevented the communication of a share of this malady from enlarging the catalogue of evils which her history at the present epoch discloses. The administration of Governor Shute in Massachusetts was by no means productive of the harmony and satisfaction which its commencement betokened. Shute was a humane and honorable man, — diverted from ambition by the love of ease and social pleasure, — totally unaccustomed to the conduct of civil affairs, — and afflicted with a hasty and impatient temper, which habits of military command had not tended to moderate. His English friends had received and imparted to him a strong prepossession against the provincial party opposed to Governor Dudley; and his unguarded demonstration of this prejudice speedily rendered the party which was the object of it inimical to himself. In Massachusetts and New Hampshire, at this period, a great deal of discontent was excited by the proceedings of certain officers of the crown with regard to the pine-trees reserved for the use of the royal navy on vacant lands. The second par-

[1] *Private Life of Louis the Fifteenth.* Smollett. Hutchinson.

[2] Among other distinguished persons, the Earl of Sunderland, Aislabie, the chancellor of the exchequer (who was expelled the House of Commons), and Craggs, the secretary of state, were judged to have corruptly promoted the delusion of the South Sea Scheme. A seasonable death preserved Craggs from sharing the disgrace of Aislabie, and allowed his name to repose under the shade of the poetical wreath by which it was decked by the Muse of Pope.

liamentary statute on this subject ordained that the offence of cutting down any of these trees might be proved by the oath of a single witness, and punished, without the intervention of a jury, by a judge of the admiralty court, who owed his office to the crown, and enjoyed it only during the royal pleasure. Notwithstanding this arbitrary provision, which was highly resented by the colonists, there were many more accusations than convictions of infraction of the law. The people retorted the complaints of the royal surveyor of woods, and declared that he sometimes neglected to mark distinctly the trees he meant to reserve, at other times laid claim to trees which were unsuitable to the objects of the act, and perpetually harassed them with vexatious litigation. These disputes provoked a question of the abstract right of the British government to appropriate the trees at all; and the people and their assemblies openly expressed their opinion that they were unjustly deprived of the produce of land which their own money had purchased and their own exertions defended and preserved. The cheap liberality of allowing a small price for suitable trees furnished to the British government by the colonists themselves would have accomplished the purposes of the acts of parliament in a manner much more effectual and advantageous.

Shute, offended with a remonstrance of the Massachusetts assembly, in which they hinted that he had not fairly represented to the king the controversy between the surveyor and the people, requested that this remonstrance might not be printed; and when the assembly answered that it was their duty and their purpose to print it, he announced to them, in the heat of anger, and with an ignorance and rashness which he had occasion to deplore during the remainder of his presidency, that "the king had committed to him the power of the press," and that nothing could be lawfully published in the province without his permission. This declaration rendered him ever after an object of jealous dislike and suspicion to the colonists. In another instance, he broached a new and offensive pretension which was equally unsuccessful. It was the custom that the assembly, on electing a speaker, should present to the governor the person on whom their choice had fallen, and who was to be the organ of their official communications with him. Shute attempted to construe this practice into a recognition of the governor's right to negative the appointment of the assembly, and refused to acknowledge the speakership of Cooke, a distinguished patriot, and the leader of the party who were accounted Dudley's opponents; but as the provincial charter afforded no sanction to this pretension, his assertion of it, though backed by an opinion he produced from the attorney-general of England and the Lords of Trade, only involved him in a fruitless and irritating controversy. His importunities with the assembly to attach a fixed salary to his own office were equally unsuccessful. So far from gratifying him in this particular, they progressively diminished the allowance which was annually voted to him, — even while the depreciation of the provincial currency was daily reducing the real value of the salary far below its nominal amount. To the deputy-governor, William Dummer, they voted the niggardly pittance of thirty-five pounds; which he refused to accept, protesting that he would not disparage the honor of serving the king by uniting it with a pecuniary recompense so paltry and affronting. Shute subsequently attempted to soothe the assembly by conciliating language and moderation of demeanour; but it would have required more

patience than he possessed to disarm the jealousy which he had already excited.

The state of the currency tended to increase the public discontent, while it sapped the foundations of honor and morality. Creditors, clergymen, and all persons subsisting on salaries or the interest of money, complained of their losses and hardships; and executors, agents, and trustees of every other description were exposed to the most potent temptations unjustly to retain the property of their constituents. The governor, who probably perceived that this evil could be radically cured only by paying the public debts and restraining the emission of paper money, increased his own unpopularity by opposing the project of a state bank, and other delusive schemes which were suggested for relieving the country of its financial difficulties. Through the gloom of general discontent and apprehension, the real blemishes in Shute's conduct were beheld in an exaggerated view; the mistakes of inexperience and the effusions of intemperate passion were maligned as the indications of deep and deliberate design to establish arbitrary government; and the whole province of Massachusetts was pervaded by the conviction, that public liberty was in the utmost danger, and could be saved only by a vigorous and united opposition to Shute's administration. Never did any people, in pursuit of a generous purpose, commit a wider departure from moderation, good sense, and equity. To such a violent and unreasonable pitch did the suspicion and ill-humor of the Massachusetts assembly mount, that all who were reckoned the governor's friends, or who honestly counselled a more moderate demeanour towards him, became the objects of its displeasure; and Jeremiah Dummer, the provincial agent at London, having apprized them that Shute's conduct was generally approved in England, and that vindictive measures against Massachusetts were meditated by the British ministry, and would assuredly be embraced unless the people should evince a more reasonable temper, was dismissed from his office by the blind wilfulness which misconstrued his warning intelligence.[1] The assembly repeatedly compelled the governor to yield to their desires, by explicitly declaring that they would not vote his salary till he had done so; and Britain was punished for her injustice in depriving the colonists of their old charter, by the habit they now acquired of contending with and prevailing over the representative of royalty. In the Indian war by which the presidency of Shute was signalized, the assembly openly invaded his functions, by assuming the direction of military operations, and requiring the officers to maintain correspondence with them; declaring (with more manly sense than constitutional formality) that all who were paid by the public were the responsible servants of the public; though they subsequently perceived the prudence of retracting and apologizing for this pretension. In short, the people of Massachusetts were at this time transported to such an excess of opposition and animosity against the royal governor, and the policy, real or supposed, of the parent state, that the assembly of Connecticut trembled for the consequences that might result to the general liberties of New England, and instructed their agent at London to keep a watchful eye on the proceedings of the parliament, and give heed that Connecticut might not be involved in the vengeance which Massachusetts seemed determined to provoke and brave.

[1] Yet the agent's intelligence was confirmed by communications from various English friends of the colonists. Neal, in particular, the historian of the Puritans and of New England, strongly urged the Massachusetts assembly to retrace its steps, "if it meant to save the country."

The war which broke out, during Shute's administration, between the States of New England and their ancient enemies, the Indians inhabiting the eastern territory betwixt New England and Nova Scotia, was ushered by a long prologue of reproachful complaint, menace, and violence on the part of the savages, prompted by the insidious counsels of the French and their provincial officers in Canada. These Indians had repeatedly acknowledged themselves the subjects of the British monarchy, and in every treaty of peace with the English had penitentially designated their wars with them as rebellions; seemingly without attaching much importance to this language, or even entertaining any just or fixed notion of its meaning. Extensive territories on the rivers Kennebec and St. George were purchased by the New England governments from the chiefs of these tribes at an early period; but the lands remaining long unoccupied by the purchasers, the precise extent of the acquisitions was in some instances forgotten by the vendors, who possessed no written records, and who were permitted by the courtesy of the colonists to hunt and fish in every part of the purchased territory not actually subjected to cultivation. In some instances disagreements arose between the two races from bargains being differently understood by the English and the Indians, even when they had been conducted with much care and solemnity. As few of either race understood well the other's language, their treaties and other arrangements required the offices of an interpreter whose honesty could not always be relied on, and whose deceptions it was not always possible to detect.[1] The Indians, moreover, were not at first aware, that the Europeans, by their system of agriculture, and the erection of mills and dams, would diminish the supplies of game and fish which the land and its waters had previously afforded; and when they found by experience that this was actually the consequence of admitting foreigners to settle among them, they repented of their hospitality, and were inclined to eject their new neighbours, as the only means of restoring the country to its pristine state.

Their enmity to the English was industriously fomented by the French, whose interests they preferably espoused, and to whose religious faith they had for many years been warmly devoted. Of late they were chiefly directed by the counsels of Sebastian Rasles, an aged Jesuit of great learning, genius, and talent, and still greater zeal for the propagation of the Catholic faith and the enlargement of the French dominion in America. He had now resided about forty years among the Indians, contentedly burying in savage deserts the finest accomplishments of European education; and deprived of all opportunity of exercising his high proficiency as a critic and classical linguist, except when his missionary labors afforded him leisure for epistolary controversy with the ministers of Boston. He corresponded in the Indian tongue with many of his savage converts, male and female, whom he had taught to read and write; and strengthened his claims on the interest and admiration of their countrymen by successful attempts in Indian poetry, — or, to speak more properly, in poetical compositions, of which the language, imagery, and strain of sentiment were derived from Indian

[1] It is curious to find that Indian tradition has ascribed to some of the earliest European colonists a trick precisely similar to the fabled device of Queen Dido for enlarging the site of the colonial settlement she founded at Carthage. This coincidence of sentiment and tradition is ascribed by an accomplished American writer to "the proneness of barbarous people, while they feel the superiority of civilized men, to attribute all the difference which results from the intercourse to cunning rather than to wisdom." General Cass's *Discourse before the American Historical Society*, 1836.

models.[1] His intrepid courage, fervent zeal, and ceaseless intrigue in behalf of his faith and his country rendered him an object of remarkable detestation to the colonists of New England,[2] and gained him the repute of a saint and a hero with the French. By the Indians among whom he lived at Norridgewock he was regarded with unbounded love and admiration, and they were always ready to hazard their lives in his defence. His ascendency over them was diligently employed to promote the interests of France. He made even the offices of devotion serve as incentives to their ferocity, and kept a flag, whereon was depicted a cross surrounded by bows and arrows, which he used to hoist on a pole at the door of his chapel, when he gave them absolution, previously to their engaging in any martial enterprise. He encouraged them to believe that their forefathers were deceived and abused in the ancient venditions of their lands to the colonists of New England, and that these colonists were committing encroachments beyond the limits even of the titles which they had dishonestly acquired; and he labored strongly to impress upon them that the English traders by whom they were visited dealt fraudulently with them, and, by vending spirituous liquors among them, debauched their morals, and frustrated the good work that he himself was laboring to accomplish.[3] This last topic was not less efficacious than the others; though the Jesuit's allusions to it were much more successful in provoking his Indian disciples to anger against the British colonists, than in persuading them to a virtuous amendment of their own habits. It was, indeed, quite natural that the Indians should at once indulge themselves in copious enjoyment of the pleasures of intoxication, and yet blame and hate the purveyors and instruments of this vice. The dissensions between Governor Shute and the assembly of Massachusetts had unfortunately prevented the erection of public barter-houses; and the Indians were still exposed to all the causes of quarrel and complaint supplied by the fraud and selfishness of private traders.

Acquainted with the hostile influence which was thus exerted upon his savage neighbours, Governor Shute, soon after his accession to the command of Massachusetts, held a conference with their chiefs, and vainly urged them to admit a New England clergyman to reside among their people. Rasles interposed in the discussion that took place, with a protestation, that, although the French king had ceded Nova Scotia to England, he never intended to include in this cession any territory to which the Indians themselves might justly lay claim. At first, it seemed likely that a mutual declaration of war would have resulted from the conference, as the Indians began by angrily reclaiming a great part of the territory sold by their ancestors; but that extremity was avoided and the reclamation abandoned by the advice of the elder sachems, who apologized for the language of their brethren, to the great disappointment of Rasles, who, in his letters to the governor of Canada, lamented the unsteady and irresolute behaviour of the Indians. An

[1] See Note II., at the end of the volume.

[2] When some of the New England traders, who occasionally met with him, threatened him with the vengeance of their countrymen, if they should ever take Norridgewock, his answer was merely a significant accentuation of the monosyllable, "*If*."

[3] The conduct of his own countrymen, in this respect, to the savages was at least equally reprehensible. "We know," says Charlevoix, "that an Indian will give all that he is worth for one glass of brandy. Against this strong temptation to our traders, neither the exclamations of their pastors, nor the zeal and authority of the magistrates, nor respect for the laws, nor the dread of the judgments of the Almighty, have proved of any avail. Even in the streets of Montreal are seen the most shocking spectacles, the never-failing effects of the drunkenness of these savages," &c.

unfriendly peace ensued, checkered with abundance of dispute, and at length, in the autumn of this year [August, 1720], more seriously interrupted by an attack on some traders who resorted annually from Massachusetts to Canso, in Nova Scotia, where the Indians, overpowering them by surprise, robbed them of all their wares, and put several of them to death. This outrage excited the greater indignation, when it was known that some of the French at Cape Breton had openly assisted the Indian enterprise; and notwithstanding the anxious desire of Governor Shute to avoid an immediate recourse to hostilities, the Massachusetts assembly passed an ordinance for levying a force and compelling the Indians to make satisfaction for the insult and injury they had committed. This ordinance was resented by Shute as an invasion of his prerogative; and as the council united with him in denying its validity, no farther prosecution of its vindictive purpose was attempted for the present. Encouraged by their impunity, the Indians continued to repeat their insults and menaces; and a strong party of them, marching with French colors to a frontier settlement of New England, vehemently accused the colonists of wresting from them the territory which God had bestowed on their race, and declared that they had now come to expel the intruders for ever. [1721.] After a long conference with some of the provincial officers, their fickleness, or their sense of equity, again prevailed; they freely acknowledged that the claims of the colonists were just, and solemnly protested that they would never in future molest them. On returning to their settlements around Norridgewock, they were ashamed to confess the dereliction of their hostile purpose, and at once consoled their vanity, and deceived their pastor, Rasles, by vaunting the courage and firmness they pretended to have exerted in menacing the English, and in sternly refusing to make any concessions to those hostile heretics.[1] But whatever pleasure Rasles might have derived from this assurance was speedily counterbalanced by an open demonstration of pacific purpose towards the rivals of his countrymen.

On the death of their chief, the Indians, in opposition to Rasles' urgent advice, elected for his successor a sachem who had always deprecated war with the English; and by his influence the tribes were persuaded to send hostages to Boston as sureties for their good behaviour, and for the indemnification of the injury inflicted on the colonists at Canso. Vaudreuil, the governor of Canada, was highly displeased and alarmed by this intelligence. In a letter to Rasles, he condemned the faint-hearted demeanour, as he termed it, of the Indians, and entreated the priest still to persist in stimulating them to warlike purpose. In aid of Rasles' exertions, Vaudreuil prevailed with all his Indian allies in Canada to send deputies to Norridgewock, to assure the Indians there of powerful support in any war they might undertake with New England. The government of Massachusetts, apprized of these transactions, indignantly complained of the perfidious hostility of the French governor in thus stirring up enemies against them during the subsistence of peace between France and England. But Vaudreuil was able to justify himself to his sovereign; and apprehended little danger to his reputation from charges which the accusers were not likely ever to be able to substantiate by satisfactory proof. An application was then made to the Indians, requiring them to deliver up Rasles; and on their refusal, a party of

[1] To such tergiversation as this we may impute the erroneous accounts of these treaties and transactions by Charlevoix and other French writers.

New England militia made a sudden incursion into the territory of Norridgewock, and would have seized the priest, if the Indians had not seasonably conveyed him beyond their reach. [November, 1721.] The assailants, however, obtained possession of Rasles' strong-box and of all his papers, which were found to contain the amplest proof of the intrigues by which he and Vaudreuil fomented the hostility of the Indians against the English.[1]

This insult to their principal settlement and their beloved pastor failed not to excite the resentment of the Indians; though the expediency of deliberate preparation restrained the infliction of their vengeance for a while. [1722.[2]] At length, however, it broke forth in such a burst of predatory hostility on the frontiers of New England, as provoked a declaration of war from the governments of Massachusetts and New Hampshire. Nevertheless, hopes of peace were still indulged by Governor Shute, who, though a brave officer, and incapable of declining the hostile overtures of a civilized antagonist, displayed extreme reluctance to martial controversy with savages; and an attempt was made to intimidate the Eastern Indians into submission by the intervention of the Six Nations, whose friendship the State of New York, by the wise counsels of Governor Burnet, was sedulously endeavouring to recultivate. By the persuasions of Burnet, the Six Nations were induced to send deputies to New England, who, after a conference with Shute and the Massachusetts assembly (whose disagreement seems not to have escaped their penetration), consented to threaten the Eastern Indians with an invasion from the confederated tribes, unless an immediate peace were concluded with the English. But whether the threat was feebly expressed, or the Eastern Indians were fortified by rage and hope against its influence, they paid no attention to it; and a series of skirmishing engagements ensued between them and the provincial militia. The savages, to whose success surprise and sudden attack were essential, sustained some defeats; but the military operations of the colonists were unimportant, and the efficacy of them was obstructed by the incessant disputes and collisions between Shute and the assembly of Massachusetts. In the close of this year, Shute, finding that the public prejudice against him daily increased, and having privately obtained permission from the king, suddenly departed from the scene of his authority, and returned to England.

The supreme command in Massachusetts devolved, in consequence, on William Dummer, the lieutenant-governor, who, though he had incurred some popular jealousy from his friendship with Shute, never ceased to demean himself with decent dignity, real patriotism, and sound discretion. He was a stranger to that punctilious pride which magnifies disagreements, prolongs collisions, and never graciously yields the strictness of political theory and ordinance to the irregular, but irresistible, movements of the general will. When he first convoked the two houses of assembly, — and, without alluding to the unhappy dissensions that had prevailed, announced that he was ready to unite with them in any measure calculated to promote the king's service and the good of the province, — Sewell, an aged counsellor, formerly a judge, and who had held office during the subsistence of the first pro-

[1] Among his papers was found a dictionary, which he had composed, of the Norridgewock language, and which was deposited in the library of Harvard College. Holmes.

[2] This year the French colony of Louisiana was reduced to such straits, that many of the inhabitants forsook it, and united themselves to the English colonists in Carolina. The number of these emigrants was so great, that the Carolinians were much incommoded by them, and advised Bienville, the French governor of Louisiana, to take measures for preventing the farther desertion of his province. Holmes.

vincial charter, addressed the audience with a gravity and simplicity of manner, and a primitive style of eloquence, characteristic of the fathers of New England. "If your Honor and the honorable board please to give me leave," he said, "I would speak a word or two upon this solemn occasion. Although the unerring providence of God has brought your Honor to the chair of government in a cloudy and tempestuous season, yet you have this for your encouragement, that the people you have to do with are a part of the Israel of God, and you may expect to have of the prudence and patience of Moses communicated to you for your conduct. It is evident that our Almighty Saviour counselled the first planters to remove hither and settle here; and they dutifully followed his advice; and therefore he will never leave nor forsake them nor theirs: so that your Honor must needs be happy in sincerely seeking their happiness and welfare, which your birth and education will incline you to do. *Difficilia quæ pulchra.* I promise myself that they who sit at this board will yield their faithful advice to your Honor, according to the duty of their place." The prediction of this venerable counsellor was fulfilled: and, though some jealousy continued for a while to attach to the deputy-governor, and prompted the assembly to various acts of encroachment upon his functions, yet he finally succeeded in refuting injurious suspicion by steady virtue and unaffected moderation; and was enabled to conduct the government with harmony, satisfaction, and respect.[1]

The Norridgewock Indians, aided now by the cöoperation of all the other tribes in alliance with the French, carried on the war with great fury and havoc on the frontiers of New England. [1723.[2]] Among other inhabitants of New Hampshire who endured their ravages, were certain families of the Quaker persuasion; of whom some were killed and scalped, and others, carried away into captivity, were treated with peculiar cruelty, for refusing, at the command of their captors, to *dance*,—a pastime prohibited by the sober canons of Quakerism. The escape of one Quaker was ascribed to his practice of keeping firearms in his house, a circumstance which perhaps contributed to the destruction of his brethren, by weakening the safeguard of their pacific principles. The Indian hostilities were encountered and retorted with the utmost skill and bravery by the government and the militia of Massachusetts and New Hampshire, aided by a subsidiary force from Connecticut. The assembly of Connecticut at first declined to participate in the war, judging it a mere insignificant partial quarrel with the Norridgewocks, and being induced to doubt of its justice by the reluctance to engage in it that Governor Shute manifested. But, finally ascertaining that their doubts had wronged the people of Massachusetts, and perceiving the extended hostilities in which this people were involved by French intrigue, they readily furnished a liberal contingent of troops and money to aid their friends in a war, from the troubles of which their own local situation might have enabled them to enjoy a cheap and selfish exemption. The Six Nations, notwithstanding the assurance they gave in the preceding year, declined publicly or generally to espouse the quarrel of the colonists; but declared that they had signified to their young men, that any who were so disposed might unite themselves with the New England forces. Only a very few of the Mohawks embraced this per-

[1] Oldmixon. Hutchinson. W. Smith. Belknap. Trumbull. *Collections of the Rhode Island Historical Society.*

[2] Dr. Increase Mather died this year at Boston, at the age of eighty-five.

mission, and their services were brief and inefficient. To particularize the successive expeditions and petty engagements of which this Indian war was productive would involve a detail too cumbrous and minute for general history. The skilful vigor and heroic intrepidity of the colonists have been honorably commemorated by the provincial annalists, in their ample narrations of the various martial achievements, which, among other important results, contributed to preserve among the colonial population a spirit of military enterprise, and familiarized great numbers of persons with the hardships, dangers, and operations of war.

The most remarkable event by which the war was signalized was the sudden attack and entire destruction of the Indian settlement of Norridgewock by a force consisting of four companies of the provincial militia, amounting in all to two hundred and eight men. [1724.] The Indians were completely surprised, and defeated with great slaughter. The New England officers had given orders to spare Rasles, the Jesuit, whom they ardently desired to take prisoner; but, to their great disappointment, this remarkable man was slain by a soldier to whom he refused to surrender [1] Both the Catholic Indians and their French allies were much scandalized by what they deemed the sacrilegious impiety of the victors, who accounted it no sacrilege at all to strip Rasles' chapel of its plate, and valued themselves on testifying a zealous abhorrence of idolatry by destroying the crucifixes and other Catholic imagery which the chapel and village displayed. The Norridgewock tribe, after this fatal blow, never recovered their former strength or spirit; but the war was still continued by their allies, the Penobscots, and the Canadian auxiliaries.

The conduct which the British colonists imputed to Vaudreuil, the governor of Canada, was so flagrant a breach of the treaty of peace subsisting between the crowns of England and France, and was so strongly attested by the additional evidence recently obtained by the colonists, that, in spite of the failure of their previous application, they were induced again to hope that a spirited remonstrance might inspire him with alarm at the responsibility he was incurring, and produce some beneficial effect. [1725.] With this view, commissioners were despatched to Canada by Massachusetts and New Hampshire, with instructions to demand from Vaudreuil restitution of the captives who had been carried within his jurisdiction, and to remonstrate with him on his unjust and dishonorable policy in instigating the Indians to hostilities with the people of New England. Vaudreuil received the envoys with great politeness, and at first attempted to deny that he had given any countenance whatever to the enemies of their countrymen; but, closely pressed with proofs of his intrigues, which he was unprepared to meet, and especially with the production of his letters to Rasles, the Jesuit, which appeared to strike him with a penetrative shame, he could not help perceiving that the interest of his reputation, as a man of honor, imperiously demanded that the complaints of New England should be stifled as quickly as possible; and, accordingly, he promised to do every thing in his power to dispose the Indians to peace, and to induce them to restore their captives for a reasonable ransom. The English commissioners remarked that they found the governor much more candid and amenable

[1] About twenty years after the death of Rasles, his hostile policy among the Indians was resumed and employed by another Jesuit, of equal, if not higher, capacity, against the English in Georgia. See a note to Book IX., *post*.

to reason, justice, and humanity, when they conversed with him alone, than when any of the French Jesuits were present; and that Vaudreuil, no less than the Indians, was manifestly awed and controlled by these ecclesiastics, who possessed at this time a flourishing seminary and extensive influence in Canada.

The benefit of this embassy was experienced soon after in the discontinuance of hostilities by the Indians of Canada, and the proposition of peace and friendship by the tribes inhabiting the eastern quarters of New England. A treaty was accordingly negotiated with them soon after by Dummer and Wentworth, the deputy-governors of Massachusetts and New Hampshire, and by one of the officers of the British government in Nova Scotia; and, unlike the fate of former pactions, it was followed by a peace of long duration. This unusual result proceeded from no peculiar excellence in the treaty, which differed not from the former ones in any material respect; but from the prudence of Dummer and the Massachusetts assembly, in establishing without farther delay the trading-houses formerly projected at the rivers St. George, Kennebec, and Saco, where the Indians speedily found, that, in exchange for their furs and skins, they were supplied with the European goods which they wanted on better terms than they obtained from the French, or even the private English traders. A law was then enacted for restraining private traffic with the Indians; but the establishment of the public trading-houses, where goods were furnished at a cheaper rate than private traders could afford, rendered the law as superfluous, as, without this measure, it would have been unavailing. Dummer engaged that the Indians should be supplied with goods at the same prices for which they were sold in Boston; and the government endeavoured to reconcile this paction with commercial advantage, by making wholesale purchases of goods, which were afterwards disposed of to the Indians at the Boston retail prices. But the profit thence accruing was so inadequate to the charge of trading-houses, truck-masters, garrisons, and the vessels employed in transporting the goods, that the province was practically subjected to a considerable tribute for the benefit of the Indians. However, the measure was generally approved, as tending to the preservation of peace, and more reputable than the payment of a pension expressly assigned for this purpose.[1]

Meanwhile, Governor Shute was actively employed in prosecuting vindictive measures at the court of London against the assembly of Massachusetts; to which there was communicated, in the year 1723, a summons to answer the complaint he exhibited to the king in council. This complaint charged the assembly with various encroachments on the royal prerogative; particularly in the tenor of their resolutions with respect to the reserved pine-trees; in refusing to admit the governor's negative on their choice of a speaker; in assuming the appointment of public fasts; in interrupting their own sessions by long adjournments; and in suspending military officers, and arrogating the direction of military operations. The house of representa-

[1] The cruelties which the Indians had committed during this war seem to have created the most violent antipathy against the whole Indian race in the minds of the settlers on the frontiers of New Hampshire. The Indians kept these feelings alive after the peace by visiting the survivors of families who had suffered from their hostilities, and boasting of the tortures they had inflicted on their relatives. The consequence was, that, "when any person was arrested for killing an Indian in time of peace, he was either forcibly rescued from the hands of justice, or, if brought to trial, invariably acquitted; it being impossible to empanel a jury, some of whom had not suffered by the Indians, either in their persons or families." Belknap.

tives at first received this formidable intimation with more spirit than prudence, — voting, with contemptuous brevity, that the complaint was groundless, and that an agent should be instructed to employ lawyers to justify their conduct. But as the council unanimously refused to concur in a proceeding so wantonly insolent, the assembly transmitted a particular answer to the several articles of complaint, and an address to the king, in which they justified every part of their behaviour. They also despatched Cooke, who had been the chief advocate of all the obnoxious measures, to defend them in England. The provincial council, who dissented from the house of representatives on every point embraced in the governor's complaint, except the disputed negative on the choice of a speaker, composed an address to the king on this point, but forbore to allude to the others, lest they should strengthen the hands of the enemies of provincial liberty at the British court. A more moderate temper, meanwhile, was gradually disclosed in the house of representatives, of which one of the first indications was the prudent measure of reappointing their experienced friend and advocate, Jeremiah Dummer, to the office of provincial agent in Britain. But, at length, after divers debates and discussions at London respecting the articles of complaint, the reports of the attorney and solicitor-general, and of the Lords of Trade, and finally the determination of the king in council, proved, all, in the most unqualified terms, unfavorable to the Massachusetts assembly. The provincial agents, in this emergency, by the advice of their English friends, consented to acknowledge that the proceedings of the assembly had been faulty in relation to the king's woods and the interference with military operations, and pledged themselves that such violation of constitutional principles would not again be repeated.

By the prudent conduct of the agents, and the interest of the English friends of the province, the British government was induced to propose merely that an explanatory charter should be accepted by the assembly, expressly declaring the governor's power to negative the speaker, and limiting the assembly's adjournment by act of its own will to two days; — with the intimation, that, if this lenient offer were rejected, the whole controversy between Shute and the assembly would be submitted to the British parliament. An explanatory charter to the foregoing effect was accordingly prepared, and transmitted to Boston for the approbation or rejection of the assembly. [August 20, 1725.] Though the temper of the house was now reduced to a far more moderate strain than it had formerly indulged, yet, of eighty representatives of the people, no fewer than thirty-two voted that the charter should be rejected; and a similar opposition was made by four members of the council. [Jan. 15, 1726.] But, by a majority in both these chambers, a resolution was carried for accepting the charter, and couched in terms of loyalty and satisfaction that imported rather the reception of a favor than the resignation of a right. This accommodating behaviour of the assembly, by which a controversy that at one time betokened the most dangerous consequences was amicably composed, has been ascribed in a considerable degree to the prudence of William Dummer, the lieutenant-governor, and the influence which his liberal administration had enabled him to acquire. An interruption of the general harmony was portended by the announcement of Shute's approaching return, which, however, he was happily induced to defer by reflecting that he had strangely omitted to complain of the treatment he had received in respect of salary,

and to obtain any favorable provision with regard to a matter so deeply interesting to him. While he was assailing the provincial agents with renewed complaints on this subject, and tarrying at London in lingering diffidence of their soothing assurances that the province would doubtless provide for him in a handsome manner, his return was intercepted for ever by the death of the king. On the accession of George the Second to the British throne, the intrigues of some London merchants and of a faction in the province of New York, aided by the interest of Colonel Montgomery, who had been groom of the bedchamber to the new monarch while he was Prince of Wales, caused Burnet to be removed from New York, — the command of which and of New Jersey was committed to Montgomery; and, as a compensation to Burnet, the government of Massachusetts and New Hampshire, withdrawn from Shute, was conferred upon him.[1]

The disappointment which Burnet sustained by these ministerial arrangements was very severe, and perceptibly affected his health and spirits. Though embarrassed in his pecuniary circumstances, and an enemy to pomp and parade, he had conducted himself with such disinterestedness and generosity in New York and New Jersey, that he carried thence nothing with him to New England but the library which accompanied him from Britain. The hopes he had begun to indulge of repairing his fortune, and of executing his political schemes for the advantage of New York, he was now compelled to forego, in order to assume the direction of a people whose reported jealousy of their governors excited in his mind the most disagreeable forebodings of an unquiet administration. Very different were the sentiments which his appointment inspired in the people of New England, who regarded the name of Burnet as a pledge of civil and religious liberty, and beheld with approving eye the wisdom and integrity by which already this name was illustrated in America. A deputation was sent to conduct him in state to his new government;[2] and such a multitude of carriages and horsemen thronged to meet his approach to Boston, that he entered the town with a more numerous attendance and more splendid cavalcade than ever before or after graced the arrival of a British governor. But the apprehensions of Burnet were unhappily fulfilled, and the provincial expectations completely disappointed.

In New York and New Jersey he was distinguished by his indifference with respect to his own official emoluments; but, either from a change in his temper, or from the strain and tenor of the instructions which he now received from Britain, this was the object of his earliest and most eager concern in Massachusetts and New Hampshire; and the people heard with little pleasure the magnificent reception they had given him cited as a manifest proof of the ability of the country to afford him a large and perma-

[1] Hutchinson. Belknap. Douglass. Trumbull. Holmes. W. Smith.

[2] "One of the committee who went from Boston to meet him on the borders of Rhode Island, and conduct him to the seat of government, was the facetious Colonel Tailer. Burnet complained of the long *graces* which were said by clergymen on the road, and asked Tailer when they would shorten. He answered, 'The graces will increase in length till you come to Boston; after that, they will shorten till you come to your government of New Hampshire, where your Excellency will find no grace at all.'" Belknap. Though a pious man, Burnet laid very little stress on modes and forms. "A little more caution and conformity to the different ages, manners, customs, and even prejudices of different companies would have been more politic; but his open, undisguised mind could not submit to it. Being asked to dine with an *old charter senator*, who retained the custom of saying grace sitting, the grave gentleman desired to know which would be more agreeable to his Excellency, that grace should be said standing or sitting; the governor replied, 'Standing or sitting, any way or no way, just as you please.'" Hutchinson.

nent income. The assembly of New Hampshire consented to settle on him for three years an annual salary of two hundred pounds;[1] but the assembly of Massachusetts, though they voted to him at once the sum of fourteen hundred pounds, besides handsome presents for his travelling expenses, refused to enact any ordinance for a fixed or permanent salary. It was in vain that he reminded them, that the wisdom of parliament, in the parent state, had made it an established custom to grant *the civil list* to the king for life, and expressed his hope that the representatives of the people in Massachusetts would not acknowledge themselves exceeded in duty to his Majesty by any portion of his subjects. It was forcibly answered by the assembly, that the cases were widely different; that the king was the common father of his people, and that his interests were inseparably united with theirs; whereas a provincial governor, after the close of his brief administration, was affected neither by the welfare nor by the decay of the society over which he had presided, and could not, therefore, justly expect the same confidence from it which the nation at large reposed in the monarch.

The governor demanded if it were consistent with reason or justice, that he should be fettered in the discharge of his duty to the king by dependence on the people for the means of subsistence; and the assembly endeavoured to defeat or diminish the force of this, his strongest plea, by declaring their willingness to determine, annually, his salary, by a vote referring to the current and not to the past year; protesting withal that it would be time for him to complain when an inadequate or dishonorable provision was tendered. Burnet replied by reminding them reproachfully of the manner in which they had dealt with Shute; and in addition to the impolicy of thus identifying himself with the case of that unpopular governor, he committed the imprudence of threatening that the legislature of Great Britain would allocate a fixed salary upon the province, "*and perhaps do something else besides*,"—a vague menace of danger, which excited equal jealousy and indignation. He explained the meaning of it, in the progress of the controversy, by assuring them, that, if the British government should be provoked to call the attention of parliament to their conduct, the provincial charter would be dissolved without the slightest scruple or opposition. The assembly vainly solicited him to accept the sums they had voted, and to adjourn their session. He declared he was not at liberty to accept any thing but a fixed salary; and, availing himself of the powers conferred on the governor by the late explanatory charter, he refused to prorogue them, unless they would comply with his demands. Some time after, he adjourned the session from Boston to the town of *Salem*, which he remarked, with unbecoming levity, was a name propitious to harmony; and declared that he would next try the effect of a session at the town of *Concord*. But this jocular treatment of an affair of great public interest and importance was not more effectual than his arguments and menaces had been; and the assembly, in their several migrations, evinced a spirit not to be affected by change of place.[2] Some of the members now began to regret Governor Shute, who had declared that he would contentedly accept a salary of five hundred pounds a year; while Burnet refused to accept a tender of more

[1] By this assembly it was enacted that the qualification of an elector of New Hampshire should be a real estate of the value of fifty pounds.

[2] The dispute between Burnet and the Massachusetts assembly excited a good deal of interest in the other American provinces, and in particular attracted the comments of the Pennsylvanian newspapers, which were first established about this time. Franklin's *Memoirs*.

than double this amount. Strongly impressed with the justice of their cause, the assembly, in an address to the crown, declared that they were resolved, and were convinced that the same purpose would also prevail with succeeding assemblies, to provide "ample and honorable support" to the royal governor; but that their fidelity to their constituents would not permit them, by the establishment of a fixed salary, to separate the interest of the governor from the general interest of the province. The presentation of this address, and the support of the assembly's plea at the court of London, were confided to the provincial agent, in conjunction with Jonathan Belcher, whose public spirit on a former occasion we have already remarked, and who now exerted the utmost zeal to promote the success of his countrymen in a controversy so warmly and deeply interesting to them.

As the assembly were precluded, by their disagreement with the governor, from levying money to defray the expenses incurred by their agents in England, the funds requisite for this purpose were contributed by the merchants of Boston, whom the assembly thanked for their patriotism, and promised with all convenient speed to reimburse. But they were very soon apprized that their address to the king had been unfavorably received, and that the Lords of Trade had pronounced in a report to the privy council, that Massachusetts, with the most ungrateful disloyalty, was endeavouring to wrest the small remains of prerogative from the hands of the crown, in order to render itself independent of the parent state; and had recommended an immediate introduction of the controversy between the provincial assembly and the governor to the attention of parliament. Grieved, but not dismayed, by this intelligence, the assembly still refused to yield to the governor's demand; protesting that it was better that the liberties of the people should be withdrawn by the British parliament, than surrendered by their own representatives. In this determination they were encouraged to persist by the advice of the provincial agents at London, who soon after communicated their private opinion, that, notwithstanding the recommendation of the Lords of Trade and the privy council, the royal ministers had no serious intention of bringing the matter under the consideration of parliament. The assembly, in order to animate the popular resolution, caused this private communication from the agents to be printed and published;—an imprudent step, which might have been attended with the most injurious consequences to the province, if an alteration of the posture of affairs had not been produced by the sudden and unexpected death of the governor. The resentment he had excited did not survive him for a moment; so great a peacemaker and tamer of human enmity, sometimes, is death. It was universally acknowledged that he had displayed an honorable, disinterested, and generous disposition in every particular of his short administration, except in the one unhappy instance in which he offended by an inflexible adherence to illiberal instructions; and he was conducted to the grave with the respectful solemnity of a public funeral, and with demonstrations of esteem creditable alike to the liberality of those who entertained this sentiment, and to the merit of the individual who inspired it.

Jonathan Belcher, who was still in England, on learning Burnet's death, employed all the interest of the connections he had acquired as deputy of the province, to procure for himself the vacant appointment; and the British government were induced to bestow it upon him by the hope that

his influence with his countrymen would be successfully exerted to procure their submission to the royal instructions with regard to a permanent salary. It would seem, indeed, that he gave some pledge or assurance to this effect; and perhaps his view of the merits of the controversy was altered by the elevated sphere from which he now regarded it, and by the altered interest he acquired in its issue: the same constitutional jealousy of the administrators of executive authority, which he had hitherto deemed a principle deserving continual and unrelaxed application, might not improbably seem to him illiberal and affronting when it was directed against his own person. On his arrival in the province (in the following year [1730]), his first address to the assembly conveyed an urgent application in behalf of the very measure against which his counsel and his exertions had been recently directed. He read to the assembly the royal instructions, by which he was required to demand a fixed salary, and in which it was signified, that, if this demand were resisted any longer, "*his Majesty will find himself under a necessity of laying the undutiful behaviour of the province before the legislature of Great Britain, not only in this single instance, but in many others of the same nature and tendency, whereby it manifestly appears that the assembly, for some years last past, have attempted, by unwarrantable practices, to weaken, if not cast off, the obedience they owe to the crown, and the dependence which all colonies ought to have on the mother country.*" The instructions concluded by directing the governor, in case of the non-compliance of the assembly, to return straightway to Great Britain. He added, that he was commanded to inform them that the king's great lenity and goodness had hitherto withheld this controversy from the consideration of parliament, in order yet to give them a final opportunity of voluntarily demonstrating a due regard to the suggestions of royal wisdom. A merely selfish apostate from popular principles would, perhaps, have added no farther comment on this formidable message. But Belcher continued to address the house in a speech which affords a memorable example of the absurdity into which a man of sense, talent, and honor may be driven, when he swerves from the straight, simple paths of probity and consistency. He reminded the people of the exertions he had made to defend them from the measure which he now required them to adopt; and declared that his opinion of their past conduct in resisting it was quite unaltered. "But they had now, he said, struggled long enough to perceive that farther resistance was unavailing, and ought accordingly to yield. They had hitherto, he allowed, opposed the royal injunctions with the same commendable patriotism with which Cato, in his little provincial senate of Utica, defied the tyrannical mandates of Cæsar; but he hoped that they would not imitate the folly of Cato in committing suicide, instead of prudently submitting to irresistible power. In conclusion, he cautioned them to remember that the illustrative case of Cato was not in all respects parallel to their situation; inasmuch as Cæsar was a tyrant, whereas the British king was the protector of the liberties of his subjects. This ridiculous harangue seems to have produced no other effect than that of diminishing, by its glaring absurdity, the displeasure which Belcher's conduct was calculated to provoke.

The assembly conceived that they were at once exemplifying the classical parallel which he suggested, and evading the immoral catastrophe which he condemned, by declining all voluntary accession to the injury of their own liberties. They voted him a handsome reward for his services in

England, and the sum of one thousand pounds for the management of public affairs in the province, without any specification of the period of time to which this recompense corresponded; and firmly declined making any other or farther provision. Belcher, then despairing of success, endeavoured to obtain a relaxation of his instructions, and easily prevailed with the assembly to present an address to the crown soliciting permission for him to accept the sums that were voted. This permission was granted, on condition of his persisting to urge the royal instructions, — a stipulation to which Belcher ceased to pay any attention, and which at length the British government itself abandoned by the communication of a general permission to accept whatever grants the assembly might think proper to bestow. Thus, successfully for Massachusetts, terminated her long and important controversy with the crown respecting the emoluments of the royal governors, whose dependence on the popular approbation of their conduct was finally ascertained. This result, and the manifest satisfaction with which it was regarded by Belcher, secured to him some years of tranquil and popular administration in Massachusetts; but exposed him to the jealous suspicions of the British ministers, of which he experienced the inconvenience in his government of New Hampshire. The functions of the deputy-governor of this province, and of surveyor of the king's woods in New England, had been recently conferred by the British ministers on Colonel Dunbar, an Irish officer, whose only recommendation to such important trusts appears to have been his single-minded devotion to royal prerogative and despotic policy. Convinced of his merit in this respect, the British ministry retained him in his office as a proper counterpoise to Belcher, who, though created by themselves the superior officer of Dunbar, vainly complained of the intrigues by which his deputy endeavoured to collect a party against him. In the execution of the unpopular duties connected with his office of surveyor of woods, Dunbar conducted himself with a violence and severity that in some instances produced open resistance from the inhabitants; and because Belcher, sensible of the inexpediency of judicial procedure directed against a whole people, and aware of the provocation that Dunbar's insolence had given, contented himself with issuing a proclamation commanding the magistrates to execute and warning the people to obey the laws, he was denounced to the British ministers by Dunbar as the patron of the rioters and the enemy of royal prerogative.[1]

It is not easy to understand the policy of the British government in the controversies we have remarked with Massachusetts, nor, indeed, to believe that any consistent scheme of policy was actually entertained or pursued. So often did the king's ministers forego their own solemn threats to submit the whole controversy between the crown and the province to the consideration of parliament, that the provincial assembly seems at length to have supposed that this backwardness must have been caused by a secret conviction that the parliament was inclined to aid the colonists in resisting the royal prerogative. Rashly adopting this erroneous supposition, or some other not less delusive notion, the Massachusetts assembly, a few

[1] Oldmixon. Hutchinson. Belknap. W. Smith. S. Smith. In a collection of original drafts of state papers, preserved by the late George Chalmers, and kindly submitted to my perusal by his executor, I find a letter (dated the 5th of March, 1731) from the Lords of Trade to the Duke of Newcastle, strongly recommending the support of Colonel Dunbar; and adding, that, "In Massachusetts Bay, it is but too evident that any man who does his duty to the crown makes himself liable to the ill-will of the people."

years after, departed from its usual policy, and itself invoked parliamentary interposition, by presenting a petition to the House of Commons [1733], in which it was contended that the privilege of directing and controlling the issues from the provincial treasury ought to belong, not to the governor (to whom the charter expressly reserved it), but to the representatives of the people. The issue of this proceeding is calculated to increase our surprise that the ministry should have hesitated any longer to extend the range of parliamentary interposition beyond this isolated topic of dispute; for the House of Commons, on considering the Massachusetts petition, voted immediately that it "*was frivolous and groundless, an high insult upon his Majesty's government, and tending to shake off the dependency of the said colony upon this kingdom, to which by law and right they are and ought to be subject.*" A member, at the same time, having called the attention of the House to a censure which the Massachusetts assembly had passed on its agent, Jeremiah Dummer, for attending a parliamentary committee which required him to furnish information respecting one of the American trade acts, — the House unanimously resolved, "*that the presuming to call any person to account, or pass a censure upon him, for evidence given by such person before the House, was an audacious proceeding, and a high violation of the privileges of this House.*"[1] Notwithstanding these demonstrations of the readiness of parliament to lend its powerful aid to promote the ascendency of the parent state and curb the provincial assembly, the ministers of the crown, averse to the introduction of a wide and delicate discussion of colonial affairs and schemes of colonial policy, with which they were but slenderly acquainted, and fearful, perhaps, of strengthening the influence and opposition of the British Tories, and increasing the general distractions of the empire, — or, perhaps, from mere indolence and neglect, — forbore to execute their repeated threats of impeaching the general conduct of Massachusetts before the parliament, and exposing the province to the extremity of parliamentary vengeance.

During the period that had already intervened since the peace between New England and the Eastern Indians, and for many years after, the history of Rhode Island and Connecticut consists of nothing more remarkable than the foundation and extension of the towns and villages that were formed within the jurisdictions of these States. At New York, a fallacious tranquillity was produced by the calm, negligent indolence of Montgomery, who had abetted the intrigues against Burnet with no other view than to possess himself of an office and salary which a premature death suffered him but a short time to enjoy. The intrigues which had conduced to his elevation now attained their utmost success, in procuring an order from the king in council, by which all the laws suggested by Burnet and enacted by the assembly of New York, with regard to commerce with Canada, were repealed. [1729.] This measure was productive of the most pernicious consequences; tending to undermine the English trade at Oswego, to promote the French commerce at Niagara, and to alienate the Six Nations from their fidelity to Great Britain.[2] The French perceived and diligently improved their advantage. Before three years more had elapsed, they erected [1731] a fort at Crown Point, in the very centre of the territories of the Six Nations, and consequently within the provincial limits of New York. This commanding post not only enabled them to prevent the attempts of

[1] Oldmixon. Gordon. [2] Trumbull. W. Smith.

English troops to penetrate into Canada, but afforded a convenient magazine to their own scouting parties, and a stronghold, to which, in future wars, their Indian auxiliaries might retreat from plundering and scalping expeditions against the English frontiers. So careless and supine was the government of New York, that the first intimation it received of this encroachment, and of its obvious consequences, proceeded from Governor Belcher and the assembly of Massachusetts, who offered to unite in an embassy to Canada, and in every ulterior measure that might be requisite to compel the French to evacuate their settlement at Crown Point. But this offer, and the important subject to which it related, experienced equal neglect; although four companies of soldiers were now maintained by the crown, at an annual charge of nearly eight thousand pounds, at New York.[1]

The change which a revolutionary movement had introduced into the government of South Carolina, about nine years before, was now legally ascertained and completed. A corresponding change was likewise extended to the northern province. Sir Francis Nicholson, who administered the government of South Carolina during four years, conducted himself in this situation with a judicious and spirited attention to the public welfare, which proved highly grateful to the inhabitants, and honorably brightened the closing scene of his political life in America. The intriguing politician seemed now to be lost in the eager, busy, and ostentatious patron of public improvement; and the distinction which he formerly courted from an enlargement of his authority, he was now contented to derive from a liberal and popular exercise of it. He promoted the establishment of schools and the spread of education, contributing his own time and money in aid of these useful purposes; and he prevailed with the English Society for propagating the Gospel to send a number of clergymen to the province, and endow them with liberal salaries in addition to the provincial stipends. He concluded a treaty of peace with the powerful Indian tribe called the Creeks; and by presents and flattering attentions gained the friendship of the still more powerful Cherokees, whose numbers amounted to twenty thousand persons, of whom six thousand were warriors. Although Britain and Spain had publicly signified their commands to Nicholson and the governor of Florida to maintain a friendly intercourse between the two settlements, it was very soon discovered that the remains of the Yamassee tribe, who took refuge after their defeat within the Spanish territory, were encouraged by the Spaniards in the predatory incursions by which they still occasionally harassed the frontier settlements of Carolina; and the government of this province, perceiving the necessity of guarding against the insidious hostility of its rival, began to cultivate the friendship of the Cherokees with a diligence and address that reminds us of the ancient policy of New York with regard to the Six Nations.

It was in the present year that the proprietaries of Carolina were finally divested of the authority which they had so long abused, in both the provinces distinguished by this name. An act of parliament recognized and sanctioned a treaty that had been concerted with all the proprietaries except Lord Carteret, afterwards Earl of Granville (who possessed an eighth share), for the surrender of their titles and interest in Carolina to the king, in consideration of the sum of seventeen thousand five hundred pounds.[2] Seven

[1] W. Smith. Williams's *History of Vermont.*

[2] The proprietaries who sold their shares were Henry, Duke of Beaufort, William, Lord Craven, James Bertie, the Honorable Doddington Greville, Henry Bertie, Mary Danson, Elizabeth More, Sir John Colleton, John Cotton, and Joseph Blake.

eighth parts of the arrears of quitrents due from the colony to the proprietaries, and amounting to upwards of nine thousand pounds, were also purchased by the crown at the same time for five thousand pounds. Lord Carteret surrendered his interest in the government of the province, but chose to retain his share of the property of the soil, of which an eighth part was assigned to him along the Virginian frontier. The two provinces of North and South Carolina were thus vested in the crown, which henceforth exercised the prerogative of appointing the governors, by whom the executive power was administered, and nominating the counsellors, who, in concurrence with the provincial representatives, formed the legislative assemblies. As a boon to the people thus assumed into a nearer connection with the government of the parent state, an act of parliament was passed permitting the planters and merchants of Carolina to export rice directly to any part of Europe southward of Cape Finisterre, in vessels manned according to the requisitions of the Acts of Navigation.[1]

In the following year, Sir Alexander Cumming conducted seven chiefs of the Cherokees on a visit to England, where they affixed their *marks* to a treaty of friendship and alliance with Britain, which was also signed by the Lords of Trade. [1730.] When they were presented to the king, they laid their national emblems of sovereignty at his feet, and formally avowed themselves his subjects, and acknowledged his dominion over all their countrymen, who (they averred) had fully authorized them to declare this recognition. They promised especially to assist the English in the pursuit and recapture of fugitive slaves. They were amazed and confounded at the splendor of the British court; comparing the king and queen to the sun and moon, the princes to the stars of heaven, and themselves to invisible motes in the rays of a dazzling effulgence of grandeur; and, loaded with presents, both useful and ornamental, were reconveyed to their own country by Robert Johnson, the deposed governor of the proprietaries, to whom the king committed, once more, the government of South Carolina,—and whom he enabled to gratify the inhabitants with the intelligence of a total remission of the arrears of their quitrents, and of a royal gift of seventy pieces of cannon for the defence of the colony. [1731.] In consequence of the treaty, and of the impressions which the chiefs received in England and communicated on their return to their countrymen, the Cherokees, for many years, preserved an uninterrupted peace with the colonists. South Carolina now began to make rapid advances in wealth and prosperity. Two years afterwards [1733], a new race of emigrants resorted to it. John Peter Purry, a native of Switzerland, having visited the province and ascertained its resources, applied for a grant of lands to the British government, which agreed to give him a suitable portion of ground and four hundred pounds sterling for every hundred able-bodied men whom he should transport from Switzerland to Carolina. He speedily carried thither a hundred and seventy poor Switzers, who were not long after joined by two hundred more, and founded a town to which they gave the name of Purrysburg.

The policy adopted by the British government, of employing at the first the same functionaries who had enjoyed commissions under the proprietaries, proved more fortunate in South than in North Carolina, where Burrington, a weak, imprudent, intemperate man, as governor, and Porter, a

[1] Stat. 2 George II., Caps. 23 and 34. Oldmixon. Hewit. Smollett. Holmes.

man of the most corrupt disposition and brutal manners, as judge of the Court of Admiralty, rendered the people for a few years as unquiet and unhappy under the royal as they had ever been under the proprietary sway. At length Porter was dismissed, in consequence of an impeachment by the assembly, who ascertained that he had never pronounced a single judgment without having first extorted a bribe; and Burrington was superseded by Gabriel Johnstone [1734], under whose prudent administration the colony began to reap the benefits of industry, order, and submission to the laws. New settlements were then formed, and the population manifested a vigorous principle of increase. But many years elapsed before the factious, turbulent spirit which bad government had nourished among this people subsided. Governor Johnstone, perceiving the necessity of renovating the popular character, at every session pressed the assembly to make some provision for the support of public worship and the education of youth. Attending to the letter, but neglecting the spirit of his advice, they passed a law, totally inconsistent with religious liberty, for the support of a particular church; and imposed taxes for the professed purpose of founding schools, but always diverted the produce of them to other applications.[1] The laws that were enacted for the formation of a religious establishment retained their force, for they were supported by the spirit of party; but learning (says the historian of this province) was neglected, because she belonged to no party at all. Both in North and in South Carolina, vast emissions of paper money had been made; a depreciation of the provincial currency ensued to the monstrous extent of seven hundred *per cent.*;[2] and all the fraud, gambling, and embarrassment naturally consequent on such a state of matters continued long and severely to afflict the inhabitants of both provinces.[3]

Pennsylvania still continued to enjoy a progressive advance in wealth and population. Sir William Keith was succeeded, in 1725, by Major Gordon, who, conducting himself with firmness, and at the same time with prudence and moderation, obtained general respect. But the illiberal counsel which Keith had imparted in the commencement of his administration operated after his departure. Crowds of emigrants still continued to flock to Pennsylvania; and in the year 1729 no fewer than six thousand two hundred and eight[4] European settlers resorted to this province. Alarmed at such an influx of strangers, the assembly in the same year enacted a law discreditable in the highest degree to Pennsylvanian sense and generosity. It was entitled "An Act to prevent Poor and Impotent Persons from being im-

[1] After the American Revolution, says Williamson, the assembly of North Carolina, aware of the bonds which connect knowledge with liberty, and ignorance with despotism, founded a university in this province. "The honor of endowing a public seminary of learning," he adds, "of instructing the rising generation, and training them up in useful knowledge, was reserved for men, who, by suffering together, had acquired mutual confidence and esteem; for men, who, by securing their independence, had acquired a proper degree of self-respect and national spirit."

[2] That is, seven hundred pounds of Carolinian money was equivalent to no more than one hundred pounds sterling.

[3] Oldmixon. Hewit. Williamson. Charlevoix's *Travels*. Wynne.

[4] They are thus particularized by Anderson, in his *Historical Deduction of the Origin of Commerce*: —

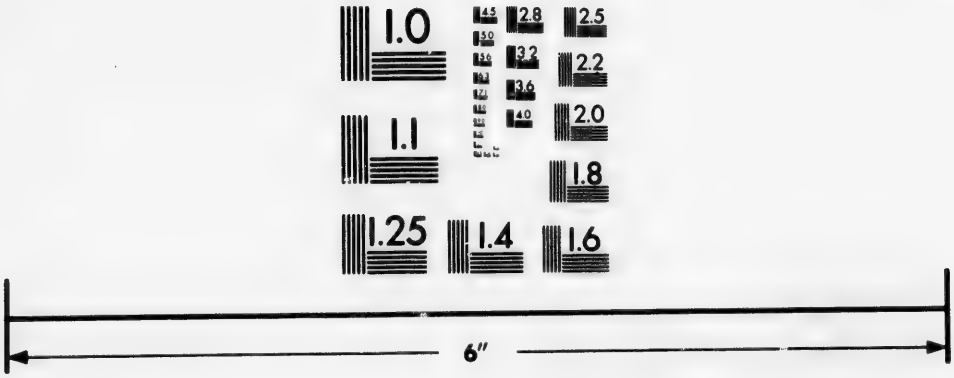
English and Welch passengers and servants	267
Scotch servants	43
Irish passengers and servants	1155
Palatine passengers	243
At Newcastle, in Delaware, passengers and servants, chiefly from Ireland	4500
Total	6208

ported into this Province," and imposed a tax of five shillings per head on all new comers to Pennsylvania.[1] This scandalous obstruction of the provisions of nature and the common rights of mankind proved far more injurious to the authors than to the objects of the law. Many vessels, freighted with industrious and respectable emigrants, altered their original destination to Pennsylvania, and, repairing to New York, New Jersey, and South Carolina, enlarged the strength and prosperity of those colonies with the materials which Pennsylvanian illiberality had so unworthily cast away. Among other pernicious consequences, this Pennsylvanian law tended to rivet the bonds of negro slavery, by increasing the scarcity of free laborers in the province. It was not long before the provincial legislators became sensible of the impolicy of taxing the resort of men to a thinly peopled country, where labor was already inconveniently dear; and, hastening to repeal their unjust and foolish law, they derived, in their turn, a considerable advantage from the oppression which the German emigrants endured shortly after at New York, and which induced great multitudes of these useful settlers to resort to Pennsylvania during the eighteenth century.

Thirty-one years were elapsed since Pennsylvania had beheld any member of the family which it acknowledged as its proprietary sovereigns. But now [August, 1732] Thomas Penn, a son of the founder, and himself one of the proprietaries of the province, arrived from England in Pennsylvania, and continued to reside in it for a number of years. His arrival was greeted with expressions of honor, affection, and esteem from the whole provincial population. Multitudes of people thronged to gaze upon the features of a Penn, and with loud acclamations testified the warmth and sincerity of delight with which they beheld the son of that great man, to whose talent, wisdom, and benevolence they owed their beloved country and happy lot. Entering Philadelphia at the head of a cavalcade of eight hundred horsemen, he received an address of congratulation from the assembly, framed in all the quaint simplicity of Quaker speech, — felicitating him on his arrival, — declaring that the memory of William Penn was an object of everlasting gratitude and honor, — and affirming, with some disregard of accuracy, that all the efforts and artifices of wicked men had ever proved unavailing to disturb the cordiality between the people of Pennsylvania and their proprietaries. [1733.] The Indians received him with equal regard; and, at a conference which he held with them, expressed the pleasure with which they *brightened the chain of friendship* with a son of *Onas*. But Thomas Penn was ill fitted to sustain his hereditary honors; and all the indulgence and partiality of the colonists were unable to disguise from them how unworthy he was of the sentiments which they associated with the name of Penn. His manners were reserved and forbidding; his disposition sordid and illiberal; and the large private estate which he inherited from his father in Pennsylvania, the only part of his patrimony which he seemed to appreciate or studied to improve. A reception still more affectionate than he had met with attended the arrival of his brother, John Penn, the eldest son of the first proprietary, in the year 1734. "What may we not hope," said the assembly, in their address to him, "from the son of so great a man, educated under his care, and influenced by his example?" The mild

[1] Proud, the Quaker historian, takes no notice of this law. On the contrary, he extols the virtue and wisdom of the Quakers, which, by rendering Pennsylvania a happy country, promoted the rapid increase of its population.

IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

2.8
2.5
3.2
2.2
3.6
2.0
4.0
1.8
1.1
1.0

and benevolent character of John Penn seemed likely to justify these hopes; but, unfortunately, his stay in the province proved of very short continuance. His return to England was hastened (as his father's had once been) by the conduct of the proprietary of Maryland; Lord Baltimore having now made one more ineffectual attempt to prevail with the British government to cancel the decree by which his ancestor was deprived of the Delaware territory.[1]

The act of parliament which we have recently noticed, for promoting the commerce of Carolina, was not the only British statute relative to North America which was enacted since the peace of Utrecht. In the reign of Charles the Second, the provinces of New England were indulged with a free importation of European salt for the encouragement of their fisheries. The same indulgence was now extended, first to Pennsylvania, and afterwards to New York, by statutes[2] which declared that the interest of Britain required that the inhabitants of these colonies should be induced to extend their fisheries, "which will enable the said inhabitants to purchase more of the British manufactures." In England, landed property had always been exempted from responsibility for debts, except of a rare and peculiar description. But as the English merchants and manufacturers were generally creditors of their American correspondents, it was judged inexpedient to permit this exemption to have place in the colonies; and an act of parliament[3] was accordingly passed, rendering all lands, houses, negroes, and estates of every description, real or personal, in America, liable for the satisfaction of debts of all kinds whatsoever due by the colonists to British subjects. An absurd attempt was made to enforce in one of the States an assimilation of the English and provincial laws of intestate succession. By an order of the English privy council, the assembly of Connecticut was commanded to repeal its ancient ordinance, by which all the children, male and female, of a parent dying intestate, were admitted to succeed equally to the whole of his estate; and to substitute in its place the English law of primogeniture. But, happily, this impolitic measure was evaded by tho Connecticut assembly.[4]

The whole strain of British legislation with regard to America disclosed the purpose of raising up a nation of customers for the merchants and manufacturers of the parent state, and acknowledged the idea that the American communities existed solely for the advantage of Britain. Sir Josiah Child, in his *Discourses on Trade*, which were published about the year 1670, represented New England as likely to prove rather a rival than a tributary to the commercial greatness of Britain; adding, that "there is nothing more prejudicial, and, in prospect, more dangerous, to any mother kingdom, than the increase of shipping in her colonies." The same views were maintained by Dr. Davenant, in his *Discourse on the Plantation Trade*, composed in the reign of William and Mary. The House of Commons, in the year 1719, passed a resolution declaring "that the erecting manufactories in the colonies tended to lessen their dependence upon Great Britain." George the First, in the speech with which he opened the session of parliament in the year 1721, observed, "that the nation might be supplied with naval stores from our own colonies in North America; and that the cultivation of this useful and advantageous branch of commerce would divert the colo-

[1] Oldmixon. Kalm's *Travels*. Proud.
[2] 13 George I., Cap. 5., and 3 George II., Cap. 12.
[3] 5 George II., Cap. 7.
[4] Trumbull.

nies from setting up manufactures which directly interfered with those of Great Britain." In some of the provinces a manufacture of hats had arisen, both for the supply of the other colonies and for foreign exportation. With the view of stifling or checking this manufacture, an act of parliament[1] was passed, in the year 1732, which declared that it was highly prejudicial to the hat-makers of England; and prohibited the exportation of hats made in America, even from one province to another. By the same act, all American colonists were restrained from undertaking this manufacture, without a previous apprenticeship of seven years; and all provincial hat-makers were forbidden to engage more than two apprentices at a time, or to employ or instruct negroes to aid them in their business. The colonists had long carried on an extensive trade with the French West India Islands, from which they obtained rum, sugar, and molasses, in return for lumber and provisions. This commerce was menaced with entire destruction, in the year 1733, by an act of parliament,[2] which the English West India merchants and planters had sufficient interest to procure, and which imposed heavy duties on all rum, sugar, and molasses imported into America, except from the West India plantations of Britain. The fate of this statute was remarkable. So generally was it disregarded by the colonists, that the British government judged it prudent to connive at their illegal proceedings, and prohibited the custom-house officers from levying duties or arresting vessels in conformity with its provisions. Yet the law, which was thus practically admitted to be inexpedient, and suffered to be openly violated and contemned, was continued, by successive reënactments, till the year 1761, when an attempt was made to suppress the extensive smuggling to which it had given rise, by diminishing very considerably the duties it imposed. The Hatters' Act, as it was not a more liberal trait of policy, so it proved not a more fortunate exertion of power. Internal smuggling, which it was impossible to check, rendered it, from the first, almost entirely inoperative; and, as the provincial communities advanced in strength and spirit, its continuance was regarded by them with displeasure, as a badge of servitude and oppression.[3]

North America, at the present period, received a visit from one of the most admirable and distinguished philosophers that England or Europe has ever produced; and whom only a breach of good faith on the part of the mother country prevented from ending his days as an American colonist. Dr. Berkeley,[4] afterwards Bishop of Cloyne, in the meridian of his fame, and possessor of one of the wealthiest ecclesiastical endowments in Ireland, conceived the benevolent project of improving the education of the European colonists, and converting the American Indians to Christianity, by the ministry of a college to be erected at the expense of the parent state; and offered to resign his opulent preferment, and to dedicate the remainder of his life to the instruction of American youth in this college; requiring for his labors only the moderate salary of one hundred pounds. So powerful was the influence of this disinterested example, that three junior fellows of Trinity College, at Dublin, consented to exchange their possessions and

[1] 5 George II., Cap. 22.

[2] 6 George II., Cap. 13. It was for affording information to the parliamentary committee which digested this act, that Jeremiah Dummer incurred that censure from his constituents, the Massachusetts assembly, which provoked, as we have seen, the indignation of the House of Commons.

[3] Gordon. Pitkin.

[4] "To Berkeley every virtue under heaven." Pope.

prospects in their native land for a share in Berkeley's pious exile and philanthropic labors. Berkeley, having printed his *Proposal*, caused it to be submitted to King George the First, by the Abbé Altieri, who was one of a small society of learned men with whom this monarch delighted to unbend his mind in familiar conversation. The king approved the scheme, and commanded Sir Robert Walpole to introduce and recommend it to the House of Commons. A charter for the erection of the projected college was granted; and a parliamentary address made provision for its endowment, by authorizing the appropriation of a considerable public fund for this purpose. Berkeley, accompanied by his friends, and carrying with him a large collection of books, repaired to Rhode Island[1] in 1728, and remained there for several years, preparing to lay the foundation of his institution, and awaiting the remittance of the public donation. An extension of his scheme, suggested by his acquaintance with the actual condition of America, embraced the religious instruction of the unhappy negroes who were detained there in a state of slavery. This was opposed by certain planters (of what particular province has not been specified), who had conceived the notion that slavery was legally incompatible with the reception of the rite of baptism. It was by no means an unnatural supposition of those planters, that the law of England, which declares Christianity to be *part and parcel* of itself, would refuse to authorize the infliction of slavery on those whom the ordinance of baptism had designated as the objects of divine grace and the adopted brethren of the Saviour of mankind.

But there is something monstrous in the consideration, that these planters (except, indeed, such of them as were professed infidels) must, according to their own religious principles, have purposed to frustrate divine grace, and check the spread of Christianity, lest municipal law should compel them to grant temporal freedom to baptized and converted negroes. "To undeceive them in this particular," says Berkeley, "it seemed a proper step that the opinion of his Majesty's attorney and solicitor-general (Yorke and Talbot) should be procured. This opinion they charitably sent me, signed by their own hands; and it was accordingly printed at Rhode Island, and dispersed throughout the plantations." But no opportunity was afforded of ascertaining how far the opposing planters would have been satisfied with this guaranty of the slavery of the negroes' bodies, notwithstanding the emancipation of their souls. For Sir Robert Walpole, who never heartily embraced the project of Berkeley, was delivered, by the death of George the First, from the only inducement that had prompted him to support it; and the celebrated General Oglethorpe found his influence in parliament sufficient to divert the funds that were promised to Berkeley into a different channel. They were assigned to himself for the purpose of transporting foreign and British Protestants to the new colony of Georgia, which he had undertaken to found. After a succession of applications from Berkeley, and of excuses from the minister, Gibson, Bishop of London, at length obtained from Walpole an answer that left nothing farther to be asked or expected. "If you put this question to me as a minister," said Sir Robert, "I must and can assure you that the money shall undoubtedly be paid as soon as the public convenience will allow; but if you ask me as a friend, whether Dean Berkeley should continue in America expecting the payment of the twenty thousand pounds, I advise him by all means to return home to Europe and

[1] During his residence here, he composed his *Alciphron, or The Minute Philosopher.*

to give up his present expectations." Berkeley, informed of this conference by his friend Gibson, abandoned his scheme, presented a small landed property which he had purchased, together with a thousand volumes of books, to Yale College, in Connecticut, distributed the remainder of his library among the inhabitants of Rhode Island, and returned to Britain in 1731, — leaving America enriched by his liberality, and improved, or at least invited to improvement, by his example.[1]

[1] Bishop Stock's *Life of Berkeley*. Berkeley's *Works*. Holmes. Berkeley was so forcibly struck with the grand prospective career of American society, that he poured forth his sentiments on this theme in the only poetical composition of which he is known to have been the author. It is printed in the second volume of his works, and entitled, —

VERSES ON THE PROSPECT OF PLANTING ARTS AND LEARNING IN AMERICA.

The Muse, disgusted at an age and clime
  Barren of every glorious theme,
In distant lands now waits a better time,
  Producing subjects worthy fame.

In happy climes, where from the genial sun
  And virgin earth such scenes ensue,
The force of art by nature seems outdone,
  And fancied beauties by the true.

In happy climes, the seat of innocence,
  Where nature guides and virtue rules,
Where men shall not impose for truth and sense
  The pedantry of courts and schools, —

There shall be sung another golden age,
  The rise of empire and of arts,
The good and great, inspiring epic rage,
  The wisest heads, and noblest hearts:

Not such as Europe breeds in her decay, —
  Such as she bred when fresh and young,
When heavenly flame did animate her clay,
  By future poets shall be sung.

Westward the course of empire takes its way:
  The first four acts already past,
A fifth shall close the drama with the day:
  Time's noblest offspring is the last.

Sir Thomas Browne, in his *Prophecy concerning the Future State of Several Nations*, anticipated Berkeley's conjecture, and predicted that "America will be the seat of the fifth empire."

APPENDIX II.

State of Population, Laws, Trade, and Manners in the North American Provinces. — Virginia — New England — Comparison of New England and Canadian Manners. — Maryland. — Carolina. — New York. — New Jersey. — Pennsylvania and Delaware — the Tunkers.

It is certain that all the North American provinces had made great advances in population [1733], both from native increase and the resort of European emigrants, since the commencement of the eighteenth century; though, from the total absence of reports of the population of some of the provinces, and the manifest inaccuracy and mutual contradiction of most of the reports that have been transmitted with regard to others, it is but an imperfect view of the actual advance at this epoch, that we are able to obtain. Partial, also, though somewhat ampler and more interesting, is the information (additional to what has been conveyed in the preceding chapters) which may be collected with regard to the state of society and manners exhibited in those provinces at the present period.

In Virginia, as we have already seen,[1] the number of inhabitants amounted, in the year 1703, to 60,606, — of whom about one half were negro slaves. The militia of the province then reckoned in its ranks the number of 9,522. In the year 1722, the militia-men amounted to 18,000,[2] — which, without supposing a proportional, manifestly implies a very considerable, increase of the general population.[3] The administration of Colonel Spottiswoode in this province was terminated in the year 1723. His representations of the necessity of vigorous measures for counteracting the encroaching policy of France excited the displeasure of the British ministers, who were unconvinced by his reasoning and offended by his urgency; and affecting to credit the secret complaints preferred against him by a party of planters and merchants, whose frauds in the tobacco trade he had detected and was endeavouring to prevent, they sacrificed to spleen and intrigue a man whose enterprising talents and inflexible virtue might have rendered the most valuable service to the interests of Britain in America.[4] It is remarkable that Burnet and Spottiswoode, the two most distinguished opponents of the policy of France, should both have been the victims of selfish and dishonest interests and machinations. Spottiswoode was succeeded by Sir Hugh Drysdale, of whose administration nothing farther has been recorded than that it terminated in 1727, when the government was conferred on General Gooch.

At Williamsburg, which was now the seat of government of this province, there were three public buildings, which were accounted the most magnificent specimens of architecture in North America, — the College,

[1] Book I., Chap. III., *ante*.

[2] Beverly.

[3] Oldmixon's enumeration of 70,000 is certainly too low.

[4] Spottiswoode remained in Virginia, and died there in the year 1739. His merit began to be generally acknowledged before his death; and on the breaking out of the Spanish war, in that year, he was appointed to command the colonial forces in an expedition against the settlements of Spain. But he did not live to enjoy the returning smiles of royal favor. One of the counties of Virginia was named *Spottsylvania*, in honor of his services. "The name of Spottiswoode," says Burk, "has descended to us with scarcely sufficient alloy to constitute a human character."

the State-house, and a costly structure which Governor Nicholson had promoted, and which bore the pompous title of the Capitol. A luxurious and expensive hospitality, and a great deal of card-playing, prevailed among the upper classes of inhabitants; and hunting and cock-fighting were favorite amusements of persons of all ranks. A small work, entitled *The Present State of Virginia*, by Hugh Jones, was published at London in 1724. The substance of this uninteresting performance is embraced in the second edition of the work of Oldmixon. "In Virginia," says Jones, who was a clergyman of the church of England, and had been a fellow of William and Mary College, "there is no ecclesiastical court; *so that* vice, profaneness, and immorality are not suppressed. The people hate the very name of the Bishop's Court."—"All which things," he gravely adds, "make it absolutely necessary for a bishop to be settled there, to pave the way for mitres in English America!" Williamsburg contained a theatre for dramatic performances; the first institution of the kind that arose in the British colonies. Many persons of high extraction, but narrow fortune, had repaired from England to this province, as a scene where humble industry was not exposed to the scornful glance of aristocratic pride; and were soon enabled to exchange a straitened, dependent estate of insolvent gentility in the mother country, for wealth, respect, usefulness, and happiness in Virginia It was customary also for young women, whom misfortune or imprudence had deprived of reputation in Britain, to transport themselves to Virginia, where, in many instances, a second spring of hope, character, and felicity rewarded their expatriation. Printing was first established in this province in the year 1729; and the first Virginian newspaper was published at Williamsburg in 1736. From Virginia and Maryland there were now annually exported about one hundred thousand hogsheads of tobacco (valued at eight pounds per hogshead), and two hundred ships were commonly freighted with the tobacco produce of these two provinces. The annual gain derived by the parent state from this trade was about five hundred thousand pounds. The articles of iron and copper ore, beeswax, hemp, and raw silk were first exported from Virginia to England in 1730.

A report on the state of Virginia, presented, in the reign of Queen Anne, to the Lords of Trade in England, contains the following statements. "On every river of this province, there are men, in number from ten to thirty, who by trade and industry have got very complete estates. These gentlemen take care to supply the poorer sort with goods and necessaries, and are sure to keep them always in their debt, and consequently dependent on them. Out of this number are chosen the council, assembly, justices, and other officers of government. The inhabitants consider that this province is of far greater advantage to her Majesty than all the rest of the provinces besides on the main land; and therefore conclude that they ought to have greater privileges than the rest of her Majesty's subjects. The assembly think themselves entitled to all the rights and privileges of an English parliament, and begin to search into the records of that honorable house for precedents to govern themselves by. The council imagine they stand almost upon equal terms with the British House of Lords." These statements were probably deduced as much from jealous apprehension as from accurate observation. The revenue of the provincial government was proportioned to the state of trade; a considerable part of it arising from a tax of two shillings a hogshead on exported tobacco. The quitrents, ac-

cording to the calculation of Sir William Keith, yielded, at this time, three thousand five hundred pounds *per annum*. Complaints were frequently preferred by the Virginians, of the tyrannical insolence with which they were treated by the commanders of English ships of war appointed to cruise off the coast for the protection of trade. But the grievance which they chiefly deplored, and by which discontent and impatience were kept perpetually alive, arose from the pressure of the Trade Laws, which were rendered doubly severe by the heavy duties with which the importation of tobacco into England was loaded. Though sentiments of attachment to the parent state were still cherished among the Virginians,—already, says their historian, had they begun generally to question her right to impose the commercial restrictions. Their jealousy of the power and policy of England appears from the uniform opposition of the Virginian assembly to the royal recommendations for the repair of forts, "which," says Burk, "had ever been objects of aversion to the people of this colony since the celebrated memorials of Nicholson."[1]

The population of New England had advanced as rapidly as that of Virginia. Massachusetts, which in the close of the seventeenth century was estimated to contain somewhat more than seventy thousand persons, in the year 1731, contained one hundred and twenty thousand freemen, and two thousand six hundred negro slaves. The trade of this province was computed to employ six hundred ships and sloops, amounting to at least thirty-eight thousand tons, one half of which traded to Europe. About six thousand persons were employed in its fisheries. Connecticut appears, from numerous indications, to have attained a very improved and happy state; but no account of its population at this epoch has been preserved. Rhode Island, which, at the close of the preceding century, contained about ten thousand inhabitants, in the year 1730 possessed a population of 17,935 persons, of whom 985 were Indians, and 1,648 negro slaves. The town of Newport, the metropolis of this province, contained a population of 4,640 persons, including Indians and negroes. The date of the introduction of printing into Rhode Island has not been recorded; but the first publication of a newspaper in this province occurred in the year 1732. Notwithstanding its thriving estate, at the present time, its history is involved in greater obscurity than that of any other of the British colonies. Whether from the influence of Bishop Berkeley's exertions, or from other causes, its aspect in an ecclesiastical view manifested soon after his visit a considerable improvement. In the year 1738, the town of Newport contained seven worshipping assemblies; at Portsmouth, there was a large society of Quakers; and twenty-five assemblages for Christian worship had arisen within the other eleven insular townships of this colony. In the nine townships on the main land there were eight Baptist and three Congregational churches. Of the population of New Hampshire, at the present period, there is no account. The militia of all the States of New England amounted

[1] Oldmixon. Burk. Keith's *History of Virginia*. Anderson. *Universal History*. Wynne. Campbell. "The greatest of their discouragements is the high duty on their commodities, the custom being often ten times as much as the prime cost; and if the tobacco happen to be of inferior quality, there is no abatement made on that account; and no consideration for defective crops, losses, or accidents. When the goods come to market, after custom and the factor's bill for commission is paid, the net proceeds prove but little. The poor planter is forced to pay exorbitant interest or grant a mortgage to the English merchant, who, having got the least hold of his estate, feeds him insensibly with money, till the whole follows at a mean rate" Oldmixon.

to fifty thousand men.[1] Iron was the only metallic ore which the colonists had undertaken to improve; and there were now six furnaces for hollow ware, and nineteen forges, in New England. In the year 1730, fifty hundred-weight of hemp, produced in New England and Carolina, were exported to Britain.[2] In the year 1712, certain adventurers in Connecticut conceived hopes of great enrichment from the discovery of two copper-mines, which were erroneously supposed to contain also some veins of more precious metal. One of these mines, at Simsbury, was worked to a great extent, but with little benefit to the undertakers. The excavation produced by their labors was afterwards converted into a prison; whereby (says Trumbull) it yielded more advantage to the province than by all the copper that had been extracted from it.[3]

There commenced about this time a series of disputes that for several years interrupted the harmony that had long subsisted between Massachusetts and New Hampshire. The arrangement, by which these provinces, though possessing separate assemblies, were subjected to the same governor, produced inconvenience to both. The inhabitants of Massachusetts complained of their occasional destitution of a chief magistrate, during the governor's visits to New Hampshire; and the people of New Hampshire were perplexed by the disagreements between their governor and the deputy, who in his absence conducted the executive administration. One party, existing both in Massachusetts and New Hampshire, proposed to remedy this inconvenience by a union of the two provinces; but the great body of the people in New Hampshire were desirous of the opposite remedy, of a distinct executive government for themselves. They were sensible, however, that as yet their country could hardly support the increased expense consequent upon such a change; and to remove this obstacle, they endeavoured to enlarge their resources by territorial claims, opposed to the pretensions of Massachusetts, which produced a great deal of litigation between the two provinces. The trade of New Hampshire, at this time, consisted chiefly in the exportation of lumber and fish to Spain, Portugal, and the Caribbee Islands. In winter, small vessels were despatched to the southern colonies with English and West India goods, and returned with cargoes of corn and pork. The manufacture of linen derived a considerable increase from the resort of Irish emigrants to New Hampshire. Though this province has always been considered a remarkably healthy region,[4] it was about this time visited with a fatal epidemical malady, called *the throat distemper*, which afterwards recurred in the years 1754 and 1784, and on all these occasions was productive of great mortality. The symptoms were a swelled throat, with white or ash-colored specks, an efflorescence on the skin, extreme debility of the whole frame, and a strong tendency to putridity. Its remote or predisposing cause, says the historian of New Hampshire, is one of those mysteries in nature which baffle human inquiry.[5]

The invention of inoculation for the small-pox, which Lady Mary Wortley Montague first imported from Turkey into Great Britain, was introduced

[1] Anderson. Holmes. Warden.
[2] Douglass. Anderson. Holmes. [3] Trumbull.
[4] "A profusion of effluvia from the resinous trees imparts to the air a balsamic quality, which is extremely favorable to health; and the numerous streams of limpid water, some of which fall with great rapidity from the mountains, produce currents of fresh air highly salubrious to those who reside on their banks." Belknap.
[5] Belknap.

into New England in the year 1721. Cotton Mather, of Boston, whose literary and ministerial merit we have already had occasion to commemorate, having observed in the *Philosophical Transactions* of London an account of this operation, and of its successful issue, communicated by a Turkish physician, and by the Venetian consul at Smyrna, recommended a trial of it to the physicians of Boston. The experiment was declined by them all, except Dr. Zabdiel Boylston, who adventured to begin with his own family, and afterwards continued the practice, notwithstanding the most violent opposition. Many pious people were struck with horror at the idea of an intentional communication of disease, which seemed an inversion of the purposes of medicine, and a wanton provocation of those sufferings which were ascribed to the unerring though mysterious exercise of divine wisdom and justice; and they protested that Dr. Boylston ought to be made criminally responsible for the death of any of his infant patients, and that all persons of mature years, dying in consequence of voluntary submission to the operation, ought to be accounted suicides. The more moderate opponents of the practice condemned it as indicating a greater reliance on the arrangements of human prudence than on the all-wise providence of God in the ordinary course of nature. The physicians of the province published a decree reprobating inoculation; and Dr. Douglass, one of their number, a credulous and intemperate man, distinguished himself by the warmth of his opposition to the new practice.[1] The people, in general, regarded the practice with abhorrence, and were incensed at the pertinacity with which its promoters continued to uphold it. Cotton Mather was reproached and vilified in newspapers and pamphlets; and Boylston was insulted in the streets, and his dwelling and family threatened with destruction. The house of representatives passed a bill for suppressing inoculation; but the doubts of the council happily arrested the completion of this measure, till the public were undeceived, and the manifest advantage of inoculation obtained for it a general and undisputed prevalence.[2]

On the 29th of October, 1727, while the sky was clear and serene, and a deep stillness and tranquillity pervaded the air, New England was suddenly shaken by a tremendous earthquake, which overthrew a considerable number of buildings, and prostrated many persons to the ground. On the same day, the island of Martinico was threatened with entire destruction, from a similar convulsion of nature.[3]

New England still continued to be highly distinguished by the religious zeal of the great majority of its inhabitants; and a zeal which was now en-

[1] Douglass subsequently retracted his opinion; and, in his *Historical and Political Summary of the American Settlements*, imputed the original resistance, that the practice of inoculation encountered at Boston, to the immoderate eagerness with which its promoters endeavoured to overleap, instead of undermining, the public prejudice.

Among other literary champions of the erroneous sentiments entertained by Douglass and by the majority of the people, was Benjamin Franklin, then apprentice to a printer in Boston. Miller's *Retrospect of the Eighteenth Century*. Some pious Quakers in America appear to have denied, or at least strongly doubted, the legitimacy of the practice of inoculation. *Journal of John Woolman*.

[2] Hutchinson. Inoculation encountered a much stronger and more protracted resistance in Great Britain, where, so late as the year 1768, two surgeons, having attempted to introduce the practice into the town of Peterborough, saw their houses destroyed by popular rage, and only by flight from the place saved their own lives. *Annual Register for* 1768. The practice was prohibited by the authority of government, both in France and Holland, in the year 1765. A Roman Catholic archbishop, in France, pronounced, *ex cathedra*, that the disease of Job was the fruit of *inoculation* performed on the patriarch's body by the devil. Eynard's *Life of Tissot*.

[3] *Universal History*. Holmes.

tirely divested of its primitive bigotry and intolerance. All classes of the people had in this respect undergone a change. Some had become lukewarm and indifferent; others had learned to temper zeal with charity and indulgence. In the commencement of this century, Connecticut was disturbed by an outbreak of folly and frenzy, from a sect of wild enthusiasts who termed themselves *Rogerenes* (from a madman named Rogers), or *Singing Quakers*. They professed much veneration for George Fox, but dissented from certain of his institutions, in admitting vocal music, and recognizing the sacramental ordinances. They resembled some of the primitive Quakers or Ranters, in their predilection for disturbing public worship, and for walking naked; and rivalled the primitive Baptists of Munster in the scandalous immoralities which they openly committed, and which, at the same time, they associated with a profession of sinless purity and perfection. Their outrages were treated as offences rather against public order and decency than religion, and punished with a severity tempered by prudence and mercy. Happily, the frenzy proved but short-lived; and so little had it tended to revive the ancient animosity against the Quakers in New England, that, during the government of Belcher, the assembly of Massachusetts passed a law for making satisfaction to the posterity of those Quakers who endured capital punishment in the years 1658 and 1659. The same assembly decreed a compensation to the descendants of the unfortunate victims of the prosecutions for witchcraft in the year 1693. The legislature of Connecticut, in 1729, passed an act for exempting Quakers and Baptists from ecclesiastical taxes; and in 1731, a similar law was enacted by the assembly of Massachusetts. In the year 1718, the churches of Boston contributed four hundred and eighty-three pounds to the funds in aid of the Christian missions among the Indians. A proposition was broached, in 1725, to convoke a synod of the New England Congregational churches; but it was abandoned, in consequence of a royal prohibition, issued in compliance with the solicitations of the Episcopal clergy.[1]

Although a great deal of Puritanical strictness still pervaded the municipal policy of New England, and much Puritanical formality still lingered in the manners of a large proportion of its inhabitants, the social and domestic intercourse of the people appears to have been distinguished by cheerfulness, refinement, and liberality. An English gentleman, visiting Boston, says Oldmixon, might suppose, from the politeness of conversation, and the costliness and elegance of dress and furniture, that he was in the metropolis of England.[2] Though Governor Burnet showed a dislike to Puritanic practices, and excited a strong opposition to his administration, yet the worth of his character was universally acknowledged, and the graces of his conversation generally admired. Belcher, his successor, who had a taste for pomp and show, set the example of an expensive style of living, by the splendor of the equipage which he maintained. The celebrated Charles Wesley, who paid a visit to Massachusetts in the year 1736, highly extolled

[1] Trumbull. Oldmixon. Hutchinson. Holmes. William Allen's *Summary of the History, &c., of the Society of Friends.*

[2] It is probable, I think, that the colonists were as *refined*, but, perhaps, less *polished* than the inhabitants of the parent state. Human nature and manners, receiving a polished elegance from habit, derive the higher grace of refinement from character and sentiment. A strong sense of religion, — a reverential remembrance of their fathers, — a constant and generous struggle to preserve their national independence against the French, and their municipal liberties against their own parent state, — were circumstances that tended to elevate and refine the sentiments, and proportionally to ennoble the manners, of the citizens of New England.

the salubrity of its climate, and declared that he was even oppressed by the hospitality and civilities of the inhabitants. Yet, both Wesley and his illustrious brother at this time were members and ministers of the church of England. In a letter to one of his friends, Charles Wesley declared that he found "this New England more pleasant even than the Old," and could not help exclaiming, "O happy country!" Tea began to be used in New England in the year 1721. Boston was long deprived of the benefit of a market for rural produce, in consequence of an obstinate prejudice of the country people, who, believing that they themselves must infallibly be losers by an arrangement which would supply the townsfolk with a great quantity of their wares at once, squandered a great deal of time in separately and irregularly perambulating the town in quest of advantageous bargains and high prices.[1]

Hutchinson describes the inhabitants of New England as more concerned to procure the enjoyments of the table, than to exhibit richness or refinement of apparel; willing rather to simplify their attire than to extenuate their diet. The difference, in this and in other respects, between them and the French colonists of Canada is thus described by a distinguished French writer who travelled in America in the years 1720 and 1721. "Every body in New France," says Charlevoix,[2] "endeavours to put as good a face as possible on poverty, and scarcely any one thinks of laying up wealth. They indulge in good cheer, provided they can also afford the expense of fine clothes; if not, they retrench in the article of the table, for the sake of appearing well dressed. A gay and sprightly behaviour, with great sweetness and politeness of manners, prevail universally among them; and the slightest rusticity either of language or behaviour is utterly unknown, even in the remotest settlements. The case is very different with respect to our English neighbours; and, judging of the two colonies from the way of life, behaviour, and speech of the inhabitants, nobody would hesitate to say that ours were the most flourishing. In New England, and the other provinces of America, subject to the British empire, there prevails an opulence which they are utterly at a loss how to use; while in New France there prevails a poverty disguised by an air of easy circumstances, which yet seems quite unstudied. The English planter amasses wealth, and never incurs superfluous expense; the French inhabitant enjoys what he has acquired, and often makes a parading pretension to much more than he really possesses. The Englishman labors for his posterity; the Frenchman bequeaths to his offspring the same difficulties that attended his own outset, and leaves them to extricate themselves as they can. The English Americans are averse to war, because they have a great deal to lose; and yet take no care to manage the Indians, because they consider that they stand in no need of them. The French youth, for opposite reasons, abominate the thoughts of peace, and contrive so to live with the natives, that they obtain their assistance in war and their friendship at all times."[3]

These differences illustrate the distinctions of national character that have

[1] Oldmixon. Hutchinson. Holmes. Whitehead's *Life of the Wesleys*.

[2] The letters of Charlevoix contain much curious detail and sagacious remark, — especially with regard to the manners, habits, and pursuits of the Indians. He sometimes relates very incredible stories; and too frequently commits offences against delicacy, and even decency, — the less pardonable, when it is recollected that he was a priest, and that his letters were addressed to a lady.

[3] Charlevoix's *Travels*. See Note III., at the end of the volume

ever prevailed between France and England; but they are also referable in a considerable degree to the different systems of colonial policy pursued by the two parent states. France planted the institution of titular nobility in her colonies; and for the special benefit of Canada, Louis the Fourteenth, by an *arrêt* in the year 1685, permitted all noblemen and gentlemen settled in this province to exercise commerce without derogation from their social quality and privileges.[1] This proved a most impolitic measure, except in so far as it contributed to produce or multiply an order of persons in the colony attached by the vanity of titular distinctions to the fountain of honor in the parent state. Many Englishmen of patrician birth, but slender estate, resorted to the British colonies, where, glad to be disencumbered of the trammels of *rank*, and wisely preferring plain but substantial comfort to meretricious airs of polished elegance, they associated with their unpretending fellow-colonists on a footing of equality, and sought to regain distinction by useful industry, patient self-denial, and vigorous enterprise. With the French colonists, aristocratic pride and vanity predominated over mercantile character and habits; and as, by the ancient usages of France, the title and privileges of nobility, instead of descending, as in England, to the eldest son alone, were equally shared by all the children of the family, Canada was soon peopled by a numerous race of colonists whose eagerness to gain wealth was mixed with and controlled by a strong desire to make immediate proof of their *noble* condition, by the costliness of their accommodations, the polish of their manners, and the laborless liberty and self-indulgence of their lives. In the year 1721, there were[2] a greater number of persons bearing titles of nobility in Canada than in all the other colonies of France throughout the world.

A severer and doubtless a juster picture of the manners of the Canadian colonists, than the accomplished Jesuit, Charlevoix, delineated, has been transmitted by the philosophic Raynal. According to this writer, the French colonists who lived in the country passed their winters in idleness, sitting by their firesides in grave and slothful contemplation of their own dignity; while those who lived at Quebec or Montreal aped the gay dissipation of the nobility of the parent state. The men plumed themselves more on honor than honesty; the women were coquettish, addicted to gallantry, and more gratified by attracting admiration than by either inspiring or experiencing the sentiment of love. Superficial attention and negligent exertion characterized both the agricultural and the commercial transactions of the Canadian colonists. Raynal ascribes their habits of indolence partly to the benumbing effects of the excessive cold of the Canadian winter, and partly to the numerous festivals of the Catholic church; and their especial aversion to the labors that would have been most conducive to their own private advantage he traces to the ambitious policy of the French court, which, with the view of excluding the English from the fur trade, erected no fewer than thirty-three forts, at great distances from each other, and, employing the Canadians in building and victualling these forts, diverted them from the labors that ought preferably to have engaged their attention.[3] But the grand source of the evils peculiar to Canadian society was the institution, so pernicious to a young country, of an order of nobility, which inspired the Canadians with a contempt for rough labor and homely

[1] Charlevoix. [2] Charlevoix's *Travels*.
[3] Raynal's *Political and Philosophical History of the British Trade and Settlements.*

virtue, and a taste for strutting pomp, empty show, and idle gayety. To gratify this taste, the profits, which the steady New Englanders devoted to the improvement of their property or the enlargement of their commerce, were squandered by the Canadians on the vanity of ornamental decoration; and the poverty, which the English surmounted by patient and vigorous virtue, was concealed by the French under the gaudy trappings of a pernicious luxury.

We may better conceive than commend that superior polish of manner which Charlevoix ascribes to the Canadians, and which appears to have coexisted with indolence, consequent poverty, vanity, arbitrary government, depravation of morals, and destitution of literature. At the period at which we have now arrived, printing was established in every one of the British colonies except North Carolina, and had existed for nearly a century in New England. Yet in the older settlement of Canada there was no printing-press, even at the subsequent period of 1749. One, indeed, had been formerly imported into the province; but it did not afford its owner the means of subsistence. The French colonists, more ashamed of the reproach of poverty or intellectual inferiority than of destitution of liberty, asserted that the Canadian press was interdicted lest it should produce libels against the government.[1]

Not the least remarkable circumstance in the position of New England, at this time, was the discussion carried on in Britain as to whether the colonists were or were not aiming at the establishment of national independence.[2] Some of the members of the Board of Trade at London had long entertained this apprehension, and openly professed it; and in one of the reports from this board to the British cabinet, on the recent controversies between Massachusetts and the crown, after a forcible exposition of the strength and resources of this people, and their systematic and determined hostility to royal prerogative, it was affirmed that nothing but an immediate interposition of parliamentary power could arrest the manifest tendency to independence. The colonists and their agents and partisans in England maintained, on the contrary, that these views and imputations were chimerical and unfounded; and, in support of their plea, they repeated the arguments adduced in Dummer's *Defence of the New England Charters*, and protested that no New England man ever mentioned Britain but under the affectionate denomination of *home*, or *our mother country*.[3] To provoke such discussions, to invite the Americans to canvass the advantages and probabilities of independence, was the height of absurdity and impolicy in the well-wishers to the ascendency of Britain over her colonies. Besides alarming some of the colonists with apprehensions of precautionary tyranny on the part of the parent state, it promoted more generally, and by directer suggestion among them, a cast of thought and temper entirely at variance with that principle of superstitious, prudential, or mechanical adherence to usage, and acquiescence in a seemingly permanent system, which is so congenial to the human mind, and so important an element in the force of established authority.

[1] Kalm's *Travels*.

[2] "In the state of society which had taken place in America," says a sensible American writer, "the foundations of her freedom were laid long before the nations of Europe had any suspicion of what was taking place in the minds of men." Williams's *History of Vermont*. This is a frequent, but erroneous, assertion of American writers. The nations and especially the governments of Europe rather undervalued the strength and the determination than mistook the sentiments and inclinations of the Americans.

[3] Hutchinson.

At the close of the preceding century, we have seen that Maryland possessed thirty thousand inhabitants. Of its gross population at the present period no report has been preserved; but, from an accurate scrutiny in the year 1734, this province appears to have contained thirty-six thousand *taxable* colonists, — a denomination including white men above sixteen years of age, and negroes, male and female, from sixteen to sixty. The state of society in Maryland is said to have borne a considerable resemblance to that in Virginia; but less gayety of manners, and a less expensive style of living, prevailed in the younger than in the older province. A printing-press was established in Maryland in 1726; but it was three years later before Virginia obtained this advantage, though she possessed a college since the commencement of the present century. The immediate successors in office of Seymour, the last governor whom we have had occasion to notice, were Corbet and Hunt; the latter of whom assumed the government in 1714. Two years after, on the death of Charles, Lord Baltimore, who had been deprived of his political functions on account of his adherence to the church of Rome, the title devolved to Charles, Lord Baltimore, member of parliament for the county of Surrey, who, being a Protestant, was reinstated in the full enjoyment of proprietary power. Benedict Leonard Calvert, a relative of the proprietary, was appointed some time after governor of the province, and was succeeded, in 1732, by Samuel Ogle. Lord Baltimore now made an effort to regain the Delaware territory, of which his ancestor had been divested when it was annexed to Pennsylvania; but, failing in his purpose, concluded an agreement, defining their respective territorial limits, with the heirs of William Penn. The agreement, however, was not carried into effect; and renewed disputes between these parties gave rise to a suit in chancery, which was terminated by a decree of Lord Hardwicke in 1750. Among other advantages which the people of Maryland derived from their uninterrupted peace and friendship with the Indians, they gained a cheap and important accession to their medical resources from the communication of the knowledge which the Indians had acquired of the medicinal properties of certain vegetable decoctions. The salaries of public officers in this province were remarkably low. In the year 1732, the assembly declared tobacco a legal tender for payment of all debts, at a penny per pound, and Indian corn at twenty pence per bushel. Though the Catholics still continued to be the most numerous class in Maryland, the province now began to receive large accessions of Presbyterian settlers. These were emigrants from the North of Ireland, the descendants of Scotchmen, who, removing first to Pennsylvania, purchased there and cleared uncultivated lands; and then, selling their plantations to German emigrants, fixed their own final settlement in the frontier counties of Virginia and Maryland.[1]

Both of the provinces of Carolina had made considerable advances in population since the commencement of the century; but we hear of no attempt to ascertain the number of inhabitants in the northern province at the present period; nor is there any other known and notable circumstance of its condition that has not been already recorded in the preceding chapter. Its population, as we have already seen, amounted in the year 1710 to six thousand persons; some increase had doubtless occurred since that time; and a few years after the present epoch, a vigorous growth attested the im-

[1] Oldmixon. Douglass. Holmes.

provement which the provincial institutions and the condition of the people had undergone. As yet, and for a considerable time after, they formed the most turbulent, irreligious, and illiterate community in North America. In the year 1700, the population of South Carolina is said to have amounted to no more than five thousand five hundred and six persons. In 1723, it amounted to thirty-two thousand, of whom eighteen thousand were negro slaves, and only fourteen thousand white persons in a state of freedom or of temporary servitude. Four hundred and thirty-nine slaves, together with goods and manufactures to the value of about sixty thousand pounds sterling, were imported into this province in the year 1724; and in exchange for these commodities there were exported to England eighteen thousand barrels of rice, fifty-two thousand barrels of pitch, tar, and turpentine, together with a quantity of deer-skins, furs, and raw silk. In addition to this trade, which was carried on almost entirely in British ships, the province maintained an extensive commercial intercourse with the West Indies, New England, Pennsylvania, and New York; to the latter of which it appears to have sent frequent cargoes of slaves. In 1730, it was ascertained that the exports of rice from South Carolina, during the ten preceding years, were 264,488 barrels, containing 44,081 tons. In this year, the negroes amounted in number to twenty-eight thousand; and, emboldened by their numerical superiority, they laid a plot for a general massacre of the white people, which, however, was seasonably discovered and defeated.

Undeterred by this intimation of danger, the colonists continued to receive the copious supplies of additional negroes tendered to them by the slave-merchants of Britain, and demanded by the increasing cultivation of rice; and in the year 1731, no fewer than fifteen hundred negroes were imported into South Carolina.[1] In the same year, upwards of two hundred merchant-vessels sailed from Charleston; and there were shipped from this port above forty thousand barrels of rice, besides deer-skins, furs, naval stores, and provisions. Happily for South Carolina, its population was not reinforced from without by negroes alone. We have remarked the arrival of a body of Swiss emigrants on its shores in 1733; and about four years after, vast multitudes of Irish husbandmen began to flock to it as a happy refuge from the oppressive exactions of landlords and bishops in their native land. Yet, from the year 1720 till the year 1765, the slaves in South Carolina continued greatly and increasingly to outnumber the white inhabitants. To the lamentable consequences of this state of society we have already had occasion to advert;[2] and farther occasion will be supplied in the progress of Carolinian history. In the year 1734, the assembly of South Carolina, in an address to the king on the state of the province, declared that they were "subject to many intestine dangers from the great number of negroes that are now among us." The continual suspicion and insecurity to which the colonists were exposed was strongly indicated by an ordinance of the legislature, commanding all the inhabitants to carry arms with them to their assemblies for divine worship. By another law, which was passed a few years afterwards, the importation of additional negroes into the province was taxed so heavily as to be virtually prohibited; but this law was very soon abolished. In addition to the danger which they incurred from the

[1] In 1728, the British parliament instituted an inquiry into the state of the African trade, from which it appeared that in three years only the number of negroes imported into Barbadoes, Jamaica, and Antigua amounted to forty-two thousand. *Universal History.*

[2] Book IV., Chap. II., *ante.*

vindictive hatred of their slaves, the security of the inhabitants had long been menaced by the vicinity of the Spaniards; and a new source of alarm was latterly created by the progressive advances of the French settlements in Louisiana, and the alliance which this people succeeded in forming with a considerable portion of the Indian tribe called the Creeks.

Frugal habits prevailed generally among the planters of South Carolina at this period, and doubtless contributed to the rapid advancement of the provincial prosperity. Luxury had not yet gained admission among them. Except rum, sugar, tea, and coffee, their diet was derived entirely from their own plantations. Printing was introduced into this province in the year 1730, and a newspaper established in 1734. A great majority of the inhabitants, including the posterity of the Dissenters, who repaired to the colony soon after its foundation, were now attached to the established Episcopal church. Presbyterianism, however, enjoyed a tolerated existence, and was maintained by fresh emigrations from Ireland and Scotland.[1]

In the year 1724, a vehement eruption of immoral and impious frenzy occurred among some families of French refugees, who had emigrated to South Carolina in consequence of the revocation of the edict of Nantes; and was supposed to have been occasioned by the ill-advised study of the writings of the German mystic, Jacob Behmen. The unhappy victims of this delusion professed to be guided in every action of their lives by the immediate and sensible impulse of the Spirit of God, and disregarded all the recorded precepts and doctrines of religion that withstood any imagined suggestion derived from that peculiar source. They renounced social intercourse with all the rest of mankind, whom they believed to be devoted to a speedy and inevitable destruction; and, in the commission of incest and adultery, plumed themselves on their faithful obedience to the inspirations of infallible wisdom. At first, they declared that the unlawfulness of carrying arms was plainly revealed to them; but finding that the civil power was preparing to punish them for the scandalous immorality of their lives, they asserted that a posterior and counter revelation authorized them to defend their persons against the violence of persecutors, and their substance against the robberies of ungodly men. Armed with muskets, they fired upon a company of militia who were sent to apprehend them, and killed the captain, besides wounding several of the men; but they were soon overpowered and brought to trial. Four of them were condemned to die for murder; but still continued for a while to boast of their wickedness as the perfection of piety and virtue. However, their frenzied visions gradually faded away; compunctious horror and remorse succeeded; and at the place of execution they implored divine pardon of the monstrous crimes and blasphemies into which lawless thought and spiritual pride had betrayed them. The delusion was not propagated any farther.

During the summer of 1728, the weather in South Carolina proved uncommonly hot; the surface of the earth was parched, the pools of water were dried up, and the beasts of the field reduced to the greatest distress. This affliction was followed in the autumn by a furious hurricane, which occasioned a great destruction of property. In the same year, that dreadful

[1] John Wesley paid a visit to Charleston in the year 1737. "It being the time of their annual visitation," he relates, "I had the pleasure of meeting with the clergy of South Carolina; among whom, in the afternoon, there was such a conversation for several hours, on *Christ our Righteousness*, as I had not heard at any visitation in England, or hardly on any other occasion." John Wesley's *Journal*.

pestilence, the yellow fever, broke forth to an extent and with a malignity that swept multitudes of the planters and their negroes to an untimely grave,[1] — the impartial refuge of the oppressed and their oppressors.

Within a very few years after the present epoch, a great and sudden change was produced in the condition of South Carolina and the manners of its inhabitants by that influx of wealth which resulted from the fostering care of the parent state and the plantation of the neighbouring colony of Georgia. A general competition then arose among the Carolinian planters to enlarge their estates; many of them rapidly accumulated large fortunes, and a luxurious and expensive style of living began to prevail in the province.

The population of New York, which in the year 1701 amounted to thirty thousand persons, had advanced in the year 1732 to upwards of sixty thousand, of whom about seven thousand were slaves.[2] The value of goods annually imported by this colony from Great Britain was computed to be not less than one hundred thousand pounds. In the year 1736, the custom-house books contained entries of two hundred and eleven vessels arriving with cargoes at the port of New York, and two hundred and twenty-two departing with cargoes from it. A large contraband trade was pursued with Holland and Hamburg, in spite of all the efforts of the British government to suppress it by the multiplication of custom-house officers. The inhabitants of late had generally contracted a taste for tea; and it was found quite impracticable to enforce the exclusive right of the English East India Company to import this article, while the colonists could procure it at a price thirty *per cent.* lower from foreigners. A continual struggle was maintained between the provincial merchants and the British custom-house officers, who, unable to check the really contraband trade, frequently arrested vessels plying between the port of New York and other places within the limits of the colony, under pretence that they were conducting or aiding foreign smuggling. An act of the provincial assembly, in 1724, imposed severe penalties on custom-house officers committing such molestation. The metropolis of this province had not increased in proportion to the general population, and seems to have contained little more than eight thousand inhabitants. New York is the first of the North American States in which we find Jews particularized as a part of the population. Of the first resort of this widely wandering race to the New World no memorial has been preserved; but before the middle of the present century, they had increased to a numerous and thriving society in this province, and possessed a synagogue in the town of New York.[3] They enjoyed equal rights and privileges with the rest of

[1] Hewit. *Universal History.* Dwight's *Travels. Description of South Carolina* (1761). Drayton. Oldmixon gives the following table of the wages of labor about this period in Carolina: —

A tailor, . .	5*s.* 0*d.* a day.
A shoemaker,	2*s.* 6*d.* almost as cheap as in England.
A smith, . .	7*s.* 6*d.* three times as dear as in England.
A weaver, .	3*s.* 0*d.*
A bricklayer,	6*s.* 0*d.*
A cooper, .	4*s.* 0*d.*

[2] Holmes.

[3] The number of Jews in America excited some foolish alarm in England in the year 1735, when the parliament repealed a law which had been made not long before for naturalizing Jews, resident in Britain. Another act still subsisted, by which Jews resident for seven years in any of the American colonies were entitled to become naturalized subjects of Britain; and fears arose that England would be inundated with naturalized Jews from America. But an attempt to procure the repeal of this last-mentioned statute proved ineffectual. Smollett.

I do not recollect, in all my reading, a single notice or memorial of the presence of Gypsies in North America

the free inhabitants; and, among others, the privilege of holding negroes in a state of slavery. A statute of the New York assembly, passed in the year 1730, commences with the legislative axiom, that "slaves are the property of Christians or Jews." A tax was imposed on the importation of slaves; of whom a considerable supply was annually derived from the province of South Carolina. Slaves, attempting to set fire to the dwellings of free men, were burned alive. In the year 1741, thirteen slaves were burned, eighteen were hanged, and many more transported from New York to the West Indies for this offence. Numerous ordinances occur in the statute-book of New York, for preventing the desertion of slaves from Albany to the French settlements in Canada.

An act of the New York assembly, in 1721, declared that the province was much infested by the resort of idle and necessitous persons, chiefly fugitive debtors and criminals, from the other British plantations; and authorized justices of the peace to require surety from all new settlers that they would not become chargeable to the community, and to banish all dissolute vagabonds, and all persons whom they might *suspect* of inability to support themselves. All lotteries were prohibited by an act passed in the same year; and which declared, with solid wisdom, that it was of pernicious consequence, that property, instead of being acquired by industry and exchanged by barter, should be distributed by chance. The inhabitants of the remote districts of the province were supplied with wares by hawkers and pedlers; and from various legislative acts, it appears that a part of the public revenue was derived from duties on the licenses which these itinerant chapmen were required to obtain from the government. In the year 1732, there was founded, by an act of the provincial legislature, a public school in the city of New York for teaching Latin, Greek, and mathematics. A number of Quakers resorted to this province soon after its annexation to the British empire; but it was not till the year 1734, that Quakers in New York were placed on the same footing with Quakers in England, by an act of assembly which recited and adopted all the statutes of the British parliament in favor of these sectaries. Among other reasons for this measure, the preamble of the act declares, "that it is most agreeable to his Majesty's royal intentions, that the legislature of this colony should, in all their laws and proceedings, conform themselves, as near as may be, to the constitutions of England; and that, therefore, they cannot more effectually recommend themselves to his Majesty's grace and favor than by imitating the example of the parliament of Great Britain."

While a strong tincture of Dutch manners continued to pervade all the various races of people of whom the population of this province was composed, and to be visible especially in the neatness and cleanliness of domestic accommodations, the prevalence of English tastes was attested by some of the public amusements, and particularly by the practice of horse-racing, which became a frequent and favorite pastime in Long Island. The citizens of New York were distinguished by their sprightly tempers and sociable manners. The men assembled in weekly evening clubs; and during the winter, the united entertainment of both sexes was supplied by assemblies for dancing and concerts of music The style of living was, however, less gay and expensive, and there was less inequality of fortune at New York than at Boston. Sobriety of deportment and a close attention to pecuniary gain prevailed almost universally. Many of the French

Protestant emigrants to this province were persons of considerable attainments in literature. They enlivened the colonial society by the gayety of their manners, and improved it by the useful arts which they imported from their native land. They have been described as a remarkably frugal, cheerful, patient, and contented race of people. The colonists, in general, were healthy and robust, taller, but shorter-lived, than the inhabitants of Europe. They appear, says Smith, to arrive sooner than Europeans at maturity both of mind and body, and to incur in both these respects a proportionally earlier decay. The medical profession was totally unregulated, and open to every pretender; the province abounded with empirical practitioners of physic; and yet the assembly granted certain privileges to every person who thought fit to assume this profession, and, in particular, an exemption from the general liability to discharge the office of constable. A newspaper was first published at New York in the year 1725; and there was now one bookseller's shop in the city.

The government of this province, observing the influence which the French exercised over the Indians by the instrumentality of the Jesuit missionaries, made some ineffectual attempts to procure a similar advantage from the ministry of Protestant preachers among the Six Nations. Governor Hunter, at a conference with the sachems of this confederacy, after presenting them with a quantity of clothes, informed them that the British queen desired to clothe their souls as well as their bodies, and proposed for this purpose to send a number of Protestant missionaries into their territories. The Indians politely, but resolutely, declined the proposition; adding, that it would be a demonstration of greater kindness to send a few blacksmiths to reside among them, and that several of the ministers who had already come to them from New York had encouraged them in the evil practice of drinking brandy. Oldmixon, who relates this conference, and whose partialities are all opposed to the Puritans, observes, nevertheless, that the Indians were generally struck with the difference between missionaries who were *hired* to visit them and the earnest and self-denying missionaries of New England. The Indians always inquired, with anxious desire and acute penetration, what it was that really prompted their teachers to address them;[1] they were awed and affected by the demonstration of sincere and disinterested concern for their welfare; and never failed to manifest contempt or indifference for ministers in whom they detected the motive of pecuniary gain, or concern for temporal advantage.[2]

Nothing could be more tranquil and prosperous than the condition which New Jersey had now for many years enjoyed. But if we would ascertain the fruits and particulars of this silent prosperity, we must look forward to the year 1738. At the close of the preceding century, New Jersey possessed about 15,000 inhabitants; in the year 1738, it contained 47,367, of whom 3,981 were slaves. The manufactures established in the province remained nearly stationary; but its trade had considerably increased. With the view of still farther improving their social condition, as well as from a sense of their increasing political importance, the people were generally desirous of an alteration of the practice according to which the administration of their executive government was included in the com-

[1] "I love to feel where words come from," said an Indian to Woolman, the Quaker.
[2] Oldmixon. Kalm's *Travels*. W. Smith. *Laws of New York from* 1691 *to* 1751. Grant's *Memoirs of an American Lady*. Holmes.

mission of the governor of New York, and, in the year 1728, the assembly petitioned the king that a separate governor might be appointed for New Jersey. They complained of the hardship of being obliged to contribute a salary to a governor who spent it in New York; and undertook to make a liberal provision for any governor whom his Majesty would appoint exclusively for themselves. Their petition met with little attention till the year 1736, when the Lords of Trade presented a report in its favor to the privy council; and two years after, Lewis Morris, who had been formerly chief justice of New York, an eccentric, but able and active man, extremely disputatious, yet honorable and upright, was appointed the first royal governor who presided in New Jersey separately from New York. The governor's salary, which had been hitherto six hundred pounds, was now raised to one thousand pounds *per annum*, besides perquisites and occasional presents to defray extraordinary expenses. In the same year, a college was founded at Princeton, and named Nassau Hall. Among other funds by which the expense of this scholastic establishment was defrayed, a liberal contribution for the purpose was made by the general assembly of the church of Scotland. The mild treatment of slaves in this province, which we have already had occasion to notice,[1] may perhaps be inferred from a circumstance which occurred about this time, when the slaves, forming nearly a tenth part of the inhabitants, constituted a larger proportion of the total population of the province than at any other period of its history. It was then that there occurred the only instance, recorded in the annals of New Jersey, of a conspiracy (real or supposed) of the enslaved negroes against the white freemen. Notwithstanding the rage and fear which such an emergency is apt to provoke, only one of the supposed conspirators was hanged, — "probably," says Oldmixon, "because they could not well spare any more." It is happy for slaves, when their masters feel themselves unable to spare them even to the cravings of fear and vengeance.[2] The inhabitants of New Jersey were occasionally more alarmed than injured by slight shocks of earthquake, of which instances have been recorded in the years 1726, 1732, and 1737. Like their neighbours in Pennsylvania, and the people of Connecticut, they prudently restrained their paper currency within safe and narrow limits. They long continued a quiet, virtuous, and happy people.[3]

Pennsylvania and Delaware had, beyond doubt, increased more rapidly since the commencement of the century than any of the other colonies; but of their actual population at this period no credible account has been transmitted. While one author,[4] with manifest inaccuracy, reports the number of inhabitants in 1732 to have been thirty thousand, — that is, about five thousand fewer than in the year 1708; another, the Quaker historian, Proud, has, with blind exultation, adopted from an anonymous pamphlet, published at London in 1731, an exaggerated statement, which, without particularizing the number of the people, represents it as greatly exceeding the population of Virginia, Maryland, and both the Carolinas.[5]

[1] Book VI., *ante*.

[2] Nearly coincident with the New Jersey negro plot was a conspiracy of the negro slaves of the British colony of Antigua, which was punished with a barbarity more characteristic of slave-owners. Three of the ringleaders were broken on the wheel; seventy-nine were burned alive; and nine were suspended in chains and starved to death. *Universal History*.

[3] S. Smith. Oldmixon. Gillies' *Life of M'Laurin*. Warden. Holmes.

[4] Holmes.

[5] Proud is not ashamed to support the statement which he has adopted, by copying its au-

Both reports are equally unworthy of credit. It was not till some years after the present period, that the population of Pennsylvania attained the utmost vigor of its principle of increase; and probably, as yet, it was inferior to the population of Virginia. The colonists of Pennsylvania and Delaware, at this period, built annually about two thousand tons of shipping for sale, besides the vessels employed in their own trade, which were reckoned at six thousand tons. They traded with England, Portugal, and Spain; with the Canaries, Madeira, and the Azores; with the West India Islands; with New England, Virginia, Maryland, and Carolina. In 1731, Philadelphia is said to have contained two thousand four hundred houses, and twelve thousand souls, — a computation probably somewhat below the truth. In 1736, the custom-house books contained entries of two hundred and eleven vessels arriving with cargoes at the port of Philadelphia, and of two hundred and fifteen departing with cargoes from it, — a share of commerce rather smaller than New York possessed in the same year. Yet the commerce of Pennsylvania seems to have been productive of more benefit than that of New York to the manufacturers of Britain, from which the Pennsylvanians are said to have imported goods to the annual value of one hundred and fifty thousand pounds. Similar to the observation of Smith respecting New York is the remark of Proud with regard to Pennsylvania, — that "the lives of both animals and vegetables, as they mostly arrive sooner at maturity, are generally of shorter duration, than in some of the more northern or temperate climates." He adds, that "strangers who remove hither from colder or more northern latitudes are observed generally to bear the vicissitudes of the Pennsylvanian climate better, at first, than the natives of the country, or such as have lived long in it."[1]

Pennsylvania, if not the only province in which religious toleration prevailed, was at least the one in which the prevalence of this principle was attested by the greatest variety of religious sects and sentiments. In the year 1724, there was founded by some German emigrants in this province the sect which has been described by different writers under the differently sounding names of *Tunkers*, *Dunkers*, *Tumblers*, and *Dumplers*. The votaries of this persuasion adopted the dress of the monks and nuns of the Roman Catholic order of White Friars, and a system of doctrine derived partly from the Anabaptists and partly from the Quakers. In imitation of the Jews, they solemnized the sixth day of the week as a Sabbath, and commonly, but not universally, refrained from shaving their beards. They established within their sectarian society a community of goods, and a strict separation of the sexes; allowing, nevertheless, the lawfulness of marriage, but inflicting a friendly exile from the bosom of the society as the conditional consequence of it. They carried the doctrine of non-resistance, professed by the Quakers and some other sectaries, to the farthest practical extremity; utterly forbearing litigation, enduring insult and injury without resentment or complaint, and realizing the visions of the Stoics on the principles of Christianity. Their church government was administered by deacons and deaconesses, and in their religious assemblies the members of either sex were expected and permitted freely to

thor's erroneous exposition of the reasons of it, — namely, that Pennsylvania was the only colony where religious toleration was enjoyed, and where the Indians were not treated with injustice and inhumanity!

[1] Proud Anderson. Holmes.

exercise and display their spiritual gifts. With purposed or accidental imitation of the policy of Lycurgus regarding the laws of Sparta, they committed none of their peculiar dogmas or precepts to writing, from the apprehension of exposing themselves either to the danger of professing tenets after they might cease to believe them, or to the shame of abandoning what they or their fathers had publicly sanctioned and embraced. They speedily made numerous converts among the other German emigrants, and established their principal settlement at a place which they named Ephrata,—whence various derivative communities were afterwards extended to other parts of Pennsylvania. At first, they practised numerous austerities, which were relaxed in process of time; but they were always distinguished by a diligent and yet unselfish industry, and a gentleness and simplicity of deportment, which gained for them in Pennsylvania the title of *the harmless Tunkers.*[1]

In every one of the North American provinces, at this period, there were exhibited, on a larger or smaller scale, the grand and pleasing features of national happiness, liberty, piety, and virtue. But Pennsylvania, Connecticut, and New Jersey were distinguished above all the rest by the scenes of tranquillity and contentment they presented. Virginia and Maryland had, indeed, enjoyed a long exemption from foreign war and the actual infliction of domestic tyranny; but in both of these States a theoretical intolerance and consequent insecurity prevailed. In Virginia, a numerous body of Protestant Dissenters were nominally exposed to the penalties of an intolerant ecclesiastical constitution; and in Maryland, the great majority of the people enjoyed their estates and franchises only by a connivance which restrained the practical execution of the existing laws against the professors of the Catholic faith. In Virginia and Maryland, too, negro slavery prevailed far more extensively and was productive of much greater evils than in Pennsylvania, Connecticut, or New Jersey.

It was noted from an early period, as a peculiarity in the manners of the North American colonists, that their funerals were conducted with a degree of pomp and expense unknown to the contemporary practice of Europe. The costliness of funerals in New England, New Jersey, and Pennsylvania, in particular, has been remarked by various writers. The legislature of Massachusetts, in the year 1724, enacted a law for restraining this vain and unseasonable prodigality; and especially prohibiting, under a penalty of twenty pounds, the common practice of presenting a scarf to every guest who attended a funeral. Philosophic men, in others of the provinces, labored with more zeal than success to recommend a similar reformation to their fellow-citizens.[2] In none of the colonies was greater

[1] Raynal. Winterbotham. Holmes. "When we were first drawn together as a society," said Michael Weffare, one of the founders of the sect of Tunkers, to Dr. Franklin, "it had pleased God to enlighten our minds so far as to see that some doctrines which were esteemed truths were errors, and that others which we had esteemed errors were real truths. From time to time, he has been pleased to afford us farther light, and our principles have been improving and our errors diminishing: now we are not sure that we have arrived at the end of this progression, and at the perfection of spiritual or theological knowledge; and we fear, that, if we should once print our confession of faith, we should feel ourselves as if bound and confined by it, and perhaps be unwilling to receive farther improvement; and our successors still more so, as conceiving what their elders and founders had done to be something sacred and never to be departed from." Franklin's *Memoirs.*

[2] Raynal. Hawksley's *Memoirs of President Edwards.* Holmes. "It is a general observation," says Raynal, "that plain and virtuous nations, even savage and poor ones, are remarkably attached to the care of their burials. The Pennsylvanians, who are the greatest enemies to parade during their lives, seem [illegible] get this character of modesty at their deaths. They

expense incurred or magnificence displayed at funerals than in South Carolina, where the interment of the dead was generally combined with a sumptuous banquet and a profusion of good cheer for the living.[1]

British oppression and intolerance, which had founded most of the North American colonies, still continued to augment the numbers and influence the sentiments of their inhabitants. During the eighteenth century, the emigration from Ireland, where the bulk of the people were exposed to great injustice and contumely, was much more copious than from any other part of the British empire. The contest that prevailed between the Whigs and Tories in the parent state extended its influence beyond the Atlantic Ocean. A periodical work, published about this time in England, under the title of *The Independent Whig*, contained abundance of satire against the High Church, or Tory party, and the ministers of the established ecclesiastical constitution of England. It was widely circulated in America, and contributed not a little to promote a spirit of independence and republicanism among the colonists.[2]

all are desirous that the poor remains of their short lives should be attended with a funeral pomp suited to their rank and fortune. Every family who hears of the death sends at least one person to attend the funeral; all that come are treated with punch and cake; and there is generally a train of four or five hundred persons on horseback, who follow the body to the grave in profound silence." Like the American colonists, the ancient grandees of Scotland were so much infected with the rage for funeral ceremonial, that a sumptuary law was passed by the Scottish parliament for the purpose of restraining it.

[1] "In short, the Scripture observation, *It is better to go to the house of mourning than to the house of feasting*, is unintelligible and wholly inapplicable in South Carolina, as it is difficult to distinguish the one from the other." Winterbotham.

[2] Lambert's *Travels in Canada and the United States.*

BOOK IX.

GEORGIA.

Unpeopled and defenceless State of the southern Frontier of Carolina. — Situation of imprisoned Debtors in England — Colonization of Georgia suggested for their Relief — by Oglethorpe. — The Moravian Brethren — agree to send a Detachment of their Society to Georgia. — Royal Charter of Georgia. — First Resort of Emigrants to the Province. — Oglethorpe's Treaty with the Indians. — Legislative Constitutions enacted by the Trustees of Georgia. — Negro Slavery prohibited. — John and Charles Wesley — accompany Moravian Emigrants to the Province. — Emigration of Scotch Highlanders. — Discontents in the Colony. — The Scotch Colonists remonstrate against Negro Slavery. — Negro Insurrection in South Carolina. — Spanish War. — The Moravians forsake Georgia. — Oglethorpe's Invasion of Florida. — The Spaniards invade Georgia — and are foiled by Oglethorpe — who returns to England. — Change in the civil and political Constitution of Georgia. — Flourishing State of South Carolina. — Surrender of the Charter of Georgia to the Crown — and Introduction of Negro Slavery. — Condition of Georgia — Trade, Manners, &c.

GEORGIA owed its colonization partly to national rivalship and ambition, and partly to individual patriotism and philanthropy. The province of South Carolina, since the year 1719, when it revolted from the proprietary government to the crown, engrossed in a peculiar degree the care and attention of the parent state. We have remarked the legislative indulgence by which its sphere of commerce was extended; the royal bounty by which its inhabitants were furnished with military stores, and gratified by the remission of arrears of quitrents; and the liberal rewards by which foreigners were encouraged to recruit its population. But a great part of the chartered domains of the province still remained unoccupied; and, in particular, the extensive region lying between the rivers Alatamaha and Savannah, forming the southern frontier, adjacent to Florida, and which had been the scene of so many Indian wars, was entirely vacant of white inhabitants. In one quarter of it, called Yamacraw, there dwelt a small tribe of Indians who were transported thither by Governor Moore in the year 1703,[1] and were regarded as owners of the soil, though they acknowledged a precarious dependence on the English provincial government. It was manifestly requisite, both for the interest of Great Britain and the security of Carolina, that a plantation should be established in this territory, before the Spaniards, in the indulgence of their boundless pretensions, should attempt a practical annexation of it to Florida, or the French should include it in the progressive occupations by which they were advancing the settlements they had formed on the Mississippi. There was the more reason to apprehend such an enterprise from the French, because they possessed no settlement on the eastern shores of North America, from which they might communicate with their sugar islands more conveniently than from the Mississippi plantations; in consequence of which, those islands were still obliged to depend for supplies of food and other provisions on the British continental colonies. But it was easier for British politicians to conceive than to execute the project of colonizing the country between the Alatamaha and the Savannah. There were other unoccupied parts of Carolina, which emigrants naturally accounted more eligible resorts than this dangerous frontier, surrounded by Indian tribes, and

[1] Book IV., Chap. II., *ante*.

exposed to the brunt of Spanish and French hostility; and little likelihood appeared of seasonably planting a stable population within its limits, except by some extraordinary effort, and the operation of motives as powerful and elevated as those by which the most distinguished of the social establishments already existing in North America had been engendered. At this critical period, a number of Englishmen, some prompted by patriotism, some by Christian zeal, and some by warm benevolence and philanthropy, projected the formation of a new and distinct colonial community in the vacant region. The various purposes by which their combined exertions were centred in this measure were, to secure the British dominion over a large and important territory; to strengthen the province of Carolina; to rescue a numerous class of persons in Great Britain and Ireland from the misery of hopeless indigence; to open an asylum for Protestants oppressed or persecuted in any part of Europe; and to attempt the conversion and civilization of the Indians. These were noble views, and worthy to be the sources of an American commonwealth.

No modern nation has ever inflicted or sanctioned greater legal severities upon insolvent debtors than England. That jealous regard for liberty and national honor, and that generous and extended concern for the rights of human nature, which the English have always claimed as distinguishing features of their character, proved unable to withstand the most sordid and inhuman suggestions of commercial ambition. For the enlargement of their commerce, they permitted the atrocities of the slave-trade; and for the encouragement of that ready credit by which commercial enterprise is promoted, they armed the creditors of insolvent debtors with vindictive powers, by the exercise of which freeborn Englishmen, unconvicted of crime, were frequently subjected, in the metropolis of Britain, to a thraldom as vile and afflicting as the bondage of negro slaves in the West Indies. So long was it before English sense and humanity were fully awakened to the guilt and mischief of this barbarous legal system, and its still more barbarous administration, that, till a late period of the eighteenth century, misfortunes in trade exposed an Englishman to a punishment more dreadful than the public feeling of England in the nineteenth century would suffer to be inflicted on the most odious and atrocious criminal. The writings of the illustrious Howard, in describing the interior economy of the old prisons of England, — and the English state trials, in recording the prosecutions of some London jailers for enormous excesses of cruelty to their prisoners, — have preserved pictures[1] of squalid horror and ignominious wretchedness, of which we may indulge the hope that the originals will never again reappear in a civilized or Christian community. A dissolute abandonment of manners, less than a merciless rigor of bondage, prevailed in the English prisons, which are said to have accumulated within their walls every loathsome and horrid disease, and every shameless and profligate enormity, that misery and vice could generate between them. This dreadful engine of oppression exercised a malignant reaction on the society by which its employment was authorized; and debtors, emancipated by mercy or good fortune, too often diffused the contagion of their jail-bred vices and maladies,[2] and became the burden and

[1] An actual pictorial representation of the torture which inhuman jailers sometimes inflicted on their prisoners in London has been preserved by the pencil of Hogarth.

[2] A malignant and contagious malady, called the jail fever, used to make frightful havoc among the imprisoned debtors and felons in England. In the year 1750, it raged with extreme virulence in the prison of Newgate in London; and was communicated in a remarkable man-

reproach of their country. The reverses of fortune consequent on the mercantile gambling which prevailed in England in the year 1720 crowded the jails of this kingdom with prisoners, to many of whom the bitterness of their actual condition was aggravated by a dire, abrupt, and affecting vicissitude, — by blighted hope, ruined pride, and a total ignorance and incapacity of the expedients by which persons more familiar with indigence contrive to alleviate its severity.

The multiplication of prisoners necessarily produced an increase of the horrors of imprisonment, which at last succeeded in awakening a sentiment of indignant compassion in the public mind. A rich and humane citizen of London having bequeathed his fortune to the government, for the purpose of liberating insolvent debtors from prison, some members of parliament undertook to visit the jails of London, in order to ascertain and select the properest objects of the testator's bounty. In the course of their inquiries, they detected numerous abuses of prison discipline; but what struck them most forcibly was the corrupting influence of imprisonment on its wretched victims, and the perplexing difficulty of altering the evil bias which prison habits had impressed on these miserable men. The notion was conceived, that an object so desirable might be accomplished by some great change of scene, — by transporting these persons to North America for the purpose of founding a new colony in that region.[1] This proposition, which savors more of eager benevolence than of solid wisdom, is generally supposed to have originated with the most distinguished of the individuals by whom the survey of the metropolitan prisons was performed. James Edward Oglethorpe, son of Sir Theophilus Oglethorpe, was born at London, and completed his education at the University of Oxford. He served with distinction under Prince Eugene in Germany, and at an early age was advanced to the rank of colonel in the British army. Gaining a seat in parliament, he distinguished himself by an ardent patriotism, an expansive benevolence, and a thirst for the glory of conducting or promoting great and generous designs. In the year 1728, he engaged the House of Commons to appoint a committee of inquiry into the state of the jails of Great Britain; and, as chairman of this committee, he presented, in the following year, a report, which induced the House to attempt the redress of some of the most flagrant of the existing abuses. He easily prevailed with the associates of his labors to embrace the project of transporting to America the unfortunate objects of their benevolence; and proposing to the government to found a new colony in the frontier territory intervening between Carolina and Florida, obtained a ready patronage of this design from the British monarch and his ministers. It was resolved that the territory selected for colonial occupation should be created a separate province, and receive the denomination of *Georgia*, in honor of the king.

Oglethorpe's interest, thus powerfully reinforced, procured from the House

ner by the victims to the dispensers of legal severity. At an Old Bailey session in that year, some of the prisoners who were tried being affected with the distemper, two of the judges, together with the lord mayor, one of the aldermen of London, several lawyers, and many of the jurymen and spectators, were smitten with the contagion, and lost their lives. Smollett. A similar disaster occurred during the same century at an assize at Oxford.

[1] "And here can I forget the generous band,
Who, touched with human woe, redressive searched
Into the horrors of the gloomy jail?" — Thomson.

The poet, after a lively picture of the misery which had been brought to light, seems to allude to the scheme of expatriation in this warning line: —

"O great design! *if executed well.*"

of Commons a grant of ten thousand pounds, to be added to the private estate that was bequeathed for the liberation of debtors; and from the ministerial cabinet a pledge (of more than dubious honesty) to appropriate to the use of the new colony the funds that had been devoted to the college projected by Bishop Berkeley.[1] This injustice was palliated and disguised by the purpose of uniting with the colonial project the pursuit of Berkeley's pious views for the conversion of the Indians, — a purpose which Oglethorpe willingly embraced,[2] and which was forcibly recommended by the obvious expediency of leavening, by a copious infusion of religious zeal and virtuous example, a society to be composed of persons liberated from prison, and of uniting as far as possible, by community of sentiment, the European settlers and the aboriginal inhabitants of the region. It was publicly announced that the right of citizenship in the new province, together with the benefit of all the patronage and assistance by which the first efforts of the colonists were to be aided, would be extended to all Protestant emigrants from any nation of Europe, desirous of a refuge from persecution, or willing to undertake the religious instruction of the Indians. The invitation thus presented not only multiplied the friends of the colonial project in England, but occasioned an overture to its patrons from the most remarkable Christian society that has arisen on the continent of Europe since the era of the Protestant Reformation.[3]

This society, which has since extended its branches to so many nations, and supplied at once the most industrious citizens to civilized communities, and the most diligent and successful missionaries to heathen and savage hordes, has been described by different writers under the various denominations of *Moravians*, from the district of Moravia, in Germany, which they once inhabited, — of *Herrnhutters*, from Herrnhuth, in Saxony, where, in 1722, they found a refuge from persecution within the domains of the celebrated Count Zinzendorf, who became their bishop, — and of *The United Brethren of the Protestant Episcopal Church*, which is the title recognized by themselves. They adhered to the Augsburg confession of faith, composed by the German Reformers in the year 1530, and they professed a strictly literal obedience to the primitive ordinances of Christianity. Finding no warrant in Scripture for the common practice of transferring to the first day of the week the Sabbatical honors divinely appropriated to the seventh, they dedicated Saturday to contemplative quiet, and entire cessation from bodily labor; and yet assembled on Sunday to commemorate the death and resurrection of Christ. Like the Quakers, they renounced all war and violence; like the *Tunkers*, they established a community of goods; they taught industry as a branch of religion, — regarding its offices and its fruits, alike, as occasions or instruments of fulfilling the will of God; and they retained the primitive practices of washing feet, saluting with the kiss of holy love, and solving doubts by appeal to Heaven through the intervention of lots.

[1] *Ante*, Book VIII., Chap. II., *ad fin.*

[2] Bishop Wilson, in the Preface to his *Essay towards an Instruction for the Indians*, which was first printed in 1740, states that Oglethorpe's solicitations had induced him to compose it. Oglethorpe's ardent mind prompted some literary effusions from his own pen, with respect to his colonial project. He was the author of a most ingenious and interesting, though somewhat fancifully colored, *Account of South Carolina and Georgia*, published at London in 1733, and reprinted in the *Collections of the Georgia Historical Society*. A little poem which he wrote, on the same subject, is alluded to in the unpublished journal of Charles Wesley.

[3] This society appears to be derived, by authentic deduction, from the primitive apostolic church, through successive generations of men who never acknowledged the supremacy nor partook the corruptions of the church of Rome. Bost's *History of the Moravian Church.*

This last practice was employed, in particular, as a test of the propriety of contracting intended marriages. The men and women, before marriage, lived separately from each other, in assemblies where the most perfect equality prevailed; and in each of these assemblies, one of the members, in rotation, was appointed to pass the night in watching and prayer. Silent assiduity in business, gentleness of manner, plainness of apparel, and the utmost personal and domestic neatness were universally cultivated by the members of this society. It was a fundamental principle of their faith, that the true dignity and highest worth of a human being consist, not in requiring and receiving service from his fellows, but in rendering it to them. The Moravians have been termed *the monks of Protestantism*;[1] for, though they rejected vows, their society was entirely ecclesiastical, every thing being accomplished by religious influence, and all affairs subjected to the superintendence and direction of the elders of the church. In the year 1727, this society proclaimed the purpose of undertaking missionary labor on a very extensive scale; and in the year in which the charter of Georgia was granted [1732], Count Zinzendorf, having opened a correspondence with Oglethorpe and his associates, announced the intention of a party of the Moravian brethren to unite themselves with the other colonists of this American territory.

Animated by benevolent hope and general approbation, the promoters of the colonial project had now so far matured their design, that they applied for a royal charter, which was straightway granted to them by King George the Second. By this charter the territory between the Alatamaha and the Savannah Rivers was erected into a separate and independent province, under the name of Georgia, and vested in twenty-one noblemen and gentlemen, of whom the most distinguished were Anthony, Earl of Shaftesbury (the author of *The Characteristics*), John, Lord Percival, John, Lord Tyrconnel, James, Lord Limerick, George, Lord Carpenter, James Edward Oglethorpe, and Stephen Hales, an English clergyman, and one of the most eminent naturalists of the age. A corporation, consisting of the twenty-one persons named in the charter, was constituted, by the title of *Trustees for settling and establishing the Colony of Georgia*, and vested with the powers of legislation for twenty-one years; at the expiration of which time, a permanent form of government, corresponding with British law and usage, was to be established by the king or his successors. The trustees, being empowered to collect benefactions for defraying the expense of providing suitable equipment to the colonists, and maintaining them till their houses should be built and their lands cleared, themselves set an example to the public liberality by the most generous contributions, and by a gratuitous dedication of their labor and time to the discharge of the important trust which they had solicited. Oglethorpe, moreover, undertook to accompany the emigrants,[2] to assist in forming and rearing the settlement, and gratuitously to execute the functions of provincial governor. This example of public spirit and philanthropy was propagated throughout the whole king-

[1] This title, which was bestowed on the Moravians by Madame de Staël, might have been applied more justly to the Tunkers; and still more so to those later sectaries of German origin (the followers of Rapp), who founded the settlement of Harmony, in America, — and, prohibiting both individual property and marriage, endeavoured to abolish at once inequality of condition and the continuance of human nature.

[2] "Or, urged by strong benevolence of soul,
Shall fly, like Oglethorpe, from pole to pole." — Pope.

dom, and elicited numerous donations from all ranks and classes of people. The directors of the Bank of England volunteered a liberal contribution; and the House of Commons successively voted sums of money, which, in the course of two years, amounted to thirty-six thousand pounds. At the first general meeting of the trustees [July, 1732], Lord Percival was chosen president of the corporation, and a common seal for the authentication of its acts was appointed. The device of this corporate seal was, on one side, two figures resting upon urns, representing the rivers Alatamaha and Savannah, the boundaries of the province; between them, the genius of the colony seated, with a cap of liberty on his head, a spear in one hand, and a horn of plenty in the other, with the inscription, *Colonia Georgia Aug.*: on the other side was a representation of silkworms, some beginning and others completing their labors, which were characterized by the motto, *Non sibi, sed aliis.* If this latter emblem were intended to proclaim the disinterested benevolence of the trustees, it contained also an allusion to the cultivation of silk, to which they had destined the territory, and from which the people of England were encouraged to form a strong expectation of national advantage, by the assurances of Sir Gilbert Heathcote and other commercial politicians, who hesitated not to predict that the large sum of five hundred thousand pounds, which was annually remitted from England to Piedmont for the purchase of the raw silk of Italy, would speedily be made to flow into the bosom of a society composed of British subjects, who would encourage the manufactures of Britain by accepting them as an equivalent for the silk produce of Georgia.[1] A few Piedmontese silk-workers, who brought with them a quantity of silkworms' eggs hatched in Italy, were engaged, by the liberal offers of the trustees, to accompany the first detachment of emigrants, which, consisting of one hundred and sixteen persons, under the command of Colonel Oglethorpe [Nov. 6, 1732], sailed from Gravesend to found the last colony which England was to acquire, save by the sword, in North America. Unfortunately for this infant settlement, the Moravian emigrants who had proposed to unite themselves to it were not ready to embark at the time, when the trustees, unwilling to defer the public hope, or prolong the idle stay of their colonists in England, judged it necessary that a commencement of the enterprise should be made. On their arrival, some time after, in Holland, whither they repaired for the purpose of transporting themselves to America, the congregation of Moravians that was designed for Georgia altered their purpose, and directed their course to Pennsylvania.[2]

Oglethorpe, and the first crew of emigrants to Georgia, having arrived in safety at the metropolis of South Carolina, were received by the municipal officers of this province, and the inhabitants of Charleston, with extraordinary marks of kindness and satisfaction. [January 15, 1733.] The assembly of South Carolina, sensible of the advantage of the projected settlement, readily complied with the recommendation of Governor Johnson, in voting that a large supply of cattle and other provisions should be furnished, at the public expense, to Oglethorpe and his followers; who, resuming their expedition, and attended by rangers and scout-boats, supplied by the Caro-

[1] "The government also had in view to raise wine, oil, and silk; and to turn the industry of these new colonists from the timber and provision trade, which the other colonies had gone into too largely, to channels more advantageous for the public." Wynne.

[2] Oldmixon. Loskiel's *History of the Missions of the United Brethren in North America.* Anderson. *Universal History.* Wynne. Hewit. Raynal. Winterbotham. Watkins's *Historical Dictionary.*

linians, proceeded to occupy a convenient station in the neighbourhood of Yamacraw [February 1, 1733], on which, from the name of the adjacent river, they bestowed the appellation of Savannah. Here a fort was erected, and a few guns mounted on it, for the defence of the infant colony. The people were set to work in felling trees and building huts, and were encouraged in their labors by the animating example of Oglethorpe, who cheerfully incurred a share of every hardship. Previous to their departure from England, the colonists had received some military training from the sergeants of the guards in London. They were now formed into a company of militia, which Oglethorpe exercised with a frequency calculated to cherish habits of subordination among them, to preserve their martial acquirements, and to make a politic demonstration of military capacity to the Indians. The Carolinians continued to aid the progress of the colony, by sending frequent supplies of provisions for the support of the settlers, and a number of skilful workmen to direct and partake their labors.

Having thus completed the first necessary arrangements for the safety of his people, the next object of Oglethorpe's attention was to establish a friendly relation with the Indians, and to gain their sanction and favor to the colonial establishment. The territory in which he and his people were planted was chiefly claimed and partly occupied by the tribes of the Upper and Lower Creeks, whose formidable power, no less than their distinct pretensions, rendered it desirable that the projected treaty should include them, as well as the comparatively feeble tribe that was settled at Yamacraw. By the assistance of an Indian woman married to a Carolinian trader, and who could speak both the English and the Creek languages, Oglethorpe invited all the chiefs of the Creeks to hold a conference with him at Savannah, where he designed to solicit their consent to the establishment of his colony. His invitation was accepted, and the conference that ensued was attended by fifty Indian chiefs or kings. To this assembly of the savage aristocracy of America Oglethorpe represented the great power, wisdom, and wealth of the English nation, and the many advantages that the Indians might expect to derive from a connection of friendship with that people; and he expressed his hope, that, as the Indians had a plentiful superfluity of land, they would freely resign a share of it to his followers, who had come to settle among them for their benefit and instruction. He concluded his address by distributing presents among his auditors; a ceremonial not only accordant with the request he had made, but indispensably requisite to the formality of an Indian treaty. Then Tomochichi, the aged chief of the tribe that dwelt at Yamacraw, replied in the name of all the Creek warriors to the speech of Oglethorpe, whose request was granted with unanimous approbation. "Here is a little present," said the Indian; and therewith he presented to Oglethorpe a buffalo's skin, on the inside of which were delineated the head and feathers of an eagle; remarking that the eagle signified speed, and the buffalo strength. "The English," he continued, "are as swift as the bird, and as strong as the beast; since, like the first, they fly from the uttermost parts of the earth, over the vast seas; and, like the second, they are so strong that nothing can withstand them." He said, the feathers of the eagle were soft, and figured love; the buffalo's skin was warm, and denoted protection; and the English, he hoped, would exemplify those attributes, in loving and protecting the families of the Indians. He acknowledged that the *Great Power which dwelt in heaven and all around* had endowed the

English with wisdom and riches, insomuch that they wanted nothing; while the same Power had lavished great territories on the Indians, who yet were in want of every thing: and he declared that the Creeks were willing freely to resign to the English the lands that were useless to themselves, and to permit the English to settle among them, to the end that they might be instructed in useful knowledge, and supplied with improved accommodations of life. A friendly treaty was contracted between the two races of people; rules of mutual commerce, and for the adjustment of mutual disputes in conformity with the laws of England, were established; all lands unoccupied by the Indians were assigned to the English, under the condition that the Indian chiefs should be previously apprized of the intended formation of every new township; and the Indians promised, *with straight hearts and love to their English brethren*, that they would permit no other race of white men to settle in the country. Oglethorpe, having concluded this treaty, resumed his active superintendence of the labors and progress of the colonists, who were soon after joined by two successive reinforcements of emigrants, of whom the greater number were equipped and despatched by the trustees, though upwards of a hundred defrayed the expenses of their own transportation. He made repeated journeys to Charleston in quest of assistance and advice; and resolving, for the advantage of his people, to undertake a voyage to England, he put the colony in the best posture of defence that its circumstances admitted, and intrusted the administration of its government during his absence to two individuals named Scott and St. Julian.[1]

Oglethorpe was accompanied to England by Tomochichi and his queen, and several other Indians of distinction, who were entertained in London with magnificent hospitality, loaded with presents and attentions from all classes of people, and introduced to the royal court, which was then held at Kensington. Tomochichi, on this occasion, presenting several eagle's feathers, addressed the British monarch in the following speech: — "This day I see the majesty of your face, and the greatness of your house, and the number of your people. I am come over in my old days for the good of the whole nation called the Creeks, to renew the peace they made long ago with the English. Though I cannot live to see any advantage to myself, I am come for the good of the children of all the nations of the Upper and Lower Creeks, that they may be instructed in the knowledge of the English. These are the feathers of the eagle, which is the swiftest of birds, and flieth all round our nations. These feathers are a sign of peace in our land, and have been carried from town to town there. We have brought them over, to leave them with you, O great King, as a token of everlasting peace. O great King, whatever words you shall say unto me, I will faithfully tell them to all the kings of the Creek nations." To this address the king returned a gracious answer, assuring the Creeks of his regard and protection. After a stay of four months, a vessel being ready to sail with an additional crew of emigrants for Georgia, the Indians also embarked in it, declaring themselves highly gratified with the generosity of the British nation, and promising eternal fidelity to its interest.[2] A treaty of

[1] Oldmixon. Hewit.

[2] Tomochichi pondered attentively and made pertinent remarks on all he saw and heard in England. He displayed much good sense and sagacity in his intercourse with the Georgian trustees, especially in suggesting precautionary regulations for preventing the commercial intercourse between the colonists and the Indians from producing quarrels. Wynne He

peace and commerce was contracted, meanwhile, by the Georgian colonists with another Indian tribe called the Choctaws, to whom Oglethorpe, before his departure, had commissioned one Jones to repair for this purpose.[1]

The incorporated trustees, having thus established a colony in Georgia, now proceeded to exercise their legislatorial powers by enacting a code of fundamental laws and constitutions for the infant society. By this code it was provided that each tract of land granted by the trustees should be accepted as a military fief, for which the possessor was bound to appear in arms and take the field, when summoned for the public defence; that, to prevent accumulation of property, which was deemed inconsistent with a military spirit, the tract of land assigned to each planter should not exceed twenty-five acres, and no one should be suffered to possess more than five hundred acres; that, to hinder a plurality of allotments from falling in process of time into the possession of any single individual, the lands should be granted in tail male, instead of tail general, — that is, that women should be rendered incapable of succeeding to landed property; that, in default of heirs male to any proprietor, his estate was to revert as a lapsed fief to the trustees, in order to be again granted to another colonist on the same terms as before, — some compensation, however, being recommended in that case to the daughters (especially if not provided for by marriage) of such deceased proprietors as should have improved their lands; that widows should be entitled, during their lives, to the mansion-house and one half of the land improved by their husbands; and that, if any portion of land granted should not be cleared, fenced, and cultivated within eighteen years from the date of the relative grant, such portion was to relapse, as a forfeiture, to the trustees. No inhabitant was to be permitted to depart from the province without a license; which was declared requisite also to legitimate trade with the Indians. The importation of rum was disallowed; trade with the West Indies was declared unlawful; and *negro slavery was absolutely prohibited*. Except in the last article, and the purposed regulation of Indian trade, this code exhibits hardly a trace either of common sense, or of that liberality which the trustees had already so signally displayed.

The imagination of man could scarcely have framed a system of rules worse adapted to the circumstances of the colonists, more pernicious to the prosperity of an infant province, or more hostile to that contentment which the trustees desired to produce, and that harvest of lasting praise and honor which they might have reaped, if their wisdom had been proportioned to their benevolence. They seem to have consulted rather the defence of Carolina than the interest of Georgia, in granting their lands as military fiefs in tail male; — a provision calculated to limit the power of parents to provide for their offspring, and to afflict and discourage every planter who might chance to have only female children; and which, in effect, induced numerous valuable colonists to depart from Georgia to other provinces, where they knew that they could obtain abundance of land in less stinted allotments and upon more eligible terms. By disallowing trade with the West Indies, they deprived the colonists of an ample and convenient market for the lumber of which their lands afforded a plentiful supply. The object of this restraint seems to have been to add efficacy to the prohibition of the importation of rum, which was itself a vain mandate, espe-

as struck with the solidity of the English houses, and expressed surprise that short-lived men should build such long-lived habitations. John Wesley's *Journal*.

[1] Oldmixon. Wynne. Hewit.

cially while the colonists were exposed to severe toil in a foggy and sultry climate, and was unlikely to produce any other results than smuggling and discontent. But the trustees were greatly, and it must be allowed not unreasonably, apprehensive both of the additional depravation of manners which many of their colonists might incur, and of the fatal quarrels that might arise with the Indians from the introduction of ardent spirits into the settlement. The Carolinians were struck with disgust and astonishment, when they heard of these impolitic and oppressive restrictions; and plainly perceiving that the enforcement of them would oppose an insurmountable barrier to the progress of the new colony, began to invite the Georgian settlers to cross the Savannah River, and take refuge within the confines of Carolina. None of the regulations of the code excited greater discontent among the Georgian colonists than the wise and humane prohibition of negro slavery, — a regulation which was probably suggested by Oglethorpe's acquaintance with the state of society in South Carolina, and of which the professed object was to prevent a frontier province, intended to serve as a barrier or rampart to the other southern colonies, from being weakened by the introduction into its bosom of a race of domestic enemies.[1]

The colonists, envying the privilege enjoyed by their neighbours in Carolina, of delegating rough toil to slaves, complained that the strength of European constitutions, unaided by negro labor, could make no impression on the vast and stubborn forests by which they were surrounded. Europeans had now become so habituated to regard negroes as slaves, and to despise them as a servile and degraded race, that it never occurred, either to the trustees or the colonists, that, by an equitable intercourse and association between white men and negroes, the advantage of negro labor might be obtained, without the concomitant injustice of negro slavery. The trustees likewise acted with great inconsistency in the policy which they blended with their humane prohibition of slavery. While they alleged, in vindication of this prohibition, that the cultivation of silk, to which the province was specially destined, was more suitable to Europeans than to negroes, they held forth to the colonists encouragements to a culture that presented the strongest temptations to the employment of negro labor. We have already noticed[2] the act of parliament that was passed a few years before this period for encouraging the trade of Carolina by permitting the merchants and planters of this province to export rice directly to any part of Europe southward of Cape Finisterre. This statute (which might reasonably be supposed to have been suggested by the British merchants engaged in the slave-trade) occasioned a great additional importation of negroes into South Carolina; and yet the trustees of Georgia prevailed with the British government to obtain from the parliament an extension to the new province of the statutory privilege which produced that effect.[3] [1735.]

But the efficacy of the design for preventing the introduction of negro slavery, and indeed of every design that required patient and vigorous virtue

[1] It is remarkable that the two worst political constitutions enacted by the founders of North American States — the code composed by Locke, and the code composed by the Georgian trustees — differed from all the rest in expressly adverting to negro slavery, and so far differed from each other, that, while the one solemnly sanctioned, the other as solemnly disallowed, this injustice. In addition to the reasons assigned in the text for the prohibition of negro slavery in Georgia, Judge Law suggests, that, "because a large portion of the settlers were poor and unable to procure slaves, it was thought that the influence of the example of slavery would be unfavorable upon the industry of that portion of the whites who were thus constrained to personal labor." *Collections of the Georgia Historical Society.*

[2] Book VIII., Chap. II., *ante.*

[3] Wynne. Hewit. Stat. 8 George II., Cap. 19.

from the inhabitants of Georgia, was more seriously obstructed by the character and habits of the persons of whom the first emigrations to this province chiefly consisted. The trustees, as we have seen, had not been negligent of efforts to counteract the evil qualities which these men naturally derived from their peculiar misfortunes, by the infusion of better character and example among them. Disappointed in their first hope of an emigration of Moravian brethren, they renewed their correspondence with Count Zinzendorf, and strongly pressed him to accept of a large tract of land in Georgia, to be cultivated by a Moravian society. A party of the count's associates readily complied with his recommendation that they should embrace this offer, and received from him a valedictory charge, which enjoined them to submit themselves, in every variety of situation, to the all-wise direction and ever ready guidance of God; to cherish and preserve liberty of conscience; to avoid religious disputes; to keep continually in view the divine command to preach the gospel to the heathen; and to endeavour, as far as possible, to earn their own subsistence. A few of them embarked with other emigrants in the vessel which reconveyed Tomochichi and his Indian companions to Georgia;[1] and a larger number had since arrived in England, and were prepared to accompany the next embarkation, with which Oglethorpe also was to return to the province. They all intimated to the trustees their determination not to engage in war, and consented to embark on the faith of a positive promise of being exempted from military service.

Nor were these the only persons distinguished for Christian sentiment and practice, by whose accompaniment the next projected voyage from England to Georgia was to be signalized. John Wesley, the founder of Methodism, had now commenced in England that long and memorable career which has contributed so notably to the revival and diffusion of piety and virtue throughout Protestant Christendom, and has gained him a name as lasting as the reign of religion and civility in the world. This remarkable person was distinguished in an eminent degree by the strength of his understanding, the ardor of his devotion, the warmth of his benevolence, the cheerful serenity of his manners, and the nicely exact and yet perfectly unaffected sanctity of his life. Education had enriched him with a large variety of knowledge and accomplishments, and aided taste and nature in developing in him an eloquence at once graceful, perspicuous, impressive, and interesting. To the most earnest and indefatigable zeal, as a minister of the gospel and champion of his own ecclesiastical opinions, he united a disposition singularly charitable, tender, and forgiving; and with a wonderful clearness and subtlety of apprehension, he possessed the most stainless sincerity, an admirable candor, and a quaint yet genuine simplicity. The defects of his character were, in youth, a zeal, generously benevolent, indeed, but unguarded and unforbearing, and throughout life a strong credulity in behalf of professed piety and avouched miraculous occurrences;—the one, a natural consequence of youthful ardor,—the other, an enthusiastic effusion of that charity which in him never failed, but to the last kept more than even pace with the enlarging horizon of his knowledge. It was a remark of that great British statesman, Lord Chatham, that the ritual of the church of England is Catholic, its articles of faith Calvinistic, and its ministers in general Arminian. Even those who may dispute the accuracy of

[1] Oldmixon. Loskiel. Wynne.

the statesman's observation will hardly refuse to acknowledge the disagreements between original theory and existing practice, which the history of this church has occasionally presented, in common with every long-established human institution.

The perception of such discrepancies between the theory and the practical state of their own church has repeatedly prompted devout Catholics to found those strict religious orders, which, dissenting from the practice, but retaining the general doctrine, of the church of Rome, are acknowledged as kindred branches of its ecclesiastical establishment. But the church of England is a total stranger to this policy; and at no period[1] have its rulers ever been willing to permit those ministers to remain within its pale, who, thoroughly and cordially acquiescing in its canons of doctrine, have innovated or dissented from any part of its existing ritual system. Hence it was that the exertions by which John Wesley originally purposed to renovate the strength and authority of the church of England, by reviving among a class of its votaries the strictness of its primitive ordinances, and the profession of doctrines contained in its canons, but unacceptable to the generality of its ministers, eventually led to the sectarian establishment of Methodism, — the most extensive and important schism that occurred in England since the expulsion of the Puritans from the national church. Unlike the prior schism, however, the progress of Methodism proved eventually beneficial to the established church, and inspired in its ministers a great increase of zeal and diligence by the influence of example, the spirit of rivalry, and the interest of self-preservation.[2] But at the present period, Wesley was known to the world only as a young clergyman of the church of England, distinguished by the purity of his life and the ardor of his zeal; willing, and even desirous, to endure hardship for the promotion of religion; and who had formed at Oxford a society of young men who embraced his views, adopted his orderly habits and rigid temperance, visited the prisons along with him, and were derisively styled by the wits and mockers of the University, *the Godly Club*, or *Methodists*. Next to John Wesley, the most remarkable members of this small society were his brother Charles, a man of fine talents, an elegant scholar and poet, pious, friendly, kind, liberal, and unassuming; and George Whitefield, a man of devout and enthusiastic spirit, and one of the greatest orators, or (according to the judgment of David Hume) by far the greatest, that the world has ever produced.

The trustees of Georgia, acquainted with the reputation of this society, conceived the hope of inducing some of its members to join their American colony. By the intervention of Dr. Burton, a learned and pious divine, who warmly supported the colonial project, Oglethorpe was introduced to the two Wesleys, and so much charmed with their characters and manners, that he joined with Burton in using the most pressing instances to incline them to comply with the wishes of the trustees and accept ecclesiastical appointments in Georgia. The Wesleys consented, — chiefly induced by the hope of evangelizing the Indians, — and prevailed with a few of their associates of lesser note to accompany them in their emigration. Burton

[1] Except, perhaps, in the commencement of Queen Elizabeth's reign, when the English bishops were prevented by this princess from carrying into effect the compromise they had arranged with the Puritan clergy. See Book II, Chap. I., *ante*.

[2] It has been the fashion in England to represent the Dissenters as greatly indebted to the learning and labors of the clergy of the established church. Every impartial student of ecclesiastical history must be aware that the very reverse of this representation is the truth.

was a sagacious and experienced man; and while he gently, but earnestly, recommended to John Wesley the virtue of Christian prudence, the wisdom and duty of accommodating himself as far as possible to all men, of forbearing to press upon a society chiefly composed of ignorant and dissolute persons any observance repugnant to their tastes and habits, and not in itself a vital and essential part of the system of Christianity, — he disclosed his acquaintance with the only defective trait in the character of his young and illustrious friend, and endeavoured to communicate to him that moderation of mind, that practical discrimination and sense of moral perspective, which, as he himself had derived it from experience, so experience alone, without miraculous inspiration, can convey to any individual. Some new process of educating the human mind must be discovered, before experience, or any of the virtues which are more peculiarly its progeny, can be effectually imparted in early life. The ardor and confidence, the prompt, open thought and purpose, characteristic of young persons, may be taught to give place to mean suspicion, or premature timidity; but the matured wisdom of a pure and enlightened mind is the fruit of extended personal observation, — the result and test of well-spent time. All things having been prepared for the appointed emigration, Oglethorpe again embarked for Georgia, with a great quantity of military stores, and three hundred passengers [October, 1735]; among whom were the Wesleys, three or four of their associates, and a hundred and seventy Germans of the Society of Moravian Brethren. After a long and stormy voyage, which was distinguished by exercises of piety[1] that remind us of the primitive expeditions of the Puritans to New England, these emigrants reached the colony of Georgia [February, 1736], a few days after the arrival of another vessel which had been despatched with a crew of settlers from Scotland.

The trustees had learned that the majority of the unfortunate persons, of whom the first embarkations consisted, were likely to prove useless and even burdensome members of society; and though they were willing to make an attempt to improve the character and habits of these men, they perceived the necessity of confiding, in the mean time, the defence of the colony, and the performance of the rude toils which were yet necessary to lay the foundations of its prosperity, to settlers of a different description. Sensible that a bold and hardy race of men, inured to rural labor and to coarse and simple habits of living, would be best adapted to the immediate exigencies of cultivation and defence, they turned their eyes to the Highlands of Scotland, and resolved to send a number of Scottish laborers to their infant province. When their propositions were published at Inverness, a hundred and fifty Highlanders immediately closed with them, and were now transported to Georgia. A district on the river Alatamaha, which was considered the boundary between the British and Spanish territories, was forthwith allotted to these emigrants; and settling in this dangerous situation, they built a town which received the name of New Inverness, and a fort, which, in allusion to the long-remembered disappointment of Scotland, they denominated Darien. Here they preserved the Highland garb,[2] cherished their national manners, and lived in a state of laborious, but contented freedom and independence. They were soon after joined by accessions of adventurers from their native country, who added farther strength and security to the prov-

[1] See Note IV., at the end of the volume.

[2] When Oglethorpe visited them at Darien, he courteously appeared before them in the Highland garb, — a compliment with which they were highly pleased. Oldmixon.

ince. In compliance with a request from the trustees, a minister named M'Leod was despatched to Georgia by a society established in Scotland for the propagation of the gospel, who preached to his expatriated countrymen in Gaelic, instructed their children in English, and made some attempts to communicate knowledge and religion to the Indians. John and Charles Wesley, meanwhile, were stationed, as ministers, the one at Savannah, and the other at a new plantation called Frederica, on an island nigh the mouth of the river Alatamaha; and the Germans, who had been their fellow-voyagers, uniting themselves with their brethren who preceded them (and joined soon after by a band of pious exiles from Salzburg, in Bavaria), built a town on Savannah River, to which they gave the name of Ebenezer. Besides his ministerial labor among the colonists, John Wesley made various attempts to instruct the Indians; but was soon obliged to suspend the pursuit of this, his main and favorite object, by their refusal to listen to him, till the conclusion of the wars in which they were engaged.[1]

It was now that Oglethorpe began to experience the most arduous trials and troubles incident to his situation, and to find that in his preconception they had not been fully weighed. It has been deemed by some philosophers a wise principle of colonial policy to stock an infant settlement with the greatest possible variety of races and ranks of men, and, after observing attentively their relative thrift, to seek new recruits chiefly in those races and ranks which have attained the most thriving estate. But to whatever extent the soundness of this very questionable maxim may be admitted, it can never sanction or excuse the hopeless adventure and egregious temerity of laying the foundations of a new commonwealth with spirit-broken, jail-tainted bankrupts, — a race, that, next to felons, forms at once the worst and the most expensive raw material of colonization. Many of the original colonists proved dissolute, idle, and mutinous; some of the magistrates whom Oglethorpe appointed administered the laws with immoderate rigor against other persons, that they might engross to themselves a monopoly of the profits arising from their violation; and rumors were circulated of hostilities from the Spaniards. Oglethorpe, though well fitted by the ardor and generosity of his disposition to commence and impel the progress of a great undertaking, was less qualified to exert the wisdom, prudence, and address requisite to conduct it to a happy consummation. His judgment was perhaps somewhat vitiated by an unrestrained indulgence of sanguine and romantic speculation, as his natural impetuosity was certainly inflamed by the possession of supreme and arbitrary power. In the internal government of the colony, he displayed more spirit and zeal for the general happiness and welfare, than temper and constancy in pursuing a consistent line of policy. He seems to have fluctuated between a lingering indulgence for the original objects of his benevolent concern, and a conscientious desire to improve their manners by a discipline which they were averse to undergo; and between an honest disapprobation of the misconduct of the magistrates, and a politic fear to discredit authority and increase dissatisfaction by publicly exposing and punishing their malversations. His open and unguarded temper caused him frequently to create the irritation he apprehended, by expressing purposes of severity which he had not sufficient firmness to pursue. John Wesley and his associates labored diligently to elevate the views and correct the evil habits of the people among whom they ministered; and their characters and exer-

[1] *Journal of John Wesley.* Whitehead's *Life of the Wesleys.* Loskiel. Oldmixon. Hewit. Holmes.

tions were at first the objects of universal admiration. Some improvements in outward conduct were introduced, and some permanent advantage communicated to a few of the settlers. But the majority of the people and especially the wealthier colonists, soon began to express disgust at Wesley's rigidity, and jealously to interpret his sermons into satires upon particular individuals.

While the Wesleys and their associates seemed to enjoy the favor and countenance of the governor, some foolish and worthless persons hastily or hypocritically professed to embrace their doctrines; and employing this profession as a cloak for intrigue, spleen, and slander, discredited the ministry of which such evil qualities appeared to be the fruits. Uninformed of all the causes of the opposition that began to manifest itself, the Wesleys, and especially John, continued zealously to preach the doctrines most offensive to the pride of corrupt nature, and to insist on an observance of ecclesiastical ordinances with a strictness, which, however agreeable to the theoretical constitutions of the church of England, had long obtained from ministerial practice and popular acquiescence a considerable relaxation. Oglethorpe, already harassed by the other troubles which beset his difficult position, was perplexed and provoked by the general complaints urged against men whom he expected to find his most useful auxiliaries in promoting contentment and subordination; and while he publicly affected to support the Wesleys, he privately entreated them to moderate the expression of their zeal, to forbear from pressing instruction on persons averse to receive it, or weighty doctrine on those to whom the most diluted truth was unpalatable; and above all to beware of the discredit they sustained, and the evil offices they might incur, from hypocritical pretenders to religious impression. The expediency of this last counsel his own conduct soon after demonstrated in a remarkable manner. While the Wesleys were preparing to leave England, two women, whom vicious love had deprived of reputation, solicited their interest to be admitted among the emigrants, and engaged it by their profession of penitence and resumed virtue. Oglethorpe distrusted this profession; and after vainly endeavouring to persuade the Wesleys to regard it as hollow and insincere, he yielded to their charitable urgency, with the prophetic assurance that they would have cause to repent it. Doubtless neither he nor they anticipated the manner in which this prediction was to be fulfilled. One of those women now obtained an ascendant, short-lived indeed, but unlimited, over the mind of Oglethorpe,[1] whom she completely estranged from the Wesleys, and induced to regard them as libellous censors of his character, conspirators against his power, fomenters of mutiny and rebellion among the colonists, and even treacherous agents of the Spaniards.

It is difficult to suppose that Oglethorpe, though he affected to believe all these charges, really credited more than the first of them, which, in truth, though utterly destitute of foundation, owed its credit with him as much to the secret surmises of his own conscience as to the arts and blandishments

[1] Cooke and Moore, in their interesting *Memoirs of John Wesley*, have adopted a story, — sanctioned (as far as I am able to discover) rather by strong probabilities than satisfactory proof, — that Oglethorpe, on yielding to the seductive advances of this woman, employed her companion to attempt to gain a similar triumph over John Wesley; accounting that a personal experience of infirmity would render him a softer censor of the frailties of others. The menacing hint communicated one day by Oglethorpe, that he could find plenty of individuals in the colony, who for a bottle of rum would take Wesley's life, has been ascribed to his rage and alarm on finding that his unsuccessful confederate had been prompted by remorse to betray him. The evidence would be complete, if more reliance could be placed on the confession of a profligate woman.

of his unprincipled paramour. While his delusion lasted, he treated the two brothers, who continued warmly attached to him, with the most tyrannical insolence and injustice, and encouraged his people to reject their counsels with scorn, and deny them even the ordinary offices of humanity and good neighbourhood. A severe illness, however, which endangered his life, opened his eyes to his folly and showed him who were truly his friends; and from this moment his regard and esteem for the Wesleys continued to subsist and increase through a long succession of years, till the arrival of the period decreed to all earthly friendships and connections. But the regret which he felt for his injurious conduct to them was insufficient to counteract its pernicious consequences, and the Wesleys were soon made sensible that in Georgia their authority was broken and their hopes of usefulness completely blasted. Charles Wesley quitted the province this year, shortly before Oglethorpe himself returned to England; and in the following year [1737],[1] during Oglethorpe's absence, John Wesley—finding that the people were determined to resist his purpose of baptizing healthy infants only by immersion, that the grand jury had *presented* as a public nuisance his reduction of the English liturgy into three services, and that he was threatened with both civil and criminal process for refusing to administer the sacrament to a notorious adulteress—followed the example of his brother, and bade adieu to America, with the hope, which was never realized, of visiting it again.[2] But his influence in America, though suspended by his departure, did not expire with it. He returned to England, to found a sect, of which the ramifications have extended to every one of the North American provinces. When we consider, that, if Wesley had succeeded in maintaining his position in Georgia, he would probably have ended his life as a missionary among the Indians, we must regard his failure as a happy circumstance in his lot, and a providential interposition for the advantage both of Britain and of America.

Oglethorpe, meanwhile, with the artillery which he had brought from England, began to fortify Georgia, by erecting strongholds upon its frontiers. At one place, which he named Augusta, a fort was constructed on the banks of Savannah River, in a situation well calculated to protect the Indian trade, and to facilitate conferences for cementing friendship or enlarging commerce with various Indian tribes. At Frederica, another fort, with four regular bastions, was erected; and several pieces of cannon were planted upon it. Ten miles nearer the sea, a battery was raised for the defence of the entrance into the sound, through which alone ships of force could penetrate to Frederica. To defray the expense of these operations,

[1] The first part of John Wesley's published *Journal* contains a succinct and perspicuous sketch of the state of the British plantations in Georgia at this period, and of the condition and character of the neighbouring tribes of Indians.

[2] Wynne. Aikin's *Annual Review*, Vol. I. John Wesley's *Journal*. MS. *Journal* of Charles Wesley. This curious and interesting document, which its author was deterred from publishing by unwillingness to hurt the feelings of Oglethorpe, was submitted to my perusal by his daughter, my venerable and accomplished friend, the late Sarah Wesley. The published *Journal* of John Wesley is silent with regard to the most remarkable cause of the dispute with Oglethorpe.

An aged friend of mine informed me that he was in a company in London, where John Wesley, for the first time after his return from America, met with General Oglethorpe, who, on entering the room, advanced up to Wesley, and, on bended knee, kissed his hand.

The children of Charles Wesley repeatedly assured me that both their father and uncle retained the kindest feelings towards Oglethorpe; that they rather lamented than condemned his conduct to them in Georgia, ascribed it to an unhappy delusion, and were averse to speak about it. I have alluded to it the more particularly on account of the ignorant blame heaped on the Wesleys in relation to this matter by some modern writers.

and maintain garrisons in the forts, an additional sum of ten thousand pounds was granted by the British parliament. While Oglethorpe was thus employed, he received intelligence of a considerable reinforcement of the Spanish garrison at Augustine; and shortly after, a message from the governor of this settlement acquainted him that a Spanish commissioner had arrived from Havana, charged with a communication which he desired an early opportunity of personally delivering to the British commander. At a conference which ensued, the commissioner peremptorily required that Oglethorpe and his people should instantly evacuate all the territories lying southward of St. Helena Sound, which he declared to be the undoubted property of the king of Spain, who was determined speedily and effectually to vindicate his rights. He refused to listen to any argument in support of the English claims, and departed with a repetition of his demands and menaces. Oglethorpe, now perceiving that the most vigorous measures, and a stronger defensive force than the province could supply, would be necessary to repel or overawe the hostile purposes disclosed by Spain, resolved to represent the state of affairs to the British ministers, and, straightway embarking, set sail for England. [November 23, 1736.]

His apprehensions of danger to the colony were increased by demonstrations of hostility from another quarter. A war had recently broken forth in Europe between the king of France and the emperor of Germany, which, it was believed, would inevitably spread to every European state; and as Britain was expected to espouse the quarrel of Germany, the court of France despatched orders to the governors of Quebec and New Orleans to prepare, in that event, to invade the least defensible frontiers of the British settlements in America. For this purpose, an army was assembled in New France, and preparations were made for uniting the force of Canada and Louisiana to attack Carolina and Georgia. But before the hostile design was carried into execution, advice was received that the flames of war had been quenched in Europe, and a general peace restored by the mediation of Britain and Holland. The French governors, however, determined to strike a blow, with the troops they had assembled, against the enemies of France and the allies of England. A detachment of French and Indians accordingly proceeded from Canada down the Mississippi to attack the tribe of Chickasaws, one of the least numerous, but bravest, of the Indian nations, and firmly attached to the English; while another party of French advanced from Louisiana to revenge a quarrel of their countrymen with the Creeks. Both these detachments were repulsed and defeated with considerable slaughter by the Chickasaws and Creeks. The colonists of Carolina and Georgia rejoiced not a little at this result, and began now more diligently than ever to court the friendship and interest of those Indian tribes who had shown themselves so capable of interposing an effectual barrier against the power of France.

During Oglethorpe's absence [1737], the regulations of the trustees respecting the rum trade nearly created a rupture between the provincial governments of Georgia and Carolina. The fortification at Augusta induced some traders of Carolina to establish stores at that place, which was conveniently situated for commerce with the Indian nations. For this purpose, and to avoid the expense of land carriage, they freighted boats with their goods, to ascend the Savannah River to Augusta. But, as the boats were attempting to pass the town of Savannah, they were stopped by the magis-

trates of this place, who ordered the packages to be opened, the casks of rum, of which they partly consisted, to be staved, and the crews of the boats to be put in prison. The Carolinians, incensed at this outrage, promptly deputed two members of their council and assembly to demand of the Georgians by what authority they presumed to seize and confiscate the effects of Carolinian traders, or to compel them to submit to the Georgian laws. These deputies were received with respect and civility by the magistrates of Savannah, who had become sensible of their error, and, acknowledging it, gave the amplest redress and satisfaction to the injured traders. Strict orders were communicated to the agents of Georgia among the Indians not to molest the traders from Carolina, but to render them all friendly assistance and protection. The Carolinians, on the other hand, engaged not to smuggle any strong liquors among the settlers of Georgia; and the navigation of the river Savannah was declared open alike to the inhabitants of both provinces. Some of the Georgian planters now began to make considerable advances in clearing and cultivating their lands. The Moravian emigrants, in particular, set a rare example of diligence and virtue. Their plantation was already a model of neatness, comfort, and successful husbandry.[1] They had assisted their poorer and less industrious neighbours, and established a school and mission among the Creek Indians, with the most promising appearance of success. With indefatigable industry and charity they combined the most rigid sense of justice; and before another year elapsed, repaid to the Georgian trustees the money that had been advanced in London to enable them to emigrate to America. Their numbers were now enlarged by an additional emigration of their countrymen and fellow-sectaries, who imitated and extended the same admirable and happy example.[2]

But this example was insufficient to reconcile the majority of the Georgian colonists to their situation, or to counteract the discontent with which the regulations promulgated by the trustees were regarded, especially by those settlers who had first resorted to the province. In the adjacent territory of Carolina they found that they could obtain land on a tenure more liberal than was prescribed by the Georgian constitutions, and enjoy the privilege of purchasing negroes to assist in clearing and cultivating it; and, in contempt of the ordinance against quitting the province without a license, such numbers now began to retire to Carolina that apprehensions were entertained of the total desertion of Georgia. The freeholders of Savannah and its neighbourhood assembled together, and prepared a remonstrance, which they transmitted to the trustees, and in which they protested that the successful cultivation of Georgia was impossible, unless its inhabitants were indulged with the same privileges that were enjoyed by their neighbours in Carolina. In two points, especially, they implored relief from their rulers; they desired a fee-simple or free title of absolute property to their lands, and permission to import negroes under certain limitations; without which, they affirmed, they had neither encouragement to la-

[1] "One would scarcely think it possible," said John Wesley, himself distinguished for his economy and diligent improvement of time, "for a handful of men to have done all this in one year."

[2] Count Zinzendorf paid a visit to England this year, and proposed to the Georgian trustees that a union should take place between the Moravian church and the church of England in Georgia, and that Great Britain should acknowledge the united body as one church. The proposition was submitted to some of the English bishops, who expressed less disinclination than inability to comply with it. MS. *Journal* of Charles Wesley.

bor, nor means of providing for their posterity. While the Moravians, who never interfered with political affairs, silently demonstrated by their successful industry that the introduction of negro slaves into the province was quite unsupported even by the tyrannical plea of necessity, the colony of Scotch Highlanders loudly and unanimously protested against it as a monstrous outrage upon human nature. They declared that the institution of slavery would be the most formidable grievance that could befall Georgia; that, intermingling a race of barbarous and desperate servants with the provincial families, and rendering one class of the inhabitants always ready to aid the hostilities of the Spaniards against the others, it might at some future day prove a dreadful scourge, and cause the people of Savannah themselves to feel the smart of that oppression which they so earnestly desired to introduce and exercise. The just, as well as the unjust, complaints of the Georgians were equally disregarded by the trustees.[1]

Arriving in England [1738], Oglethorpe found the nation more disposed than the ministers to second his wish for the effectual vindication of the rights of Britain against the pretensions of Spain. For several years, the cabinets of London and Madrid had been involved in a series of disputes arising out of their respective commercial interests and territorial claims in America. The colonies of England, and especially Jamaica, had long carried on a contraband trade with the American settlements of the Spaniards; for the prevention of which, the court of Spain issued orders to its naval commanders to board and search every English vessel navigating the Mexican seas; and, in the execution of this mandate, the Spanish ships of war detained and confiscated so many vessels whose cargoes and destination were perfectly legitimate, that English commerce in that quarter of the world was almost entirely suspended. The merchants of Britain warmly complained of these outrages; and the nation, fired with resentment, cried aloud for vengeance and war. But, amidst the general ardor and indignation, Sir Robert Walpole, the prime minister, appeared unmoved and inactive. Afraid of endangering his power by the increased taxation which a war would require, and unwilling to divert to the equipment of military armaments the existing revenues, which he expended in maintaining, by an amazing extent of bribery, an odious and unpopular administration, he industriously labored to avoid a rupture with Spain, and defended the violated rights and honor of his country only by languid negotiations and fruitless remonstrances.

The outrages of which the English merchants complained were so flagrant and undeniable, that the court of Spain, unable to withstand their claims of compensation, agreed to recognize them; but deferred the liquidation of the debt, and absolutely refused to abandon the pretension to board and search the vessels of England. Nay, the slender concession which it was impossible to withhold was clogged with the condition, that Britain should abandon her occupation of Georgia and of a considerable part of Carolina; and so unreservedly did Walpole postpone regard for consistent policy and national honor and interest to the preservation of the forms of peace, that he hearkened even to these insolent and injurious demands, and, by a convention concluded in the commencement of the present year, pactioned with the court of Spain to refer all disputes between the two kingdoms to plenipotentiaries mutually appointed, and engaged, in the mean while, to

[1] John Wesley's *Journal*. Loskiel. Hewit. Anderson.

arrest the progress of all fortifications in Carolina and Georgia. In return, the court of Spain undertook to advance immediately a sum of money for satisfying a part of the claims of those English merchants who had been pillaged of their property by the Spanish cruisers. The merchants of England and the people in general were roused to the highest pitch of indignation by the tidings of this ignominious convention.[1] It was in vain that the minister and his adherents opposed to the public spirit the timorous plea, that England had no continental allies to aid her in a war which would infallibly promote the views of a Popish pretender to the crown. The Georgian trustees united with the merchants of London, Liverpool, and Bristol, in complaining to the House of Commons, which had pledged the national faith for the support and protection of the new province; and their application was seasonably enforced by the infatuated insolence with which the court of Spain, relying on the tameness of Walpole, withheld even the small pecuniary restitution which he had so dearly bought from it. A war with this imperious people was thus rendered inevitable; and though Walpole still continued to fill up the measure of his unpopularity by laboring to elude or postpone that extremity, he found it impossible to withstand the general desire that Georgia should be protected from the grasp of Spain. The national feeling on this point was partaken by the king, to whom the Georgian trustees presented an earnest petition for assistance, and who signified his commands that prompt and effectual measures should be adopted for the security of the province.[2]

Oglethorpe was now promoted to the rank of major-general; and with a regiment of six hundred men, and the appointment of commander-in-chief of all the forces in South Carolina and Georgia, once more set sail from England, to undertake the defence of the southern frontiers of the British dominions in America. The parliament, at the same time, aided the new colony with an additional grant of twenty thousand pounds; and for the encouragement of the soldiers, the trustees assured to each of them twenty-five acres of land as the premium of seven years' service in Georgia. The arrival of this force excited the liveliest hope and joy in the two provinces for whose benefit it was more peculiarly destined. The general, establishing his headquarters at Frederica, hastened to erect forts on the islands of Jekyl and Cumberland, situated nearer to the Spanish territories. But the object which he felt it most pressingly requisite to secure was the friendship of the Creek

[1] In Dr. Johnson's *London*, which was published this year, the national feeling is expressed in these lines: —

"In pleasing dreams, the happy age renew,
And call Britannia's glories back to view;
Behold her cross triumphant on the main,
The guard of commerce and the dread of Spain;
Ere masquerades debauched, excise oppressed,
Or British honor grew a standing jest."

The attempt of the Spaniards to dispossess destitute men of the refuge they had found in Georgia seems to be alluded to in the following lines of the same poem:

"Has Heaven reserved, in pity to the poor,
No pathless waste, or undiscovered shore,
No secret island in the boundless main, —
No peaceful desert yet unclaimed by Spain?
Quick let us rise, the happy seats explore,
And bear oppression's insolence no more."

Oglethorpe was in London when this poem was published; and, though not till a later period of his life personally acquainted with Johnson, he exerted much diligence to introduce it to the notice of the public. Boswell's *Life of Johnson*.

[2] Smollett. Hewit.

Indians, who had conceived a warm regard for him, and whom the Spaniards during his absence had industriously courted and studied to estrange from their adherence to the English. The Spanish governor had succeeded in enticing some of their chiefs to Augustine, by the pretence that they would meet their friend Oglethorpe there; but the efficacy of his offers and caresses was defeated by the anger and suspicion that the savages conceived, on detecting the deceit. Oglethorpe, returning seasonably at this juncture, invited them to meet him at Frederica, where he acknowledged and extolled their fidelity, distributed many valuable presents among them, and united with them in a solemn renewal of their former treaty of friendship and alliance. But the intrigues of the Spaniards were neither checked by this disappointment, nor restricted to the Indians. Learning that murmurs had arisen among the soldiers of the regiment which Oglethorpe brought from England, on account of the hardships of a situation foreign to their previous habits, and that two companies of this regiment had served at Gibraltar and gained there some acquaintance with the Spanish language, the governor of Augustine found means to corrupt one of these men, and by his agency to excite a conspiracy in Oglethorpe's camp. A daring attempt was made to assassinate the general; but his courage and resolution happily extricated him from the danger; and the mutineers being suppressed, their ringleaders were shot by the sentence of a court-martial.

Another and more successful effort of Spanish policy was directed to the seduction of the negro slaves in South Carolina, who now amounted to the number of forty thousand. Liberty and protection were tendered to all fugitive negroes from the English by the governor of Florida, and emissaries were despatched to Carolina to acquaint the slaves with the offer and invite them to embrace it. This invitation, sufficiently tempting to men in a state of bondage, however mitigated, was promoted by the cruelty with which despotic power and selfish fear induced many of the planters of Carolina to treat their negroes, and which the provincial laws practically sanctioned by affixing the trifling penalty of seven pounds of the depreciated money of Carolina to the murder of a slave, and remitting half of the penalty to any murderer who should think it expedient to inform against himself.[1] To negroes deserting from Carolina the Spaniards allotted lands near Augustine, where already five hundred fugitives had arrived. Of these negro refugees the governor of Florida composed a regiment; appointing officers from among themselves, allowing them the same pay and clothing them in the same uniform with the regular troops of Spain. But in the present year, the severity of the Carolinians and the intrigues of the Spaniards produced the formidable mischief of an insurrection of the negroes in South Carolina. A number of these unfortunate persons, having assembled at Stono, first surprised and killed the European proprietors of a large warehouse or magazine, and then plundered it of guns and ammunition. Thus provided with arms, they elected one of their own number to be their captain, and marched under his direction towards the southwest, with colors flying, drums beating, and all the array of an army of hostile invaders. With little violence, they compelled the negroes on the plantations which they approached to join them; and vented their revengeful rage on the free colonists, of whom, nevertheless, only twenty perished by negro hands. The utmost terror and consternation was excited through the whole of South

[1] See Note V., at the end of the volume.

Carolina. But Bull, the governor, hastily assembling a force against the insurgents, took advantage of the intoxication from which the negroes could not refrain, and attacking them suddenly, while they were celebrating their fancied triumph with orgies which disabled them from obtaining it, easily routed and dispersed their forces. Many of the fugitives hastened back to the plantations they had quitted, hoping to resume their toils without detection; but the greater number were taken and brought to judicial reckoning. All who had been or seemed to have been compelled to join the other insurgents, contrary to their own inclination, were pardoned; but a vast number, including the first promoters and chosen leaders of the rebellion, suffered the severest infliction of human power and vengeance.[1]

The following year [1739] was signalized by the extremity which Sir Robert Walpole had so long resisted; and with the unanimous voice of the nation, war was declared by England against Spain. An act of parliament was passed at the same time for naturalizing all foreign Protestants settled in any of the British colonies in America.[2] If this act was meant to gratify or retain the Moravian settlers in Georgia, its efficacy was completely defeated by the contemporary proceedings of the English inhabitants of this province. About a year before, when a provincial force was hastily assembled to encounter an apprehended invasion of the Spaniards, the Moravians were summoned to join their fellow-colonists in defending their adopted country. This summons they mildly, but firmly, refused to obey; declaring that no human power or motive could induce them to take the sword, and appealing to the pledge they had received from the trustees of exemption from military service. The magistrates were constrained to admit the force of the appeal; but so much jealousy and displeasure were expressed on this account by the bulk of the planters against the Moravians, that several of these sectaries, unwilling to remain among a people in whom their presence excited unfriendly sentiments, abandoned the province and retired to the peaceful domain of the Quakers in Pennsylvania, where already a numerous society of the Moravian brotherhood was collected. The rest, under the direction of an excellent pastor, named Peter Boehler, continued to reside in Georgia; some desirous of discharging the pecuniary debt which they had contracted to the trustees, and all unwilling to forsake their missionary labors among the neighbouring Indians, which began to be attended with happy results. But in the present year, they again received a summons to join the provincial militia; and, declining to resume the former controversy, they bade farewell to Georgia, surrendered their flourishing plantations without a murmur, and reunited themselves to their brethren who were established in Pennsylvania. One of their number returned shortly after to Georgia, at the request of George Whitefield, with the hope both of assisting that extraordinary man to execute the benevolent project he had undertaken in this province, and of prosecuting the missionary work which had been commenced among the Creeks. [1740.] Whitefield, undeterred by the disappointment that the Wesleys sustained in Georgia, tendered his services in the province to the trustees; and having obtained a tract of

[1] MS. *Journal* of C. Wesley. Whitehead's *Life of the Wesleys*. Wynne. Hewit. Holmes.

[2] Twelve years after, a bill was brought into parliament for naturalizing all foreign Protestants settled in Great Britain. It was supported by Pitt, afterwards Earl of Chatham, and opposed by Fox, afterwards Lord Holland, and by the principal mercantile corporations of England and the bulk of the people. The Prince of Wales, son of George the Second, was its strenuous patron; and his death was the main cause of its failure. Smollett.

land from them; he laid the foundation of an *orphan-house*, a few miles from Savannah, and afterwards completed it at a great expense. It was designed to be an asylum for destitute children, of whom great numbers were left dependent on public compassion by the premature deaths of many of the first imported colonists, and who were to be clothed and fed by charitable contributions, and educated in the knowledge and practice of Christianity.[1] The advantages which Whitefield expected to deduce from this humane and laudable institution were never realized; but his labors and travels, to which it first gave rise, in various parts of America, were subsequently productive of important results. One of his earliest publications was a letter he addressed about this time to the planters of Virginia, Maryland, and the Carolinas, on the cruelties inflicted on their negro slaves, which is said to have produced a considerable amelioration in the treatment of these victims of oppression. During his long and frequent visits to America, he continued steadily to advocate the interests of the negroes, and so successfully as to persuade a number of the planters to emancipate their slaves.[2]

The British government seemed now resolved to atone for the timid policy that retarded the declaration of war, by the extent of its hostilities upon the Spanish dominions. An application was made to Virginia and North Carolina for a levy of troops to reinforce the English armament despatched against Carthagena under Admiral Vernon, a man whose personal bravery had gained him credit for the possession of qualities much more essential to a commander; and as Colonel Spottiswoode received a commission to raise and command the provincial auxiliaries, the colonists both of Virginia and North Carolina eagerly obeyed the summons to enrol themselves under the banners of a leader so highly respected and beloved. A considerable force (to which North Carolina contributed four hundred men) was accordingly embodied, and, on the death of Spottiswoode, proceeded, under the command of Gooch, the governor of Virginia, to embark in Vernon's squadron, and shared in the disastrous enterprise against Carthagena, which was defeated by the dissensions between the English commanders, and cost the lives of twenty thousand British subjects, of whom by far the greater number were the victims of a pestilential distemper.[3]

Oglethorpe, partaking the general ardor of his countrymen to punish the insolence of Spain, determined not to confine the operation of the force with which he was intrusted to defensive warfare. Having concerted a plan for the invasion of Florida, he solicited the assistance of Virginia and Carolina to its execution. The assembly of South Carolina granted one hundred and twenty thousand pounds of Carolinian currency for the purpose; and a regiment was raised, partly in Virginia and partly in North and

[1] Loskiel. Holmes. Franklin's *Memoirs*.

[2] Clarkson's *History of the Abolition of the Slave-trade*. Southey's *Life of Wesley*.

[3] "Such as of late at Carthagena quenched
The British fire. You, gallant Vernon! saw
The miserable scene; you heard the groans
Of agonizing ships from shore to shore,
Heard nightly plunged amid the sullen waves
The frequent corse." — Thomson.

Vernon had supported warlike counsels in the House of Commons with an ardor that was highly agreeable to the nation, and proportionally unacceptable to the minister, who, on finding war inevitable, seized the opportunity of pleasing the people and ridding himself of a troublesome censor by promoting Vernon to the command of the expedition against the Spanish colonies.

South Carolina, to coöperate with the forces of Oglethorpe. The commander of the English ships of war on this station agreed to aid the enterprise with a naval armament, consisting of four ships of twenty guns each, and two sloops; and the Indian allies of the English declared themselves ready, at a moment's warning, to send a powerful auxiliary force to accompany the expedition. Oglethorpe, learning that the Spanish garrison at Augustine were straitened for provisions, urged the speedy advance of the colonial militia and the ships of war; and, hastening to enter Florida with four hundred chosen men of his own regiment, and a considerable body of Indians, invested Diego, a small fort, about twenty-five miles from Augustine, which, after a short resistance, surrendered by capitulation. Leaving a garrison of sixty men there, he proceeded to the place of general rendezvous, where he was joined by Colonel Vanderdussen with the Carolinian and Virginian regiment, and a company of Highlanders, under Captain M'Intosh. A few days after, he marched with his whole force, consisting of above two thousand men, regulars, provincials, and Indians, to Fort Moosa, within two miles of Augustine, which was evacuated by its garrison on his approach. The Spaniards had exerted themselves to strengthen the fortifications of the town and castle of Augustine; and Oglethorpe, soon perceiving that an attempt to take the place by storm would be an act of presumptuous rashness, changed his plan of operation, and resolved, with the assistance of the English ships, which were now lying at anchor off Augustine bar, to turn the siege into a blockade. For this purpose, he left Colonel Palmer, with ninety-five Highlanders and forty-two Indians, at Fort Moosa, with orders to scour the woods round the town, and intercept all supplies of provisions which it might derive from the country; and sent Colonel Vanderdussen with the Carolina regiment to occupy and erect a battery on Point Quarrel, a neck of land about a mile distant from the castle; while he himself, with his own regiment and the main body of the Indians, embarked in boats, and landed on the island of Anastatia, fronting the castle, whence he resolved to attempt the bombardment of the town. When his batteries were erected, and the ships of war so stationed as to block up the mouth of the harbour and exclude the garrison from supplies by sea, he summoned the governor of the place to surrender; but, secure in his stronghold, the Spaniard replied that he would be glad to shake hands with him in the fortress. Oglethorpe, whose disposition was fiery and irascible, expressed much inappropriate anger at this reply, and straightway proceeded to open his batteries upon the castle, and to throw shells into the town. The cannonade was briskly returned by the enemy; but the distance was so great, that, although it was continued for several days, very little execution was done on either side.

A series of disasters and calamities now befell the besieging army. The Spanish governor, remarking the smallness of the force stationed at Fort Moosa under Colonel Palmer, secretly detached three hundred of his troops, by whom Palmer was attacked by surprise, and his party of gallant Highlanders almost entirely cut to pieces. Some of the Chickasaw Indians, having caught a straggling Spaniard, cut off his head, and presented the gory trophy to Oglethorpe in his tent. The general was struck with disgust and horror at this savage style of warfare, and hastily exclaiming that they were *barbarous dogs*, commanded them to quit his presence. Stung by this disdainful behaviour, the Chickasaw warriors angrily observed, that,

if they had carried the head of an Englishman to the French, they would have experienced a very different reception; and having communicated the insult they had sustained to their companions, the whole detachment from the Chickasaw tribe immediately abandoned the camp and returned home. While the besieging forces were thus diminished, the Spanish garrison received a reinforcement of seven hundred men and a copious supply of provisions in some small ships from Havana, which contrived to elude the vigilance of the British vessels and to enter the harbour undiscovered. All prospect of starving the enemy into a surrender consequently ceased, and the besiegers began to despair of a successful issue to their undertaking. The Carolina troops, enfeebled by the heat of the climate, and dispirited by sickness and fruitless fatigue, marched away in large bodies. The naval commander represented, that, from the deficiency of his provisions and the near approach of the usual season of hurricanes, he judged it imprudent to retain the fleet longer on this coast. The general himself was attacked by a fever, and his regiment was worn out with fatigue and crippled by sickness. This combination of adverse circumstances rendered it necessary to abandon the enterprise; and Oglethorpe, overwhelmed with chagrin, raised the siege and returned to Frederica. [July 10, 1740.] The Carolinians were filled with anger and disappointment at this catastrophe, and openly imputed it to want of courage and skill in the general; while he increased their irritation by retorting their injustice, and declaring that he had now no confidence in their militia, who had refused obedience to his orders, and mutinously or pusillanimously deserted his camp. Oglethorpe, indeed, did not deserve the imputations that were thrown on his military skill, and much less on his courage, of which the strain was rather heroic than temperate; but he showed a want both of reflective prudence and moderation[1] in stigmatizing with abrupt and vehement censure the mode of warfare practised by a faithful though savage ally, and in expecting from a troop of brave but undisciplined militia the same mechanical obedience that he was accustomed to exact from regular soldiers. The Carolinians had not ceased to deplore their misfortune, when [November, 1740] they sustained a heavy aggravation of it from a desolating fire which broke forth in Charleston, laid in ashes three hundred of the principal houses in the town, and occasioned damage that was estimated at two hundred thousand pounds. The assembly applied for relief to the British parliament, which granted twenty thousand pounds to be distributed among the sufferers.[2]

Nothing could be more unfortunate than the conduct of Great Britain in this war. [1741.] Admiral Vernon, hoping to retrieve his miscarriage at Carthagena by a more successful enterprise against another of the colonial settlements of Spain, obtained, in consequence of a requisition from the British government to the North American provinces, a reinforcement of three thousand six hundred men, chiefly supplied by the States of New England. Thus recruited, he made a descent upon Cuba, where, without

[1] The conduct of Oglethorpe, at this period, seems to have resembled his conversation in later years, which, though admired for its generous fire and vivacity, was reproached as desultory and immethodical. "Oglethorpe," said Dr. Johnson, "never *completes* what he has to say." Boswell's *Life of Johnson*. Horace Walpole says that Oglethorpe "was always a bully." *Letters to Sir Horace Mann*, October, 1746. But Horace Walpole was no very competent judge of the character of a hero. He has termed Washington "an excellent fanfaron!" Ib. October, 1754; and done his utmost to depreciate the genius of Sir Philip Sidney.

[2] Smollett. Hewit. Burk. Williamson. Holmes.

venturing to attempt any operation of the slightest importance, he lingered, with the inactivity of a weak and bewildered mind, till, by the recurrence of pestilential maladies, the fleet was miserably dispeopled, and the army ingloriously melted away. Of the New England auxiliaries, scarcely one man in fifty survived the expedition. This calamity overspread America with mourning, and excited a mixture of grief and indignation in England, where the people began to perceive that Vernon's capacity had been strangely overrated. The legislative policy of Britain, in relation to the war, exhibited the same blundering indiscretion and futility that characterized her executive operations. Although hostilities had not yet been formally proclaimed between Britain and France, the design of France to support the quarrel of Spain was become increasingly manifest; and it was equally evident that England would be soon involved in the continental disputes of her sovereign, as Elector of Hanover, with France and her German allies. A bill was now introduced into the British parliament, for distressing the French and Spaniards, by prohibiting the exportation of all provisions, of whatsoever description, and particularly of rice, from any part of the British dominions. With great difficulty, the parliament was prevailed on to except rice from the operation of this act, by a representation from South Carolina, which clearly demonstrated that the restriction of the existing commerce of that article would prove highly detrimental to Britain, and perfectly harmless to her enemies. In this representation it was asserted, that, "if any stop be put to the exportation of rice from South Carolina to Europe, it will not only render the planters there incapable of paying their debts, but also reduce the government of this province to such difficulties for want of money, as at this present precarious time may render the whole colony an easy prey to their neighbours, the Indians and Spaniards, *and also to those yet more dangerous enemies, their own negroes, who are ready to revolt on the first opportunity, and are eight times as many in number as there are white men able to bear arms*; and the danger in this respect is greater since the unhappy expedition to Augustine."[1]

Admiral Vernon having now quitted the American seas, the Spaniards, delivered from the fear of the English fleet and exulting in its disasters, determined to improve their good fortune by a vigorous effort for the conquest of Georgia and South Carolina. An armament was accordingly prepared at Havana, whence two thousand troops, commanded by Don Antonio de Rodondo, embarked, under the convoy of a powerful squadron, for Augustine. [May, 1742.] Before they reached this place, they were descried by the captain of an English cruiser, who conveyed the tidings of danger to Oglethorpe, by whom a messenger was despatched to Glen, the governor of South Carolina, beseeching instant aid, and desiring that a sloop should be despatched to the West Indies, in order that Vernon, if he was still there, might be acquainted with the intended invasion. But the Carolinians now regarded Oglethorpe with strong dislike, and entertained a mean opinion of his ability; and no sooner was the alarming intelligence which he communicated made generally known, than the planters of the southern frontier of the province, accounting the conquest of Georgia inevitable, deserted their own habitations, and flocked to Charleston with their families and effects. The inhabitants of Charleston warmly declared against sending any assistance to Oglethorpe, and determined rather to fortify their city and collect the whole

[1] Douglass. Smollett. Hewit. Gordon. Trumbull.

str ngth of the province for its defence. This purpose was equally ungenerous and imprudent. In such an emergency, good policy required that the united force of both colonies should be exerted to prevent the Spaniards from penetrating through the thickets of Georgia, and reaching the opener country and negro population of South Carolina. Divided by erroneous policy, the force of the two provinces was plainly insufficient to the public defence ; and, by abandoning the Georgians to their fate, the Carolinians provoked their own ruin. Nevertheless, they conveyed tidings of the danger of Georgia to Virginia, where a wiser and more liberal policy prevailed, and an instant and unanimous resolution was embraced by the assembly to detach a naval force to the aid of Oglethorpe. But the contest was decided before the Virginian succour arrived.

In the mean time, Oglethorpe was making the most active preparation at Frederica for the reception of the enemy. The Creeks and Cherokees, who were warmly attached to him, readily obeyed his summons, and crowded to his camp. A company of Highlanders joined him on the first notice, and expressed a stern and earnest satisfaction at the prospect of revenging the fate of their friends who were slaughtered two years before by the Spaniards at Fort Moosa. With his own regiment, and a few provincial rangers, Highlanders, and Indians, the general fixed his head-quarters at Frederica, confidently expecting a reinforcement from Carolina, and daily looking for its arrival ; but withal determined, in case he should be attacked unaided, to sell his life as dearly as possible in defence of the province. In the latter end of June, the Spanish fleet, consisting of thirty-two vessels, and carrying upwards of three thousand men, of whom Don Manuel de Monteano, the governor of Augustine, was commander-in-chief, arrived in the mouth of the river Alatamaha ; and having received and returned the fire of Fort Simon, where Oglethorpe was stationed, sailed up the river beyond the reach of his guns. The invaders disembarked on the island in which Frederica is situated, and erected a battery mounted by twenty pieces of cannon. Among their land forces they had a fine company of artillery, commanded by Rodondo, and a regiment of negroes. The negro officers were clothed in lace, enjoyed the same rank with the Spanish officers, and with equal freedom accosted and conversed with the commander-in-chief. Such an example might justly have inspired terror and alarm in Carolina ; for it needed little sagacity to perceive, that, if the invaders should penetrate into that province, and exhibit the spectacle of their negro regiment to the swarms of discontented slaves with which it abounded, they would infallibly obtain the accession of such a force as would render all opposition fruitless and desperate.

Oglethorpe, finding that he could not withstand the progress of the enemy up the river, and judging his situation at Fort Simon insecure, spiked its guns, and retreated to Frederica. With a force amounting to little more than seven hundred men, exclusive of Indians, he could not hope to act but on the defensive, until the arrival of the lingering aid of Carolina. On all sides he detached scouting parties of Highlanders and Indians to watch the motions, harass the outposts, and obstruct the advances of the enemy, while the main body of his troops were employed in strengthening the fortifications of Frederica. The provisions of his garrison were scanty and of indifferent quality ; and as the Spaniards possessed the command of the river, all prospects of a farther supply were cut off. Yet hoping for relief from Carolina,

Oglethorpe studied to prolong the defence, by concealing every discouraging circumstance from his little army; and in order to animate their perseverance, he cheerfully exposed himself to the same privations and fatigues which the common soldiers endured. This generous policy was attended with its usual success, and sustained the patience of the troops under labors and hardships, which were divested of the appearance of constraint by the voluntary participation of the commander. The Spanish troops now made several attempts to pierce through the woods in order to besiege Oglethorpe's head-quarters, but encountered such stubborn resistance from deep morasses, and dark and tangled thickets, lined with fierce Indians and active Highlanders, that some of them protested impatiently that the devil himself could not make his way to Frederica. In two skirmishes, a Spanish captain and two lieutenants were killed, and a hundred of their men taken prisoners. Encouraged by this ray of success, and learning from an English prisoner who escaped from the Spanish camp, that a disagreement had arisen between the forces from Havana and those from Augustine, which occasioned a separation of their encampments, Oglethorpe resolved to attempt the daring measure of sallying from his stronghold and attacking the enemy while thus divided. Availing himself of his acquaintance with the woods, he marched in the night, with three hundred of his regular soldiers, the Highland company, and a troop of provincial rangers, in the hope of surprising one of the Spanish camps. Having arrived within two miles of it, he halted his troops, and advanced himself, with a small corps, to reconnoitre the enemy's position; but while he was cautiously manœuvring to conceal his approaches, one of his attendants, a Frenchman, who had harboured the intention of deserting, seized this opportunity of carrying it into effect; and, discharging his musket to alarm the Spaniards, ran off and gained the shelter of their lines.

This act of treachery defeated the hopes of the assailants, and compelled a hasty retreat to Frederica, where Oglethorpe now endeavoured to accomplish by stratagem what he had failed to achieve by surprise. Apprehensive that his weakness would be discovered to the enemy by the deserter, he wrote a letter to this man, in which he addressed him as a spy in his employ, and instructed him to assure the Spaniards that Frederica was in a defenceless state, and that its garrison might be easily cut to pieces. He pressed him to bring forward the Spaniards to an attack, and, if he could not prevail thus far, to use all his art and influence to detain them at least three days more in their present situation; for within that time, according to advices which had just arrived from Carolina, the Georgian troops would be reinforced by two thousand auxiliaries, accompanied by six British ships of war. The letter concluded with a caution to the deserter against suffering the intelligence of Admiral Vernon's approaching attack upon Augustine to transpire, and with assurance of the amplest recompense that the British king could bestow on him, if he succeeded in preventing the escape of the Spaniards from Georgia. This ingenious production was committed to a Spanish prisoner, who, for a small reward, together with his liberty, undertook to convey it privately to the deserter; but, on rejoining his countrymen, delivered it, as Oglethorpe expected, to the commander-in-chief, who instantly put the deserter in irons. The Spanish officers were not a little perplexed and confounded by the contents of the letter; some shrewdly suspecting it to be a stratagem to prevent an attack on Frederica; and

others duped by its literal import, and believing it to convey sincere instructions to direct the conduct of a spy. While they were deliberating on these opposite probabilities, and hesitating what measures to pursue, their counsels were suddenly decided by an incident beyond the calculation of human ingenuity. Three ships, which the governor of South Carolina had at length despatched to Oglethorpe's aid, appeared at this critical juncture off the coast; and an effect, more than proportioned to the power or numbers of this reinforcement, was produced by its opportune arrival. All doubts of the purpose of Oglethorpe's letter were terminated by so palpable a confirmation of its contents. A universal panic was spread through the Spanish army, and nothing was heeded but instant departure. Setting fire to the fort they had built, and leaving behind them a great quantity of artillery, provisions, and military stores, they precipitately embarked in their vessels, and returned to Augustine and Havana. [July, 1742.]

The triumph of Oglethorpe was complete, in this happy deliverance of Georgia from the brink of destruction. Monteano did not escape the censure of military critics, who remarked that he passed fifteen days on the small island that contained Frederica, without being able to reach this fort, and lost some of his bravest troops, without gaining the smallest advantage over the inconsiderable force that was opposed to him. Rodondo, on his arrival at Havana, was thrown into prison for his share in the ignominious result; and a resumption of the invasion of Georgia was openly announced by the Spaniards, but never actually undertaken. The inhabitants of South Carolina incurred deep and general blame for their conduct, which was resented by Oglethorpe and the Georgians with the liveliest indignation. Some of the Carolinian planters condemned the selfish and splenetic policy of their countrymen, and united with the inhabitants of the other provinces in celebrating the bravery of the Georgians, and hailing Oglethorpe as the hero and deliverer of British America. Others censured every part of his conduct, depreciated his valor and skill, and ascribed the safety of Georgia to the favor of Divine Providence, or the blindness of chance. Oglethorpe's merit had been illustrated too conspicuously to suffer him to pay any regard to these mean effusions of pique and envy; but his honor was more sensibly touched by charges of fraud and embezzlement, which originated with certain profligate settlers in Georgia, and were industriously disseminated in England by Colonel Cook, one of his own officers, who repaired thither for the purpose. Learning that these statements had made an impression on some of the Georgian trustees, and provoked much discussion among military men in England, Oglethorpe judged it due to his character to return thither without delay. [1743.] Soon after his arrival, a court-martial of general officers was assembled to investigate the charges preferred against him, which, after a patient inquiry, they adjudged to be utterly false and malicious. Cook was in consequence dismissed from the British army, and declared incapable of ever again serving the king. Oglethorpe's character was thus effectually cleared; and it was universally acknowledged, that to his generosity, valor, and ability Carolina owed her safety and repose, and Georgia her existence and preservation. He never afterwards returned to Georgia; but in England continued to render services to the people of this province, and to display an unwearied zeal for their happiness and improvement.[1] Oglethorpe made as great efforts and sacrifices for Georgia, as

[1] Smollett. Hewit. Marshall's *Life of Washington*. Burk. Oglethorpe was employed in

William Penn had done for Pennsylvania; and without creating a private estate to himself, or seeking any personal emolument from his labors. But he was not, like Penn, at the head of a religious society, which, identifying its honor with his, would have magnified and perpetuated the glory of his achievements with all the ardor of sectarian partiality.

The provincial government to which Georgia had been hitherto subjected was of a military character, and administered by Oglethorpe and a class of subordinate functionaries appointed by him. But now the trustees judged it expedient to establish a system of civil jurisdiction, of which the administration was intrusted to a president and four assistants, who were to act in conformity with the instructions of the trustees, and to be responsible to them for their public conduct. William Stephens was appointed president, and Thomas Jones, Henry Parker, John Fallowfield, and Henry Mercer, assistants. They were instructed to hold, every year, four general courts, at Savannah, for regulating public affairs and adjusting disputes relative to private property. No public money could be disposed of, but by a warrant from the president and a majority of the assistants in council assembled, who were enjoined to transmit monthly accounts of their expenditure to England. All officers of militia previously appointed were continued in their functions, and required to hold musters for the purpose of training the colonists to military service; and Oglethorpe's regiment was left in the province for its additional security. An important alteration took place at the same time in the regulations formerly enacted with respect to the tenure of lands in Georgia. The trustees had already transported upwards of fifteen hundred persons to the province (exclusive of the emigrants who repaired thither at their own cost); but not a half of this number now remained in it; and as it was justly believed that the desertion of the settlers was partly occasioned by the feudal restrictions originally imposed on the tenure of land, this system was now abolished, and the right of absolute property in land, on condition of a small quitrent, substitutionally introduced. This innovation, which prevented the province from being entirely deserted, was more conducive to the advantage of the colonists than to the mitigation of their discontent. Many useful and industrious settlers had already withdrawn the benefit of their exertions and example from Georgia; and the bulk of its population was composed of indigent and dissolute persons, who had little acquaintance with husbandry and less inclination to labor, who preferred complaint and dependence to active efforts for the amelioration of their own predicament, and who continued incessantly to clamor for the introduction of negro slaves. The colonial establishment was kept alive by the industry of the Scottish Highlanders, and of certain German laborers who had latterly resorted to it. Though some excellent silk had been already produced in Georgia, yet the quantity was very inconsiderable; the colonists discov-

Scotland, in the year 1745, against the rebels; and died in the year 1785, after beholding the province he had founded severed from the British empire, and converted into one of the members of a republican confederacy. "This, it has been justly observed, is the first example in modern times of the founder of a colony who has lived to see that colony recognized by the world as a sovereign independent state. The late President Adams saw General Oglethorpe in 1785, a short time before his decease. Within a day or two after his arrival in London as ambassador from the United States, the general visited him, and was very polite and complimentary. He had come, he said, to pay his respects to the first American ambassador and his family, whom he was very glad to see in England; he expressed a great esteem and regard for America, much regret at the misunderstanding between the two countries, and lively satisfaction at having lived to see the termination of it. About a month after, the newspapers announced Oglethorpe's death, at the uncommon age of one hundred and four years." Holmes.

ered no inclination to augment it; and the hopes of England in this respect were disappointed.

Shortly after the departure of Oglethorpe, the colony was exposed to great peril from the ambition and intrigues of one Bosomworth, who came to Georgia as chaplain of Oglethorpe's regiment, and, having married an Indian woman, persuaded the Creeks to acknowledge her as their queen. He contrived to estrange this people from the provincial government, and, marching against Savannah at the head of a numerous Indian host, supported a pretended claim of his wife to a considerable portion of the provincial territory, and summoned the colonists to surrender it on pain of extermination. By the prudence and firmness of President Stephens and his council, and the daring valor of Jones, the captain of a very scanty troop of militia, the Indians were deprived of their leaders and with difficulty constrained to a reluctant submission.[1]

It was chiefly in its effects on the province of South Carolina that the establishment of Georgia at first seemed to fulfil the expectations of its founders. Delivered from the fear of the Spaniards by the intervention of this new settlement, which effectually covered their most vulnerable frontier, the Carolinians increased their plantations, undisturbed by any other alarm than what was suggested by the concomitant increase in the numbers of their negro slaves. Soon after the departure of Oglethorpe, they petitioned the king to order three independent companies of soldiers to be raised in the various colonies, at the expense of Great Britain, for the defence of Carolina against its own negro population. The only reason that was urged in support of the petition, that the colony was overstocked with negroes, appeared unsatisfactory to the British privy council, to which the petition was remitted; and the application, though finally complied with, proved in the first instance unsuccessful. Great numbers of emigrants continued meanwhile to repair to South Carolina, both from Germany and Holland; and in the year 1744, two hundred and thirty vessels were loaded at the port of Charleston alone, — an indication of the increased national value of the province, in respect not only of the quantity of British goods which it consumed, but of the general naval strength of the empire, which it promoted. At least fifteen hundred seamen were then employed in the trade of South Carolina. Among the later emigrants to this province were a great many artisans and manufacturers; but in spite of the profits that these settlers derived from the exercise of the crafts they had learned in Europe, they were all very soon induced to become planters, by the dignity attached to the possession of landed property, and the ease and pleasure of rural life and occupation. The rebellion, which, in the following year [1745], originated in Scotland, proved, in its termination, highly beneficial to the population of the North American provinces, and strongly promotive, at the same time, of jealous and vindictive sentiments towards Britain. Parliamentary statutes, gleaning the refuse of the sword and the gibbet, doomed many of the unhappy men, who had followed their chieftains in assertion of the claims of the Pretender, to be transported to the American plantations; and

[1] *Collections of the Georgia Historical Society.* An earlier and far more profound and interesting scheme for the destruction of the colony has been ascribed to one Preber, a German Jesuit, whose intrigues among the Creeks and Cherokees were happily detected and defeated by Oglethorpe. Of this Preber, who seems in genius and accomplishments to have equalled, if not surpassed, his brother Jesuit, Sebastian Rasles, of New England (*ante*, Book VIII., Chap. II.), a curious, though not very well authenticated, account is preserved in the *Annual Register for* 1760.

Carolina and Georgia, among other States, derived from this source a large augmentation of the numbers of their inhabitants, and a notable immixture of political sentiment and opinion. As if to facilitate the subsistence and enrichment of its increasing population, the important discovery of the growth of indigo in South Carolina occurred about the same time. This valuable plant was observed to grow spontaneously almost everywhere in the wild glades of the forest; and as an immense profit attended the first attempt to introduce it into commerce, a great number of planters directed their attention to the culture of indigo and the art of extracting its dye. So rapidly did the newly ascertained supply of this article increase, that, in the year 1747 at least three hundred thousand pounds of indigo had been shipped from Carolina to England; and in the following year the British parliament passed an act[1] for allowing a bounty of sixpence per pound on all indigo raised in the American colonies and exported directly to Britain.

After the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle, the chief attention of the British government was directed to the colonization of Acadia, or Nova Scotia [1749]; but the interests of Carolina and Georgia were not neglected; and from time to time various small sums were granted to the Georgian trustees, to aid them in the plantation of the province committed to their care. In the year 1750, South Carolina had made such advances, that its population amounted to sixty-four thousand persons. In the same year, eight vessels only departed from Georgia; and the exports with which they were loaded amounted to little more than two thousand pounds. To encourage the growth and culture of silk in Carolina and Georgia, an act of parliament was now passed, exempting from custom-house duties all silk manufactured in any of the British colonies in America, and imported from thence into the mother country. A similar exemption was extended soon after [1751] to pot and pearl ashes, of which large quantities had been imported from foreign nations for the use of the British soap manufacture.[2] That an increase occurred about this time in the Georgian trade we may infer from the complaints of those writers who have lamentingly stated, that, in the year 1752, the whole annual exports from Georgia did not exceed in value ten thousand pounds. Yet this province had not increased in proportion to the public expectation; and its inhabitants, in general, were affected with incurable discontent. Disgusted with this result, and wearied with the complaints of their people, the trustees of Georgia now willingly surrendered their expiring charter to the crown from which it was derived. A provincial constitution, precisely similar to that of Carolina, was thereupon established in Georgia [June 20, 1751]; John Reynolds, a naval officer, was appointed the first governor; and negro slavery was forthwith introduced. Three years afterwards, a court of justice, modelled in conformity with the courts of law in the parent state, was established by letters patent from the crown. Some time had still to elapse, before the value of the soil of Georgia was generally known, and that spirit of industry broke forth in the province, by which the extent of its resources was practically ascertained. It was in Carolina that the first effects of every measure of the parent state for the benefit of Georgia long continued to be visible. In the year 1752, upwards of

[1] Stat. 21 George II., Cap. 30. In the parliamentary investigation which preceded this act, it was ascertained that indigo was one of the most beneficial articles of French commerce; and that Great Britain alone consumed annually six hundred thousand pounds' weight of French indigo, which, at five shillings a pound, cost the nation one hundred and fifty thousand pounds sterling. Anderson. Drayton.

[2] Stat. 24 George II., Cap. 51.

fifteen hundred foreign Protestants arrived in South Carolina; and the annual commerce of this province was found to employ three hundred British ships.[1]

Georgia was the only one of the North American provinces of which the formation was promoted by pecuniary aid supplied by the British government. None of the other colonies in their infancy excited so much expectation of national advantage in England, and none created greater disappointment, or evinced a more languid increase.[2] In addition to the other causes that have been already particularized, it is probable that the parliamentary grants by which the settlers were aided contributed in some measure to this untoward issue, by encouraging them to rely on extraneous assistance, in contending with the difficulties of their situation. Rice, tobacco, cotton, and indigo became the principal objects of culture to the colonists; and the restriction imposed on trade to the West Indies having been removed, considerable quantities of lumber were exported thither. The value of the exports of Georgia in 1755 was £15,744 sterling. In the following year, the exports consisted of 2,997 barrels of rice, 9,395 pounds of indigo, and 268 pounds of raw silk, which, together with skins, furs, lumber, and provisions, amounted in value to £16,776. It was not till some time after, that the colonists were apprized of the superior excellence of the Georgian tobacco, and of the peculiar adaptation of their territory to this produce. The first issue of bills of credit or paper money, to the amount of about eight thousand pounds, received the sanction of the Georgian legislature in the year 1760.[3] For the convenience of the increasing cultivation of rice and tobacco, large importations of negroes were made from time to time; but many years elapsed before any accurate census either of the white or negro population of this province was taken. In none of the North American provinces did slavery prevail more extensively, or were slaves treated with greater rigor, than in this, where alone of all the provinces the existence of slavery had been prohibited by its fundamental constitutions. So vain are the enactments of legislators, without the auxiliary support of moral sentiments and general opinion. If the temptations to employ slave labor, in the infancy of a colonial settlement, overpowered even the boasted virtue of Quakers in the milder climate of Pennsylvania and New Jersey, it was vain to expect more self-denial from the idle and dissolute persons who were first transported to the torrid region of Georgia. Among other innovations on the policy of the trustees, introduced by the royal government, the original restriction on the importation of rum was removed, and vast quantities of this and other spirituous liquors were consumed by the colonists, who justified their intemperance by the plea, well or ill founded, that the universal brackishness of the water of Georgia was beneficially corrected by an infusion of ardent spirits.[4]

Collected from various parts of the world, the inhabitants of Georgia were distinguished by a great diversity of character and manners. The original emigrants from Scotland have been described as a remarkably

Oldmixon. Wynne. Hewit. Drayton. Stokes's *British Colonies*. Holmes. Smollett.

[2] In Burke's celebrated speech in the House of Commons on economical reform, in 1780, there occurs the following passage: — "Georgia, till lately, has made a very slow progress; and never did make any progress at all, until it had wholly got rid of all the regulations which the Board of Trade had moulded into its original constitution. That colony has cost the nation very great sums of money; whereas the colonies which have had the fortune of not being godfathered by the Board of Trade never cost the nation a shilling, except what has been so profusely spent in losing them. But the colony of Georgia, weak as it was, carried with it to the last hour, and carries even in its present dead, pallid visage, the perfect resemblance of its parents."

[3] Morse's *American Gazetteer*. Hewit. Stokes.

[4] Winterbotham.

moral, religious, industrious, and happy race. William Bartram, the philosophic traveller who visited Georgia in 1773, found several of these families living in the full enjoyment of rural ease and plenty, and in the practice of every kind and Christian virtue.[1] But the qualities by which the Georgians have been most generally characterized are, an indolent aversion to labor, — imported with the earliest class of planters, and promoted by the heat of the climate,[2] — the employment of negro slaves, and the copious use of spirituous liquors; an open and friendly hospitality, and an eager addiction to hunting, horse-racing, cock-fighting, pugilistic exercises, and gambling. The introduction of Methodism into America, a few years after the present period, by the exertions of Whitefield and other associates of John Wesley, exercised a salutary influence on the character of a considerable portion of this people. A great variety of religious sects or associations arose in the province prior to the American Revolution, but the majority of the inhabitants were Methodists or Presbyterians. Except Whitefield's Orphan-house, which was unfortunately destroyed by fire after large sums of money had been expended on its erection, no seminary of education arose in Georgia till after its separation from the parent state. The seat of government of the province, which was first established at Savannah, was afterwards transferred to Augusta, then to Louisville, and subsequently to Milledgeville.[3]

Surrounded by powerful Indian tribes, and sensible of the advantage of friendly relations with them, the Georgians demeaned themselves with scrupulous equity and courtesy in their transactions and intercourse with these savage neighbours. The same wise and humane policy was now pursued by the government of South Carolina, which, in the year 1752, interposed its good offices to prevent a war which was on the point of breaking out between the Creeks and the Cherokees.[4]

Among other involuntary laborers, Georgia, in common with the rest of the British colonies, received considerable importations of convicted felons from England. From the state of society in the colony, this commixture of free colonists and convicts appears to have proved remarkably injurious to both. "Georgia," says an American statistical writer, "was at one time the principal retreat of a race of men called *Crackers*, who were chiefly descended from convicts, and led a wild and vagrant life, like the Indians, with no other effects than a rifle and a blanket, and subsisting upon the deer, turkeys, and other game which the woods furnish. These migratory bands disappear, as the country is settled."[5]

[1] He celebrates their hospitality with the grateful praise which this virtue always obtains from travellers: — "The venerable gray-headed Caledonian smilingly accosted me coming up to his house, 'Welcome, stranger, come in and rest; the air is now sultry,'" &c. "Friend Bartram," said another of these settlers of Caledonian extraction to the traveller, "come under my roof, and I desire you to make my house your home, as long as convenient to yourself; remember that from this moment you are a part of my family." Among these people, the traveller adds, "I found sincerity in union with all the virtues under the influence of religion." Bartram's *Travels in Carolina, Georgia*, &c.

[2] Henry Ellis, F. R. S., and governor of Georgia, in a letter written in July, 1758, from the seat of his government to a friend in England, declares that "one cannot sit down to any thing that requires much application, but with extreme reluctance; for such is the debilitating quality of our violent heats in this season, that inexpressible languor enervates every faculty, and renders even the thought of exercising them painful." *Annual Register for* 1760.

[3] Morse. Winterbotham. See Note VI., at the end of the volume.

[4] Hewit.

[5] Warden. Wordsworth has given a fine, but, in every sense of the word, a *poetical*, description of the character and pursuits of this class of the Georgian people, in his beautiful poem, *Ruth*.

BOOK X.

PROGRESS OF THE STATES OF NORTH AMERICA, TILL THE PEACE OF PARIS, IN 1763.

CHAPTER I.

Affairs of New York. — Zenger's Trial. — Prosperous State of New England. — Controversy between Massachusetts and New Hampshire. — Intrigues for the Removal of Governor Belcher. — New England Missions. — Jonathan Edwards. — David Brainerd. — Affairs of Pennsylvania — Benjamin Franklin — George Whitefield. — Disputes respecting a military Establishment. — Discontent of the Indians. — War with France. — Louisburg — the Invasion of it projected by New England — and undertaken — Siege — and Surrender of Louisburg. — Jealousy of Britain. — Effects of the Enterprise in America. — Rebellion in Behalf of the Pretender in Britain. — Armament despatched from France against the British Colonies — discomfited.

Since the departure of Burnet from New York, the government of this province had been conducted in a manner injurious to the colonists and discreditable to the parent state. The feeble and negligent sway of Montgomery was terminated by his death, in 1731. Yet no improvement of public policy was perceptible during the succeeding year, when the government was exercised by the senior member of the council, Rip Van Dam, a substantial burgher of New York, and a well-meaning, but sluggish and heavy-minded man. In the close of the year 1732, there arrived from England, as the successor of Montgomery, Colonel William Cosby, an officer of some talent and activity, but, unfortunately, more remarkable for arbitrary principles, a haughty and imperious demeanour, a violent temper, and sordid disposition. Having borrowed a large sum of money from the counsellor, Van Dam, he endeavoured to evade repayment by instituting an unjust and absurd suit against him for recovery of all the official fees and perquisites he had received during his temporary administration of the government. [1734.] Cosby insisted that the judges of the common law tribunal of New York should determine this process, without the intervention of a jury; and when Lewis Morris, the chief justice, declared that this was not within the competence of the court, he displaced him from his office, and bestowed it on James De Lancey, who professed more subservience to the governor's will. This appointment was made by the mere authority of Cosby, without the consent of the council, which, by the provincial constitutions, was requisite to the validity of judicial commissions. In his intercourse with the assembly, Cosby conducted himself with the most lofty and offensive arrogance, and soon kindled an active spirit of jealousy and opposition among all classes of people in the province, except his own immediate dependents. To the discontents thus occasioned by domestic provocation were added a strong apprehension of external hostility, from the increasing influence of the French over the Indians. In the course of the present year, some precautions, suggested by this danger, were adopted by the New York assembly. Upwards of eleven thousand pounds was appropriated for strengthening the fortifications of New York and Albany, and purchasing presents for the Six Nations. But more wisdom, vigor, and

public spirit, than directed the provincial councils, were wanting to provide measures adequate to counteract the encroaching policy pursued by the French.

Governor Cosby continuing to supply additional cause of complaint by the insolence of his manners and the iniquity of his policy, the instrumentality of the press was employed by his opponents to inflame and propagate the resentment and jealousy which his conduct was fitted to inspire. Lewis Morris and Rip Van Dam having severally published appeals to their countrymen against his treatment of them, the success of this proceeding in animating the public indignation suggested to Zenger, a printer, the establishment of a newspaper, which he entitled *The New York Weekly Journal*, and which attracted universal attention by the boldness and freedom of its strictures on the conduct of public affairs. Cosby, provoked by an article in this journal, which contained a severe philippic on his administration, and openly declared that public liberty was endangered by his arbitrary principles and deportment, prevailed with a majority of the council to request the concurrence of the assembly in a mandate that the offensive publication should be burned in the market-place by the hands of the city hangman. The assembly having refused to comply with this request, the governor and council of themselves issued a mandate for burning the paper, which they required the executioner to perform, and the mayor and aldermen of New York personally to superintend. These magistrates declined to take part in the absurd pageant devised for the gratification of tyrannical spleen; and as even the executioner refused his presence or aid at the ceremony, it was performed by a negro slave of the sheriff amidst universal contempt and derision. Incensed, rather than instructed, by this demonstration of public feeling, Cosby and his council, assembling on the following Sunday, issued a warrant for the apprehension and imprisonment of Zenger. This proceeding was resented alike by the friends of liberty and religion, as at once an arbitrary stretch of power, and a wanton violation of the sanctity of the day. Finding it impossible either to subdue Zenger's spirit or to detain him in perpetual captivity, the governor determined to bring him to trial on a charge of libel; and the grand jury refusing to give their sanction to this charge, he directed Bradley, the attorney-general, to exhibit it in the shape of an *ex officio* information. Chambers and Smith, two lawyers of New York, who were retained by Zenger, had the courage to dispute the validity of the commissions of the judges, De Lancey and Philipse, which were granted by the governor without the approbation of the council. The judges overruled this plea; and, resenting it as a contempt of their dignity, punished its authors by a sentence which excluded them from farther exercise of their professional functions.

In this extremity, Zenger besought the aid of the most distinguished lawyer in America, Andrew Hamilton, of Philadelphia, who was for many years speaker of the assembly of Pennsylvania, and both at the bar and in the senate gained a high renown for sound learning, eloquence, integrity, and public spirit. Though now bending under the weight of years and infirmities, Hamilton cheerfully obeyed the summons to make a last exertion of his talents in behalf of American liberty; and, repairing to New York, undertook gratuitously the defence of Zenger, who, after an imprisonment of eight months, was at length brought to trial before the judges, De Lancey and Philipse, and a jury, which, in spite of the governor's artifices, was se-

lected with tolerable impartiality. The court and all its avenues were thronged with spectators, who, with generous interest and anxious expectation, awaited the issue of this notable struggle between their arbitrary ruler and their persecuted fellow-citizen. The attorney-general was preparing to adduce witnesses to show that Zenger was the publisher of the paper for which he was called in question, when Hamilton at once admitted this fact on the part of his client, and challenged the prosecutor to substantiate his charge of libel by proving the falsehood of the statements to which this epithet was applied. This the attorney-general having declined to do, Hamilton proposed to call witnesses to prove that the statements and strictures published by Zenger were true and well founded. But the court refused to entertain any such inquiry; pronouncing, in conformity with the maxims of many English judges, that, in cases of libel, it was perfectly immaterial whether the offensive publication contained truth or falsehood, and that *truth was a libel* when it tended to the discredit of the members or institutions of government. This doctrine was disputed by Hamilton, who observed that the attorney-general had stated in his information that Zenger was the author of "a certain *false*, malicious, seditious, and scandalous libel"; and requested of him that he would either explain the meaning of the word *false*, or admit that it had been erroneously introduced into the information, and suffer the record to be altered so far as to express that Zenger was the author of "a certain *true*, malicious, and seditious libel." He cited an English case in which Chief-Justice Holt required a person accused of libel to prove the truth of his statements, if he could. But the attorney-general supported his arguments by precedents of a different complexion, derived from the practice of the famous Star-chamber tribunal; and the court reiterated the maxim, that the truth of a libel could never be pleaded as a defence for the publication of it. Hamilton then addressed the jury in a speech at once elegant, forcible, and ingenious; and, with a boldness and freedom of appeal to the principles of universal sense and reason, unparalleled till many years after in the forensic eloquence of England, contended for the inviolable right of freemen to publish to their fellow-citizens every truth that concerned the general weal, and every grievance by which their common birthright of liberty was impaired or invaded.

It was doubtless true, he remarked, that the American governors were liable to be sued in the king's courts at Westminster in England for any wrongs that they might commit in the colonies; but the expense of the remedy rendered it generally, if not universally, inapplicable; and the public security against the designs of an evil governor was best promoted by the vigilance awakened by an open promulgation of the particular instances of his conduct from which such designs might be fairly inferred. It was impossible, he protested, that a jury of free and honest men would, by a verdict of guilty, affirm that charge of *falsehood* which was recorded in the information, but which the prosecutor would neither undertake to prove nor suffer the accused to disprove. In the hope of defeating the force of this argument, the chief justice recommended to the jury that they should return a special verdict, which would exonerate them from a disagreeable responsibility, and leave the question of libel to the court, to whom, he assured them, it properly belonged; yet, withal, he declared that the publication, as tending to beget an ill opinion of the government, was undoubtedly a libel. But Hamilton had cautioned the jury not to compromise their duty

by giving a special verdict; and, after a very brief deliberation, they returned a general verdict of not guilty, which was instantly affirmed and rewarded by the approving and triumphant acclamations of their fellow-citizens. Hamilton's speech on this occasion was published and circulated through all the American provinces; and the corporation of New York expressed their esteem for his character and the grateful sense they entertained of his services, by presenting him with the freedom of the city in a gold box on which the most flattering inscriptions were engraven.

The issue of Zenger's trial was very disagreeable to the partisans of royal prerogative in England and America, and was regarded by them as a dangerous triumph of popular reason and will over the authority of judicial canons and forensic pedantry.[1] Cosby's insolence sustained no abatement from his defeat; but his administration was abruptly terminated by his death in the following year. [1736.] The government of the province was now confided to George Clarke, whose character was little, if at all, more respectable than that of his predecessor,[2] and whose administration was chiefly signalized by a scheme of which the projection would have entitled him to considerable praise, if its miscarriage had not reflected disgrace on his good faith and integrity. Sensible of the error which had been committed by the provincial government, in suffering the French to build a fort at Crown Point, he deduced a project for repairing this negligence from the recent example of the trustees of Georgia, and conceived the hope of engaging a body of Scottish Highlanders to emigrate to the province and establish a settlement in the frontier territory adjacent to Lake George. A proclamation, containing the most liberal and inviting offers to Highlanders willing to undertake the occupation and culture of this district, was accordingly published at New York, and transmitted to Scotland. This overture attracted the attention of Captain Lachlan Campbell, a Scottish gentleman, brave, honorable, enterprising, and possessed of a considerable estate in the island of Isla; who forthwith repaired to New York, and inspected the territory which was tendered to emigrants from his native country. [1737.] His journey proved no less satisfactory to himself than to the neighbouring Indians, who were greatly captivated by his Highland garb, and earnestly entreated him to transplant his tribe to their vicinity. Governor Clarke gave him assurance of a grant of thirty thousand acres of land free from all charges except the expense of survey and the king's quitrent. Confiding in this assurance, Campbell returned to Scotland, sold his paternal estate, and shortly after transported, at his own expense, to New York, eighty-three Highland families, consisting of four hundred and twenty-three adults and a great number of children. But his hopes were miserably disappointed. The contract on which he thus staked his fortune, and which the public faith was pledged to fulfil, was violated with the most scandalous disregard of honor, justice, and good policy. When he applied for the stipulated grant

[1] Some remarks on Zenger's trial were published by a learned Tory lawyer in America, who pronounced Hamilton's speech a piece of legal quackery, and the Star-chamber tribunal one of the most useful and beneficial institutions that ever existed in England. This production is reprinted in Howell's *State Trials*.

[2] "It unfortunately happened for our American provinces, at the time we now treat of, that a government in any of our colonies in those parts was scarcely looked upon in any other light than that of a hospital where the favorites of the ministry might lie till they had recovered their broken fortunes; and oftentimes they served as asylums from their creditors." Wynne. Pope sarcastically remarks the policy in conformity with which a courtier,

"Who, having lost his credit, pawned his rent,
Is *therefore* fit to have a government."

of land, he was required to admit certain friends or dependents of the governor to share in the profits which he might derive from it; and indignantly spurning this rapacious and dishonorable condition, he found all his efforts to procure the completion of the grant ineffectual. Neither from the provincial assembly, nor from the English Board of Trade, was he able to obtain redress; and, after a tedious solicitation, he found it necessary, for the sake of preserving to his family a remnant of his shattered fortune, to abandon the care of his followers, and cultivate a small farm which he purchased in the province. Clarke was permitted to retain the government of New York till the year 1741, when he was succeeded by George Clinton, uncle to the Earl of Lincoln.[1]

None of the colonies had of late years enjoyed more contentment, repose, and prosperity, than Connecticut, Rhode Island, and New Jersey, — whose history, exhibiting nothing more prominent than the progress of industry and population, presents a picture neither varnished by glory nor sullied by misery or crime. [1738.] No palaces arose there to illustrate the fine conceptions of architectural taste and genius, or to proclaim the depression of the great mass of society in subservience to the exaltation of a small portion or class of its members; no wars afforded scope for the exercise of heroic valor, or sanctioned the indulgence of hatred and ferocity; and no political dissensions invited the display of public spirit, or generated party rage and factious intrigue. But if these scenes are barren of events that agitate the passions, and disclose no partial accumulations of grandeur that strike the senses, they are yet adorned with features that gratify the survey of every mind seasoned with humanity and benevolence. There was a general diffusion of those circumstances which are most favorable to the worth and welfare of the bulk of mankind. Instead of that entertaining, though fallacious, chase of pleasure, so eagerly pursued in societies where leisure and affluence abound, and of which the most notable success is to enable human beings to pass their lives in idleness without wearying, — there was a composed possession of substantial felicity derived from the liberal reward of moderate labor, and the grateful vicissitude of useful action and well earned rest. The land was generally distributed among a great number of proprietors, in portions of such extent and value as afforded a mediocrity of condition fitted to produce strong bodies and sound minds. If few persons had leisure or opportunity to attain scientific or literary distinction, and few lasting monuments of genius arose, — there was a general prevalence of that degree of knowledge which is sufficient to expand and elevate thought, to invigorate the understanding, to enlarge happiness, and fortify virtue. The earth was subdued and replenished with a hardy and happy race of men, securely and thankfully reaping the bounty of Providence in the fruits of honest industry, animated by recollections of their national and natural origin, and accustomed by their popular institutions to deliberate on public affairs, to connect social prosperity with freedom, and to accomplish their purposes by the instrumentality of those political organs by which alone the collective strength of a numerous people can be effectually combined or safely and steadily exerted. The facility of

[1] Oldmixon. W. Smith. S. Smith. Howell's *State Trials*. Proud. Wynne. The historical narrative of W. Smith stops at the commencement of Cosby's administration. A continuation, which he is supposed to have written, has never yet appeared. He declares that no prudent annalist of his own times can suffer such a composition to be made public till after his death. Herodotus, Thucydides, Xenophon, Polybius, and other great writers, thought otherwise.

attaining a plentiful estate, and the general simplicity of manners and equality of condition, excluded selfish rivalship and envy; and, rendering celibacy rare, and marriage universally and remarkably prolific, operated with strong tendency to promote the worth of character and the felicity of life. Sentiments of patriotism and independence were ardently cherished and widely diffused in a country where every man had a stake in the soil and the political institutions which united his proudest remembrance with his fondest hopes,[1] which represented his own or his parents' fortitude and success in surmounting difficulty, planting liberty, and subduing the earth, and assured a comfortable livelihood and honorable condition to his posterity. Every citizen was interested in the defence of a particular part of his country, and of a part which possessed the highest and noblest value in his estimation; and every one possessing himself a share of political right and power was interested, by regard to the security of his own portion, in resisting all invasion of the shares of his fellow-citizens. If the condition of these provinces offered little scope for romantic fancy or antiquarian retrospect, it presented to the mind a more generous gratification in the prospect of a wide and enlarging expanse of human happiness, liberty, and virtue.[2] Some ecclesiastical controversies arose during this period in Connecticut; but they were conducted without rancor, and their most notable effect was to stimulate religious inquiry, and to multiply settlements and townships by dividing congregations which had been previously united.

The war which broke out between Great Britain and Spain in 1739 extended to the American possessions of these nations. But it was in the southern British colonies that its chief influence was exerted; and in tracing the early history of Georgia, we have already remarked the share of loss and suffering that the operations of this war entailed upon the other provinces.

The prosperity enjoyed by New England was not confined to the States of Connecticut and Rhode Island. But in Massachusetts much embarrassment and injustice was occasioned by the excess and the depreciation of its paper currency; and between this province and New Hampshire there had prevailed for several years a territorial dispute, to the origin of which we have already alluded, and which in its progress excited much bitter and

[1] "The sympathy existing among fellow-citizens, from the habit of living for each other and by each other, — of connecting every thing with the good of all, — produced in republics virtues which despotic states cannot even imagine." Sismondi's *History of the Italian Republics.*

[2] "A succession of New England villages, composed of neat houses, surrounding neat school-houses and churches, adorned with gardens, meadows, and orchards, and exhibiting the universally easy circumstances of the inhabitants, is, in my opinion, one of the most delightful prospects which this world can afford. A forest changed, within a short period, into fruitful fields, covered with houses, schools, and churches, and filled with inhabitants, possessing not only the necessaries and comforts, but also the conveniences of life, and devoted to the worship of Jehovah, when seen only in prophetic vision, enraptured even the mind of Isaiah; and, when realized, can hardly fail to delight that of a spectator. At least, it may compensate the want of ancient castles, ruined abbeys, and fine pictures." Dwight's *Travels.* "There is something to me in the sight of this independence, and the enjoyments by which it is accompanied, more interesting, more congenial to the relish of nature, than in all the melancholy grandeur of the decayed castles and mouldering abbeys with which some parts of Europe are so plentifully stocked." *Idem.*

Godwin, in his *Essay on Sepulchres*, maintains that America, destitute of ancient monuments of art, must be a very uninteresting country. An opposite impression has prevailed with another great modern genius; and the sentiment of Dwight, who never beheld Europe, is thus reechoed by a writer who never beheld America: — "I feel that in America I should love modern cities and modern institutions. Nature and liberty there so fully engage the soul, that no need is felt of distant recollections. But in the old world we desiderate monuments of the past." Madame de Staël, *De L'Allemagne.*

passionate feeling, and induced a wide departure from equity and moderation on both sides. The details of this controversy, now no longer interesting, have been preserved by the historians, Hutchinson and Belknap; and it is remarkable that each of these writers, respectively, bestows the severest blame on the province of which he is the historian. Massachusetts pretended right to a larger extent of territory than her charter strictly warranted, or at least there was room for a reasonable doubt that part of the territory embraced by her actual jurisdiction was more properly included in the original titles of New Hampshire; but her pretensions were sanctioned by an order of King Charles the Second and his privy council, in the year 1677, which for more than fifty years obtained undisputed acquiescence, and in conformity with which many townships and settlements were established by the people of Massachusetts in the particular district which New Hampshire now endeavoured to reclaim.

Confident in the justice of her cause, and resenting the claim of New Hampshire as the ungrateful and presumptuous aggression of a feeble neighbour whom she had repeatedly befriended, Massachusetts adhered pertinaciously to the farthest extent of her pretensions, and rejected all compromise with a haughtiness which the issue of the controversy gave her cause to repent; while New Hampshire, irritated by what she deemed the contumelious treatment of her powerful neighbour, and intoxicated with the hope of augmenting her resources and enabling herself to support a separate executive government, pursued her claims with an eagerness in which honor and integrity were sacrificed to success. After various discussions in England and surveys in America, the controversy was at length matured for the decision of the British privy council. To this tribunal the agent for New Hampshire presented a memorial, in which he not only fortified the plea of his constituents by the most ingenious fiction and the most enterprising hypothesis, but aided it more effectually by allying the cause of New Hampshire with the jealousy and prejudice which the British court was known to entertain against Massachusetts. The basest aspersions were thrown on the ambitious and disloyal designs of "*the vast, opulent, overgrown province of Massachusetts*"; while it was represented that "*the poor, little, loyal, distressed province of New Hampshire,*" together with the king's own property and possessions, was ready to be swallowed up by the boundless rapacity of a people whose insolence was nourished by the possession of a charter. [1740.] This pleading, reinforced by private solicitation and intrigue, proved successful, even beyond the hopes of the people of New Hampshire, who gained, from the adjudication of the privy council, not only all the territory that they had ever ventured to claim, but an additional tract of country of about fourteen miles in breadth and upwards of fifty in length. Great was the rage and mortification of the people of Massachusetts, when they were apprized of this decision; but all their efforts to obtain a modification of it proved unavailing. They sustained a similar disappointment shortly after, from the issue of a territorial controversy with Rhode Island, which a compromise, ineffectually recommended by all the wise and moderate politicians of Massachusetts, might have happily prevented. The claim of Rhode Island to an insignificant territory, to which the legal pretensions of both States were equally plausible, being obstinately resisted by a majority of the Massachusetts assembly, the adjustment of the respective boundaries was referred to the British government, whose

sentence again divested Massachusetts of a much larger extent of territory than what gave rise to the dispute or was claimed by the other competitor.

In the controversy between Massachusetts and New Hampshire Governor Belcher had a difficult part to sustain. He was governor of both provinces; and endeavouring to act with the impartiality which he professed, he exposed himself to the suspicion and hostility of the more violent partisans of either cause. In Massachusetts the number of his enemies was increased by his steady resistance to the various projects which were suggested from time to time for a fallacious mitigation of the inconvenience occasioned by the state of the currency. If not his own virtue, at least the profligacy of his opponents, may be inferred from the infamous means which were employed to subvert his authority. In the year 1738, an attempt was made to accomplish this purpose by reviving the calumnious charge which Dunbar once preferred against him, of having encouraged the rioters who obstructed the execution of the acts of parliament for preservation of pine-trees. A letter, professing to be written by five of the principal rioters, and avowing that their lawless proceedings had been secretly instigated by Belcher, was addressed to Sir Charles Wager, who commanded an English fleet stationed in the American seas, in the hope that he would privately convey this important information to the English ministry. But Wager, too honorable to abet a clandestine accusation, sent a copy of the letter to Belcher, who found no difficulty in proving that it was a forgery. Yet the detection of this villany was insufficient to deter his enemies from a repetition of it, or to prevent him from falling a victim to their insidious slander and intrigue within two years after. Anonymous letters were despatched from Massachusetts and New Hampshire to the leading Dissenters in Britain, professing to be the compositions of ministers of the Independent and Presbyterian churches in America, who were deterred from signing their names by apprehensions of Belcher's vengeance, and accusing him of conspiring, with the Episcopal clergy, the subversion of the Dissenting interest in New England. Belcher had received a strict command from the king to disallow the farther issue of provincial bills of credit for a term beyond the currency of those which had already been put in circulation, of which none extended beyond the year 1741.

As this period approached, a project was devised by a party of the money-jobbers and speculators in Massachusetts for evading the royal injunction, and maintaining a supply of paper money, by the establishment of a private *land bank* on a very extensive scale; and in spite of the remonstrances of Belcher, which were seconded by all the wiser and more respectable portion of the community, this pernicious device was carried into effect in the year 1739. The country was presently deluged with the notes of this bank, for the circulation of which the most skilful and adventurous expedients of commercial artifice were adopted; and so much mischief seemed likely to ensue, that the interposition of the British government was urgently solicited by some persons of consideration in Massachusetts, and an act of parliament was passed in the present year for suppressing the bank and preventing the formation of similar establishments. [1740.] Some of the partisans of the bank, who had incurred the displeasure of Belcher by their support of it, now joined the ranks and aided the intrigues of his enemies, and, with unexampled audacity of baseness and falsehood, accused him to the British government of having privately encouraged the banking schemes.

The diligence of their machinations was quickened by the near approach of the period when all the current provincial bills of credit were to be withdrawn from circulation,—a measure which was regarded with general alarm, and which it was well known that Belcher was prepared to conduct with the most uncompromising strictness.

While the charges by which he was traduced were supported even by perjury, their efficacy was farther aided in some degree by his own rash reliance on the justice and discernment of the British court. Resting in the consciousness of his integrity, he was not sufficiently careful to approve his integrity to the judgment of those on whom his fortune depended. His conduct in office, ever since the discussion with regard to a fixed salary, was upright and disinterested in the highest degree. To his official duties he sacrificed a lucrative participation in commerce; he studied to promote the general interests of the British empire in America; and in New England he zealously labored to reconcile a faithful service to the crown with an earnest and liberal regard to the freedom, happiness, and real advantage of the people. Confiding in his merit, he despised the malice of his enemies, and was wont to say, "I know, that, while such men beset the court, I can expect no favor; but if the devil were there, I should expect justice under the British constitution, corroborated by the Hanover succession." The British ministers and the leading Dissenters in England were divided in opinion; some lending credit to the charges against Belcher, and others supporting him with unshaken confidence and approbation. At length intrigue prevailed; and Belcher was sacrificed, as Spottiswoode had previously been in Virginia, and Burnet at New York. It happened that Lord Euston, son of the Duke of Grafton, was a candidate for the honor of representing the city of Coventry in parliament. A rival candidate seeming likely to prevail, Maltby, a zealous Dissenter, who possessed great influence with the electors of Coventry, and rashly credited the assertion of Belcher's enemies, that he was conspiring to introduce a legal establishment of Episcopacy into New England, offered to the Duke of Grafton to secure Lord Euston's election, on condition that Belcher should be dismissed from his situation. The offer was accepted; Belcher was immediately recalled; and the government of Massachusetts was conferred on William Shirley, an English lawyer of respectable character and popular manners, whose capacity and temper evinced a rare concurrence of active and enterprising genius with good sense, address, and discretion. He possessed some interest at court, but had emigrated to Boston about eight years before, on account of the smallness of his fortune and the largeness of his family.

The people of New Hampshire, at the same time, obtained the gratification they so earnestly coveted, in the appointment of a separate governor for themselves; this office being now bestowed on Benning Wentworth, a popular inhabitant of the province, and the son of one of its former lieutenant-governors. [1741.] These changes proved highly grateful to both provinces. Wentworth's elevation was hailed by his fellow-citizens as "the deliverance of New Hampshire from contempt and dependence."[1] And Shirley, finding that the people of Massachusetts were not yet prepared to submit to the sacrifice of taxing themselves to pay off the bills of credit,

[1] Yet, so fickle and impatient are mankind, that, only a few years after, the people of New Hampshire, being dissatisfied with certain measures which the governor pursued in conformity with his instructions from the crown, and having vainly petitioned for his removal from office, "would gladly have dissolved the government, and put themselves under the jurisdiction of Massachusetts, had it been in their power." Belknap.

ventured to gratify them by departing from his instructions, and permitting a reissue of those bills, accompanied with certain precautionary measures for preventing the fluctuation which their value was apt to incur,—an antidote which proved very slightly, if at all, efficacious. Whether as a politic device to procure this concession, or simply from a sense of right, the Massachusetts assembly had previously voted, that, so long as Shirley retained his office, his salary should never fall short of one thousand pounds sterling *per annum*. His administration proved remarkably free from domestic controversy and the collision of political parties,—an advantage due partly to his own prudence and moderation, and in no small degree to the deference he paid to the counsels of Colonel John Stoddard, a man highly distinguished by the depth of his genius, the weight and force of his character, and the veneration which he inspired in all classes of his fellow-citizens. Belcher, meanwhile, who was so unjustly displaced, repaired to London, where he exhibited the most convincing proofs of his honor and probity, and of the base intrigues to which he had been sacrificed. But though his character was effectually vindicated, it was judged impracticable or inexpedient to restore him to office in New England. The ministers, however, promised, as some compensation for the unworthy treatment he had experienced, to confer on him another royal government in America; and, in the year 1747, he was appointed governor of New Jersey, where he presided for ten years, and closed, with his life, a respected and happy administration. Both as an individual and a magistrate, he was ever distinguished by his ardent piety, and his generous zeal for the diffusion of knowledge and the promotion of virtue.[1]

Amidst the scene of controversy and intrigue by which Massachusetts was so much disturbed and dishonored, a great deal of happiness was enjoyed in this province, and a great deal of useful talent and of admirable piety and virtue exerted. Many excellent persons, representing the oldest and most considerable Puritan families, labored with pious and patriotic ardor to promote the worth and welfare of their fellow-citizens, and both honorably illustrated and successfully propagated by their example the virtues that characterized the fathers of New England. The most distinguished of those individuals was John Stoddard, whom we have already had occasion to name, and who, preëminent alike in wisdom, probity, and public spirit, received from the universal attribution of his contemporaries the title of *a great and good man*.[2] Among other fruits which manifested that the pristine qualities and sentiments of the people of Massachusetts were preserved from decay, the efforts that were made to impart civil improvement and religious instruction to the Indians deserve a lasting and honorable commemoration. In the year 1737, the legislature of Massachusetts granted to a troop of the Housatonic Indians a settlement in the western part of the province, which obtained the name of Stockbridge, and subsequently derived a considerable accession of Indian residents from the resort of converts to Christianity gained from a great variety of tribes by the labors of the provincial missionaries. At this settlement, the most assiduous endeavours were made by benevolent individuals, aided by the public funds of the provincial community, to instruct the Indians in useful knowledge, and to educate them in habits of virtue and civility.

[1] Douglass. Trumbull. Hutchinson. Belknap. S. Smith. Dwight's *Travels*. Eliot's *Biographical Dictionary of New England*.

[2] "After him," says Dwight, in Scriptural phrase, "men spake not again."

The charitable enterprise was crowned with encouraging success; and, in addition to its happy effects upon a numerous and increasing Indian society at Stockbridge, contributed to revive the ardor of missionary zeal throughout New England, and to awaken the same spirit in other provincial communities which had hitherto been strangers to it. Now was seen, though on a smaller scale than had been anticipated by many sanguine and philanthropic promoters of American colonization, another instance of union and intercourse mutually happy and beneficial to the civilized and savage men who jointly occupied the territory of the New World, — an intercourse in which charity manifestly proved itself doubly blessed; for the efforts of the colonists to communicate the benefits of their knowledge and superiority tended even more effectually to the improvement of their own faculties and character than to the advantage of the race to which their labors were devoted. This grand and glorious conception had not yet been realized in any other portion of the British dominions in America, except New England. The Pennsylvanian Quakers treated the Indians with mildness, equity, and forbearance, disarmed their jealousy by the display of implicit confidence, and gained their friendship by liberal presents and a courteous and affectionate address. But the only advantage (and doubtless a very great one) that resulted from this policy was the peaceful establishment of the colony of Pennsylvania, — without the derivation of any benefit, temporal or spiritual, to the Indian race from the vicinity of European arts and knowledge. The government of New York occasionally lavished caresses and subsidies on its savage neighbours; but instead of attempting to alter, rather studied to promote, their roving and barbarous habits, for the purposes of commerce and of war. [1741.] New England alone had hitherto afforded the example of communities of men which steadily pursued the civil and religious improvement of the Indians as a part of their state policy, and of individual missionaries who willingly devoted their lives to this object.

The superintendence of the various measures and establishments undertaken by the people of Massachusetts for the benefit of the Indians was confided to a board denominated the Commissioners for Indian Affairs at Boston, whose pecuniary resources were derived partly from occasional grants by the provincial legislature, but chiefly from private and voluntary contributions of the colonists, aided by a religious society in Scotland. The first pastor appointed by these commissioners for the settlement at Stockbridge was John Sergeant, a native of New Jersey, and a man of excellent sense, learning, and piety, who enjoyed a ministry happy, honored, and successful, till his death in the year 1749. The highest expectations were entertained of advantage to the establishment from his successor in the pastoral office, — the celebrated Jonathan Edwards, a native of Connecticut, and afterwards president of Princeton College, in New Jersey; one of the greatest theologians and metaphysical writers of modern times, and no less distinguished among his contemporaries for the severe and awful sanctitude of his life, and his ardent zeal for the propagation of Christian knowledge and sentiment, than admired by posterity for the strength and depth of his understanding, and the grandeur, penetration, and comprehension of his genius.[1] The assumption of the pastoral care of Stockbridge by so emi-

[1] He is thus characterized by an American divine and poet: —

"From scenes obscure did Heaven its Edwards call,
That moral Newton, and that second Paul.
He, in clear view, saw sacred systems roll
Of reasoning worlds around their central soul;

nent a personage was a circumstance not less honorable to himself than to the patrons of the settlement; but the expectations that led to it were disappointed. Edwards was a man of recluse habits, contemplative disposition, and unpliable manners; more fitted to elevate the wisdom of the learned by his writings, and animate the virtue of the pious by his example, than to instruct and train a coarse, illiterate, and miscellaneous society. By all wise and good men who enjoyed opportunities of familiar converse with him he was regarded with the warmest attachment and the most earnest veneration. But notwithstanding the denial of his friends and biographers, there is reason to conclude, both from various events of his life and from the tone of many passages in his writings, that his manners, though seasoned with that rarest of human qualities, a deep and genuine humility, and solemnly graceful and pleasing, where intimacy rendered him perfectly at ease, were, in general society, so much embarrassed by involuntary reserve and formality, as to convey the impression of an austere and ungracious disposition; and that he was more plenteously endowed with sagacity to detect, and with zeal to demonstrate, the existence and inveteracy of human infirmity, than with that condescending indulgence and tender forbearance towards its victims, without which its correction is seldom, if ever, successfully undertaken. Considering the disadvantages under which he labored, it is no small praise to him, that, during the few years of his exercise of the functions of pastor at Stockbridge, the establishment did not decline. But neither did it advance; and of this the explanation, if not the apology, may perhaps be derived from the fact, that, during his residence there, he composed that grand and recondite disquisition, which he afterwards published, on the *Freedom of Human Will*, — a work which has been variously regarded as a doctrinal composition, but which no intelligent reader has ever attentively perused without a sentiment of admiration and astonishment at the strength and stretch of the human understanding. It obtained, in particular, the admiring praise of David Hume and the philosophers of his school, who eagerly sought to enlist some of the reasoning of the Christian teachers in support of their own system of infidelity. After the removal of Edwards from this situation to the presidency of Princeton College,[1] the care of Stockbridge was committed to, and successfully undertaken by, an excellent man, the son and the worthy inheritor of the name of Sergeant, the first pastor of this settlement.

While the establishment at Stockbridge was still in its infancy, a number of New England ministers, selected and supported by the Commissioners for Indian Affairs at Boston, were pursuing missionary labors among various Indian tribes. [1742.] Of these the most distinguished was a young man named David Brainerd, a native of Connecticut, who, in compliance with the solicitations which his renowned zeal and piety attracted at once from Massachusetts, Connecticut, and the Presbyterian ministers of New York

Saw love attractive every system bind,
The parent linking to each filial mind;
The end of Heaven's high works resistless showed
Creating glory, and creating good."—Dwight's *Triumph of Infidelity*.

Edwards has at length found an editor and critical commentator worthy of him, in Foster, a clergyman of the church of England, author of *The Natural History of Enthusiasm*. Yet, with much admiring respect for Mr. Foster, I think that he has far better appreciated the personal holiness and wonderful genius of Edwards, than the religious utility of Edwards's writings.

[1] He died there in 1758, and in the fifty-fifth year of his age. From his journals it appears that his researches extended to physical, as well as ethical science, and that he anticipated and prophesied those sublime investigations of the machinery of *Light*, subsequently accomplished by the genius of Herschel. He openly denounced the system of negro slavery, and urged the *immediate* manumission of all the slaves in America.

and New Jersey, commenced in this year a brief but memorable career, unsurpassed in diligence and success since the apostolic era, and unequalled, perhaps, except by the labors of Eliot and Mayhew. Of the natural abilities of Brainerd it is difficult to form any distinct or satisfactory conception, — so much was their outward lustre eclipsed by the strong absorbing influence of feelings which continually prompted him to divest his discourse of the graces of fancy and eloquence, and to manifest Christian doctrine, sentiment, and character in the most unadorned and uncompounded simplicity. Some passages of his celebrated journal display great depth and force of thought; but it was observed of him in general, that "his discourse seemed to issue mainly from his heart; and he rather talked religion than talked about it." Throughout his short life he labored under a hypochondriacal malady, which clouded his soul with melancholy and dejection, but was never able to relax his diligence or shake his conviction of the certain, however invisible, fruit of his labors. With unwearied patience he pursued his missionary exertions among the various Indian tribes adjacent to the colonies of Connecticut, Delaware, Pennsylvania, New Jersey, and New York. Driven from station to station by the opposition of some of his Indian auditors, which was frequently excited by the artifices, as well as promoted by the vicious example, of European traders who assumed the title of Christians, — at every place where he resided, he built with his own hands a dwelling-house for himself; and, for the more effectual instruction of the savages, accommodated his style of life to a model of as much simplicity as was consistent with the civilized manners to which he desired to lead them. His success at length was astonishing, and was more especially manifested among the Indians of the Six Nations, who were peculiarly exposed to a counteracting influence both from the example of the European traders from New York, who resorted for commercial purposes among them, and from the intrigues of some of those traders, who regarded with fear and aversion every attempt to civilize or instruct the Indians. Solemn, yet affectionate, in his address; humble, yet earnest and indefatigable; filled with zeal and charity; and indulgent to every body except himself, — Brainerd excited among his auditors a mixture of tenderness and veneration; and inducing numerous Indian converts to adopt the manners which he exemplified, as well as the faith which he inculcated, completely falsified the common theory, that mankind must be morally civilized before they can be religiously converted, — by demonstrating that Christian instruction is the most effectual and comprehensive instrument of civilization. Exhausted by constitutional disease, and by the intensity of his missionary toil, Brainerd died in the year 1747, while yet in the bloom of youth; but, if temporal fame (which he was very far from affecting) may be permitted to mingle with our conceptions of the meed of such labors as his, he had first achieved a renown that amply compensated for the shortness of his life. The efficacy of his exertions was promoted and extended by the missionary operations which now began to proceed from the Moravian establishments that were formed in Pennsylvania.[1]

During the administration of Governor Gordon, Pennsylvania enjoyed uninterrupted repose and prosperity. Internal dissensions were repressed by the prudence and moderation of the governor, aided by the concurrence

[1] Douglass. W. Smith. Holmes. Hawksley's and Hopkins's *Memoirs of President Edwards*. Brainerd's *Journal*. Edwards's *Observations on the Life of Brainerd*. Dwight's *Travels*. Loskiel. See Note VII., at the end of the volume.

of favorable circumstances, and not a little by the wise counsels, the popular virtues, and persuasive eloquence of Andrew Hamilton (whom we have already had occasion to notice), for many years speaker of the provincial assembly. Gordon, dying in 1736, was succeeded two years after by Thomas, a man of resolution and integrity, and whose administration at first gave universal satisfaction. The venerable Hamilton, on retiring from public life in 1739, expressed a generous exultation in contemplating the happy condition of his countrymen. With paternal solicitude, he reminded them that a state of liberty and harmony was no less a blessing than a virtue, and that the exercise of mutual charity and forbearance was essential to its preservation; cautioning them to avoid the faction and animosity that had once disturbed their public councils, "as a rock, which, if not escaped, the constitution of this province will, at some time or other, infallibly split upon." A still more distinguished actor on the stage of provincial politics, and afterwards in scenes of greater interest and renown, had recently appeared in the person of Benjamin Franklin, a native of Boston, but now a printer in Philadelphia, and since the year 1735 clerk to the assembly at Pennsylvania, and postmaster of the province;—the last of which appointments he owed to the discernment of Colonel Spottiswoode, formerly governor of Virginia, and afterwards postmaster-general of America. His father was a soap-boiler and tallow-chandler in Massachusetts, whither he had emigrated on account of his Puritan principles, some years prior to the British Revolution. From his earliest youth, Franklin cherished a passion for reading, and for the achievement of *nature's chief masterpiece* (as it has been termed), the art of writing well. He enlarged his scanty access to books by the practice of the strictest temperance and economy; and turned the narrowness of the literary field to which he was confined into an actual advantage, by the diligence with which he cultivated and appropriated the farthest extent of its resources. His amplitude of mind, united with his ceaseless industry, vigor, and dexterity, qualified him to advance the boundaries of science, and to embrace and conduct the most extended schemes of national policy; yet his genius, not less pliant than powerful, could stoop to the humblest sphere of practical good, and regulate with admirable prudence and skill the economy of a city library, a provincial school, a tradesmen's club, or an insurance office. Industry and frugality were promoted among his townsmen by his personal example, and recommended throughout the province by the forcible and sagacious disquisitions which he composed and published. No man ever possessed in a higher degree the art of rendering the observations of science subservient to purposes of immediate practical utility. His writings are justly admired for a plain popularity and sinewy simplicity of style, for the easy vigor with which conceptions the most enlarged and profound are developed, for operative good sense and philanthropy, for humorous *Socratic* irony, and for the art of arguing *to the prudence and self-love* of mankind. His readers are constantly reminded of the benefit that will result from minute frugality,[1] and taught to consider a parsimonious thrift not merely as a virtue of the highest order, but as the foundation of all that is honorable, upright, and praiseworthy in human conduct and behaviour. The accommodations of domestic life and the simplicity and efficacy of municipal institutions were improved by his inventive genius; and literary and philosophical establishments were founded and promoted by his ardor, authority, and address. In the year 1739, an influence still nobler

[1] See Note VIII., at the end of the volume.

and more benign was exerted on the Pennsylvanians by the ministry of George Whitefield, the pupil and associate of Wesley, who resided for some time in the province, and on subsequent occasions repeated his visits to it. "It was wonderful," says Franklin, who, in attesting Whitefield's success, was biased by no partiality for his doctrines, "to see the change soon made in the manners of our inhabitants. From being thoughtless or indifferent about religion, it seemed as if all the world were growing religious; so that one could not walk through the town in an evening, without hearing psalms sung in different families of every street."

But the state of repose which Pennsylvania had enjoyed for some time was now drawing to a close; and the plentiful confluence of strangers to this province, which attested and promoted its prosperity, prepared also the materials of internal discord and altercation. The Quakers still possessed the command of the assembly, and by their wealth and influence were enabled to engross the principal offices of government. A majority of the inhabitants, notwithstanding, belonged to other religious persuasions, and dissented so completely from the Quaker system of policy, especially in relation to the duty and legitimacy of provisions for national defence, that only a fit occasion was wanting to manifest the discordance of the views and opinions by which the colonists were divided. In all the other royal and proprietary governments of North America the duration of the representative assemblies was triennial or septennial.[1] In Pennsylvania it was annual; and the recommendation of this democratic peculiarity, together with the lenity of the provincial taxes, and the economical and even parsimonious principles which regulated the salaries of office and every other expenditure of public money, had attracted thither, among other emigrants, a great number of persons habituated to political deliberations, and eager to administer, as well as to enjoy, the institutions and policy of a popular government. The Pennsylvanian Quakers, as we have already seen, from a pretty early period regarded with uneasiness the increasing concourse of strangers differing from them in religious persuasion; from which they apprehended a preponderance of other sentiments than theirs in the public councils, and finally, perhaps, an entire eradication of all that tincture of Quaker principle which they had infused into the provincial policy and administration. On one occasion, to which we have already adverted, they made an essay to obstruct the resort of such emigrants as a small tax was sufficient to repel; — well aware of the facility with which industrious poverty could mount to a competent estate and the attainment of political franchises in Pennsylvania. The Quakers still formed the aristocracy of the country, and preserved their original ascendency over the deliberations of the assembly; but a jealousy had taken root, and continued silently to grow, between the Quaker, or, as it was now termed, *the old interest* in the province, and the younger, less weighty, but more crescent and vigorous party, that was formed by those planters who, disowning Quakerism as religious doctrine, submitted with reluctance to the imposition of its precepts and restrictions as municipal and political ordinances.

The efforts of wise and good men, more attached to the province than to

[1] An act of the assembly of New York, in the year 1743, commences with the following preamble: — "Whereas, by an act passed in the first year of the reign of his late Majesty, of glorious memory, parliaments in Great Britain may respectively have continuance for the term of seven years and no longer; and whereas the general assembly of this, his Majesty's loyal colony, conceive it their duty, as it is their inclination, to copy after so wise an example," &c. *Laws of New York.*

any particular party, were successfully employed for some years to moderate this jealousy and repress its effusions; but the war which broke forth between England and Spain, in 1739, contributed signally to enhance and develope its utmost virulence. The Quakers had strained their pacific principles as far, at least, as the cover of a decent veil could extend, in order to reconcile their retention of political power with their submission to the military views and requisitions of the parent state. We have seen them refuse to give money which was expressly demanded for warlike purposes, and yet part with it immediately after, under the cover of a *present* to the king, — for whose misuse of the instrument thus confided to his hands they reckoned themselves by no means responsible, as being totally unable, in the blindness of their innocence, to conjecture. In the conclusion of the last war, after a long and stubborn contest in the assembly, a portion of the public funds was expressly appropriated to the construction of a redoubt for the protection of the shipping of Philadelphia against hostile privateers; and some vessels belonging to Quakers having been captured while the redoubt was building, it was remarked that several members of the Quaker society were particularly active in forwarding its completion, and procuring the establishment of a subsidiary magazine of gunpowder. This conduct certainly contributed neither to promote the prevalence of Quaker theory, nor to reconcile the other inhabitants of Pennsylvania to its ostentatious predominance, united with its practical dereliction. Governor Thomas, who was a stranger to the refinements of casuistry, gave high offence to the predominant party in the assembly, by strongly recommending the enactment of a law for embodying a provincial militia, and by encouraging, meanwhile, the enlistment of poor European emigrants who had been transported to the province as indented servants of the more wealthy planters. After long debates, the assembly refused to sanction the proposed militia law; and having warmly complained of the practice of enlisting indented servants, voted an ample indemnification to all the colonists whose servants were thus withdrawn from them.

This result excited a great deal of disgust in the minds of all the Pennsylvanians who were not votaries of Quakerism; and, from the struggle that arose between the two parties to increase their political power, the elections to the assembly, in the present year, were disgraced by much tumult and violence. It is asserted by a Quaker historian, and seems consistent with probability, that, in this competition between superior wealth and numerical strength, it was the party to which the latter distinction belonged that promoted tumultuary and riotous proceedings. So greatly were the Quakers now outnumbered by the dissenters from Quakerism, that the continued legislative ascendency of the *old interest* was maintained by the mixed influence of the wealth of its representatives, their general respectability, a tolerable degree of union among themselves, and a habitual deference entertained by many persons for their long prevalent authority, — added to the national and sectarian varieties by which the other inhabitants were divided. The governor vainly endeavoured to alter the determination expressed by the majority of the provincial assembly, and displaced from office a number of magistrates who particularly distinguished themselves by opposition to his wishes.[1] Finding, however, that the assembly was inflexible, he address-

[1] One of these magistrates was John Wright, a zealous and eminent Quaker, who, on surrendering his magisterial functions, addressed the grand jury of the county to which he belonged in an oration of considerable length, which has been preserved by the historian Proud. In

ed himself to the inhabitants at large; and, assisted by the powerful pen of Franklin, who heartily espoused his views, urged the people to take arms and form themselves into regiments for the defence and security of their country. Several of the Quakers themselves openly asserted the lawfulness of defensive war; and when, in compliance with the governor's recommendations, the project of forming provincial regiments and purchasing artillery was discussed in various commercial societies of the inhabitants, a considerable number of the Quaker members of these societies absented themselves from the debate, and privately encouraged their less scrupulous associates to apply the common funds to the support of a provincial armament.[1] The wishes of the governor and the arguments of Franklin were so cordially seconded by the spirit of the great bulk of the people, that ultimately a provincial militia[2] was embodied and supported by an act of popular will directly opposed to the sentiments and declarations of the provincial legislature. [1743.] There was thus exhibited in Pennsylvania the extraordinary spectacle of a martial force assembled for the protection of the state, without the consent of the legislature; of a government defended by a military establishment which it disowned and professed to disapprove.

This state of matters could not endure for many years in a province of the British empire, and manifestly betokened the decline and fall of the political predominance of Quakerism in Pennsylvania. The covert accession to war, which had already been repeatedly extorted from the Quakers, might have convinced them of the impossibility of reconciling the purity of their sectarian principles with the administration of political power in a mixed society; and in the example of the Moravians, who were now established in considerable numbers in the province, and who, professing the same mild and pacific tenets with the Quakers, forbore to discredit them by employing negro slaves, or to endanger them by arrogating power or control beyond the bounds of their own religious society, they might have beheld a more genuine portraiture of practical Quakerism than was ever before represented in Pennsylvania.

The quiet of the province was about this time still farther disturbed by a series of disputes between the colonists and Thomas Penn, the youngest of the proprietaries, who acquired soon after, by the death of his brother John, the principal share of the proprietary dignity and interest; and whose selfish policy and ungracious manners were resented (says the historian Proud) with a disproportioned warmth of animosity, which tended rather to harden than

this speech he rather incorrectly ascribed his dismission from office not to his defence of Quaker principles, but to his zeal for "the system of English liberty," — a system which he recommended to the esteem of his auditors, in strains alike unsuitable to his circumstances and his principles, by reminding them of "the *blood* and treasure which have been spent in defence of it." Thus simply and beautifully he closed the discourse: — "And now, to conclude, I take my leave in the words of a judge in Israel: *Here I am, witness against me. Whom have I defrauded? whom have I oppressed? or of whose hands have I received any bribe, to blind my eyes therewith? and I will restore it.* May the Prince of Peace, who is the King of kings, protect the people of this province from domestic foes and foreign enemies! is my heart's desire. And so I bid you all farewell."

[1] "I estimated the proportion of Quakers *sincerely against defence* as one to twenty-one only." Franklin. It was the opinion of Franklin, that the American Quakers in general were deterred from openly sanctioning defensive war only by a punctilious hesitation to renounce opinions that had been published by the founders of Quakerism. In the writings of various American Quakers it is acknowledged that the majority of their society were desirous of avoiding all discussion of this subject, and willing, under color of taxation for municipal purposes, to contribute to the support of a military establishment.

[2] Franklin was elected colonel of the Philadelphia regiment; but he declined this honor, and served as a private soldier.

to correct the illiberality of his disposition. How far this writer — not a little perplexed, as he frequently appears to be, between his attachment to the Quakers and his reverence for the family of Penn — meant to include in his censure the Quaker colonists of Pennsylvania cannot now be ascertained; though a strong inference that the Quakers had especially incurred the proprietary's resentment may be derived from the fact, that they were shortly after excluded from every office connected with the administration of his interest and authority.

Another cause of uneasiness, which, though generally disregarded by the inhabitants of Pennsylvania, yet excited the apprehensions of reflective men, was supplied by the manifest alteration that had taken place in the sentiments with which the colonists and the provincial government were regarded by the Indians. Some partisans of the Quakers, in alluding to this circumstance, have more eagerly than successfully attempted an explanation of it redounding to the credit of those sectaries, by connecting it with the undeniable facts, that the Indians, among other complaints, asserted that they were unjustly deprived of lands which had never been fairly purchased from them; that no such acquisitions were or could be made, except by the agents of the proprietary; and that the Quakers about this time were excluded from all share in that agency. The explanatory plea, so flattering to the Quakers, which is inferred from these considerations, though exaggerated in its application, is entitled to some respect: for, though the Quakers were by no means entirely blameless in their intercourse with the Indians, yet, undoubtedly, they succeeded in gaining their good-will more effectually than any other class of the Pennsylvanian colonists, before the arrival of the Moravians. But, for a long series of years, a number of circumstances, less consistent with the claims of the Quakers to exclusive or superior virtue, had contributed to create and increase alienation between the Indians and the people of this province. It is admitted, even by Quaker writers, that, for several years prior to this period, the Indian tribes were treated with a neglect [1] which they naturally contrasted with the civilities and largesses of the emissaries despatched among them by the French; who urged them to consider if their total annihilation was not manifestly portended by the rapid advances of every English colony, and might not be averted by the friendship and assistance of France. The agents of the French protested that this people sought for nothing but advantageous commercial stations in America, and, without desiring to enlarge their settlements, were willing to depend for subsistence principally on supplies derived from their own parent state. But the most serious complaint preferred by the Indians was directed against the abuse and iniquity of the commerce between the two races of people. We have seen, that, at a very early period, even William Penn found it impossible to obtain from an assembly, of which a great majority were professed Quakers, any salutary regulation of the traffic between the colonists and the Indians; and it will the less move our wonder to find that little regard was paid to a message of Governor Thomas to the Pennsylva-

[1] This neglect may be in part referred to circumstances which Franklin has detailed in his *Historical Review of the Constitution of Pennsylvania*. The colonists had become impatient of the frequent treaties with the Indians, which were chiefly intended to promote the interest of the proprietaries. On these occasions, presents derived from provincial taxes, to which the proprietaries did not contribute, were made to the Indians, who, in return, renewed their ancient protestations of friendship to the colonists, and made additional grants of land, which were added to the estates of the proprietaries.

nian assembly, in the year 1744,[1] declaratory of his apprehension, that the manner in which the Indian trade was ordinarily conducted would speedily involve the colonists "in some fatal quarrel with the Indians." The likelihood of such a quarrel was increased by the increasing prevalence of inebriety among the Indians; by the sordid eagerness with which the provincial traders ministered to this pernicious habit, and promoted its indulgence; and by the fixed resentment with which reflection and experience taught the Indians to regard the insidious temptation they were unable to resist, but the effect of which they plainly perceived was to render their property the prey of the most unequal bargains, and to propagate diseases among them by which their bodies were debilitated and their lives abridged.[2] It would have been very difficult for the Pennsylvanian assembly to provide an entire and adequate remedy of the abuses of the Indian trade. Unfortunately, a just sense of the danger and the moral turpitude of these abuses was wanting in this body, and the remedial measures which it occasionally adopted were feeble, partial, and totally inefficient. An additional circumstance, differently related by different writers, served to inflame the animosity between the European and the aboriginal occupants of Pennsylvania. A chief of the Delaware Indians, having killed, either maliciously or accidentally, a colonist of New Jersey, to whom he had been attached by the strongest bonds of private friendship, lamented the unhappy deed with a passionate warmth of self-reproach, which, justly or erroneously, was interpreted into a confession of premeditated guilt. In spite of the remonstrances of the Indians, the guilty or unfortunate chief was capitally punished by the sentence of a New Jersey judicature, which the Indians in general exclaimed against as an act of deliberate murder, and a heinous affront to their race; and for which they continually, but ineffectually, demanded atonement from the governments of New Jersey and Pennsylvania.[3]

The war that had prevailed for several years between Britain and Spain

[1] This year, Arthur Dobbs, of New England, who had promoted various enterprises for the discovery of a north-west passage to India, made another attempt for the same purpose, in which he was aided by several noblemen and persons of distinction in England. As an encouragement to such adventures, the British parliament offered a reward of twenty thousand pounds to the persons who might first accomplish this discovery. Holmes.

[2] Though the Indians expressed much disapprobation of the conduct of those who furnished them with ardent spirits, they were not the less exasperated when this fatal commodity was withheld from them. Of this an instance occurs in Franklin's account of a treaty with the Indians, which he and other commissioners were deputed to conduct by the Pennsylvanian assembly. "The Great Spirit," said one of the Indian orators, "who made all things, made every thing for some use; and whatever use he designed any thing for, that use it should always be put to. Now, when he made rum, he said, *Let it be for the Indians to get drunk with;* and it must be so." "Indeed," Franklin adds, "if it be the design of Providence to extirpate these savages, in order to make room for the cultivators of the earth, it seems not impossible that rum may be the appointed means." Franklin's *Memoirs.*

[3] S. Smith. *History of New Jersey.* Proud. Franklin's *Memoirs.* Kalm's *Travels.* Loskiel. Proud's historical narrative terminates at this epoch. The remainder of his work contains nothing farther than a catalogue of governors, and a statistical account of Pennsylvania prior to the year 1770. It would have been impossible for him to relate the disputes that ensued between the proprietaries and the colonists in a manner satisfactory to all his predilections. The American Revolution was a subject no less perplexing to him. Some allusions to this great struggle occur in the close of his work, and plainly prove that the principles of the Quaker prevailed with him over the sentiments of the patriot. He denounces the revolt of the colonists as one of those convulsive maladies which a plethory of happiness is apt to generate in collective life; and predicts that its result will be the downfall of virtue, happiness, and liberty in America. His work, though composed during the Revolutionary War, was not published till 1797; and yet he suffered these expressions to remain uncancelled. In his preface, which bears the date of 1797, no allusion is made to the patriots of the Revolution; and none but Quakers are commemorated as benefactors of Pennsylvania.

inflicted upon the greater number of the British provinces of America no farther share of its evils than the burden of contributing to the expeditions of Admiral Vernon, and the waste of life by which his disastrous naval campaigns were signalized. Only South Carolina and Georgia had been exposed to actual attack and danger. But this year, by an enlargement of the hostile relations of the parent state, the scene of war was extended to the more northern provinces. The French, though professing peace with Britain, had repeatedly given assistance to Spain; while the British king, as Elector of Hanover, had espoused the quarrel of the emperor of Germany with the French monarch: and after various mutual threats and demonstrations of hostility that consequently ensued between Britain and France, war was now formally declared by these states against each other. The French colonists in America, having been apprized of this event before it was known in New England, were tempted to improve the advantage of their prior intelligence by an instant and unexpected commencement of hostilities, which accordingly broke forth without notice or delay in the quarter of Nova Scotia. This province had been alternately claimed and possessed by the English and French for more than a century. Since the peace of Utrecht, it had acknowledged subjection to the crown of Britain; and the French inhabitants, devoted to the interests of France, and implicitly directed by their priests, who exercised a sort of patriarchal government over them, were yet retained in submission, partly by the dread of seeing the dikes destroyed which they had erected to prevent the sea from overflowing their fields, and partly by a British garrison at Annapolis, where a governor and council resided. The Indian tribes that inhabited the territory maintained their native independence, though they were attached to the French by the ties of common faith, as well as by ancient friendship and connection. On the island of Canso, adjoining the coast of Nova Scotia, the British had formed a settlement, which was resorted to by the fishermen of New England, and defended by a small fortification garrisoned by a detachment of troops from Annapolis. The island of Cape Breton was possessed by the French, and lay between the settlements of the English in Canso and Newfoundland. There was manifest danger and impolicy in such intermixture and relative position of the settlements of rival nations, who had long disgraced their superior genius and civilization by cherishing the barbarous and impious notion that they were *the natural enemies* of each other. Their close vicinity in this quarter of America was rendered the more dangerous by the keen competition that prevailed between them for the appropriation of the principal share in the adjacent fisheries. Duquesnel, the governor of Cape Breton, on receiving intelligence of the declaration of war between the two parent states, conceived the hope of destroying the fishing establishments of the English by the suddenness and vigor of an unexpected attack. His first blow, which was aimed at Canso, proved successful. [May 13, 1744.] Duvivier, whom he despatched from his head-quarters at Louisburg, with a few armed vessels and a force of nine hundred men, took unresisted possession of this island, burned the fort and houses, and made prisoners of the garrison and inhabitants. This success Duquesnel endeavoured to follow up by the conquest of Placentia in Newfoundland, and of Annapolis in Nova Scotia; but at both these places his forces were repulsed. In the attack of Annapolis, the French were joined by the Indians of Nova Scotia; but the prudent forecast of Shirley, the

governor of Massachusetts, had induced the assembly of this province, some time before, to contribute a reinforcement of two hundred men for the greater security of the garrison of Annapolis; and to the opportune arrival of the succour thus afforded the preservation of the place was ascribed.

The conduct of the French exposed them, and most justly, to the charge of rashness and precipitation. By the impetuosity of their commencement, and the extensive scheme of operations which they attempted to pursue, while yet unprepared with a force nearly adequate to sustain it, they prematurely disclosed designs calculated to awaken the utmost alarm in New England, and to rouse this powerful and provoked rival to a proportioned stretch and vigor of hostile reaction, which her condition and resources were much better fitted to support. In effect, the people of New England were stimulated to a pitch of resentment, apprehension, and martial energy, that very shortly produced an effort of which neither their friends nor their enemies had supposed them to be capable, and which excited the admiration of both Europe and America. Measures were promptly adopted, in the first instance, by the governments of Massachusetts and New Hampshire to guard their frontiers from the expected incursions of the French and of the Indian allies of France in Canada. War was declared against the Indians of Nova Scotia, who had assisted in the attack upon Annapolis; all the frontier garrisons were reinforced; new forts were erected; and the materials of defence were enlarged by a seasonable gift of artillery from the king. Meanwhile, though the French were not prepared to prosecute the extensive plan of conquest which their first operations announced, their privateers actively waged a harassing naval warfare that greatly endamaged the commerce of New England. The British fisheries on the coast of Nova Scotia were interrupted; the fishermen declared their intention of returning no more to their wonted stations on that coast; and so many merchant-vessels were captured and carried into Louisburg in the course of this summer, that it was expected that in the following year no branch of maritime trade would be pursued by the New England merchants, except under the protection of convoy.

Aroused by circumstances and prospects so fraught with injury and menace, the national genius of New England began fully to awaken; and that determined, adventurous, and yet deliberate spirit by which the first colonists of this region were distinguished was now developed among their descendants with an ardor and lustre worthy of their lineage. In the close of this year, it was the general sentiment of the people of Massachusetts that *Louisburg must be subdued*; but there prevailed at first almost as generally the impression that the united force of all the British colonies was inadequate to an undertaking of so much magnitude and difficulty, without assistance from the parent state. The town of Louisburg was built by the French on the island of Cape Breton, soon after the peace of Utrecht. It was designed for the security of the French shipping and fisheries, and fortified with a rampart of stone thirty-six feet in height, and a ditch eighty feet in width. There were six bastions and three batteries, containing embrasures for one hundred and forty-eight pieces of cannon, of which sixty-five were mounted, and sixteen mortars. On an island at the entrance of the harbour was planted a battery of thirty cannons carrying shot of the weight of twenty-eight pounds; and at the bottom of the harbour, directly opposite to the entrance, was the grand or royal battery, containing twenty-

eight cannons that carried balls of forty-two pounds, and two of smaller dimensions. The entrance of the town, on the land side, was at the west gate, across a drawbridge, near to which was a circular battery, mounting sixteen guns that carried shot of twenty-four pounds. Twenty-five years had been spent in building these works, which, though still uncompleted, had cost France at least thirty millions of livres. The place was deemed so strong as to be impregnable except by blockade, and was styled by some *the Dunkirk*, and by others *the Gibraltar of America*. In peace, it afforded a safe and convenient retreat for the ships of France homeward bound from the East and West Indies; and in war, it formed a source of distress and annoyance to the northern English colonies, by harbouring the numerous privateers which infested their coasts for the destruction of their fishery and the interruption of their general commerce. It manifestly tended, besides, to facilitate the reacquisition of Nova Scotia by France, — an event which would cause an instant and formidable increase in the numerical strength of the enemies of the British crown and people. The reduction of Louisburg was, for these reasons, an object of ardent desire and of the highest importance to New England.

In the autumn of this year, Governor Shirley of Massachusetts, impressed with the interest and eager to second the wish and spirit of his people, addressed himself to the British ministry, soliciting assistance for the preservation of Nova Scotia and the acquisition of Cape Breton. But before any answer was returned to his application, the rising ardor of the colonists and the spirited counsels of some leading characters among them, with whom he was wont to advise, inspired his genius with the design of attempting this important conquest with the forces of New England alone. In the commencement of winter, a bold surmise began to circulate and be rumored in Massachusetts, that Louisburg, however strongly fortified, might now be surprised and taken by a sudden attack, of which the efficacy would be aided by the severity of the season. This effusion of popular spirit, though entirely disregarded by many sensible and considerate persons, did not escape the more sagacious appreciation of Shirley and others, by whom it was justly recognized as the indication of that heroic confidence which prognosticates as well as presupposes victory, — facilitating the achievement of the purposes which it inspires, and enlarging the limits of prudence and possibility to the resolute and the brave. Various individuals have been particularized as candidates for the honor of having first suggested to Shirley a plan for the immediate attack of Louisburg, or at least afforded him the earliest aid in composing and maturing it. Among the persons with whom he took counsel on this subject were Benning Wentworth, the governor of New Hampshire, who, entertaining a high opinion of Shirley's honor and capacity, was implicitly guided by his directions in the administration of his own provincial command; and William Vaughan, the son of a former lieutenant-governor of the same province, a man remarkably daring in his temper, and no less tenacious of his purpose, and whose zealous patriotism on this occasion made amends for the errors of his father, and restored the lustre of an honorable name. Shirley, aided by the partners of his counsels, made the most diligent inquiries of all persons who had ever been at Louisburg, either as traders or as prisoners, respecting the actual condition of the garrison and fortifications, the usual periods of the arrival of supplies from Europe, and the practicability of cruising off the harbour; and received

such information as encouraged the hope, that, even if an attempt to surprise the place should prove abortive, it would be compelled to yield to the continued onset of a vigorous siege, before reinforcements could arrive from France.

Among other circumstances propitious to a speedy attack, Duquesnel, the governor of Cape Breton, unexpectedly died, and was succeeded by Duchambon, an aged officer of inferior and very narrow capacity; Duvivier, a man of spirit and activity, had sailed for Europe; and some New England colonists, recently liberated from captivity at Louisburg, reported that the object of his voyage was to solicit immediate succour from France, and that the stores of the garrison, meanwhile, were scanty, the troops discontented and mutinous, and the works in some places mouldering and decayed. Animated by the result of their inquiries, Shirley and his friends proceeded with vigor and secrecy to frame the plan of an expedition; in conformity with which a land force of four thousand men was to be conveyed in small transports to Canso, and thence, on the first favorable opportunity, to advance to Chapeau-rouge Bay, with cannon, mortars, and all the stores and ammunition requisite for a siege; while, to prevent the arrival of supplies to the hostile garrison, sundry vessels were to cruise off the harbour of Louisburg as soon as the state of the season would permit. An estimate was made of all the naval force that could be collected in Massachusetts and the neighbouring colonies; and though the armed vessels were few, and the largest carried no more than twenty guns, it was considered that a reasonable prospect of success might be derived from the coöperation of this maritime armament with the land troops. But the most sanguine hopes were indulged of the opportune arrival of an auxiliary force from Britain, in compliance with the recent application of Shirley; or, at least, that Commodore Warren, who was cruising with a fleet off the Leeward Islands, might be prevailed on to detach some of his vessels to join the expedition. With such aid, it was concluded that the reduction of Louisburg might be expected.

It was now the commencement of that memorable year [1745] during which the centre of the British empire was shaken and desolated by the last rebellious effort of the partisans of the Pretender to overthrow the government that had subsisted since the Revolution. Vainly agitating a title repudiated by reason, extinguished by time, and formidable only to the gallant or desperate visionaries by whom it was recognized, Charles Edward Stuart, with a handful of men, contrived to rush through Scotland and reach in mad career the centre of England, before flight and discomfiture terminated an enterprise less dangerous than disgraceful to the established government of Britain. In a distant extremity of the empire, the year was illustrated by events more honorable to the British name, and the possessions and renown of the parent state were enlarged by a conquest, for which she was principally indebted to the enterprising bravery of her American progeny. To the General Court of Massachusetts, consisting of the provincial council and the representatives, assembled at Boston in the beginning of this year [January, 1745], Governor Shirley conveyed a message, acquainting them that he was prepared to communicate a matter of the utmost importance, but of such a nature that the disclosure of it to the public at large, before it had undergone the fullest consideration of the legislature, might be detrimental to the general interest; and desiring that they would therefore

consent to receive it under the seal of an oath of secrecy, engaging that it should not publicly transpire without the express authorization of both houses. The Court without the slightest scruple acceded to this extraordinary request;[1] and Shirley thereupon communicated the plan that was formed for the invasion of Cape Breton, together with the result of the inquiries in which he had been engaged, and the reasons from which he inferred the likelihood of a successful issue to the enterprise. Nothing could exceed the amazement with which a great part of the assembly received the proposal of this adventurous design; by some of the members it was at once condemned as chimerical and extravagant; and with the majority the prevailing sentiment was, that, even although a hope of success might not unreasonably be indulged, the magnitude and expense of the effort would prove ruinous to the province. Yet, in professed deference to the recommendation of the governor, and perhaps also from real perplexity, occasioned by a struggle between adventurous spirit and considerate prudence, an ample and leisurely deliberation of the project was appointed; and for several days it was pondered and discussed with the most earnest attention and no small difference of opinion.

By the partisans of the measure it was urged, that Louisburg, while it remained in the possession of the French, would prove a perpetual scourge to the fisheries and commerce of New England; that the actual condition of the place seemed propitious to an immediate assault, while the delay of a single year would enable the government of France to render it utterly impregnable; that, considering the present advanced period of the year, it was unlikely that any French ships of war would be despatched to Louisburg before the fate of the enterprise was decided, and that, if only one should arrive, the flotilla accompanying the besiegers would be sufficient to overpower her; but that, on the other hand, it was highly probable that the forces of New England would be strengthened by the arrival and coöperation of a naval armament from Britain or the West Indies. In war it was admitted that there must always be uncertainty; but the chance here was worth the stake; for, if the attempt should fail, the province was strong enough to sustain the weight of its evil fortune; while a successful issue would not only free the coast of New England from molestation, but signally promote the glory and advantage of Britain, give peace, perhaps, to Europe, and doubtless procure from British justice a complete reimbursement of the charges of the adventure. To these arguments it was replied by the opposers of the scheme, that it was better to endure the pillage and diminution of the provincial trade, than to risk its destruction by the expense and the failure of so vast an enterprise; that the garrison of Louisburg consisted of regular troops, whose discipline would compensate their numerical inferiority, and who in the field

[1] "The secret," says Belknap, "was kept for some days; till an honest member, who performed the family devotion at his lodgings, inadvertently discovered it, by praying for a blessing on the attempt."

Of the origin and motives of the expedition the following account was afterwards published in England by Josiah Tucker, the celebrated Dean of Gloucester, a man whose rare sagacity and penetration did not prevent him from being transported into the most egregious folly by passion and prejudice:—"The leading men in the government of Massachusetts, having been guilty of certain malpractices, for which they were in danger of being called to an account, projected the expedition against Cape Breton in order to divert the storm." With equal sincerity and absurdity, he adds,—"I build nothing upon this statement; and I only offer it (because not corroborated by sufficient evidence) as a probable case, and as my own opinion." Tucker's *Humble and Earnest Address*, &c., Postscript.

would find no difficulty in overpowering the inexperienced militia of New England; that it was impossible to rely on the accounts that were given of the decayed state of the fortifications of Louisburg or the disaffection of the French troops, and that history contained few instances of the success of efforts prompted by such expectations; that it was absurd, especially after the repeated experience of the tardiness of British succour, to expect to be thus speedily joined by a naval force from England; that it was more probable that the besieged would be aided by the arrival of French ships of war, with which the utmost maritime force of New England would be insufficient to cope; that the preparations for the expedition would be obstructed by the rigor of the season, and the unwillingness of the people to exchange the comfort and repose of their homes, at such a period of the year, for the toils, privations, and dangers of so dubious an enterprise; that, even if success were attainable, only a disproportioned share of its beneficial effects would be reaped by the colonists; and that failure, which seemed the more likely result, would expose them not only to a heavy and unpitied loss, but to the reproaches of England for rashly undertaking measures of such importance without her sanction or direction.

These views having prevailed with a majority of the assembly, the projected expedition was disallowed; and for some days all thoughts of it seemed to be laid aside. Shirley, however, was not to be diverted from his partiality for the enterprise, nor yet from his hope of inducing the provincial authorities to embrace it. But wisely refraining from personal importunity with the assembly or private applications to the members, he adopted the more prudent and efficacious policy of promoting petitions in unison with his views from eminent merchants and other persons of consideration in the colony. These petitions, which were signed by some wealthy inhabitants of Boston, and by almost all the merchants of Salem and Marblehead, earnestly entreated the assembly, for various reasons, and especially for the sake of preserving the fisheries from entire ruin, to reconsider their recent determination, and once more revolve, ere it was yet too late, the practicability and expediency of the enterprise suggested by the governor. In compliance with these petitions, the assembly again resumed the consideration of this interesting affair. Their deliberations were conducted with the utmost calmness and moderation; and no other division appeared, than what was manifestly owing, and on both sides was candidly ascribed, to conscientious difference of opinion with respect to the true interests of the province and the empire. After a long debate, a resolution in favor of the expedition was carried by the majority of a single voice.[1] [January 26, 1745.]

The announcement of this important determination of the legislature was followed by an entire and cordial union of all parties in the measures that were necessary to carry it into immediate execution. With a magnanimous

[1] Among the members of this assembly were two persons who afterwards acted a conspicuous part in the most interesting scenes of American story,—Hutchinson, who became the historian and governor of Massachusetts; and Oliver, who was associated with him in political sentiment, and in command as lieutenant-governor. Both had expressed their disapprobation of the expedition. As Oliver was repairing to the house on the day when the proposal, which he was determined to resist, was finally to be debated, he chanced to fall and break his leg. In consequence of his absence, when the house divided, the numbers on both sides were found to be equal. Hutchinson, who was the speaker, thereupon surrendered his opinion to what seemed to him the general desire of the province, and gave his casting vote in favor of the expedition. Gordon.

emulation to defeat their own predictions and vindicate their patriotism, the former opponents of the expedition now zealously coöperated with its original promoters in accelerating its preparatory arrangements, and in suggesting[1] and facilitating the procurement of every attainable means of increasing the likelihood of a successful issue. In furtherance of this object, an embargo was laid on the shipping in all the provincial harbours; and messengers were despatched to the other New England States, and to New York, New Jersey, and Pennsylvania, soliciting their assistance and coöperation in the enterprise. All, however, declined to take any share in it, or to render the slightest aid, except the New England States; and even of these, Rhode Island, after voting a contingent of three hundred men, acted with so much tardiness and hesitation in carrying this resolve into effect, that the enterprise was concluded before her troops were ready for the field. But the zeal and ardor that broke forth among all classes of people in Massachusetts, Connecticut, and New Hampshire, supplied, as well as reproached, the supine indifference of the other provinces. There, every private interest, political or patrimonial, was either spontaneously absorbed by concern for the general advantage and honor, or was compelled, by the irresistible current of the public will, to bend beneath this supreme consideration. Committees of war were appointed by the several governments, and authorized to enter all private dwellings and warehouses, and to appreciate and seize every article of clothing or provision adapted to the exigencies of the public service. A fleet of twelve small vessels was formed by the armed sloops belonging to the four New England States, and by hiring two privateers that belonged to Rhode Island; and the deficiency of heavy artillery was supplied by borrowing a number of cannons from New York. An express boat was despatched to Commodore Warren to acquaint him with the projected expedition, and to beseech the assistance of some part of his squadron.

The preparations of the colonists were facilitated by the extraordinary mildness of the winter, and by the opportune and unexpected arrival of some merchant-vessels from England, conveying an ample store of various materials which were indispensably requisite, and of which the deficiency was least capable of being supplied in America. The preceding season having been remarkably fruitful, the provisions required for victualling the forces were plentiful and cheap; and though war had subsisted for some months with France, neither the French forces in Canada, nor their Indian allies, had given any molestation to the frontiers of New England. Some of the Indian friends of the French, indeed, having discovered the project of the English colonists, carried the tidings to Canada; but their report was derided by the French as absurd and incredible, and no intelligence of the approaching invasion reached Cape Breton. As the preparations advanced, the expense of them was found greatly to exceed the original estimates and expectations, insomuch that several of the first promoters of the scheme confessed, that, had they foreseen its actual cost, they would never

[1] Many ridiculous suggestions were tendered, and much wild and chimerical expectation indulged. A catalogue of the follies thus engendered by zeal, vanity, and ignorance has been preserved by Belknap, and amply demonstrates, that, if half of the schemes benevolently elaborated by patriotic absurdity had been entertained, the colonial forces would have incurred greater dangers from their friends than from their enemies. Perhaps no enterprise of great general interest was ever projected in the world, without an attendant crop of similar extravagances of speculation.

have consented to it; but they protested that it was now too late to recede. Governor Shirley announced that in this crisis he considered himself entitled to depart from his instructions with regard to paper money, and a large issue took place under his sanction in Massachusetts, — an example which was followed in New Hampshire.

The selection of a proper commander of the forces was a nice and difficult duty, of which Shirley acquitted himself with his usual prudence. Upon the character and capacity of the commander depended not only the success, but the actual prosecution, of the enterprise; for, notwithstanding the liberal recompense by which enlistment was encouraged, it was impossible, in a country where indigence was unknown, to collect any considerable number of men willing to forsake their domestic connections and employments, and to engage in a painful and hazardous expedition, unless the commander of it were an individual who enjoyed their attachment and respect. Military skill, and experience in the conduct of regular warfare, were qualifications which it would have been vain to seek for in New England; but good sense, ability, resolution, and popularity were indispensable requisites. These qualities were very happily combined in William Pepperell, a colonel of the Massachusetts militia, an eminent merchant, possessed of a great landed estate, and generally known and esteemed in Massachusetts and New Hampshire. He was not a stranger to such scenes of war as American experience could supply, — having served from his youth in the provincial militia, and inhabiting a part of the country peculiarly exposed to the assault of French and Indian hostility. Happily for his country, and for his own fame, Pepperell was induced by the earnest instances of Shirley to accept the chief command of the forces; and next to him in authority was Roger Wolcott, the lieutenant-governor of Connecticut, and one of the most respected and popular of its inhabitants. The station and character of these men, and the great sacrifices which they now incurred of ease and interest, produced a powerful effect in inciting persons of humbler rank to abandon for a season their own less important domestic concerns for the service of their country, and to imitate on a smaller scale the virtue and public spirit of their favorite leaders.

Many who enlisted as private soldiers were themselves freeholders, and many more were the sons of thriving farmers and substantial tradesmen, — men, whom only views of public interest could persuade to enlist, or to consent to the enlistment of their children. It was strikingly and justly remarked of this famous enterprise, comprehending the reduction of a regular fortress, garrisoned by disciplined troops, that it was conceived and planned by a lawyer, and undertaken and conducted by a merchant commanding a body of husbandmen and mechanics.[1] George Whitefield, the Methodist, was at this time travelling and preaching in New England; and so great was the repute of his sanctity and talents, that many persons anxiously endeavoured to derive from his opinion an augury of the issue of the expedition. With some difficulty he was prevailed on to suggest a motto for the flag of the New Hampshire regiment; and the words which he proposed were "*Nil desperandum Christo sub duce.*" Some of his followers, construing this into a benediction of the enterprise by a highly gifted

[1] "Instructed by such examples, let rulers be persuaded that many things, which appear to be beyond measure daring and full of danger, are not less safe in the execution than admirable in the attempt; and that the design itself, whether frustrated or successful, if conducted with ability, will draw after it immortal honors." Polybius.

servant of Heaven, enlisted into it with the enthusiasm of a religious crusade; and one of them, a regimental chaplain, carried on his shoulder a hatchet, with which he menaced the destruction of the images in the French churches. By dint of vigor and promptitude of exertion, aided by the general determination to spare no expense that could improve the chances of success, there was embodied in New England, even within a shorter time than had been anticipated, a force, of which three thousand two hundred and fifty men were supplied by Massachusetts, five hundred and sixteen by Connecticut, and three hundred and fifty by New Hampshire. Never did an army take the field, in civilized warfare, less formidable by its experience and tactical accomplishments, or more likely, from the piety and virtue, the manly fortitude and patriotic enthusiasm that prevailed in its ranks, to minister occasion either of unstained and honorable triumph, or of profound affliction and regret to its country. The earnest expectation that pervaded New England was at once sustained and regulated by religious sentiment. Fasts and prayers implored the divine blessing on the enterprise; and the people and their rulers, having exhausted all the resources of human endeavour, and girded the choicest of them for battle, now sought to prepare their minds for either fortune by diligent address to the Great Source of hope and consolation, and awaited the result with anxious and submissive awe, or with stern composure and confidence.

The troops of Massachusetts were embarked and ready to sail from Boston [March 23, 1745], when the express-boat, which had been despatched to Commodore Warren, returned with an answer from him, importing, that, as the provincial enterprise was not directed or sanctioned by Great Britain, he must decline to take any share in it. This discouraging intelligence Shirley and Pepperell, happily, determined to withhold from the public and the army; apprehending that its disclosure at such a crisis might induce a total relinquishment of the expedition, which they yet hoped, even if it should fail in reducing Louisburg, might be productive of advantageous results, in the recovery of Canso, the destruction of the French fishery, and the increased security of the British dominion in Nova Scotia. The Massachusetts armament accordingly sailed the next morning [March 24, 1745], and, reaching Canso, found the New Hampshire troops, under the command of Colonel Samuel Moore, already arrived at this place, where the entire assemblage of the provincial army was soon after completed by the accession of the forces of Connecticut. Full of health, courage, and intrepidity, the troops here awaited the dissolution of the ice by which Cape Breton was environed; when an important addition was made to their force, and the highest animation imparted to their hopes, by the sudden and unexpected arrival of Commodore Warren with four ships of war,—one of sixty guns, and the others of forty guns each. [April 23, 1745.] Shirley's application to the British ministry, in the preceding autumn, had prevailed with them to despatch orders to Warren to repair, with as many ships as could be safely detached from his station, to Boston, in order to concert measures for the general promotion of the king's interest in America. In consequence of these orders, which he received shortly after his refusal to comply with the provincial invitation of his assistance, Warren was making sail for Boston, when, learning from a New England vessel that the provincial forces had already proceeded to Canso, he altered his own course, and repaired thither also. Warren was an active, judicious, and experienced

commander; and nothing could be more seasonable or elating than his arrival at this juncture with a naval armament that not only promised material assistance in the siege, but secured the besiegers against danger from any maritime force arriving from France. After a short consultation with Pepperell, the commodore, with his ships of war, sailed to join and coöperate with a few armed sloops of the colonists, which had been for some time engaged in cruising before Louisburg, and had already performed the signal service of capturing several vessels bound for this place with provisions and West India commodities, and even repulsed a French ship of thirty-six guns, which vainly attempted to penetrate into the harbour. Though these cruisers were daily descried by the French from the walls of Louisburg, no suspicion was awakened of the enterprise to which their operations were subservient.

Soon after the departure of the British ships of war from Canso, Pepperell, learning that the state of the season would admit of a disembarkation at Cape Breton, summoned his forces to active service, and, with the troops and transports, safely arrived in Chapeau-rouge Bay. [April 30, 1745.] In the plan of operations composed and communicated to him by Shirley, he was directed to make a nocturnal assault on the French garrison, and endeavour to carry the fortifications by storm and surprise. This rash enterprise, which, from the strength of the place, would doubtless have been attended with severe loss and a discouraging repulse in the commencement of the siege, was happily prevented by a calm which hindered the transports from entering Chapeau-rouge Bay, till the morning light revealed their approach to the French, — with whom so little apprehension existed of the vicinity of an enemy, that, when the alarm of actual invasion was sounded, most of their officers were roused by it from the slumbers which they had just begun to court, after the festive fatigue of a ball. The New England forces, having accomplished their landing, after a vain attempt to obstruct them, in which the French were repulsed with some loss, made active preparation to invest the city. Vaughan, who had exerted himself with intense and diffusive ardor in promoting the expedition, enjoyed the rank of lieutenant-colonel in the provincial army, but declined to accept any stated position or particular command; and possessing a seat in the council of war, held himself ready to undertake any service which the general might think adapted to his capacity. He now conducted an advanced column of the forces through the woods, within sight of Louisburg, and greeted the first view of the place and its battlements with three cheers. Thence, at the head of a detachment composed chiefly of the New Hampshire troops, he marched during the night to the north-east part of the harbour, and setting fire to certain large warehouses situated in this quarter, destroyed them, together with a vast collection of naval stores which they contained. The smoke of this conflagration, driven by the wind into the grand battery, excited so much terror and confusion among the French, that they hastily abandoned it, and, spiking its guns, retired into the city.

The next morning, Vaughan, with a handful of men, took possession of the deserted battery, and, in spite of a prompt effort of the French to dislodge him and regain the post they had too lightly yielded, maintained his acquisition till it was effectually secured by the arrival of a reinforcement adequate to its preservation. The guns of this battery were now unspiked and turned against the town with a good deal of execution, but with so great

an expense of powder, that it was judged proper, after a while, to discontinue the firing and reserve the besiegers' ammunition for the fascine batteries. The remarkable success which had thus far attended the enterprise contributed to animate the troops with resolution to support the arduous toils and formidable obstructions by which they now plainly perceived that their hopes of victory were confronted. The fortifications, it was ascertained, were of prodigious strength, and the approach to the town exceedingly difficult. For nearly two miles the besiegers had to transport their cannon, mortars, and ammunition across a morass, where horses or oxen would have been unserviceable, and where only the personal labor of men could be efficiently employed. This service was allotted to such of the troops as had been familiarized to toils of a kindred description by the employment of cutting down pine-trees in New England, and dragging them through the forests and across the swamps, to be disposed of as masts for vessels. Unacquainted with the art of regular approaches, the besiegers relied on no other shelter than what darkness afforded, and advanced their works only during the night; and when some one of greater experience attempted to instruct them in processes of more scientific and continuous operation, they were only moved to merriment by the strange nomenclature of his art, and persisted with stubborn, and yet animated, exertion in pursuing the simple dictates of their own uninstructed judgments. The heroic and patriotic ardor which hurried them to the field was by no means calculated to prepare their spirits for the mechanical submission, precision, and regularity which characterize the movements of disciplined soldiers. It was a fortunate circumstance for them, during the progress of these operations, that, from the mutinous disposition which the troops composing the garrison of Louisburg had previously manifested, their officers could not trust them to make a single sortie, lest they should seize the opportunity of deserting. A vigorous sally from the garrison would have been attended with great peril to the besieging troops, who, though they displayed the utmost steadiness and circumspection when in the trenches, and always presented a formidable front to the enemy, yet evinced their want of discipline in the rear of their encampment, which continually exhibited a tumultuary scene of gayety, pastime, and confusion. At length [May 20, 1745], by dint of the most indefatigable exertions, five fascine batteries were erected, and a fire was maintained from them with considerable effect.

While the land forces, aided by a detachment of Warren's marines, were thus employed on shore, the ships of war and armed sloops cruised, with vigilant watch, off the harbour; and on the 18th of May, the commodore succeeded in capturing a French man-of-war of sixty-four guns, carrying a large supply of stores of all sorts, intended for the use of the garrison.[1] The disappointment which this capture occasioned to the besieged was proportioned to the joy which it afforded to the besiegers, whose auxiliary naval force was soon after augmented by the arrival and coöperation of several other English ships of war. The siege was now pressed with in-

[1] This vessel was commanded by the Marquis de la Maison-forte, whose arrival, the besiegers learned, had been anxiously expected by the French garrison. How to proclaim, without seeming to overvalue, his capture was the difficulty. At length Warren suggested a plan which was adopted by Pepperell. The marquis, who was a humane man, was persuaded to visit his countrymen, the French prisoners, in their confinement, and to write a letter to Duchambon, describing what he had witnessed, and recommending that the English prisoners should be treated with equal humanity and consideration. This letter, as was foreseen, struck the French commander with surprise and consternation.

creased activity and vigilance by Warren and his squadron, and with the most vigorous perseverance by the land forces. A battery, constructed by the besiegers in a commanding situation, began to overpower the island battery of the garrison; the circular battery was nearly demolished; and the other fortifications, as well as the town itself, had sustained considerable injury. The practicability of capture by storm was at length suggested; and after some consultation between Pepperell and Warren, preparations were made to bring some of the ships of war into the harbour to coöperate with the land forces in a joint attack upon the town. Duchambon, the commander of the garrison, perceiving the symptoms of a general assault, afraid to incur the risk of it, and disheartened alike by the vigor of the besiegers and the hopelessness of relief from France, demanded an armistice for the purpose of arranging the terms of a capitulation. [June 15, 1745.] Two days after, and at the end of a siege of forty-nine days, the city of Louisburg and island of Cape Breton were surrendered to the crown of Great Britain. The garrison, which thus became prisoners, was found to consist of six hundred regular troops and thirteen hundred militia, and possessed a store of provisions and ammunition sufficient to have prolonged the siege for five or six months. When the captors entered the fortress, and perceived its massive and but slightly diminished strength, the bravest among them were struck with awe, and congratulated themselves on the circumstances that had so happily intercepted the impracticable designs, first of carrying it by surprise, and afterwards of reducing it by storm. Nothing, indeed, could have occurred more opportunely for the besiegers than the surrender. From the length and hardships of the siege, their powder had begun to fail, and their effective strength was diminished by disease. Urgent application had been made to New England for reinforcements both of men and ammunition; and though the hope of victory was there greatly depressed, the application was promptly complied with; and from Massachusetts and Connecticut there were despatched additional troops and supplies, which, however, did not reach their destination till after the contest was decided.

Scarcely had the surrender taken place, and the besieging troops obtained the shelter of the captured town, than the periodical rains began, and for ten days prevailed with a violence that must have greatly impeded their operations, and would probably have induced them to relinquish the siege altogether. Till the conclusion of the enterprise, the utmost harmony prevailed between the provincial general and the British commodore; the naval operations were conducted with vigor and skill; and the behaviour of the land forces (necessarily void of the factitious merits of disciplined soldiers) was generally characterized by a firm, unbending fortitude, and a heroic daring and determination that reflected no less honor on them than on the country to which, and not to military habit or scientific tuition, their character derivatively belonged. Notwithstanding the length and hardships of the siege, the provincial army lost altogether by sickness and the sword little more than a hundred men, of whom sixty perished in an unfortunate attack on the island battery.

The conquest thus achieved was not less advantageous to Britain than injurious to France, whose schemes were disconcerted and deranged by it in a remarkable degree. In consequence of Duvivier's applications to the French court, he was despatched with a force which would have been

sufficient not only to secure Louisburg against the possibility of capture, but to undertake the reconquest of Nova Scotia; but the efficacy of the succour which he was hastening to bring was defeated by the superior vigor and promptitude of New England; and learning on his passage that Louisburg had fallen, he returned with the mortifying intelligence to France. The town was taken at a period of the year when the resort of many French ships to the harbour was usually expected. To decoy them, the French flag was kept flying on the ramparts of Louisburg; and the effect of this manœuvre was the capture of so many vessels, as, added to the prizes acquired during the siege, were valued at upwards of a million of pounds sterling.

The provincial troops, who performed the original and most substantial part of the enterprise and who for nearly a year formed the sole British garrison by which Louisburg was occupied, together with the crews of the New England vessels which coöperated with the British ships of war, vainly expected and demanded a share of the prize-money that accrued from the captures. Their claim to participate in this advantage was disallowed by the British government; and the whole of the prize-money was appropriated to the officers and crews of the royal ships of war. Unfortunately, the harmony that prevailed between the provincial forces and the British naval squadron during the siege did not survive its successful issue; and it was not without dispute that Pepperell asserted his just right to receive the delivery of the keys of the town, and to take precedence of a detachment of the naval forces in entering to assume its occupation. The British government, though favored by this provincial enterprise with the first ray of success that illustrated its arms during the war, displayed the most illiberal desire to magnify the merits of the *royal* and naval force, and to depreciate the fair claim of the colonists to the glory of the conquest. Great Britain, indeed, partook the general astonishment which the achievement excited; but her ministers blended with their surprise no small degree of jealousy against the province and the provincial politicians, who pretended, by an especial victorious energy, to redeem the disgrace of general disaster and defeat.[1] Among other rewards, the title of a baronet was conferred as an acknowledgment of the services of Warren; and though a seeming impartiality of recompense was studied, by the communication of the same dignity to Pepperell, the official accounts of the conquest of Cape Breton, that were published in England, suppressed the merits of the provincial forces in a manner that filled them with equal surprise and resentment, and taught them to consider the reputation of America as a distinct and separate interest, instead of blending it in their regard with the general glory of Britain. But in spite of ungenerous neglect and insidious disguise, the real truth broke out, and the British empire in general owned, with wonder and awakened interest and curiosity, the obligations for which it was indebted to America.[2] Among other officers who distinguished themselves by their

[1] It is remarkable that the first conquest gained by the English from the French in America, the conquest of Canada, in 1629 (*ante*, Book II., Chap. I.), was also the fruit of a war of which the events in Europe were disgraceful to England.

[2] Even Smollett, whose national partiality has induced him to declare that "the reduction of Louisburg was chiefly owing to the vigilance and activity of Mr. Warren, one of the bravest and best officers in the service of England," has been constrained by the force of truth to add, that "the natives of New England acquired great glory from the success of this enterprise." — "Circumstanced as the nation is," continues this writer, "the legislature cannot too tenderly cherish the interests of the British plantations in America." — "The continent of

valor during the siege was David Wooster, of Connecticut, who afterwards attained the rank of general in the American service, and died fighting for the independence of his country in the beginning of the Revolutionary War.

The tidings of this important victory excited a general transport of joy in New England. Considerate and religious men remarked with mingled gratitude and wonder the coincidence of numerous circumstances and events on which the success of the enterprise essentially depended, and which induced a contemporary writer to declare, that, "if any one circumstance had taken a wrong turn on the English side, and unless every circumstance had taken a wrong turn on the French side, the expedition must have entirely miscarried." While the adventurous ardor, the firmness, and patriotism of the men who projected and executed a design of such magnitude, and attended with so much danger and difficulty, were extolled with just and unstinted commendation, it was acknowledged that the attempt disclosed extreme temerity, and that, in its progress and accomplishment, the propitious agency of Divine Providence was singularly manifested. It was, indeed, an enterprise which only success could justify or even excuse; and, like the celebrated recapture of Calais by the Duke of Guise, confirmed the military maxim, that seeming impossibility may facilitate a grand achievement. From New England, the intelligence was diffused with surprising rapidity through the other provinces of America, and everywhere elicited the expressions of triumph and admiration. The States which had refused their assistance in the expedition were not restrained by mean shame or jealousy from confessing the glory that New England acquired by undertaking it unaided, and conducting it with so much fortitude, perseverance, and success. They paid a willing tribute to a renown which exalted the character and prospects of America; and, with sympathy warmed by gratitude and exultation, hastened to tender unsolicited subsidies for the support of the New England forces and the preservation of their conquest. Even the assembly of Pennsylvania, now that the slaughter was over, were not deterred by their religious scruples from voting an instant contribution of four thousand pounds for this purpose; three thousand pounds were contributed by New York; and two thousand pounds by New Jersey. Virginia had not to reproach herself with having declined originally to aid New England in the expedition, of which she was first made acquainted by the intelligence of its successful issue; and at this time some circumstances existed that seemed likely to reawaken the jealousy that of yore prevailed between the New Englanders and the Virginians.

A remarkable revival of the primitive warmth of religious zeal had occurred of late years in New England; and this influence, which was greatly promoted by the genius and piety of George Whitefield, was propagated more or less extensively by his itinerant labors in all the other provincial communities. The admirable piety of the Moravians had also contributed to animate religious sentiment in America; and numerous proselytes to their doctrines and constitutions began to appear in every one of the States. New England was regarded as the centre and focus of this influ-

North America," he proceeds, "if properly cultivated, will form an inexhaustible fund of wealth and strength to Great Britain; and, perhaps, may become the last asylum of British liberty. When the nation is enslaved by domestic despotism or foreign dominion; when her substance is wasted, her spirit broken, and the laws and constitution of England are no more; then those colonies, sent off by our fathers, may receive and entertain their sons as hapless exiles and ruined refugees." Compare this with the language of Edmund Burke, cited in Note XXXIX., at the end of the volume.

ence, which was viewed with apprehensive bigotry and dislike by the Episcopal clergy and the magistracy of Virginia. Gooch, the governor of this province, though a man of excellent talents, and justly celebrated for the good sense, public spirit, and generosity by which his civil administration was characterized, was yet a stranger to the sentiment, and still more so to the principle, of religious toleration. Attached to the church of England, he beheld the multiplication of dissenters from its established system with impatient displeasure, and vainly labored to check the progress of opinion and the freedom of thought by proclamations against the assemblages of Moravians and Methodists, who were threatened with a rigorous execution of all the theoretical intolerance which still pervaded the ecclesiastical constitutions of Virginia. This persecution, though moderated in its infliction by the humane and tolerant spirit of the age, was yet cordially abetted by many persons of consideration in Virginia, and among the rest by Edmund Pendleton and some other individuals who were afterwards distinguished as champions of the purest principles of liberty, and of every generous right of human nature.

Notwithstanding the tendency of such exasperated bigotry to repress the growth of friendship and good-will between this province and New England, the conquest of Louisburg was celebrated with the most enthusiastic praise and exultation in Virginia, where the only abatement of the general satisfaction was occasioned by the regret of the people that they had not enjoyed the opportunity of aiding the bravery, and sharing the danger of their countrymen. A great quantity of provisions was purchased by the Virginian government and presented to the New England garrison at Louisburg; and to encourage a plentiful exportation of whatever articles the colony could supply for their use, a trade free of all duty was allowed between Virginia and Cape Breton. But honorable and gratifying as these testimonies were to the States of New England, the embarrassments in which they were involved by the heavy expense of the Louisburg expedition compelled them to solicit a more substantial tribute from the justice of Britain, and to urge their claim to reimbursement, from the general treasury of the empire, of the cost of an enterprise by which the national honor and interest were so highly promoted. This claim, though equally supported by principles of justice and considerations of sound policy, did not prevail without urgent and protracted solicitation; nor was the indemnity granted, till Britain had diminished the grace and enhanced the necessity of it by consenting to restore Louisburg, as the price of peace with France.[1]

More interest was excited in Britain by the unexpected display of martial vigor in her colonial progeny, than was inspired in the colonies by the interesting conflict that arose between the government and the Scottish insurgents in the centre of the empire. Virginia was the only one of the provinces in which the intelligence of the rebellion in Britain awakened much attention or anxiety, or from which there was elicited any strong manifestation of sentiments akin to the emotions by which the parent state was agitated.[2] The utmost alarm and indignation were kindled in this province;

[1] Douglass. Smollett. Hutchinson. Belknap. Trumbull. Burk. Holmes. Eliot's *New England Biographical Dictionary*.

[2] Some time after the suppression of the rebellion, indeed, a loyal address of congratulation on this event was voted by the assembly of Connecticut to the king; in which they expressed the strongest attachment to his Majesty's person, family, and government; a deep sense of the happiness which Connecticut enjoyed under his auspicious reign; and the utmost abhorrence of "that unnatural and wicked rebellion raised in favor of a Popish pretender

and its inhabitants united in addresses to the British government, expressive of their loyal abhorrence of the Pretender, and pledging their lives and fortunes to the most determined resistance of his designs. Proclamations were issued by the Virginian government, denouncing, with all the injustice of terror, the pretended conspiracies of the Catholic clergy of Maryland to seduce the people from their allegiance and extend the flame of civil war to America. Additional jealousy was excited even against the Protestant Dissenters by the peril to which the church of England was exposed from the arms of the Pretender; and the religious assemblages of Presbyterians, Methodists, and Moravians were prohibited under the severest penalties. [1746.]

The suppression of the rebellion was attended with consequences of general importance to the American States. After the rage and terror with which the British nation was inspired by the enterprise of the rebels had been fully satiated by the infliction of military ravage on a large district of the Highlands of Scotland, and by numerous instances of the more formal, but not less barbarous executions, authorized by the ancient statutes, for the punishment of treason in England, the remainder of the victims were exempted from slaughter, and consigned to the mitigated penalty of transportation for life to the dominions of the crown in America. A great number of brave and hardy emigrants were thus distributed among all the provinces; and the historians of the southern settlements especially have acknowledged the valuable accession which was derived from this source to the provincial strength, resources, and industry. In America these emigrants experienced much greater liberty and indulgence than even the guiltless portion of their race that remained in Scotland was permitted to enjoy. Among other advantages, they obtained the privilege of wearing their peculiar garb, to which they were strongly attached, but which was now prohibited in Scotland by an absurd and tyrannical act of parliament. It was, perhaps, impolitic of Great Britain thus to strengthen her colonies, by transplanting to them a race of men who cherished enmity against her monarchical establishment, together with a deep resentment of the cruelty and humiliation inflicted on their native land. The farther resort of Scottish emigrants to America was promoted soon after by the measures adopted by the British parliament for abolishing the military tenure of lands, which had hitherto subsisted in Scotland, and had enabled the Highland chieftains to produce the late rebellion. The proprietors of Highland estates, no longer permitted to exact military service from the occupants of their lands, and no longer deriving advantage from the numerous population they formerly studied to maintain around them as feudal retainers, rather than tenants, universally raised their rents and enlarged their farms; whereby vast multitudes of Highlanders were ejected from their homes, and many more were induced voluntarily to relinquish them by the disgust and impatience which these innovations provoked. To this disappointed and discontented race the American provinces presented the strongest attractions. Here they might cheaply obtain abundance of land, and enjoy their national manners and habits of independence without molestation; and here, accordingly, for many

against the best of kings and the best of governments." They concluded by praying that "the merciful Providence which has placed his Majesty on the British throne, and given him so long and so illustrious a reign, may still protect his sacred person, subdue his enemies, make his reign prosperous, and continue the crown in his royal and illustrious family to the latest posterity." Trumbull.

years after, numerous detachments of Scottish Highlanders continued annually to repair.[1]

Meanwhile, both Britain and France were roused by the capture of Louisburg to the projection of vigorous and extended operations in America. Governor Shirley, flushed with the conquest which reflected so much credit on his genius and administration, contemplated nothing less than the entire and immediate subjugation of the French colonial dominions; and when he announced the capture of Louisburg to the British ministers, he employed the utmost urgency of counsel to induce them straightway to despatch an armament sufficient not only for the preservation of Cape Breton and Nova Scotia, but for the invasion and reduction of Canada. It was not without reason, that, while he suggested the expediency of farther conquest, he urged the necessity of aiding the defence of the existing possessions of Britain; for the French government, astonished and incensed at the disgrace which it had sustained, meditated a great vindictive effort, and was preparing an expedition for the recovery of Louisburg, the conquest of Nova Scotia, the bombardment of Boston, and the devastation of the whole American coast from Nova Scotia to Georgia. The British ministers seemed at first to hearken readily to the counsels of Shirley; and in the spring of this year, circular letters were addressed by the Duke of Newcastle, secretary of state, to the governors of all the American provinces of Britain except the Carolinas and Georgia, requiring them to raise as many forces as they could afford, to coöperate with a British army in a general attack upon the American possessions of France. According to the plan of the enterprise communicated by the royal ministers to Shirley, a squadron of ships of war, under the command of Admiral Warren, together with a body of land forces under General St. Clair, were to be sent from Britain against Canada; the troops raised in New England were directed to join the British fleet and army at Louisburg, whence the combined armament was to proceed up the river St. Lawrence; while the forces of New York and the other southern colonies were to be collected at Albany, and march thence against Crown Point and Montreal.

The assembly of Massachusetts betrayed at first some disinclination to participate in the enterprise, and represented to their governor that it was impossible, without financial ruin, to make any addition to the burdens which the recent expedition against Louisburg had already entailed on the province. But Shirley in reply assured them that they were ruined already, unless they could procure reimbursement of their late expenditure from the parent state; and that the surest means of obtaining such relief was to enforce the cogency of their claim to it by involving the province still more deeply in debt, and to conciliate British favor by the display of undiminished zeal and bravery. Additional arguments were supplied to him by the ravages which the French forces in Canada and their Indian allies now committed on the frontiers of Massachusetts and New Hampshire. Instead of a burdensome and ineffectual system of defensive warfare along a fron-

[1] Burk. Hewit. Williamson. Smollett. Johnson's *Tour to the Hebrides*.

"Alas! poor Caledonia's mountaineer,
That want's stern edict e'er, and feudal grief,
Had forced him from a home he loved so dear!
Yet found he here a home and glad relief." — Campbell.

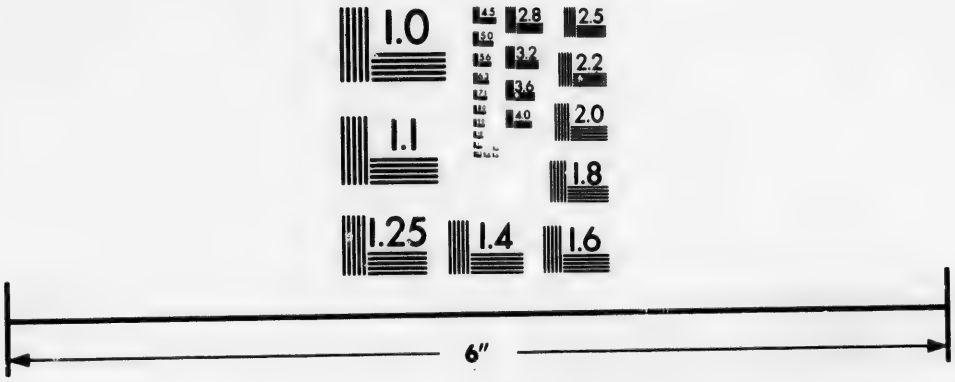
Some of the Highland partisans of the Pretender, in 1778, addressed to him a memorial, in which they offered to raise his standard in the back settlements of America. Sir Walter Scott told Washington Irving that he had seen the memorial.

tier which it was impossible to render at all points secure, Shirley advised the Massachusetts assembly rather to coöperate with an enterprise which promised finally to extinguish the source of those desolating hostilities. His reasoning, seconded by the inclinations of many of the colonists, who were averse to pause in the career of prosperous fortune, proved successful with the assembly, which, again resuming preparations for offensive war, conducted them with so much spirit, that, of eight thousand two hundred[1] men which were raised by all the colonies that engaged in this design, three thousand five hundred were furnished by Massachusetts. The provincial force thus embodied exceeded the expectations of the British ministers, who, without specifying the contingent of troops required from the respective provinces, had merely announced that it was the wish of the king that the total levies should not fall short of five thousand men.

But the hopes which Britain thus again rekindled in her American colonies, of deliverance from the hostile vicinity of the French, were fated to produce only a repetition of former disappointments. Whether it was, as some American politicians believed, that the British ministers were jealous of the bold and enterprising spirit of the colonists, and secretly averse to remove the restraint imposed upon them by the propinquity of a rival power, or that those ministers really suspected, as has been alleged, that the armament, which the French were preparing, ostensibly, for the invasion of America, was actually destined to invade Great Britain, — the whole summer elapsed without the arrival of troops or orders from England; and the British fleet, which had been promised, and which consisted of nearly thirty ships of war, after delaying its departure till a period of the year when it was reckoned unsafe to risk the large vessels on the American coasts, received orders to undertake a substitutional enterprise, and performed nothing more memorable than an unsuccessful attempt to surprise Port L'Orient, in Brittany. [September, 1746.] Shirley, at last, perceiving that it was vain to await any longer the arrival of an armament from Britain, resolved, with the approbation of Sir William Pepperell and other leading persons in New England, to attempt, with the provincial forces alone, the reduction of some part of the American possessions of France. It was proposed to detach a portion of the New England troops to join the forces assembled at Albany, and in conjunction with them to invest and attack the French fort at Crown Point; a project which was warmly embraced by Clinton, the governor of New York, who solicited and engaged the assistance of the Six Nations. The preparations for this enterprise, however, were interrupted by intelligence from Mascarene, the governor of Nova Scotia, of the march of a body of French troops and Indians against Annapolis, and of symptoms of revolt among the resident population of the province. Instant succour was required to prevent this territory from being again wrested from the British dominion; and the forces of Massachusetts, Rhode Island, and New Hampshire were accordingly directed to proceed to this new scene of action. [September 20, 1746.] But when they were on the point of embarking, the schemes of the provincial authorities were again disconcerted by the alarming tidings of the arrival of a French fleet and army at Chebucto Bay,

[1] Of these troops, New Hampshire furnished five hundred; Massachusetts, three thousand five hundred; Rhode Island, three hundred; Connecticut, one thousand; New York, one thousand six hundred; New Jersey, five hundred; Maryland, three hundred; Virginia, one hundred; and Pennsylvania (by a popular act unsanctioned by its assembly), four hundred. Belknap differs from all the other authorities in stating, that New Hampshire, on this occasion, raised eight hundred men.

IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

2.8
3.2
3.6
4.0
2.5
2.2
2.0
1.8
1.1
1.0

in Nova Scotia. This armament, consisting of forty vessels, of which eleven were ships of the line, together with transports conveying upwards of three thousand disciplined troops, and a formidable apparatus of artillery and military stores, was conducted by the Duke d'Anville, a nobleman on whose courage and capacity the court of France reposed more confidence than the event seems to justify. The French inhabitants of Nova Scotia, it was expected, would coöperate with the invading forces; and Ramsay, a French officer, with one thousand seven hundred Canadian troops and Indians, had already repaired thither in expectation of their arrival. Nothing could exceed the astonishment and dismay which this intelligence produced in New England, where the spirit of the people, worn with anxious suspense and disappointment, was prepared to receive the most gloomy impressions. In the first moments of panic, it was believed that the British colonies were now devoted to inevitable destruction. But these emotions were speedily controlled by deep-rooted fortitude and courage; and boldly confronting the danger with which they were menaced, the New Englanders were elevated by the alarm of this emergency to the highest pitch of manly constancy and resolution.[1]

The most vigorous preparations were made for the general defence. In the course of a very few days, six thousand four hundred of the Massachusetts militia marched into Boston, and united themselves to the troops that were already assembled there; and Connecticut announced that she was ready at the first signal to despatch an additional reinforcement of six thousand men. New forts and batteries were erected along the coast; the utmost vigilance was exerted to guard against surprise; and for six weeks the whole country resounded with the clang of martial preparation, and was pervaded by the most agitating suspense and anxiety. As time wore on without the approach of the French, the public hope was sustained by a growing conviction that succour must speedily arrive from England. It was impossible, the people generally exclaimed, that the king's ministers should be unacquainted with the sailing of the French fleet; and unless they were willing to deliver up the colonies to the rage of the enemy, it was not to be doubted that an English squadron would presently appear in America. But this confidence proved fallacious; and the colonial dominion of Britain would infallibly have received a dangerous, if not a fatal blow, had not a surprising train of adverse circumstances occurred to dissipate the strength and confound the hopes of the invaders. The French fleet sustained much damage by storms, and several losses by shipwreck; and while D'Anville awaited the repair and reassemblage of his scattered vessels, a pestilential fever broke out among the land forces. These calamities preyed severely on the mind of the French commander; and their efficacy was promoted by an incident in which the sanguine temper of Shirley proved strangely subservient to the interest of New England.

Partaking the general conviction of the speedy arrival of a fleet from Britain, he communicated this cheering intelligence rather as a certainty than a speculation in letters addressed to the garrison of Louisburg; but the capture of the vessel by which his letters were conveyed, fortunately for his interest, though contrary to his views, exposed the enemy, instead of his friends, to the mistaken impression he had adopted. A division of

[1] We may well apply to this people the remark of Polybius on the Romans, that, "Such is their disposition and temper, that, whenever they have any real cause of fear, they are at that time themselves most greatly to be dreaded."

opinion now arose among the French officers; and, in the midst of their deliberations, D'Anville suddenly died, by a stroke of apoplexy, as some reported, or by swallowing poison, as others supposed. D'Estournelle, who succeeded to the command, disheartened, like his predecessor, by the disasters that had befallen the expedition, and the apprehension that an English fleet was at hand, and learning that a reinforcement of French ships of war, which he expected from the West Indies, had returned to France, proposed a similar retreat to a council of his officers; and in consequence of the rejection of his proposal, was attacked with a frenzy or delirium, in which he threw himself upon his sword and expired. The command of the French was now assumed by Jonquière, the governor of Canada [October 15, 1746], whose vigor and intrepidity gave promise of a change in the aspect of affairs, when the fleet was overtaken by a tremendous tempest, which, continuing for several days, occasioned so much loss and dispersion, that all the vessels which survived the fury of the storm hastened to return separately to France. Never had so great an armament been despatched from Europe to North America; and never had any proved more inefficient or incurred equal disasters. Had the project of the French succeeded, the British colonies would have sustained a ravage and desolation of which it is impossible to calculate the extent or the consequences. Of this the people of New England, amidst all their energy and determination, were especially sensible; and when they learned the surprising deliverance, which, without the slightest human aid or exertion, was vouchsafed to them, they acknowledged with grateful and solemn admiration, that, as they had formerly been indebted for victory and conquest, so now they owed their safety and rescue from destruction, to the signal favor and interposition of Divine Providence. These pious sentiments were entirely unmixed with impressions of respect or gratitude to the parent state. Indeed, the conduct of the British government, and of its naval commanders, on this occasion, was but too well calculated to provoke the resentment and contempt of the colonists.[1] Although the king's ministers had received early intelligence of the departure of D'Anville's squadron for America, they made no attempt to intercept the blow with which the British colonies were threatened. Their concern extended no farther than the preservation of Louisburg, for the security of which they despatched Admiral Townsend with a squadron to reinforce the ships of war that were stationed there under Commodore Knowles; and these two commanders, doubtless in conformity with orders which they received, contented themselves with guarding Louisburg from attack, without making the slightest demonstration in support of New England.[2]

[1] Yet, three months after the dispersion of the French squadron, the assembly of Connecticut voted the loyal address which we have remarked, on the suppression of the rebellion in Britain. Sometimes one or two members of a public body propose demonstrations which the majority, without relishing, are reluctant to oppose; and hence the language even of a representative assembly does not always afford a correct sample of the disposition of the people.

[2] Belknap. Trumbull. Holmes. Smollett. Hutchinson.

CHAPTER II.

Progress of the War. — Tumult excited by naval Impressment in Boston. — Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle. — Regulation of Paper Currency in New England. — Policy of the British Government relative to America. — Political Sentiments and Speculations of the Americans. — Condition of America, and miscellaneous Transactions. — Origin of Vermont. — The Ohio Company. — American Science and Literature.

ALTHOUGH, by the discomfiture of the French armament, the British colonies were relieved from the apprehension of the greatest danger to which they had ever been exposed, their frontier settlements were still harassed by predatory hostilities; and fears were entertained of the loss of Annapolis and the revolt of Nova Scotia. No sooner was it known in New England that D'Anville's squadron was dispersed and compelled to return to France, than the troops originally destined to Nova Scotia were again directed to proceed thither without delay, for the purpose of capturing or expelling the Canadian forces assembled under the command of the Chevalier Ramsay. This expedition proved unfortunate. Only the regiment embodied in Massachusetts, amounting to six hundred men, commanded by Colonel Noble, reached Nova Scotia; the troops of Rhode Island having been shipwrecked on their passage, and those of New Hampshire driven back by contrary winds. [January 31, 1747.[1]] In the middle of a tempestuous night, the Massachusetts regiment was suddenly attacked by a superior French force; and, after an obstinate resistance and the loss of its commander and a hundred and sixty men, was compelled to surrender. Notwithstanding this victory, Ramsay judged it proper to defer the attack upon Annapolis; and the French inhabitants of Nova Scotia forbore to incur the danger of open revolt till the arrival of succours, which they still hoped to receive, from France. Nor were their hopes ill founded. The French government, more irritated by the loss of Louisburg than discouraged by the disastrous issue of D'Anville's expedition, prepared with unabated spirit to retrieve its recent failure and repeat the intercepted blow. A strong naval force, equipped with the utmost speed for this purpose, set sail from France, under the command of Jonquière, the governor of Canada, but was overtaken by a British fleet, commanded by Admirals Anson and Warren, and, after a gallant resistance, defeated and captured. [May 3, 1747.] Ramsay, apprized of this catastrophe, hastened to evacuate Nova Scotia, and reconducted his troops to Canada; whence the French, with the aid of their Indian allies, continued to infest the borders of New England and New York with hostilities resembling more the practices of banditti than the operations of civilized warfare, and tending to no other results than obscure individual suffering and partial havoc and devastation.

The frontier settlements of New Hampshire, in particular, were exposed to such incessant danger from these incursions, that the inhabitants were

[1] No seminary of learning having yet arisen in Rhode Island, several public-spirited citizens this year founded a library at Newport for the promotion of literature in the colony. One of them contributed books to the value of five hundred pounds sterling. A charter of incorporation was obtained from the provincial government, and a handsome building erected for the library. The plan seems to have been derived from that of the Library Company of Philadelphia, which was formed under the auspices of Dr. Franklin about five years before. Franklin's *Memoirs*. Holmes.

compelled to fortify their houses, and could never venture to stir from them unarmed. They were probably on that account the less willing to maintain public fortresses; and notwithstanding the urgent entreaties of their governor, the assembly of this province positively refused to make any grant for the support of Fort Dummer, which was situated in the territory that New Hampshire had recently and undeservedly gained from Massachusetts. This defect of public spirit, however, was supplied by the generosity of the people of Massachusetts, who undertook to defend for the neighbouring State a possession of which her intrigues had despoiled them. The most considerable of the enterprises undertaken by the French Canadians and their allies were directed against two forts on Connecticut River, garrisoned by detachments of the Massachusetts militia. One of them was taken; but the other, which was occupied by Captain Stevens and thirty men, though a place of little strength, and hotly attacked for several days by a very superior force, withstood the assailants with a vigor and success that excited universal surprise and applause. In the territory of New York, among other ravages committed by the French and their allies, the village of Saratoga, containing thirty families, was entirely destroyed, and the inhabitants massacred without reserve or discrimination.

The annals of New Hampshire, during the last two years of the war, present a long and mournful catalogue of plantations laid waste, and colonists slain or carried into captivity by the enemy. Pillage, rather than conquest, was the object of the invaders; and their prowess was directed less against states and armies, than against dwelling-houses, families, rural industry, and domestic life. This was the style of warfare most conformable to the tastes, the habits, and the interests of the savages who coöperated with the French. They had no relish or conception of wars in which private property was respected; they had nothing to gain from conquests achieved in conjunction with a more powerful ally; and preferably approved those predatory hostilities which afforded the greatest scope to the qualifications in which they excelled, enriched them with plunder, and exasperated the mutual animosity of the rival European powers, without affording to either a decisive superiority over the other. It is probable that the French, unless they were actuated by mere hatred and cruelty, pursued this barbarous system of warfare chiefly in order to cultivate their own interest with the savages, and to confirm them in habits of hostility to the English. Yet it was remarked, that, during the present war, the Indians, whether from increased humanity or improved policy, displayed a degree of forbearance and clemency which they never before exhibited, and which the English had deemed incompatible with the savage nature of such belligerents. They inflicted no tortures on their prisoners, and very rarely slew them; in general, they lavished upon them the most tender and compassionate attentions; and on one occasion they evinced the rare moderation of sparing a prisoner, who, after suing for and obtaining quarter, wounded his captor and endeavoured to escape. No attempt was made by the British colonists to requite these predatory hostilities on the territory of the enemy. Though filled with resentment against the French, they were generally averse to any active enterprise short of the invasion and complete conquest of Canada. Their warfare was entirely defensive; and it seems in general to have been conducted with more bravery than skill or efficiency. A confusion of councils and a multiplicity of directors caused every project and purpose to transpire before

it was carried into effect, and produced frequent changes of measures, and the most injurious delays in their execution.

The Canadian government, of which the frame was more simple and compendious, was enabled to act with greater promptitude and secrecy; and, enjoying the plenitude of arbitrary power, it granted commissions to none of its subjects but such as had distinguished themselves by their talents and exploits. But the British provincial governors, controlled by jealous and independent assemblies, were frequently compelled or tempted to confer military commands on useful adherents and popular politicians, who mistook ambition or patriotic zeal for science and capacity; and they were disabled from exerting that concentrated readiness and energy which characterized the executive policy of the French. In addition to the losses inflicted by the depredations of the enemy, a great expense was incurred for the maintenance of numerous troops, who were yet too few to cover the frontiers, and rarely succeeded in avenging the violation of them, by overtaking or intercepting the invaders. During the latter years of this war, the most perfect contrast appears in every point between the conduct of the French and the British provincials. The operations of the French were offensive, methodical, cheap (for the charges were defrayed by plunder), and distressing to their enemies; the warfare of the British was defensive, desultory, costly, and almost entirely inefficient. Predatory incursions into the Canadian territory would have given certain employment to the British provincial troops; and, by engaging the French to defend themselves, would, perhaps, have afforded relief to the British frontier. But this system of hostility was repugnant alike to the dignity of the States and the general sentiments of the people of New England. Besides the Canadian Indians, the French were assisted in this war by their ancient allies, the Indian tribes inhabiting the territories of Maine and Nova Scotia; but repeated defeats had broken the strength and depressed the courage of these tribes, and their hostility, though productive of some devastation of frontier settlements, proved now less vigorous and harassing than on former occasions.[1]

It was an indirect consequence of the war, that produced the most notable event by which this year was signalized in America [1747]: a tumultuary movement in Massachusetts, which for a time suspended the functions of government, and in some of its features exhibited so close an analogy to the grander scene that arose about twenty years after, that it appears like a rehearsal, as it was certainly an omen, of the leading and initial events of the American Revolution. Had the warning which it was fitted to convey been duly appreciated by the British government, this remarkable occurrence might have tended to avert the great extremity which it resembled and betokened.

During the prevalence of feudal manners and institutions in England, the crown exercised the prerogative of equipping its navies in war, by appropriating, or, as it was termed, *impressing*, the vessels and the seamen employed by the merchants. The revenue of the crown was not more capable of maintaining a standing naval establishment than a standing army of land forces; and the feudal institutions did not admit of the same regulated service and definite subordination of the national merchants and seamen, as of the territorial barons and vassals, to the king. The aids which he obtained from them were, accordingly, irregular, occasional, and the fruits of a prerogative

[1] Douglass. *Universal History.* Wynne. Hutchinson. Belknap. Trumbull. Holmes.

restrained by no constitutional principle or limitation. By the territorial vassals there were rendered to the king the contingents of personal or pecuniary service ascertained by their respective charters; but from the merchants and traders he exacted compulsory loans and gifts of their property, to an extent bounded only by his power, his rapacity, or the emergency of the occasion. This overweening prerogative was at length controlled by the rising importance of that order of men whose rights and interests were peculiarly its prey. When, in process of time, the increasing wealth and consequence of the merchants and tradesmen of England had paved the way to the introduction of a more regular and general system of liberty in the place of the feudal institutions, all classes of the people were enabled to claim the protection of fixed and settled law; and while the crown was invested with a larger and simpler revenue than it formerly enjoyed, it was restricted from irregular aids and arbitrary exactions. Such, at least, were the principles of that system of which the gradual rise and development corresponded with the decline and fall of the feudal establishments. But although the British constitution was now generally leavened with these liberal principles, it was not entirely pervaded by them, and still continued to be defaced by some traces of feudal prerogative and arbitrary power. The convenience of the crown and the unprotected condition of common mariners preserved, in particular, the prerogative of impressment from more than a partial abolition; and though the vessels of merchants were exempted from arbitrary appropriation to the public service, the persons of seamen continued to be subjected to the hardship of this peculiar liability. A striking instance, among many others, of the unequal respect entertained by the English laws for the property of the rich and the lives of the poor! So late as the nineteenth century, Great Britain has still continued to preserve, in the impressment of sailors, a practice which even those who defend it on the tyrannical plea of necessity have acknowledged, nevertheless, to be a flagrant outrage on popular liberty, and a violation of the principles of the British constitution.

The ministers of the crown, in conformity with opinions which they obtained from the attorney and solicitor-general of England, had repeatedly asserted the legitimacy of extending the practice of impressment to the American provinces; but, aware of the determined, though silent, opposition with which the colonists and their assemblies withstood this pretension, they very rarely attempted to carry it into effect. The governors of Virginia ventured occasionally to issue proclamations authorizing the impressment of mariners; which, though they attracted no open comment from the assembly or the planters, were still so far from commanding acquiescence, that, in every one of the few instances in which impressment was attempted, it was resisted and defeated by popular interference.[1] Till now, no attempt was ever made to introduce this odious and arbitrary practice among a people so jealous of their liberties as the inhabitants of New England; and the British government, notwithstanding the haughti-

[1] As America was the quarter of the British empire in which this practice was first resisted, so an American was the first writer by whom its indefensible injustice was demonstrated. The arguments by which it is commonly defended were refuted in a masterly manner by Dr. Franklin, in his *Remarks on Judge Foster's Apology for Impressment.*

Either a nation must have virtually lost its independence, or its political system must be unjust and defective, when it cannot offer sufficient inducements to persuade its people voluntarily to undertake its defence.

ness of its pretensions, was practically contented with making occasional demands of levies of men for the supply of its armaments from the New England States, and had no reason to complain of the inefficacy of these requisitions. But, unfortunately, the English ministers neglected to inculcate on their naval commanders the same cautious forbearance of which they themselves perceived the expediency; and Commodore Knowles, who was stationed at this time with some English ships of war at Nantasket, in Massachusetts, having lost a number of his sailors by desertion, bethought himself of repairing the loss and recruiting his crews by a vigorous act of impressment at Boston. [November 17, 1747.] For this purpose, he detached his boats to the town at an early hour in the morning, and, taking the people by surprise, not only seized all the seamen that were found in the vessels lying in the harbour, but, with the undiscriminating violence that usually attends the impress service, swept the wharves, and carried off a great many apprentices to ship-carpenters and working landsmen. At London, such an act of power might have been safely perpetrated, and the victims of it would have obtained little sympathy from their countrymen;[1] but at Boston it produced a burst of popular indignation so violent, that the frame of the established executive government tottered and sank beneath its fury.

All the inhabitants of the town were astonished and provoked; but the rage of the working classes was perfectly uncontrollable. A numerous concourse of these persons, hastily seizing whatever arms they could find, repaired to the governor's house to demand satisfaction from some of the captains of the British squadron who happened to be there at the time. These officers, arming themselves with carbines, expressed their determination to preserve their liberty or lose their lives; and a scene of bloodshed would have ensued, but for the address of a number of sedate persons, who, mixing with the multitude, prevailed with them to refrain from breaking into the house. A deputy sheriff, at the same time, attempting with more zeal than discretion to exert his authority for the restoration of order, was seized by the populace, carried away in triumph, and impounded in the stocks; where the rueful aspect of magisterial dignity, partaking the penance which it was accustomed to inflict, excited a degree of merriment that tended to cool the general choler. But when the evening came, and no tidings were received of the restoration of the impressed men, the public rage broke forth with redoubled violence and uproar; and several thousands of people, assembling around the town-house where the General Court was sitting, assaulted the doors and windows of the building with stones and brickbats, and clamorously demanded that either their countrymen should be restored, or the English officers detained as hostages for their recovery. The governor, trusting to his popularity, ventured to address the exasperated multitude from the balcony of the town-house; and in a prudent and conciliating speech declared his disapprobation of the impressment, pledged his utmost endeavours to obtain the discharge of every one of the inhabitants who had been carried off, but withal mildly reproved

[1] Yet the most popular national song in England addresses mariners in this well known couplet: —

"We freely invite you, *not press you like slaves;*
For who should be free but the sons of the waves?"

Nothing can exceed the rapture of patriotic exultation with which this song is applauded in the crowded theatres of London during a French war, and at the very time when the Thames is covered with press-gangs.

the irregular proceedings of his auditors. Several wealthy and respectable citizens addressed the populace in the same strain, and entreated them to disperse and quietly await the result of the deliberations of the assembly. But the rioters, it has been supposed, were secretly encouraged by some persons of consideration, more willing to impel popular violence than to abide an open responsibility for its excesses, and were thus rendered the tools of superior craft, while they were abandoned at the same time to the unrestrained mastery of their own excited passions.

Deaf to the moderate counsels of the governor and the other orators by whom he was supported, they insisted with obstinate vehemence that the seizure and restraint of the English officers who were in the city was the only effectual method to procure the release of their fellow-townsmen. Shirley, escorted by a company of his friends and certain of the principal inhabitants, then retired with some difficulty to his own house, while the violence of the people was diverted to a different quarter by a report that a barge belonging to one of the English ships had just arrived in the harbour. Rushing tumultuously to seize it, they dragged a huge boat through the streets with as much ease and expedition as if it had been cleaving the water; and, having exhibited it in front of the governor's house, set fire to it and destroyed it. Next morning, the militia of the province were summoned to assist the governor in quelling the popular commotion; but their sympathies were all on the side of their countrymen, and they declined to appear in array. The insurgents now succeeded in securing the persons of the English officers who were on shore; and having planted a guard over some of them, they engaged others by their parole not to return to their ships without leave from the people. Shirley, finding that his authority was suspended, took refuge in the castle, whence he wrote to Commodore Knowles, representing the confusion into which he had plunged the province, and urging the immediate release of the persons impressed. But Knowles at first refused to hearken to any terms of accommodation, until his officers were permitted to rejoin him; and even threatened to bombard the town, if they should be longer detained. He offered also to send a strong body of marines to assist Shirley in reducing the rioters; an offer which the governor had too much sense and prudence to accept.

The assembly, meanwhile, were greatly perplexed. At first, they showed a disinclination to interfere in a controversy in which the provocation received by the people and the vindictive outrage committed by them were so nearly balanced; and were probably afraid of increasing the popular irritation by an ineffectual attempt to control it. It was not long, however, before they perceived the impropriety of leaving the governor unsupported in a struggle in which his conduct was entirely blameless. Some persons of high spirit, who had counselled him to remain at his post, and who, perhaps, regretted the inculpation which the popular cause sustained from the predicament in which he stood, began now angrily to question if his retirement should not be construed into an abdication of his functions. Perceiving the danger of farther indecision, and probably judging that the public fervor was spent, the assembly passed a series of resolutions, proclaiming that the conduct of the insurgents[1] was repugnant to municipal government

[1] From the terms of this official act it appears that a part of the insurgent force was composed of *negroes*. Notwithstanding the language now employed by the Massachusetts assembly, "there is reason to believe," says Burk, "that this assembly, like that of Virginia, winked at the popular excesses." It is plain, from a letter of Shirley, quoted by this writer,

and order [November 19, 1747] ; requiring all officers, civil and military, to render their instant and utmost aid to discourage and extinguish the popular tumult ; pledging themselves with their lives and estates to support the authority of the governor ; and engaging to adopt every possible means of redressing the injury by which the existing disorders were produced. The council, at the same time, issued a mandate for the liberation of the naval officers who were put in ward by the insurgents, and declared them to be under the special protection of the government. As soon as these proceedings were known, the popular ferment began to subside, and the insurgents to disperse. A few hours after, a general meeting of the inhabitants of Boston was convoked ; and though many persons openly protested against all measures opposed to the present spirit of the people, as tending to encourage a repetition of the arbitrary act which Knowles had committed, yet more moderate counsels prevailed with the majority ; and resolutions were adopted, which, while they expressed an indignant sense of the insult that the province had sustained from the British commodore, condemned the lawless and tumultuous violence by which the government was trampled under the feet of the populace. On the following day, the tranquillity of the town was completely restored ; the militia, of their own accord, repaired to attend the governor at the castle ; and, in the midst of a numerous concourse of approving citizens, reconducted him, with much parade, to his own house. Knowles soon after released the men whom he had impressed, and departed with his squadron, to the great satisfaction of the colonists. No attempt was made by the provincial authorities to punish any of the insurgents ; nor was any resentment openly expressed by the British government at the resolute and successful opposition by which its pretensions were resisted and defeated.[1]

In the following year [April, 1748], peace was restored between Britain, France, and Spain, by the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, — the most inglorious and impolitic compact to which Britain acceded since the Revolution of 1688. It was stipulated that all conquests on every side should be restored ; and the effect of this provision was, that the valuable acquisition of Cape Breton was surrendered to France,[2] in return for territorial restitutions, of which only the empress queen of Hungary and the States General of Holland reaped the advantage. This arrangement produced the most painful surprise and mortification in New England, where the people complained that a possession of the highest importance to their interests, the acquisition of their bravery, and the first conspicuous trophy of American glory, was sacrificed for the benefit of Germany and Holland. But if the substance of the concession was disadvantageous to America, the accessory provisions by which it was fortified were no less dishonorable to Britain ; for, in deference to the jealousy of the French and their impatient eagerness to regain Cape Breton, the British king agreed to send two Englishmen of rank and distinction to France as hostages for the due fulfilment of their sovereign's engagements. The treaty, indeed, betrays the strangest disregard of the interest and dignity of Britain. The right of English ships to navigate the American seas without liability to search and detention was

that the governor himself believed that the rioters were secretly encouraged, though not openly countenanced, by the principal inhabitants of Boston.

[1] Hutchinson. Burk.

[2] We have witnessed similar instances of restitution, on the part of the British court, of Canada, which was conquered in 1629 by Sir David Kirk, and of Nova Scotia, which was subdued in 1654 by Cromwell.

not even alluded to; although this claim was the original source of the hostilities between Britain and Spain. The encroachments of the French on the territory of the Six Nations, and their grand project of connecting, by a chain of military posts, their settlements on the rivers St. Lawrence and Mississippi, were passed over with a silence which might be construed as importing acquiescence in those formidable pretensions. The limits of Nova Scotia were left in the same state of uncertainty which had already supplied occasion of quarrel; for the adjustment of them was again remitted to the experienced inefficacy of the discussions and negotiations of commissaries, to be named by the French and British kings,—with this most absurd proviso (which might well seem the suggestion of a satirist of both parties), "that all things shall be replaced on the footing on which they were *or ought to have been* prior to the commencement of hostilities." In short, after a war which proved calamitous and distressing to every quarter of the British empire, and advanced the national debt of Britain to the sum of eighty millions sterling, the nation concluded a peace by which she parted with the single dear-bought prize that her arms had won, without procuring in return the slightest national advantage, the redress of any part of the injury of which she had justly complained, or the recognition or additional security of any one of her rights which had been previously invaded. Not one of the belligerents was a gainer by the war. To all of them the termination of it was advantageous, except to Britain, where the reasons and purposes for which it was originally undertaken seemed to have been entirely forgotten.

The cession of Cape Breton, however disagreeable to the inhabitants of New England, added force to the claim, which for some time they had urged at the British court, for reimbursement of the expenses attending the enterprise by which that island was conquered. Some members of the ministerial cabinet for a while contended that it would be a sufficient indemnification, if a sum were granted adequate to the redemption of the bills issued by the provincial governments on account of the expedition, at their depreciated value. But Bollan, one of the provincial agents, exposed the unfairness of this proposition, and clearly demonstrated that the depreciation of the value of these bills was as effectually a charge incurred by the people as if a corresponding proportion of the bills themselves had been retired from circulation by taxes; and, strenuously insisting for the original value of the bills, rejected all proposals of compromise. The British ministers finally acceded to his demand; and the reimbursement of the New England States was sanctioned by an act of parliament.[1] In conformity with the desire of some wise politicians of Massachusetts, the amount of the indemnity awarded to this province was remitted in silver and copper money; and a vigorous and successful attempt was now at last made to retire all the provincial bills of credit from circulation, and to substitute a metallic in place of a paper currency. [1749.] Though it was manifest that the fluctuating value of paper money was productive of great injustice and inconvenience,[2] and that with its depreciation the morals of the people were

[1] Stat. 21 George II., Cap. 23. There was accorded by this act, to Massachusetts, £183,649 2*s.* 7*d.*; to New Hampshire, £16,355 13*s.* 4*d.*; to Connecticut, £28,863 19*s.* 1*d.*; and to Rhode Island, £6,322 12*s.* 10*d.* These sums fell far short of the entire expense that the colonies had incurred; and much larger sums were granted by the same act to indemnify the expenses of the empress queen of Hungary, the king of Sardinia, the Duke of Brunswick, and other European allies of the British court.

[2] "A single fact, recorded in a note to a sermon preached on the fast-day, 1748, by the

proportionally corrupted, this change was not accomplished without an obstinate opposition, in which a band of stock-jobbers, traders on borrowed capital, and other individuals who extracted a partial advantage from the public detriment, were supported in their selfish policy by popular ignorance and credulity. In some tumultuous assemblies that took place in Boston and its neighbourhood, a popular cry was raised that paper money was the only advantageous currency for the poor, because it was not worth hoarding; and that silver and gold would fall entirely to the share of the rich, and be either exported or hoarded, without descending among the laboring classes, who must either be deprived of employment or accept commodities at an adjusted price as the wages of their labor. A majority of the assembly, however, persisted in the necessary measures for restoring the currency of the province to a healthy state; yet not without apprehensions of some formidable commotion of a deluded populace instigated by crafty and interested counsellors. It was the less difficult at this time to excite disturbance in New England, on account of the number of persons recently disbanded from the military force collected during the war, and who did not readily resume their interrupted habits of sobriety and industry. But the fears of the wise and the hopes of the dishonest proved, happily, groundless. A feeble spark of insurrection was instantly smothered by a general expression of contempt and derision. The people very soon perceived that it was as easy for a frugal, industrious man to obtain silver as it had been to obtain paper; and, passing from one extreme to another, they expressed ere long a decided aversion to paper currency even on the most limited scale. However, about two years after, the British government judged it expedient to secure the permanence of this innovation, and prevent the recurrence of the relative evil, by a parliamentary interposition, which, on account of its professed object, seems not to have awakened any jealousy in the colonists. The act of parliament for this purpose was confined to the States of New England,[1] of which the several assemblies were commanded to call in and discharge all the bills of credit they had issued, and prohibited from ever again issuing such bills, except with a circulation limited to the current year, and after sufficient provision for discharging them within that period. Any governor, whether appointed by the crown or elected by the colonists, who should ratify an act of assembly derogating from the parliamentary statute, was to incur the penalty of a perpetual incapacity of public office. An exception was, however, admitted in the case of extraordinary emergencies created by war or invasion. But it was declared absolutely unlawful for the provincial assemblies ever after to admit, as they had heretofore done, bills of credit as a legal tender for the payment of private debts.[2]

Rev. Mr. Appleton, of Cambridge, gives an impressive view of the depreciation, with its baneful effects. An aged widow, whose husband died more than forty years before that time, had three pounds a year settled on her instead of her dower; and that sum would at that day, and at the place where she still lived, procure toward her support two cords of wood, four bushels of Indian corn, one bushel of rye, one bushel of malt, fifty pounds of pork, and sixty pounds of beef. In 1748, she could not purchase more than one eighth part of that amount of the necessaries of life. And this, adds the humane preacher, is, in a measure, the situation of many widows in the land." Holmes.

[1] The American historians, in general, have erroneously represented this act as extending its provisions to all the colonies. It was in the year 1763, that bills of credit were abolished in all the American provinces by the act of parliament, 4 George III., Cap. 34.

[2] Stat. 24 George II., Cap. 53 (A D. 1751). Smollett. Millot. Hutchinson. Minot's *Continuation of the History of Massachusetts.* Burk. Belknap. Trumbull. The comparative

Notwithstanding the indifference displayed by Great Britain for the wishes and the advantage of her American colonies, in the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, yet the surprising exertions which they made during the war strongly aroused her attention to their situation and prospects, and to the interests of her own dominion over them; and many important schemes and considerations relative to America were entertained and pondered about this time in the British cabinet. The situation of Nova Scotia demanded immediate attention, which was additionally invited by a project that was suggested for combining the improvement of the British dominion in this province with the benefit of a great number of English soldiers and sailors, whom the peace deprived of subsistence, and for whose behoof justice and policy equally demanded that some public provision should speedily be made. Even if the commissaries of France and England should succeed in preventing a renewal of disputes between the two nations, by a peaceful and satisfactory adjustment of the boundaries of Nova Scotia, something more was necessary to render the British dominion secure in this province, where the inhabitants, it was well known, were discontented with their subjection to Britain, and cherished both the desire and the hope of being reunited to the French monarchy. Upon every rupture or dispute between the two crowns, they communicated intelligence to their countrymen in Canada, and intrigued in behalf of France with the adjacent Indian tribes; and during the late war they had been manifestly on the point of breaking into open revolt. A scheme was now projected by certain of the English ministers, and especially by the Earl of Halifax, president of the Board of Trade and Plantations, of introducing a British population into this territory, by encouraging a number of the disbanded officers, troops, and ships' crews of the late war-establishment to repair thither as permanent settlers. The parliament approved this design, and voted in the first instance towards its execution the sum of forty thousand pounds. Advantageous terms of settlement, being tendered by the government, were accepted by nearly four thousand adventurers, who, with their families, were transported at the public expense to the Bay of Chebucto, where they built the town of Halifax. They were accompanied by Colonel Edward Cornwallis, who was appointed governor and commander-in-chief of Nova Scotia. The French colonists were allowed peaceably to remain in the country; and having pledged themselves to submit to the English government, with the qualification that they should never be required to bear arms against France, they came to be denominated French Neutrals. The British parliament continued annually to repeat pecuniary grants for the support of this settlement, which, in the year 1755, had cost the nation upwards of four hundred thousand pounds. Its establishment was viewed with much apprehension by the French, who, though they did not think proper to promulgate their displeasure, clandestinely employed emissaries to incite the Indians to harass the

value of the currencies in the several British colonies, in the year 1748, appears from the following table (extracted from Douglass) of their exchanges with London.

For £100 sterling,	New England	1,100 currency.
	New York	190
	East Jersey	190
	West Jersey	180
	Pennsylvania	180
	Maryland	200
	Virginia	120 to 125
	North Carolina	1,000
	South Carolina	750

British colonists with hostilities calculated to deter them from extending or improving their plantations. Partly from this cause, and doubtless in part from the character of the first settlers and the habit they contracted of depending on Britain for support, they made little progress either in agriculture or in fisheries; and the colony, subsisting chiefly on the sums expended by the military and naval forces maintained there by the parent state, almost entirely failed to answer the expectations of its projectors.[1]

But the policy which the British government was to pursue with regard to the older colonial dependencies of the empire in America was a subject of deeper interest and nicer care. The unexpected vigor that New England displayed in the conquest of Cape Breton, the glory that she gained by that achievement at a time when the British arms were unsuccessful in every other quarter of the world, and the spirit of independence which kept pace with her rising strength, excited some perplexity. The colonies, it was evidently seen, were rapidly advancing from national pupilage to manhood; and the inquiry was naturally suggested, Should not their institutions undergo some corresponding alteration? Should not a new system of law, policy, and mutual correspondence be devised, to supply between the parent state and her dependencies the fast relaxing bonds of relative strength and weakness?[2] From the measures and propositions of the British ministers it may be inferred that their minds were occupied with these considerations; though they neither projected nor executed any scheme of policy worthy of the emergency, and probably at length calmed their solicitude by confusedly trusting to the influence of habitual subjection on America, or by figuring with fond hope a postponement of the inevitable crisis, and of the necessity of making provision for it. Indeed, it is certain that the British ministers were but imperfectly acquainted with the real growth and condition of the American provinces, where the continual formation of new settlements, which long remained unknown, or little known, to the parent state, and impervious alike to her arms and authority, not only enlarged the colonial population, but fostered sentiments of independence, hardy habits, and enterprising dispositions. No wise, enlarged prospective system in relation to America was ever cultivated in the British cabinet, where colonial affairs (except in the emergencies of war or negotiation with rival European powers) were customarily viewed rather as the province of the Board of Trade, than as included within the higher departments of state policy; and, however dissatisfied the ministers might be from time to time with the aspect of this important branch of the British empire, they were embarrassed in the projection of extensive schemes by their inexperience in the conception and application of relative general principles, and their imperfect acquaintance with local details.

The most obvious means of fortifying the British dominion over the colonies, and rendering their progressive resources tributary to the strength of the supreme government of the empire, was to carry into practical effect the pretended right of subjecting America to the direct taxation of the parliament of Great Britain. If this had been accomplished, the resources of the American provinces and the industry of their inhabitants would have

[1] Smollett. Hewit. Holmes.

[2] "The colonies," said Lord Chancellor Northington, some years after, in the British House of Lords, "are become too big to be governed by the laws they at first set out with. They have, therefore, run into confusion, and it will be the policy of this country to form a plan of laws for them."

been mortgaged for ever to the support of regal and aristocratical grandeur and of European luxury and wars; nor could a more effectual process have been devised for the subjugation of liberty in England itself. We have seen a proposition to tax America originate in Britain so early as the close of the seventeenth century,[1] and the same project subsequently reproduced and recommended to the British nation by Sir William Keith.[2] When the war with Spain broke out, in the year 1739, Keith's scheme, which, among other particulars, proposed, "*that the duties of stamps upon parchment and paper in England be extended by act of parliament to all the American plantations*," was suggested to Sir Robert Walpole, as a politic device for evading the necessity of imposing additional taxes on England. Walpole is said to have received the proposition with a smile, and to have negatived it by this memorable reply:—"I will leave *that* to some of my successors who have more courage than I have, and are less friends to commerce than I am. It has been a maxim with me, during my administration, to encourage the trade of the American colonies in the utmost latitude; nay, it has been necessary to pass over some irregularities in their trade with Europe; for, by encouraging them to an extensive growing foreign commerce, if they gain five hundred thousand pounds, I am convinced that in two years afterwards full two hundred and fifty thousand pounds of their gains will be in his Majesty's exchequer, by the labor and produce of this kingdom, as immense quantities of every kind of our manufactures go thither; and as they increase in their foreign trade, more of our produce will be wanted. This is taxing them more agreeably to their own constitution and ours." In 1748, three years after the New England enterprise against Cape Breton, the project of taxing America was again resumed, and so far entertained by the British cabinet, that Pelham, the prime minister, communicated it to the various provincial governments, and desired to know their opinions with regard to it. Of the answers which they returned no farther account has been preserved than that they assigned such reasons as induced the ministry to abandon the design.[3]

Another measure, which succeeded the relinquished purpose of taxing the American colonies, was the repetition of an attempt, of which we have already witnessed several instances, to invade their chartered systems of liberty. A bill was introduced into the British parliament, in the year 1748, by which all the American charters were abolished, and the king's instructions to the provincial governors were rendered equivalent to legal enactments. During the disputes that prevailed between Massachusetts and the crown, about twenty years before, this stretch of arbitrary power might have been attempted with some likelihood of success. But the opportunity was irretrievably lost; and now, every circumstance in the relative situation of Britain and America combined to increase the odium of the project, and the efficacy of the resistance which it was calculated to provoke. To the valor of the Americans Britain was indebted for the principal, and almost the solitary achievement, by which her wounded honor was avenged and her military reputation supported in the late war; and it was by the conquest which the Americans had won for her that she was enabled to purchase a peace. A more unsuitable juncture for an attempt to bereave them of their liberties could hardly be imagined. The bill, as

[1] Appendix I., *ante*.
[2] Book VIII., Chap. II., *ante*.
[3] *Political Register for* 1767. Gordon. Burk. Walsh's *Appeal*.

might easily have been foreseen, was vigorously opposed by the provincial agents in England, and especially by the agents of Massachusetts; its injustice to America, and the danger which British liberty would incur from the establishment of such a precedent, were clearly demonstrated; and the ministers of the crown, after a protracted discussion, finding the obstructions to their wishes insurmountable, withdrew the bill, and once more desisted from the impolitic controversy which they had so rashly renewed. The act of parliament which was passed shortly after for the regulation of bills of credit in New England, and to which we have already had occasion to advert, was believed by some American politicians to have been a device of petty pride on the part of the British court to cover the disgrace of this defeat.[1] In default of a parliamentary abrogation of the American constitutions, an attempt was made by the British ministers to effect a practical enlargement of the royal prerogative in several of the provinces, by the arbitrary strain of the powers which they conferred and of the policy which they dictated in the commissions and instructions to the provincial governors who were appointed by the crown. Of this encroaching policy, which produced no other effect than to exercise the defensive spirit of liberty in America and rouse it to greater vigilance and jealousy, some instances will present themselves in the progress of our narration.[2]

The most politic of all the schemes that were at this time [1749] proposed in the British cabinet was a project of introducing an ecclesiastical establishment, derived from the model of the church of England, and particularly the order of bishops, into North America. The pretext assigned for this innovation was, that many non-juring clergymen of the Episcopal persuasion, attached to the cause of the Pretender, had recently emigrated from Britain to America, and that it was desirable to create a board of ecclesiastical dignitaries for the purpose of controlling their proceedings and counteracting their influence; but doubtless it was intended, in part at least, to answer the ends of strengthening royal prerogative in America, — of giving to the state, through the church of England, an accession of influence over the colonists, — and of imparting to their institutions a greater degree of aristocratical character and tendency. The views of the statesmen by whom this design was entertained were inspired by the suggestion of Butler, Bishop of Durham, and were confirmed and seconded by the zealous cooperation of Secker, Archbishop of Canterbury, and the society instituted for the propagation of the gospel. This society had received very erroneous impressions of the religious character of the colonists in general from some worthless and incapable missionaries which it sent to America; and Secker, who partook these impressions, had promulgated them from the pulpit in a strain of vehement and presumptuous invective. Such demeanour by no means tended to conciliate the favor of the Americans to the proposed ecclesiastical establishment. From the intolerance and bitterness of spirit disclosed by the chief promoters of the scheme, it was natural to forebode a total absence of moderation in the conduct of it.

The bare announcement of it provoked accordingly the utmost alarm and the strongest expressions of aversion and opposition in New England, of

[1] Minot.

[2] "While the ministers of kings were looking into their laws and records to decide what should be the rights of men in the colonies, nature was establishing a system of freedom in America, which they could neither comprehend nor discern." Williams's *History of Vermont*, Preface.

which the popular assemblies and leading politicians had for many years constituted themselves the guardians of the general liberties of America. So faithfully did they sustain this generous part on the present occasion, that their opposition was not relaxed by an offer to exempt New England from the operation of the projected measure. And yet it was one of the New England States, and one of which the inhabitants in general were noted for the zeal with which they continued to cherish the primitive sentiments, opinions, and institutions of the Puritans, which supplied the only considerable party in America by which the project of the English ministry was cordially approved. In the year 1722, Cutler, the rector of Yale College, in Connecticut, and several other clergymen of this province, suddenly and publicly retracted their previous profession of the validity of Presbyterian or Congregational ordination, proclaimed themselves converts to Episcopacy, and declared their conviction that no ordination to ecclesiastical functions could be validly derived except from the bishops of the church of England. This schism excited at the time no small astonishment and mortification in the colony. A public conference and disputation took place, in presence of the governor, between the heads of the provincial clergy who adhered to their primitive ordinances and the seceders to Episcopacy; and the issue of the discussion was, that about half of the votaries of Episcopacy were reconverted to their original opinions, — a result which was regarded with disappointment in Connecticut, on account of its inadequacy to the general desire, — but which must impart a feeling of satisfaction and surprise to all who are familiar with the common issue of such polemical debates. It is less surprising, that those of the dissidents, whom the controversy failed to reduce to their original system, clung with increased ardor and tenacity to the novelties they had embraced. By their arguments and example, the Episcopal party in Connecticut had subsequently gained an accession of votaries less remarkable for their numbers than their zeal, and by whom the proposed legal establishment of Episcopacy in America was now hailed with the liveliest expressions of hope, joy, and approbation.[1]

But the general voice of New England, supported and reëchoed by the dissenters from the established church in Britain, overpowered the purpose both of the British and the American partisans of Episcopacy. It was in vain that the British court endeavoured to silence the opposition of some of the most popular clergymen of New England by tempting offers of ecclesiastical preferment; and no less ineffectual were the assurances, subsequently tendered, that the innovation should not extend to New England, and that the jurisdiction of the bishops appointed in the other colonies should be strictly limited to the clergy, and should not be permitted to extend to the laity. These propositions — even backed by the offer, that, if the authority of the bishops was recognized in America, their emoluments would be provided (in the first instance, at least) by the British treasury — could neither subdue nor mitigate the fixed aversion with which the people of New England, and especially the citizens of Massachusetts, contemplated a project of intrusting any degree of power to a body of ecclesiastical functionaries dependent on the crown. They regarded with appre-

[1] About three years after (in 1752), there were in Pennsylvania nine Episcopal ministers and twenty-seven Episcopal churches; in New Jersey, eight Episcopal ministers; in New York, twelve; in Connecticut, eight ministers and sixteen churches; in Rhode Island, five ministers and six churches; in Massachusetts, ten ministers and ten churches; and in New Hampshire, one minister and one church. Holmes.

hensive jealousy that principle of increase inherent in every form or description of power irresponsible to the general will, and peculiarly incident, as they justly imagined, to ecclesiastical authority. Some of the leading personages in the British cabinet were at length induced to express an open dissent from the opinions of their colleagues on this important point, — fearing, perhaps, that Episcopal grandeur and authority in England would be endangered by the exemplification of a simpler aud more primitive model of Episcopacy in America. After much passionate discussion, fruitlessly prolonged by Secker and the partisans of his opinions, the cabinet of Britain finally abandoned, or at least postponed, the design of giving a legal establishment to Episcopacy in the colonies.[1]

The issue of all these discussions and deliberations was, that the British government, instead of altering, continued to pursue, its wonted narrow, unimproved colonial policy even more strictly than before; and the only new measure that was carried into effect was one which extended the operation of that principle which had long been openly avowed, that the colonists were a dependent people, existing for the benefit of the inhabitants of Great Britain, and that it was lawful and expedient that they should be restricted to pursuits tending to the enrichment of the parent state, and excluded from every branch of industry, however beneficial to themselves, which might render them the competitors of British merchants and manufacturers. The importation of iron from America had been discouraged hitherto by heavy duties; while a great part of the supply of material on which the manufacturers of iron in Britain depended was procured by an expensive and disadvantageous commerce with Sweden. The idea was now suggested of drawing these supplies from America, where, instead of the money annually remitted to Sweden, British goods would be accepted in exchange; and with this politic view there was combined the less liberal purpose of checking a successful attempt which had recently been made to establish the manufacture of iron in New England. [1750.] An act of parliament[2] was accordingly passed, authorizing the importation of pig and bar iron from the American colonies, duty-free, into the port of London; but the exemption was strictly confined to this port; and the iron conveyed thither, in virtue of the act, was not to be afterwards transported farther than ten miles into the country, except for the use of the royal dock-yards. The object of this restriction was to prevent any diminution of the profits which the proprietors of mines and woods in England derived from the supplies of mineral produce and fuel which they afforded to the country manufacturers of iron. In the metropolis and its immediate neighbourhood, the manufacturers depended entirely on foreign supplies. In concurrence with provisions so cautiously adapted to the protection of every British interest, it was ordained, for the farther advantage of the iron manufacture in Britain, that no mill or other engine for slitting or rolling of iron, nor any plating forge, nor any furnace for making steel, should be erected or continued in any of the American colonies, under the penalty of a heavy fine, and of the destruction of the machine as a public nuisance.[3] Four of the machines prohibited by this arbitrary law were already established in Massachusetts.[4]

[1] Trumbull. Minot. Holmes. Gordon. *Annual Register for* 1765.

[2] Stat. 23 George II., Cap. 29. See Note IX., at the end of the volume.

[3] The other commercial statutes passed about this time in relation to America are noticed in the close of Book IX., *ante*.

[4] Smollett. Minot. "Our nailers," says an American writer, in reference to this period,

There was one class of reasoners in the parent state, whose views seem to have been not ineffectually pressed upon the ministers of the crown, and who predicted the continued submission of the colonies, as the result of a constant and ample importation of negro slaves into America. We have seen under what conditions Queen Elizabeth permitted the rise of the British slave-trade, with what fatal vigor it increased, and how soon the mask of benevolence to the negroes was discarded. Britain had since become the greatest slave-trading state in the world, and was as desirous to obtain a monopoly of this as of other branches of commerce. In the year 1745, there was published at London a treatise, entitled, *The African Slave Trade, the Great Pillar and Support of the British Plantation Trade in America.* "If the negro trade," says the author of this treatise, "be thrown into the hands of our rivals, and our colonies are to depend on the labor of white men, they will either soon be undone, or shake off their dependence on the crown of England. For white men cannot be obtained so cheaply, nor the labor of a sufficient number be had for the expense of their maintenance only, as we have of the Africans." "Were it possible," he continues, "for white men to answer the end of negroes in planting, must we not drain our own country of husbandmen, manufacturers, and mechanics? Might not the consequence be, that our colonies would interfere with the manufactures of these kingdoms, as the Palatines attempted in Pennsylvania? In such case, indeed, we might have just reason to dread the prosperity of our colonies; but while we can supply them abundantly with negroes, we need be under no such apprehensions."[1]

It was not in the parent state alone and her ministerial cabinet that an increased attention was now directed to the political relations between Britain and America, and to the manifest truth, that a change in these relations was inevitably portended by the great alteration which had already taken place, and which every year was enlarging, in the relative strength and weakness of the two countries. Superior power and fancied expediency, instead of the everlasting principles of justice, had been the basis of a great part of the colonial policy of the parent state; and while this basis was continually becoming more narrow and insecure, the policy to which it administered support was rendered more, instead of less, burdensome and illiberal. These important facts, and their consequences, were perceived and pondered by the Americans; and views and speculations corresponding to their altered condition and prospects exercised the thoughts of some of their leading politicians. We have seen how early the idea of independence was suggested to the colonists by the jealous suspicions or interested artifice which prompted Nicholson, Quarry, and other partisans of royal prerogative in America, as well as the members of the Board of Trade in England, to impute to them the design of realizing this idea; and how uniformly the policy of the British government was calculated to recommend

"can now afford spikes and large nails cheaper than from England." Douglass. It is remarkable that Hutchinson invariably refrains from noticing the introduction of laws discreditable to the justice and liberality of British policy. He [illegible]s in general terms to the existing commercial restrictions, in the close of his second v[illegible], and exhorts his countrymen to patience and filial resignation to the will of the parent state, whose protection they enjoyed.

[1] This is an anonymous work; the author merely styling himself *A British Merchant.* There is a copy of it in the British Museum. It was probably in answer to it that there was published, a few years after, a pamphlet (noticed in Clarkson's *History of the Abolition of the Slave-trade*) entitled *An Essay in Vindication of the Colonies of America*, and containing the most indignant reprobation of slavery, and of the pretence that necessity or sound policy could ever be opposed to the dictates of Christianity.

independence to the Americans, by associating it with the strongest impressions of dignity and interest. The grand political error of that selfish and harshly domineering system, first disclosed by the *Navigation Act*, was, that, in proportion to its endurance, it became no less dangerous to pursue than to abandon it. To pursue it was to increase an offensive burden on the colonists, in proportion to their capacity of resisting its imposition;—and this was the course which the parent state actually embraced. To abandon it was to make a humiliating avowal of injustice, or a dangerous concession to the strength of a people whose weakness had been abused;—a stretch of magnanimity unexampled in the conduct of any sovereign state. It was wittily and argumentatively replied to the American complaints of the increasing exactions of Britain, about twenty years after this period, by a distinguished champion[1] of the British policy, that *the ox has no reason to complain of the aggravation of the burdens that were imposed on the calf.* Of this similitude, which was much admired at the time, the most significant feature consists in the frank avowal that the Americans were regarded by the politicians of Great Britain as an interior and dependent race of beings.[2] The hypothetical complaint of the ox would be well deserving of attention, if time had developed in him a faculty superior to brutal strength; and the increased pressure of the yoke of servitude upon him would be equally unjust and impolitic, if his ability and inclination to resist were proportioned to his capacity of enduring it.

In the actual condition of North America, at this period, there were two circumstances unfavorable to national independence, or at least to its speedy attainment. One of these was the defect of harmony, union, and concert among the several provincial governments; the other was the vicinity of the French settlements, where there existed at once a people unfriendly to the British colonists, and a government hostile, for its own sake, to American liberty. The diminution of religious bigotry, and the increasing sense of common interest, had for many years contributed to foster a principle of union and mutual dependence among the respective provinces, which the languor and seeming indifference of Britain toward all that related to the defence and security of her colonies tended farther to promote. Frequently had she disappointed them of her promised succour, and taught them first to indulge hopes of safety and glory, and then to refer the accomplishment of these hopes to their own unaided valor and force. As early as the year 1643, we have seen[3] a federal league established among the States of New England, for the purpose of increasing the vigor and efficiency of their national strength. About a century afterwards, the project of a kindred institution, embracing all the American colonies, was suggested by a writer, whose work, entitled "A Description of the English Province of *Carolana*, by the Spaniards called *Florida*, and by the French, *La Louisiane*," was published in the year 1741. Daniel Coxe, the author of this tract, was the son of Dr. Coxe who in the end of the seventeenth century speculated largely in colonial property, and acquired a considerable share of the proprietary interest in New Jersey, as well as of some more dubious claims to the territory comprehended within the colonial establishments

[1] Dr. Johnson.

[2] Dean Swift, in one of his works, describing the contemptuous treatment of Ireland by some of its British rulers, says, "They looked down upon that kingdom *as if it had been one of their colonies of outcasts in America.*"

[3] Book II., Chap. III., *ante*.

of the Spaniards in North America.[1] In the preface to his work, he proposed, for the more effectual defence of the British settlements against the hostile vicinity of the French and the Indians, "that all the colonies appertaining to the crown of Great Britain on the northern continent of America be united under a legal, regular, and firm establishment; over which a lieutenant or supreme governor may be constituted and appointed to preside on the spot, to whom the governors of each colony shall be subordinate." "It is farther humbly proposed," this writer continued, "that two deputies shall be annually elected by the council and assembly of each province, who are to be in the nature of a great council or general convention of the estates of the colonies; and by the order, consent, or approbation of the lieutenant or governor-general, shall meet together, consult and advise for the good of the whole, settle and appoint particular quotas or proportions of money, men, provisions, &c., that each respective government is to raise for their mutual defence and safety, as well as, if necessary, for offence and invasion of their enemies; in all which cases the governor-general, or lieutenant, is to have a negative, but not to enact any thing without their concurrence or that of the majority of them."

In this plan (which is developed at considerable length and supported with great force of argument by its author)[2] we behold the germ of that more celebrated, though less original project, which was again ineffectually recommended by an American statesman in the year 1754; and which, not many years after, was actually embraced by his countrymen and rendered instrumental to the achievement of their independence. It was only some of the more enterprising politicians of America that were favorable to the scheme of a federal union of the several provinces. The people in general were disinclined to this change, from which they apprehended an increase of the efficacy of royal prerogative, and an encroachment on their separate and peculiar provincial usages and institutions. They reasonably concluded that the authority of the crown would be invigorated by an arrangement which must render its administration more simple and compact; and they naturally regarded with suspicion a project which had been supported by Nicholson and other politicians devoted to the interests of arbitrary power. A remarkable instance occurred, about this time, of the keen and even morbid jealousy of British aggression, which prevailed in New England. The assembly of Virginia having undertaken a general revision of its legislative code, a similar proceeding was recommended by the king to the assembly of Massachusetts [1751], where all parties united in acknowledging that it *might* be productive of results the most advantageous and desirable. Many of the old and yet subsisting laws of Massachusetts contained provisions which were now universally admitted to be injudicious and inconvenient, and which every body would have been glad to have subjected to legislatorial expurgation, if a satisfactory assurance could have been obtained that no attempt would be made to give a further extension or insidious bias to the application of this principle. But the majority of the assembly entertained a rooted jealousy of the designs of the crown, and finally refused to comply with the king's suggestion, from the apprehension that some latent purpose of encroachment was couched beneath it.[3]

The subjugation of the French settlements in America was an object to which the most ardent wishes of the British colonists were directed; and

[1] See a note to Book IV., Chap. I., *ante*.
[2] Coxe's *Carolana*, Preface.
[3] Hutchinson.

when we consider the scenes of danger and calamity to which they had been exposed by the vicinity of this rival power and people, it seems almost superfluous to inquire for any farther cause of the wishes which they cherished. But when we find that the Americans firmly entertained the conviction that Britain was restrained, by regard to the stability of her own colonial dominion, and by apprehensions of American independence, from attempting the reduction of the French settlements, — it seems not unreasonable to conclude that their own wishes and views were secretly flowing towards the same object which they figured to themselves as the source of contemplative alarm to the parent state. More than forty years before the present period, there prevailed, as we have already seen, in the minds of some of the colonists of New England, a violent jealousy and mistrust of the real designs and policy of Great Britain with respect to the French empire in America. The sentiments of these persons, indeed, were doubtless in part the passionate suggestions of irritation and disappointment. But they had subsequently been propagated in the other American provinces, and embraced as the result of deliberate reflection by many intelligent men. Some insight into the opinions of the Americans on this point is afforded by the interesting work of Peter Kalm, a sensible and accomplished Swede, and the friend of his illustrious countryman, Linnæus, who visited North America in 1748, and for two years after continued to reside and travel in several of the provinces, and to explore and record the most interesting particulars of their condition. In the various States which he visited, he conversed with the persons most distinguished in the walks of science, literature, and politics;[1] and the views which he has expressed in the following curious passage represent the impressions he derived from the communications of those individuals.

"It is of great advantage to the crown of England," says this writer, "that the North American colonies are near a country under the government of the French, like Canada. *There is reason to believe that the king never was earnest in his attempts to expel the French from their possessions there*, though it might have been done with little difficulty; for the English colonies in this part of the world have increased so much in their number of inhabitants and in their riches, that they almost vie with Old England. Now, in order to keep up the authority and trade of the mother country, and to answer several other purposes, they are forbidden to establish new manufactures, which would turn to the disadvantage of the British commerce; they are not allowed to dig for any gold or silver, unless they send it to England immediately; they have not the liberty of trading to any parts that do not belong to the British dominions, excepting some settled places; and foreign traders are not allowed to send their ships to them. *These and some other restrictions occasion the inhabitants of the English colonies to grow less tender for their mother country.* This coldness is kept up by the many foreigners, such as Germans, Dutch, and French, settled here, and living among the English, who commonly have no particular attachment to Old England. Add to this, likewise, that many people can never be contented with their possessions, though they be ever so great, and will always

[1] Among others, he conversed intimately with Dr. Franklin (Kalm's *Travels*, *passim*, and Franklin's *Correspondence*), — a circumstance, which, coupled with the strain of the passage quoted in the text, may be thought to justify the surmise that has been entertained, that Franklin, in subsequently recommending the conquest of Canada to the British nation, foresaw consequences from this measure very different from those which he argumentatively predicted.

be desirous of getting more, and of enjoying the pleasure which arises from change; and their over great liberty and their prosperity often lead them to licentiousness. *I have been told by English subjects, and not only by such as were natives of America, but even by those who had emigrated from Europe, that the English colonies in North America, within the space of thirty or fifty years hence, would be able to form a state by themselves, entirely independent of Old England.* But as the whole country which lies along the seashore is unguarded, while on the land side it is harassed by the French in time of war, these dangerous neighbours are sufficient to prevent the connection of the colonies with their mother country from being quite broken off; *the English government has, therefore, sufficient reason to consider the French in North America as the best guardians of the submission of their colonies.*"[1]

From the work of this philosophic traveller, and other sources of information, we are enabled to glean some interesting particulars illustrative of the internal condition of the North American provinces in the middle of the eighteenth century. Population had of late years advanced with a vigorous pace in all the States, but with peculiar and astonishing rapidity in Pennsylvania, which in the year 1749 contained two hundred and twenty thousand, and four years afterwards two hundred and fifty thousand inhabitants. In 1755, the population of this province amounted to two hundred and eighty thousand.[2] A considerable part of this increase was derived from Germany, from which in the summer of 1749 no fewer than twelve thousand emigrants arrived at Philadelphia. In the year 1751, there emigrated to Pennsylvania four thousand three hundred and seventeen Germans, and one thousand persons from England and Ireland. The greater number of these emigrants consisted of people who sold their service for a term of years, in order to defray the expense of their transportation. Sometimes aged parents pledged the labor of their children for this purpose,—converting thereby what proved a burden in Europe into a means of independence in America; and in many instances, German emigrants, who brought with them a competent stock of money, chose to commence their American career as indented servants, in order to acquire cheaply some experience of the country and acquaintance with its language. A penalty was inflicted on any clergyman celebrating the marriage of an indented servant without the consent of his master, or of a negro with an inhabitant of European extraction. The Quakers, in general (so Kalm says), had become rather less than more scrupulous than at first with regard to the employment of negro slaves; "and now," he adds, "they have as many negroes as other people."[3] Yet many of the inhabitants condemned slavery

[1] Kalm. This was published in Sweden several years before the British conquest of Canada.

[2] In Moheau's admirable work, *Recherches sur la Population*, &c., it is stated, that Dr. Franklin described the population of Pennsylvania as amounting to one million in the year 1751. If Franklin ever gave any such exaggerated description, it must have been done to serve some political purpose.

[3] Thomas Chalkley, a minister highly and justly renowned among the Quakers for his active and unwearied zeal and his profound and ardent piety, published a journal of his numerous travels and ministerial labors, from the beginning till about the middle of the eighteenth century, in all the American States, and in several of the West India Islands, where he appears to have accurately noted and conscientiously rebuked every existing evil, *except negro slavery.* It is curious to contrast his steady, resentful retrospect to the ancient persecution of the Quakers in New England, with his blindness to the actual oppression inflicted by the institution of negro slavery, and the existing support which this institution derived from the accession of his fellow-sectaries.

as repugnant to Christianity; and some peculiarly zealous Quakers in Philadelphia had set the example of liberating their slaves, after the enjoyment of their service for a certain time.

The comparatively gentle treatment of slaves in this part of America may be inferred from the facts, that very few were now imported from abroad, and that great numbers were reared on the plantations of the colonists. A planter killing his negro was declared by law guilty of a capital felony; but no instance had ever occurred of the actual execution of this dictate of even-handed justice. A few years before, a master who had murdered his slave was persuaded by the magistrates to depart from the province, that they might not be compelled to afford the negroes the triumph of witnessing his punishment. A strong though silent testimony against negro slavery, and against every principle hostile to the interest and happiness of the human race, was afforded by the members of the Moravian brotherhood, who for many years had resorted in large and increasing numbers to Pennsylvania. Count Zinzendorf, the president or bishop of this religious society, visited America in 1742. "His behaviour," says Kalm, "led many of the Pennsylvanians to believe that he was disordered in his intellects,"—a reproach which the apostolic zeal of the first Christian pastors attracted, and which the count seems to have equally merited by the rare elevation of his views, the fervor of his piety, and the energy of his labors. By him and his associates were founded the Moravian missions among the Indians, which were afterwards pursued with the most admirable virtue and success.[1] In their neatness, and the excellence of their general economy, the settlements of the Moravians are allowed by a Quaker writer to have surpassed those of all the other inhabitants of Pennsylvania. Philadelphia, in the year 1749, contained eleven places of worship;[2] and two years after, its population was estimated at seventeen thousand persons, of whom six thousand were negroes. Three printers were established in this town; and three newspapers, two in the English, and one in the German tongue, were published there every week. Governor Thomas, having resigned the presidency of Pennsylvania, was succeeded in 1748 by James Hamilton, a native of the province, and son of the celebrated lawyer and patriot, Andrew Hamilton.[3]

New Jersey, in the year 1738, contained, as we have seen, 47,637 inhabitants, of whom 3,981 were slaves. In 1745, the population of this State amounted to 61,403, including 6,079 Quakers and 4,606 slaves. We have already remarked the peculiar usage by which the practice of the medical art among this people was confined almost entirely to women. Of another strange peculiarity in their manners the following account has been preserved by Kalm. The widow of a bankrupt was held (whether by legal ordinance or merely by popular opinion does not appear) to be liable for the debts of her deceased husband, and to retain that liability even after contracting another matrimonial engagement, unless she were married to her second husband with no other habiliment on her person than her shift.[4] "The

[1] See Note X., at the end of the volume.

[2] Namely,—one Church of England, two Presbyterian, two Quaker, one Baptist, one Swedish, one Dutch Lutheran, one Dutch Calvinist, one Moravian, and one Roman Catholic.

[3] Douglass. Kalm. Proud. Loskiel. Warden. Holmes.

[4] From the words of Kalm, it may be doubted whether this absurdity was imported into New Jersey from Sweden or from England That the notion, and its relative usage, though totally unsupported by law, has prevailed till a very late period in some parts of England is certain. In the end of the year 1827, a widow was married in her shift to a respectable tradesman or shopkeeper in a country church in England.

Swedish clergymen here," says Kalm, "have often been obliged to marry women in this light and unexpensive dress. This appears from the registers kept in the churches and from the accounts given by the clergymen themselves. I have likewise often seen accounts of such marriages in the English newspapers which are printed in these colonies."[1]

The population of the province of New York, which, in the year 1732, amounted to somewhat more than sixty thousand persons, had advanced in 1749 to one hundred thousand. In 1756, it amounted to 110,317 persons, including 13,542 slaves. Kalm celebrates the handsome and substantial architecture of the houses in the town of New York; and describes the walls of the apartments as "quite covered with all sorts of drawings and pictures in small frames." In the year 1754, and in imitation of a similar institution at Philadelphia, a classical and philosophical academy was established at New York. The language and habits of the primitive colonists of this province subsisted in the most entire preservation at Albany, where the great bulk of the inhabitants were Dutchmen by birth or descent. They were noted in particular for extreme attention to niceness and cleanliness of domestic accommodation, for diligence in business, a close frugality, and the consequent accumulation of wealth. But their enrichment did not exclusively flow from sources so respectable. The temptations incident to the Indian trade, in which they were deeply engaged, depraved their characters and manners with sentiments and practices the most sordid and disgraceful.[2] In no other quarter of British or French America were the frauds with which the Indians reproached the Europeans so extensively and systematically practised. The merchants of Albany gloried in the success and dexterity of their commercial chicane; and as they practised equal dishonesty and displayed equal selfishness in their intercourse with their fellow-subjects both in New York and the other provinces, they were the objects of general aversion and disdain. This representation of the character of the Albanians was repeated to Kalm, the traveller, in every part of America that he visited, and was confirmed by his own personal observation of that people. We have already remarked their dishonorable conduct towards the inhabitants of New England in the war which preceded the treaty of Utrecht. They had pursued the same policy during the late war; and not only purchased the plunder of Massachusetts and New Hampshire from the Indian allies of the French, but encouraged these marauders, by the most tempting offers, to persevere in their depredations. The people of New England were so incensed at these transactions, which the Indians were at no pains to conceal, that they threatened, in case a new war should break out, that their first enterprise would be the sack and destruction of Albany. It must be remembered, however, that these charges, though generally, were not universally, applicable to the population of Albany, where some of the principal inhabitants, untainted by the prevailing depravation of principle and manners, were distinguished by a rare and therefore more notable superiority in equity, politeness, benevolence, and public spirit. "Outside the doors of houses here," says Kalm, "are seats, which in the evening are covered with people of both sexes; but this is rather troublesome, as those who pass by are obliged to greet every body, unless they will shock the politeness of the inhabitants of this town."[3]

[1] S. Smith. Kalm.

[2] A great deal of hazard was incurred by the European traders, who were often defrauded and sometimes murdered by the Indians. Loskiel.

[3] Warden. Kalm. Holmes.

Whether from a settled design of encroachment on American liberty, or from mere carelessness or arrogance on the part of the British government, it had been the invariable practice of the court since the Revolution to invest the governors of New York with an extraordinary, and indeed unconstitutional, plenitude of official power. Nay, the practice was still continued of delegating to them in their commissions the command of the militia of Connecticut. The governors were in this manner led to entertain very erroneous ideas of their actual authority, and were continually engaged in disputes with the provincial assembly. "Our representatives," says the historian of New York, "agreeably to the general sense of their constituents, are tenacious in the opinion, that the inhabitants of this colony are entitled to all the privileges of Englishmen; that they have a right to participate in the legislative power; and that *the session of assemblies here is wisely substituted instead of a representation in parliament*, which, all things considered, would at this remote distance be extremely inconvenient and dangerous. The governors, on the other hand, in general entertain political sentiments of a quite different nature. All the immunities we enjoy, according to them, not only flow from, but absolutely depend upon, the mere grace and will of the crown. It is easy to conceive that contentions must naturally attend such a contradiction of sentiments."[1]

New York at this time possessed a greater share of commerce than any other town in North America. [1751.] Boston and Philadelphia approached in this respect the most nearly, and, indeed, very closely to it. The merchants of New York and Philadelphia were continually in debt to their correspondents in England. No discovery of coal seems yet to have been made in any of the provinces; but, during the short possession that the British enjoyed of Cape Breton, it was ascertained that an abundant supply of this mineral existed in the bowels of that island. It was customary for ships returning without any other freight from England to America, to repair first to Newcastle, and take in cargoes of coals, which served as ballast during the voyage, and afterwards fetched some profit in the colonies; especially at New York and in South Carolina.[2]

Kalm has dwelt with benevolent satisfaction, and the surprise of a European, on the comfort and plenty that prevailed universally among the agricultural population of Pennsylvania, Delaware, New Jersey, and New York, — the only British colonies, unfortunately, to which his personal observation extended. There, every inhabitant of the country, even the humblest peasant, possessed an orchard stocked with a profusion of the richest fruit. The lively relish with which these strong, healthy people must have enjoyed such natural luxuries was far from restraining the liberality of disposition which the bounty of their soil was fitted to inspire; and passengers were everywhere, by common consent, entitled to a gratuitous and unstinted indulgence in the produce of gardens which they might happen or choose to approach. So sacred was the right, that the most churlish and sordid owner dared not question it; and so common was its exercise, that it at-

[1] W. Smith. This author quotes the following censure of the notions of the New York assemblies, from a pamphlet published in England in 1752, and entitled *An Essay on the Government of the Colonies*: — "I would advise these gentlemen for the future to drop those parliamentary airs and style about liberty and property, and keep within their sphere. The king's commission and instructions are their charter. If they abuse his Majesty's favors, they are but tenants at will."

[2] "We have known coals, salt, and other articles, brought by way of ballast, sold cheaper in Charleston than in London." Hewit.

tracted remark from nobody but strangers. Thus a table of hospitality was spread over all the face of the land; and the sense of property was rendered a less selfish and exclusive principle in America than in Europe.[1] But the cheapness and fertility of the land was everywhere productive of a careless and slovenly system of husbandry.

It was the universal practice of farmers to cultivate a portion of their ground as long as it would produce a crop without manuring; and then to leave it fallow, or convert it into pasture, while they transferred their culture to new spots which had been covered with woods from time immemorial. "In a word," says the Swedish traveller, "the corn-fields, the meadows, the forests, the cattle, &c., are treated with equal carelessness; and the English nation, so well skilled in these branches of husbandry, is with difficulty recognized. We can hardly be more lavish of our woods in Sweden and Finland, than they are here; their eyes are fixed upon the present, and they are blind to futurity. I was astonished, when I heard the country people complaining of the badness of their pastures; but I likewise perceived their negligence, and often saw excellent plants growing on their own grounds, which only required a little more attention and assistance from their unexperienced owners. I found everywhere the wisdom and goodness of the Creator; but too seldom saw any acknowledgment or adequate estimation of it among men." The cattle and the crops of the American farmers sustained frequent and considerable damage from wild beasts and vermin. Laws still continued to be passed by the assembly of New York, offering rewards for the destruction of panthers, wolves, and wild-cats. In Pennsylvania, such devastation was committed on the crops of maize by the squirrels, that a premium of threepence was offered by the provincial government for every squirrel's head; and in one year alone the sum of eight thousand pounds was expended by the treasury of Pennsylvania on this account. The other provinces were not exempt from the inconvenience occasioned by the multitude and the ravages of squirrels, of which no fewer than eleven thousand five hundred and eighty-eight were destroyed within ten days by a party of hunters at Providence, in the year 1759. But the most formidable obstructions which American husbandry has ever encountered must be referred to the instrumentality of the insect creation. The extensive and irresistible ravage inflicted by various tribes of flies compelled the farmers, in several of the provinces, to abandon the cultivation of pease, and in others the culture of wheat. In some parts of North America, by the operations of a particular description of caterpillar, whole forests have been utterly destroyed.[2]

Massachusetts, which in the year 1731 contained one hundred and twenty-two thousand six hundred inhabitants, had increased the number of its people in 1742 to one hundred and sixty-four thousand, and in 1753 to

[1] A similar practice was prescribed to the ancient Jews. Deut. xxiii. 24. "We wondered, at first, very much," says Kalm, "when our guide leaped over the hedge into the orchards, and gathered some agreeable fruit for us. But our astonishment was still greater, when we saw that the people in the garden were so little concerned at it as not even to look at us. We afterwards found very frequently, that the country people in Sweden and Finland guarded their turnips more carefully than the people here do the most exquisite fruits." This learned Swede has omitted to remark a notable distinction between the condition of the peasantry in America and those of his own country, where no person in the rank of a peasant was then permitted to acquire landed property or transmit it to his children. These rights, which the laws of Sweden confined to the order of nobility, were enjoyed by every Swedish farmer who emigrated to America.

[2] *Laws of New York from* 1691 *to* 1751. Kalm. *Annual Register for* 1759.

two hundred and twenty thousand. The population of the province of Maine, which was subject to the jurisdiction of Massachusetts, has been estimated by one statistical writer at ten thousand in the year 1750. The population of Rhode Island, which in 1730 amounted to 17,935 persons, of whom 1,648 were slaves, had increased in the year 1748 to 32,773, including 4,373 slaves. In 1753, the total population of Rhode Island was thirty-five thousand. At the close of the seventeenth century, Connecticut contained thirty thousand, and New Hampshire ten thousand inhabitants. In the year 1749, the population of New Hampshire was thirty thousand; and in the year 1753, that of Connecticut one hundred thousand. In 1756, the population of Connecticut amounted to 131,805, including 3,587 slaves.[1]

A strong ebullition of religious zeal and fervor had been excited, of late years, in many parts of New England, by the instrumentality of some remarkable preachers, of whom the most celebrated were Jonathan Edwards, whom we have already noticed, and George Whitefield, the Methodist. The labors and success of these great men and their associates are related with much minuteness of detail by several of the provincial historians. The warmth of religious sentiment and diligence in religious duty, which their ministry promoted in a surprising degree, were decried, as the impulse of frenzy and delusion, by a numerous party of the clergy and laity in New England, as well as in the other American States; and, unfortunately, in some instances, these charges derived support from the weakness and imprudence, the disorderly demeanour and enthusiastic extravagance of sentiment, betrayed by various individuals who professed to have undergone a spiritual renovation.[2] Probably some fraud and hypocrisy, and doubtless much error and delusion, contributed to obstruct and discredit the propagation of an influence which no candid and well informed Christian will otherwise denominate than a signal dispensation of divine grace to North America. The controversies and dissensions occasioned by this religious *Revival*, as it was termed, were prolonged for a great many years in New England; but a consequence at once more lasting and beneficial was visible in the general animation of piety and virtue among a considerable body of the people.[3]

Various causes, however, contributed to promote impressions of a different tendency among the inhabitants of New England. To some of these causes, and especially to the pernicious influence of an unstable currency, we have already had frequent occasion to advert. The peace which followed the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle was attended with evils as well as advantages; or rather, it gave scope to evils which the war had prepared. The disbanded officers and soldiers formed in every province a class of men, who, having been for a time released from steady industry and trained to the parade and bustle of military life, were averse to return to more humbly la-

[1] Adams's *Twenty-six Letters on Important Subjects*. Warden.

[2] "Satan, upon this occasion," says a New England writer, "acted a double part. He first attempted to stop the good work by open opposition; and afterwards, transforming himself into an angel of light, produced a flood of enthusiasm and false religion under various names." Eliot's *New England Biography*.

[3] Jonathan Edwards's *Narrative of the Surprising Work of God in the Conversion of many hundred Souls*, &c. Trumbull, Vol. II., Chap. VIII. This chapter of Trumbull's work contains the most candid and sensible account I have ever seen of an interesting portion of the ecclesiastical history of New England.

A similar revival of religious zeal occurred about the same period in various parts of Scotland; and much correspondence on the subject took place between the Scottish and the American ministers. Gillies' *Life of M'Laurin*.

borious occupations. To the officers of the provincial regiments the change was rendered the more unacceptable, from their not enjoying the advantage of half-pay. Their reluctance to embrace the sober habits and toils of civil life was increased by the hopes they indulged, and which were too soon fulfilled, of resuming their military occupation. The late war had not been conducted to a decisive issue, and the causes by which it was kindled were evidently not removed. As an antidote to the loose and idle manners of which those persons set the example, some benevolent citizens of Boston, with the aid of the provincial government, established, in 1749, a society for the promotion of industry and frugality;[1] and to repair the loss of people occasioned by the war, the assembly at the same time granted four townships of land for the use of such foreign Protestants as might be disposed to emigrate to Massachusetts, and offered to transport them gratuitously in a frigate that belonged to the province. It has been recorded, as a proof of the altered tastes and manners of some of the inhabitants of Massachusetts, that in the year 1750 there occurred the first instance of a dramatic entertainment in New England. A tragedy was performed at a coffee-house in Boston by two young Englishmen, assisted by some of their American comrades. The revel its participators intended to have kept secret from the public; but, in the pressure which occurred at the door to gain admittance to the spectacle, a disturbance was created which rendered the affair notorious. The legislature, in consequence, promptly interfered to forbid the repetition of such practices; and for the preservation of that system of economy and sobriety which had been transmitted to the present generation from their forefathers, a law was passed prohibiting all theatrical performances. The reasons assigned in the preamble of the act are "the prevention and avoidance of the many great mischiefs which arise from public stage-plays, interludes, and other theatrical entertainments, which not only occasion great and unnecessary expenses, and discourage industry and frugality, but likewise tend greatly to increase impiety and a contempt for religion."[2]

A discovery was made, several years before this period, in New England, by Josiah Franklin, father of the American Pythagoras, of a method of attracting the resort of herrings from the sea to a river which they had never visited before. Observing, that, of two rivers whose mouths were not far asunder, one was regularly frequented at the spawning season by the fish, of which none were found in the other, he was struck with the notion that the herrings were directed by some secret instinct to spawn in the same channel where they were originally hatched; and verified this conjecture by catching some of them, and depositing their spawn, which he extracted, in

[1] "The anniversary of the establishment of this society was celebrated with much solemnity in the year 1753. In the afternoon, about three hundred young female spinsters, decently dressed, appeared on the common at their spinning-wheels. The weavers also appeared cleanly dressed in garments of their own weaving. One of them, working at a loom on a stage, was carried on men's shoulders, attended with music. An immense number of spectators was present." Holmes. A spectacle far more interesting to a benevolent and philosophic mind than a tilt or tournament.

[2] Belknap. Minot. Holmes. A theatre was at last established in Boston in the year 1794. Holmes. But the ancient spirit and manners of New England, though expelled from this sanctuary, still continued to flourish among the sober and prosperous citizens of Salem; and when the manager of the Boston theatre applied to the proprietors of the market-house of Salem for leave to exhibit a dramatic entertainment in the upper story of this building, he was informed by them in reply, *that they would sooner set it on fire.* Dwight. In Connecticut, perhaps the most moral and happy of the North American States, theatrical performances continued to be prohibited by law in the commencement of the nineteenth century. Ibid.

the bed of the neglected river, which from thence afforded a plentiful supply of fish.[1] In this simple, ingenious, and useful experiment we recognize the parentage of Benjamin Franklin's understanding, the qualities by whose early impress the foundations of his mind were laid and the bent of his genius imparted.

In the New England States, as well as in the other provinces of America, the general simplicity of manners, and the facility of supporting a family, rendered celibacy exceedingly rare, and promoted early marriages.[2] The value of life was increased, and sentiments of patriotism were cherished, by the general diffusion of a substantial and respectable happiness. A numerous offspring was prized as a treasure, not dreaded as an incumbrance; and regard for the public welfare combined with motives of domestic felicity in prompting to the multiplication of a happy race. Kalm has preserved a list, extracted from American newspapers, of cases that occurred in Pennsylvania, New Jersey, and New England, illustrative of the most obvious and interesting effect of this state of society, — the great number of their own descendants by which many of the colonists beheld themselves surrounded. From this and from other accounts it appears to have been not uncommon for parents to see their progeny amount to sixty, seventy, or eighty persons. Sometimes a hundred persons were assembled in the house, and entertained at the table of their common pregenitor. Various cases occurred of individuals who beheld their children, grandchildren, great-grandchildren, and also the offspring of these last, to the number of two, three, and sometimes more than five, hundred souls.[3]

Doubtless, a beneficial effect on human character and disposition was produced by this great extension of parental feeling and family ties. An aged New Englander, living in a small town or in the country, could hardly cast his eyes on a group of persons in which he would not recognize a kinsman. It was common in New Hampshire, says Belknap, to see three generations tilling the ground in the same field. Whenever the son of a New Hampshire farmer could build a log-house, he bethought himself of marrying; and the young women of the province willingly embraced the early offers of these swains to promote them to the management of a household and a dairy. A frugal and industrious farmer was easily able to provide settlements for his elder sons, and furnish them with the means of supporting themselves; he commonly bequeathed the paternal farm to the youngest son, who continued to reside with him and support his declining years. A great deal of fellow-feeling and cordial warmth of neighbourly regard prevailed in all quarters of New England. When a farmer's house was burned, it

[1] Kalm.

[2] The general effect produced by the early marriages of the Americans on human manners, character, and constitution is a very curious, and, as far as I know, unexplored, subject of inquiry. Franklin wrote a well known essay on early marriages; but it contains no observations on the experience of his own country, and is entirely speculative and conjectural. Some observations far more valuable and interesting upon this subject occur in Moheau's *Recherches sur la Population de la France*. Williams, the historian of Vermont, asserts that the early marriages of the Americans prove remarkably conducive to domestic happiness and the general welfare of society. Young people marry, not because they possess a competent estate, but because they know that they can procure it; and their choice, undepraved by pride or ambition, is determined solely by love and esteem. Other writers have maintained that the early marriages of the Americans are prejudicial to the growth and improvement, bodily and mental, of the human frame.

[3] Kalm. Belknap. Dwight's *Travels*. Hutchinson. *Annual Register for* 1761 and *for* 1763. In the commencement of the nineteenth century, Dwight met with a New Englander who had seen his descendants amount in number to more than 1,500.

was a sacred and inviolable law of kindness among his neighbours, that they should unite to assist him in building and stocking a new one.

A less amiable, though very natural sentiment, that generally prevailed at this time among the people of New England, was a strong detestation of the Indian race, whose ravage and cruelty in war they had so often experienced. The comparative humanity which the Indians displayed in the late war conduced very little, if at all, to soften the animosity with which they were regarded by the colonists. In New Hampshire and the eastern parts of Massachusetts, many persons openly protested, that these savages, having conducted their hostilities after the example of wild beasts or robbers, were not entitled to the common privileges of humanity, and ought not to be suffered to shelter themselves from the punishment of their crimes by treaties which they never observed any farther than accorded with their own convenience, interest, or caprice. Several Indians were killed and wounded after the peace; and the provincial governments, having vainly endeavoured to bring the perpetrators of these outrages to justice, exerted themselves more successfully to pacify the injured tribes by liberal presents and professions of regret.

Soon after the termination of the late war, many persons applied to Benning Wentworth, the governor of New Hampshire, for grants of land in the western part of this province. Wentworth, presuming that New Hampshire ought to extend as far westward as Massachusetts, assigned to these applicants, in the year 1749, a township, six miles square, which received the name of Bennington, and was situated twenty-four miles eastward of Hudson's River, and six miles northward of the line of Massachusetts. For several years after, he continued, under the same supposition, to confer grants of land on the western side of Connecticut River. The settlements which afterwards ensued from these transactions gave rise to much controversy between New Hampshire and New York, — by which the jurisdiction of the territory was disputed, — and to the most violent disputes between the planters of the territory and the government of New York. These settlements were for several years distinguished by the name of *The New Hampshire Grants*, and in process of time expanded into that flourishing community which was subsequently formed into the separate province of Vermont.[1]

A dissension which arose in Massachusetts in the year 1749 resembled in its commencement, though not in its issue, the more famous controversy that occurred some time after in the parent state between the British House of Commons and the electors of Middlesex in relation to the celebrated demagogue, John Wilkes. Allen, a member of the provincial assembly, having vented some coarse disrespect against Governor Shirley, in one of his speeches, and declined to make what the house considered a proper apology, was expelled from his seat for this instance of contumacy. His constituents, who were satisfied with the apology which he had tendered, instantly reëlected him; but the house declared that he was incapable of being chosen, and that the election was void. The people, however, were not disposed to sanction this assumed power of a single branch of the legislature to divest a citizen of his political rights. Allen was again elected; and the house, though it had attempted to control, no longer presumed to resist,

[1] Belknap. Williams's *History of Vermont*. See Note XI., at the end of the volume.

the general determination, but admitted him without farther demur.[1] The Massachusetts assembly so truly and substantially represented the sentiments and interests of the provincial population, that it could never regard the prevalence of deliberate popular will as a triumph over itself.

In the year 1750, we remark a transaction in which the government of Connecticut betrayed a notable departure from those principles of justice and moderation by which the usual course of its policy was characterized. The boundary line between this province and Massachusetts had been finally ascertained in the year 1713; and on this occasion it was arranged, by general consent, that the towns of Woodstock, Somers, Suffield, and Enfield, though included by the course of the line within the territory of Connecticut, should yet remain subject to the jurisdiction of Massachusetts, by whose people they were founded and reared; and an equivalent was given for the soil, by an assignment of unoccupied lands within the province of Massachusetts. The government of Connecticut accepted this equivalent, and afterwards sold the lands of which it consisted, and applied the price of them to the use of the colony. The inhabitants of the towns above mentioned were content to remain under the jurisdiction of Massachusetts, till, in the course of the late war, they perceived that their taxes were much heavier than the corresponding burdens imposed on the people of Connecticut. At the close of the war, they conceived the idea of bettering their situation and evading their share of the contribution for liquidating the public debt of Massachusetts, by transferring their allegiance to Connecticut; and with this view petitioned the assembly of Connecticut to admit them within its jurisdiction. Their application was communicated to the government of Massachusetts, which, remembering the unfortunate issue of its previous disputes with New Hampshire and Rhode Island, betrayed no small perplexity and hesitation, and, instead of vigorously asserting its rights, proposed a compromise. Encouraged by these symptoms of timidity, the inhabitants of Woodstock and the three other towns openly disclaimed submission to Massachusetts, and resisted the collectors of its provincial taxes. The assembly of Connecticut, perceiving that Massachusetts was employing inefficient and indecisive measures to reduce the towns to obedience, now openly countenanced their revolt, and at length, by a formal act, declared them united to the colony of Connecticut. It was urged, in defence of this proceeding, that the inhabitants of the four towns derived from the original provincial charter an indefeasible right to the jurisdiction of Connecticut, of which the legislature of this province was incompetent to deprive them, and of which the race of inhabitants in 1750 could not be divested by the act of their predecessors in 1713. Upon this specious pretext Connecticut supported her claim; and yielding, without reserve, to the suggestions of that interested policy to which she had unworthily listened, retained her usurped jurisdiction, without even offering to restore the equivalent formerly accepted for its renunciation, or making the slightest compensation of any kind to Massachusetts.[2]

[1] Minot.

[2] Trumbull. Hutchinson. "I may very justly repeat," says Hutchinson, "the observation formerly made in a controversy between these two colonies, that communities or bodies of men are capable jointly of such acts as, being the act of any one member separately, would cause him to be ashamed." This is a favorite sentiment of Hutchinson, whose own most interesting experience was that of an individual opposed to communities or bodies of men.

Trumbull's account of this matter is very unsatisfactory. The patriotic partiality of this worthy man seems to have rendered it very difficult, if not impossible, for him to believe that the

The invitation tendered to foreign Protestants, in 1749, by the assembly of Massachusetts, having induced a number of Germans to repair to this province, some popular and enterprising colonists were led to conceive the hope of enriching themselves and benefiting their country by transporting an additional number of German emigrants, and with their assistance laying the foundation of manufacturing establishments in New England. The projection of this scheme was by no means creditable to the sagacity of its authors; and the measures which ensued on it left a stain on their own and their country's honor. Instead of undertaking the enterprise simply as individuals, they proposed to render the assembly a party to it, and by their influence were unfortunately successful in inducing this body to entertain a correspondence with one Luther, a counsellor at law and a purveyor of emigrants in Germany. This correspondence, which commenced in mutual misapprehension, was productive of disappointment and disgrace. The assembly had intended to take no farther part in the project than might serve to forward the views of the individuals by whom the experiment was planned; but Luther, and his countrymen, whom he persuaded to emigrate to Massachusetts, were induced to consider the assembly as principals in the negotiation, and pledged to insure the full measure of recompense and advantage by the proposition of which the emigrants were attracted. The private undertakers of the scheme made an attempt, with the assistance of these emigrants, to found a manufacturing town at Braintree, near Boston; but finding the experiment not likely to succeed, they yielded to the first discouragement, abandoned their views and their German associates, and declined to fulfil engagements, which, though equitably due from themselves alone, their artifice or timidity had contrived, in appearance, to fasten upon the representative assembly of their country. But the assembly was not disposed to acknowledge such liability, and entirely repudiated the transaction thus unexpectedly deserted by its original promoters.

Governor Shirley, at this time, was in Europe; having been appointed to act as one of the commissaries on the part of Britain, for arranging with France the limits of Nova Scotia; but Phips, the lieutenant-governor, and several of the provincial counsellors and representatives, who regarded the honor of their country as inseparable from its interests, strenuously urged the assembly to pay the penalty of its negligence, and to fulfil the obligations, in which, whether deliberately or unadvisedly, it had been unfortunately involved. Their urgency was ineffectual. The assembly neither recognized its own responsibility to the claims of the emigrants, nor enforced satisfaction of them from the individuals by whom it had been entrapped into this disagreeable predicament. Luther, who had incurred a considerable expense, was unable to obtain the slightest indemnification; and the emigrants, bitterly lamenting their disappointment, were left to shift as they best could for themselves.[1] This faulty passage in the history of Massachusetts (to which a parallel has already appeared in the annals of New York, in 1737) suggests to the citizens and politicians of a republic the propriety of cultivating with peculiar care a nice sense of strict and continuous responsibility to the

people of Connecticut, in a dispute with their neighbours, could ever be in the wrong. But the great end of history can never be answered by disguising or suppressing the errors into which exemplary men and virtuous communities may have been betrayed. The caution suggested by the frailties, no less than the emulation inspired by the virtues, of their forefathers is a valuable part of the inheritance of a nation; and history, which is the testament of time, should record with fidelity every particular of his bequest.

[1] Hutchinson.

principles of honor; without which, absolute power is divested of an important and salutary restraint, and regard to national interest is but selfishness exerted on an extended scale. When the indissoluble connection between the morality and the happiness of nations, as well as of individuals, shall be generally recognized, politics will become a generous science, and institutions of government the schools of every virtue.

Few particulars have been transmitted of the condition of Virginia and Maryland at this period. Of the entire population of Virginia, the only accounts, or rather estimates, that have been preserved, are manifestly and absurdly erroneous. Warden, for instance, asserts that it amounted, in the year 1749, to eighty-five thousand persons. And yet, from Jefferson's lists, it appears that the tithable inhabitants alone (that is, the white men above the age of sixteen, and the negro slaves, male and female, above the same age) amounted, in the year 1748, to 82,100. The population of Maryland, which, at the close of the seventeenth century, amounted to about thirty thousand persons, was found, in the year 1755, to have advanced to 153,564, including 42,764 negro slaves, 3,592 mulattoes, 6,870 voluntary indented servants, and 1,981 transported felons. More than two thousand negro slaves were annually imported into Maryland alone. In these, and the other Southern States where slaves abounded, much greater inequalities of condition were now visible among the planters, than in the more northern States, where, though slavery was tolerated, its actual prevalence was not extensive. Some of the planters of Virginia and Maryland possessed, each, no fewer than five hundred slaves; and one Maryland planter possessed as many as thirteen hundred. Inequality of condition, promoted by the institution of entails, which had prevailed for some time in Virginia, generated in this province a class of aristocrats or patricians, who were regarded with considerable jealousy by the humbler but more numerous order of farmers or yeomen. The wealthy planters were generally unacquainted with business, which they disdained to study or pursue, and devoted to amusement; and the greater part of the commerce of Virginia was conducted by adventurers from Scotland,[1] who, in many instances, found it easy to acquire considerable fortunes.

It was in the Southern States that Toryism, which, in America, signified a predilection for royal prerogative and an admiration of aristocracy and hereditary distinctions, possessed the most numerous votaries. There was none of the States, however, in which a party, more or less numerous, of this class of thinkers was not to be found. Probably there has never existed a single community of men, in the world, entirely pervaded by the love of liberty; a sentiment which can never prevail in its highest force, or merit the name of a generous passion, except when united with the virtues of self-denial, humanity, moderation, and justice. In servile sentiments and practices there is much to flatter the natural inclinations of mankind; to obey accommodates the indolence—to corrupt, and be corrupted, the avarice and ambition—of human nature. To regard with peculiar veneration one or a few individuals, lifted up by general consent and

[1] I have been informed by my father, a native of Glasgow, in Scotland, that in his boyhood, which was prior to the American Revolution, it was common to hear adventurous lads in Glasgow say, "I will go out to Virginia." Many did actually go as storekeepers for mercantile houses in Glasgow, and in time became partners in these houses. Every planter bought his foreign commodities at one particular store, and consigned the produce of his plantation to the mercantile house in the parent state connected with this store. Glasgow engrossed at least a half of the North American trade, prior to the Revolution.

homage to a vast, though fanciful, superiority over the rest of mankind, ministers gratification to every shade and intermixture of human pride, vanity, and idolatry. Even in Pennsylvania, and in the bosom of a humble Quaker family, we find about this time the most ardent admiration of royalty expressed by the celebrated Benjamin West, then a young lad, and for many years after a Quaker, who declared, as a reason for choosing the occupation of a painter, "that a painter was a companion for kings and emperors; and that, although none of these dignitaries were to be found in America, there were plenty of them in other parts of the world." Nay, we are told that the grave, sagacious, Puritan father of Dr. Franklin, who had himself emigrated from the hemisphere of royalty, used to stimulate the industry of his son by reminding him (with *literal* application of the words of Scripture), that a man who is diligent in his calling may hope to *stand before kings*, and to outgrow the gross fellowship of men of low degree.[1]

In 1749, General Gooch resigned the government of Virginia, and returned to England, honored with the regret and benediction of a people over whom he had presided for twenty-two years. He received the dignity of a baronet from the crown in recompense of his services; and, till the end of his life, preserved a friendly correspondence with the Virginians. There was formed in the same year an association, composed of certain London merchants trading to Virginia and Maryland, and of a number of wealthy Virginian planters, which assumed the name of the Ohio Company, and obtained from the crown a grant of six hundred thousand acres of land adjacent to the river Ohio, together with a patent conferring the privilege of exclusive trade with the Indian tribes on the banks of that river. One object of this association was to undertake the execution of the politic scheme that had been suggested by Governor Spottiswoode, and to form settlements beyond the Appalachian Mountains, and connections of commerce with the Indians, which might stem the progress of the French occupations. Various grants of land in the same quarter were made soon after by the Virginian government to private adventurers, who were required to abstain from all encroachment on the privileges and possessions of the Ohio Company. The measures adopted by this company, in furtherance of the great designs which it undertook, were conducted with extreme imprudence. The Indian tribes adjacent to the scene of its projected settlements were so unfavorably disposed towards the French, that a very little attention to justice and courtesy on the part of the directors of the company might have secured to it their friendship and assistance. But the directors, without ever soliciting the permission of the Indians or offering to purchase their rights to the soil, despatched agents to survey and assume possession of stations that might appear to them suitable to the company's purposes. These agents, too, whether of their own accord or in compliance with instructions from their superiors, declined at first to specify the purpose of their operations, and answered the inquiries of the Indians in a dark, mysterious manner, which excited the deepest alarm in their inquisitive and suspicious minds. The private traders of Virginia and Pennsylvania, who had begun to penetrate into this region and obtain a share of its commerce, were disgusted when they learned the exclusive privileges which were

[1] *History of the British Dominions in America.* Jefferson's *Notes on Virginia.* Warden. Wirt's *Life of Henry.* Winterbotham. Galt's *Life of West.* Franklin's *Memoirs.* Holmes.

conferred on the company, and studiously fomented the jealousy which the Indians had already conceived.[1] Thus inauspiciously commenced the first systematic attempt of the English to check the rapid strides of the French dominion in America. That the French would take umbrage at the establishment and projects of the Ohio Company was easily foreseen; and with such a prospect, nothing could be more imprudent than the policy which aroused so much additional enmity and opposition.

We have already adverted[2] to the condition which South Carolina and Georgia had attained at this period. The population of North Carolina, which in the year 1710 amounted to six thousand persons, had in 1749 advanced to forty-three thousand. In this year a circumstance occurred, which was the means of introducing shortly after into North Carolina a considerable number of the most pious and industrious emigrants who had resorted to America since the first colonization of New England. The Moravian brethren had now formed large and flourishing settlements in Pennsylvania, where they pursued their secular occupations and their missionary enterprises with a success which kindled the emulation and attracted the resort of increasing numbers of their fellow-sectaries from Europe. A troop of these intending emigrants, admonished by the experience of their friends in Georgia, and informed, perhaps, of the controversy that prevailed in Pennsylvania respecting a military establishment, petitioned the British government for some pledge that a departure from their principles would not be required from them in America. An act of parliament[3] was accordingly passed in 1749, admitting the affirmation of Moravians in America as equivalent to an oath, and discharging them from liability to perform military service. This transaction, in which the Earl of Granville, who was then president of the council, took a share as a minister of state, naturally attracted his consideration as a proprietor of American territory. He conceived the hope of inducing a body of these peaceable and industrious men to colonize the large and almost vacant domain which was reserved to his family on the dissolution of the proprietary system in Carolina; and so successful were his negotiations for this purpose with the Moravian deputies who came to England to solicit the pledge of the British government, that very soon after a detachment of Moravians repaired from the principal station of the society at Bethlehem, in Pennsylvania, to North Carolina, where they founded a settlement to which they gave the name of Bethabara. They were subsequently joined by accessions of their sectarian associates, both from other parts of America and from Europe; and formed a society (says the historian of this province) which set an excellent example of the virtues of industry and temperance, and seemed, in spite of Indian wars and other adverse circumstances, to enjoy as much happiness as the lot of humanity admits. From North Carolina there were exported in the year 1753 upwards of sixty thousand barrels of tar, twelve thousand barrels of pitch, ten thousand barrels of turpentine, and about thirty thousand deerskins, besides lumber and other commodities.[4]

[1] Smollett. Holmes. Burk. "This project," says Burk, "afforded the justest uneasiness and offence to the natives, who saw that even the wilderness, whither they had retired, did not save them from the rapacity of their invaders. Their right to the lands might have been purchased for a small sum, prudently expended in nails, paints, blankets, and hatchets." The occupations of the French, consisting of bounded military positions, instead of spreading settlements, excited less jealousy in the Indians.

[2] Book IX., *ante*. [3] 22 George II., Cap. 30. [4] Warden. Williamson. Holmes.

There assembled in 1751, at Albany, a convention consisting of Clinton, the governor of New York, commissioners appointed by the governments of Massachusetts, Connecticut, and Carolina, and deputies who represented the Indian confederacy of the Six Nations. Bull, the commissioner from South Carolina, was attended to this congress by the king and other chiefs of the Catawba tribe or nation of Indians, between whom and the Six Nations a long and bloody war had prevailed. A peace was now concluded between these savage belligerents, by the mediation of their civilized allies.[1]

In conformity with an act of parliament adjudging the correction of the existing calendar, the new style of chronological computation was introduced in the year 1752 into the American provinces and every other part of the British dominions. From this time, the year, instead of beginning on the 25th of March, was computed from the first day of January. The third day of September was now dated the fourteenth; and a consistent change harmonized the reckoning of all the other days of the year. This reformation of the calendar, rendered necessary by the precession of the equinox, was decreed by Pope Gregory the Thirteenth in 1582; but though his decretal was readily obeyed in all countries where the Catholic faith prevailed, the Protestants had hitherto indulged an aversion to admit so important an innovation, which seemed to reflect credit on the wisdom and authority of the Roman pontiff.[2]

It was in the same year, that Dr. Franklin, having discovered the analogy between lightning and electricity, verified this grand conjecture by an experiment which excited the applause and admiration of the civilized world, and shed a brilliant ray of philosophic glory on his name, his country, and his age.[3] The metaphysical and theological writings of Jonathan Edwards contributed about the same time to elevate the reputation of American genius, and convinced the scholars of Europe that America had already given birth to philosophers worthy to be acknowledged as the instructors of the old world, as well as the new. Symptoms of a rising or increasing regard for science and literature now began to appear in almost all the American provinces. The colleges of New England continued to flourish, and were enlarged; libraries, academies, and philosophical societies arose in these States, and in Pennsylvania, New York, New Jersey, Virginia, and South Carolina. The progress of scientific research in America was facilitated by the friendly counsel and aid which its votaries received from the most distinguished philosophers in Europe, — among whom Linnæus, Sir Hans Sloane, and Peter Collinson[4] deserve an especial and honorable commemoration.

A taste for the study of botany and zoölogy was awakened in America by Mark Catesby, the English naturalist, who visited South Carolina in 1722, and, nine years after, published at London his *Natural History of Carolina and Florida*. These walks of science, than which none are more closely allied with moral virtue and temperate use of life, were now cultivated with ardor and success by Colden, an inhabitant, and afterwards lieutenant governor, of New York, Glover and Clayton, Virginian planters, Garden, a physician in South Carolina, and other learned and intelligent men; but by none with greater genius and celebrity than John Bartram, a Pennsylvanian

[1] Drayton. Holmes.
[2] Smollett. Holmes.
[3] Franklin's *Memoirs*.
"With Franklin, grasp the lightning's fiery wing." — Campbell.
[4] See Note XII., at the end of the volume.

Quaker and farmer, whom Linnæus pronounced to be "the greatest natural botanist in the world." Bartram established the first botanical garden in America, and, in pursuit of his favorite study, performed numerous journeys with unwearied vigor and dauntless courage, among the fiercest and most jealous of the Indian tribes. At the age of seventy he travelled through East Florida, in order to explore its natural productions, and afterwards published a journal of his observations. And yet withal, he supported a numerous family by his own personal labor as a farmer. He was a pious and benevolent man, and gave liberty to the only slave he possessed, and who gratefully remained with him as a voluntary servant. He was elected a member of the most illustrious societies and academies in Europe; and, before his death, received the appointment of American botanist to the British king.[1]

Some proficiency in mathematics and astronomy[2] had already been evinced by the Americans. John Winthrop, a native of Boston, and now professor of mathematics in Harvard College, was a man of profound research and extensive learning. He was highly respected by the philosophers of Europe, and published a treatise upon comets, which gained him much celebrity. Thomas Godfrey, of Philadelphia, a self-taught mathematician, the Pascal of America, invented about this time the instrument which, by a misnomer injurious to his fame, passes under the name of Hadley's quadrant. David Rittenhouse, of Pennsylvania, with no preceptor but his genius, and no assistant but his labor, had now begun those philosophical researches, in the course of which he was led for a time to believe himself the first author of the sublime invention of fluxions, and subsequently gained high repute as an astronomer, and the inventor of the American orrery. This remarkable man occupied originally a very humble station; and in his youth, while conducting a plough, usually traced on its handles his mathematical calculations. William Douglass, a physician in Boston, was celebrated for his proficiency in mathematics, and, in 1744, published an ingenious almanac entitled *Mercurius Anglicanus*. He is more generally known as the author of the historical and statistical work published a few years after under the title of *A Summary of the British Settlements in America*, and which, together with many faults, contains a great deal of valuable information. He was a Scotchman by birth, and had emigrated to New England, where he died in 1753. Thomas Prince, a native and minister of Boston, published, in 1736, the first volume of a work which he entitled *The Chronological History of New England*. He was a man of superior genius, and by intensely laborious study had accumulated a vast stock of knowledge; but by undertaking too much, he fell short of the execution of his design in this work, which was never completed. His introductory epitome, which cost him immense labor, begins at the creation of the world. He died in 1758.

[1] His taste and genius were inherited by his son, William Bartram, author of the interesting *Travels in Carolina, Georgia, and Florida*.

Some prospect appeared, at one time, of a diligent and successful cultivation of natural history in Canada, under the auspices of the Marquis de la Galissonière, who for a short period was governor of this province. "Galissonière," says Kalm, who visited him in 1749, "reminded me of our own Linnæus. When he spoke of the use of natural history, and of its subservience to national greatness, I was astonished to hear him deduce his reasons from politics, as well as science and philosophy." Kalm. The third volume of Kalm's work contains many curious particulars illustrative of the state of society and manners in Canada.

[2] America will probably be distinguished hereafter by the pursuit of astronomical observations. A letter which I have seen from Benjamin Franklin to Dr. (Sir William) Herschel affirms, that, from the superior clearness of its atmosphere, the climate of America is more favorable to this pursuit than the climate of Europe.

Stith, a professor in William and Mary College, published, in 1747, his *History of Virginia*, — a work to which we have already adverted.[1] Timothy Cutler, Elisha Williams, and Thomas Clap, successively presidents of Yale College, in Connecticut, distinguished themselves by their attainments in classical and Oriental literature. Many other professors in the colleges of New England have been celebrated for their genius, taste, and superior erudition; but the fame even of the most distinguished of these men rests more upon the testimony of their contemporaries, than on any literary monuments they have left behind them. Neither lay nor clerical teachers, in this country, possessed the leisure which the institutions of England have so long placed within the reach of a numerous body of studious men. Their lives were more active than speculative; their chief business was not the replenishment of their own minds with a ceaseless accumulation of learning, but the personal administration of the functions of tuition; and they were expected to make proof of their superiority, rather by the moral and intellectual improvement of their pupils and congregations, than by solitary compositions attesting their own peculiar and transcendent attainments, — rather by enlarging the empire and influence, than by aggrandizing the bulk and advancing the boundaries of science. The growing appetite for knowledge, doubtless, created an increased demand for books on every subject; but this demand was easily and copiously supplied from Europe. Theology and ecclesiastical controversy still continued to be the chief themes which the native literature of New England was employed to illustrate. Between the beginning and the middle of the eighteenth century, a great number of well educated men, and some persons of very high attainments in science and literature, repaired, among other emigrants, from Britain to America. It was a happy and memorable feature in the character of the American colonists, and especially of the people of New England, that the work of tuition in all its branches was greatly honored among them, and that no civil functionary was regarded with more respect or crowned with more distinguished praise than a diligent and conscientious schoolmaster.[2]

We have already remarked the rise of newspapers in Massachusetts, Pennsylvania, New York, Rhode Island, and South Carolina. These powerful engines for the circulation of sentiment and opinion were established in the year 1745 in Maryland, and in 1755 in Connecticut.[3]

In the year 1753, there was published at Dublin, by Dr. James M'Sparran, who had (by appointment of the Bishop of London and a missionary society in England) officiated for several years as a minister of the gospel in North America, a work bearing this unwieldy title: — *America Dissected: being a full and true Account of all the American Colonies; shewing the Intemperance of the Climates, excessive Heat and Cold, and sudden violent Changes of Weather, terrible and mischievous Thunder and Lightning, bad and unwholesome Air, destructive to human Bodies; Badness of Money, Danger from Enemies, but, above all, Danger to the Souls*

[1] Book I., Chap. III., *ante*.

[2] Kalm. Campbell. Miller's *Retrospect of the Eighteenth Century*. Eliot's *New England Biography*. Burk. Dwight's *Travels*. I was informed by an elegant and accomplished Virginian lady, that, even so late as the close of the eighteenth century, it was customary for the daughters of the wealthiest planters in the province to be educated at day-schools taught by male preceptors, generally clergymen in years. She herself was educated in this manner. From the memoirs of Anthony Benezet, the Quaker philanthropist, it appears, that, after teaching boys during the greater part of his life, he became the schoolmaster of girls, in his old age, in Pennsylvania.

[3] Dwight.

of the poor People that remove thither, from the multifarious wicked and pestilent Heresies that prevail in those Parts. In several Letters from a Reverend Divine of the Church of England, Missionary to America and Doctor of Divinity; published as a Caution to unsteady People who may be tempted to leave their native Country. The caution intended by this splenetic and intolerant partisan of the church of England must have operated beneficially to America, if it deterred persons of temper and understanding similar to his own from resorting to her soil. He decries the religious estate of all the provinces, but especially of Rhode Island, where he had chiefly resided, and where he represents the Quakers as then forming by far the most powerful class of the people, and engrossing all the functions of government. The only objects in America that obtain his praise, or, indeed, escape his disapprobation, are the ecclesiastical assemblies on the model of the church of England, and the fine breed of horses for which Rhode Island was renowned. He reproaches the Rhode Islanders with an extreme addiction to lawsuits, — which, nevertheless, appear to have formed a principal part of his own occupation during his stay in the country.[1]

CHAPTER III.

View of the colonial Dominion and Policy of Britain and France in America. — Renewal of Disputes between the French and English Colonists. — Hostilities on the Virginian Frontier. — Benjamin Franklin — his Plan for a Federal Union of the American Provinces. — Discontents in Virginia — North Carolina — and New York. — Preparations of France and Britain for War.

We have seen the American colonies of France and England repeatedly involved in wars which originated between their respective parent states, and of which the causes were ministered by European interests and quarrels. It seemed, on these occasions, that the colonial hostilities were but secondary movements, accessory and subordinate to the main current of affairs in a distant channel; and that the repose of America depended chiefly on the temper and relations subsisting between the governments and the nations of Europe. We are now to enter upon a different scene, representing a war which was kindled by collisions arising in America, and of which the flames, first breaking forth in this region, progressively extended to Europe, and were not quenched till their devouring rage had been felt in every quarter of the globe. [1752.] Even in the previous scenes of warfare which occurred in North America, it was manifest that the French and British colonists were animated by stronger passion than mere dutiful sympathy with the contemporary quarrels of the distant empires to which they were politically attached. Both the last war, and the preceding one in the reign of Queen Anne, though in formal semblance but the extensions of European strife, were preceded and prepared by disputes of American birth; and the intervening contest between New England and the Indian allies of France

[1] *Collections of the Rhode Island Historical Society.* Britain has furnished numerous successors to Dr. M'Sparran in the task, so grateful to royalist and patrician predilections, of heaping censure and detraction on America and her people. Of the calumnies vented by these writers an admirable exposition and refutation may be found in Mr. Walsh's *Appeal from the Judgments of Great Britain respecting the United States of America.*

was substantially a war carried on between the French and English colonists, at a time when peace subsisted between their respective parent states. The causes of enmity, dispute, and collision, which had been multiplying for many years between the two European races by which the colonization of North America was principally shared, were now hastening to a complete maturity, and threatened this great continent with a signal revolution of empire, as the result of a decisive struggle of France and England for its sole dominion. Of this struggle the power which had introduced despotic monarchy and hereditary nobility into America was fated to be the victim. But had the rival state been gifted with more political foresight, she would hardly have suffered either ambition or resentment to precipitate her upon a conquest, of which the manifest effect was to convert France from the interested supporter of the ascendency of Europe over America, into the vindictive patron of American independence. Had either or both of the contending monarchs perceived how injurious their collision must prove to the interests of royalty, surely the war which we are now approaching would never have broken out, and human prudence would have intercepted that mighty stream of events, which, commencing with the conquest of Canada, and issuing in the independence of North America, and the impulse thereby communicated to the spirit of liberty and revolution throughout all the world, has so wonderfully displayed the dominion of Supreme Wisdom and Beneficence over the senseless, selfish, and malignant passions of men.

When we consider the vast extent of the North American continent, even now [1] but partially replenished with inhabitants and subdued by cultivation, we are led to inquire with surprise how it was possible that so early as the middle of the eighteenth century a practical collision should have arisen between the pretensions of the French and English colonists. That two colonial societies, which had not yet existed a hundred and fifty years, — which formed but an inconsiderable fraction of the total population of the empires to which they respectively belonged, and yet possessed territories far exceeding the dimensions of the parent states, and utterly disproportioned to any power of cultivation which for centuries they could hope to exert, — that these colonies, I say, during the course of their brief existence, should have been repeatedly engaged in sanguinary wars, and should already, from conflicting schemes of policy, have reached a crisis at which the conquest of the one was deemed requisite to the security of the other, is not the least remarkable instance recorded in history of the boundless range of human ambition, and of the total inadequacy of the largest possessions to impart contentment or satiate cupidity. Another instance, illustrative of these considerations, has been already exhibited to our view in the history of the Dutch and Swedish colonists of New York and Delaware. While these territories respectively possessed but a handful of inhabitants, and afforded an almost boundless scope to the peaceful and profitable labors of colonization, the two infant communities regarded each other with jealous hatred and fear, and plunged into hostilities of which the aggressor was the victim. But in addition to considerations applicable to every portion and community of the human race, there are others derived from the national character, sentiments, and temper of the French and English, which contribute to account for the early and violent collision between their colonial establishments in America.

[1] This was written in the year 1828.

The claim preferred by Edward the Third of England to the throne of France, in the beginning of the fourteenth century, seems to have given the first occasion to that mutual animosity between the French and English people, which, nourished by a succession of national disputes, broke forth into numberless wars, and produced a greater effusion of blood than attended the rivalry of the Greeks and Persians, or of the Romans and Carthaginians. It has been affirmed by a great philosophic historian[1] that this antipathy was cherished in a far stronger degree by the English than by the French, whose position in the middle of Europe involved them in a greater variety of hostile relations than the English, and mitigated the force of national hatred by multiplying the channels in which it flowed. Perhaps a juster consideration will account that the reciprocal animosities of the two nations were substantially much less disproportioned than this writer has been willing to suppose. More sincerity and consistent principle mingled with the sentiments of the English; more politic address and artifice regulated the passions of the French. The English were the most apt to suspect and to threaten injury; the French were the least prompt to profess enmity, and the least restrained by honor and good faith from indulging in it.[2] But even supposing this estimate erroneous, as perhaps it is, and that an unequal degree of animosity subsisted between the subjects of France and England in Europe, their relative position in America was calculated to restore at once the balance of mutual dislike, and to fortify every unfriendly sentiment which they imported from their respective parent states.[3] The English now became the nearest and the most formidable neighbours of the French, whose passions, discharged from participation in the politics of Europe, had leisure to unite their strength in a single channel; while, to the British colonists in general, and especially to the people of New England, who were most approximated to Canada and Nova Scotia, the religious faith and civil policy of the French were objects of greater aversion than to any class of the domestic population of Great Britain.

Institutions more purely democratical subsisted, and liberty flourished with greater vigor, in the British colonies than in Britain; while a stricter system of despotism prevailed in the French colonies than in France. The English colonists stigmatized the French as idolaters, and the French denounced the English as heretics. The English despised the French as slaves; while the French, attached to arbitrary power, and sharing all its prejudices, regarded with aversion the rival principle of liberty which was cherished by the English.[4] The mutual enmity of the French and English colonists was farther promoted by their competitions to gain a monopoly of the trade and good-will of a variety of Indian tribes, all of which were engaged in frequent wars, and expected that their quarrels should be espoused by their friends; and some of which had the sagacity to perceive that the

[1] Hume.

[2] France, even when her councils were guided by Richelieu, aided and encouraged the Scottish Covenanters, the most determined enemies of the Catholic faith and of unlimited monarchy, to resist Charles the First. Louis the Fourteenth, even while he was oppressing the Protestants in France, and encouraging Charles the Second to pursue arbitrary power in England, maintained a correspondence with the English politicians who were opposed to Charles's tyrannical designs, and who abetted the prosecutions for the *Popish Plot*.

[3] We might suppose that Kalm, the traveller, was describing the provincial manners of England, when he relates that he was followed and hooted by the children in the streets of Albany, because his hair was dressed in a style which was reckoned characteristic of a Frenchman.

[4] "We are well aware," said Demosthenes to the Thebans, "of that inextinguishable hatred which kings and the slaves of kings have ever felt towards nations which have plumed themselves on being free." Freinshemius's *Supplement to Quintus Curtius*, Book I.

mutual jealousy and estrangement of the two European races would be favorable to the independence and authority of the Indians. The seeds of controversy between the French and English colonists were thus sown with the earliest settlements which they formed in America; and between two nations so strongly prepossessed against each other the actual collision was rather hastened than retarded by the prodigious extent of vacant territory which surrounded their settlements, and naturally prevented an early and amicable adjustment of boundaries. Conflicting pretensions and territorial disputes were prepared from the first by the indefinite and extravagant charters or grants of land, which the French and English monarchs, ignorant or regardless of each other's proceedings, severally conferred on their subjects; and these disagreements, which various occasions had already partially developed, were now brought to an early but full maturity by the progress of that ambitious system of colonial enterprise which for many years the French had actually pursued.

The models of conduct and policy exhibited in the settlements of the two races of colonists differed as widely as their local positions in America, and strikingly illustrated the distinctive traits in the characters of the parent nations from which they were respectively derived. The English were in possession of the seacoast of North America, of the harbours and the mouths of rivers; and some, but only a very few, of their settlements were actually extended as far as a hundred or a hundred and fifty miles into the interior of the country. The French were not in possession of any part of the seacoast or of any harbours on the continent, but had made settlements on the banks of the two great rivers St. Lawrence and Mississippi, of which the sources are not far apart, and which, running respectively northeast and south, formed a line almost parallel to the seaward position of the English. These settlements of the two nations afforded an extent of territory sufficient to absorb for centuries the most copious emigrations from France and England; and if the two races of planters had confined their enterprises to the avowed purpose and reasonable process of colonization, — to the culture and subjugation of those uncultivated wastes and forests which they either appropriated as vacant, forcibly seized, or fairly purchased from the savage proprietors, — we should still have been separated by a long interval from the time when their interests could possibly have clashed or interfered with each other. The natural employment of the colonists of America was agriculture, with the addition of a confined range of commerce; and this was the line of action which the English pursued. Their main object was to plant and cultivate, to subdue the land by the axe, to rule it by the plough, and to clothe it with flocks; and they never removed from the seacoasts to the interior of the country, but when they were straitened for room in the situations which they had primarily adopted. They occupied no remote or distant posts, and made no settlements but such as were capable of being maintained and supported by the natural condition of their affairs and intercourse of their people. Adhering to this policy, it was impossible that they could ever be justly charged with encroachments on the possessions of the French; and had the conduct of the latter people been regulated by the same maxims, many centuries must have elapsed before the two nations could have been, properly speaking, even neighbours to each other in these vast and desert regions.

But quite the reverse of this was the procedure of the French. The fa-

vorite object of their policy was rather extended dominion than industrious settlement and improved plantation; and they were less attentive to the erection of agricultural or mercantile habitations than of military forts. With an ambitious latitude of grasp, they occupied and fortified posts at a prodigious distance from each other, as well as from the two provincial capitals, and in situations where they could be maintained only by elaborate and unnatural exertions of power and policy, and were but little subservient to the purposes of commerce, and still less of agriculture. The British colonists were peaceable farmers and traders; and the progress of their settlements was the natural growth of diligent and continuous cultivation. The French conducted themselves rather as roving and ambitious adventurers than as industrious settlers; and the aggrandizement of their domains was the effect of aspiring, irregular, and impetuous enterprise. Beholding with alarmed rivalry the slow but sure and steady progress of the British colonies in culture, population, and commerce, and instigated by envy and ambition to dread already the increase of a power which was likely to be the more confirmed and stable because it employed no violent or irregular means of accelerating its advancement, the French had long pursued measures of which the object was to intercept the farther growth of the British settlements, and to confine them within a narrow range, extending only a few leagues from the seacoast. With this object they combined the design of gaining possession of one of the English harbours on the Atlantic ocean,[1] for the commercial benefit of the vast interior districts to which they laid claim, and which possessed no other maritime communication but the mouths of two rivers, neither of which afforded a convenient navigation. In prosecution of their politic views, they studied to connect their two colonies of Canada and Louisiana by a chain of forts from Quebec to New Orleans, — an operation, which, though quite inappropriate to the ends of colonization, might yet have been accounted justifiable, had the new positions they assumed been restricted to the banks of the two great rivers, or the territory immediately adjacent to them. But, not contented with this, they advanced their military settlements so near the English frontier, and (with still more significant indication of their purpose) to so great a distance from any of their own colonies, with such vast tracts of land, either desert or inhabited by hostile savages, intervening between them, that a bare inspection of the map of America is sufficient to demonstrate the aggrandizing aim of this people, and the spirit of hostile encroachment by which they were actuated.

The design of the French to restrict the growth of the British settlements was penetrated, as we have seen, by Spottiswoode, the governor of Virginia, as early as the year 1715; and but a few years later was distinctly perceived by Burnet, the governor of New York. But the representations of these politicians were disregarded by their countrymen, till experience demonstrated what sagacity had anticipated in vain. The purpose of deliberate encroachment on the British settlements was manifested, in the year 1731, by the decisive measure of erecting the fort of Crown Point upon Lake Champlain, at a great distance from any other French establishment, and within the territory of the Six Nations, who were recognized by treaty as the allies and under the protection of Britain. This daring intrusion upon the province of New York excited hardly any attention at the time, except from

[1] Even as early as the reign of James the Second, and during the subsistence of peace between France and England, De Calliores, a French officer, recommended to his countrymen the conquest of New York, which he insisted was "légitime par la nécessité." W. Smith.

the government of Massachusetts, whose jealousy had been sharpened by many previous collisions with the French, and was kept alive by the nearer danger with which New England was menaced, of encroachment in the quarter of Nova Scotia. Before this province was finally conquered by Britain, or rather by the British colonists, during Queen Anne's War, the French endeavoured, by the extension of its boundaries, to check the advance of the settlements of New England; and even after it was surrendered to Britain, at the peace of Utrecht, they pursued the same policy, by instigating the neighbouring Indians to assert pretensions opposed to the claims of the English, and by raising disputes with regard to the real meaning and extent of the cession which had been extorted from themselves. They still pretended right to a part of that territory of which the English reasonably understood that the whole was ceded; and these pretensions were rendered the more dangerous by their concurrence with the sentiments of the French inhabitants of the territory confessedly ceded, and of the neighbouring Indians, as well as by the establishment which France was permitted to retain in the island of Cape Breton.

The hostile attitude which the French force in America thus progressively assumed would long before the present period have provoked a decisive struggle for the sole dominion of this continent, if a corresponding spirit had been manifested by the rival power and people. But the British colonists, devoted to the pursuits of peaceful industry, were not easily aroused to military enterprise; and their political views and solicitudes, as well as those of the parent state, were divided by the jealousies which they reciprocally entertained, — on the one hand, of encroaching sovereignty, — on the other, of relaxing submission and dependence. If the French, from the unready resistance and languid retorts which they experienced, reaped the political advantage of improving their military positions, they incurred the moral disadvantage of rendering themselves more palpably the aggressors in an inevitable quarrel; while the British colonists derived all the benefit arising from the increase of their resources in peace, and from a sense of justice in the final appeal to arms. The British settlements far exceeded those of France in wealth and population; and if the two races of colonists had engaged with equal vigor and determination in general hostilities, unaided by their respective parent states, the issue of the contest could not long have been doubtful. But various circumstances tended to equalize the martial force which these rival colonies were capable of exerting, or, rather, to transfer the preponderance of active power to the French. The British were divided into a variety of commonwealths, separated from each other by religious diversities, as well as by distinct political constitutions, of which the independence was guarded with a vigilance of apprehension incident to the spirit of liberty; and the only principle of union among them was their common jealousy of the parent state, — a sentiment which perplexed their politics, and tended rather to make the subjugation of their French neighbours appear additionally desirable, than to induce them to expend their own strength and resources upon this object. It was difficult to collect the force and energy of a people so circumstanced into one compact mass. In the French settlements no such principles of disunion had existence; but a vigorous concert and simplicity of purpose and action prevailed, — the result of a despotic regimen congenial to the temper and sentiments of the people.

No religious or political distinctions divided the several portions of the

French provincial commonwealth from each other; and no encroachments upon charter privileges, nor opposition to the exercise of disputed prerogative, relaxed the protecting and auxiliary energy of the sovereign, or the common ardor of the colonists for the promotion of his wishes and the enlargement of his empire and renown.[1] The French colonists relied on, and received, much more liberal aid from their parent state than did the English; and at the same time were more ready (generally speaking) to make adventurous exertions of their own unaided force in the national cause, with which all their political ideas and sentiments were blended. Accustomed to prompt and implicit obedience to despotic power, the conformity between their civil habits and the system of military discipline rendered them always capable of being easily moulded into armies and employed as efficient instruments of war and conquest. Undistracted either by internal jealousies and emulations, or by the nurture and defence of domestic liberty, their political ambition was confined to the single object of French glory and aggrandizement; while, from their local situation, opposition to the colonial empire of England was the only sphere of action in which the political enmity and national prejudice of which they were susceptible could be exerted. The governors of Canada were generally soldiers of reputation, and were intrusted with the absolute regulation and superintendence of Indian affairs; whereas the English governors frequently owed their appointments to court favor, parliamentary interest, or aristocratical patronage, and abandoned the province of Indian affairs to private traders, who were indifferent to the public welfare, and actuated only by the most sordid motives and considerations. With the exception of the Six Nations and their tributaries, the French, from their first settlement in America, had been remarkably successful in conciliating the affections and gaining the adherence of the Indian tribes; and, in this respect, their priests proved far more useful political instruments than the clergymen and missionaries of the English. While unity of design and promptitude of decision invigorated the councils and conduct of the French, the most judicious projects entertained by the English were often endangered or rendered abortive by the jealous caution and protracted deliberations of their numerous representative assemblies. Governor Shirley, we have seen, when he undertook the conquest of Louisburg, found it more difficult to overcome the doubt and hesitation of his people than to overpower the resistance of their enemy; and lost the time in defending his measure, which a French governor would have employed in improving its chances of success. Hence, though the actual force of the French settlements was indisputably inferior to that of the English, it was in artificial structure more nimble, compact, and disposable, and was capable of being directed with more celerity upon any given point, — an advantage that has often counterpoised, and even outweighed, disparity of bulk and numerical superiority.

Of the various points in dispute between France and England, not one was adjusted by the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle. The boundaries of the British empire in North America, and the disputed property of Tobago and other islands in the West Indies, were left to be settled by the negotiation of commissaries, — a procedure in which it is easy for either party, by cun-

[1] The effect of such an entire and unqualified despotism as characterized the policy of France towards Canada in repressing those discontents which are nourished by a system so checkered as that which was applied to the colonies of Britain is well unfolded in the speech (preserved by Thucydides, Book I.) of the Athenian ambassador at Sparta.

ning and chicanery, to perplex the discussion, and indefinitely to protract its issue. This policy the French were fully prepared to pursue; and, in unison with it, they pushed with redoubled vigor their system of territorial encroachment. Even previous to the appointment of commissaries on either side, and very soon after the conclusion of the peace, they attempted to make an establishment in Tobago; but, warned by the violent expression of indignation which was provoked from the merchants of Britain by this measure, they receded from a pretension which seemed likely too soon to precipitate matters to an extremity, and, on the first complaint of the British government, consented to abandon the undertaking. Their conduct on this occasion, which admits of no cavil or disguise, justifies a presumption very unfavorable to their good faith in the other contemporary collisions and disputes, of which the merits, whether by artifice or accident, have been involved in greater doubt and obscurity. Eagerly resuming possession of Cape Breton, restored to them by the treaty of peace, the French speedily perceived that some of the advantages which they might hope to derive from this possession were likely to be counteracted by the establishment of the colonists despatched from Britain under Cornwallis to Nova Scotia; and though they had no pretence for disputing the legitimacy of this enterprise, they employed the most active endeavours to render it ineffectual. Their Indian allies attacked the English settlements in Nova Scotia; and, in the commencement of the year 1750, a band of two thousand five hundred French troops, detached by the governor of Canada, and reinforced by Indian auxiliaries, took possession of the whole tract of country from Chignecto, along the north side of the Bay of Fundy, to Kennebec River, which they declared to be still the property of the Most Christian King, and to which they invited all the French Neutrals, as they were called, to repair from the district confessedly ceded to Britain. Various skirmishes ensued between the forces of Cornwallis and the French and Indians; a number of forts were built, and some were taken and destroyed on both sides; but the French continued to maintain their position and fortify their interest. Cornwallis urgently solicited assistance from the government of Massachusetts, and would probably have obtained it, but for the absence of the popular and enterprising Shirley, who had repaired to Europe in order to act as one of the commissaries of Britain in the approaching discussions with France. Spencer Phips, the lieutenant-governor, whose influence was not proportioned to his merit, recommended an expedition to Nova Scotia; but the assembly declared that their own province was likely to need all its forces for its own protection. They had just received intelligence of an encroachment on the territory of Massachusetts, by a settlement which the French were reported to have commenced on the river Lechock, about five leagues eastward of Penobscot; and Clinton, the governor of New York, had communicated to them the alarming tidings, that the French authorities in Canada were diligently endeavouring to seduce the Six Nations from the British interest, and had urged the New England governments to unite their counsels with his, in opposition to these dangerous intrigues. Thus, before the peace announced by the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle was fully established, the French engaged in measures which plainly tended to a renewal of the war.

These collisions demonstrated the necessity of an immediate change in the relative posture of the two nations, and hastened the appointment of the

commissaries, whose conferences accordingly commenced at Paris in the close of the year 1750, but, as might easily have been foreseen, produced only increased disagreement, perplexity, and irritation. Memorials and documents were compiled on both sides, till they attained a bulk more fitted to confuse than elucidate the points and merits of the controversy; and not the slightest approach had been made to the adjustment of any one article of dispute, when the negotiation was finally abandoned in despair of an amicable issue. From the voluminous length of the discussion, the variety and intricacy of the details which it embraced, and the opposite views which the commissaries entertained of the state of facts and the authority of documents, it was not difficult for either party, in its report of the proceedings, to fix a plausible imputation of blame upon the other; and it is not surprising that a controversy which issued in such memorable events and signal revolutions of empire should have been regarded ever since through the medium of the strongest national prejudice and partiality. Doubtless some part, and probably no inconsiderable part, of the difficulties by which a conventional adjustment of the pretensions of the two parties was obstructed arose from the conflicting terms of titulary writs on which they respectively reposed a fair and entire reliance. And, indeed, this appears no less a concession due to candor and liberality, than a conclusion unavoidably suggested by the nature of the object in dispute, which was a vast extent of country to which two nations preferred claims founded on grants and charters of their respective monarchs, who, at the very time when they executed these deeds, were ignorant of the dimensions and boundaries of the region which they pretended to describe and bestow. It was impossible that such charters should not frequently clash and contradict each other; and while both parties referred to them, reasoned from them, and accounted them of equal force and validity, an amicable adjustment of the differences to which they administered support was rendered a matter of the greatest difficulty. Even the most sincere and zealously Christian politicians have accounted themselves exempted, as the representatives of their countrymen, from the obligations of generous concession and magnanimous forbearance, which, as individuals, they would have readily acknowledged.

We have remarked various disputes that were engendered between the several English provinces by the vague and inconsistent definitions of territory contained in their charters; and when such collisions occurred between members of the same common empire, it is not wonderful that they sprung up and were maintained with greater keenness and obstinacy between two nations long accustomed to regard each other with sentiments of rivalry and dislike. Yet, with the amplest allowance for these considerations, we should postpone substantial truth to fanciful candor and affected impartiality, in hesitating to pronounce that the obstructions to an amicable issue of the controversy were not only magnified, but rendered absolutely insuperable, by the disregard of honor, good faith, and moderation, with which the pretensions of France were advocated. The policy which had been exemplified by the French colonists in America was now espoused and defended by the French politicians in Europe. Not only did the commissaries on behalf of France reject the authority of maps which had been published and revised by the ministers of their own country,[1] but they refused to abide by

[1] "M. Bellin," says W. Smith, "published a new set of maps; the first plate being thought too favorable to our claims. Shirley took occasion to speak of this alteration to Bellin at

the definition of the boundaries of Nova Scotia for which the French cabinet formerly contended, when the region designated by this name was acknowledged to form a part of the dominion of France.[1] Governer Shirley, one of the British commissaries, during the progress of the negotiation, committed the folly of marrying, at the age of sixty, a young and lovely French girl, the daughter of his landlord at Paris, — a circumstance which exposed him to ridicule in England, and aroused in America some angry suspicions of his defection to the interests, or, at least, of his relaxed opposition to the pretensions of France. But the injustice of these suspicions was demonstrated on his return to Massachusetts [1753], when he plainly showed that neither the endearments of conjugal affection nor the arts of the French commissaries had been able to bias his sentiments or baffle his penetration; and openly proclaimed that an accommodation with France was hopeless, that only martial arbitrament could now terminate the controversy, and that the interest of Britain demanded that this inevitable appeal should be no longer deferred.[2]

Meanwhile, in addition to the previous controversies and the increasing hopelessness of a peaceful adjustment of them, new subjects of dispute arose between the two nations. The extension of the Virginian settlements to the banks of the river Ohio, and especially the occupation of a part of this region by the English Ohio Company, were calculated to bring to a decisive test the long prevalent suspicion of the purpose of the French to render the line of forts which they had been erecting subservient not merely to the communication between their own colonies, but to the confinement of the British settlements, and the obstruction of their advances into the interior of the country. Nor did the French hesitate a moment to afford unequivocal proof of their entire purpose, and to resist the first attempt of their rivals to overleap the boundaries within which they were resolved to inclose them. A menace of the governor of Canada, that he would treat as enemies any of the subjects of Britain who should settle near the Ohio, or presume even to trade with the Indian inhabitants of this region, having been disregarded, was promptly enforced by the seizure of a number of British traders, who were carried as prisoners to a fort which the French were erecting at Presque Isle, on Lake Erie. Other British traders, and servants of the Ohio Company, retreated in alarm from the stations which they had begun to occupy; and the French, perceiving that the critical juncture was come, when their ambitious system of policy, now plainly disclosed, must be either defended by force or completely abandoned, proceeded with augmented diligence to supply whatever was yet defective in its subsidiary arrangements and preparations. A fort was built at Niagara, within the dominions of the Indian allies of Britain; and, in addition to the fort on Lake Erie, two others were built at commanding positions on the banks of the

Paris, and informed him that one hundred copies of his first maps were dispersed in London; upon which he discovered some surprise; but, instead of urging any thing in support of the variation in his new draft, said, smiling, *We in France must follow the commands of the king.*"

[1] "The conferences," says Smollett, "were rendered abortive by every art of cavilling, chicanery, and procrastination, which the French commissioners opposed to the justice and perspicuity of the English claims. They not only misinterpreted treaties, though expressed with the utmost precision, and perplexed the conferences with difficulties and matter foreign to the subject, but they carried the finesse of perfidy so far, as to produce false charts and maps of the country, in which the rivers and boundaries were misplaced and misrepresented."

[2] Smollett. Hewit. W. Smith. Wynne. Trumbull. Burk. Hutchinson. Minot. Belknap. Yet this year the British parliament, in their address to the king, with strange delusion or insincerity, congratulated him on the manifest stability of the peace.

Ohio. Thus, at length, the French succeeded in completing their long-projected communication between the mouth of the Mississippi and the river St. Lawrence.

The complaints against these measures transmitted from America to Britain, concurring with the failure of the negotiations at Paris, and seconded by the influence and activity of the British merchants who were interested in the scheme of the Ohio Company, excited more attention in the parent state than colonial wrongs and quarrels had usually obtained; and a memorial was accordingly presented this year by Lord Albemarle, the British ambassador to the court of France, requiring, in peremptory terms, that satisfaction should be afforded to the injured subjects of Britain; that the fort erected at Niagara should be evacuated and destroyed; and that positive orders should be issued to the French commanders in America to desist from farther encroachments and attacks upon the British settlements and colonists. The French court, not yet prepared for an open rupture, or at least willing to defer it as long as possible, returned to this application an answer, of which the tone was compliant, though the terms were evasive. Some Englishmen, who had been sent prisoners from America to France, were instantly set at liberty; and assurances were given of the transmission of such orders to the governor of Canada as would infallibly prevent all future cause of complaint. These assurances produced the effect of amusing the British government a little longer; but, although public orders in conformity with them were actually sent to America, it is probable that they were nullified by private instructions; for they were violated without scruple by the French provincial authorities. Jonquière, the governor of Canada, not only continued to multiply and strengthen the fortifications along the line which his countrymen now pretended right to regard as the limit of the English territory, but openly encouraged the Indians, and permitted the French, to attack the English settlers and traders, both in Nova Scotia and on the Ohio. The pretensions of France to withstand the British settlements on the Ohio indicated such a devouring ambition, and disclosed a policy so manifestly calculated to arrest the growth and diminish the security of the colonial dominions of Britain, that they would probably have provoked more general and efficient opposition in America, but for the indiscretion and rapacity which we have already remarked in the conduct of the Ohio Company. Hamilton, the governor of Pennsylvania, strongly represented to the assembly of this province the expediency of erecting forts as well as barter-houses for the use of the Pennsylvanian traders with the Indians on the Ohio; but though a majority of the Pennsylvanian assembly relished the proposal and passed a resolution in conformity with it, yet the interests of individuals, who regarded the monopoly of the Ohio Company with jealous aversion, prevailed so far, as to prevent either this, or any other defensive measure, from being carried into execution.[1]

An attempt, which was made in the same year, by the governor of Virginia, to resist the encroachments of France, led to the first appearance of the illustrious George Washington on the scene of American affairs. It is interesting to mark the earliest dawn of a career of such exalted and unsullied glory. Robert Dinwiddie, who now arrived in Virginia with the appointment of governor of this province, was quickly made sensible of the critical state that the relations between the French and English had attained

[1] Smollett. Wynne. Burk.

on its frontiers. Perceiving the necessity of instant and resolute interference in behalf of his countrymen who were expelled from their settlements, and desirous to gain more distinct information with regard to the region which was the subject of these conflicting pretensions, he was induced to commit this important task, which the approach of a rigorous winter rendered still more arduous, to Washington, a young Virginian planter, only twenty-one years of age. This remarkable youth had conceived a strong predilection for the British naval service, and at the age of fifteen was prevented only by the entreaties of his mother from accepting the situation, which was obtained for him, of midshipman in an English ship of war. He was already distinguished as a surveyor and civil engineer in his native province, and held the rank of major as well as the office of adjutant-general of its militia. Undaunted by the toil and danger of a winter journey, of which two hundred miles lay through a trackless desert inhabited by Indians, some of whom were open enemies and others doubtful friends, the youthful envoy cheerfully undertook the mission; and, with a single attendant, surmounted all the peril and foulness of the way, and succeeded in penetrating to a French fort erected on the river *Le Bœuf*, which falls into the Ohio. To the commander of this fort he carried a letter from Governor Dinwiddie, requiring the evacuation of the place, and a relinquishment of the other recent encroachments on the British dominion in the same quarter. St. Pierre, the French commandant on the Ohio, returned for answer to this application, that it belonged not to him to arbitrate the conflicting claims of France and England, and that he had acted and must still continue to act in implicit obedience to the directions of the governor of Canada. Washington performed the duties of his mission with vigor and ability; and after a painful and laborious expedition, which occupied more than two months, regained in safety the capital of Virginia. [January 16, 1754.] A journal, in which he recorded the particulars of his travel and the fruits of his observation, was published soon after, and impressed his countrymen with a high respect for the solidity of his judgment, and the calm, determined fortitude of his character.

Governor Dinwiddie, finding that nothing was to be gained by amicable negotiation, projected the construction of forts at various places which had been surveyed and selected by Washington; and the assembly agreeing to defray the expense of these operations, materials were procured and the works commenced without delay. Unfortunately, no means were taken to gain the consent of the natives to this measure, which accordingly served only to increase the jealousy and malevolence with which they had begun to regard the English. A regiment was raised at the same time by the Virginian government, and Washington, who was its lieutenant-colonel, marched with two companies, in advance of the main body, to the Great Meadows, situated within the disputed territory. [April, 1754.] Here he learned from some friendly Indians, that the French, with a force of six hundred men and eighteen pieces of cannon, having attacked and destroyed a fort which the Virginians had been erecting, were themselves engaged in completing another fort at the confluence of the Alleghany and Monongahela, one of the spots which was especially recommended in his own journal to the occupation of his countrymen; and that a detachment of French troops from this place was then on its march towards the Great Meadows, and had encamped for the night in the bosom of a retired valley at a short distance. Convinced

that this was a hostile movement, Washington availed himself of the proffered guidance of the Indians, and, advancing with his troops on a dark and rainy night, effectually surprised the French encampment. The Virginians, rousing the enemy by a sudden discharge of firearms, completely disconcerted them by rushing forward to close attack, and compelled them instantly to surrender.[1]

Washington, after this success, erected at the Great Meadows a small stockade fort, which received the name of Fort Necessity, and then advanced with his troops, which, by the accession of two companies, one from New York and the other from North Carolina, now amounted to four hundred men, towards the new French fort called Duquesne,[2] with the intention of dislodging the enemy. But learning on his march that the French had been reinforced and were approaching with a great body of Indian auxiliaries to attack him, he retreated to Fort Necessity, and endeavoured to strengthen its defences by the construction of a ditch around the stockade. Before this operation was completed, the fort was attacked, on the fourth of July, by a very superior force, under the command of De Villiers. The garrison made a vigorous defence from ten in the morning till a late hour at night, when De Villiers having sounded a parley and tendered a capitulation, they at first refused, but finally consented, to surrender, or, more properly speaking, to evacuate the fort, on condition that they should be allowed to march out with the honors of war, to retain their arms and baggage, and to retire without molestation into the inhabited parts of Virginia, —and that the French themselves, instead of advancing farther at present, or even retaining the evacuated fort, should retreat to their previous station at Monongahela. Fifty-eight of the Virginians, and two hundred of the French, were killed and wounded in the encounter. Such a capitulation was by no means calculated either to damp the spirit of the Virginians or to depress the reputation of their commander. It was violated, however, with unscrupulous barbarity by the Indians who were united to the forces of De Villiers, and who, hovering round the Virginians during the whole of their retreat, harassed them with frequent attacks, and killed and wounded a considerable number of them. At the close of this unsuccessful expedition, the Virginian assembly, with equal justice and magnanimity, expressed by a vote of thanks its approbation of the conduct of Washington and his troops.[3]

Though the British ministers had obtained from the parliament, in the preceding year, a felicitation to the king on the pretended stability of peace, it was impossible that they could disguise from themselves that the progress of affairs ever since the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle tended manifestly to a rupture with France, and that the two nations were already on the brink of another war. The conferences at Paris had proved abortive, and the disputes which were there ineffectually discussed had not only multiplied in the interval, but broken forth into actual hostilities in America. In the East

[1] Some French writers declared that the conduct of Washington, on this occasion, betrayed the most savage barbarity; and taxed him personally with acts of wanton and unmanly bloodshed. These charges, repeated in various publications, rendered Washington very odious to the French, who afterwards, however, forgot or disbelieved them, when the War of Independence rendered Washington their ally.

[2] Pittsburg, in Pennsylvania, stands upon the ground that was formerly occupied by Fort Duquesne.

[3] Marshall's *Life of Washington*. Burk. Minot. Trumbull. Rogers's *American Biographical Dictionary*.

Indies, also, the colonial empire of Britain was disturbed and invaded by the ambition and intrigues of the French court.[1] That, in such circumstances, a declaration of war should have been retarded, and the French permitted to extend and mature their system of encroachment, seems to have arisen not from blindness or credulity on the part of the British ministers, but from the perplexity and irresolution which they felt with regard to the manner of conducting hostilities in America, and the extent to which these hostilities might, consistently with prudence, be carried. The French court entertained simpler views with regard to America, and was far more bent upon conquest in that quarter than the English; and for this reason, that the liberty that prevailed in the English settlements was a dangerous neighbour to the French colonial empire, whereas the vicinity of the French power was a circumstance favorable to the continued ascendency of Britain over *her* colonies. Whether these colonies should be defended and their invaders encountered by British troops, or by their own forces; in what manner their counsels and political organization should be united, in order to give due efficacy to the latter mode of defence, without rendering their combined vigor dangerous to the parent state; and how far it would be expedient to push, or possible to pause in, the career of successful warfare conducted in either of these ways,—were questions, which the British ministers, distracted between their jealousy of the colonists and their resentment against the enemy, revolved with much hesitation and embarrassment. Eventually, their indecision, concurring with the immoderate ambition of France, forced upon them the very extremity to which they were most averse, and which, by any reasonable sacrifice, they would doubtless have willingly avoided. Had they vigorously resisted the French encroachments at the outset, and despatched a force sufficient to check them and to inspire the enemy with apprehensions of still more signal retribution, a peace might, perhaps, have been concluded, which would have retained America for a while longer under the divided empire of France and England. But they hesitated to act, and delayed to act with vigor, till the quarrel, signalized by victories and triumphs of the French and disgraces and disasters of the English, acquired in the eyes of both nations an importance far beyond what it had originally possessed, and conducted England, in particular, to a point at which her dignity and reputation seemed to be staked on the issue of a decisive contest for the sole dominion of North America.

Early in the spring of this year, and before the expedition from Virginia to the Great Meadows, the British ministers signified to the provincial governments the desire of the king that they should oppose the French encroachments by force of arms; together with a recommendation from his Majesty that they should send delegates to a general convention at Albany, both in order to form a league with the Six Nations, and to concert among themselves a plan of united operations and defence against the common enemy. Seven of the colonies, consisting of Maryland, New York, Pennsylvania, and the New England States, agreed to comply with this recommendation;[2] and the assembly of Massachusetts at the same time [April 10, 1754] presented an address to Governor Shirley, desiring him "to pray his Majesty

[1] Smollett.

[2] Virginia and New Jersey, though specially named in the royal invitation, sent no delegates to the convention. Connecticut, Rhode Island, the Carolinas, and Georgia received no direct invitation from the crown. The other colonies were instructed to demand the co-operation of these States; but their application prevailed only with Connecticut and Rhode Island.

that affairs which relate to the Six Nations and their allies may be put under such general direction as his Majesty shall judge proper; and that the several governments may be *obliged* to bear their proportions of defending his Majesty's territories against the encroachments of the French and the ravages and incursions of the Indians." Shirley, sensible probably of the jealousy which any measure founded on this suggestion would provoke among the colonists in general, unless it originated with themselves, proposed to the governors of the several colonies, that the delegates elected to the convention should be authorized by their constituents to deliberate on a plan of united operation of all the States for their common safety and defence. Instructions to this effect were accordingly communicated to the delegates, who, assembling at Albany in the month of June, were met by a numerous deputation from the tribes of the Six Nations. After an explanatory and pacific treaty with the Indians, who very willingly accepted the presents that were tendered to them, but yet plainly betrayed by their negligent demeanour the success with which the French had intrigued to weaken their regards for the English, — the convention undertook the more important subject which was committed to its deliberations; and it was unanimously resolved that a union of the colonies was essential to the general safety, and ought to be forthwith accomplished. But here the unanimity of the delegates ended. Probably all the inhabitants of all the colonies would have united in approving the foregoing resolution. The difficulty, or rather the impossibility, was to devise a plan for carrying it into execution, which would be satisfactory at once to the colonists and the parent state.

Among various individuals considerable for their talents and reputation who were assembled in this convention,[1] the most popular and remarkable person was Benjamin Franklin, one of the delegates from Pennsylvania. This great man, who now sustained a conspicuous part in the most important national council that had ever been convoked in North America, has already been introduced (in the two preceding chapters) to our attention, first, as a provincial patriot and philosopher, and afterwards as an enterprising and successful votary of science. In the year 1736, which was the thirtieth year of his age, a matter nowise extraordinary in its nature gave occasion to the earliest display of his genius and capacity as a politician. He had previously established a club or society in Philadelphia, of which the associates were limited in number to twelve, and of which the main object was to promote the exercise and efficacy of patriotic, philosophic, and republican virtue. By a fundamental rule of this institution, which received the name of *The Junto*, its existence and transactions were kept secret from the public, in order to prevent applications for admission from persons whose character and sentiments might render them unmeet associates, and whose influence and connections might at the same time make it painful and inconvenient to reject them. Some of the members having proposed to render the society more numerous by introducing their friends into it, — "I was one of those," says Franklin, "who were against any addition to our number; and instead of it, I made in writing a proposal that every member separately should endeavour to form a subordinate club with the same rules, but without any hint or information of its connection with the Junto. The advantages proposed were the improvement of so many more

[1] One of the delegates from Massachusetts was Thomas Hutchinson, afterwards the governor and historian of this province. From Connecticut were sent William Pitkin, Roger Wolcott, and Elisha Williams.

young citizens by the use of our institutions; our better acquaintance with the general sentiments of the inhabitants on any occasion, as the Junto member might propose what queries we should desire, and was to report to the Junto what passed in his separate club; the promotion of our particular interests in business by more extensive recommendation; and the increase of our influence in public affairs, and our power of doing good, by spreading through the several clubs the sentiments of the Junto. Five or six clubs were thus completed, which were called by different names, as the *Vine*, the *Union*, the *Band*, &c.: they were useful to themselves, and afforded us a good deal of amusement, information, and instruction, besides answering, in a considerable degree, our views of influencing the public on particular occasions."

Here we behold the theory and primitive model of that engine of party purpose and power which was afterwards employed with tremendous efficacy by the Jacobin Club of Paris during the earlier stages of the French Revolution. In the year 1753, Franklin, who for some time had held a subordinate appointment in the post-office, was promoted to the function of postmaster-general of America, — a situation which he retained till about twenty years after, when he was displaced by the British court. Of humble parentage and narrow fortune, in a young and dependent commonwealth, unfriended by the gale of patronage, the captivation of brilliant qualities, or the opportunities afforded by revolutionary change, self-educated and self-aided, this man achieved at once the highest civic preëminence and the most splendid and imperishable renown. At the period at which we have now arrived, he had already distinguished himself by grand discoveries in science and by useful projects in economics, and had been for a number of years a member of the assembly of Pennsylvania, where he spoke rarely, but sententiously, concisely, and with convincing force and propriety, when the occasion was at length presented of exhibiting his genius on a wider theatre. It was now that he proposed to his fellow-delegates in the Albany convention that memorable scheme of a federal league between the American colonies, which has received the name of *The Albany Plan of Union*, and which, though little more than the transcript of a design suggested by another politician about thirteen years before,[1] has been celebrated with far higher praise than his more ingenious and original idea of a ramification of clubs in Pennsylvania has attracted. This was the purport of the plan which he suggested. Application was to be made for an act of parliament to establish in the colonies a general government, to be administered by a president appointed by the crown, and by a grand council, consisting of members chosen by the several provincial assemblies, the number of representatives from each province being directly proportioned to the amount of its contributions to the general treasury, — with this restriction, however, that no colony should have more than seven, or fewer than two representatives.[2] The whole executive authority of the general government was committed to the president. The power of legislation was lodged jointly in the grand council and

[1] See account of Dr. Coxe's project, *ante*, Chap. II.

[2] It was proposed that the assemblies should choose members for the grand council in the following proportion: —

Massachusetts	7	New York	4	Virginia	7
New Hampshire	2	New Jersey	3	North Carolina	4
Connecticut	5	Pennsylvania	6	South Carolina	4
Rhode Island	2	Maryland	4		48

president; the consent of the latter functionary being requisite to the advancement of bills into laws. The functions and prerogatives of the general government were, to declare war and make peace; to conclude treaties with the Indian nations; to regulate trade with them, and to make purchase of vacant lands from them, either in the name of the crown or of the Union; to settle new colonies, and to exercise legislative authority over them until they should be erected into separate provincial governments; and to raise troops, build forts, fit out armed vessels, and pursue all other measures requisite for the general defence. To defray the expenses of this establishment and its various operations, the president and grand council were empowered to frame laws enacting such duties, imposts, and taxes, as they might deem at once necessary and least burdensome to the people. These legislative ordinances were to be transmitted to England for the approbation of the king; and unless disallowed within three years after their enactment, they were to remain in force. All officers in the naval and military service of the United Colonies were to be nominated by the president, and approved by the council; civil officers were to be nominated by the council, and approved by the president.

This plan, though recommended to the approbation of a majority of the convention, both by its own merits and by the reputation, talent, and address of the author,[1] was opposed with warm and inflexible determination by the delegates of Connecticut, who objected to the authority conferred on the president, and to the power of general taxation [July 4, 1754]; and insisted that a government of this description would prove dangerous in the highest degree to the liberties of the colonists, and utterly unfit to conduct with vigor or economy a defensive war along their extended frontier. Of all the members of the convention, these delegates alone had the satisfaction to find that their sentiments were in unison with those of their constituents. No sooner was the plan communicated to the various provincial assemblies, than it was condemned and rejected by every one of them;[2] and resolutions were formed to oppose the expected attempts of the British court to obtain an act of parliament for carrying it into effect. But the apprehensions of the colonists on this score were groundless; for, by a singular coincidence, the plan proved as unacceptable to the ministers of the crown as to themselves. In America it was accounted too favorable to the royal prerogative; in England it was, contrariwise, censured as savoring too strongly of democracy, and conceding too much power to the representatives of the people. Although thus rejected by all parties, the project of Franklin was attended with important consequences in America. The discussion of it served to familiarize the idea of a federal league, a general government, an American army; and prepared the minds of the people for the very form of confederacy which was afterwards resorted to in their revolutionary contest with Britain.[3] A plan of a different complexion from Franklin's was conceived by the British cabinet, and communicated, among others, to Governor Shirley of Massachusetts, who, though a popular mag-

[1] Though the plan was confessedly and solely the composition of Franklin, a committee of the convention had been appointed to digest it. This committee consisted of Hutchinson, of Massachusetts; Atkinson, of New Hampshire; Hopkins, of Rhode Island; Pitkin, of Connecticut; Smith, of New York; Franklin, of Pennsylvania; and Tasker, of Maryland.

[2] "Not one of the assemblies, from Georgia to New Hampshire, when the report was made by their delegates, inclined to part with so great a share of power as was to be given to this general government." Hutchinson.

[3] See Note XIII., at the end of the volume.

istrate, was inclined to favor the prerogative of the crown, to which he was indebted for his own advancement. According to this plan (somewhat akin to the ministerial projects which we have remarked a few years before), the general defence of the colonies was to be intrusted to an assembly consisting of all the governors and a certain number of the provincial counsellors, who were to draw bills of exchange on the English treasury for the sums of money which might be required to carry their measures into effect, and of which the reimbursement was to be derived from taxes imposed on the colonies by act of parliament.

The aversion which the Americans expressed for a far more liberal scheme deterred Shirley from wantonly risking his popularity by openly announcing and advocating this proposition; but he privately imparted it to Franklin, and an interesting discussion of its merits and chances of success ensued between them. Franklin affirmed that any attempt to carry into effect the project of the British ministry would excite the strongest dissatisfaction in America; and with great force of argument demonstrated the injustice of the measure, and the injurious consequences which the Americans might reasonably apprehend from it. They could have no confidence, he declared, in a convention consisting of governors and counsellors, of whom the far greater number were the creatures of the crown, whose interest would prompt them to enlarge the expenditure committed to their administration, and multiply the posts and appointments included within their patronage. The people might expect that a tax imposed by their own representatives would be diminished and repealed, whenever a change of circumstances permitted such alleviation; but a tax imposed by parliament, in conformity with the representations and private interests of a board of royal officers in America, would most probably obtain perpetual duration. He maintained that it was unjust that the subjects of the British crown resident in the colonies should be loaded with direct taxes except by their own representatives, of whom they had none in parliament; and that the parliamentary restrictions on the commerce of the colonies were *secondary taxes*, which the colonists, on the one hand, submitted to, though they had no share in imposing or adjusting them, and which Britain, on the other, ought to accept as an equivalent for the exemption of the colonists from direct parliamentary taxation. Yet was he disposed to recommend a more intimate union of the colonies with Britain, by the admission of representatives from America into the British parliament; and he believed that this union would be acceptable to the colonists, provided a reasonable number of representatives were allowed to them, and all the old statutes restraining the trade or cramping the manufactures of the colonies were repealed, till the new parliament, representing the whole empire, might think fit, for the general interest, to reënact some or all of them. Not that he imagined that the colonies would obtain so many representatives as to possess any considerable numerical force in parliament; but he expected that the reasoning and influence of the American members might be sufficient to cause the trade laws to be more impartially considered, and framed with more regard to equity, and might prevail so far as to withstand the private interest of a single corporation or class of merchants or artificers in England. He characterized the colonies as so many *counties* gained to Great Britain, and all included within the pale of British constitutional law and rights, no less than of the British empire; and he held it alike indifferent to the general interest, whether a

merchant, a smith, or a hatter grew rich in Old or in New England, as whether an English manufacturer of iron pursued his business at Birmingham or Sheffield; since, in either place, they were still within the bounds of the commonwealth, and their persons and property were subject to its jurisdiction.

In this correspondence between Franklin and Shirley, which was conducted with great privacy,[1] we behold a partial rehearsal of the controversy that broke out not many years after between America and Britain, and issued in the American Revolution. Franklin, in the interval, found cause to alter some of his political notions; and at the latter period, departing from the views which we have now seen him unfold, he declared his conviction that the legislatures of Britain and America were and ought to be distinct from each other, and that the relation between the two countries was precisely analogous to that which subsisted between England and Scotland before their union. When we consider how notably Franklin (mistaking his own view of men's interests for an acquaintance with their desires and opinions) misapprehended the sentiments of his countrymen in proposing a plan at Albany which they almost unanimously rejected, we may be justified in supposing that some degree of kindred error mingled with his notion of their willingness to submit to direct taxation by the parent state, on condition of being allowed to send representatives to the British House of Commons. He seems to have entirely neglected the consideration, that, unless an order of nobility were established in America, and the members of it admitted to participate in the privileges of the British peerage, there would still be no channel through which the interests of his countrymen could penetrate into the House of Lords; and this branch of the supreme legislature would remain exclusively British in its composition. Shirley, convinced, not less by the issue of Franklin's own plan than by the force of his arguments, of the hopelessness of the project which was communicated to him by the British ministers, refrained from any public expression of his opinion on the subject of political union for the general defence; and the royal cabinet, after persisting a little longer in a feeble and irresolute attempt to induce the colonies to raise a common revenue which the officers of the crown were to administer, either abandoned, forgot, or suspended their purpose;[2] and finally embraced the determination, or at least pursued the course, of carrying on hostilities in America with British troops aided by such auxiliary forces as the colonial assemblies might voluntarily furnish.[3] Though these assemblies were but imperfectly acquainted with the inclinations of the court, their jealousy supplied, and perhaps more than supplied, the defectiveness of their information; and nothing could exceed the stubborn and determined purpose evinced by them to resist the

[1] It was first published in the *London Magazine* for February, 1766.

[2] Yet, so late as the month of May, 1755, we find Shirley writing thus to Wentworth, the governor of New Hampshire: — "I may assure your Excellency, from every letter I have of late received from Sir Thomas Robinson, I have reason to think that his Majesty hath a dependence upon a common fund's being raised in all his colonies upon this continent; and that such an one must, in the end, be either voluntarily raised, or else assessed in some other way." A few months after, the assembly of Massachusetts, in the instructions they communicated to their agent at London, thus admonished him: — "It is more especially expected that you oppose every thing that shall have the remotest tendency to raise a revenue in the plantations for any public uses or services of government."

[3] "The ministry," says Belknap, "determined to employ their own troops to fight their battles in America, rather than let the colonists feel their own strength and be directed by their own counsels. Some aid was to be exacted from them; but the weight of the enterprise and honor of the victory were to belong to British troops, commanded by British officers."

establishment of a general American revenue, which the representatives of America were not to impose and administer.[1]

While the king and his ministers, though desirous that the military force of America should be more fully developed, were still more desirous to avoid any proportional development of the spirit of American liberty, and were bent on establishing in the colonies only such a system of united agency as might be subservient to British ascendency and royal prerogative; and while the Americans, on the other hand, were determined to cultivate their military resources only in correspondence with the interests of their domestic liberty, and to oppose the establishment of any new jurisdiction over their country in which they themselves were not to possess a commanding share, — it was impossible that any plan of general government or even of combined operation of the colonies could be introduced, except by force on the part of Britain, or by revolt on the part of America. Additional impediments to such a measure were occasioned at the present period by dissensions between two of the American provinces, by the struggles of domestic factions in a third, and by an unusual degree of discontent and impatience kindled in several of them by certain recent proceedings of the British government and its officers. A quarrel had arisen between Virginia and New York, in consequence of the failure of the expedition to the Great Meadows; the Virginians reproaching the other colony with having caused this disaster by neglecting to furnish an adequate contingent of troops. Pennsylvania was distracted by the continual disputes between her assemblies and the provincial proprietaries and governors. The assembly of Virginia at first coöperated zealously with Dinwiddie, the governor of this province, in the prosecution of hostilities with the French. But shortly after the expedition to the Great Meadows, they manifested a very different spirit, and, refusing to sanction or support measures which he by his office was entitled to conduct, they plainly declared that they entertained more jealousy and apprehension of him than of the foreign enemy. Dinwiddie, who was a man of arbitrary principles, insolent temper, and rapacious disposition, attempted to introduce the practice, which, though established in New York, was a novelty in Virginia, of exacting a fee or perquisite to the governor for every patent of land which he was required to grant. The assembly declared that this exaction was illegal, arbitrary, and oppressive; they protested that every planter who complied with it ought to be deemed an enemy of his country; and despatched an agent to London to solicit an order of the privy council for its discontinuance.

In North Carolina, the conduct of Arthur Dobbs, who succeeded Johnstone in the office of governor, proclaimed the instructions which he had received to enlarge the bounds of the royal prerogative, and provoked the most determined spirit of resistance from the assembly. But it was at New York that the strongest manifestation of public discontent was elicited by an accidental discovery of the strain in which the instructions from the crown to its governors were actually couched. We have already remarked the practice of the British court to express, in its commissions to the governors of New York, the delegation of a very large and indeed unwarrantable extent of authority. In addition to their commissions, these officers, like all the governors who were appointed by the crown, were furnished with written

[1] Franklin's *Memoirs*. Trumbull. Hutchinson. Belknap. Minot. Gordon. Holmes Wynne.

instructions for the direction of their political conduct, which were not communicated to the public. But in the present year, Sir Danvers Osborne, a new governor of this province, having died immediately after his arrival at New York, his instructions somehow fell into the hands of persons who hastened to expose their contents to the public eye. The preamble of this document sharply inveighed against the provincial assembly, which was stigmatized as an undutiful, disloyal, and factious body, which had repeatedly violated the royal prerogative by usurping a control over the expenditure of the public money. Osborne was directed to insist on the reformation of all such abuses, and particularly to require the establishment of a certain and definite revenue for the service of the government, as well as for the appropriation of a fixed salary to his own office. Moreover, his Majesty, in these instructions, signified his will that all money raised for the use and support of government should be disposed of by warrant from the governor, with the consent of the council, and no otherwise; that, nevertheless, the assembly should be permitted, from time to time, to see the accounts of the expenditure of money levied by the authority of laws which they enacted; that, if any member of the council, or officer holding a place of trust or profit in the government, should in any manner whatever encourage, advise, or unite with the assembly in passing any act or vote, whereby the royal prerogative might be limited or impaired, or any money be raised or expended for the public service, otherwise than by the method prescribed by these instructions, the functionary so offending should forthwith be degraded from his office by the governor.[1] These were peremptory injunctions, and plainly proved that the British ministry regarded the province with displeasure, and were determined to invigorate the royal prerogative within it; nor is it surprising that the publication of them excited at New York a lively indignation and jealousy against the government of the parent state.

The mutual distrust and ill-humor which thus contributed to perplex the councils and enfeeble the operations of England and her colonies was proportionably favorable to the views and policy of France, which continued vigorously to extend her encroachments, reinforce her garrisons, and strengthen her position in America. In aid of her designs, she endeavoured, with the utmost assiduity of hostile intrigue, to multiply the enemies of England, and particularly to involve this country in a quarrel with Spain. In this instance, indeed, she was for the present disappointed; for Wall, the minister of the king of Spain, succeeded in convincing his master that peace with England was essential to the real interests of the Spanish monarchy. In America the French intrigues were more successful; and by the influence of the governor of Canada and his Indian allies, a tribe of Indians with whom New England had no previous quarrel were induced to invade and ravage the frontiers of Massachusetts and New Hampshire. Massachusetts had of late been the scene of violent altercations, provoked by the introduction of an excise law, which, however, in spite of the threats of its opponents and the fears of its supporters, was peaceably carried into execution. In the course of the present year, the assembly of this province caused some new forts to be erected, renewed a pacific treaty with the Eastern Indians, and ascertained that the tidings which had been formerly communicated to them of a French settlement on the Kennebec were destitute of foundation.[2]

The British ministers, on receiving intelligence of the defeat of Washing-

[1] Smollett. Williamson. Burk. Wynne. [2] Minot. Smollett. Belknap.

ton, and of the establishment of French posts on the Ohio, perceived plainly that a war between France and England had begun. Even with a view to the speedy restoration of peace, it was expedient that they should exert more vigor and promptitude of hostility, and demonstrate more active and determined concern for the dignity of the British empire and the safety of its colonial adjuncts or dependencies. Finding that their complaints to the court of Versailles were answered only by a repetition of former evasions, and learning that the French were making active preparation for the enlargement of their naval and military force in America, they determined to send a detachment of the standing army maintained in England to the defence of the British possessions and pretensions in the same quarter. In conformity with this determination, and early in the following year [January, 1755], General Braddock was despatched from Ireland with two regiments of infantry commanded by Halket and Dunbar, which were destined to the service of America, and especially to the protection of the Virginian frontier. On the arrival of this armament at its destination, the provinces seemed to forget alike their disputes with each other and their jealousies of the parent state, and a vigorous offensive campaign against the French was projected. A convention of the provincial governors, at the request of the British commander, assembled at Annapolis, in Maryland, to settle the plan of military operations, and resolved that three simultaneous expeditions should be undertaken. The first, directed against Fort Duquesne, was to be conducted by Braddock with his British troops; the second, which was to attempt the reduction of the French fort at Niagara, was committed to the American regulars and Indians, commanded by Governor Shirley, who now received the rank of a British general from the king; and the third, an expedition against Crown Point, was to be undertaken by militia drawn from the northern colonies.

The French court, apprized of Braddock's departure for America, now made one more attempt to prolong the inactivity of the British government, by reiterating assurances of its pacific purposes and earnest desire of accommodation. But when the Marquis de Mirepoix, the ambassador of France at London, a truly honorable man, tendered these assurances, in full reliance on their truth, to the British ministers, they exhibited to him such incontestable proofs of the insincerity of his court, that he was struck with astonishment and mortification, and, repairing to Versailles, upbraided the ministers of Louis the Fifteenth with the indignity to which they had exposed him as the tool of their dissimulation. By them he was referred to the king, who commanded him to return to London with fresh protestations of his royal intention to preserve peace; but the conduct of this monarch corresponded so ill with his professions, that his ambassador had scarcely obtained an audience to communicate them, when indubitable assurance was received that a powerful squadron was ready to sail for America from Brest and Rochefort. In effect, it sailed soon after, and transported a great quantity of military stores, and four thousand regular troops, commanded by the Baron Dieskau. Roused by this intelligence, the British government despatched a small fleet, under the command of Admiral Boscawen, and afterwards, on learning the superior strength of the enemy, a few more vessels under Admiral Holborne, to watch the motions of the French squadron. But no additional land forces were sent by Britain to America; nor yet did she think fit to declare war against France. The French monarch was still more bent on avoiding or at least postponing this extremity; and although a part of the

fleet which he had despatched to America was attacked off Newfoundland and captured by Admiral Boscawen, he still refrained from any nearer approach to a declaration of war than the recall of his ambassador from England. [April 25, 1755.] The British king, in his speech to parliament, asserted the sincerity of his wishes and endeavours, and still expressed a hope of his ability, to preserve peace; but withal declared that he would not purchase even this blessing at the expense of submitting to encroachments upon his dominions. An act of parliament was passed, extending the provisions of the British *Mutiny Act* to North America;[1] and declaring that all troops, raised by any of the colonial governors or assemblies, should, whenever they acted in conjunction with the British soldiers, be subject to the same system of martial law and discipline which obtained in the British army. A communication, addressed some time before to the provincial governments, signified the king's commands, that officers commissioned by his Majesty, or by his commander-in-chief in North America, should take precedence of all those whose commissions were derived from the provincial governors or assemblies; "and that the general and field officers of the provincial troops should have no rank, when serving with the general and field officers commissioned by the crown." This regulation proved exceedingly unpalatable to the Americans. Washington, in particular, resenting it as injurious to the merit of his countrymen and calculated to depress their spirit and character, resigned his commission. Happily, however, for his own fame and his country's interest, he was persuaded to accept the appointment of aid-de-camp to General Braddock.[2]

CHAPTER IV.

Hostilities in Nova Scotia — Expulsion of the French Neutrals. — Braddock's Expedition — and Defeat. — Battle of Lake George. — Transactions in South Carolina. — Dissensions in Pennsylvania — Resignation of Political Power by the Quakers — Quaker Proceedings respecting Negro Slavery. — War declared between France and Britain. — Success of the French at Oswego.

While preparations were making for the prosecution of the military schemes devised in the convention at Annapolis, an expedition, which the New England States had previously agreed to undertake on condition of being reimbursed of the expense of it by the British government, was de-

[1] Much disgust and jealousy was excited by this measure in America. It had been strongly, but ineffectually, opposed by Bollan, the agent at London for Massachusetts, who, in a petition to parliament, represented, "that his Majesty's American subjects were generally freeholders and persons of some property, and enlisted, not for a livelihood, but with intent to return to their farms or trades as soon as the particular services for which they might enlist should terminate; that the officers were persons in similar though better circumstances; and that all of them — being chiefly influenced to take up arms by a regard to the honor of the king, the defence of their country, and the preservation of their religion and liberties — had but little preparatory exercise for war, and were, therefore, unsuitable subjects for the operation of the rigorous code of discipline adapted to the government of his Majesty's standing forces." Minot. In communicating the parliamentary measure to his constituents, Bollan, a sagacious and impartial man, apprized them that he possessed the best evidence of the purposes of the British court "to govern America like Ireland, by keeping up a body of standing forces with a military chest, under some act similar to the famous Poyning's law." Walsh's *Appeal*.

[2] Campbell. Burk. Smollett. Wynne. Minot. Williamson. Marshall.

spatched against the forts and settlements recently established by the French in Nova Scotia. The main body of the forces thus employed consisted of about three thousand men, raised in New England, principally in Massachusetts, and conducted by Colonel Winslow, one of the most popular and considerable inhabitants of this province, and the representative of one of the old Puritan families which were the pride of New England and had gathered the respect of successive generations. Arriving at the British settlement in Nova Scotia [May 25, 1755], the New England forces were joined by three hundred regular troops and a small train of artillery; and the command of the whole was assumed by Colonel Monckton, an English officer of respectable talents and experience. This enterprise was pursued with skill and vigor, and crowned with entire success. Beau Séjour, the principal fort which the French possessed at Chignecto, after a hot siege of a few days, was compelled to surrender, and received from the victors the new name of Fort Cumberland. [June 16, 1755.] The garrison were allowed to march out with the honors of war, and, having engaged not to bear arms for six months, were transported to Louisburg. The other fortresses of the French in this quarter surrendered shortly after, on the same terms.

But although the whole of Nova Scotia was thus reduced to the dominion of Britain, it was impossible not to perceive that the possession of it was still rendered precarious by the existing relations between the British government and the French inhabitants of the country. This race of colonists, interesting both by their character and their misfortunes, amounted in number, probably,[1] to about seven or eight thousand. They were distinguished by the mildness of their manners, their frugal, industrious habits, and the warmth and sincerity of their attachment to the Roman Catholic faith. The vanity, licentiousness, and restless ambition, which we have remarked in the character of the Canadian colonists, were unknown to this little community, which exhibited a happy scene of primitive harmony and benevolence, virtuous simplicity, moderation of desire, and equality of condition. Marriage was contracted at an early age, and celibacy was exemplified only by the priests; nor had one instance of illicit intercourse of the sexes been known to occur among the people since their first establishment in America. Whenever a youth born in this region came to man's estate, a house was built for him by a general contribution of his neighbours, a portion of land was cleared and sown for his use, and he was supplied with all the necessaries of life for a twelvemonth. His marriage was contemporary with this establishment; and a flock of cattle constituted the portion of his wife. But, unhappily, the people, though mildly treated by Britain, and exempted from all taxes, even for the support of the institutions of government in Nova Scotia, never ceased to regret their political separation from France, and were more estranged from the British colonists by difference of religious faith, than attached to them by similarity of manners and moral character. Their priests, supplied by France, were devoted to the interests of her church and monarchy, maintained a close correspondence with the French authorities in Canada, and cherished in their people a conviction of the indissoluble nature of their original relation to the crown of France, and a rooted aversion to the sway and the faith of that nation to which their territory was ceded by the treaty of Utrecht. Though they had desired, upon

[1] The accounts of the actual numbers of this race, transmitted by the historians of America, are surprisingly inconsistent and contradictory.

this event, and by a singular arrangement were permitted, to assume the title and character of a neutral race in all controversies between their old and new masters, the same sentiments which thus qualified their subjection to Britain prevented them from strictly sustaining the neutrality which they professed between her and France. They repeatedly afforded to the Canadian colonists and their Indian allies intelligence, quarters, provisions, and even still more active coöperation in their hostilities against the British government and its subjects; and upon the present occasion, in particular, three hundred of these professed neutrals were actually found in arms at Fort Beau Séjour.

It was manifest that the interest of Britain demanded, and that her just authority entitled her to require, some additional pledge of the submission, or safeguard against the hostility, of a people inhabiting a portion of her dominions; and an intimation was now conveyed by Lawrence, the deputy-governor of Nova Scotia, to all of the French colonists who had not made open demonstration of hostility, that they would be allowed to continue in possession of their lands, if they would take the oath of allegiance to the British king without any qualification. As they unanimously refused to give this pledge, Lawrence, and the English admiral, Boscawen, who was then at Halifax, embraced the resolution of transporting them without farther delay beyond the confines of Nova Scotia. To have permitted them to choose the place of their exile would have been to recruit Canada,[1] in the very beginning of a war, with men who would have instantly returned in arms upon the British frontiers. It was therefore determined to remove and disperse this whole people among the British colonies, where they could not unite in any hostile purpose or attempt, and where they might be expected gradually to mingle with the rest of the population. Notice having been given to the governors of the several colonies to prepare for their reception, the French, who had latterly been amused with the hope that only their former pledge of neutrality would be required of them, were assembled at various places by a stratagem less honorable in its character than humane in its purpose; and having been surrounded by troops, were abruptly acquainted with their fate, and hurried on board a fleet of vessels which was collected to transport them from their native land.

A party of them had been collected in a church, which was thus profaned by violence and breach of faith; and some having escaped from their captors, and others, from negligence or suspicion, having avoided the snare, their houses and plantations were ravaged in order to deprive them of shelter and compel them to surrender. Winslow and the New England troops were compelled to take a share in this disagreeable duty, the severity of which they endeavoured to alleviate to the unhappy victims by the exercise of a tenderness and humanity very remote from the stern instructions which were communicated by Lawrence. Yet, in the hurry of the embarkation, a great deal of superfluous misery was unintentionally inflicted; husbands were separated from their wives, and parents were conveyed to settlements far distant from those to which their children were transported. "It was the hardest case," said one of the sufferers, "which had happened since our Saviour was on earth." About a thousand of them were consigned to the territory of Massachusetts, where their wretchedness excited much

[1] Raynal affirms, that these French colonists, apprehending that their religion was endangered by the English settlement at Halifax, and instigated by their priests, were, at this very time, actually preparing to emigrate to Canada.

compassion; but they were debarred, by the provincial laws, from the public exercise of their religious worship. The people of Massachusetts were incapable of the inhuman absurdity of executing, in such circumstances, their severe law against Catholic priests discovered within the province, but they would not consent to tolerate the celebration of the mass. These involuntary emigrants occasioned a heavy expense to all the colonies; for, partly from anguish of spirit, and partly from the fond hope that the king of France would never make peace till he had procured their reëstablishment in Nova Scotia, they refused to mingle with or pursue any business among the English, and declined to weaken their claims on their own sovereign by soliciting compensation for their losses from the British government. Their pride would not permit them to accept for themselves or their offspring the benefit of any of the provincial establishments for dispensing charity to paupers, or for the maintenance and education of destitute children. In the sequel, a number of them embarked for France, and others contrived to make their way to Canada and to other settlements of the French and the Spaniards; but the greater number died in the British colonies in an indigent, though not a starving condition, and mainly the victims of sorrow and disappointment.[1]

The forces by which the conquest of Nova Scotia was thus completed incurred no greater loss, during the whole expedition, than that of twenty men killed and about as many wounded. Winslow and his troops, on their return to New England, expressed much disgust at the distinctions which were studiously enforced during the campaign between them and the British regulars, and which the disproportion between the British and the provincial contingents to the combined army rendered peculiarly striking and offensive. But the success of the enterprise, occurring in this early stage of the war, diffused a general animation through the colonies, and was hailed as the omen of farther triumph. There needed not this influence, indeed, to exalt the confident expectation that prevailed of a victorious issue of the greater enterprise which Braddock was to conduct against the French settlements on the Ohio. It was known that the garrison of Fort Duquesne did not exceed two hundred men; and the British regulars, united with a body of Virginian rangers and a troop of friendly Indians, seemed more than a match for any additional force that the French could assemble in this quarter. Braddock might have entered upon action early in the spring, had he not been delayed by the inability of the Virginian contractors to fulfil their engagements to furnish a sufficient quantity of provisions and carriages for his army. That this accident, which might easily have been foreseen, was not prevented by the British government implies the most culpable ignorance or disregard on their part of the actual condition of the American provinces. The Virginians, engrossed with the culture of tobacco, did not raise corn enough for their own subsistence; and being amply provided with the accommodation of water conveyance, they employed but few wheel-carriages or beasts of burden; whereas Pennsylvania, which abounded in corn and all other sorts of provisions, enjoyed but little water-carriage, especially in its western settlements, where the inhabitants possessed great numbers of carts, wagons, and horses. The British troops should therefore have been landed in Pennsylvania, and their supplies contracted for with the planters there, who could have easily performed their

[1] Raynal. Smollett. Minot. Hutchinson. Trumbull. Holmes.

engagements; and if their commander had pitched his camp near Frankstown, or elsewhere upon the southwest borders of this province, he would have had less than eighty miles to march from thence to Fort Duquesne, instead of one hundred and thirty miles which he had to traverse from Will's Creek, on the frontiers of Virginia, where his encampment was actually formed. The road to Fort Duquesne from the one place was not better or more practicable than from the other.

When Braddock and his officers discovered the incompetence of the Virginians to fulfil the contract which only an injudicious preference had obtained for them, they exclaimed against the blundering ignorance of the British ministers in selecting a scene so unsuitable to their operations, and declared that the enterprise was rendered impracticable. It was, indeed, retarded for many weeks, and must have been deferred till the following summer, if a supply of carriages and provisions had not been seasonably procured from Pennsylvania by the influence and exertions of Dr. Franklin and some other popular and public-spirited inhabitants of this province. Notwithstanding the blunder by which the progress of the expedition was thus delayed, it would still, in all probability, have been attended with complete success, if a more fatal error had not been committed in the choice of its commander. Braddock was a man of courageous and determined spirit, and expert in the tactics and evolutions of European regiments and regular warfare. But, destitute of real genius, and pedantically devoted to the formalities of military science, he was fitter to review than to command an army; and scrupled not to express his contempt for any troops, however efficient in other respects, whose exercise on a parade did not display the same regularity and dexterity which he had been accustomed to witness, and unfortunately to overvalue, in a regiment of English guards in Hyde Park. Rigid in enforcing the nicest punctilios and in inflicting the harshest severities of military discipline, haughty, obstinate, presumptuous, and difficult of access, he was unpopular among his own troops, and excited the disgust both of the Americans and the Indians. There are two sorts of vulgarity of mind; to the one of which it is congenial timidly to overrate, and to the other presumptuously to underrate, the importance of scenes and circumstances remote from the routine of its ordinary experience. The latter of these qualities had too much place in the character of Braddock, who, though totally unconversant with American warfare, and strongly warned by the Duke of Cumberland that ambush and surprise were the dangers which he had chiefly to apprehend in such scenes, scorned to solicit counsel adapted to the novelty of his situation from the only persons who were competent to afford it. Despising the credulity that accepted all that was reported of the dangers of Indian warfare, he refused, with fatal skepticism, to believe any part of it. It seemed to him degrading to the British army to suppose that it needed the directions of provincial officers, or could be endangered by the hostility of Indian foes.

Filled with that pride which goes before destruction, Braddock commenced his march from Will's Creek, on the 10th of June, at the head of about two thousand two hundred men. The advance of the army, unavoidably retarded by the natural impediments of the region it had to traverse, was additionally and unnecessarily obstructed by the stubborn adherence of Braddock, amidst the boundless woods and tangled thickets of America, to the system of military movements adapted to the open and extensive

plains of Europe.[1] He was roused at length to greater vigor and activity by the intelligence that the French at Fort Duquesne expected a reinforcement of five hundred regular troops; whereupon, at the head of twelve hundred men whom he selected from the different corps, and with ten pieces of cannon and the necessary ammunition and provisions, he resolved to press forward to the point of destination,—leaving the residue of the army, under the command of Colonel Dunbar, to follow, with all the heavy baggage, by easy and leisurely marches. After a laborious progress, which was still unnecessarily retarded, and yet unaccompanied by the precaution of reconnoitring the woods, Braddock arrived at the Monongahela on the eighth of July, and encamped within ten miles of Fort Duquesne. Though Dunbar was now forty miles behind him, and the proximity of the enemy increased the danger of instantaneous attack, he prepared to advance the next day in his usual style of march, and expected to invest the French fortress without opposition. Sir Peter Halket and others of his officers now vainly entreated him to proceed with greater caution, to convert the column of march into an order of battle, and to employ the friendly Indians, who attended him, as an advanced guard, to explore and anticipate the probabilities of ambuscade. Not less vainly did Washington represent that the profound silence and apparent solitude of the gloomy scenes around them afforded no security in American warfare against deadly and imminent danger, and offer with the provincial troops to scour and occupy the woods in the front and on the flanks of the main body. Braddock treated with equal contempt the idea of aid and of hostility from Indian savages; and disdainfully rejecting the proposition of Washington, ordered the provincials to form the rearguard of the British force.

On the following day, this infatuated commander resumed his march [July 9, 1755], without having made the slightest attempt to gain intelligence of the situation or dispositions of the enemy. Three hundred British regulars, conducted by Colonel Gage, composed his van; and Braddock himself followed at some distance with the artillery and main body of the army divided into small columns. Thus incautiously advancing, and having arrived about noon within seven miles of Fort Duquesne,—in an open wood undergrown thickly with high grass, his troops were suddenly startled by the appalling sound of the Indian war-cry; and in the same moment a rattling shower of musketry was poured on their front and left flank from an enemy so artfully concealed that not a man of them could be descried. The vanguard, staggered and daunted, fell back upon the main body; and the firing being repeated with redoubled fury and without yet disclosing either the numbers or the position of the assailants, terror and confusion began to spread among the British troops; and many of them sought safety in flight, notwithstanding all the efforts of their officers, some of whom behaved very gallantly, to recall and rally them. Braddock himself, if he ever possessed any of the higher qualities of a soldier, was in this emergence deserted of them all, and exhibited only an obstinate and unavailing bravery. Instead of raking the thickets and bushes whence the fire was poured with grape-shot from the ten pieces of cannon which he had with him, or pushing forward flanking parties of his Indians against the enemy, he confined

[1] "I find," said Washington, in a letter to his brother, "that, instead of pushing on with vigor, without regarding a little rough road, they are halting to level every mole-hill, and to erect bridges over every brook." In his character and fortune, Braddock seems to have resembled the Roman general, Varus.

his attention exclusively to the regular infantry. To them the only command which he should have addressed was either an instant retreat, or a rapid charge without regard to methodical order and regularity. He adopted neither of these expedients; but, remaining on the ground where he was first attacked, under an incessant and galling fire, he directed the brave officers and men who continued with him to form in regular line and advance. Meanwhile his troops fell fast beneath the iron tempest that hissed around them, and almost all his officers were singled out one after another and killed or wounded;[1] for the Indians, who always take deliberate and particular aim when they fire, and aim preferably at the officers, easily distinguished them by their dress. After an action of three hours, Braddock, under whom three horses were killed, and whose obstinacy seemed to increase with the danger, received a shot through the right arm and the lungs, and was carried off the field by Colonel Gage. All the officers on horseback, except Colonel Washington, were now killed or wounded, and the residue of the troops by whom the conflict had been maintained abandoned it in dismay and disorder. The provincials, who were among the last to leave the field, were rallied after the action by the skill and presence of mind of Washington, and covered the retreat of the regulars.[2] The defeat was complete.

About seven hundred of the British were killed or wounded, including a considerable proportion of the Virginian troops, and sixty-four out of eighty-five officers. Sir Peter Halket fell by the first fire at the head of his regiment; and the general's secretary, son to Governor Shirley, was killed soon after. The artillery, ammunition, and baggage were abandoned to the enemy; and the defeated army fled precipitately to the camp of Dunbar, where Braddock expired of his wounds.[3] Although no pursuit was attempted by the French, who afterwards gave out that their numbers, including Indian auxiliaries, had amounted only to four hundred men,[4] and, with greater probability, that their loss in the action was perfectly insignificant, Dunbar, struck with astonishment and alarm, and finding that his troops were infected with the panic and disarray of the fugitives, hastily reconducted them to Will's Creek. Here letters were brought to him from the governors of Virginia, Maryland, and Pennsylvania, beseeching him to assist in defending the frontiers of these provinces, while they would endeavour to raise from the inhabitants reinforcements that might enable him yet to resume the enterprise against Fort Duquesne. But, diffident of his safety, he declined to accede to their desire; and abandoning his position at Will's Creek, pursued a hasty retreat to Philadelphia. Since their arrival in America, and especially during this retreat, the conduct of the British soldiers towards the American colonists was marked by licentious

[1] Among the few British officers who escaped with life and untarnished reputation, though severely wounded in this engagement, was Horatio Gates, who afterwards settled in America, and achieved a high rank and brilliant renown in the service of his adopted country during the Revolutionary War.

[2] In a sermon, occasioned by this expedition, and preached soon after it, Dr. Davies, a Virginian clergyman, thus prophetically expressed himself: — "As a remarkable instance of patriotism, I may point out to the public that heroic youth, Colonel Washington, whom I cannot but hope Providence has hitherto preserved in so signal a manner for some important service to his country." Rogers.

[3] This unfortunate commander seems never to have surmounted the astonishment created by his defeat. "Who would have thought it? We shall know better how to deal with them another time," were his last words. Washington read the funeral service over his remains by the light of a torch.

[4] According to more credible accounts, the total number of the French and Indians was nine hundred.

rapine and insolence; and it was generally declared of them that they were much more formidable to the people whom they had been commissioned to defend, than to the enemy whom they had undertaken to conquer.

The issue of this expedition, and the different circumstances and result of the prior campaign in Nova Scotia, could not fail to awaken in the minds of the colonists impressions no less flattering to American genius and valor than unfavorable to British ascendency. Nothing, indeed, could be more injurious to the dignity and influence of Britain, than that, at the very time when she first offended and mortified the colonists by the superiority which she arrogated to her own soldiers, these soldiers, commanded by a British general, should have incurred a disgraceful defeat by neglecting the advice of the provincial officers, and should have been saved from total destruction only by the firmness and valor of the provincial troops.[1] But the Virginians at present had little leisure for such considerations, amidst the calamitous consequences which immediately resulted from the defeat on the Ohio. Their frontiers were now exposed to the hostilities of a foe roused by a formidable attack, inflamed by a surprising victory, and additionally incited by the timidity displayed by Dunbar and his troops. A large addition to the militia of the province was decreed by the assembly; and the command of this force was bestowed on Colonel Washington, with the unusual privilege of appointing his own field-officers. But whether from a misdirected economy, or from the jealousy which they entertained of Governor Dinwiddie, the measures of the Virginian assembly were quite inadequate to the purpose of effectual defence. The skilful and indefatigable exertions of Washington, seconded by his militia with an admirable bravery and warmth of patriotic zeal,[2] proved unavailing to stem the furious and desolating incursions of the French and Indians, who, dividing themselves into small parties and actively pursuing a system of predatory hostility, rendered the frontiers of Virginia and Pennsylvania a scene of carnage, terror, and desolation. In the scenes of this desultory warfare, unattended with glory, but replete with action, danger, and enterprise, did Washington qualify himself to sustain the greater and more arduous part which his destiny reserved for him.[3]

The defeat sustained on the Ohio produced a very unpropitious effect on the enterprise which had been projected against Niagara, under the conduct of Shirley, whom Braddock's death advanced to the chief command of the British forces in North America. The troops destined both for this expedition and for the attack of Crown Point were ordered to assemble at Albany. Those whom Shirley was personally to lead consisted of certain regiments of regulars furnished by New England, New York, and New Jersey, and of a band of Indian auxiliaries. Various causes conspired to

[1] "This whole transaction gave us Americans the first suspicions that our exalted ideas of the prowess of British regular troops had not been well founded." Franklin.

[2] A party of these militia having been conducted to the frontiers of Virginia during the winter, "the men, who were indifferently clothed, without tents, and exposed to the rigor and inclemency of the weather, discovered great aversion to the service, and were anxious, and even clamorous, to return to their families; when William Winston, a lieutenant in one of the companies, mounting the stump of a tree, addressed them with such keenness of invective, and declaimed with such force of eloquence on liberty and patriotism, that, when he concluded, the general cry was, 'Let us march on! lead us against the enemy!' And they were now willing, nay, anxious, to encounter all those difficulties and dangers, which, but a few moments before, had almost produced a mutiny." Wirt's *Life of Henry*.

[3] Franklin's *Memoirs*. Marshall's *Life of Washington*. Smollett. Burk. Trumbull. Rogers. Holmes. McGuire's *Religious Opinions and Character of Washington*.

retard the commencement of his march; and while he was advancing to Oswego, the tidings of Braddock's defeat overtook him and spread consternation through his army. Many of the boatmen and sledgemen who were hired to transport the stores and provisions now began to desert; and the Indians discovered such backwardness to follow him, or even to adhere longer to the declining fortunes of England, that prudence induced him to consume a great deal of time in efforts but partially successful to restore their confidence and regain their good-will. On his arrival at Oswego [August 21, 1755], his forces were so much reduced by desertion, and the fidelity of the Indians appeared so precarious, that farther delay was rendered inevitable; and though he finally attempted to press forward with vigor to Niagara, he was compelled to abandon this design by a succession of heavy rains, the sickness of his troops, and the dispersion of the few Indians whose constancy endured somewhat longer than that of the rest of their countrymen. Leaving Colonel Mercer at Oswego, with a garrison of seven hundred men, and instructions to build two additional forts for the security of the place, Shirley reconducted his unsuccessful army to Albany.

The forces which were to proceed from Albany against Crown Point consisted of militia regiments, amounting to between five and six thousand men, supplied by the New England States and New York. By the advice of Shirley, the command of this expedition was intrusted to William Johnson, a native of Ireland, who had emigrated to New York, and was now a member of the council of this province. Johnson was distinguished by uncommon strength of body, and possessed a hardy, coarse, and vigorous mind, united with an ambitious and enterprising temper. He began life as a common soldier, and in the parent state could hardly have emerged above the level of this condition; but in the colonies his genius and good fortune advanced him to wealth, title, and fame. For several years he had resided on the banks of the Mohawk River; and, studiously cultivating the friendship of the Six Nations, had acquired a more powerful ascendant over them than any of his countrymen ever before enjoyed. In conformity with the expectation to which he owed his appointment, he prevailed with Hendrick, one of the chiefs of that confederacy, to join the expedition against Crown Point at the head of three hundred warriors of his tribe. Johnson, who received separate commissions from every American province which contributed to the enterprise, had never before witnessed a military campaign; and his troops, except a few of the New Englanders who had shared in the reduction of Louisburg, were equally inexperienced. While Johnson was collecting his artillery and military stores, General Lyman, the second in command, advanced with the troops to the *carrying-place* between Hudson's River and Lake George, about sixty miles from Albany, and began to build a fortress, which received the name of Fort Edward, on the east side of the Hudson. Having joined his army, Johnson left a part of it as a garrison to Fort Edward, and towards the end of August proceeded with the main body to the southern extremity of Lake George. Here he learned from his Indian scouts that a party of French and Indians had established a fort at Ticonderoga, which is situated on the isthmus between the north end of Lake George and the southern shore of Lake Champlain, about fifteen miles from Crown Point. As the fortifications at Ticonderoga were reported to be incomplete, Johnson, deeming that the conquest of the place would be attended with little difficulty, and regarding

it as a key to the main object of his enterprise, was preparing to advance against it, when he was suddenly reduced to act on the defensive by the motions of the enemy, and the unexpected tidings that reached him of the force which they possessed.

Baron Dieskau, an able and experienced officer, had now arrived in Canada with a strong reinforcement of troops from France; and having collected a considerable army both of French and Indians, was advancing against the British settlements with the purpose of striking an important blow. Johnson hastened to transmit this alarming intelligence to the provinces whose troops he commanded, and especially to the government of Massachusetts, — together with an urgent request for further assistance, which he reckoned indispensable to the success of his enterprise and even to the safety of his army. The issue of this application affords another instance of that unconquerable spirit which distinguished the people of New England. Massachusetts had supplied the greatest part of the force which Johnson already commanded, and by her various military exertions incurred an expense disproportioned to her resources, and of which she anxiously solicited a reimbursement from the parent state. The reputation of Dieskau, and the advantage which he possessed in commanding disciplined troops, contrasted with the inexperience of Johnson and the American militia, gave rise to apprehensions, which, combining with the depression occasioned by Braddock's defeat, produced a general despair of the success of the expedition against Crown Point. But this was a favorite enterprise with the people of New England, and they were determined to persist in it as long as possible, and to support to the utmost of their power the brave men who were engaged in conducting it. A large subsidiary force was raised in Massachusetts, and despatched with the hope of at least extricating Johnson and his army from the danger of being compelled to surrender to the superior power of the enemy. But the danger was over before this reinforcement reached the scene of action. Dieskau had been ordered to direct his first effort to the reduction of the British post at Oswego, of the importance of which the French government was fully aware; and he had already commenced his march for this purpose, when the tidings of Johnson's expedition induced him to reserve his force for the defence of Crown Point. Finding that Johnson's army, which was inferior both in number and experience, did not venture to approach, he determined to advance against it; and expecting an easy victory and the consequent fall of Fort Edward, proposed, as an ulterior measure, to invade Albany, to ravage the neighbouring settlements, and deprive the British of all communication with Oswego. His purpose would have succeeded, if the fate of the two armies had depended on the comparative skill of their commanders. But victory, though commonly, is not indefeasibly, the prize of either the skilful or the strong.

Johnson was apprized of Dieskau's approach, but ignorant both of his position and of his force; for the Indians, who were his scouts, had no words or signs for expressing any large number, and customarily pointed to the hair of their heads, or to the stars in the firmament, when they meant to denote any quantity which exceeded their reckoning. It was impossible to collect from their reports whether the French fell short of a thousand, or exceeded ten thousand in number. Yet, notwithstanding this uncertainty, Johnson, who had fortified his camp at Lake George, commit-

ted the rashness of detaching a thousand men, under the command of a brave officer, Colonel Ephraim Williams, together with Hendrick and the Indian auxiliaries, to attack the enemy. [September 6, 1755.] This detachment had hardly advanced three miles beyond the camp, when it found itself almost entirely surrounded by the French army, and, after a gallant but hopeless conflict, was defeated with some loss and put to flight. Williams fell in this encounter; and Hendrick,[1] with several of his Indians, who fought with heroic bravery, were also among the slain. The French, whose loss was not inferior, pursued the fugitives to their camp, and, had they made an instantaneous attack, they would probably have carried it; but, fortunately for its defenders, a pause took place, which, though short, gave time for their panic and confusion to subside. Dieskau had learned a few days before that Johnson had no cannon at his camp; and he was not aware, that, in the interim, a number of these engines had been seasonably transported to it from Fort Edward. Dismayed by the unexpected fire of this artillery, the Canadian militia and their Indian auxiliaries fled into the woods, whence the discharges of their musketry against a fortified camp produced little effect. The French regulars, however, maintained their ground, and with them, Dieskau, in an engagement which was prolonged for several hours, conducted a vigorous assault upon Johnson's position. Johnson displayed a firm and intrepid spirit during his brief participation in the commencement of the action; but having soon received a painful wound, he was compelled to retire to his tent and abandon the command to Lyman. Under the conduct of this American officer, his countrymen defended their camp with such resolution and success, that the French were finally repulsed with the loss of nearly a thousand men. Dieskau was mortally wounded and taken prisoner; and his discomfited forces, assembling at some distance and preparing to refresh themselves with food, were suddenly attacked by a small party of New York and New Hampshire militia commanded by Captains Folsom and M'Ginnes, and, flying in confusion, left the whole of their baggage and ammunition a prey to the victors. In the various conflicts by which this important day was signalized, there were killed or mortally wounded about a hundred and thirty of the British provincials, and among others Captain M'Ginnes, by whom the success was completed, and Colonel Titcomb of Massachusetts, who had previously gained the praise of distinguished bravery at the siege of Louisburg.

Now was the time for the British to improve the advantage they had won, and reap the full fruit of their victory by a vigorous pursuit of the flying enemy and by investing Crown Point, which, from the smallness of its garrison, and the impression produced by the defeat of Dieskau, would have probably afforded them an easy conquest. But Johnson was less desirous of extending the public advantage than of reaping and securing his own personal share in it; and sensible of the claim he had acquired on royal favor, he was averse to expose it, while yet unrewarded, to the hazard of diminution. He directed his troops to strengthen the fortifications of his camp, in utter disregard of the spirited counsel of Shirley, who pressed him to resume active operations, and at least to dislodge the French from Ticonderoga before they had time to fortify this post and recover from their surprise and consternation. Whether from negligence or from a politic deference to the sentiments of the British court, he maintained scarcely any com-

[1] See Note XIV., at the end of the volume.

munication with the New England governments, and sent the French general and the other prisoners to New York, — although Massachusetts had claimed the distinction of receiving them, as due to the preponderance of her interest in the army by which they were taken. With the additional troops lately raised in this province, and which were now united to Johnson's original and victorious army, it was not doubted that he would still attempt some farther enterprise before the close of the year. But he suffered the opportunity to pass by, and consumed the time in lingering and irresolute deliberation, till, by the advice of a council of war, the attack of Crown Point, and all other active operations, were abandoned for the present season. [October, 1755.] His army was then disbanded, with the exception of six hundred men, who were appointed to garrison Fort Edward, and another strong fort which was erected at the southern extremity of Lake George and received the name of Fort William Henry.

The French, taking advantage of Johnson's remissness, exerted themselves to strengthen Ticonderoga; while their Indian allies, provoked by the conflict at Lake George, and encouraged by the seeming timidity or incapacity of the victor, indulged their revenge and animosity in furious and destructive ravages on the frontiers of Massachusetts and New Hampshire. The British colonists, though at first highly elated with the victory over Dieskau, perceived with chagrin and disappointment that the advantages of it were entirely thrown away, and that the issue of an enterprise which began with a signal defeat of the enemy had been to render the chief object of it more difficult of attainment than it was before. Nor was their dissatisfaction abated by perceiving that Johnson alone derived any substantial benefit from the victory, and that to him exclusively was the gratitude of Britain expressed for the first battle in which the honor of her arms had been vindicated since the commencement of hostilities with France. In Johnson's reports of the action at Lake George he assumed the whole merit of it to himself; and while the superior claims of Lyman and other native Americans were unknown, or at least unnoticed, in England, Johnson received from the king the dignity of a baronet, together with the office of royal superintendent of Indian affairs, and from the parliament a grant of five thousand pounds, which was in fact paid by the colonies, as it was deducted from the sum of one hundred and fifteen thousand pounds voted this year by the House of Commons to New England, New York, and New Jersey, in consideration of the burdens entailed upon them by the war.[1]

While the British colonies were thus balked of the fruits which might have been reaped from the victory at Lake George, the French, with politic and assiduous exertion, were cultivating the advantage they obtained at Fort Duquesne. They were particularly successful in improving the favorable impression of their genius and good fortune which the defeat of Braddock produced on the Indian tribes inhabiting the territory adjacent to the river Ohio; and in the course of this year, some of their emissaries, united with envoys deputed by these tribes, made their first attempt to seduce the Cherokees, who had been hitherto the firmest Indian allies of Britain. This nation differed in some respects from all the other branches of the Indian race,[2] and especially from those roving tribes who possessed no fixed or

[1] Smollett. Trumbull. Minot. Hutchinson. Belknap. Dwight's *Travels*. The sum awarded to the colonies was a very inadequate compensation.

[2] "They are seldom intemperate in drinking, but when they can be so on free cost. Otherwise, love of drink yields to covetousness; a vice scarcely to be found in any Indian but a Cherokee." John Wesley's *Journal*.

constant habitations. From time immemorial they had occupied the territory which they still inhabited; and in speaking of their forefathers, customarily affirmed that "they sprung from that ground," or that "they descended from the clouds upon those hills." They termed the Europeans *Nothings*, and themselves *the beloved people*. Hitherto they had regarded the French with especial aversion, and contemptuously remarked of them, that they were light as a feather, fickle as the wind, and deceitful as serpents; and valuing themselves on the grave and stately decorum of their own manners, they resented the sprightly levity of French deportment as an unpardonable insult. But now the chief warrior of the Cherokees sent in haste a message to Glen, the governor of South Carolina, acquainting him with the intrigues of the French and their Indian partisans, and advising him to hold a general conference with the Cherokee tribes, and to renew the former treaties of his countrymen with them. Glen, sensible of the importance of securing the favor of these powerful tribes, who at this time could bring about three thousand warriors into the field, willingly acceded to the proposition of a conference, and met the chiefs of the Cherokees in their own country, at a place two hundred miles distant from Charleston. The conference that ensued lasted about a week, and terminated in the renovation of a friendly league, and in an arrangement, by which, to the satisfaction of both parties, a large section of their territory was ceded by the Indians to the king of Great Britain. This acquisition, which was defined by deeds of conveyance executed by the chiefs of the Cherokees in the name of their people, occasioned the removal of the Indians to a greater distance from the English, and enabled the inhabitants of Carolina to extend their settlements into the interior of the country in proportion to the increase of their numbers. Soon after the cession took place, Governor Glen built a fort, which was named Prince George, at a spot on Savannah River about three hundred miles from Charleston, and within gunshot of an Indian town called Keowee. It contained barracks for a hundred men, and was designed for the security of the western frontiers of Carolina.[1]

To the tumult and agitation of war in North America there was now added the terror inspired by an earthquake, of which the shock was more violent than any that had ever before been experienced in this quarter of the world. [November 18, 1755.] It continued at least four minutes; and, shaping its course from northwest to southeast, caused the earth and its warring inhabitants to tremble throughout an extent of nineteen hundred miles. The most remarkable effect of this convulsion of nature was the diffusion of an increased warmth and solemnity of religious sentiment among the people of New England, who, in all seasons of danger and alarm, still, like their excellent forefathers, elevated their view from secondary causes to that Being without whose permission and appointment no evil can assault and no danger menace. The impression thus produced on their minds was additionally heightened by the tidings that arrived, shortly after, of the dreadful catastrophe which in the same month attended the great earthquake at Lisbon. In the fate of the Portuguese the pious New Englanders recognized, with emotions of awe and admiration, the extremity of their own danger and the magnitude of their deliverance; and the government of Massachusetts, in particular, solemnized the general alarm by appointing a day of humiliation and prayer, "in acknowledgment of the distinguishing mercy of God, and in submission to his righteous judgments."[2]

[1] Hewit.

[2] S. Smith. Minot.

In the close of this year [December 12, 1755], Shirley, prompted by his enterprising temper, and entitled by his supreme command of the British forces in America to take the lead in all measures and deliberations for the general defence, convoked a council of war at New York, which was attended by the governors of this province and of Connecticut, Maryland, and Pennsylvania. Here a plan of operations for the next campaign was concerted on a very extensive scale; but in order to the definitive adoption of this or any other general plan, it was necessary that it should be canvassed and approved by the assemblies of all the provinces which were to participate in its execution; and this preliminary arrangement was always embarrassed by difficulties and obstructions. Shirley had found and still continued to find it no easy matter to persuade the assembly of Massachusetts to embark as deeply as he wished in military enterprise; and his urgency with them, co-operating with the jealousy awakened by his appointment to the chief command of the forces in America, provoked an opposition against him, which only his prudence and conciliatory address prevented from becoming formidable to his authority. A rivalship, which arose out of the expedition against Crown Point, between New York and Massachusetts, proved favorable to Shirley's popularity in his own province, though it obstructed the concert and harmony between the legislatures of those States.[1] We have already had occasion to advert to the causes by which disunion and distrust were promoted between the governors and assemblies of several of the other North American provinces.

The conduct of public affairs was more embarrassed by political dissension in Pennsylvania than in any of the other colonies. Hamilton, the governor of this province, a worthy and honorable man, impatient of the continual disputes with the assembly to which he was exposed by his fidelity to the instructions of the proprietaries, resigned his office in 1754, and was succeeded by Robert Hunter Morris, son of Lewis Morris, governor of New Jersey. Morris, an ingenious man, but wrong-headed humorist, inheriting the peculiar taste and temper of his father, delighted above measure in argument and controversy, and gladly embraced the prospect of such a scene of disputation as the presidency over the Quaker politicians of Pennsylvania was likely to afford. But either he undervalued the controversial vigor and spleen which the provincial assembly was endowed with, or he overvalued his own power of retorting and enduring its hostility. A series of interminable disputes with this body, into which he plunged directly after his assumption of the government, soon degenerated into the most violent and even scurrilous altercations, wherein he found himself completely overmatched both in acrimony and perseverance of vituperation by his Quaker antagonists. "His administration," says Franklin, "was a continual battle, in which he labored hard to blacken the assembly, who wiped off his coloring as fast as he laid it on, and placed it in return thick upon his own face." With all his relish for disputation, and the advantage of a continual flow of mirth and good-humor,[2] it is surprising that Morris should have sustained, for two years, such a contest with a party supported by the exhaustless resources of Quaker conceit and pertinacity, and supplied with the sharpest artillery of wit by the pen of Franklin, who, as clerk of the assembly, lent his aid in digesting the effusions of its spleen and ingenuity. At length, in defiance of his anticipations, this governor, like his predeces-

[1] Minot.

[2] See Note XV., at the end of the volume.

sor, became completely disgusted with his office, and, resigning it in 1756, was succeeded by William Denny, an Englishman, and a captain in the British army.

These dissensions were chiefly occasioned by the meanness and avarice of the proprietaries, who prohibited their lieutenants or governors from consenting to any tax upon provincial property, unless their own large revenues, derived from quitrents, and all the lands which they had acquired from the Indians, but had not yet cultivated nor farmed out to the colonists, were exempted from its operation. Engrossed with the interest of this dispute, and alarmed by the menacing aspect of public affairs, the Quaker majority in the Pennsylvanian assembly seemed of late to have waived or abated their repugnance to military operations. They passed bills for levying ten thousand pounds to purchase provisions for the troops appointed to march against Crown Point; and fifty thousand pounds in aid of Braddock's expedition against Fort Duquesne. But these bills produced only a repetition of disputes with the governor, who vainly offered to affirm them, on condition of his being allowed to modify one of their clauses by the alteration of a single word. The clause to which he referred enacted, "that all estates, real and personal, were to be taxed; those of the proprietaries not excepted"; and his proposition was, that the word *not* should be cancelled, and the word *only* substituted in its place. The disaster at Fort Duquesne occasioned a temporary suspension of this controversy, and gave rise to measures which produced a remarkable change in the political state of Pennsylvania. When the tidings of that disgraceful defeat arrived in England, the partisans of the provincial assembly found it easy to direct the public irritation against the proprietary family. The English willingly vented their impatience and mortification in clamorous reproach of the selfishness and injustice of the policy pursued by the proprietaries; and some persons went so far as to maintain, that, by obstructing the defence of the province, they had forfeited their right to administer its government. Intimidated by this expression of public feeling in England, the proprietaries commanded their receiver-general to add five thousand pounds of their money to whatever sum might be levied by the assembly for the common defence. This overture, being reported to the assembly, was accepted in lieu of a direct contingent to a general tax; and a new bill, imposing an assessment of sixty thousand pounds on the province for the purpose of military defence, with an exemption of the proprietary estates, was accordingly passed into a law. Contemporary with this law, and the fruit partly of Franklin's address, and partly of the general alarm that prevailed, was a bill, which, though it encountered some Quaker opposition, was yet ratified by a majority of the assembly, for embodying and training a regiment of provincial militia to be raised by voluntary enlistment. It was provided, with special and unnecessary precaution, that no member of the Quaker society should be required to serve in the regiment that was thus directed to be raised. This superfluous clause, which, if it had really conveyed any additional advantage or security, should have also included the Moravian settlers, was probably intended as an empty compliment to the still extant but declining political preponderance of the Quakers in Pennsylvania. So strong and general at this time was the military spirit that had been aroused in this province, that some even of the Moravian societies declared their

approbation of defensive war, and, fortifying their settlements, prepared to repel hostile aggression.[1]

The Pennsylvanian Quakers now began to perceive the impossibility of reconciling the preservation of their sectarian principles with the administration of political power in the colony which their fathers had planted. It was chiefly with the hope of cultivating those principles, and exhibiting them to the world in a high degree of practical perfection,[2] that they originally incurred the lot of exiles and undertook the cares of government. But, step by step, they had been led on to pursue a career, as colonists and politicians, on which, as votaries of Quakerism, it was impossible for them to reflect with satisfaction. The first signal dereliction of their principles was the appropriation of negro slaves, — an evil, which, of late years, had spread with rank and baleful increase among them. Professing unbounded meekness and patience, they distinguished themselves in their provincial assembly by extreme contentiousness and susceptibility of provocation, and by the promptitude and inveteracy with which they resented and retorted every injury and affront. They were at an early period seduced into a covert sanction of war, and now permitted a militia law to pass in an assembly of which they possessed the command. But there always existed a party among the Quakers by whom these evils were deplored; and now the society in general began to open their eyes to the inconsistency of which they were guilty, and to the inevitable fruits of its farther continuance. They perceived that it was vain to pretend any longer to control by Quaker principle the proceedings of an assembly in which they had assented to a militia law; they foresaw that the British government would (as it actually did) forthwith endeavour to obtain a farther participation in military measures from the assembly; and justly concluded that they themselves must now either renounce entirely their political capacity, or consent to merge entirely the Quaker in the politician. They chose, though with reluctance, the alternative most creditable to their sectarian sincerity and personal disinterestedness; and, with a rare virtue, adhered to their religious principles and resigned the political authority which they had enjoyed since the foundation of the colony. Their administration of power was characterized by nothing so becoming and praiseworthy as the grace with which it was thus surrendered; and yet, with all their failings and infirmities, they had rendered it instrumental in no mean degree to the welfare and happiness of the community over which they presided. So frugal was their system of government, that the produce of the custom-house and a small excise had proved sufficient to defray the ordinary public expenditure. The remarkable proceeding which we have commemorated was not all at once carried into general effect; but a number of Quakers now seceded from the assembly, and declined to accept the offices of government under a political system by which a military establishment was sanctioned; and their example was gradually

[1] The first Moravian colony in North Carolina also fortified their settlement. Williamson.

The Quakers in New Jersey, it would seem, did not at this period enjoy an exemption from military service. A distinguished member of their society relates, that, in the year 1757, a number of Quakers were summoned to join the New Jersey militia, and march against the French and Indians; and that several consented to obey the requisition. He reproaches many professors of Quakerism with evincing no other fruits of their pretended principles, except aversion to the danger and fatigues of war; and represents a great majority of the society as consenting to pay war taxes; adding, "that a carnal mind is gaining upon us, I believe, will not be denied." John Woolman's *Journal*.

[2] See Note XXIX., at the end of Volume I.

followed by others of their fellow-sectaries, till, first, the Quaker majority was extinguished in the assembly, and, at length, few or no Quakers at all remained in this body.[1]

This policy proved no less favorable to the personal happiness and virtue of the Pennsylvanian Quakers than advantageous to their sectarian fame. Dedicating henceforward to philanthropic labors the talents that political debate had absorbed and perverted, they caused the genuine principles of Quaker equity and benevolence to shine forth with a strength and lustre that gradually purged off all or nearly all the peculiar stains and specks that Quakerism had contracted in America. By a remarkable, and surely not an accidental coincidence, the secession of the Quakers from political office, which now began to take place, was contemporary with their first decisive effort as a religious society to arrest the progress of negro slavery.

We have seen[2] that the Quaker society of Pennsylvania, so early as the year 1688, condemned the conduct that was pursued by many of its own members, by issuing a declaration of the unlawfulness of negro slavery. Although this declaration served merely to guard the purity of Quaker theory in America, without visibly affecting the general Quaker practice, there were not wanting individual members of this sect who practically recognized its validity, and labored with zealous benevolence to propagate their own superior virtue among their countrymen. Burling, a Quaker inhabitant of Long Island, published a tract against slavery in the year 1718. Sandiford, a Quaker merchant in Philadelphia, published a work on the same subject, under the title of *The Mystery of Iniquity*, in 1729. Similar compositions, reinforced by the personal example of their authors, were given to the world by three remarkable Quakers, — Benjamin Lay, of Pennsylvania, a benevolent enthusiast, but whimsical and eccentric in his general behaviour, and occasionally disordered in his understanding; John Woolman, of New Jersey, whose admirable and unwearied exertions to elevate the morality of his countrymen and the condition of the Africans may, perhaps, entitle him to be regarded as the Clarkson of America; and Anthony Benezet, a native of Picardy, who had emigrated to Pennsylvania in 1731, and who united a fine genius and all the accomplishments of an elegant scholar to a heart that was the seat of every humane virtue and religious sentiment. Devoting himself to the education of youth, Benezet inculcated upon all his pupils an abhorrence of slavery, and reared a generation of Quakers the determined and uncompromising adversaries of this injustice.[3] We have learned from the testimony of Kalm, the traveller, and other authorities, that, about the middle of the eighteenth century, various individual Quakers illustrated their justice, and the consistency of their conduct with their principles, by emancipating their slaves. Yet the number of slaves possessed by the Qua-

[1] Proud. Franklin's *Memoirs*. Brissot's *Travels*. See Note XVI., at the end of the volume.

[2] *Ante*, Book VII., Chap. II.

[3] Benezet was the first person in North America who conceived and conducted the benevolent enterprises of educating the deaf and dumb and of restoring to life persons apparently drowned. His exertions in behalf of the negroes commenced in the year 1750. The celebrated Patrick Henry, of Virginia (in a letter preserved in Vaux's *Life of Benezet*), declares that Benezet's writings had opened his eyes to the iniquity of negro slavery, condemns himself for his possession of slaves, — and, protesting that he yields to the strong current of general practice, expresses his hope of the future emancipation of the negro race, and recommends meanwhile to all slave-owners the exercise of gentleness and kindness towards their sable dependents, and every practicable means of ameliorating their unhappy lot. Perhaps the most signal and admirable effect of the writings of Benezet was the impression they produced on the mind of Clarkson.

kers in general had continued to increase;[1] a fact which was noticed and deplored in a circular letter addressed, in the year 1754, by the Quaker society of Pennsylvania to its members. In this letter the society contented itself with exhorting the Quaker inhabitants of Pennsylvania and New Jersey to desist from purchasing and importing any more slaves, and to treat the negroes already in their possession with a tender consideration. But in the present year it advanced a step farther, and embraced a resolution by which its ecclesiastical officers, termed *elders* or *overseers*, were directed to report the conduct of every Quaker within its jurisdiction, who should purchase or import additional slaves; and offenders in this respect, though not visited with the extreme penalty of excommunication, were excluded from the more select meetings of the society, and from the privilege of contributing to support its pecuniary funds;—a penal infliction, it must be confessed, more creditable to its authors than formidable to the persons who were likely to be its objects. Whether the penalty was inflicted or not, it is certain that the measure, in its immediate operation, produced little, if any, visible good; many Quakers persisted in purchasing slaves; and some continued even engaged in the slave-trade. This, however, was the first step in a line of policy, which, pursued with steady virtue and increasing determination, conducted the American Quakers, about twenty years after, to that magnanimous proceeding by which a great majority of their society emancipated all their slaves, and excommunicated every member who declined to incur the same sacrifice.[2]

From the agreeable contemplation of the revival and practical illustration of Quaker virtue, we must now return to trace the progress of national enmity and strife. Although a war between the French and English had been openly on foot for more than two years in America, it had not yet been formally proclaimed. The British government, conscious of the moderation (not to say the timidity) of its own views, obstinately clung to the hope that peace might yet be established by an amicable arrangement and upon solid foundations; and the French court, transported by immoderate ambition, and yet more misled by reliance on ignoble cunning and intrigue, studiously encouraged that hope, with the view of relaxing the vigor of British hostility. But at length, all prospect of accommodation having ceased, a formal declaration of war was published by Great Britain [May 17, 1756], and followed soon after by a counter proclamation from France, whose cabinet apparently cherished the hope that an attack upon the English monarch's German possessions, to which from birth and education he was notoriously much more attached than to England, might alarm him into a modification of his pretensions in America.[3] A reinforcement of troops

[1] It appears also, from the testimony of John Woolman, that, although some Quakers used their slaves kindly, and endeavoured to communicate instruction to them, their conduct in these respects was neither imitated nor approved by the majority of their fellow-sectaries. In Woolman's interesting journal a curious account is preserved of a discussion between himself and some other Quakers, who had adopted the apologetic theory, that negroes are the offspring of Ham, and as such divinely doomed to a life of hardship and bondage.

[2] Clarkson's *History of the Abolition of the Slave-trade*. Vaux's *Life of Benezet*. Woolman's *Journal*. And communications (received in 1824) from an aged and intelligent Pennsylvanian Quaker.

Woolman remarks, that the first proposition to the Quaker society to punish further importations and purchases of negroes originated with Quakers who themselves possessed slaves whom they declined to emancipate.

[3] *London Annual Register for* 1758. Smollett. Raynal. "The hostilities hitherto waged," says Raynal, "had been rather countenanced than openly avowed by the respective parent states. This clandestine mode of carrying on the war was perfectly agreeable to the ministry

had been despatched to America two months before this event, under General Abercrombie, who was appointed to supersede Shirley in the chief command of the British forces. An act of parliament[1] was passed for enabling the king to grant the rank and pay of military officers to a limited number of foreign Protestants residing and naturalized in the colonies. This act, which was not passed without a strong opposition in England, excited great discontent and apprehension in America.[2] Another contemporary statute[3] empowered the king's officers to recruit their regiments by enlisting the indented servants of the colonists, with the consent of their masters.

The plan of operations for this year's campaign was concerted in the council of provincial governors at New York. It was proposed to raise ten thousand men for an expedition against Crown Point; six thousand for an attempt upon Niagara; and three thousand for the attack of Fort Duquesne. In addition to this large force, and in aid of its operations, it was resolved that two thousand men should proceed up the river Kennebec, destroy the French settlements on the river Chaudière, and, advancing to its mouth, within three miles of Quebec, distract the attention of the enemy and spread alarm through all the adjacent quarter of Canada. To facilitate the reduction of Crown Point, it was proposed to take advantage of the season when the lakes should be frozen in order to seize Ticonderoga; but this measure was rendered impracticable by the unusual mildness of the winter.

The command of the expedition against Crown Point was intrusted to General Winslow, who, on reviewing the provincial troops destined for this service, found their number to amount only to about seven thousand; a force, which, after deducting from it the garrisons required at various places, appeared inadequate to the enterprise. The arrival of the British troops under Abercrombie, while it supplied the deficiency, created a new difficulty, which for a while suspended the expedition. Much disgust was excited in America by the regulations of the crown respecting military rank; and Winslow, when consulted on this delicate point by Abercrombie, avowed his apprehension, that, if the result of a junction of the British and provincial troops should be to place the provincials under British officers, it would provoke general discontent, and probably occasion extensive desertion. To avoid so serious an evil, it was finally arranged, that the provincials, taking the lead, should advance against the enemy, and that at the forts and other posts which they were progressively to quit, the regulars should succeed to their stations and perform the duty of garrisons. This matter was hardly settled, when the discussion of it was again renewed by the Earl of Loudoun, who now arrived in America to succeed Abercrombie as commander-in-chief of the British forces, and with the additional appointment of governor of Virginia. [July, 1756.] An unusual extent of authority was delegated to Lord Loudoun by his commission; and from some parts of the subsequent conduct of this nobleman, it would seem that he was prompted either by his instructions, or by his own disposition, to render his power at least as formidable to the British colonists as to the enemy. He gravely demanded of the officers of the New England regiments, if they and their troops were

at Versailles, as it afforded an opportunity of recovering by degrees, and without exposing their weakness, what they had lost by treaties, at a time when the enemy had imposed their own terms. But repeated checks at last opened the eyes of Great Britain, and disclosed the political system of her rival."

[1] 29 George II., Cap. 5.

[2] See Note XVII., at the end of the volume.

[3] 29 George II., Cap. 35.

willing to act in conjunction with the British regulars, and to obey the king's commander-in-chief, as his Majesty had directed. To this the provincial officers unanimously replied, that they cheerfully submitted themselves in all dutiful obedience to Lord Loudoun, and were ready and willing to act in conjunction with the royal forces; but that, as the New England troops had been enlisted this year on particular terms, and had proceeded thus far according to their original compact and organization, they entreated as a favor that Lord Loudoun would permit them to act separately, so far as might be consistent with the interests of his Majesty's service. His Lordship having acceded to their desire, this point of honor seemed at length to be satisfactorily adjusted; when suddenly the plan of the British campaign was disconcerted by the alarming intelligence of an important advantage obtained by the French.

The Marquis de Montcalm, an officer of high reputation for vigor and ability, who succeeded Baron Dieskau in the chief command of the French forces in Canada, conducting an army of five thousand regulars, Canadian militia, and Indians, by a rapid march, to Oswego, invested one of the two forts which the British possessed there; and having promptly made the necessary dispositions, opened his trenches at midnight with thirty-two pieces of cannon, besides several brass mortars and howitzers. [August 12, 1756.] The scanty stock of ammunition with which the garrison had been supplied was soon exhausted; and Colonel Mercer, the commander, thereupon spiked his guns, and, evacuating the place, carried his troops without the loss of a single man into the other fort. Upon this stronghold a heavy fire was speedily poured by the enemy from the deserted post, of which they assumed possession; and Mercer having been killed by a cannon-ball, the garrison, dismayed by his loss and disappointed in an attempt to procure aid from Fort George, situated about four miles and a half up the river, where Colonel Schuyler was posted, demanded a capitulation and surrendered as prisoners of war. The garrison consisted of the regiments of Shirley and Pepperell, and amounted to one thousand four hundred men. The conditions of surrender were that the prisoners should be exempted from plunder, conducted to Montreal, and treated with humanity. But these conditions were violated in a manner disgraceful to the warfare of the French. It was the duty of Montcalm to guard his engagements from the danger of infringement by his savage allies; and yet he instantly delivered up twenty of his prisoners to the Indians who accompanied him, as victims to their vengeance for an equal number of their own race who perished in the siege. Nor was the remainder of the captive garrison protected from the cruelty and indignity with which these savages customarily embittered the fate of the vanquished. Almost all of them were plundered; many were scalped; and some were assassinated. In the two forts, the victors obtained possession of one hundred and twenty-one pieces of artillery, fourteen mortars, and a great quantity of military stores and provisions.[1] A number of sloops and boats at the same time fell into their hands. No sooner was Montcalm in possession of the forts, than, with judicious policy, he demolished them both in presence of the Indians of the Six Nations, within whose territory they were erected, and whose jealousy they had not a little awakened.

[1] "Such an important magazine deposited in a place altogether indefensible, and without the reach of immediate succour, was a flagrant proof of egregious folly, temerity, and misconduct." Smollett.

In consequence of this disastrous event, all the plans of offensive operation that had been concerted on the part of the British were abandoned. Winslow was commanded by Lord Loudoun not to proceed on his intended expedition against Ticonderoga and Crown Point, but to fortify his camp; while General Webb, with fourteen hundred British regulars, and Sir [illegible]m Johnson, with a thousand militia, were stationed at positions fitte[illegible] support Winslow and repel the farther attacks which were anticipated from the French. The projected expedition up the Kennebec, to destroy the settlements on the Chaudière, terminated in a mere scouting-party which explored the country. The enterprise proposed against Fort Duquesne was not carried into effect. Virginia declined to participate farther in the general warfare than by defensive operations; and even these were conducted on a scale inadequate to the protection of her own people. Pennsylvania raised fifteen hundred men, but with no other view than to guard her frontier settlements; and Maryland, whose frontier was covered by the adjoining provinces, remained completely inactive. In South Carolina the slaves were so much more numerous than the white inhabitants, that it was judged unsafe to detach any troops from this province. A fort was now built on Tennessee River, about five hundred miles from Charleston, and called Fort Loudoun; and this, together with Fort Prince George and Fort Moore on the Savannah River, and the forts of Frederica and Augusta, was garrisoned by the king's independent companies of infantry embodied for the protection of Carolina and Georgia. Lord Loudoun, whether perplexed by the inferiority of his capacity to the difficulties of his situation, or justly accounting that the season was too far advanced to admit of any enterprise against the enemy, confined his attention to the preparation of an early campaign in the ensuing spring, and to the immediate security of the frontiers of the British colonies. Fort Edward and Fort William Henry were put in a posture of defence, and secured each with a competent garrison; and the remainder of the British forces were placed in winter-quarters at Albany, where barracks were built for their reception. The French, meanwhile, sacked a small fort and settlement called Grenville, on the confines of Pennsylvania, and, in conjunction with their Indian allies, carried ravage and desolation into many of the frontier settlements of the British provinces. But these losses were in some measure balanced by the advantage resulting from a treaty of peace which the governor of Pennsylvania concluded with the Delaware Indians, — a powerful tribe that dwelt on the river Susquehannah, and formed as it were a line or belt along the southern skirts of this province. At the same time, the government of Virginia secured the friendship and alliance of the tribes of the Cherokees and Catawbas. Notwithstanding some appearances of an opposite import, it was expected that a vigorous effort would be made by the British in the ensuing campaign to retrieve their recent disasters and humble the insolence of the enemy, — the more especially, as in the close of this year a fresh reinforcement of troops, with a large supply of warlike stores, was despatched in fourteen transports, and under convoy of two British ships of war, from Cork to North America.

Much discontent and impatience had been latterly excited in England by the events of the war, which was conducted still more unhappily in other parts of the world than in the American provinces. The nation, exasperated by the triumphs of France, was eager to shift from itself the scandal of oc-

currences so humiliating to its pride and glory; and attempts the most impudent and absurd were made to load the Americans with the blame both of Braddock's defeat and of every other calamity and disappointment which they had partaken with the British forces. Among other individuals who were now sacrificed by the British court, as victims partly to its own mortification and partly to popular displeasure, was Shirley, the governor of Massachusetts, who was recalled[1] this year to England, and appointed soon after to the government of the Bahama Islands. Shirley at a subsequent period returned to Massachusetts, where he died in a private station; and though he had held some of the most lucrative offices within the gift of the crown in America, he bequeathed to his posterity little else but a reputation rather honorable than illustrious, and in which merit and virtue were acknowledged to preponderate over imperfection and infirmity. More sanguine and eager than deliberate and collected, he studied always with greater diligence to extend his fame than to guard and adorn the distinction which he had already acquired. Prompted by the ardor of his disposition and by the pride of success, he had latterly courted and accepted an extent of command to which his capacity was inadequate; and which he was besides unfitted to administer satisfactorily both to the parent state and to the colonies, by the concurrence of his conscientious or interested zeal for royal prerogative with his generous or politic respect for American liberty. Without either stiffly asserting or expressly waiving the pretensions of the crown to have a fixed salary attached to the office he enjoyed in Massachusetts, he contrived, with the approbation of the colonists, and without censure from the parent state, to accept the periodical allotments of salary which the provincial assembly was willing to bestow upon him. His connection with the glory of New England, his conciliating manners, and his steady regard for the privileges and sentiments of the people moderated the opposition of his political adversaries in the colony. His recent inability to command success, and his devotion to the crown, induced the British ministers to displace without ruining him. It was more than a year after his departure before a successor was appointed to his office, which, in the interval, was administered by Spencer Phips, a prudent and honorable man, nephew of Sir William Phips, the first royal governor of Massachusetts after the British Revolution. The vacated dignity of Shirley was then conferred on Thomas Pownall, an Englishman, formerly lieutenant-governor of New Jersey, and related to persons holding high official situations in the parent state. The policy of this officer was the very reverse of that which Shirley had pursued, and led him to devote himself unreservedly to the views and wishes of the popular party in Massachusetts.[2]

[1] Perhaps, also, the intrigues of Sir William Johnson, who, with ungrateful jealousy, endeavoured to prejudice the British court against Shirley, contributed in part to his recall.

[2] Smollett. Minot. Hutchinson. Trumbull. Belknap. Eliot's *New England Biographical Dictionary*. Burk. Hewit.

CHAPTER V.

Incapacity of the British Commander in America. — Loss of Fort William Henry. — Dispute between Massachusetts and the British Commander. — State of Parties in New England. — Change of the British Ministry and Measures. — Affairs of Pennsylvania. — Political Exertions of Franklin in England. — Conquest of Cape Breton. — Repulse at Ticonderoga. — Reduction of Fort Frontignac — and Fort Duquesne. — Effect of the British Successes upon the Indians. — Plan of the Campaign of 1759. — Reduction of Ticonderoga — and Crown Point. — Battle of Niagara — and Capture of Fort Niagara. — Siege of Quebec. — Battle of the Heights of Abraham — and Surrender of Quebec.

THE expectations which had been formed both in Britain and America of a vigorous and successful campaign were completely disappointed. If it had been the wish or intention of the British ministers to render the guardian care of the parent state ridiculous and its supremacy odious to the colonists, they could hardly have selected a fitter instrument for the achievement of this sinister purpose than Lord Loudoun. Devoid of genius, either civil or military; in carriage at once imperious and undignified; always hurried, and hurrying others, yet making little progress in the despatch of business; quick, abrupt, and forward to project and threaten, but infirm, remiss, and mutable in pursuit and execution; negligent of even the semblance of public virtue; impotent against the enemy whom he was sent to destroy; formidable only to the spirit and liberty of the people whom he was commissioned to defend, — he provoked alternately the disgust, the jealousy, and the contemptuous amazement of the colonists of America.[1] In the commencement of the present year [January, 1757] he repaired to Boston, where he was met by a council composed of the governors of Nova Scotia and of the States of New England. To this council he addressed a speech, in which, with equal insolence and absurdity, he ascribed the public safety to the efforts of the English soldiers, and all the recent successes of the French to the misconduct of the American troops or the provincial governments. It is unlikely, notwithstanding the arrogance of his disposition and the narrowness of his capacity, that he could have expected to stimulate the Americans to a higher strain of exertion by depreciating their past services, and exalting above their gallant and successful warriors the defeated troops and disgraced commanders of England. Nor, indeed, did he seek to compass any such chimerical purpose. He required that the governments of New England should contribute only four thousand men, which should be despatched to New York, there to unite with the quotas to be furnished by that province and New Jersey, and thereafter to be conducted by him to an enterprise, which he declared that the interests of the British service forbade him at present to disclose, but which, the council might be assured, would not be uncongenial to the views and sentiments of the people of New England. This moderate requisition, far inferior to the exaction which had

[1] "He is like St. George upon a sign-post," said a Philadelphian to Dr. Franklin, — "always on horseback, but never advancing." When Franklin pressed for reimbursement of certain supplies which he had been employed to procure for the army, Lord Loudoun told him that he could afford to wait, as his employment had doubtless given him ample opportunity of filling his own pockets. Franklin endeavoured to repel this insinuation; but the integrity to which he pretended was treated by Lord Loudoun as something utterly incredible. "On the whole," says Franklin, "I wondered much how such a man came to be intrusted with so important a business as the conduct of a great army; but having since seen more of the great world, and the means of obtaining and motives for giving places and employments, my wonder is diminished." Franklin's *Memoirs*.

been anticipated, served at least to silence the murmurs, though it could not appease the discontent and indignation, created by Lord Loudoun's preliminary remarks; and the levies he demanded, having been speedily raised, hastened to unite with the contingents drawn from the other provinces at New York, where, early in the spring, the British commander found himself at the head of more than six thousand American troops.

It was expected by the States of New England, and perhaps was the original purpose of Lord Loudoun himself, that the force thus assembled should be applied to the reduction of Ticonderoga and Crown Point; but he was induced to depart from this plan, if, indeed, he ever entertained it, by the tidings of an additional armament having been despatched from Britain to Nova Scotia. This armament, consisting of eleven ships of the line, besides transports and bomb-ketches, under the command of Admiral Holborne and Commodore Holmes, and containing six thousand disciplined soldiers, conducted by George, Viscount Howe, arrived accordingly at Halifax [July, 1757], whither Lord Loudoun shortly after repaired, along with the forces he had collected at New York. He now proclaimed his intention of declining for the present all active operations against Crown Point or Ticonderoga, and of uniting his whole disposable force in an expedition to Cape Breton, for the conquest of Louisburg. This abandonment of the enterprise on which they had confidently relied was a severe disappointment to the States of New England; nor was their concern abated by the issue of the design which Lord Loudoun preferably embraced; for it now appeared that he was totally unacquainted with the condition of the fortress he proposed to subdue; and his attack upon it was first suspended by the necessity of gaining this preliminary information, and ultimately relinquished in consequence of the result of his inquiries, and of the accession of force the place received while these inquiries were pursued. It was found that Louisburg was garrisoned by six thousand regular troops, besides militia, and farther defended by seventeen line-of-battle ships moored in the harbour, and which arrived while the British troops lingered inactively at Halifax. Lord Loudoun, accounting the armament he commanded unequal to cope with this force, announced that the enterprise must be deferred till the following year; and having dismissed the provincial troops, he returned in the end of August to New York, there to learn the disaster which his conduct had occasioned in another quarter, and which crowned the disgrace of this inglorious campaign.[1]

Montcalm, the French commander, availing himself of the unskilful movement by which Lord Loudoun withdrew so large a portion of the British force from New York to Halifax, advanced with an army of nine thousand men and laid siege to Fort William Henry, which was garrisoned by nearly three thousand troops, partly English and partly American, commanded by a brave English officer, Colonel Monroe. The security of this important post was supposed to be still farther promoted by the proximity of Fort Edward, which was scarcely fourteen miles from it, and where the English general, Webb, was stationed with a force of four thousand men. Had Webb done his duty, the besiegers might have been repulsed, and Fort William Henry preserved; but though he received timely notice of the approach of the enemy, yet, with strange indolence or timidity, he neither

[1] The recent fate of Admiral Byng, whom the British court meanly sacrificed to popular rage for unsuccessful operation at sea, was supposed to have paralyzed the energy of many British officers at this juncture.

summoned the American governments to aid the place with their militia, nor despatched a single company of his own soldiers to its succour. Nay, whether or not he desired, so far was he from hoping to avert, its capture, that the only communication he made to Monroe, during the siege, was a letter conveying the faint-hearted counsel to surrender without delay. [August 9, 1757.] Montcalm, on the other hand, who was endowed with a high degree of military spirit and genius, pressed the assault on Fort William Henry with the utmost vigor and skill. He had inspired his own daring ardor into the French soldiers, and roused the fury and enthusiasm of his Indian auxiliaries by promising revenge proportioned to their losses, and unrestricted plunder as the reward of their conquest.[1] After a sharp resistance, which, however, endured only for six days, Monroe, finding that his ammunition was exhausted, and that hopes of relief were desperate, was compelled to surrender the place by a capitulation, of which the terms were far more honorable to the vanquished than the fulfilment of them was to the victors. It was conditioned that the garrison should not serve against the French for eighteen months; that they should march out with the honors of war; and, retaining their private baggage, be escorted to Fort Edward by French troops, as a security against the lawless ferocity of the Indians. But these savages were incensed at the terms which Montcalm (whether swayed by generous respect for a gallant foe, or apprehensive that Webb might be roused at length from his supine indifference) conceded to the garrison; and seeing no reason why the French general should postpone the interest of his allies to that of his enemies, were determined, that, if he broke his word with either party, it should not be with *them*. Of the scene of cruelty and bloodshed which ensued the accounts which have been transmitted are not less uniform and authentic than horrid and disgusting. The only point wrapped in obscurity is *how far* the French general and his troops were voluntarily or unavoidably spectators of the violation of the treaty they stood pledged to fulfil. According to some accounts, no escort whatever was furnished to the British garrison. According to others, the escort was a mere mockery, both in respect of the numbers of the French guards, and of their willingness to defend their civilized enemies against their savage friends.[2] It is certain that the escort, if there was any, proved totally ineffectual; and this acknowledged circumstance, taken in conjunction with the prior occurrences at Oswego, is sufficient to load the character of Montcalm with an imputation of treachery and dishonor, which, as it has never yet been satisfactorily repelled, seems likely to prove as lasting as his name. No sooner had the garrison marched out, and surrendered their arms, in reliance upon the pledge of the French general, than a furious and irresistible attack was made upon them by the Indians, who stripped them both of their baggage and their clothes, and murdered or made prisoners of all who attempted resistance. About fifteen hundred persons were thus slaughtered or carried into captivity. Such was the lot of eighty men belonging to a

[1] "On the very day he invested the place, he sent a letter to Colonel Monroe, telling him he thought himself obliged in humanity to desire he would surrender the fort, and not provoke the great number of savages in the French army by a vain resistance. *A detachment of your garrison*, he said, *has lately experienced their cruelty. I have it yet in my power to constrain them, and oblige them to observe a capitulation, as none of them hitherto are killed.*" Smollett.

[2] It is not uncommon for the historians of remote events to suppose that passionate contemporary statements *must be* erroneous. Yet, surely, it is absurd to expect that scenes of atrocious cruelty and injustice should be dispassionately described either by the victims or by their friends

New Hampshire regiment, of which the complement was no more than two hundred. A number of Indian allies of the English, and who had formed part of the garrison, fared still more miserably. They were seized without scruple by their savage enemies, and perished in lingering and barbarous torture. Of the garrison of Fort William Henry scarcely a half were enabled to gain the shelter of Fort Edward in a straggling and wretched condition.

The British colonists were struck with the most painful surprise and alarm by the tidings of this disaster. Many persons were induced to question the fidelity of General Webb, whose conduct, indeed, though not justly obnoxious to this charge, yet merited the sharpest and most contemptuous censure; and all were inflamed with the highest indignation by the atrocious breach of Montcalm's treaty with the garrison of Fort William Henry. Webb, roused, at length, from his lethargy by the personal fear that fell on him, hastily invoked the succour of the States of New England. The call was promptly obeyed; and a portion of the militia of Massachusetts and Connecticut was despatched to check the victorious progress of the French, who, it was feared, would not only make an easy conquest of Fort Edward, but penetrate to Albany. So zealously was this service undertaken by Massachusetts, that a large extent of her own frontier was stripped of its defenders and left for a time in a very precarious situation. But Montcalm, whether daunted by this vigorous demonstration, or satisfied with the blow he had struck, and engrossed with the care of improving its propitious influence on the minds of the Indians, refrained from even investing Fort Edward, and made no farther attempt at present to extend the range of his conquests. The only additional operation of the French, during the season, was a predatory enterprise in concert with their Indian allies against the flourishing British settlements at German Flats, in the province of New York, and along the Mohawk River, which they utterly wasted with fire and sword. At sea, from a fleet of twenty-one British merchant-vessels, homeward bound from Carolina, they succeeded in making prizes of nineteen, which were loaded with valuable cargoes.[1] Thus ended a campaign which covered Britain and her cabinet and commanders with disgrace, filled her colonies with the most gloomy apprehension and discontent, and showed conquest blazing with full beams on France. By an act of parliament passed this year, the permission formerly granted of importing bar-iron, duty-free, from North America, into the port of London, was extended to every port in Great Britain.[2]

Lord Loudoun concluded, as he had commenced, the year, with a proceeding that gave much offence to the Americans, and showed him capable of exerting, in a dispute with their provincial governments, a greater degree of promptitude and energy than he had displayed against the common enemy. Governor Pownall, having been apprized that a British regiment was to be stationed at Boston, communicated this information to the General Court of Massachusetts, which ordered accommodations to be provided for one thousand men at Castle William, a fortified place on a small island facing the town, in terms which plainly expressed their understanding that this was not a measure of necessary obedience, but a voluntary disbursement on the

[1] Trumbull. Minot. Belknap. Franklin's *Memoirs*. Carver's *Travels in America*. Smollett. Dwight's *Travels*.

[2] See Note XVIII., at the end of the volume.

national account. Soon afterwards, a number of officers, who repaired to Boston from Nova Scotia for the purpose of recruiting their regiments, finding that this service was impeded by their residence in barracks at the castle, required the justices of the peace to quarter and billet them upon the citizens, in conformity with the practice in the parent state, and the provisions of the act of parliament by which that practice was commanded. The justices, however, refused to comply with this requisition, as they considered that the act of parliament did not extend to America, and that they had no authority to grant billets without the sanction of the legislative assembly of the province. The officers, thereupon, complained to Lord Loudoun, who signified in peremptory terms his commands that the justices should grant the accommodation required from them; declaring, that, in his opinion, the act of parliament *did* extend to America, and to every part of his Majesty's dominions where the public exigencies might oblige him to send troops either for the defence of his territories or the security of his people. His arguments failing to produce any impression on the magistracy or legislature of the province, he was provoked to assume a still higher tone [November 15, 1757]; and at length acquainted Governor Pownall that the patience and gentleness which he had hitherto employed were exhausted; that he had no leisure for farther parley, but, having already sufficiently confuted the reasoning of the provincials, he was prepared to adopt more vigorous measures for obtaining their obedience, and preventing the whole continent from being thrown into confusion by their factious obstinacy. The justices, he said, might yet avert this extremity by immediately performing their duty, to which no act of assembly could lend additional sanction; and accordingly he had instructed his messenger to remain forty-eight hours in Boston, to ascertain and report if they improved or neglected the opportunity. If the messenger, on his return, should report that the provincial authorities were still refractory, he protested that he would instantly give orders to three battalions of British troops, which he had in New York, Long Island, and Connecticut, to march upon and occupy Boston; and if more were wanting, he had two other battalions in New Jersey, besides a body of troops in Pennsylvania, at hand to support them.

The provincial authorities, though alarmed by this communication, and anxious to avoid the collision with which it menaced them, were averse to yield to force what they had refused to argument. Hoping at once to satisfy Lord Loudoun and preserve their privileges, the assembly passed a law [December 6], of which the provisions were somewhat, though by no means entirely, similar to the act of parliament in question. Their conduct served rather to incense than to appease the British commander, who immediately signified his displeasure to Pownall; observing that the assembly had no proper concern with the dispute, and that "in time of war, the rules and customs of war must govern"; and acquainting him that the troops had received their orders and were already advancing upon Boston. A rash demonstration; not more odious to the colonists than humiliating to the arms of Britain, whose troops, driven from their outposts, and defeated by the enemy, were now exhibited in the act of a retrograde movement against the people whom they were sent to protect, and whose militia had in reality protected *them*. The assembly of Massachusetts, undaunted by this emergency, voted an address to the governor, which breathed the genuine spirit of their forefathers. They again affirmed that the act of parliament to which the

controversy had reference did not extend to the British colonies and plantations; and added, that they had, therefore, enlarged the barracks at the castle, in order that the British troops might not be devoid of suitable accommodation, and had also framed a law for the convenience of the recruiting service, with as close conformity to the act of parliament as the nature and condition of the country and its inhabitants would admit. They maintained that the law which they had enacted was requisite to enable the provincial magistrates to execute the powers which it conferred upon them, and declared that they were always willing to adopt such regulations when the troops to be quartered or recruited were necessary for their protection and defence. They protested that they were entitled to all the rights and liberties of Englishmen; that by the provincial charter there was committed to them every power and privilege correspondent to a free and unrestricted administration of their own domestic government; and that as they were supported under all difficulties and animated to resist an invading enemy to their last breath by the consciousness of enjoying these advantages, so they would be proportionally dispirited and enfeebled by the loss or diminution of them. In conclusion, they declared that it would doubtless be a great misfortune to them, if their adherence to these rights and privileges should deprive them of the esteem of Lord Loudoun; but that they would still have the satisfaction of reflecting that both in their words and actions they had been governed by a sense of duty to his Majesty, and of fidelity to the trust reposed in them by their countrymen.

This language, at once so spirited, temperate, and judicious, probably saved the province from a scene fraught with mischief and peril to its liberties. Expressions of fear or humiliation would have tempted Lord Loudoun to persevere; while demonstrations of resistance would have deprived him of any decent pretext for receding. The address of the assembly was forwarded to him by Governor Pownall, who farther tendered his own personal assurance that the colonists had honestly endeavoured to give to the recruiting service every facility which was compatible with the peculiar circumstances of the country. This assurance, unless interpreted with very considerable latitude, was hardly correct; for, doubtless, with the Americans, the quartering of British regiments in their towns, and the attempts to recruit them from the colonial population, were generally unpopular. In every part of America, the superiority arrogated by the British troops over the provincial forces created disgust; and the Puritan and republican sentiments of the New Englanders in particular were offended by the loose manners of the English officers, and the conversion of their own fellow-citizens into the disciplined stipendiaries of monarchical authority. Lord Loudoun, nevertheless, though perfectly aware that no alteration of circumstances had occurred since he commanded the troops to march, thought proper to lay hold of the overture for reconciliation which was thus afforded; and accordingly hastened to signify, in a despatch to Pownall [December 6], that, as he could now "depend on the assembly making the point of quarters easy in all time coming," he had countermanded his previous orders for the military occupation of Boston. He condescended at the same time to make some courteous remarks on the zeal which the province displayed for his Majesty's service; but withal, he complained that the assembly *seemed willing to enter into a dispute upon the necessity of a provincial law to enforce a British act of parliament.*

The communication of Lord Loudoun's despatch to the General Court of Massachusetts produced from this body a remarkable message to the governor, which at a later period attracted a good deal of controversial criticism; very different meanings being attached to it by the friends of American liberty, and by the individual, and the political partisans of the individual, who composed it. In this message, which was the composition of Thomas Hutchinson, — a gentleman of consideration, who had filled high official situations in Massachusetts for several years, and has already been introduced to our notice, which he will farther engage in circumstances more interesting, — the two houses (the assembly and council) composing the General Court, after thanking the governor for his good offices in their behalf, denied the justice of Lord Loudoun's complaint; and protested that their legislative ordinance was intended not to give force to an act of parliament, but to regulate a case to which no act of parliament was applicable. "We are willing," they declared, "by a due exercise of the powers of civil government (and we have the pleasure of seeing your Excellency concur with us) to remove, as much as may be, all pretence of the necessity of military government. Such measures, we are sure, will never be disapproved by the parliament of Great Britain, *our dependence upon which we never had a desire or thought of lessening.*" "The authority of all acts of parliament," they affirmed, "which concern the colonies and extend to them, is ever acknowledged in all the courts of law, and made the rule of all judicial proceedings in the province. There is not a member of the General Court, and we know no inhabitant within the bounds of the government, that ever questioned this authority. To prevent any ill consequences which may arise from an opinion of our holding such principles, we now utterly disavow them, as we should readily have done at any time past, if there had been occasion for it; and we pray that his Lordship may be acquainted therewith, that we may appear in a true light, and that no impressions may remain to our disadvantage." This document, composed by a man of considerable ability, who had not yet made or at least declared his election between the interests of British prerogative and American liberty, was afterwards, in consequence of the rupture between the parent state and her colonies, subjected to much ingenious but disproportioned comment and observation; each of two political parties affecting to regard it as, in some measure, a compact, or rather a solemn exposition of the political relation between Britain and America, and each seeking to twist every sentence of it into a deliberate recognition or disclamation, on the part of America, of the supremacy claimed by the British parliament. It will lose much of the significance which these reasoners have imputed to it, if we consider what was and what must have been the state of political parties and party feeling in New England at the present period.

From the first establishment of British colonies in this quarter of America, a contest had prevailed between provincial liberty and the imperial power of Britain. Even before the British Revolution, two parties sprung up, of which the one counted among its numerous votaries the jealous, the uncompromising, and the headstrong, — while the other was reputed to number in its smaller phalanx the more prudent, cautious, and timorous friends of American liberty. This distinction of parties was not terminated by the Revolution, though it was interrupted for a short time by Lord Bellamont's administration. Various causes had since contributed to per-

petuate and even to inflame its violence and alter its character. The conduct of Shirley was so popular, even while his language proclaimed his attachment to royal prerogative, that of late years the progress of political dissension in Massachusetts was less noted than it deserved. Pownall, attaching himself to the opponents of Shirley, and throwing himself upon them for support, incited at once this party and their adversaries to make a fuller and more unguarded declaration of their sentiments than either had previously ventured to express. The one party was unwilling to believe that its principles tended to promote American slavery; the other (excepting, perhaps, a few bold enthusiasts) durst not believe that its opinions conducted, at least directly or immediately, to American independence. All parties were constrained, in theory, to admit the sovereignty of Britain and its legislature over America; and even those of the Americans, who were most forward to claim for themselves *the rights of Englishmen*, recognized in this expression the dependence upon Britain incident to a component part and member of the British empire. But the politicians belonging to what was now called the popular party in America cherished sentiments very discordant with this theory; they regarded their provincial institutions with jealous attachment, and the power and pretensions of Britain with jealous apprehension. Fear cannot long prevail without begetting anger and hatred; and the policy of Britain inspired well grounded fears in the breast of every friend of American freedom. Both in Britain and in America, it was felt, rather than avowed, that the increasing numbers and strength of the colonists demanded some change in the relations that had hitherto subsisted between them and the parent state; and the opposite views on this subject, which each party, more or less justly, imputed to the other, served to exasperate the mutual jealousy of the partisans of British prerogative and provincial liberty. The circumstances and events of the war with France contributed also to strengthen this opposition of sentiment. While one party regarded with alternate alarm, impatience, and contempt the formidable discipline and equipment of the British troops, their arrogant assumption of superiority, and their signal inefficiency against the common enemy,—the other was struck with awe and admiration by the display of British pomp, profusion, and power; and of these last, if some were additionally impressed with the prudence of moderating every demonstration of American patriotism that might be offensive to Britain, others, doubtless, were inspired with the hope of participating in the dignities and emoluments which they saw lavished by that great empire on her servants, and which the prospect of a change in the institutions of America rendered more likely to be attainable by provincial functionaries. In seasons of passion and agitation, the popular party, who formed a great majority of the inhabitants, were apt to proclaim the political sentiments which they cherished with an energy unguarded by the limits of the political theory which they confessed; but in seasons of more calmness and deliberation, they could not refuse to avow their subjection to British sovereignty, and to repudiate any sentiments inconsistent with this principle. The agitation occasioned by Lord Loudoun's hostile menaces having subsided, it was impossible for the Massachusetts assembly to decline that recognition of their obedience to the parent state which Hutchinson introduced into the message which he composed for them; and they were the more ready to disclaim the imputations of Lord Loudoun, and to avoid the displeasure of the

British government at this moment, on account of the heavy expenses entailed on them by the war, and of which they had at some future day to solicit reimbursement from the justice or liberality of parliament. Yet with all these motives to induce their acquiescence in a demonstration of loyalty and submission to Britain, it was necessary to recommend the message to their adoption by the introduction of a strong protest that their previous conduct was entirely free from blame.

If Lord Loudoun supposed, from the issue of this affair, that he had subdued the spirit of the colonists, or even facilitated the exercise of his own authority among them, he was speedily undeceived. Early in the following year [February, 1758], he summoned a convention of the governors of New England and New York to meet him at Hartford, in Connecticut; but finding, after some conference, that they could not undertake any measure that had not received the sanction of their respective assemblies, he repaired to Boston, where his reception gave him plainly to understand that America no longer reposed the slightest confidence in him. Neither Pownall nor the assembly showed any disposition to second his views; and before they would consent to place the most trifling force at his disposal, the assembly required him to specify all the particulars of the service in which he proposed to employ it. Provoked and perplexed by this demand, he was deliberating in what manner to answer it, when an express arrived with intelligence that he was superseded by the king, and that the command of the royal forces was delegated to General Abercrombie.[1]

The progress of the war in America had been hitherto signalized by the discomfiture of the English and the triumph of the French, — a result that was beheld with increasing resentment and impatience in England. It was a circumstance additionally irritating and mortifying to this people, that the few advantages which had been gained over the French were exclusively due to the colonial troops, — while unredeemed disaster and disgrace had attended all the efforts of the British forces. The events of the last two campaigns were remarkably unpropitious to Britain, and induced or at least manifestly betokened the decisive preponderance of the power of France in America. By the acquisition of Fort William Henry, the French obtained entire possession of the lakes Champlain and George; and by the destruction of Oswego, they acquired the dominion of the other lakes which connect the St. Lawrence with the waters of the Mississippi. The first afforded the easiest intercourse between the northern colonies and Canada; the last united Canada to Louisiana. By the continued possession of Fort Duquesne, they extended their influence over the Indians, and held undisturbed possession of all the country westward of the Alleghany Mountains. The superior strength of Britain, unskilfully exerted, was visibly yielding, in this quarter of the world, to the superior vigor and dexterity of her rival, who, with victorious strides, was rapidly gaining a position, which, if it did not infer the entire conquest of the British settlements, at least enabled her to intercept their farther growth, to cramp their commerce, and continually to overawe them, and attack them with advantage. The spirit of the English nation, which had been kindling for some time, was in this emergency provoked to a pitch that could brook no longer the languid and inefficient conduct of the operations in America. William Pitt, afterwards Earl of Chatham, the most able and accomplished statesman and senator that Great

[1] Gordon. Minot. Hutchinson. *Memoirs of an American Lady.*

Britain had yet produced, and who had long combated with his powerful rhetoric and majestic eloquence the policy of directing the chief military efforts of England to the continent of Europe, was now, in opposition to the wishes of the king, but in compliance with the irresistible will of the nation, placed at the head of the British ministry. He had received this appointment in the spring of the preceding year; and again, in the autumn, after a short expulsion from office, was reinstated in it more firmly than before. The strenuous vigor and enlarged capacity of this extraordinary man, whose faculties were equally fitted to rouse the spirit and to wield the strength of a great nation, produced a dawn of hope and joy throughout the whole British empire. His elevation was hailed with enthusiasm, as the pledge of retributive triumph to his country; and in effect it speedily checked the fortune of the enemy and occasioned a signal revolution in the relative power and predicament of France and England. Lord Loudoun, whether from his general slackness and indistinctness in the conduct of business, or from personal or political dislike to the minister, conducted his correspondence with him in a very negligent manner; and Pitt is reported to have assigned as the reason for superseding this commander, that *he could never ascertain what Lord Loudoun was doing.*

The same express which brought the tidings of Loudoun's recall conveyed a circular letter from Pitt to the provincial governors, acquainting them with the resolution of the British cabinet to send a powerful armament to operate by sea and land against the French in America, and inviting them to raise as numerous levies of auxiliary troops as the population of their respective provinces could afford. Arms, ammunition, tents, provisions, and boats, it was announced, would be furnished by the crown; and the provincial governors, meanwhile, were desired to levy, clothe, and pay their troops, and appoint the officers of their various regiments. They were assured that it was the king's determination, by the most vigorous and expensive efforts, to repair the losses and disappointments of the last inactive and unhappy campaign, and to repel, by the blessing of God upon his arms, the dangers impending over his people and possessions in North America; that, for this purpose, the war, which had been hitherto defensive on the part of the British, was now to be carried into the heart of the enemy's territory; and that, to encourage the colonists to coöperate in this great and important design, his Majesty would recommend to his parliament to grant to the several provinces such compensation for the expenses they might incur, as their vigor and activity should appear justly to merit. At this intelligence, the Americans, and especially the people of New England, were aroused to a generous emulation with the awakened spirit of the parent state; mutual jealousy and distrust were swallowed up, for a season, in common ardor for the honor of Britain and the safety of America; and, with the most cheerful confidence and alacrity, all the States of New England vied in exertions[1] to strengthen by their coöperation the promised British armament. In Massachusetts there were raised seven thousand men; in Connecticut, five thousand; and in New Hampshire, nine hundred. The numbers of the Rhode Island, New York, and New Jersey levies have not been specified. These troops were ready to take the field early in May,—previously to which time, Admiral Boscawen arrived at Halifax with a con-

[1] In aid of the public funds appropriated by the assembly of Massachusetts, a voluntary subscription for the encouragement of recruits was opened at Boston, where, in one day, twenty thousand pounds were subscribed.

siderable fleet, and twelve thousand British troops, conducted by General Amherst, an officer of distinguished skill and ability, and under whom a subordinate command was exercised by General Wolfe, one of the most heroic and magnanimous spirits of the age.[1] Abercrombie, on whom the chief command of the entire forces employed in this quarter of the world devolved, was now at the head of the most powerful army that had ever been assembled in America, consisting of fifty thousand men, of whom twenty-two thousand were regular troops.[2] He was a person of slender abilities, and utterly devoid of energy and resolution; and Pitt too late regretted the error he committed in intrusting a command of such importance to one so little known to him, and who proved so unfit to sustain it.

The increased interest in the affairs of America which the British people began to exhibit, and the purpose which the nation and the ministry now cherished, of vigorous and extensive warfare in that quarter, were not a little promoted by circumstances of which we must seek for the springs in the particular history of Pennsylvania. Captain Denny, whose appointment to the government of this province we have already noticed, possessed none of that taste for disputation which characterized his predecessor, Governor Morris. He was exceedingly desirous to enjoy an easy, quiet administration; but, unfortunately, the attainment of this object was incompatible with his adherence to the instructions communicated to him by the proprietaries. As a substitute for popular measures, he was directed by his constituents to cultivate the friendship, and, if possible, secure the services of popular men, and particularly of Dr. Franklin, the most respected and distinguished inhabitant of Pennsylvania; but Franklin firmly rejected the ensnaring offers which Denny addressed to him, and declared that he would accept no favors from the proprietaries, as he was determined to give them no farther support than their measures should justly merit. An administration which commenced in this manner was not likely to be attended with a satisfactory issue. The old dispute respecting the liability of the proprietary possessions to taxation was revived with more violence than ever; and a bill having passed the assembly, granting for the service of the king sixty thousand pounds, of which ten thousand were to be placed at the command of Lord Loudoun, was disallowed by the governor, because the estates of the proprietaries were not exempted from the assessment it imposed. Lord Loudoun endeavoured to mediate between the disputants, whose respective pleas were discussed before him by the governor for himself and his constituents, and by Franklin on the part of the assembly. Denny declared that the proprietaries held his bond by which he was engaged under a high penalty to conform to all their instructions; yet he was prepared to incur the hazard of opposing their will in this instance, if Lord Loudoun would advise him to pass the bill. This, however, Loudoun declined to do; and preferably chose to recommend that the assembly should yield to the wishes of the proprietaries. As the money was urgently wanted for the defence of the Pennsylvanian frontier against the incursions of the French and their Indian allies, Franklin prevailed with the assembly to pass the bill in the terms required by Denny and recommended by Lord Loudoun, after voting,

[1] The Americans compared Amherst to Fabius, and Wolfe to the Scipios.

"Wolfe, where'er he fought,
Put so much of his heart into his act,
That his example had a magnet's force." — Cowper.

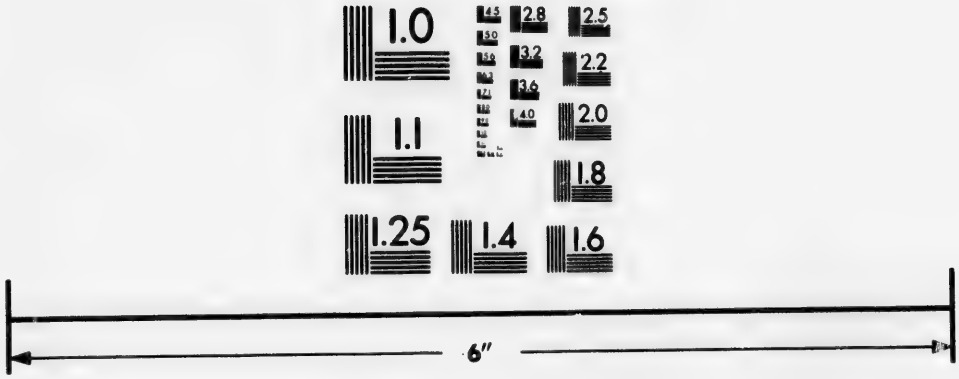
[2] Trumbull. Minot. Hutchinson. Smollett. Belknap. Holmes.

however, a preliminary resolution that they meant not to relinquish the pretensions they had asserted, but were driven *by force* to suspend the exercise of them on the present occasion.

For the more effectual vindication of these pretensions, the assembly forthwith composed a petition to the king, in which they represented the injury which accrued both to his Majesty's service in general, and to the province in particular, from the conduct of the proprietaries; and Franklin was despatched to England, as the agent of the province, in order to present and support this application. On his arrival at London [July, 1757], he found the success of his mission obstructed by various obstacles, some of which were created by the art and industry of the parties who had an interest in prejudicing the public mind against the cause which he supported. To this end, the English newspapers were continually supplied with paragraphs bearing the title of *Intelligence from Pennsylvania*, but in reality fabricated in London, and conveying the most injurious reflections on the inhabitants and assembly of the province, who were represented as actuated by selfish motives and a mutinous and refractory spirit, because they persisted in withstanding the claim of the proprietaries to an exemption from that taxation which was necessary to the defence of the proprietary estates. It was pretended that the Quakers still retained the command of the assembly, and that, from a real or affected regard to their sectarian principles, they obstructed every preparation even for defensive war, and suffered the frontiers of the province to be desolated by Indian rage and cruelty; and all the inhabitants of the colony, but the Quakers in an especial degree, were charged with the blackest ingratitude to the founder of Pennsylvania and his descendants. If William Penn could have foreseen this, he would, perhaps, have regretted, not indeed his exertions to colonize Pennsylvania, but that, in making those exertions, he had ever proposed to himself and his family any other reward except the consciousness of beneficence and the glory of the enterprise.

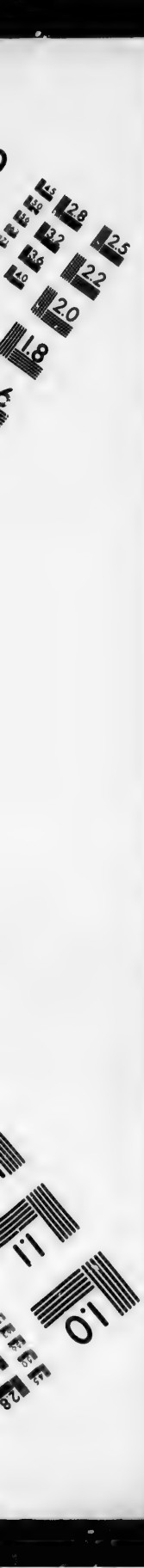
The disadvantage arising from this preoccupation of the public mind was increased by the strong interest still prevailing among the politicians of England in the progress of the war in Germany, which rendered it a task of no ordinary difficulty to remove the impressions already produced by interested individuals against the equitable claims of the inhabitants of a colonial settlement in a distant part of the world. Franklin's ardor, nevertheless, was animated rather than depressed by the prospect of difficulties which it was in the power of genius and intelligence to overcome; and, accepting the defence of his country's interest, he pursued it with equal zeal, ability, and success. He inserted replies in the public prints to the representations conveyed by the proprietaries, in which he demonstrated with brief and perspicuous statement and reasoning, united with the liveliest wit and keen but elegant satire, the unjust and sordid policy of the proprietaries, the wrongs of Pennsylvania, and the utter groundlessness of the present charges against the Quakers, who actually formed but a small proportion of the total population of the province, who no longer retained their ancient ascendant in the provincial assembly, and of whom, indeed, very few were now members of that body. While the graces of his style attracted general attention to these publications, the force of his reasoning and the spirit of his pleading produced as general conviction and sympathy. An indignant concern was awakened in the public mind for the inhabitants of a British province,

IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503


2.8
2.5
3.2
3.6
2.2
4.0
2.0
1.8
1.1
1.0

whose exertions to defend themselves against the common enemy, and to coöperate with the general service of the empire, were obstructed by the insolence and selfishness of a single wealthy family. Whether from unwillingness to render the proprietaries irreconcilably hostile to himself, or because he judged such compositions unsuitable to his character of agent for the province, Franklin declined avowing the authorship of them, and caused them to be published either anonymously, or in the name of William Franklin, his illegitimate son.

To prevent the necessity of again recurring to this controversy, we shall anticipate a little the pace of time, and here record its issue. While it was still in progress, Governor Denny, foreseeing the defeat of his constituents, ventured to assent to a bill framed in conformity with the sentiments of the assembly; but as the proprietaries still refused to make any general concession on this subject, and still persisted in calumniating that provincial body, and not only the present, but every, generation of the inhabitants of Pennsylvania, — calling the reputation of their illustrious ancestor to their aid, and hoping, by its dazzling glare, to cast a deeper shade on the objects of their malevolence, — Franklin determined to make one decisive effort to disabuse the British public, and applied himself to the composition of a treatise, which was not published till the beginning of the year 1759, when it appeared under the title of *A Historical Review of the Constitution of Pennsylvania.* This admirable work, which combines all the felicities of Franklin's genius, and is, perhaps, the most masterly production of his pen, appearing anonymously, was long ascribed to James Ralph, one of the most celebrated political writers of that period. It was read with the liveliest interest in England, and not only rendered the existing proprietaries generally odious and contemptible to their countrymen, but dissipated considerably the illusion that had prevailed with regard to the unmixed virtue and disinterestedness of the founder of Pennsylvania.[1] Franklin judged that now was the time to present the petition of the provincial assembly, and to have their cause discussed before the privy council; where, in spite of the art and interest exerted in behalf of the proprietaries, a judgment was about to have been pronounced against them, when they deemed it expedient to avert this disgrace by proposing a compromise. With simulated moderation and palpable subterfuge, they offered to consent to the subjection of their estates to the provincial taxes, provided Franklin would engage for his constituents that these estates should not be assessed beyond their due proportion of liability. The point in dispute was thus entirely conceded by the stipulation of a condition which never had been nor could be refused; and by the address and ability of Franklin, a victory of the highest importance was achieved for his countrymen. The controversy had excited much interest throughout America; and the conduct and issue of it recommended Franklin so highly to the confidence and esteem of the American colonists, that he was, shortly after, appointed agent for the colonies of

[1] Mr. Clarkson, in his *Life of William Penn*, has taken some notice of this production of Franklin; on which occasion he has been betrayed into a very strange mistake by erroneous information and too partial regard for the Quaker patriarch. He states that the object of the publication was to obtain a change of the provincial government from proprietary to royal, and that the failure of this design "laid the foundation of his (Franklin's) animosity to Great Britain, which was so conspicuous afterwards." This is an entire misrepresentation, into which nothing but defective materials and the jealousy of Mr. Clarkson's affection for Penn could have betrayed him. Franklin's design was perfectly different, and, instead of failing, was crowned with complete success. See Note XIX., at the end of the volume.

Massachusetts, Maryland, and Georgia, and on his return to Pennsylvania, in 1762, was rewarded with five thousand pounds for his services in England. It was a circumstance additionally gratifying to the Pennsylvanians, that Denny was removed, in the year 1759, from the government of their province, and replaced by James Hamilton, whom we have seen once before in the possession of this office.

But a consequence, earlier and more important than that which we have now considered, though collateral to the proper object of Franklin's mission from America, resulted from his residence in England at this period. Approximated to each other, and inhabiting the same metropolis, were now, at an interesting crisis of British and American history, the most illustrious statesman and minister in England, and the most distinguished philosopher and politician of America. It might naturally be supposed that a close and intimate intercourse must have arisen between these remarkable men, and that, from their united genius and deliberation, the wisest and most masterly scheme of British policy must have been engendered. Pitt was strongly opposed to the system which had hitherto staked so much of the blood and treasure of England on the issue of German hostilities,[1] sometimes disgraceful, always barren of real advantage and glory to England; and Franklin, whether from the efficacy of Pitt's eloquence, or from his own unassisted meditation, had espoused the same opinion. Both were united in thinking that more energetic hostilities should be pursued in America; but the precise point to which hostilities in this quarter should actually be pushed, in order to vindicate the honor without compromising the interest of Britain, was a question on which these men might be expected to entertain different opinions. From the extent and precision of political information for which Pitt was so highly renowned, it is difficult to suppose him unacquainted with the doubts which had been openly expressed, both in Britain and America, of the expediency of attempting the entire conquest of the French settlements in the New World; and it is equally incredible that Franklin was ignorant of the conviction that prevailed with many American politicians, that this conquest would destroy the firmest pledge which Britain possessed of the obedience of her transatlantic colonies.[2] Pitt, undoubtedly, would never have consented to embrace any measure, of which the result, however flattering in immediate appearance, seemed to him probably to threaten or even materially to facilitate the dismemberment of the British empire; and Franklin, we may with almost equal certainty affirm, was at this time, and long after, strongly opposed to the idea, that either Britain or America could derive advantage from a political separation. He used to compare the British empire to a grand porcelain vase, of which, were it broken, the fractional parts, however equally or unequally distributed, could never possess the same magnificent value which belonged to their incorporation and combined existence. But Pitt, wielding all the resources of Britain, was liable to be seduced by views of immediate glory; and Franklin, however guiltless he may have been of projecting, at this period, the independence of America, cannot be supposed to have contemplated, as cautiously and jealously as a native Englishman would have done, events,

[1] Some time after Pitt became minister, the views which he entertained (or at least expressed) of the interest of Britain in German wars underwent a very signal modification. Able, active, eloquent, haughty, and violent, this eminent statesman was little regardful of honest consistency.

[2] *Ante*, Chap. II.

which, by strengthening America, must necessarily render her independence more easily attainable. Pitt was incited by principle, inclination, and interest to prosecute the war in America more actively than his official predecessors. Still, it would seem that he doubted the wisdom, and perhaps hesitated between the wisdom and the glory, of an entire subjugation of the French empire in America. Franklin, on the contrary, was conducted by his own reasoning, or enticed by patriotic zeal and passion, to the conclusion, that the interests both of Britain and America would be promoted by such conquest; and yet it is certain that his views were materially affected by the consideration, more or less just, which he entertained of the probable effect of this enterprise on the minds of the British colonists towards their own parent state. It was, he declared, his opinion, that the independence of the British colonies, however reasonable or probable, was a contingency too distant to be permitted to influence present calculations; that discontent and disaffection were maintained in British America by the vicinity, the power, and the encroachments of the French; and that loyalty to the parent state would be promoted by the removal of this cause of apprehension and anxiety.

Pitt, who was, doubtless, aware of Franklin's eminence in America as a politician, and of his celebrity in the world as a philosopher, appears to have regarded him with sincere, but cold and condescending esteem; while Franklin, as yet a novice in great and brilliant scenes, biased, partly by the influence of artificial distinctions to which he was unaccustomed, and partly by an excess of admiration incident to real genius, contemplated Pitt with enthusiastic estimate and unbounded reverence. Yet while Franklin, in all the native dignity and generous confidence of a superior though unpractised soul, entertained an ardent desire to see and converse with the British minister,—Pitt, governed by the aristocratical prejudices which he cherished at least as fondly as he did the principles of liberty, regarded an American postmaster and provincial agent as a person with whom he could not directly associate without derogation from his own dignity. All the efforts of Franklin to obtain an interview with Pitt proved unsuccessful; and he was obliged to content himself with the complimentary intelligence, that this minister considered him *a respectable person*, and with the more solid advantage of communicating with him through the medium of two of his under-secretaries. Pitt, at this time, though too haughty and supercilious to converse personally with Franklin, was too wise to permit the opportunity of consulting so able a politician to pass wholly unimproved. Perhaps, if he had freely and directly admitted Franklin's conversation, the strain and tenor he imparted to the policy of Britain had been different; his natural sagacity, aided by the advantage of close and immediate intercourse with a mind as enlarged as his own, might have enabled him to detect some fallacy in the reasoning by which the conquest of Canada was recommended. But the zealous, undoubting conviction of an arguer disguises to ordinary capacities the logical unsoundness which it sometimes explains and accounts for to firmer and more comprehensive minds; and Pitt, communicating with this acute and ingenious, though doubtless passionate American, only through the medium of his own subordinate officers, was, perhaps too readily, impressed with the idea that that acquisition would conduce to the general benefit of the British empire. An immediate conquest of the settlements of the French seemed to be requisite to the vindication of British honor. How far such conquest, if achieved, ought, in policy, to be preserved,

was a more perplexing question; and on the whole, the British minister was rather animated to prosecute hostilities, than fixed in decisive purpose with regard to their ultimate issue, by his correspondence with Franklin.[1]

Quitting the cabinet for the field, we now resume the progress of the war in America. The conquest of Canada was the object to which the most ardent wishes of the British colonists were directed; but they quickly perceived that the gratification of this hope, if ever realized, must be deferred at least till the succeeding year; as the cabinet of England had determined, for the protection of the English commerce against the cruisers and privateers of France, to employ a considerable part of the assembled forces in an attack upon Louisburg, and to commence its new system of operations by the reduction of that place. Three expeditions were proposed for the present year [1753]: the first, against Louisburg; the second, against Ticonderoga and Crown Point; and the third, against Fort Duquesne. In prosecution of the first of these enterprises, Admiral Boscawen, sailing from Halifax [May 28] with a fleet of twenty ships of the line and eighteen frigates, conveying an army of fourteen thousand men conducted by Amherst, of which but a small proportion were provincial troops, arrived before Louisburg on the second of June. The garrison of this place, commanded by the Chevalier de Drucourt, an intrepid and experienced officer, was composed of two thousand five hundred regulars, aided by six hundred militia. The condition of the harbour, secured by five ships of the line, one fifty-gun ship, and five frigates, three of which were sunk across the mouth of the basin, rendered it necessary for the invaders to land at some distance from the town. From the defensive precautions which the enemy had adopted, this operation was attended with considerable difficulty; but, by the heroic resolution and resistless intrepidity of General Wolfe, it was accomplished with success and little loss; and the troops having been landed at the creek of Cormoran [June 8], and the artillery stores brought on shore, Wolfe was detached with two thousand men to seize a post which was occupied by the enemy at the Lighthouse Point, and was calculated to afford advantage to the besiegers by enabling them to annoy the ships in the harbour and the fortifications of the town. On the appearance of Wolfe, the post was abandoned; and there the British soon erected a formidable battery. [June 12.] Approaches were also made on the opposite side of the town; and the siege was pressed with a resolute activity characteristic of the English commanders, and yet with a severe and guarded caution, inspired by the strength of the place and the reputation of its governor and garrison, who fully supported the high idea that was entertained of them, by the skilful and obstinate valor they exerted in its defence. In all the operations of the siege, the dauntless courage and indefatigable energy of Wolfe were signally preëminent. A heavy cannonade having been maintained against the town and harbour, a bomb, exploding, set fire to one of the large ships, which soon blew up; and the flames were communicated to two others, which shared the same fate. The English admiral, in consequence of this success, despatched boats manned with six hundred men into the harbour to make an attempt during the night on the two ships of the line which still remained to the enemy. In spite of a tremendous fire of cannon and musketry, the assailants successfully performed this perilous feat; and one of the ships, which happened to be aground, was destroyed, while the other was towed off in tri

[1] Proud. Smollett. Franklin's *Memoirs*.

umph.[1] By this gallant exploit the English gained complete possession of the harbour; and already more than one practicable breach in the works was produced by their batteries. The governor now judged the place no longer defensible, and offered to capitulate; but his propositions were refused; and it was required that the garrison should surrender at discretion, or abide the issue of an assault by sea and land. These severe terms, though at first rejected, were finally embraced; and in accordance with them, Louisburg, with all its artillery, provisions, and military stores, together with Isle Royale, St. John's, and their dependencies, was surrendered on the 26th of July to the English, who without farther difficulty took entire possession of the island of Cape Breton. Four hundred of the besiegers and fifteen hundred of the garrison were killed or wounded during the siege; and the town of Louisburg was reduced to nearly a heap of ruins. In this town the conquerors found two hundred and twenty-one pieces of cannon, eighteen mortars, and a vast quantity of stores and ammunition. The inhabitants of Cape Breton were transported to France in English ships; but the French garrison and their naval auxiliaries were carried prisoners of war to England, where the unwonted tidings of victory and conquest were hailed with demonstrations of the liveliest triumph and joy. The French colors taken at Louisburg were carried in grand possession from Kensington Palace to the Cathedral of St. Paul's; and a form of thanksgiving was appointed to be used on the occasion in all the churches of England. The sentiments of the parent state were reëchoed in America; where the people of New England, more especially, partook of the warmth of an exultation that revived the glory of their own previous achievement in the first conquest of Cape Breton.[2]

Before this conquest was completed, the expedition against Ticonderoga and Crown Point occurred to checker the new and victorious career of the British arms in America. This enterprise was conducted by General Abercrombie, who on the 5th of July embarked his troops on Lake George in a hundred and twenty-five whaleboats and nine hundred batteaux. His army consisted of sixteen thousand effective men, of whom nine thousand were provincials, and was attended by a formidable train of artillery. Among other officers, he was accompanied by Lord Howe, a young English nobleman,[3] who exhibited the most promising military talents, and whose valor, virtue, courtesy, and good-sense had greatly endeared him both to the English and the provincial troops. The mass of mankind are always prone to regard with veneration those titular distinctions, which, having no real substance, afford unbounded scope to the exercise of fancy; and almost universal suffrage is won, when the possessor of such lofty, though unsolid, pretensions appears to justify them by merit and mitigate them by

[1] The renowned Captain Cook, then serving as a petty officer on board of a British ship of war, coöperated in this exploit, and wrote an account of it to a friend in England. That he honorably distinguished himself may be inferred from his promotion to the rank of lieutenant in the royal navy, which followed soon after.

The Marquis de Gouttes, who commanded the French squadron at Louisburg, was condemned in France to be degraded from his rank of nobility, to have his patent *burned* by the common hangman, and to be imprisoned for twenty-one years.

[2] Minot. Trumbull. Smollett. *Annual Register for* 1758. Holmes. Nothing can be more entertaining, and at the same time more instructive, than Dr. Johnson's fanciful contrast between a British and a French account of the second capture of Louisburg. See *Idler*, No. 20.

[3] He was grandson of George the First; his mother being the natural daughter of that monarch and his mistress, Lady Darlington. Stuart's *Three Years in North America.*

generosity, instead of arrogating them with stern insolence or reposing on them with indolent pride. Lord Howe seemed to regard his titular distinction less as a proof of noble nature than an incentive to noble action, and as facilitating the indulgence of an amiable politeness by exempting him from all suspicion of mean, obsequious servility. From the day of his arrival in America, he conformed himself, and caused his regiment to conform, to the style of service which the country required. He was the first to encounter the danger to which he conducted others, and to set the example of every sacrifice he required them to incur. While the strict discipline he maintained commanded respect, the kind and graceful benevolence of his manners conciliated affection. He was the idol and soul of the army.

The first operations of Abercrombie were directed against Ticonderoga. Having disembarked at the landing-place in a cove on the western side of the lake, the troops were formed into four columns, of which the centre was occupied by the British, and the flanks by the provincials. In this order they marched against the advanced guard of the French, which, consisting of one battalion only, destroyed its encampment and made a precipitate retreat. Proceeding from the abandoned post against Ticonderoga, the British columns, bewildered by tangled thickets, and misled by unskilful guides, were thrown into confusion and commingled in a disorderly manner. At this juncture, Lord Howe, advancing at the head of the right centre column, unexpectedly encountered the fugitive battalion of the French, who had lost their way in the woods, and now stumbled upon the enemy from whom they were endeavouring to escape. They consisted of regulars and a few Indians; and, notwithstanding their surprise and inferiority of numbers, displayed a promptitude of action and courage that had nearly reproduced the catastrophe of Braddock. With audacious temerity, which in war is easily mistaken for deliberate confidence, and frequently prevails over superior strength, they attacked their pursuers; and at the first fire Lord Howe with a number of his soldiers fell. [July 6.] The suddenness of the assault, the terror inspired by the Indian yell, and the grief and astonishment created by the death of Lord Howe, excited a general panic among the British regulars; but the provincials, who flanked them, and who were better acquainted with the mode of fighting practised by the enemy, stood their ground and soon defeated their opponents, with a slaughter, compared to which, the loss of the British in point of numbers was inconsiderable. But the death of Lord Howe had depressed the spirit and enfeebled the councils of the army; and to this circumstance its subsequent misfortunes were mainly ascribed. The loss of that brave and accomplished officer was generally deplored in America; and the assembly of Massachusetts, not long after, caused a monument to be erected to his memory in Westminster Abbey.

The British forces, without farther opposition, took possession of a post situated within two miles of Ticonderoga [July 7], previously occupied by an advanced guard commanded by Colonel Bradstreet, a provincial officer distinguished by his valor, intelligence, and activity. The general, understanding that the garrison at Ticonderoga consisted of about six thousand men (French, Canadians, and Indians), and that a reinforcement of three thousand more was daily expected, resolved on an immediate assault of the place. He directed his engineer to reconnoitre the position and intrenchments of the enemy; and, trusting to a hasty survey and a rash report of their

weakness, embraced the dangerous purpose of forcing them without the assistance of cannon. The troops, having received orders to march up briskly, to rush upon the enemy's fire, and to reserve their own until they had passed a breastwork which was represented as easily superable, advanced to the attack with the highest intrepidity. [July 8.] But unlooked-for impediments resisted their progress. The breastwork proved much more formidable than had been reported, and in front of it, to a considerable distance, trees were felled with their branches protruding outward and sharpened to a point; by which obstruction the assailants were not only retarded in their advance, but, becoming entangled among the boughs, were exposed in helpless embarrassment and disorder to a galling and destructive fire. The provincials, who were posted behind the regulars, inflamed with impatience, and not sufficiently restrained by discipline, could not be prevented from firing; and, notwithstanding their expertness as marksmen, their fire was supposed to have proved more fatal to their friends than their enemies. This sanguinary conflict was protracted during four hours. Of the assailants there were killed and wounded about two thousand men, including four hundred of the provincials. One half of a Highland regiment commanded by Lord John Murray, with twenty-five of its officers, were either killed or desperately wounded. The loss of the enemy, covered as they were from danger, was comparatively trifling. At length Abercrombie gave the signal to desist from the desperate enterprise; and to an ill-concerted assault succeeded a retreat no less precipitate and injudicious. The British army, still amounting to nearly fourteen thousand men, greatly outnumbered the enemy; and, if the artillery had been brought up to their assistance, might have overpowered with little difficulty the French forces and their defences at Ticonderoga. But Abercrombie, dismayed by his disastrous repulse, and heedless of the remonstrances of the provincial officers, carried the army back by a hasty march to the southern extremity of Lake George. Next to the defeat of Braddock, this was the most disgraceful catastrophe that had befallen the arms of Britain in America.

As Abercrombie showed himself destitute of the vigor that was requisite to repair his misfortune, Colonel Bradstreet conceived the idea of at least counterbalancing it by an effort in a different quarter, and, with this view, suggested to the general a substitutional expedition which he offered to conduct against Fort Frontignac. Approving the proposal, and willingly relinquishing his designs against Ticonderoga and Crown Point, Abercrombie despatched Bradstreet at the head of three thousand men, of whom all but the trifling handful of a hundred and fifty-five were provincials, together with eight pieces of cannon and three mortars, to attempt the reduction of Fort Frontignac. Bradstreet marched to Oswego, embarked on Lake Ontario, and, on the evening of the 25th of August, landed within a mile of the fort. Before the lapse of two days, his batteries were opened at so short a distance, that almost every shot took effect; and the French commandant, finding his force overpowered, was compelled to surrender at discretion. [August 27.] The Indian auxiliaries of the French having previously deserted, the prisoners were but a hundred and ten. But the captors found in the fort sixty pieces of cannon, sixteen small mortars, together with a prodigious collection of military stores, provisions, and merchandise. Nine armed vessels also fell into their hands. Bradstreet, after destroying the fort and vessels, and such stores as he could not carry away, returned to exhilarate the main army with this ray of success.

The reduction of Fort Frontignac facilitated the enterprise against Fort Duquesne, of which the garrison awaited, from the post thus unexpectedly subdued, a large reinforcement of stores and ammunition. General Forbes, to whom the expedition against Fort Duquesne was intrusted, marched with his troops early in July from Philadelphia; but his progress was so much retarded by various obstructions, that it was not until two months after, that the Virginian forces, commanded by Washington, were summoned to join the British army at Raystown. Among other provincial troops which participated in this expedition was a detachment of the militia of North Carolina, conducted by Major Waddell, a brave and active officer and highly respected inhabitant of that State, and accompanied by a body of Indian auxiliaries. Before the combined army advanced from Raystown, Major Grant, an English officer, was detached with eight hundred men, partly British and partly provincials, to reconnoitre the condition of Fort Duquesne and of the adjacent country. Rashly inviting an attack from the French garrison, this detachment was surrounded by the enemy, and, after a gallant but ineffectual defence, in which three hundred men were killed and wounded, Major Grant and nineteen other officers were taken prisoners. It was with the utmost difficulty that the French were able to rescue these officers from the sanguinary ferocity of their own Indian auxiliaries, who butchered the greatest part of the wounded and the prisoners. The whole residue of the detachment would have shared the same fate, if Captain Bullet, a provincial officer, with the aid of a small troop of Virginians, had not, partly by stratagem, and partly by the most desperate efforts of valor, checked the advance of the pursuing Indians, and finally conducted the fugitives to the main army, by a skilful, but protracted and laborious retreat. General Forbes, with this army, amounting to at least eight thousand men, at length advanced against Fort Duquesne; but, in spite of the most strenuous exertions, was not able to reach it till near the close of November. Enfeebled by their toilsome march, the British now approached the scene of Braddock's defeat, and beheld the field on which the mouldering corpses of Grant's troops still lay unburied. Anxious to know the condition of the fort and the position of the enemy's troops, Forbes offered a reward of forty pounds to any man who would make prisoner of a hostile Indian. This service was performed by a sergeant in the North Carolina militia; when the intelligence that was obtained from the captive showed Forbes that his labors were already crowned with unexpected success. The approach of the British force, which was attended with all those precautions of which the neglect proved so fatal to Braddock, had struck the Indians with such terror, that they withdrew from the assistance of the garrison of Fort Duquesne, declaring that the Great Spirit had evidently withdrawn his favor from the French and his protection from their fortress; and the French themselves, infected with the fears and weakened by the desertion of their allies, as well as disappointed of the stores which they had expected to obtain from Fort Frontignac, judged their post untenable, and, abandoning it on the evening before the arrival of Forbes's army, made their escape in boats down the Ohio. The British now took unresisted possession of this important fortress [November 25], which had been the immediate occasion of the existing war; and, in compliment to the great statesman whose administration had already given a new complexion to the fortune of their country and brought back

departed victory to her side, they bestowed upon it the name of Pittsburg. No sooner was the British flag hoisted on its walls, than deputations arrived from the numerous tribes of the Ohio Indians, tendering their adherence and submission to the victors. With the assistance of some of these Indians, a party of British soldiers were sent to explore the thickets where Braddock was attacked, and to bestow the rites of sepulture on the bones of their countrymen which yet strewed the ground.[1] Forbes, having concluded treaties of friendship with the Indians, left a garrison of provincials in the fort, and was reconducting his troops to Philadelphia, when he died, worn out by the ceaseless and overwhelming fatigues he had undergone.

The French, in concert with some of their Indian allies, made an attempt in the autumn to subdue a frontier fort and ravage a frontier settlement of New England. Their design, to which they were invited by the absence of the provincial forces, engaged in the distant operations of the campaign, was defeated by the vigorous and spirited exertions of Governor Pownall, who, for his conduct on this occasion, received from Pitt a letter expressive of the king's approbation.

The campaign which thus terminated was, in the main, highly honorable and propitious to Britain, notwithstanding the disgraceful defeat sustained at Ticonderoga. In consequence of this last event, Abercrombie, as he expected, was deprived of a command he no longer desired to retain; and Amherst was appointed commander-in-chief of the forces in America.[2] If France, whose American policy was the offspring of a vaulting, unmeasured ambition, had been capable of profiting by the lessons she had latterly received, perhaps the repulse of the British at Ticonderoga was an unfortunate circumstance for her. It was certainly unfortunate, if it deluded her with the hope of pursuing with advantage the contest she had provoked; and not less so in its influence on a powerful and indignant foe, in the first moments of vindictive exertion. It inspired the rulers of Britain with the same persuasion which prevailed among the Americans, that more must yet be done to redeem the honor of the British empire; and it stimulated the particular appetite which the English people had now contracted for trophies and conquests in America. Meanwhile the increased vigor and success with which the arms of Britain were exerted in other parts of the world rendered it the more difficult for France to afford succour to her American possessions.

Among other advantages which the British reaped from the late campaign was the influence it exercised on the sentiments of a great number of the Indian tribes, who began to suspect, that, by the civilities and vaunting representations of the French, they had been induced to espouse a cause which fortune was likely to forsake. Many of these savages had hastily concluded, from the polite, obliging manners of the French in peace, and their promptitude and celerity in war, that, of the two European races, they were the more eligible friends and the more formidable enemies; but their opinion began to waver, from a longer experience of the justice of British traffic and the steadiness of British valor. In the close of this year, a grand assembly of Indian nations was held at Easton, about sixty miles from Philadelphia, and a formal treaty of friendship was concluded between Great Britain and fifteen Indian tribes inhabiting the vast territory

[1] See Note XX., at the end of the volume.
[2] Burk. Wynne. Trumbull. Hutchinson. Smollett. Minot. Williamson. Campbell.

extending from the Appalachian Mountains to the lakes. The conferences were managed, on the part of Britain, by Denny, the governor of Pennsylvania, and Francis Bernard (successor of Belcher, who died in 1757), the governor of New Jersey, together with Sir William Johnson, the royal superintendent of Indian affairs, a number of the members of council and assembly of Pennsylvania and New Jersey, and a great many citizens of Philadelphia, chiefly of the Quaker persuasion. Much time was spent by the British commissioners in accommodating various feuds and disputes that had recently arisen or been exasperated between the tribes with which they contracted. The Indians also demonstrated a surprising tenacity and precision of memory, in enumerating every past and unsatisfied cause of offence which had been afforded to any of their race by the English; and a feudal nicety and exactitude in defining the pecuniary composition appropriate to every one of their relative claims. At length, after conferences which endured for eighteen days, all the disputes between the two races were satisfactorily compounded; and the treaty of friendship which ensued gave so much contentment to all parties, that the Indians promised to use their utmost endeavours to extend its influence still more widely among their race. There was purchased by the British a tract of about three thousand acres of land, which received the name of Brotherton, and was vested in the persons of the New Jersey commissioners and their successors, in trust for the use of the Indian natives of New Jersey, southward of the river Raritan.[1]

In the course of this year, a petition was presented to the British House of Commons by Robert Hunter Morris, formerly governor of Pennsylvania, who represented, that, as no salt was made in the British colonies in America, they were reduced to depend on a precarious supply of that commodity from foreigners; and that he was now willing to undertake the manufacture of marine salt, at a moderate price, in one of those colonies, at his own hazard and charge, on condition of obtaining a monopoly of this manufacture for such a term of years as the house might deem a proper and adequate compensation for the risk attending so large an adventure. This petition was referred to a committee, which never made any report:—"A circumstance," says an ingenious English historian, "not easily accounted for, unless we suppose the House of Commons were of opinion *that such an enterprise might contribute towards rendering our colonies too independent of their mother country.*" But though royal and parliamentary patronage of schemes for the improvement of the condition of the American colonists was denied, a liberal encouragement was afforded by British affluence and generosity, exerted through humbler, and, perhaps, more proper organs, to the development of American genius and enterprise. A society, which was formed at London some years before, for the promotion of arts and manufactures in Britain, now extended its notice and premiums to the colonial possessions of the parent state in America.[2]

A statute analogous to the bankrupt law of England was enacted this year by the assembly of Massachusetts, where a great many merchants were plunged into a state of insolvency by the war; but it was disallowed by the king, as unsuitable to the circumstances of a community where a great majority of the debts ordinarily contracted by the people were due, not to their own fellow-citizens, but to creditors resident in Europe.[3]

[1] S. Smith. Wynne. [2] Smollett. See Note XXI., at the end of the volume.
[3] Minot. See Note XXII., at the end of the volume.

The British nation, first aroused by resentment, which was not yet satiated, and now inflamed with success and ambition, regarded the recent American campaign as the pledge and harbinger of farther and more signal triumph in the same quarter. [1759.] Whatever hesitation to attempt the entire overthrow of the French colonial empire might yet linger in the minds of the ministers was overpowered by the force of the predicament in which they were placed, and the difficulty of pausing in a career of immediate conquest and glory. The parliament addressed the throne in terms that denoted the highest approbation of the measures and policy of the cabinet; they applauded the recent conduct of the war, and pledged themselves zealously and cheerfully to support its farther prosecution. In reply to a message from the king, recommending to their consideration the vigorous and spirited efforts which his faithful subjects in North America had exerted in defence of his rights and possessions, they voted two hundred thousand pounds for enabling his Majesty to give proper compensation to the several American provinces for their expenses in levying and maintaining troops for the public service. One sentiment of eagerness to advance the glory of England, and humble or destroy the American empire of France, pervaded every part of the British dominions; and the officers by whom the forces serving in America were now commanded were equally zealous and qualified to promote their country's wishes and enlarge her empire and renown. The campaign which they had concerted, and now prepared to commence, embraced the great design of an entire and immediate conquest of Canada; and the plan of operations by which this object was to be pursued was, that three powerful armies should enter Canada by different routes, and attack, at nearly the same time, all the strongholds of the French in that country. At the head of one division of the army, consisting principally of English troops, and aided by an English fleet, General Wolfe, who had gained so much distinction at the recent siege of Louisburg, was to ascend the river St. Lawrence, as soon as its navigation should cease to be obstructed by ice, and attempt the siege of Quebec, the capital of Canada. General Amherst, the commander-in-chief, was to march against Ticonderoga and Crown Point, and, after reducing these places, and establishing a naval force on Lake Champlain, was to penetrate, by the way of Richelieu River and the St. Lawrence, to Quebec, in order to form a junction with the forces of Wolfe. The third army, conducted by General Prideaux, and consisting chiefly of provincials, reinforced by a strong body of friendly Indians, assembled by the influence and placed under the special command of Sir William Johnson, was to attack the French fort near the Falls of Niagara, which commanded, in a manner, all the interior parts of North America, and was a key to the whole continent. As soon as this fort should be carried, Prideaux was to embark on Lake Ontario, descend the river St. Lawrence, make himself master of Montreal, and then unite his forces with those of Wolfe and Amherst. General Stanwix commanded a smaller detachment of troops, which was employed in reducing the French forts on the Ohio and scouring the banks of Lake Ontario. It was expected, that, if Prideaux's operations, in addition to their own immediate object, should not facilitate either of the two other capital undertakings, it would probably (as Niagara was the most important post which the enemy possessed in this quarter of America) induce the French to draw together all their troops which were stationed on the borders of the lakes in order to

attempt its relief, which would leave the forts on these lakes exposed; and this effect was actually produced.[1]

Eager as the Americans were to coöperate with the martial purposes of Britain, they found it difficult to keep pace with her profuse expenditure; and some reluctance was expressed by the people of New England to the additional levies required from the provincial governments for the operations of the present campaign. They had been assured, in the commencement of the preceding year, that a single campaign would doubtless be sufficient to terminate the war. The same assurance, now repeated, was no longer able to produce the same effect. They were already laboring under the weight of heavy burdens occasioned by their former exertions; the compensations decreed to them by the British parliament from time to time were greatly inferior to their actual expenses; and much disgust and discouragement had been created by the delays, certainly impolitic, though perhaps not easily avoided, by which the public officers in England retarded the apportionment and payment of the parliamentary grants. It was unwise of the British government, while pursuing a course of which the policy required to be justified by the hope of promoting at once the advantage and the grateful loyalty of the Americans, to suffer any thing to be done which could diminish their sense of the obligation. Britain would, perhaps, have adopted a wiser and more magnanimous course, if she had arrogated to herself the whole conduct, expense, and honor of the war. By the course which she actually pursued, she trained many of the colonists to military exercises, and familiarized them with the idea of a contest with one of the most powerful empires in Europe; she relieved them all from the dangers of a French vicinity; and she disgusted them by the scanty and dilatory compensation by which she repaid their exertions. Connecticut, with some difficulty, was induced to refurnish her last year's contingent of five thousand men. In the records of this colony we find for the first time the name of Israel Putnam, one of the most heroic and determined patriots in America, as the colonel of one of the Connecticut regiments. Massachusetts at first declined to raise more than five thousand men; but at length, in compliance with the instances of General Amherst, who was much respected by the colonists, consented to furnish an additional force of fifteen hundred.[2] New Hampshire, however, surpassed its exertions of the preceding year, and raised a thousand men.[3]

Early in the spring, Amherst transferred his head-quarters from New York to Albany, where his troops, amounting to twelve thousand men,

[1] "By so many different attacks," says Trumbull, "it was designed, as far as possible, to divide and distract the enemy, and to prevent their making an effectual defence at any place." — "A plan was pursued," says Minot, "to assail the French in America in every direction, and, by a connection of all the parts, to transfuse throughout the whole system the effect of the success which could not well fail to happen in some quarter." I pretend to no better judgment of the merit of military plans than a civilian may presume to form; but have no hesitation in expressing my concurrence with the opinion of Smollett (a far superior judge in such matters), that the plan of this campaign was a great deal too arduous and multifarious. Though crowned in every part with partial success, it miscarried in some capital points; and without the heroic efforts and astonishing success of Wolfe, the actual campaign would have been regarded as a failure. Polybius exhorts his readers to make allowance for the influence of "fortune and accident in all human affairs, and especially in those that relate to war." One of the most successful commanders in the world, with a grandeur of sentiment which showed that his genius was superior to his fortune, chose to be designated by the title of *Sylla the Fortunate*. "*In rebus bellicis*," says Tacitus, "*maxime dominatur fortuna*."

[2] See Note XXIII., at the end of the volume.

[3] *Annual Register for* 1759. Smollett. Minot. Trumbull. Wynne. Belknap.

were assembled in the end of May; yet the summer was far advanced before the state of his preparations enabled him to cross Lake George; and it was not till the close of July, that he reached Ticonderoga. At first the enemy seemed determined to defend this fortress, and Colonel Townsend, a brave and accomplished English officer, who advanced to reconnoitre it, was killed by a cannon-ball. But perceiving the determined yet cautious resolution, and the overwhelming force, with which Amherst was preparing to undertake the siege, and having received strict orders to retreat from post to post towards the centre of operations at Quebec, rather than incur the risk of being made prisoners, the garrison, a few days after, dismantled a part of the fortifications, and, evacuating Ticonderoga during the night, retired to Crown Point. Amherst, directly occupying the important post thus abandoned, which effectually covered the frontiers of New York and secured himself a safe retreat, caused the works to be repaired and allotted a strong garrison for its defence. Thence advancing to Crown Point, with a cautious and guarded circumspection which the event showed to have been unnecessary, but which he was induced to observe by remembering how fatal a confident security had proved to other British commanders in this quarter of the world, he took possession of this fortress with the same facility which attended his first acquisition, in consequence of a farther retrogression of the enemy, who retired from his approach and intrenched themselves in a fort at Isle-aux-Noix, on the northern extremity of Lake Champlain. At this place the French, as he was informed, had collected three thousand five hundred men, with a numerous train of artillery, and possessed the additional resource of four large armed vessels on the lake. Amherst exerted the utmost activity to create a naval force, without which it was impossible for him to attack the enemy's position; and with a sloop and a radeau, which were built with great despatch, he succeeded in destroying two of their vessels,—an achievement, in which the bold, adventurous spirit of Putnam was conspicuously displayed; but a succession of storms and the advanced season of the year compelled him reluctantly to postpone the farther prosecution of his scheme of operations. He established his troops in winter quarters at Crown Point, in the end of October, and confined his attention to strengthening the works of this fortress and of Ticonderoga. Thus the first of the three simultaneous expeditions embraced in the plan of this year's campaign, though attended with successful and important consequences, failed to produce the full result which had been anticipated by its projectors. Amherst, so far from being able to penetrate into Canada and form a junction with Wolfe, was unable to maintain the slightest communication with him; and only by a letter from Montcalm, in relation to an exchange of prisoners, obtained information that Wolfe was besieging Quebec. With the army which undertook the siege of Niagara, indeed, his communication was uninterrupted; and intelligence of its success had reached him before he advanced from Ticonderoga against Crown Point.

While Amherst's army was thus employed, General Prideaux, with his European, American, and Indian troops, embarking on Lake Ontario, advanced without loss or opposition to the fortress at Niagara, which he reached about the middle of July, and promptly invested on all sides. He was conducting his approaches with great vigor, when, on the twentieth of the month, during a visit he made to the trenches, he lost his life by the unfortunate bursting of a cohorn. Amherst was no sooner informed of this acci-

dent, than he detached General Gage from Ticonderoga to assume the command of Prideaux's army; but it devolved, in the mean time, upon Sir William Johnson, who exercised it with a success that added a new laurel to the honors which already adorned his name. The enemy, alarmed with the apprehension of losing a post of such importance, resolved to make an effort for its relief. From their forts of Detroit, Venango, and Presque Isle, they drew together a force of twelve hundred men, which, with a troop of Indian auxiliaries, were detached under the command of an officer named D'Aubry, with the purpose of raising the siege or reinforcing the garrison of Niagara. Johnson, who had been pushing the siege even more vigorously than his predecessor, learning the design of the French to relieve the garrison, made instant preparation to intercept it. As they approached, he ordered his light infantry, supported by a body of grenadiers and other regulars, to occupy the road from Niagara Falls to the fortress, by which the enemy were advancing, and covered his flanks with numerous troops of his Indian allies. At the same time, he posted a strong detachment of men in his trenches, to prevent any sally from the garrison during the approaching engagement. About nine in the morning [July 24], the two armies being in sight of each other, the Indians attached to the English, advancing, proposed a conference with their countrymen who served under the French banners; but the proposition was declined. The French Indians having raised the fierce, wild yell called the war-whoop, which by this time had lost its appalling effect on the British soldiers, the action began by an impetuous attack from the enemy; and while the neighbouring cataract of Niagara pealed forth to inattentive ears its everlasting *voice of many waters*, the roar of artillery, the shrieks of the Indians, and all the martial clang and dreadful revelry of a field of battle, mingled in wild chorus with the majestic music of nature. The French conducted their attack with the utmost courage and spirit, but were encountered with such firm, deliberate valor in front by the British regulars and provincials, and so severely galled on their flanks by the Indians, that in less than an hour their army was completely routed, their general with all his officers taken prisoners, and the fugitives from the field pursued with great slaughter for many miles through the woods. This was the second victory gained in the course of the present war by Sir William Johnson, a man who had received no military education, and whose fitness for command was derived solely from natural courage and sagacity.[1] Both his victories were signalized by the capture of the enemy's commanders. On the morning after the battle, Johnson sent an officer to communicate the result of it to the commandant of the garrison at Fort Niagara, and recommend an immediate surrender before more blood was shed, and while it was yet in his power to restrain the barbarity of the Indians; and the commandant, having ascertained the truth of the tidings, capitulated without farther delay. The garrison, consisting of between six and seven hundred effective men, marched out with the honors of war, and were conveyed prisoners to New York. They were

[1] "The war in general was distinguished by the singular success of Sir William Johnson and the celebrated Lord Clive, two self-taught generals, who, by a series of shining actions, have demonstrated that uninstructed genius can, by its own internal light and efficacy, rival, if not eclipse, the acquired advantages of discipline and experience." Smollett. In all the conflicts between the two rival European races, in America, the French displayed the livelier and more impetuous bravery; the British the more sustained fortitude and determination. "Speed," says Tacitus, "borders upon panic and timidity; slow movements are more akin to steady valor."

allowed to retain their baggage, and, by proper escort, were protected from the ferocity and rapacity of the Indians. Though eleven hundred of these savages (chiefly of the confederacy of the Six Nations) followed Johnson to Niagara, so effectually did he restrain them, that not an incident occurred to rival or retaliate the scenes at Oswego and Fort William Henry. The women, of whom a considerable number were found at Fort Niagara, were sent, at their own request, with their children to Montreal; and the sick and wounded, who could not sustain the fatigue of removal, were treated with humane attention. Although the army by which this success was achieved, whether from ignorance of the result of Wolfe's enterprise, or from some other cause more easily conjectured than ascertained, made no attempt to pursue the ulterior objects which had been assigned to its sphere of operation, and so far failed to fulfil its expected share of the campaign; yet the actual result of its exertions was gratifying and important in no ordinary degree. The reduction of Niagara effectually interrupted the communication, so much dreaded by the English, between Canada and Louisiana; and by this blow, one of the grand designs of the French, which had long threatened to produce war, and which finally contributed to provoke the present contest, was completely defeated.[1]

General Wolfe, meanwhile, was engaged in that capital enterprise of the campaign which aimed at the reduction of Quebec. The army which he conducted, amounting to eight thousand men, having embarked at Louisburg, under convoy of an English squadron commanded by Admirals Saunders and Holmes, after a successful voyage, disembarked, in the end of June, on the Isle of Orleans, a large, fertile island surrounded by the waters of the St. Lawrence, situated a little below Quebec, well cultivated, producing plenty of grain, and abounding with inhabitants, villages, and plantations. Soon after his landing, Wolfe distributed a manifesto among the French colonists, acquainting them that the king, his master, justly exasperated against the French monarch, had equipped a powerful armament in order to humble his pride, and was determined to reduce the most considerable settlements of France in America. He declared that it was not against industrious peasants and their families, nor against the ministers of religion, that he desired or intended to make war; on the contrary, he lamented the misfortunes to which they were exposed by the quarrel; he offered them his protection, and promised to maintain them in their temporal possessions, as well as in the free exercise of their religion, provided they would remain quiet, and abstain from participation in the controversy between the two crowns. The English, he proclaimed, were masters of the river St. Lawrence, and could thus intercept all succours from France; and they had, besides, the prospect of a speedy reinforcement from the army which General Amherst was conducting to form a junction with them. The line of conduct which the Canadians ought to pursue, he affirmed, was neither difficult nor doubtful; since the utmost exertion of their valor must be useless, and could serve only to deprive them of the advantages which they might reap from their neutrality. He protested that the cruelties already exercised by the French upon the subjects of Great Britain in America would sanction the most severe reprisals; but that Britons were too generous to follow such barbarous example. While he tendered to the Canadians the blessings of peace amidst the horrors of war, and left them

[1] See Note XXIV., at the end of the volume.

by their own conduct to determine their own fate, he expressed his hope that the world would do him justice, and acquit him of blame, should the objects of his solicitude, by rejecting these favorable terms, oblige him to have recourse to measures of violence and severity. Having expatiated on the strength and power of Britain, whose indignation they might provoke, he urged them to recognize the generosity with which she now held forth the hand of humanity, and tendered to them forbearance and protection, at the very time when France, by her weakness, was compelled to abandon them. This proclamation produced no immediate effect; nor, indeed, did the Canadians place much dependence on the assurances of a people whom their priests industriously represented to them as the fiercest and most faithless enemy upon earth. Possessed with these notions, they disregarded the offered protection of Wolfe, and, abandoning their habitations, joined the scalping parties of the Indians who skulked among the woods, and butchered with the most inhuman barbarity all the English stragglers they could surprise. Wolfe, in a letter to Montcalm, remonstrated against these atrocities as contrary to the rules of war between civilized nations, and dishonorable to the service of France. But either the authority of Montcalm was not sufficient, or it was not exerted with sufficient energy, to bridle the ferocity of the savages; who continued to scalp and butcher with such increase of appetite for blood and revenge, that Wolfe, in the hope of intimidating the enemy into a cessation of this style of hostility, judged it expedient to connive at some retaliatory outrages, from which the nobleness of his disposition would otherwise have revolted with abhorrence.

From his position in the Isle of Orleans, the English commander had a distinct view of the danger and difficulty by which his enterprise was obstructed. Quebec is chiefly built on a steep rock on the northern bank of the St. Lawrence, and additionally defended by the river St. Charles, which, flowing past it on the east, unites with the St. Lawrence immediately below the town, and consequently incloses it in a peninsular locality. Besides its natural barriers, the city was tolerably fortified by art, secured with a numerous garrison, and plentifully supplied with provisions and ammunition. In the St. Charles, whose channel is rough, and whose borders are intersected with ravines, there were several armed vessels and floating batteries; and a boom was drawn across its mouth. On the eastern bank of this stream, a formidable body of French troops, strongly intrenched, extended their encampment along the shore of Beaufort to the falls of the river Montmorency, having their rear covered by an impenetrable forest. At the head of this army was the skilful, experienced, and intrepid Montcalm, the ablest commander that France had employed in America since the death of Count Frontignac, and who, though possessed of forces superior in number to the invaders, prudently determined to stand on the defensive, and mainly depend on the natural strength of the country, which, indeed, appeared almost insurmountable. He had lately reinforced his troops with five battalions embodied from the flower of the colonial population; he had trained to arms all the neighbouring inhabitants, and collected around him a numerous band of the most ancient and attached Indian allies of France. To undertake the siege of Quebec, against such opposing force, was not only a deviation from the established maxims of war, but a rash and romantic enterprise. But great actions are commonly transgressions of ordinary rules; and Wolfe, though fully awake to the hazard and

difficulty of the achievement, was not to be deterred from attempting it. He knew that he should always have it in his power to retreat, in case of emergency, while the British squadron maintained its station in the river; he cherished the hope of being joined by Amherst; and, above all, though his body, yet in the bloom of manhood, was oppressed and consumed by a painful, lingering, mortal malady, his mind was burning with the resistless fever of renown, and his genius supported by the force of collected judgment and determined will. His ardor was partaken and his efforts ably seconded by many gallant officers who served under him, and particularly by the three brigadier-generals, Monckton, Townsend, and Murray, men of patrician rank and in the prime of life, whom neither affluent fortune nor the choicest domestic felicity could restrain from chasing glory with severe delight amidst the dangers and hardships of war. The safety of the fleet, on whose coöperation he relied, was twice menaced,—first, by a violent storm, which, however, it happily surmounted with little damage; and afterwards by a number of fire-ships, which the French sent down the river, but which, by the skill and vigilance of Admiral Saunders, were all intercepted, towed ashore, and rendered harmless.

Resolved to attempt whatever was practicable for the reduction of Quebec, Wolfe took possession, after a successful skirmish, of Point Levi, on the southern bank of the St. Lawrence, and there erected batteries against the town; but his fire from this position, though it destroyed many houses, made little impression upon the works, which were too strong and too remote to be essentially affected by it, and, at the same time, too elevated to be reached by a cannonade from the ships of war. Perceiving that his artillery could not be efficiently exerted, except from batteries constructed on the opposite side of the St. Lawrence, Wolfe soon decided on more daring and impetuous measures. The northern shore of the St. Lawrence, to a considerable extent above Quebec, is so rocky and precipitous, as to render a landing, in the face of an enemy, impracticable. An offensive attempt below the town, though less imprudent, was confronted by formidable obstructions. Even if the river Montmorency were passed, and the French driven from their intrenchments, the St. Charles must still present a new and less superable barrier against the assailants. Wolfe, acquainted with every obstacle, but heroically observing that "a victorious army finds no difficulties," resolved to pass the Montmorency and bring Montcalm to an engagement. For this purpose, thirteen companies of English grenadiers and a part of the second battalion of royal Americans were landed at the mouth of that river, while two divisions, under Generals Townsend and Murray, prepared to cross it by a ford which was discovered farther up the stream. Wolfe's plan was to attack, in the first instance, a redoubt close to the water's edge, and apparently beyond reach of shot from the enemy's intrenchments, in the hope that the French, by attempting to support that fortification, would enable him to bring on a general engagement; or that, if they should submit to the loss of the redoubt, he could thence take an accurate survey of their position, and regulate with advantage his subsequent operations. On the approach of the British troops, the redoubt was evacuated; and Wolfe, observing some confusion in the French camp, instantly changed his original plan, and determined to attack the hostile intrenchments without farther delay. Townsend and Murray were now commanded to hold their divisions in readiness for fording the river, and the

grenadiers and royal Americans were directed to form on the beach, and await there the reinforcement which was requisite to sustain their exertions; but, flushed with ardor and negligent of support, these troops made a precipitate charge upon the enemy's intrenchments, where they were received with so steady and sharp a fire from the French musketry, that they were presently thrown into disorder, and compelled to take refuge in the abandoned redoubt. Here it proved, unexpectedly, that they were still exposed to an effective fire from the enemy, and several brave officers, exposing their persons in attempting to reform and rally the troops, were killed. A thunder-storm, which now broke out, contributed to baffle the efforts of the British, without depressing the spirit of the French, who continued to fire, not only upon the troops in the redoubt, but on those who were lying wounded and disabled on the field, near their own intrenchments.[1] The English general, finding that his plan of attack was completely disconcerted, ordered his troops to repass the river and return to the Isle of Orleans. Besides the mortifying check which he had received, he lost, in this rash, ill-considered attempt, nearly five hundred of the bravest men in his army.

Some experience, however, though dearly bought, had been gained; and Wolfe — now assured of the impracticability of approaching Quebec on the side of the Montmorency, while Montcalm retained his station, which he seemed determined to do, till, from the advance of the season, the elements should lend their aid in destroying the invaders — detached General Murray, with twelve hundred men in transports, to coöperate with Admiral Holmes above the town in an attempt upon the French shipping, and to distract the enemy by descents on the banks of the river. [August 25.] After twice endeavouring without success to land on the northern shore, Murray, by a sudden descent which he accomplished at Chambaud, gained the opportunity of destroying a valuable magazine, filled with clothing, arms, ammunition, and provisions; but the French ships were secured in such a manner as to defy the approach either of the fleet or the army. On his return to the British camp, he brought the consolatory intelligence, obtained from his prisoners, that Fort Niagara was taken; that Ticonderoga and Crown Point had been occupied without resistance; and that General Amherst was making preparations to attack the enemy at Isle-aux-Noix. This intelligence, though in itself grateful, afforded no prospect of speedy assistance, and, indeed, proclaimed the failure of Amherst in seasonably executing the plan of coöperation concerted between the two armies. Nothing, however, could shake the resolution of Wolfe, or induce him to abandon the enterprise which he had commenced. Instead of being disheartened, he was roused to additional energy of purpose and effort by the conviction that success now depended exclusively on himself and his present force, and that it had become absolutely essential to his reputation, already wounded and endangered by the disaster at Montmorency. In a council of his principal officers, assembled at this critical juncture, it was resolved to transfer the scene of operations to the banks of the St. Lawrence above the town. [September 3.] The camp at the Isle of Orleans was consequently abandoned; and the whole army having embarked on board the fleet, a part of it was landed at Point Levi, and a part at a spot farther up the river. Admiral Holmes, meanwhile, for several days successively, manœuvred with his fleet

[1] When General Townsend, in the sequel, expostulated with the French officers on this inhumanity, they declared that the fire did not proceed from the regulars, but from the Canadians and the savages, whom it was impossible to restrain by discipline.

in a manner calculated to engage the attention of the enemy on the northern shore, and draw their observation as far as possible from the city. These movements had no other effect than to induce Montcalm to detach fifteen hundred men, under the command of Bougainville, one of his officers, from the main camp, to watch the motions of the English fleet and army, and prevent a landing from being accomplished.

Wolfe was now confined to bed by a severe fit of the disease under which he labored, aggravated by incessant fatigue and by the anxiety inseparable from a combination of difficulties sufficient to have appalled the stoutest courage and perplexed the most resolute and intelligent commander. In this situation, his three brigadier-generals, whom he invited to concert some plan of operations, projected and proposed to him a daring enterprise, of which the immediate object was to gain possession of the lofty eminences beyond Quebec, where the enemy's fortifications were comparatively slight. It was proposed to land the troops by night under the *Heights of Abraham*, at a small distance from the city, and to scale the summit of these heights before daybreak. This attempt manifestly involved extreme difficulty and hazard. The stream was rapid, the shore shelving, the bank of the river lined with French sentinels, the landing-place so narrow as easily to be missed in the dark, and the cliff which must afterwards be surmounted so steep that it was difficult to ascend it even in open day and without opposition. Should the design be promulgated by a spy or deserter, or suspected by the enemy; should the disembarkation be disordered, through the darkness of the night, or the obstructions of the shore; the landing-place be mistaken, or but one sentinel alarmed,—the Heights of Abraham would instantly be covered with such numbers of troops as would render the attempt abortive and defeat inevitable. Though these circumstances of danger could not escape the penetration of Wolfe, yet he hesitated not a moment to embrace a project so congenial to his ardent and enterprising disposition, as well as to the hazardous and embarrassing predicament in which he was placed, and from which only some brilliant and soaring effort could extricate him to his own and his country's satisfaction. He reposed a gallant confidence in the very magnitude and peril of his attempt; and fortune extended her proverbial favor to the brave. His active powers revived with the near prospect of decisive action; he soon recovered his health so far as to be able to conduct in person the enterprise on which he was resolved to stake his fame; and in the execution of it, displayed a force of judgment, and a deliberate valor and intrepidity, that rivalled and vindicated the heroism of its conception.

The necessary orders having been communicated, and the preparatory arrangements completed, the whole fleet, upon the 12th of September, moved up the river several leagues above the spot allotted for the assault, and at various intervening places made demonstrations of an intention of landing the troops; as if the movement had been merely experimental, and no decisive purpose of attack were yet entertained. But, an hour after midnight, the troops were embarked in flat-bottomed boats, which, aided by the tide and the stream, drifted with all possible caution down the river towards the intended place of disembarkation. They were obliged to keep close to the northern shore, in order to diminish the danger of passing the landing-place (which, nevertheless, very nearly happened) in the dark; and yet escaped the challenge of all the French sentinels except one or two,

whose vigilance, however, was baffled by the presence of mind and ingenuity with which a Scotch officer replied to the call, and described the force to which he belonged as a part of Bougainville's troops employed in exploring the state of the river and motions of the English. Silence was commanded under pain of death, which was, indeed, doubly menaced; and a death-like stillness was preserved in every boat, except the one which conveyed the commander-in-chief, where, in accents barely audible to the profound attention of his listening officers, Wolfe repeated that noble effusion of solemn thought and poetic genius, Gray's *Elegy in a Country Churchyard*, which had been recently published at London, and of which a copy was conveyed to him by the last packet from England. When he had finished his recitation, he added, in a tone still guardedly low, but earnest and emphatic, — "Now, Gentlemen, I would rather be the author of that poem, than take Quebec":[1] — perhaps the noblest tribute ever paid by arms to letters, since that heroic era when hostile fury and havoc were remedied or intercepted by respect for the genius of Aristotle and for the poetry of Pindar and Euripides. About an hour before daybreak, a landing was effected. Wolfe was one of the first who leaped ashore; and when he beheld the precipitous height whose ascent still remained to crown the arduous enterprise thus far advanced in safety through the jaws of fate, he coolly observed to an officer near him, — "I doubt if you will get up; but you must do what you can." A detachment of Scotch Highlanders and of light infantry, commanded by Colonel Howe (brother of the nobleman who perished at Ticonderoga) led the way up the dangerous cliff, which was ascended by the aid of the rugged projection of the rocks and the branches of some bushes and plants that protruded from their crevices. The rest of the troops, emulating this gallant and skilful example, followed their comrades up the narrow path; and by break of day, the whole army reached the summit. [September 13.]

When Montcalm received intelligence that the British force, which he supposed wandering on the river, had sprung up like a mine on the summit of the Heights of Abraham, he could not at first credit the full import of the tidings. Accounting it impossible that a whole army had ascended such a rugged and abrupt precipice, he concluded that the demonstration was merely a feint, undertaken by a small detachment, in order to induce him to abandon the position he had hitherto maintained. Convinced, however, by farther observation, of his mistake, he conceived that an engagement could no longer be avoided; and instantly quitting his camp at Montmorency, crossed the river St. Charles, with the purpose of attacking the English army. In thus consenting to give battle, Montcalm was rather confounded by the genius and daring than overruled by the actual success and position of his adversary. Had he retired into Quebec, he might, especially at such an advanced period of the year, and with so numerous a garrison, have securely defied a siege. Wolfe, observing the movement of the enemy, began to form his own line, which consisted of six battalions and the Louisburg grenadiers. The right wing was commanded by Monckton; the

[1] This anecdote was related by the late celebrated John Robison, Professor of Natural Philosophy in the University of Edinburgh, who, in his youth, was a midshipman in the British navy, and was in the same boat with Wolfe. His son, my kinsman, Sir John Robison, communicated it to me, and it has since been recorded in the *Transactions of the Royal Society of Edinburgh*. "The paths of glory lead but to the grave" is one of the lines which Wolfe must have recited, as he strikingly exemplified its application.

left by Murray; the right flank was covered by the Louisburg grenadiers; and the rear and left by Howe's light infantry, which had shortly before achieved the easy conquest of a four-gun battery. As the form in which the French advanced indicated the purpose of outflanking the left of the English army, Townsend was sent to this part of the line, with the regiment of Amherst and the two battalions of royal Americans, which were formed in such disposition as to present a double front to the enemy. One regiment, drawn up in eight divisions, with large intervals, formed the English body of reserve. Montcalm's dispositions for the attack were not less skilful and judicious. The right and left wings of his army were composed almost equally of European and of colonial troops; the centre consisted of a column formed of two battalions of regulars. Fifteen hundred Indians and Canadians, expert and deadly marksmen, advancing in front, and screened by adjoining thickets, began the battle. Their irregular fire proved fatal to many officers, whom they preferably aimed at; but it was soon silenced by the steady fire of the British. Both armies were destitute of artillery, except two small pieces on the side of the French, and a single gun which the English seamen contrived to hoist up from the landing-place, and which they employed during the action with considerable effect.

A strong and cheering presentiment of victory was, doubtless, entertained by troops who had already exerted so much valor, and vanquished so many obstacles, in order to meet the enemy on a fair field of battle. Their leader had courted Fortune not with languid aspiration, but with confident pursuit; while their enemy's studious precautions against her possible hostility announced little reliance on her probable favor. About nine in the morning, the main body of the French advanced vigorously to the charge, and the conflict soon became general. Montcalm having chosen for his own station the left of the French army, and Wolfe, for his, the right of the English, the two commanders directly confronted each other in the quarter where arose the hottest encounter of this memorable day. The English troops reserved their fire till the French were within forty yards of their line; and then, by a terrible discharge, spread havoc among the adverse ranks. Their fire was continued with a vigor and deliberation which effectually checked the advance and visibly abated the audacity of the French. Wolfe, who, early in the action, was wounded in the wrist, betraying no symptom of pain, wrapped a handkerchief round his arm, and continued to direct and animate his troops. Soon after, he received a shot in the groin; but, concealing the wound, he was leading his grenadiers to the charge, when a third ball pierced his breast, and brought him to the ground. His troops, incensed rather than disconcerted by the fall of their general, continued the action, with unabated vigor, under Monckton, on whom the command now devolved, but who was soon obliged, by a dangerous wound, to resign it to Townsend. Montcalm, about the same time, while animating the fight, in front of his battalion, was pierced with a mortal wound; and General Senezergus also, the second in command on the same side, shortly after fell. While the fall of Wolfe seemed to impart a higher temper to the courage of the English, and infused a spirit in their ranks that rendered them superior to almost any opposing force, the loss of Montcalm produced a contrary and depressing effect on the French. The British right wing now pressed on with fixed bayonets, determined on vengeance and victory. General Murray, at the same critical instant, advancing swiftly with the

troops under his direction, broke the centre of the French army; and their confusion was completed by a charge of the Highlanders, who, drawing their broadswords, rushed upon them with resistless fury, and drove them, with great slaughter, partly into Quebec, and partly over the St. Charles. On the left of the British position, the combat was less violent and sanguinary; but here, also, the attack of the French was repulsed, and their attempt to outflank the British defeated. At this juncture, Bougainville, with a body of two thousand fresh troops, approached the rear of the victorious English; but observing the complete rout and dispersion of Montcalm's forces, he did not venture to attempt a renewal of the action. The victory was decisive. About a thousand of the French were made prisoners, and nearly an equal number fell in the battle and the pursuit; of the remainder, the greater number, unable to gain the shelter of Quebec, retired first to Point-au-Tremble, and afterwards to Trois Rivières and Montreal. The loss of the English, both in killed and wounded, was less than six hundred men.

But the fate of Wolfe was deeply and universally deplored. After his last wound, finding himself unable to stand, he leaned upon the shoulder of a lieutenant, who sat down in order to support him. This officer, seeing the French give way, exclaimed, "They run! they run!" "Who run?" cried Wolfe, with eagerness; for his glazing eye could no longer discern the fortune of the day. Being informed that it was the enemy, he replied with animation, "Then I die happy!"—and almost instantly after expired *in the blaze of his fame.*[1] Intensely studious, and yet promptly and vigorously active; heroically brave and determined, adventurous and persevering; of a temper lively and even impetuous, yet never reproached as violent or irascible; generous, indulgent, courteous, and humane,—Wolfe was the pattern of his officers and the idol of his soldiers. The force and compass of his genius enabled him practically to distinguish, what inferior minds never discover at all, the difference between great difficulties and impossibilities; and being undiscouraged by what was merely, however mightily, difficult, he undertook and achieved what others would have accounted and found to be impossible.[2] His life (as was said of Sir Philip Sidney) was, indeed, *poetry in action.* He was, for a time, the favorite hero of England

[1] "Thou strik'st the young hero, a glorious mark!
He falls in the blaze of his fame."

If the recollection of any individual hero inspired this glowing expression of the poet Burns, it was probably Wolfe. From the period of his death till the time when Burns wrote, no British officer had fallen in so remarkable a manner. With him, indeed, "Victory smiled on life's last ebbing sands." It was, perhaps, also from Wolfe's heroic and successful daring that Burns derived the bold sentiment, that

"Wha does the utmost that he can
Will whyles do mair."

Wolfe deserved every tribute from the Muse, to whom he rendered one of the most striking instances of homage that have ever been recorded. He had not yet attained the age of thirty-three, when he fell in the arms of victory. The poet Wordsworth makes a beautiful allusion to *the plain,*—

"Where breathed the gale that caught Wolfe's happiest sigh."

Thomas Paine first distinguished himself by a poetical effusion on the death of Wolfe; Goldsmith celebrated Wolfe's achievement in some verses of little merit, entitled, *Stanzas on the Taking of Quebec.*

[2] The conduct of Wolfe afforded, if ever human conduct did, an illustration of Shakspeare's remark, that

"Things out of hope are compassed oft with vent'ring,"—

and of this maxim of Rochefoucault:—"Rien n'est impossible: il y a des voies qui conduisent à toutes choses; et si nous avions assez de volonté, nous aurions toujours assez de moyens." I know not if Wolfe had read Rochefoucault; he was more likely to be acquainted with the gallant English proverb, "Where there 's a will, there 's a way."

as well as of America; and monumental statues, erected at the public expense, attested his glory, both in the Old World and the New. A marble statue, in particular, was decreed to his memory by the assembly of Massachusetts. His rival, Montcalm, survived him but a few hours, and met his fate with the most undaunted and enduring courage. When he was informed that his wound was mortal, his reply was, "I am glad to hear it"; and when the near approach of death was announced to him, he added, "So much the better:—I shall not, then, live to see the surrender of Quebec." He was buried, by his own direction, in an excavation that had been produced by the explosion of a bomb. Unfortunately for his fame, the extent to which he is justly responsible for the treacherous cruelties of the Indian allies of his countrymen, on various occasions, still remains doubtful. It is pretended by some English writers, that Amherst had declared his purpose of treating Montcalm, if he should happen to take him alive, not as an honorable warrior, but as a bandit or robber. But if such sentiments were ever entertained, they were erased from the minds of victorious enemies by the heroical circumstances of Montcalm's death, and the remembrance of his talent and intrepidity,—merits, which a wise regard to his own fame, and even more generous sentiment, must ever prompt a conqueror to recognize, and perhaps exaggerate, in a vanquished foe; and when, some time after, the French government desired leave to erect a monument to his memory in Canada, the request was granted by the English minister, Pitt, in terms expressive of a high admiration of Montcalm's character. Monckton recovered of his wound at New York. It was unfortunate, perhaps, for the fame of all the officers who distinguished themselves on either side in these hostilities, that the European states to which they respectively belonged were very soon tempted to regret the effects of the prowess they had exerted in America.

General Townsend, who now commanded the army of Wolfe, proceeded to fortify his camp, and to construct lines and take other necessary measures for the investment of Quebec; but his operations, which might otherwise have been greatly protracted, if not entirely defeated, were happily abridged by a proposition of the garrison within five days of the late victory to surrender the place to the English forces. [September 17.] The discomfiture of Montcalm's plan of defence, and the loss of this commander, whose active genius and despotic authority had rendered him not merely the leader of the French, but the main spring of all their counsels and conduct, seemed to have confounded the spirit and paralyzed the vigor of the garrison, whose early surrender excited general surprise, and was equally grateful to their enemies and mortifying to their countrymen. The terms of the capitulation were the more favorable for the besieged, as the enemy was assembling a large force in the rear of the British army; as the season had become wet, cold, and stormy, threatening the troops with sickness and the fleet with danger; and as a considerable advantage was to be gained from taking possession of the town while the walls were yet in a defensible condition. It was stipulated, that the inhabitants, during the war, should be protected in the free exercise of their religion; their future political destiny was left to be decided at the return of peace. This treaty occurred very seasonably for the British, who learned immediately after that the enemy's army had rallied and been reinforced beyond Cape Rouge by two regular battalions which General de Levi had conducted to their aid from Montreal;

and that Bougainville, with eight hundred men and a convoy of provisions, was prepared to throw himself into the town on the very day of its surrender. [September 18.] The capitulation was no sooner ratified, than the British forces took possession of Quebec, which, besides its garrison, contained a population of ten thousand persons. Next day, about a thousand prisoners were embarked on board of transports to be conveyed to Europe.

The capital of New France, thus reduced to the dominion of Great Britain, received a garrison of five thousand troops commanded by General Murray, whose security was farther promoted by the conduct which the French colonists in the neighbourhood now thought proper to adopt; for they repaired in great numbers to Quebec, and, delivering up their arms, pledged themselves by oath to observe a strictly passive neutrality during the continuance of the war. The British fleet, shortly after, took its departure from the St. Lawrence, carrying with it General Townsend, who returned to England.

The operations which had been intrusted to General Stanwix were attended with complete success. By his conduct and prudence, the British interest and empire were established so firmly, to all appearance, on the banks of the Ohio, that the emigrants from Virginia, Maryland, and Pennsylvania were very soon after enabled securely to resume and advantageously to extend the settlements in this quarter, from which the French had expelled them in the commencement of the war.[1]

Thus brilliantly ended the campaign of 1759. In England its results were hailed with the most enthusiastic triumph and applause. In America, though these sentiments were warmly and justly reciprocated, the public satisfaction was yet depressed by a prevalent apprehension that the recent victories would be attended with merely a transient advantage, and that the conquests of Britain would again be restored to France by the next treaty of peace. This notion (justified by many previous occurrences, as well as by calculations of the British policy to which we have already adverted) prevailed, besides, among many of the Indian tribes, and proved injurious to the British interest with this savage race, whose untamed ferocity did not render them altogether unsusceptible of politic impressions. About a month after the conquest of Quebec, two Indians, belonging to the confederacy of the Six Nations and attached to the English interest, repaired to Canada for the ostensible purpose of visiting a portion of their tribe which had been gained over to the cause of France and now inhabited the Canadian territory. The visitors endeavoured to persuade their ancient kinsmen to make a timely secession from the French, and to return to their original country; telling them, in Indian style, "that the English, formerly women, were now all turned into men, and were growing as thick in the country as the trees in the woods; that they had taken the French forts at Ohio, Ticonderoga, Louisburg, and Quebec, and would soon eat the remainder of the French in Canada together with all the Indians that adhered to them." But the French Indians answered, "Brothers, you are deceived; the English cannot eat up the French; their mouth is too little, their jaws too weak, and their teeth not sharp enough. Our father, Onontio (by this name they distinguished the governor of Canada), has told us, and we believe him, that the English, like a thief, have stolen Louisburg and Quebec from the great

[1] *Annual Register for* 1760 and 1762. Smollett. Wynne. Trumbull. Campbell. Holmes. Rogers's *American Biographical Dictionary*. Playfair's *Memoir of Professor Robison*.

king, whilst his back was turned and he was looking another way; but now that he has turned his face, and sees what the English have done, he is going into their country with a thousand great canoes and all his warriors; and he will take the little English king and pinch him, till he make him cry out and give back what he has stolen, as he did about ten summers ago; and this your eyes will soon see." This representation appears to have produced a considerable impression on the Indian race, and especially on the Six Nations,[1] who, recalling former instances in which British policy had been reproached by them as faithless and inconsistent, experienced an abatement of zeal in behalf of allies, who, they feared, might ultimately abandon them to the vengeance of their common enemy. The French industriously fomented in the minds of the savages every sentiment unfavorable towards Britain; and the Cherokee war, which broke out not many months after, rewarded the address and assiduity of their intrigues.

Both in the recent and the previous campaign, which had been distinguished by the revived lustre of the British arms, the provincial troops merited and obtained an ample share of the general praise. By the prudence and liberality of the English commanders, the invidious distinctions enjoined by the king were disregarded or relaxed; and in the field only a generous emulation prevailed between the regulars and the provincials. This emulation was strikingly evinced at Niagara, and contributed materially to the success of Sir William Johnson. Massachusetts, this year, in addition to her contingent of six thousand five hundred men (of whom two thousand five hundred served in garrison at Louisburg and Nova Scotia, several hundreds on board the king's ships, and the remainder along with Amherst's army), at the request of General Wolfe, raised three hundred more, and despatched them to Quebec, where they served as pioneers.[2]

The legislature of Massachusetts having passed a stamp act, in which newspapers were included, a petition was presented by the printers of the province against this impost, which was accordingly withdrawn, in consideration that newspapers were not only vehicles of knowledge, but instruments of liberty. In the records of the legislature of this as well as of the other American provinces, we find the pernicious instrumentality of lotteries frequently sanctioned and adopted for the collection of funds for purposes of public utility. The example of the parent state communicated this vile and demoralizing engine of finance to her colonies. Previous to the final rupture between Britain and America, the American colonists commonly purchased every year an eighth part of the tickets of the British state lottery.[3]

This year died Sir William Pepperell, who distinguished himself so highly as commander of the expedition by which Cape Breton was conquered in 1745. Pepperell and another individual of the same [illegible] were the only natives of New England on whom the British title of baronet was ever conferred. Sir John Yeamans and Sir William Johnson,[5] the

[1] *Annual Register for* 1759.

[2] Minot. Hutchinson.

[3] Holmes. *Annual Register for* 1769.

[4] William Pepperell, of Boston (probably a relative of the conqueror of Cape Breton), was created a baronet of Great Britain in the year 1774, two years before the revolt of America from the British empire. *Annual Register for* 1774.

[5] On the death of Sir William Johnson, in 1774, his title was inherited by his son, Sir John Johnson, who was born in America, and who, espousing the quarrel of Britain in the War of Independence, committed, at the head of a band of Indians, the most barbarous devastation of the American settlements. Dwight's *Travels*.

only other of the American colonists to whom the same titular dignity was extended, were natives of the parent state. Sir William Phips was the only American whose advancement to the inferior dignity of knighthood has been recorded.[1] So sparingly did Britain distribute among her colonial offspring those fanciful decorations which France had lavishly bestowed upon the Canadians, and successfully employed to nourish and sustain their prejudices in favor of royalty and aristocracy. If Britain (always supposing, though contrary to probability, that her policy was the result of consistent and prospective system) hoped to impress her American subjects with additional reverence for a parent state which was not only the fountain but the sole depositary of titulary honors, she failed in her design. If her purpose was to cherish among the colonists habits of industry and sobriety, she unquestionably succeeded; though at the expense of diminishing their esteem for some of her own most ancient and characteristic institutions. Generally trained to useful labor, and habituated to regard it as almost the sole, and certainly the worthiest and most accessible, path to distinction, the colonists entertained a jealousy of every system and principle that encroached on the respect or diminished the reward due to industrious pursuits. They regarded feudal titles as arrogant assumptions, under which the pride of favorite vassals aped the grandeur of their prince and cloaked the humiliation of their servitude. Some of the noblemen, whom the parent state deputed to administer royal prerogative or to exercise other conspicuous functions in America, were persons of worth and honor; but none of them justified his titular pretension to superiority over the rest of mankind by his personal achievements; and the majority excited the aversion and contempt of the colonists. The insolent pretensions and the sordid or insignificant characters of the inheritors of *proprietary rights* in America, together with the abortive attempt of the proprietaries of Carolina to introduce a subordinate species of titular nobility into this province, combined to give a keener edge to the general dislike of a hereditary tenure of honor and authority. There had, indeed, been always some individuals, and now there was a party, among the colonists, certainly not considerable in numbers, who longed for such an assimilation of the colonial institutions to those of the parent state, as might enable themselves to indulge the pride and partake the splendor and enrichment of the titles, trappings, and pensions of Europe, even at the expense of exalting the royal prerogative in America, and proportionally restricting and depressing the liberties of their countrymen.[2] This party, which, doubtless, included among its members some dexterous and unprincipled knaves, contained, perhaps, a larger admixture of men in whom a blind but honest zeal for British and monarchical power was combined with a sincere devotion to their own private interests, in various, and, to human eyes, inscrutable proportions. Jealous of popular rights, and exclaiming against the dangerous aim and tendency of popular sentiment in America, this party easily gained the ear and at least the partial confidence of the royal court; and probably conceived, as well as conveyed, an exaggerated idea of its own influence, from the occasional support which it received from wealthy colonists, who, though warmly attached to liberty and their country, overvalued the superior riches of Britain, dreaded change

[1] Sir Benjamin Thompson (better known by the title of Count Rumford) was a native of Massachusetts. But he did not receive his title of knighthood till after the revolt of America from Britain, when it was bestowed on him as the reward of his adherence to the parent state.

[2] Franklin's *Memoirs and Correspondence*. Holmes. Belknap.

and hazard, and believed, because they desired, the infallible efficacy of temperate and submissive demeanour in preserving the relations of friendship and the blessings of peace. The zealots of monarchical and republican principles — the one relying on British support, the other on their own superior numbers in America — were more disposed both by word and action to hurry their controversy to an extremity. The conduct of both was influenced at the present crisis by the state of public affairs, and the demeanour of the moderate party, which at once excited the ardor of the partisans of prerogative and dictated caution to the advocates of liberty. However disposed the British court or any portion of it might have been, at this period, to second the wishes of a party devoted to the interests of the crown, it was no easy matter to alter the long prevailing usages and established constitutions of the American provinces; in opposition, especially, to that strong current of republican sentiment and opinion by which all these provinces were pervaded, and of which, even at a crisis like the present, the most unfavorable for its manifestation, there broke forth many unequivocal symptoms.

The present contest between the French and English in America was signalized, from time to time, by various predatory inroads of the Indian allies of France upon the frontiers of Massachusetts and New Hampshire. In this, as in the previous war, the provincial annalists confess the forbearance and tenderness generally demonstrated by the savages for their captives, but no longer hesitate to determine whether such altered treatment was the offspring of policy or humanity. For it was found that the Indians were engaged to deliver all their prisoners alive into the hands of the French, who indemnified themselves for the subsidies which they paid to their savage allies, by the ransoms they exacted from the families and kinsmen of the captives.[1]

CHAPTER VI.

Progress of Hostilities in America. — Entire Conquest of Canada. — War with the Cherokees. — Affairs of Massachusetts. — Death of George the Second. — Conclusion of the Cherokee War. — Affairs of South Carolina. — Discontents in Massachusetts — and in North Carolina. — Peace of Paris. — Affairs of Virginia — Patrick Henry. — Indian War. — Affairs of Pennsylvania.

The inhabitants of North America had eagerly indulged the hope that the reduction of Quebec not only betokened, but actually imported, the entire conquest of Canada; but they were speedily undeceived; and, aroused by the spirited and nearly successful attempt of the French to retrieve this loss, they consented the more willingly to a renewed exertion of their resources for the purpose of securing and improving the victorious posture of their affairs. The New England levies this year [1760] were as numerous as they had ever been during the war; the Virginian levies (augmented by the emergency of a war with the Cherokees) amounted to two thousand men.

[1] Belknap. "Vendere cum possis captivum, occidere noli." Horace.

No sooner had the English fleet retired from the St. Lawrence, than Levi, who succeeded to Montcalm's command, resolved to attempt the recovery of Quebec. The land forces he possessed were more numerous than the army of Wolfe, by which the conquest of the place had been achieved, and he enjoyed the coöperation of some frigates, which afforded him the entire command of the river, as the English had imprudently withdrawn every one of their vessels, on the supposition that they could not be useful in winter. He had hoped that a sudden attack might enable him to take Quebec by surprise, during the winter; but, after some preparatory approaches which were repulsed, and a survey which convinced him that the outposts were better secured and the governor more active and alert than he had expected, he was induced to postpone his enterprise till the arrival of the spring. In the month of April, when the St. Lawrence afforded a navigation freed from ice, the artillery, military stores, and heavy baggage of the French were embarked at Montreal, and carried down the river under the protection of six frigates; and Levi himself, after a march of ten days, arrived with his army at Point-au-Tremble, within a few miles of Quebec. General Murray, to whom the preservation of the English conquest was intrusted, took prompt and skilful measures for its security; but his troops had suffered so much from the extreme cold of the winter and the want of vegetables and fresh provisions, that instead of five thousand, the original number of his garrison, he could now count on the services of no more than three thousand men. Impelled by overboiling courage, rather than guided by sound judgment, and relying more, perhaps, on the reputation than the strength of his army, he determined, with this once victorious and still valiant, though diminished force, to meet the enemy in the field, although their numbers amounted to more than twelve thousand; and, accordingly, marching out to the Heights of Abraham, he attempted to render this scene once more tributary to the glory of Britain, by an impetuous assault on the neighbouring position of the French at Sillery. [April 28, 1760.] But his attack was firmly sustained by the enemy, and, after a sharp encounter, finding himself outflanked, and in danger of being surrounded by superior numbers, he withdrew his troops from the action and retired into the city. In this conflict the British lost the greater part of their artillery and nearly a thousand men. The French, though their loss in killed and wounded was more than double that number, had nevertheless gained the victory, which their general lost no time in improving. On the evening of the day on which the battle took place, Levi opened trenches against the town; yet, in spite of all his efforts, it was not till the 11th of May that his batteries were so far advanced as to commence an effectual fire upon the garrison. But Murray had now, by indefatigable exertion, in which he was assisted with alacrity by his soldiers, completed some outworks, and planted so powerful an artillery on the ramparts, that his fire was far superior to that of the besiegers, and nearly silenced their batteries. Quebec, notwithstanding, would most probably have reverted to its former masters, if an armament which was despatched from France had not been outsailed by a British squadron, which succeeded in first gaining the entrance and the command of the St. Lawrence. The French frigates, which had descended from Montreal, were now attacked by the British ships, and, part of them having been destroyed, the rest betook themselves to a hasty retreat up the river. Levi instantly raised the siege, and, retiring

with a precipitation that obliged him to abandon the greater part of his baggage and artillery, reconducted his forces (with the exception of a party of Canadians and Indians who became disheartened and deserted him by the way) to Montreal. Here the Marquis de Vaudreuil, governor-general of Canada, had fixed his head-quarters, and determined to make his last stand in defence of the French colonial empire, — thus reduced, from the attitude of preponderance and conquest which it presented two years before, to the necessity of a defensive and desperate effort for its own preservation. For this purpose Vaudreuil called in all his detachments and collected around him the whole force of the colony. Though little chance of success remained to him, he preserved an intrepid countenance, and in all his dispositions displayed the firmness and foresight of an accomplished commander. To support the drooping courage of the Canadians and their Indian allies, he had even recourse to the artifice of circulating among them feigned intelligence of the successes of France in other quarters of the world, and of her approaching succour.

Amherst, in the mean time, was diligently engaged in concerting and prosecuting measures for the entire conquest of Canada. During the winter, he had made arrangements for bringing all the British forces from Quebec, Lake Champlain, and Lake Ontario, to join in a combined attack upon Montreal. Colonel Haviland, by his direction, sailing with a detachment from Crown Point, took possession of Isle-aux-Noix, which he found abandoned by the enemy, and thence proceeded towards Montreal; while Amherst, with his own division, consisting of about ten thousand regulars and provincials, left the frontiers of New York, and advanced to Oswego, where his force received the addition of a thousand Indians of the Six Nations, marching under the command of Sir William Johnson. Embarking with his entire army on Lake Ontario, he reduced the fort of Isle Royale, one of the most important posts which the French possessed on the river St. Lawrence; and thence, after a difficult and dangerous passage, conducted his troops to Montreal, where, on the very day of their arrival [September 6, 1760], they were met by the forces commanded by General Murray. In his progress up the river, Murray distributed proclamations among the Canadians inhabiting its southern shore, which produced such an effect that almost all the parishes in this quarter, as far as the river Sorel, declared their submission to Britain, and took the oath of neutrality; and Lord Rollo, meanwhile, advancing along the northern shore, disarmed all the inhabitants as far as Trois Rivières, which, though the capital of a large district, being merely an open village, was taken without resistance. By a happy concert in the execution of a well digested plan, the armies of Amherst and Murray, on the day after their own simultaneous arrival [September 7], were joined by the detachment confided to Colonel Haviland. Amherst had already made preparation for investing Montreal; but Vaudreuil, perceiving, from the strength of the combined armies, and the skilful dispositions of their commanders, that resistance must be ineffectual, hastened to demand a capitulation; and on the following day [September 8], Montreal, Detroit, and all the other places of strength within the government of Canada were surrendered to the British crown. After the capitulation, General Gage was appointed governor of Montreal, with a garrison of two thousand men; and Murray returned to Quebec, where his garrison was augmented to four thousand.

Thus fell the colonial empire of France on the continent of North America, — the victim of overweening ambition, and of the rage of a rival state, transported by insult and injury beyond the usual channel of its policy and the limits of the system it had hitherto pursued. On the south of the Mississippi, the French still possessed the infant colony of Louisiana; but this settlement, far from being powerful or formidable, was so thinly peopled and so ill-conditioned, that it could scarcely have preserved its existence, without the provisions of food and other supplies it obtained by a contraband trade with the British provinces.[1] The downfall of the French dominion was completed by the fate of the armament, which, as we have already remarked, was despatched this year from France for the assistance of Canada. The commander of this force, consisting of one frigate of thirty guns, two large store-ships, and nineteen smaller vessels, having ascertained before his arrival on the coast that a British squadron had already sailed up the St. Lawrence, took refuge in the Bay of Chaleurs, on the coast of Nova Scotia. Captain Byron, who commanded the British vessels stationed at Louisburg, receiving intelligence of the enemy's position, instantly sailed with five ships of war to the Bay of Chaleurs, and easily succeeded in destroying the hostile armament, as well as in dismantling two batteries which the French had erected on shore.[2]

During the progress of these decisive operations in the North, the inhabitants of the Southern States of America were infested with the calamity of an Indian war, occasioned partly by their own inconsiderate violence and cruelty, and partly by the address and intrigues of the French. The Cherokees, in conformity with subsisting treaties, had sent considerable parties of their warriors to assist the British in their expeditions against Fort Duquesne. In their return homewards through the back parts of Virginia, many of the Indian warriors, having lost their horses, made no scruple to supply the want from the herds of these animals which they found roaming in the woods; — regardless, and perhaps ignorant, of the rights they violated. The Virginians, to whom the horses belonged, resenting this injury, killed twelve or fourteen of the unsuspecting Indians, and made prisoners of several more. Incensed at such ungrateful usage from allies in defence of whose frontiers they had been so recently engaged, the Cherokees meditated revenge; and were inflamed in their vindictive purpose by the assurances of the French, that the English intended to kill every man of them, and to make slaves of their wives and children. The insidious counsels of the French being reinforced by a liberal subsidy of arms and ammunition, the Cherokees were tempted to court their own destruction by plunging into a war with the British, which they accordingly commenced by a furious and desolating incursion upon the frontiers of Virginia and the Carolinas. These three provinces combined for their common defence; a body of Virginian militia, under the command of Colonel Bird, and of the militia of North Carolina, commanded by Colonel Waddell, were despatched to unite themselves with a force, consisting partly of regulars and partly of militia, which Littleton, the governor of South Carolina, in the close of the preceding year, conducted into the country of the Cherokees, where, without further bloodshed, the quarrel was seemingly accommodated, and a

[1] Pitt, in a circular letter to the British provincial governments in the present year, indignantly remarked the subsistence of this contraband trade during the war, and directed that the severest measures should be employed to suppress it.

[2] *Annual Register for* 1760. Smollett. Wynne. Trumbull. Minot. Holmes.

treaty was concluded and guarantied by the delivery of twenty-four Indian hostages. A lasting peace might have ensued from this treaty but for the folly of Governor Littleton, who treated the Indian chiefs with the most insulting arrogance, and laughed at the wise remonstrances of Bull, the lieutenant-governor, on the impolicy of offending the self-respect of this proud race, and the danger and mischief of a quarrel with them. Early in the present year, the Cherokees, having waited only till the forces of Littleton were withdrawn and dispersed, renewed their hostile inroads more furiously than before, butchered a number of provincial traders who rashly ventured among them, and besieged Fort Prince George, with the hope of recovering their hostages who were confined there.[1] Their rage was increased by the fate which now befell these hostages, who, resisting the orders of the commander of the fort, that they should be put in irons, and killing one of the soldiers who were attempting so to confine them, were instantly assaulted and slain by his comrades. The warfare began to present so formidable an appearance, that an express was despatched from Carolina to General Amherst, to acquaint him with the public danger and implore immediate succour. A battalion of Highlanders and four companies of the royal Scots regiment were accordingly sent, under the command of Colonel Montgomery (afterwards Earl of Eglinton), for the relief of the southern provinces. Before the end of April, Montgomery landed his troops in Carolina, and encamped at Monk's Corner. A few weeks after his arrival, he marched to the Congarees, where he was joined by the whole reassembled forces which were engaged in the expedition of the preceding year. Advancing thence into the Cherokee country, he destroyed all the towns of the lower nation of the Cherokees, killed or made prisoners of a hundred of the enemy, and, marching to the relief of Fort Prince George, compelled its assailants to abandon the blockade they had closely maintained. Most of the Indian prisoners taken in this expedition were slain by the troops, who were transported with ungovernable rage by finding in the Indian villages the mangled bodies of several of their countrymen, whose appearance proclaimed the horrid tortures in which they had expired. Finding the savages still deaf to his proposals of accommodation, Montgomery marched forward through the *Dismal Swamp*, where he encountered many hardships and dangers, until he arrived within five miles of Etchoe, the central town and settlement of the Cherokees. Here he found himself at the entrance of a deep valley covered with bushes and intersected by a muddy stream flowing between steep clayey banks. Captain Morison, who commanded a company of rangers, was ordered to advance and scour the thicket; but had scarcely entered it, when he fell, with several of his men, by the fire which the Indians from this covert poured upon them. The light infantry and grenadiers now rushed into the thicket, and essayed to dislodge the invisible enemy; but the number of the Indians proved to be so great, their position so commanding and difficult of approach, and their resistance so valorous and obstinate, that it was necessary to bring the whole British force into action against them; and even when they gave way, they were not put to rout, but retired with undiminished show of resistance from one strong position to another. In this conflict,

[1] The inhabitants of North Carolina were so much incensed at the cruelty and treachery of the Indians, that a statute of their provincial assembly ordained, this year, that all Indian prisoners should become slaves to their captors, and that a premium should be paid to every colonist producing an Indian scalp.

which continued above an hour, twenty of the British were killed and seventy-six wounded. Sensible of the difficulty and hazard of farther pursuit, and averse to expose his wounded men to the vengeance of a savage enemy, Montgomery commanded a retreat, which was conducted with much regularity and precaution, to Fort Prince George. Accounting that his orders obliged him now to rejoin the main British army, he withdrew his regiment from Carolina, to the great disappointment and consternation of the inhabitants of this province, who plainly perceived that the Indians were more exasperated than weakened by the hostilities they had undergone.

To revenge the calamities of this invasion, and improve the success with which they had finally checked its progress, the Cherokees, assembling a considerable force, laid siege to Fort Loudoun, a small fortification situated near the confines of Virginia. This post, which was occupied by two hundred and fifty men under the command of Captain Demeré, was ill supplied with provisions, and precluded, by the remoteness of its situation (a hundred and fifty miles distant from Charleston) and the blockade of the enemy, from communication with the other British settlements and forces. The garrison, having sustained a long siege, and subsisted for some time on horseflesh, was at length reduced to such extremity as to be obliged to surrender the place by capitulation. The Indians, with the most plausible show of equity and moderation, declared that they desired nothing so much as a lasting peace and a fair and regulated trade with the English; and they engaged that the garrison should march out with their baggage, and be conducted by trusty guides to Virginia or Fort Prince George. But nothing was farther from their intention than the fulfilment of this treaty. The troops had marched scarcely fifteen miles from the evacuated fort, when they were deserted by their attendants, and surrounded by a numerous band of Indian warriors, who poured a heavy fire upon them from all sides, and sprang forward to the attack with their usual savage yell. Demeré and all the other officers,[1] together with twenty-five of the soldiers, were killed; the rest were made prisoners, and distributed among the different villages and settlements of the enemy; whence, after a miserable captivity, they were subsequently redeemed at a great expense by the province of South Carolina. Encouraged by their success at Fort Loudoun, the savages next undertook the siege of Fort Ninety-six, and other small fortifications; but retired precipitately, on the approach of a body of provincial troops. This campaign, on the whole, was calculated to raise the hopes of the Cherokees, who, at the present period, were capable of bringing three thousand warriors into the field.[2]

While the flames of Indian war thus raged in the southern parts of British America, the Northern States beheld with satisfaction the prospect of an entire deliverance from this calamity, — so fatal (from the style of savage warfare, and the desolation and revengeful rage which it created) to the virtue as well as the happiness of their people. The Indian inhabitants of the eastern parts of New England, who had always been dependent on the conduct and fortunes of the two rival European powers, gradually submitted to Britain as the ascendency of the French arms declined. Among these, the Penobscots, who had dwindled to a very insignificant tribe, in consequence of

[1] Except Captain Stuart, whom an Indian chief named *The Little Carpenter*, long attached to the English and opposed to the war, generously ransomed from his countrymen at the expense of all his substance, and afterwards conducted in safety to Virginia.

[2] Hewit. Williamson. *Annual Register for* 1760. Smollett. Trumbull. Holmes.

their adherence to France and their vicinity to Massachusetts, sent deputies in the commencement of this year to Boston, where a treaty of peace was concluded, by which they acknowledged themselves, without restriction or limitation, subjects of the British crown. They confessed their rebellion, and the consequent forfeiture of their lands; and accepted, as matter of grace, the privilege of hunting upon them, and using for tillage such portions as might be assigned to them by the provincial authorities. They engaged to dwell near Fort Pownall, a stronghold lately erected by the governor of Massachusetts; and to deliver up all future offenders of their tribe to be judged by the authorities and laws of this province.

Massachusetts now witnessed the departure of the last governor acceptable to her people whom she was ever to receive from the appointment of Britain. This was Pownall, who was now promoted to the richer presidency of South Carolina, and was succeeded in Massachusetts by Francis Bernard, formerly a proctor in the ecclesiastical courts of England, and latterly governor of New Jersey. Pownall had been at least as popular, and partly for the same reasons, as his predecessor, Shirley. The repute of each of these governors derived a lustre from the vigorous and successful enterprises against the French, by which their administrations were signalized. Shirley, attached to the cause of prerogative, was supported with peculiar zeal by the provincial party which entertained the same sentiments; and yet esteemed by the opponents of this party, who professed a preferable and jealous attachment to popular liberty, for the courtesy with which he treated their persons, and the generous respect which he demonstrated for their avowed views and principles. Pownall was equally, if not more, fortunate in a behaviour tempered by its varieties to the liking of both parties. Whether from mere disinterested sympathy with the sentiments of the popular party, or because he perceived the prevailing and progressive influence of these sentiments and their votaries in the province, and accounted that his own future advancement would depend, in a great measure, on the reputation he might acquire in Massachusetts, he espoused the principles and courted the friendship of those politicians by whom the interests of provincial liberty were most warmly cherished. Though perhaps in his official character he was less courteous towards his opponents than Shirley had been, he diminished the warmth of opposition with many of them by the kindred gayety of his manners in the social intercourse of private life; for, in general, the votaries of pleasure and dissipation were the friends of royal prerogative. The importance of his connections and influence in England favored his addresses to all parties; and while he associated familiarly with the politicians by whom the sentiments of the multitude were directed, and gained the general esteem by the liberal principles he professed, and the diligent attention he directed to the conduct of public business, and the frugal expenditure of public money, — he indulged a naturally jovial and sprightly disposition, amidst the more aristocratical circles of fashion and pleasure, with a freedom, which, in those days of remaining Puritan strictness, would have attracted from the generality a severe censure against a less popular character. But of the two provincial parties, the one winked at his manners, in consideration of his principles; while many of the other pardoned or forgot his principles, in sympathy with his gayety, and participation of his amusements. Happily for the peace of his administration, the engrossing concerns of the war tended to withdraw from view the great controversial

points respecting liberty and prerogative, by which former governors and the assembly were usually divided; and yet so keen were the attacks he experienced from Hutchinson, Oliver, and other leaders of the party attached to royal prerogative, that he is said to have ardently desired and heartily rejoiced at the termination of his command in Massachusetts. It could not have terminated at a period more propitious to his reputation; for all that Britain was fated to do, in order to render her authority and its administrators popular in America, had now been done. The most favorable interpretation of Pownall's motives is justified by the consideration of his subsequent conduct. From Massachusetts, he proceeded directly to England, and, gaining a seat in the House of Commons, never actually took possession of his command in Carolina; but, both as a senator in the British parliament, and a political writer (for he was the author of several valuable works [1]), warmly embraced and ably defended the cause of the colonies in their subsequent quarrel with Britain, — predicting, with accurate but unheeded discernment, the results which were progressively unfolded by the erring course of British policy. When he embarked for England [June 3, 1760], both houses of assembly attended him in a body to his barge, and graced his departure with every ceremonial expressive of public favor and respect.

Bernard, the successor of Pownall, commenced his administration under very favorable auspices. During his short possession of the government of New Jersey, he earned so fair a character, that the people of Massachusetts greeted his arrival with expressions of hope and esteem; and one of the earliest communications which he made to the assembly announced the gratification of the wishes they had so long and ardently cherished for the subjugation of the French dominion in Canada. Yet even on this interesting occasion, and at a crisis, too, when the subsequent policy of Britain with regard to the retention or cession of Canada excited the most anxious speculation and apprehension in America, an expression employed by the new governor produced a remarkable display of that difference of sentiment by which the two political parties of Massachusetts were divided. Bernard embraced the friendship and principles of Hutchinson and the politicians of the same party; and, whether by their suggestion, or from his own proper motion, in communicating the conquest of Canada to the assembly, he desired the two houses to remember "the blessings they derive from their *subjection* to Great Britain, without which they could not now have been a free people." Not even the announcement of the conquest of Canada could render this language palatable to the people of Massachusetts; nor could their fears of the influence which British jealousy of their spirit might exercise on the articles of the next treaty of peace altogether restrain an avowal of their repugnance to the governor's view of their political condition. The council, in their responsive address to Bernard's message, acknowledged that "to their *relation* to Great Britain they owe their present freedom"; and the House of Representatives declared, that, while they were duly sensible of the blessings remarked by the governor, "the whole world must be sensible of the blessings derived to Great Britain from the loyalty of the colonies in general, and from the efforts of this province in particular; which for more than a century past has been wading in blood,

[1] Viz. *Rights of the Colonies stated and defended*, 1769. *Speech in Favor of America*, 1769 *Administration of the British Colonies*, 1774.

and laden with the expenses of repelling the common enemy; without which efforts, Great Britain, at this day, might have had no colonies to defend."[1] This language, guarded as it is, appears deeply significant, when we consider all the circumstances of the period at which it was employed.

Nor was it in Massachusetts alone that sparks and even flames of controversy were produced by increasing collision between the pretensions of royal or national prerogative and of popular or provincial liberty. Virginia, at this period, was agitated by a controversy relative to the support of the clergy, but manifestly involving the delicate question of the degree of American subjection to British control. As the termination of the controversy, which was far more remarkable than its origin and progress, did not occur till about three years after, we shall content ourselves, for the present, with merely adverting to its existence, as a proof of the contemporaneous prevalence of democratical sentiment and opinion in the various States of America. In North Carolina, at this juncture, a general ferment was excited by the efforts of Dobbs, the royal governor, so to alter (partly by creating new boroughs and counties, and partly by other measures) the system of popular representation, as to insure to the crown an entire ascendant over the deliberations of the provincial assembly. From these measures, after pursuing them so far as to kindle a high degree of public spirit in the province, he was at last compelled to depart, by the resolute opposition of the assembly, accompanied with such expressions of popular indignation as strongly betokened a revolt against his authority.[2]

Towards the conclusion of the present year [October 25, 1760], George the Second, king of Great Britain, at the age of seventy-seven, closed, with his life, a reign of thirty-four years; the last monarch who died in possession of regal authority over the colonial offspring of the British empire in North America. He was succeeded by his grandson, George the Third, whose narrow capacity, united to an obstinate temper, and perverted by an education elaborately purged of liberal wisdom and truth, fitted him to be the confessor and champion of oligarchy and the enemy of popular liberty in every part of the world. Inflexibly selfish, implacably vindictive, self-confident, and imperious, yet crafty and dissembling, he would justly have deserved to be classed with the worst of sovereigns, if some incidents of his life did not suggest the apology, that he was often, though by fortune a powerful, yet by nature (even more than by the artificial maxims of human policy) an irresponsible agent. The insanity under which he occasionally labored affords a better apology for his errors than can be derived from the political theorem that *the king can do no wrong*. As he retained, at first, the ministers of his grandfather, — whatever hopes or fears may have been gener-

[1] Yet Hutchinson himself, the only writer by whom this remarkable proceeding has been recorded, hesitates not to declare at this period, that "An empire separate or distinct from Britain no man then alive expected or desired to see. From the common increase of inhabitants in a part of the globe which nature afforded every inducement to cultivate, settlements would gradually extend; and, *in distant ages*, an independent empire would probably be formed. This was the language of that day. The greatest hopes from the reduction of Canada, as far as could be judged from the public prayers of the clergy, as well as from the conversation of people in general, were 'to sit quiet under their own vines and fig-trees, and to have none to make them afraid.'" The wishes of the sanguine, no less than the fears of the timid, are frequently the parents of their opinions. Burnaby, an English writer, who travelled through North America in the present and the preceding year, declares that he heard sentiments of independence expressed in almost every State which he visited.

[2] Minot. Hutchinson. Eliot's *Biographical Dictionary of New England*. Burnaby's *Travels in the Middle Settlements of North America in 1759 and 1760*. Williamson. Wirt's *Life of Henry*.

ated in Europe or America by his assumption of royalty, no alteration of British policy was exhibited for a while; and doubtless no human eye foresaw the vast and varied change in the scene of human fortune that was destined to contrast the conclusion with the commencement of this reign. From neglect or mistake in some official quarter, no formal intelligence of the death of the late king, or of the accession of his grandson to the throne, was transmittted to Massachusetts. But, after waiting awhile, the provincial government resolved, in consideration of the notoriety of the fact, to break through the trammels of official etiquette; and accordingly, on nearly the last day of the year, proclaimed the royal sway of George the Third,[1] —the last performance, it may be hoped, of any such ceremony in New England.

All the British provinces were now delivered from immediate fear and danger of hostile vicinity, except the Southern States, which were still menaced and afflicted with the hostilities of the Cherokees. [1761.] The most humane and respectable chieftain of this nation, who was distinguished by the title of *The Little Carpenter*, labored with generous but unsuccessful zeal to extinguish the quarrel. Every offer of peace was spurned by the majority of this high-spirited people, who now gained an accession both of strength and of hope from the attitude of defiance and hostility which the powerful tribe of the Creeks, influenced by French agents, began to assume towards the British. South Carolina had already expended more than fifty thousand pounds sterling in defence of its frontiers, without obtaining any considerable advantage over the enemy. Bull, the lieutenant-governor of this province, applied again for assistance to General Amherst, who, as Canada was now entirely reduced, could more conveniently spare a detachment of his forces adequate to the purpose of chastising the savages. Montgomery having embarked for England, Colonel Grant, on whom the command of the Highland regiment devolved, received orders to reconduct it to the relief of Carolina, and arrived for this purpose at Charleston in the commencement of the year. A provincial regiment was raised to act in conjunction with the British force; and, with the addition of a troop of Indian allies, Grant was able to muster a body of two thousand six hundred men, which he conducted in the month of May to Fort Prince George. Here [May 27] he was met by the Indian chief called *The Little Carpenter*, who, adjuring the British to remember how long and how zealously he had approved himself their friend, solicited yet a little farther time to pacify his countrymen, and a pause in the advance of the invading force, till the issue of his last effort of mediation were seen. He implored them in the name of the common fortune and condition of mankind not to punish the offending Indians with too great severity; but rather to suffer their inconsiderate rage and folly to become a lasting monument of British generosity and virtue. But Grant refused to hearken to the chief's desire; and, having completed the preliminary inquiries and arrangements for the expedition, commenced his march from Fort Prince George for the Cherokee towns.

[1] Hutchinson. This year a dreadful fire broke out in Boston, by which nearly a tenth part of the town was destroyed. Besides the contributions in Massachusetts, the assemblies of New York and Pennsylvania appropriated a part of their public funds to the relief of the sufferers. Holmes.

Among the crowd of gazers at the pageant of the coronation of George the Third was a young American named John Hancock, who was afterwards instrumental in tearing a large part of the crown from the monarch's brow by subscribing the Declaration of American Independence, and subsequently chief magistrate of his native State.

[June 7.] Captain Kennedy, with ninety Indians, and thirty wood-men painted like Indians, marched in front of the army, and scoured the forests; and after them followed a troop of two hundred light infantry and rangers. By the vigilance and activity of these forerunners, Grant designed to secure his main force, which followed in their train, from annoyance, surprise, and confusion. The troops, by forced marches, passed two narrow and dangerous defiles, without having received a shot from the enemy; but on the fourth day of their march [June 10], they encountered the forces of the Cherokees at the same spot where Montgomery fought with them in the preceding year. The Indians had chosen their position well, and although, when they saw the British approach, they forsook it in order to try the effect of a sudden and furious attack, which was repulsed, they regained it, and used all its advantages with a skill and bravery which it required the most strenuous exertions of Grant's troops to overcome.[1] After a spirited engagement, which lasted for three hours, the Cherokees began to give way, and at length fled from the field of battle with a celerity, which, combined with their superior knowledge of the country, eluded pursuit. Between fifty and sixty of the British were killed and wounded; the loss of the Indians was not ascertained. Immediately after the action, Grant proceeded to the neighbouring town of Etchoe, which he reached about midnight, and the next day reduced to ashes. Every other town in the middle settlements of the Cherokees shared the same fate; the magazines of the tribe were destroyed, and their corn-fields laid waste; and the miserable Indians were driven to seek what shelter and subsistence their barren mountains might afford them. Having inflicted this severe blow, Grant returned to Fort Prince George, where, a few days after, *The Little Carpenter*, accompanied by other chiefs of the Cherokees, repaired to his camp and sued for peace. Articles of a pacific treaty were accordingly adjusted, and not long after were solemnly ratified in a convention held by the same Indian chiefs, with Bull and the provincial council of South Carolina, at Ashley Ferry;[2] with mutual expressions of hope that the friendly relations thus reëstablished might endure as long as the sun should shine and the rivers flow. The reduction of the Cherokees was one of the last humbling strokes given to the power and influence of France in North America.[3]

This was the only occasion on which any one of the British colonies had ever besought and obtained the assistance of the forces of the parent state in conducting a war with the Indians. Some of the inhabitants of South Carolina were forcibly struck with the singular inability thus confessed by their native province to provide for its own security and render its domestic resources available and sufficient to its external defence. The cause of this singularity was easily perceived to be the great disproportion between the number of freemen in the province and the negro slaves, of whom vast numbers had been recently imported by the slave-traders of Britain. To

[1] Amherst, in his despatches to England relative to this action, reported that "Colonel Grant says that the provincials have behaved well, as he always expected they would do."

[2] One of Grant's requisitions was, that the Indians should deliver either four of their tribe to be executed in presence of the British army, or four green scalps of Cherokee warriors. This barbarous demand was resisted by the Indians, who maintained that they were much more justly entitled to make a similar requisition against the people of Virginia, whose violence and ingratitude had first given occasion to the war. It was remitted by the wisdom and humanity of Bull.

[3] *Annual Register for* 1761. Hewit. Trumbull. Wynne. Holmes.

promote the public security, and check the growth of the evil by which it was thus undermined, a law was enacted in the present year by the provincial assembly, imposing so high a duty on every additional slave imported into South Carolina as to amount in effect nearly to a prohibition of farther importation.[1] But this law (which, with impudent absurdity, has been represented as an expression of humane consideration for the negroes) was rescinded by the crown, as inconsistent with the interests of British commerce.

Notwithstanding the conquest of Canada, the military exertions of the British colonies in North America were but partially relaxed. A letter addressed this year by Pitt to the provincial governors represented that the king was determined still vigorously to prosecute the war, until the enemy should be compelled to accept of peace on terms conducive to the advantage and glory of his crown, and to the welfare, in particular, of his subjects in America; and required the colonies to coöperate with the royal policy, by raising troops to the amount of two thirds of the forces which they had contributed for the campaign of the preceding year. This requisition was readily complied with. The repairing and strengthening of the numerous posts in the extensive territory of Canada; the construction of new fortifications requisite to secure the conquered country, and to cover and guard the colonies, in case of Canada being again restored to France; the erection of houses and barracks at the various places where it seemed expedient that garrisons should be maintained, — demanded exertions which the colonists, and especially the people of New England, were prompted alike by their wishes and their fears to contribute. Desiring that Canada might be annexed to the British empire, they were eager to strengthen the hold of it which Britain had obtained; and fearing that it would be ceded to France, they were anxious to guard themselves as well as possible against the vicinity of peril and disquiet thus again to be reproduced, and to fortify every post not likely to be included in the cession. Both in Europe and in America, the approach of peace was generally supposed to be somewhat nearer than it eventually proved. In the present year, a correspondence[2] took place between the ministers of Britain and France on this important subject, and was carried so far as to develope the views of both cabinets with regard to the fundamental articles of a treaty of peace. The keen, extensive penetration and sagacity of Pitt, however, perceived that this desirable consummation was retarded by the altered dispositions of Spain; and discerned, in the overtures of the Spanish monarch to mediate between Britain and France, a purpose, only suspended by political convenience, to espouse and support the French interest and quarrel. In vain Pitt pressed his colleagues in the cabinet (of whom some hated and others feared him) to embrace this view, and to disarm, by anticipating, the meditated hostility of Spain. Supported by the king, they withstood his urgency, and defeated his wishes; and Pitt, perceiving he could no longer guide the cabinet, but that, remaining in it, he must seem to approve, by his presence, counsels which he reckoned feeble and pernicious, resigned his ministerial office.

[1] *Annual Register for* 1761. And see Ramsay's *History of the American Revolution.* Among other written instructions communicated by the crown to Benning Wentworth, the governor of New Hampshire, on the 30th of June, 1761, the twenty-seventh article directs that "You are not to give your assent to, nor pass, any law imposing duties on negroes imported into New Hampshire." Gordon.

[2] It is impossible to peruse this correspondence without being struck with the stately and disdainful dignity (or rather, arrogance) of Pitt's temper and language.

To soothe the wounded pride of the fallen minister, and to appease the national displeasure at his secession from the cabinet, he was enriched with a munificent pension, and a peerage was bestowed on his wife and their issue.[1] The Spanish court, at the same time, as if to aid the adversaries of Pitt, and promote the delusion which these politicians honestly embraced or artfully countenanced, published the most solemn declaration of its pacific intentions, and disavowed every purpose which Pitt had imputed to it.

But whatever delusion might thus have been created or confirmed was dissipated in the commencement of the following year [1762], when the war, which Pitt predicted, actually broke forth between Britain and Spain. The British cabinet in this emergency, without recalling Pitt to office, availed itself of the vigorous posture which the empire had assumed under the influence and direction of his genius. While a powerful armament was despatched for the reduction of the Spanish settlement at Havana, the British troops on the continent of America received orders to undertake an expedition against the French West Indian colony of Martinique. This last project was communicated to the governors and assemblies of the British colonies in North America by the Earl of Egremont, the successor to Pitt's office, who pressed it upon them as a reason for supporting as many forces as they contributed in the former year. The provincial assemblies approved and obeyed this requisition with an eagerness for which it is easier to assign many plausible reasons, than to ascertain the one which actually possessed the greatest influence with them. It was, they deemed, their interest, by replacing the British regulars in the Canadian garrisons, to diminish any difficulty the parent state might experience in retaining her American conquest; and, by facilitating the progress of British victory, to render Canada not the only spoil which the enemy would seek to recover at the next treaty of peace. There had been formed, too, by recent circumstances, among the colonial population, a numerous class of persons attached by habit to military pursuits, and who, at this crisis, were not less fitted to subserve the external interests, than unlikely to promote the internal welfare of the provincial communities to which they belonged. Such an actual redundance of inhabitants was produced in Massachusetts by the recent military efforts and their cessation, that, from this province alone, nearly six hundred persons emigrated to Nova Scotia in the preceding year. For one, or other, or all of these reasons, the provincial governments not only raised with alacrity the forces they were required to support in America, but offered bounties to encourage the enlistment of their people among the regular troops of the parent state.[2] About nine hundred men were thus added by Massachusetts to the expedition of the British forces against the insular colonies of France. All the enterprises of Britain this year proved successful. Havana was wrested, by conquest, from Spain; Martinique was won from France; and along with it fell Grenada, Guadaloupe, St. Lucia, St. Vincent, and every other settlement which the French possessed in the

[1] So much enslaved was this great man to aristocratical illusions, that he (who had previously rejected the approaches of Franklin with cold indifference or disdain) is said to have been affected to tears by a few words of hollow civility addressed to him by the narrow-minded monarch who regarded him with fear and aversion and gladly accepted his resignation of office.

[2] "This," says Hutchinson, "is a singular occurrence." Hutchinson seems to have possessed a subtle and active, rather than an elevated or comprehensive mind; and to have been more capable of ascertaining, than of appreciating and classifying, the details of a wide and various prospect.

extensive chain of the Caribbee Islands. The zeal of New England in promoting these enterprises[1] cost her the loss of a great number of men. Of the troops which she contributed to the British armament, so many were destroyed by the sword or by disease, that very few returned to their native country. A transient gleam of success attended the arms of France in America. The island of Newfoundland was compelled to submit to the sudden attack of a French squadron; but even before the arrival of the succour which England promptly afforded, it was retaken by a British force despatched thither by General Amherst, under the command of Lord Colville.[2]

Notwithstanding the harmony thus manifested between the martial spirit and purposes of Britain and her colonies, the most violent discontents were engendered in America, partly by the pressure of the British commercial restrictions, and partly by the unpopular and arbitrary policy pursued by certain of the royal governors. Nothing can prove more strongly the force of these internal discontents than the occasional eruptions of their malignity which broke forth even at a crisis like the present, when the Americans were sensible that their most important interests depended on the policy which Britain might choose to pursue, in the negotiations, which were speedily expected, for a general peace. In Massachusetts, a variety of circumstances had occurred, since the commencement of Bernard's administration, to excite popular odium against this governor, and to develope and inflame the distinctions between the friends of American liberty and the partisans of British prerogative, of which last the most conspicuous were Bernard himself, and his deputy, Hutchinson, who possessed unbounded influence over him. Governor Shirley had promised the office of judge in the provincial court to Otis, an able and popular lawyer in Boston; and on the death of Sewall, the chief justice of this court, shortly after Bernard's accession, the public hope and expectation were fixed on the promotion of Otis, but disappointed by the conduct of Bernard, who bestowed the office of chief justice on Hutchinson,[3] with expressions that gave Otis to understand that he had nothing to hope from the existing administration. Otis, thus balked of the elevation to which his merit entitled and the public voice designed him, was incited both by patriotism and by personal resentment to withdraw his support from the government, and to court exclusively the popular favor. His conduct, however, was moderate, in comparison with that of his son, James Otis, also a lawyer, a man of fiery, violent disposition and superior talents, who had hitherto filled with credit an official

[1] "When Martinique was attacked, the British forces, greatly weakened by sickness and death, were enabled, by the timely arrival of the New England troops, to prosecute and accomplish the reduction of the island. A great part of the British force being about to sail from thence for Havana, the New Englanders, whose health had been much impaired by service and the climate, were sent off, in three ships, as invalids, to their own country. Before they had completed the voyage, they found themselves restored, ordered the ships to veer about, steered immediately for Havana, and, arriving when the British were too much reduced to expect success, enabled them, by this opportune succour, to achieve the conquest of the place." Gordon.

[2] *Annual Register for* 1761 and 1762. Wynne. Trumbull. Hutchinson. Holmes

[3] Hutchinson says that he warned Bernard of the impolicy of this proceeding, which, in effect, proved highly detrimental to the reputation of them both; but that Bernard declared, that, even though Hutchinson should decline the appointment, Otis should not obtain it. Gordon asserts, that Hutchinson, by his eager and adroit solicitation, procured the office for himself. It is certain that he *accepted* an appointment which he knew would prove generally disagreeable to his countrymen.

situation in the public service. Transported with indignation[1] at the treatment of his father, Otis, the younger, instantly resigned his office, and exerted the most indefatigable industry and ability in advocating popular rights, and promoting and supporting every complaint that might diminish the credit of the British government. Roused by the zeal and eloquence of such a leader, the popular party began to assume a bolder and more confident tone, and to bestir themselves with increased activity in defending the provincial liberty, and arraigning whatever their inflamed vigilance and jealousy deemed an encroachment upon it.

The distinction created between the colonists and the inhabitants of the parent state, by the British commercial restrictions, gave occasion to the first display of this newly sharpened spirit. A rooted grudge subsisted between the officers of the customs in the port of Boston and the merchants concerned in the foreign trade of the province. The odium unavoidably attached to the duties of those officers was increased by the zeal they exerted to obtain the approbation of the British government, and to enrich themselves by a rigorous discharge of their functions and numerous confiscations. This antipathy gradually became more and more violent and personal; insomuch that the execution of the laws appeared too often like the triumph of private revenge. Loud and frequent complaints asserted that a superfluous severity was employed to carry into effect vexatious regulations of trade, which, in other colonies, were suffered to be evaded from a conviction of their unreasonableness and the impracticability of their general execution. Certain abuses which were suspected to exist in the department of the revenue, and the notoriety of the fact, that, after all the severities which were inflicted, no part of the confiscations ever reached the public exchequer, prompted the merchants to scrutinize the proceedings of the commissioners of customs. Some irregularities were detected, and reported to the assembly, which, in spite of the utmost exertions of the governor, ordered an action of damages to be instituted against the commissioners. The issue of the suit[2] was creditable to the justice of the inhabitants of Boston; for, notwithstanding the general irritation that prevailed, the jury were sensible that the complaint had not been properly substantiated, and returned a verdict for the defendants. It had been, till of late years, a common practice of the collectors and inferior officers of the customs, without any other authority than what they derived from their com-

[1] Otis, the younger, is said to have declared, on this occasion, that "he would set the province in flames, even though he should perish by the fire." He certainly kindled, or at least fanned and inflamed, the political conflagration that ensued, and was himself one of its earliest victims.

[2] This suit had special relation to an act of parliament passed in the sixth year of the reign of George the Second, and ever since regarded by the Americans as a grievance, imposing a duty of sixpence per gallon on all foreign molasses imported into the colonies, and awarding one third of all forfeited cargoes to the king for the use of the colony where the forfeiture should be inflicted, one third to the governor, and the remainder to the informer. The first of these shares had never been appropriated in terms of the act, but it was generally rendered tributary to the more complete indemnification of the informers.

The duty on molasses was so heavy as to amount to a virtual prohibition of the importation, which accordingly was entirely confined to contraband channels. Some years before this period, in consequence of a representation by Bollan, the provincial agent at London, to the British ministers, it was signified that a reduction of the duty would be granted, if the provincial assembly would petition for this measure, and engage that the reduced duty would be cheerfully paid. The assembly were on the point of taking this step, when they were dissuaded from it by the advice of Hutchinson, who, with less consideration for the wishes of the British cabinet than his subsequent conduct expressed, cautioned the members against any voluntary recognition of the propriety of an impost generally detested by the people.

missions, forcibly to enter warehouses, and even dwelling-houses, on receiving information that contraband goods were secreted within their walls. The people, at length, began to resent the exercise of this assumed authority; some stood on their defence against the officers, while others sued them in actions at law for illegal invasion of their premises; and in consequence, the formality of a peculiar judicial writ was latterly employed to legalize the operation of forcible entry. By the ingenuity of Otis, an objection was suggested to the validity of those writs; and a new suit, involving this point, was instituted; but the decision, which, on this occasion, rested with the judges, again proved favorable to the commissioners of customs.

These judicial proceedings, which were regarded with intense interest, though their immediate issue seemed advantageous to the crown, produced impressions far more advantageous to the views and sentiments of the popular party. The people were taught to believe that they were considered and treated by the government of the parent state as a portion of its subjects degraded beneath the level of English liberty and constitutional law; and that harsh statutes were severely enforced against them, but arbitrarily relaxed in favor of the officers of the crown, by judges devoted to the interest of royal prerogative. Men began to inquire with more attention than before into the precise nature of the relations subsisting between the colonies and the British nation; and every argument which gave color to pleas opposed to the pretensions and the colonial policy of the parent state was favorably received by a great majority of the people.[1] Bernard, perceiving the disturbance which the public mind had undergone, in a speech to the assembly, cautioned them against listening to declamations which tended to promote a suspicion of the security of the civil rights of the people, and which, however suited to the reigns of Charles and James, were (he declared) at the present era utterly groundless and inappropriate. The assembly, in answer to this communication, expressed their regret at the governor's mistake in supposing that party spirit could influence their deliberations, promised a due attention to his recommendation, and declared that it was their purpose *to see with their own eyes*. From the general proneness of mankind to cherish immoderate hope, and yet to indulge a jealous impatience and discontent, there is no topic, which, supported with ordinary plausibility, finds readier prevalence with the members of any social community, than the notion that they are hardly and unjustly dealt with; and, unfortunately for the contentment of the colonists and the integrity of the British empire, this popular topic derived too much corroborative illustration from the conduct and policy of the parent state.

The exertions of Otis recommended him so highly to the favor of his countrymen, that, in the year 1761, the town of Boston elected him one of its representatives in the provincial assembly; and chiefly by his influence was this body induced, in the present year, to embrace a measure of very remarkable character and import, in vindication of its own privileges and of provincial liberty. After the number of forces for the year had been voted, and during a recess of the assembly, the fishing towns on the coast were alarmed by intelligence that a French squadron had arrived at New-

[1] "From various events, men were prepared to think more favorably of independency before any measures were taken with a professed design of attaining it." Hutchinson. This is an admission of more importance than the writer seems to have been aware of.

foundland. In this emergency, the inhabitants of Salem and Marblehead petitioned the governor and council to cause a ship and sloop belonging to the province to be fitted out and employed for the protection of the vessels engaged in the fishery; whereupon the governor and council not only complied with the request, but resolved to augment the complement of men on board of the sloop, and for this purpose offered a bounty for the encouragement of the additional enlistment which they deemed expedient. The whole expense of this bounty did not exceed four hundred pounds sterling; and the measure might have been justified by various precedents in the history of the colony. But the assembly was not in a temper to admit such justification. In a remonstrance, composed for them by Otis, and addressed to the governor, they denounced the measure which he had adopted as an invasion of "their most darling privilege, the right of originating all taxes; and tantamount to an annihilation of one branch of the legislature." They warmly declared that "*it would be of little consequence to the people whether they were subjects to George, the king of Great Britain, or Louis, the French king, if both were as arbitrary as both would be, with the power of levying taxes without parliament*"; and concluded by praying the governor, "as he regards the peace and welfare of the province, that no measures of this nature be taken for the future, let the advice of the council be what it may." With some difficulty, the governor, assisted by the partisans of prerogative and the friends of moderation, prevailed with the house to expunge from its remonstrance and records the passage in which the king's name was introduced with such boldness of freedom. The British government, ignorant or regardless of the whole transaction, derived no instruction from the ominous indication that was afforded of the spirit and temper of the American people.[1]

In North Carolina, the discontents which we have already noted, and traced to the conduct of Governor Dobbs, were prolonged and confirmed by the continuance of his arbitrary and insolent administration. In the first year of the present king's reign, it was enacted by a parliamentary statute, that the commissions of the English judges should not, as was previously the practice, be vacated by the demise of the sovereign. Imitating this wise provision, and conforming, as they supposed, to the principle which required an assimilation between the provincial statutes and those of the parent state, the assembly of this province passed a law ordaining that the judges in its Supreme Court should hold their offices by the tenure of their good behaviour, instead of the precarious dependence to which they had been hitherto restricted, on the discretion of the governor. Dobbs, though he was instructed to grant no commissions of longer or securer duration than his own pleasure, and to approve no laws encroaching in the slightest degree on the royal prerogative, nevertheless consulted on this occasion the chief justice and the attorney-general of the province, who united in advising him to assent to the law, which, they declared, "would restore life to the government and protection to the subject." The governor,

[1] "It must astonish the political observer, that, at such a moment, when the genius of the British nation may be said to have appeared and pointed to the most fatal convulsion in her history, no notice was taken of the warning. Her ministers, either, distracted with the weight of the public debt, overlooked every thing but the immediate means of collecting a revenue; or, ignorant of the growth, enterprise, and advantages of the colonists, carelessly suffered a disagreement among these distant subjects, which deserved the interposition of the highest authority, to be aggravated by private rancor and prejudice, the contemptible spirit of party, and the domineering pride of inferior officers." Minot.

however, thought proper to refuse his assent, and farther signified his displeasure by dissolving the assembly. The disposition of this officer was equally sordid and tyrannical. A system of chicane at once impudent and ingenious enabled him to enlarge his official perquisites by multiplying the occasions and augmenting the amount of the fees which he exacted from the colonists; and the agents of Lord Granville, to whom we have seen a portion of the provincial territory reserved, emulating his example, carried their extortions to such a height as in some instances to provoke a forcible resistance. Numerous complaints were transmitted to England, both by the representative assembly and by individual planters, against the conduct of the governor and of Lord Granville's agents; and both the British cabinet and Lord Granville are said to have been impressed with the justice of these complaints, though neither chose to redress the wrongs they indicated by an effectual cure. Lord Granville remitted his vassals to the remedy of legal process, which, from the nature of the case, and the circumstances of the province, was utterly inapplicable; and the British government contented itself with sending to the colony William Tryon, a military officer, with the appointment of lieutenant-governor, and the promise of obtaining the supreme command as soon as Dobbs should retire, — a promise of which Dobbs deferred the fulfilment till his own death in the spring of the year 1765. Among his other qualities, Dobbs was distinguished by a real or affected bigotry to the ecclesiastical establishment and ordinances of the parent state; and various laws were passed from time to time during his administration for promoting the preëminence of the church of England and restraining the liberties of Dissenters. From the power and number of the Dissenters, however, these laws were but partially and feebly executed; and during the subsequent administration of Tryon, who was a stranger to bigotry, the most illiberal of their provisions were repealed.[1]

A mutual disposition for peace had latterly prevailed in the belligerent nations. France was depressed and weakened by her misfortunes; Spain had similar reasons to desire a cessation of the hostilities she had rashly provoked; and Britain was sated with success, and embarrassed by the expenses of her exertions. A diminished interest in the progress of the war appeared throughout the whole British empire; and the public concern was more forcibly engaged by consideration of the terms of the anticipated treaty of peace, on which the substantial value of the preceding efforts was justly considered to depend. In America, there prevailed but one wish on this subject; every man who had the welfare of his country at heart, whatever might be his sentiments or opinions with regard to the duration of her connection with Britain, ardently desired that Canada might not revert to the possession of France, and that the growth, happiness, and security of the colonial population might no longer be repressed and menaced by the near vicinity of a rival power, equally dexterous, ambitious, and enterprising. But this desire was combined with a great deal of anxious apprehension; for it was well known in America that the English nation and ministry were divided in opinion on the question whether it was most expedient to retain Canada or the islands which had been subdued in the West Indies; and it was equally notorious that the main objection to the retention of Canada was derived from the notion that the annexation of it to the British empire would infallibly promote, and sooner or later produce, a disruption

[1] Minot. Hutchinson. Eliot's *Biographical Dictionary*. Williamson. Gordon.

of the colonies of Britain from their parent state. It was unhappy for British authority, that, at a crisis so interesting, the notion of independence was thus forcibly suggested to the minds of the Americans.[1] In England, a considerable party, strongly cherishing the renown which attended the conquest of Canada, were prompted to desire that their government should insist on the retention of a territory acquired with so much courage and glory, and which at once enlarged the extent and (as they supposed) promoted the security of the British empire in America. These impressions were reinforced by an able pamphlet written by Israel Mauduit, a merchant of London, brother of Jasper Mauduit, the agent for the province of Massachusetts, which exposed with success the impolicy of German wars, and in earnest and vigorous strains urged on the public mind the importance of Canada, and the necessity of preserving this acquisition for the welfare of those colonies which formed so considerable and valuable a branch of the British empire.

In the year 1760, when views of peace began first to be entertained, the Earl of Bath expressed his sentiments in a composition which he entitled, *A Letter to Two Great Men* (Pitt and the Duke of Newcastle), on the terms for which Britain should insist in her negotiations with France, and warmly recommended the retention of Canada. This publication was answered by a pamphlet which appeared in the same year, and was commonly ascribed to the celebrated Edmund Burke and his brother, and in which opinions and views of policy diametrically opposite to those of Lord Bath were supported. A division of opinion upon this important point certainly prevailed both in the British cabinet and the nation at large; though, doubtless, the majority of the nation were disposed to wish that Canada might be retained. Franklin,[2] alarmed for the interest of his country, now entered with his usual talent and address into the controversy, and published his sentiments in a pamphlet which he entitled, *The Interest of Great Britain considered with Regard to the Colonies, and the Acquisition of Canada and Guadaloupe.* In a clear and forcible manner he descanted on the advantages which Britain might expect to derive from the retention of Canada; he maintained that the security of an established dominion was a prudent and justifiable ground for demanding corresponding territorial cessions from an enemy; that the erection of forts in the back settlements of the British colonies could never afford a sufficient security against the inroads of the French and the Indians; that this security could be obtained only by the possession of Canada; and that the abandonment of so great an advantage, now placed within the reach of the British government, would imply a wide departure from good policy, and tend to promote disgust and disaffection in the minds of the Americans. Whatever was the influence or effect of this publication, the views it supported were embraced by the British cabinet, and especially by Pitt, whose communications to the French ministry, in 1761, expressed the determined purpose of Britain to retain her conquests in America. France herself, at that time, was willing to surrender Canada, but urged ineffectually the restoration of Cape Breton.

Contrary to the expectations of the Americans, the subsequent conquests of Britain in other quarters rather impaired than promoted the likelihood

[1] "This jealousy in England, being known, was of itself sufficient to set enterprising men upon considering how far such a separation was expedient and practicable." Hutchinson.

[2] Franklin did not return to America from his first mission to England till the summer of 1762.

of the retention of Canada, by tempting the political and commercial speculators in the parent state to balance between this advantage and the permanent acquisition of the islands subdued in the West Indies. Lord Hardwicke, though not at present possessing any ostensible share in the administration, was much respected and consulted by the actual members of the cabinet; and his advice on this occasion (uninfluenced by any fears of American independence, and prompted solely by commercial considerations) was, that Britain should retain the West India Islands, and abandon Canada. But the policy, which, under the auspices of Pitt, was embraced in 1761, ultimately prevailed again with the British ministry, and was made the basis of the negotiations which ensued in the close of this year between the Duke of Bedford and the Duke de Nivernois, who, as commissioners for the belligerent nations, repaired to Fontainebleau, where they soon arranged the preliminary articles of a treaty of peace, which was definitively concluded at Paris in the commencement of the following year. [February 10, 1763.] By this treaty, the French monarch renounced all claim whatever to Nova Scotia, which he guarantied in the amplest manner to the king of Great Britain; he also ceded to his Britannic Majesty the full right to Canada and its dependencies, together with Cape Breton, and all the other islands and coasts adjoining the river and gulf of St. Lawrence, — disclaiming any reservation of pretence to require the slightest restriction of this general cession and guaranty. In order to remove for ever the occasion of such territorial disputes as had produced the late war, it was stipulated that the confines between the dominions of Britain and France, on the continent of North America, should be fixed irrevocably by a line drawn along the centre of the river Mississippi from its source as far as the river Iberville; and from thence, by a line drawn along the middle of the river, and the lakes Maurepas and Pontchartrain, to the sea; and to effectuate this stipulation, the French king ceded and guarantied to the British monarch the river and port of Mobile, and all the French claims and possessions on the left side of the Mississippi, except the town of New Orleans and the island on which it is situated, which were reserved to France. The British king, on the other hand, restored to France all the islands which had been reduced, whether in the West Indies or on the coast of France, except Grenada and the Grenadines, which were retained by Britain and ceded by France. He also restored to the king of Spain all the British conquests of Spanish settlements in the West Indies; and, in return, the Spanish monarch ceded to Britain the settlement of Florida, with the Fort of Augustine, the Bay of Pensacola, and all the territory that Spain possessed or claimed on the continent of North America to the east or to the southeast of the river Mississippi. It was stipulated that the inhabitants of the countries ceded by France and Spain should be allowed the enjoyment of the Roman Catholic faith and the exercise of its rites, *as far as might be consistent with the laws of Great Britain*, — an absurd and unintelligible qualification, which, from the illiberal strain of British ecclesiastical law at that period, might have given scope to the most enormous oppression and injustice; — and that they should retain their civil rights, while they chose to remain under the British government, and yet be entitled to dispose of their estates to British subjects, and retire with the produce without hindrance or molestation to any part of the world. Such were the principal articles of the treaty, which had relation to the continent of America. By the treaty of

Utrecht, the French court had been reduced to the humiliating necessity of destroying the fortifications of Dunkirk; and by the present treaty, an article far more insulting to France than advantageous to England stipulated the residence at Dunkirk of an English commissary charged to watch against any attempt of the French government to refortify the place. This insolent provision awakened a keen, profound, vindictive resentment in the breast of every Frenchman to whom the honor of his country was dear.

A few months after the ratification of the treaty, a proclamation issued by the British king announced, among other arrangements, the erection within the territories ceded by France and Spain of four distinct and separate governments, on which were bestowed the names of Quebec, East Florida, West Florida, and Grenada. Besides the other territorial distributions specified in this proclamation, Cape Breton and the adjacent islands were united to the government of Nova Scotia; and the region situated between the rivers Alatamaha and St. Mary's was annexed to the province of Georgia. The proclamation farther announced, that, in testimony of the royal approbation of the conduct and bravery of the officers and soldiers of the British armies, and in recompense of their merits, the governors of the three newly established colonies, and the other royal governors of provinces on the continent of North America, were empowered to grant lands without fee or price to all reduced officers who had served in America during the late war, and to all private soldiers disbanded and actually residing in America, who should personally apply for such grants; the lands so granted, however, being declared subject, at the expiry of ten years, to the quit-rents usually exacted within the provinces where they were respectively situated, and the possessors incurring subjection to the usual obligations of cultivation and improvement.[1]

In no part of the British dominions did the peace of Paris excite such lively satisfaction as in North America. To the people of this country the war had been far more burdensome than to the inhabitants of Britain, both in the amount of taxation which it demanded, and in all the other inconveniences and sufferings which attend the presence and movements of armies, friendly or hostile, and the usual events and exigencies of war. New England had generally maintained ten thousand men in the field; and, as the provincials never enlisted for more than a single campaign, a new army was to be raised, new bounties bestowed, and new clothing furnished every spring. And now, by a treaty, of which it was utterly beyond their power to regulate or influence the terms, the colonists beheld the war, which had carried ravage and revolution of empire into every part of the world, terminated by an arrangement incomparably more beneficial to them than to any other portion of the subjects of the British crown. Instead of seeing the trophies of their valor resigned, as on former occasions, for the real or supposed advantage of the parent state, they saw Britain part with her other conquests, in order to justify the retention of those acquisitions in which alone they were interested. They beheld their territories enlarged, their internal growth promoted, their commerce and fisheries secured, and the enemies who had inflicted so much misery and desolation upon them deprived of the power of farther injury, and reduced to circumstances, in which, far from menacing the safety, they became tributary to the

[1] *Annual Register for* 1762 and 1763. Franklin's *Memoirs*. Trumbull. Hutchinson Holmes. *Memoirs and Reminiscences of Count Segur.*

advantage, of the British colonies and the wealth and grandeur of Britain. One blended sentiment of hope, happiness, and gratitude was circulated throughout America, — warm and sincere while it lasted, though fated to be exceedingly transient. Many of the inhabitants of New England, who inherited the strong and deep-seated piety of their forefathers, felt this noble emotion powerfully awakened by a sense of exulting gratification, which they could never freely indulge, unless it were mixed and imbued with a savor of religion, and devoutly declared that only the kind providence of that Being who supremely controls human counsel, regulates destiny, and diffuses good, could have blessed America with a consummation so glorious and happy.

Notwithstanding the discontents and dissensions which prevailed in most of the colonies, every other feeling was, for the time, overborne by the general current of joy. The assembly of Massachusetts, in a congratulatory address to the governor, declared, *that the manifest design of the French to surround the colonies had been the just and immediate cause of the war;*[1] that, without the assistance of the parent state, they must have fallen a prey to the power of France; that, without the compensation granted to them by parliament, the burdens of the war had been insupportable; and without the provisions of the treaty of peace, all its successes would have been fruitless and delusive. In an address to the king, they repeated the same acknowledgments, and pledged themselves, in conclusion, to demonstrate their gratitude by every possible testimony of duty and loyalty. These expressions were not merely the effusion of popular warmth and transport; they were embraced and approved by the most jealous, able, and resolute defenders of American liberty against the excesses of British domination and royal prerogative.[2] Never was attachment to Britain more warmly or generally prevalent in America than at this period. British glory and American safety and prosperity seemed to be identified; and even the ambitious hope of national independence, which some Americans had associated with the conquest of Canada, was silenced by a grateful sense of the generosity (as it was deemed) by which the gratification of this hope was approximated. But long cherished feelings, though suspended, were not subdued; and, amidst the tumultuous flow of pleasure and triumph in America, an intelligent eye might have discerned symptoms, of which a sound regard to British ascendency required the most cautious, forbearing, and indulgent treatment; for it was manifest that the exultation of the Americans was founded, in no small degree, on the conviction that *their own proper strength* was augmented, and that they had attained a state of security which lessened at once their danger from neighbouring hostility, and their dependence on the protection, so often delusive and precarious, of the parent state.[3]

Perhaps in none of the colonies, at this period, were sentiments and notions akin to independence more strongly cherished or more distinctly expressed than in Virginia, where the most dazzling eloquence (a faculty of

[1] This was, doubtless, the genuine and deliberate conviction of the Americans. And yet (such changes can passion and policy produce), about thirteen years after, they addressed a declaration of most opposite import to the French court; reproaching England with having unjustly appropriated Canada, and offering assistance towards its reconquest by France. See Book XI., Chap. V., *post*.

[2] See Note XXV., at the end of the volume.

[3] Minot. Trumbull Hutchinson.

which this province has been singularly prolific) was employed to defend and embellish the principles and to warn and propagate the sentiments of liberty. The transaction to which we must now advert manifestly showed that not only the people and the provincial juries in Virginia, but the provincial judges and legislature, could be excited, on occasion, to an open and determined opposition to the will of the British government. There had prevailed for some time in this province a controversy remarkable in its nature, and still more remarkable for its issue, which occurred in the present year. The emoluments of the clergy of the church of England in Virginia, as we have formerly remarked,[1] consisted of a fixed quantity of tobacco, allotted by law to every clergyman, and contributed by the parish in which he officiated. In the year 1755, the tobacco crop having proved extremely scanty throughout the province, the assembly, for the relief of the people, passed an act which was to endure for ten months, and which restricted the claims of the clergy to a moderate pecuniary commutation, far inferior to the sudden and temporary increase which the value of tobacco derived from the prevailing scarcity. This act did not contain the usual clause by which statutes of the provincial legislature were suspended in their operation *till they should receive the royal assent*; an omission which was essential to the efficiency of the measure. Whatever discontent it may have created in the clergy, it was carried into effect without any open objection. But in the year 1758, upon a bare surmise that a deficient crop was again likely to occur, the assembly reënacted the provision of 1755; and the new law, like the former, contained no suspending clause. A controversy now arose between the clergy and the supporters of the provincial law; and various literary compositions, distinguished by much ability, but deformed by passion and sarcasm, were published by both parties. The clergy were manifestly victors in argument; but so far were they from prevailing, on that account, over the popular will, that, as the discussion proceeded, the indignation against them became so strong and general, that the provincial printers refused to publish their pamphlets, and they were constrained to resort for this service to a printer in Maryland. Finding their cause hopeless in America, they appealed to the king and privy council, who promptly denounced the act of 1758 as an illegal usurpation of power, and declared it utterly null and void. The clergymen now brought actions at law for ascertaining and retrieving the loss and damage they had sustained from the operation of the rescinded act; and as the judges could not refuse to acknowledge the relevancy of these suits, the promoters of them confidently anticipated a complete triumph and indemnification. It remained that the damages should be assessed by a jury; which seemed merely a matter of arithmetical calculation.

In this emergency, the popular party intrusted their cause to Patrick Henry,[2] one of the most remarkable men that Virginia or even America has ever produced. He was the son of parents unwealthy, but in easy circumstances; and, after a slender education, commenced life as a store-keeper. But his youth was passed in idleness, though not in sensuality or debauchery; he preferred the conversation to the custom of the persons who frequented his store; and, neglecting his business, was forced to abandon it

[1] *Ante*, Book I., Chap. III.

[2] "Henry, the forest-born Demosthenes,
Whose thunder shook the Philip of the seas." — Lord Byron.

nearly in a state of insolvency. He next attempted to support himself by agriculture; but, though he tilled with his own hands the soil of the province of which he was afterwards to be the governor, his negligent and irregular habits caused this attempt to issue as unfortunately as the former. A second experiment of mercantile pursuits ended still more disastrously; for he became completely bankrupt. These repeated failures and disappointments, the more harassing because he had married at an early age, were unable to depress Henry's spirit,[1] though they seriously impaired his reputation. He seemed a man incapable of succeeding even in pursuits which persons of very moderate capacity were able to conduct with credit and success; and none of his associates recognized or appreciated the ardent and aspiring disposition, the intrepid and determined character, the vigorous capacity, the depth of genius, and the brilliant and commanding eloquence with which Henry was endowed, and by the exertion of which he was soon to hew his way to the most splendid distinction and honorable renown. During the period of his second mercantile experiment, he had assiduously labored to supply the deficiencies of his early education. The ancient classics engaged much of his attention, and Livy became his favorite author. The grandeur of the Roman character, delineated by the graceful pen of this writer, filled him with surprise and admiration; the vivid descriptions and eloquent harangues with which the work abounds were perused by him with intense and oft-repeated delight; nor could fortune have thrown in his way a book more fitted to cherish his republican spirit, and awaken that elevated strain of genius, discourse, and conduct which his career shortly after began to disclose.

Having finally embraced the study of the law, he was licensed to practise as a barrister about the time when the controversy between the clergy and the other inhabitants of Virginia commenced; and was now employed as advocate for the defendants in the first of the suits to which we have already adverted; — probably because no other lawyer could be found to defend so hopeless a proposition as that the clergy were not entitled to be indemnified for the entire loss which they had incurred by the operation of a law declared to be unjust and void by the highest authority in the empire. [December 1, 1763.] To the surprise and admiration of all who heard and beheld him, Henry appeared on this occasion to cast off the vulgar vesture of his former character, and to catch an inspiration that descended on him in the shape of a tongue of fire. His spirit, kindling with the greatness of the opportunity, seemed at once elevated in stature and extended in range; his genius broke out in all its lustre from the cloud that had obscured it; and he stood forth a new and superior being in the eyes of his countrymen, — whose idol and champion, from this day, he became. The popular party, whose hopes had been extremely depressed, were transported with astonishment and delight; the clergy, who had manifested derision at the simple and faltering exordium of the orator, confounded by the

[1] "His misfortunes," says Jefferson, who became acquainted with him at this period, "were not to be traced either in his countenance or conduct." Eloquence apart, Henry seems, in genius and character, to have strongly resembled Cromwell. They were assimilated, too, in the abortive issue of their attempts to act well a humble and ordinary part in social life. In this respect, Washington was superior to them both. While he could sustain the dignity of the most elevated pursuits, he could impart dignity to humble avocations, and render them tributary to his credit and advantage. So also could and did Dr. Franklin.

"Omnis Aristippum decuit color et status et res,
Tentantem majora fere, præsentibus æquum."

rapid and overwhelming invective with which his collected and stiffening spirit assailed them, fled from the court with precipitation and dismay; while Henry pleaded the cause of his clients and of the province with oratory so powerful,[1] and argument so congenial to the feelings of his audience, that, in defiance of all existing law, a verdict was returned by the jury awarding *one penny* as the damages due to the clergy. The president of the tribunal, and one of the most astonished of the auditory, was Henry's own father. A new trial was instantly demanded on the part of the plaintiffs, thus inadequately and delusively compensated; but the minds of the judges themselves had been overborne by the torrent of Henry's oratory and the accompanying flow of public feeling; and, amidst the loudest acclamations, they rejected the demand by a unanimous vote. The provincial assembly, shortly after, pledged itself to defend any appeal which the clergy might prosecute, and appropriated a portion of the public funds for this object; but the clergy submitted without farther struggle, and desisted entirely from a litigation in which they would have had to contend with the weight of the public purse, as well as the strong and swelling tide of public feeling.

The triumph which Henry thus achieved for the popular party in Virginia derived an additional significance from the nature of the topics which his discourse had embraced, and his manly and vigorous eloquence had discussed and illustrated. He insisted on the reciprocity of connection and duties between the king and his subjects; from which he inferred that government was a conditional compact, composed of mutual and dependent covenants, of which a violation by one party implied the reciprocal discharge of the other; and intrepidly maintained, that the disregard which had been shown, on the present occasion, to the public exigency of the colony, was *an instance of royal misrule, which had so far dissolved the political compact*, and left the people at liberty to consult the general welfare by means which were sufficiently sanctioned by the general approbation; that they had consulted it by the act of 1758, which, therefore, notwithstanding the dissent of the king and his council, ought to be considered as the law of the land, and the only legitimate measure of the claims of the clergy. From the nature of this topic, and the earnest and undaunted manner in which it was handled by the orator, we may infer, that, even at this era, so remarkably signalized by the attachment of the colonists to their parent state, *his* mind, at least, was disposed to scan with little reverence the course of regal administration; while the reception which his argument obtained from the great majority of his countrymen strongly attests that they also were deterred by no superstitious repugnance from the consideration

[1] None of the reported speeches, or rather portions of speeches, of this remarkable person fully correspond with the idea of his genius conveyed by the descriptions of his auditors and his biographer. The language of the eye, of the vocal tone, and of bodily gesture and action, in which he is said to have been preëminent, may be justly commended, but can never be adequately represented. In one sense, that speech is best which is most suitable to the circumstances in which it is delivered. At county meeting of English farmers, the shrewd, keen prate of a Cobbett would, doubtless, be far more efficacious than an oration of Pericles. I am constrained to yield to general testimony in favor of Henry's genius and oratorical powers; but I must confess that I have never read any specimen of his eloquence which has not offended my notions of good taste; and for the efficacy of which I have not been obliged to suppose some indescribable charm, and some peculiar and intimate correspondence between the sentiments of the speaker and his audience. Yet Jefferson, whose learning and genius were combined with sound judgment and refined taste, pronounced Henry "the greatest orator that ever lived." In character, variety, and power, his eloquence seems to have resembled that of the celebrated Irish political agitator, O'Connell.

of such topics, and were far from regarding with an invincible horror the prospect of separation from Great Britain.[1]

The hopes entertained by the British colonists of an entire exemption from war, in consequence of the treaty of Paris, were dispelled, a few months only after the date of this treaty, by a furious and unexpected attack from the Indians. The conquest of the French settlements, which had been reckoned the pledge of an entire subjection of the Indian tribes to the English, was the immediate forerunner, and in a great measure the cause, of this war, — the most extensive, arduous, and destructive that was ever waged between the two races of people. We have already remarked the opinion which was impressed on the savages, partly by the assurances of the French, and partly by their own observation and recollection of the course of events, that Britain would never entirely or at least permanently subdue the empire of France in America. When, at length, they witnessed the arrival of this catastrophe which they had deemed so improbable, they were struck with alarm (promoted, if not inspired, by French suggestion) at the vast and sudden increase of power and territory which Britain acquired, and began to imagine that they ought to have made greater and earlier efforts to prevent the complete preponderance she finally obtained over her rival. Many of the Indian tribes were always far more jealous of the English than of the French, who seemed more intent on trade than on settlement, and who, conscious that they were inferior to their rivals in strength, supplied this defect by policy, and paid a more flattering and systematical attention to the Indians than was ever done by the English. Every little fort, which, in the hands of the French, had been a mere military post and trading-house, now, in the occupation of the English, seemed the germ of a numerous and powerful community. The demeanour of the English towards the Indians was rendered more haughty and negligent by their recent victories and apparent security; in their occasional conferences with the sachems or chiefs, they began to omit the demonstrations of that ceremonious courtesy and civility which the savages highly valued and punctiliously paid and exacted; and some of the tribes no longer received the gifts which it had been customary, at particular periods, to present to them.

In the year 1761, after peace was concluded with the Cherokees, Sir William Johnson made an extensive tour among the Indian tribes, with the view of employing the influence and popularity he possessed with them,[2] to quiet the jealousy which they were known to have conceived from the conquest of Canada, and which it was reported that French emissaries were industriously fomenting; but his exertions were only partially successful. It was not always possible to discover the effect that had been really produced by negotiations with the Indians, who, cultivating secrecy, deception, and surprise, as essential qualities of their policy, were never more prone to profess contentment and friendly dispositions, than at the very

[1] Wirt's *Life of Henry*.

[2] Johnson, without adopting Indian habits, gratified the savages by accommodating his manners to theirs. He even descended to imitate and retort their tricks and knavish manœuvres; and the Indians were better pleased to have their ingenuity foiled in this manner, than to be addressed with the insolence of grave rebuke. A sachem, who came to pay Johnson a visit, announced one morning that he had dreamed, the preceding night, that his host presented him with a rich suit of military apparel. Johnson, according to the Indian custom on such occasions, fulfilled the dream; but next morning related, as a dream of his own, that his guest had presented him with a valuable tract of land. The Indian, regarding him with a sly look, replied, "The land is yours; but let us dream no more." Dwight's *Travels*.

moment when they cherished the most deadly rage and harboured the most sanguinary projects. A conference was held, in the same year, between several of the American governors and the deputies of the Six Nations, for the purpose of ratifying former treaties, and with the hope of conciliating thoroughly and confirming the wavering faith of these confederated tribes. At this conference, a warm dispute arose on account of certain lands, which a chief of the Delaware tribe, allied to the Six Nations, complained that some English settlers had usurped, in consequence of a fraudulent conveyance. Though a seeming accommodation of the dispute was effected at the time, yet was it justly apprehended, from various symptoms in the conduct of the Indians, that their minds were not satisfied, and that they secretly nourished more resentment than they chose openly to avow.

New causes of offence continued to present themselves to men inflamed with jealousy and predisposed to quarrel. The king of Britain had recently issued a proclamation confining all future purchases of lands from the Indians to certain royal commissioners charged with the administration of Indian affairs. This injunction, which was probably intended to render the growth of the colonies tributary to the royal revenue, as well as to obviate the frequent causes of quarrel supplied by the transactions of private adventurers with the Indians, obtained very little regard in America. Perhaps the only method by which the more equitable and pacific of its purposes could have been accomplished would have been to commit the absolute and exclusive power of treating with the Indians for additional lands to the assembly of each respective province. Purchases of lands continued to be made by private individuals; and the Indians, sometimes the dupes of their own rashness and of the knavery of their customers in these transactions, invariably dissipated the price of their alienated property in excesses of debauchery and riot, which were followed by the most stinging sensations of rage, remorse, and mortification. Unhappily, in the midst of these ferments, and aided by their influence, a report was circulated among the Indians that the English had formed a scheme for their entire extirpation. This report, though totally destitute of foundation,[1] obtained general credit, and, combining with the other causes of suspicion and irritation, united a powerful confederacy of Indian tribes in the purpose of revenging their past wrongs, and defeating, by anticipating, the supposed impending blow.

The Indians inhabiting the shores of the Ohio, and especially the Shawanese and Delawares, took the lead in this enterprise; and having engaged the tribes in the vicinity of Detroit, the greater number of the tribes on the same side of the Mississippi, and the Senecas, one of the tribes of the Six Nations, to coöperate in their design, they determined to make a sudden, general, and simultaneous assault on the British frontiers. By the indefatigable exertions of Sir William Johnson, the other tribes of the Six Nations were restrained, though with great difficulty, from plunging into this hostile enterprise, which seemed the last effort of the Indian race to hold at least divided empire with the European colonists of America. The Cherokees also, faithful to their late treaty of peace, abstained from interposition in the war. It was the purpose of the allied and hostile Indians, in order to de-

[1] The only circumstance with which I am acquainted, correspondent even in the slightest degree with this report, is the protestation uttered, about six or seven years before, by some exasperated fanatics in Pennsylvania, that the extirpation of the Indians was a sacrifice due to the glory of God and the security of the Christian colonies of America. See Appendix III., *post*.

stroy at one blow both the colonists and their means of subsistence, that the work of destruction should commence in the season of harvest of the present year. Their plan of operation was concerted and matured with consummate craft and secrecy. At the appointed time, a furious incursion was made upon the provinces of Virginia, Maryland, and Pennsylvania. The precipitancy of some of the Indian warriors defeated in part the more methodical and considerate mischief of the rest, and, communicating an earlier alarm than was intended, enabled a number of the colonists to escape with their movable effects. Great numbers, however, were massacred, and their dwellings and other property desolated with all the circumstances of horror and cruelty attending Indian warfare. In the general panic and consternation created by this fierce and unexpected attack, the frontiers of the three provinces by which it was sustained were deserted to the extent of twenty miles inwards; and multitudes of flourishing settlements, the fruit of many years of hard labor, were abandoned to hostile rage and spoil. The itinerant merchants, at the same time, who, on the security of the existing treaties of peace, had repaired to pursue their traffic in the Indian territories, were all murdered, and their effects, to the value of several hundred thousand pounds, made the prey of the savages. All the great trading towns in America were sufferers from this blow. But what, in a military view, was regarded as of much greater significance, was the capture by the Indians of the forts Le Bœuf, Venango, and Presque Isle. These places derived their importance rather from local position than from their fortifications, which were feeble and incomplete. Situated to the southward of Lake Erie, they commanded the heads of all the navigable rivers in this region, and were subservient, indeed absolutely requisite, to the communication between Pittsburg, the lakes, and the northern garrisons. Inconsiderable in point of strength as the captured forts were, the Indians would probably have failed to reduce them, without the aid of fraud and stratagem in addition to the influence of surprise created by sudden and unforeseen assault. Whenever they invested one of them, they assured the garrison that they had taken all the others; intimidated them by menaces of the danger of withstanding the strength and provoking the vengeance of the additional multitudes of Indians whose near approach they announced; and upon promises of personal safety, which they commonly violated, induced them to surrender their post. By the same artifices, and with similar perfidy, they obtained possession of some other smaller fortresses, and especially of Michilimackinac, the remotest of all the forts that had been erected by the French and annexed to the British dominions by the conquest of Canada. There still remained three fortresses, considerable alike by their strength and the commanding influence of their position, which it was necessary for the Indians to subdue, before they could expect any permanent advantage from their successes. These were Detroit, between the Lakes Huron and Erie; Niagara, between the Lakes Erie and Ontario; and Pittsburg, which overawed the regions and tribes adjacent to the Ohio. The Indians were sensible, that, while these fortresses continued to exist, the most important links of the chain with which they were now encompassed by the British dominion remained unbroken; and against them, accordingly, they reiterated all their exertions of force and policy. Though the theatre of this Indian war was of prodigious extent, and the various belligerent tribes widely disjoined, yet they preserved in their operations an amazing

degree of harmony and concert. Detroit and Pittsburg, though so remote from each other, were begirded almost at the same moment. The consummate address which the Indians displayed on this occasion was supported by a proportionate degree of courage, determination, and perseverance; nor ever did the Indian race approve itself a more stubborn and formidable enemy than in this final stand against the encroachment of European dominion and civility in America.

Amherst, sensible of the danger with which his recent conquests were menaced by the explosion of these hostilities, hastily detached a numerous body of his troops to the succour of the western garrisons. Captain Dalzell, who conducted the detachment intended to reinforce the garrison of Detroit, after he had safely performed this duty [July 29],[1] was deluded by erroneous information into the hope that he could surprise the Indian army, which was posted at the distance of three miles from the fort, and, attacking it under the cover of darkness, inflict a blow that would terminate the war in this quarter. With this view, between two and three o'clock of the morning, he set out from the fort, in quest of the Indian camp, at the head of two hundred and seventy men,—having previously adopted the most judicious precautions for the secrecy and orderly disposition of the march, and (which was equally necessary in American campaigns) for preventing wounded soldiers from falling into the hands of a barbarous foe. But he had undervalued the vigilance and penetration of the Indians, who, perhaps, also derived some advantage from a friendly intelligence with the French settlers in the vicinity. Apprized of his design, they securely prepared to defeat it; and every step of his march from the fort only conducted him farther into the jaws of their dexterous ambuscade. The advance of his troops was suddenly arrested by a sharp fire in their front, which was presently followed by a similar discharge on their rear, and then succeeded by a confounding and destructive volley from every side. It was fatally manifest to the British that they were surprised by the enemy, whom they had themselves rashly undertaken to surprise; and this was all that they could discover; for, in the darkness, neither the position nor the numbers of the Indians could be ascertained. Dalzell fell in the beginning of the affair, and his whole troop were on the brink of irreparable confusion and ruin, when Captain Grant, on whom the command now devolved, perceiving that a safe retreat, his only resource, could not be accomplished without a previous attack upon the enemy, promptly rallied the soldiers, who, steadily and resolutely obeying his orders, charged the Indians with so much spirit and success, as to repulse them on all sides, to some distance. Having thus extricated themselves from immediate peril, the British hastily regained the shelter of the fort, with the loss of seventy men killed and forty wounded. The issue of this unfortunate affair, which deterred them from undertaking any farther offensive operations, was not yet of sufficient importance to encourage their enemies to pursue the siege of a fort so strong, and now supplied with a garrison and provisions fully adequate to its defence. After pausing only long enough to ascertain that the garrison were completely on their guard against stratagem and surprise, the Indians abruptly broke up their camp and retired from the vicinity of Detroit.

[1] An attempt (rendered unsuccessful by treachery among themselves) was made by the Indians, to acquire this place by a most ingenious but fraudful artifice (Marryat's *Diary in America*, Chap. 27), which was afterwards repeated with success by the troops of the Emperor Napoleon against a fortress in Spain.

Pittsburg, meanwhile, was so closely beleaguered on every side, that its communication with the country was completely suspended. Its Indian besiegers supplied, in some measure, their want of skill and of artillery, by the daring and obstinate valor of their assault. Regardless of danger, and exerting a resolution which the most accomplished veterans in European discipline could not have surpassed, they posted themselves on the brink of the river, close to the fort, and, sheltered in holes which they dug, poured upon it an incessant storm of musketry, and of arrows tipped with fire. The scantiness of the garrison, and the meagreness of its stores, rendered the place very ill qualified to support a siege; but its defence was prolonged by the skill and spirit of the commander, Captain Ecuyer, and his troops, who, though perfectly conscious of the difficulty of maintaining their post, were still more strongly impressed with the disgrace and danger of surrendering to a savage and faithless foe.

Aware of the importance of Pittsburg, and judging that the principal efforts of the Indians would be directed against this fortress, Amherst had despatched for its relief a large quantity of military stores and provisions, under the protection of a powerful escort commanded by Colonel Bouquet. This officer conducted his troops and the convoy to the remotest limits of the British settlements, without being able to obtain the slightest intelligence of the state of the garrison, or of the numbers, position, or proceedings of the enemy. In this uncertainty, he prudently determined to disengage himself from all the ammunition and provisions by which his march was loaded, except what he judged to be indispensably requisite to the main object of his enterprise. Thus disencumbered, the English troops entered a rough and mountainous country, and drew nigh to a formidable defile called Turtle Creek, extending several miles in length, and commanded on both sides by steep and craggy hills. Bouquet now proposed, after refreshing his forces, to attempt the passage of this defile during the night, in the hope of eluding the observation of the Indians,—who proved, however, to be nearer and more alert than he imagined. Their vigilance was so much superior to his, or at least so much more successfully exerted, that they had obtained early intelligence of his expedition; and judging it impossible to subdue Pittsburg either before or after the arrival of the approaching reinforcement, they prepared to intercept it. Suspending the siege, they occupied a position from which the advance of Bouquet might be opposed, and his forces attacked with advantage. Could they have foreseen the intention of this commander, and been induced to defer an engagement till after the commencement of the nocturnal march which he proposed, when darkness would have coöperated with the perplexity of the defile, to promote the influence of surprise, and to spread among the British a confusion favorable to the irregular and disorderly style of Indian attack, the forces of Bouquet would probably have fallen an easy prey to the valor and good fortune of the savages. But, whether transported with the hope that their position rendered victory certain, or prompted by the more prudent impulse to attack the British before they had leisure to repose from the fatigues of a march of seventeen miles, they waited only till Bouquet's troops began to make preparation for their refreshment; and then, about one o'clock of the afternoon [August 5], rushed forward with sudden and furious assault on his advanced guard.

All the advantages of this onset, however, proved inferior to the effi-

cacy of order, steadiness, and discipline, exerted with the full assistance of daylight. So firmly was the charge of the Indians sustained, that they were quickly put to flight, and even pursued to a considerable distance. Yet so far were they from abandoning the hope of victory, that, in the very moment when pursuit ended, they returned with redoubled fury to renew the engagement. Several other parties of their forces, which had hitherto lain in ambush on the adjacent heights, now sprang up from their concealment, and, aiding the efforts, as well as emulating the resolution, of their companions, assailed the British with a galling and obstinate fire. To dislodge these assailants from their elevated position, it was necessary to make a charge with the whole line; but though this operation succeeded, it produced no decisive advantage. The Indians had previously ascertained all the military capabilities of the neighbouring country; and no sooner were they driven from one position, than their flight appeared to have been but a rapid movement to gain another not less commanding. The concerted plan they pursued was developed by the increased strength and more formidable attitude which they progressively derived from the constant flow of reinforcements corresponding to every change of the ground they occupied. At length, in consequence of all these successive operations, the English troops were completely surrounded by the enemy, and at the same time withdrawn to a considerable distance from the convoy, which another party of the Indians now attempted to carry by a fierce assault. The main body of the troops were consequently obliged to fall back, in order to prevent the convoy from being lost; and by dint of address and resolution, in spite of every impediment, this movement was seasonably and successfully performed. But though the hard-contested prize was thus snatched from their grasp, the Indians were neither depressed nor intimidated. With undiminished spirit and inveteracy, they pressed their attacks on every side; and the conflict, instead of relaxing, became, every moment, more warm and general. During the whole of this arduous struggle, the English troops were never thrown into the slightest disorder. By their steady discipline, and calm, deliberate courage, they finally maintained the field, and with fixed bayonets repulsed the enemy at every point. The action lasted seven hours, and ended only with the close of day. Happily for the English, the scene of their last struggle, from which it was impossible for them to withdraw, afforded some convenience for an encampment. The convoy and the wounded were placed in the centre, surrounded and guarded by the effective troops. In this posture, and with little repose, the English passed an anxious night; obliged to the strictest vigilance by the vicinity of a subtle and enterprising foe who completely encompassed their position.

At the first dawn of morning [August 6], the Indians began to approach the English camp. On all sides they presented themselves at the same moment, and simultaneously raised the most horrible yells; hoping, by such ostentation of their numbers and fury, to impress a terror that would facilitate their victory. This signal was followed by a series of attacks, conducted with the same mixture of cautious address and ferocious activity which characterized the conflict of the preceding day. The English, enfeebled as they were by their prior exertions, and the sufferings of a sleepless night, were additionally distressed by lack of water, and a consequent thirst more intolerable than the fire of the enemy. In its commencement, the action resembled the former one. The Indians made the most desperate

efforts to penetrate the centre of the camp, and, though constantly repulsed, as constantly resumed their onset without relaxation or dismay. The English, vainly victorious, continually in danger, and exhausted by successes which obviously produced no decisive influence on the fortune of the day, nor impaired in the slightest degree the spirit and alacrity of the foe, were forced to contemplate the melancholy prospect of crumbling away by degrees, till the diminution of their numbers and dissipation of their strength should deliver up the survivors of them to the inglorious yoke of savage bondage or the terrific cruelty of savage torture. Confined to their convoy, they durst not lose sight of it for a moment, without exposing this interesting object, together with all their wounded men, to the pillage and fury of the Indians. Many of the horses were killed or disabled; and most of the drivers, stupefied with fear, hid themselves in the neighbouring thickets, and were incapable of hearing or obeying orders. To advance or retreat was equally impracticable for the British troops. The fate which overtook Braddock's army seemed to impend over them; and this dismal catastrophe was averted only by the genius and skill of their commander. Sensible that he could not extricate himself from his dangerous predicament, without bringing the Indians to abide the issue of a close, general, and sustained encounter, and remarking the increased temerity and audacity with which the success of their manœuvres had latterly inspired them, Bouquet directed a considerable portion of his troops to perform a movement which would ultimately enable them to attack with advantage, provided the seeming indication of flight which it presented should tempt the enemy to deliver battle in a more compact and continuous style. The rest of his troops, meanwhile, by their evolutions seemed to be endeavouring to cover the flight, and supply the loss of the supposed fugitives. Deceived by appearances so congenial to their wishes, and transported with eagerness to reap the fruit of their efforts and expectations, the Indians now discarded the prudent and cautious policy which they had hitherto pursued, and yielded to all their fury. They no longer receded from the first resistance to their assault; but, spreading the battle and pressing forward in a flame of rage and anticipated triumph, exposed themselves to the full effect of the superior skill and vigor of the English; and were overthrown with prodigious slaughter and irreparable rout. This repulse was rendered the more decisive by the fall of some of the bravest and ablest of the Indian chiefs, who had distinguished themselves by the bitterness of their animosity against the English, and, exerting their address while it seemed necessary, reserved their active prowess for the moment of victory, which they prematurely supposed to have arrived, and rashly attempted to accelerate. In their fall was extinguished no mean part of the fuel of the war. The victory was dearly bought by the English, who, besides fifty men killed,[1] were encumbered with such a multitude of wounded, and deprived of so many of their horses at the very time when additional means of conveyance were most urgently requisite, that they were reluctantly compelled to destroy the greatest part of their convoy of provisions, and so far defeat the principal object of their expedition. They had advanced hardly two miles beyond the scene of their late conflicts, when, to their extreme surprise and vexation, their encampment was again beset by the enemy; but this renewed attack was slight and transient; and the Indians, who seemed rather to remem-

[1] See Note XXVI., at the end of the volume.

ber, than to retain the power of executing, the counsels of their fallen chiefs, retired after a slight skirmish, and offered no farther opposition to the advance of the British, who, four days after, arrived at Pittsburg. In spite of the sacrifices which attended their march, this important post was, from the moment of their arrival, freed from all farther attempts and menaces of the enemy.

Though the projects of the hostile Indians received a signal check, and their hopes a grievous disappointment, from the relief of Detroit and Pittsburg, they were not discouraged from making farther efforts in a different quarter. They now bent their main force against Niagara, which they justly esteemed a post of at least equal importance; and, in addition to every other art of annoyance which they were capable of exerting, they proposed, as a last expedient, to reduce it by famine. Their design was favored by the vast distance by which all these posts were separated from each other and from the population of the provincial settlements. With the same vigilance and alertness which characterized their previous operations, the Indians now descried from afar and watched the motions of every convoy despatched to Niagara: and on the 14th of September, surrounding one which had nearly reached the place of its destination, they succeeded in making it their prey by a sudden attack, in which seventy of the British soldiers were slain. Shortly afterwards, as a British schooner was crossing Lake Erie, with provisions for Detroit, she was attacked by a numerous fleet of canoes, on board of which were nearly four hundred Indians. But this attempt was less successful; and, after a sharp engagement, the Indian armada was repulsed with considerable loss. In a conflict with an armed vessel, the savages were exposed to the same disadvantages which attended their operations against fortified places on shore.

By the exertions of the British, the garrisons of the three great western forts which had been thus besieged were at length so powerfully reinforced and so well supplied with stores and provisions, that the Indians, abandoning all hope of reducing them, confined themselves to their wonted style of predatory hostility, and ravaged by furious incursions the frontier settlements of the southern provinces. As they seemed determined to prolong the war, though its chief purpose had manifestly failed, the British government judged it proper to require the colonists to lend the aid of their arms to the regular troops who had hitherto borne the whole brunt of it. In the commencement of the following year [1764], the States of New England were specially invited by letters from Lord Halifax, one of the secretaries of state, and from General Gage, who now succeeded to the command of Amherst, to raise a force that should coöperate with the English troops and the levies supplied by the southern colonies in an invasion of the territory of the hostile Indians. This application was received with much impatience and aversion. The people of New England were far remote from the sphere and interest of the existing war, and plainly showed their disinclination to increase the burdens with which their exertions in the last contest with France had loaded them, in order to combat the Indian enemies of other States, from which New England, in her own similar exigencies, had never obtained or solicited assistance. The assembly of Massachusetts availed itself of a report of the near termination of the war, to evade either compliance with the proposition or a direct refusal. Connecticut was more pliant. Its assembly, though with undisguised reluctance,

resolved, that, in conformity with their duty to promote the king's service, and in order to manifest their obedience to his will, a battalion of two hundred and fifty men should be raised, and conducted by Colonel Putnam to whatever part of North America the commander-in-chief should direct. So little advantage had the royal prerogative obtained in Massachusetts from the tyrannical invasion of the privilege of electing their own governor, which originally belonged to the people of this province, and, without any just or equitable distinction, was still retained by the inhabitants of Connecticut!

Reinforced by the Connecticut battalion, and by some detachments from the militia of the southern colonies, the British troops, commanded by Colonels Bouquet and Bradstreet, attacked the enemy with such spirit and success during the spring and summer, that the vanquished savages at length expressed a sincere desire for peace, and proposed, in Indian phrase, to *bury the hatchet*. In September, there was concluded a treaty of peace, of which the conditions, dictated by the English, were more consonant to the spirit of victors than to the principles of equity. By the articles of this treaty, it was provided, that, within twenty days after the ratification of it, the Indians should deliver up all the prisoners in their hands;[1] that they should renounce all claim to the forts which the English then possessed in their country; that the English should have liberty to build as many more as they might deem requisite to the security of their trade; and that the Indians should cede to them for ever all the surrounding land within the range of cannon-shot from each respective fort. It was also stipulated, that, if any Indian should kill an Englishman, he was to be delivered up by his tribe to be judged by the English laws, and that half of the jury on his trial should consist of Indians; and that, if any of the Indian tribes should renew the war, the rest were to aid the efforts of the English to produce an accommodation. It has been censoriously remarked by the honest and sensible historian of Connecticut, that this treaty expressed no reciprocal concessions on the part of the English, who were transported, by resentment, success, and thirst of immediate advantage, beyond all consideration of the common rights, condition, and fortune of humanity. No engagement was contracted by them to surrender to public justice the English murderers of Indians; nor was any equivalent stipulated for those territorial appendages which the Indians were obliged to cede to them around not only every fort which they then possessed, but every other which they might think proper subsequently to erect. This last observation conveys a far severer censure than a reasonable consideration of the former can be allowed to imply. It was not inconsistent with a just respect for the rights of human nature, that Britain should consult the safety of her people by requiring that their murderers should abide the issue of that fair transcript of natural law which her judicial system discloses in the trial and punishment of murder; and the interest of the accused was amply protected by that provision for the composition of his jury which rendered it necessary that his guilt should be ascertained by the concurrent sentence of his own countrymen. But it would have been utterly inconsistent with British honor, real humanity, and Christian sentiment, to have surrendered an Englishman, charged with mur-

[1] Many of the Indians were struck with the deepest anguish and wept bitterly, when they were compelled to surrender the white children whom they had kidnapped, and for whom they had conceived a remarkable warmth and tenderness of affection. An interesting account of their demeanour on this occasion is preserved in the *Annual Register for* 1765.

dering an Indian, or with any other crime, to the uncertain inquisition of savage jurisprudence or the infliction of that barbarous revenge which coincided with Indian ideas of justice and propriety. In all the American provinces, at this time, the murder either of a white man or an Indian was a capital crime. It must, indeed, be confessed that the equality of this legal provision was in practice generally disturbed and defeated by the violent prejudices and resentments with which the colonists were transported by their experience of Indian perfidy and cruelty. It was so difficult at this time, as to be accounted impossible, even in New England and Pennsylvania, to induce a provincial jury to deliver up one of their countrymen to the executioner for the slaughter of an Indian; and the provincial governments were frequently obliged by presents to soothe the rage of Indian tribes to whom the inefficient theory of British justice was unable to afford more honorable satisfaction.[1]

A remarkable transaction occurred this year in Pennsylvania, where the disputes between the proprietaries and the assembly which had so long agitated the province, and at last were seemingly composed, suddenly broke out with more violence than ever. The proprietaries were discontented with the concessions which the people had obtained from them, and never ceased to cherish the hope of again resuming that pretension, which we have seen them unwillingly relinquish, of exempting their own estates from the provincial taxation. It was, doubtless, with the view of promoting this and other kindred purposes, that, in the year 1763, the government of the province was withdrawn from the hands of James Hamilton, and conferred on John Penn, whose father, Richard, was one of the proprietaries. This new governor's assumption of his functions was the signal for recommencement of former disagreements and controversies. The assembly having passed a militia bill in the same year, he refused his assent to it, without the introduction of certain amendments, which consisted in transferring the nomination of the officers from the people, who had hitherto exercised it, to himself; in increasing all the pecuniary fines by which neglect of musters and of other military duty was punished; and substituting, in some cases, the punishment of *death* in place of fine. These amendments were resisted by the assembly, as inconsistent with the spirit of liberty; but the governor was obstinate in preferring the authority of himself and his family to the public will; and, as neither party would yield, the bill was lost. Other occurrences of a similar character contributed to widen the breach between the proprietaries and the assembly, and to increase the regret with which many of the inhabitants, and even the Quakers, had seen and acknowledged of late that the executive government was not sufficiently strong to enforce the provisions of law and the dictates of justice and humanity, to defend either the safety of the State against foreign hostility, or its honor and dignity against the internal ebullition of popular prejudice, rage, and violence.[2] The assembly were at length so highly exasperated against the proprietaries, that, in the present year, they resolved to present a petition to the king, imploring a change of the political constitution of Pennsylvania, correspondent to the innovation which the crown had formerly sanctioned in the instance of Carolina,[3] — the substitution of a *regal* in place of a *proprietary* government.

[1] *Annual Register for* 1763 and 1764. Trumbull. Hutchinson. Franklin's *Memoirs*. Belknap. Minot.

[2] See *post*, Appendix III.

[3] *Ante*, Book VIII., Chap. II.

This proceeding, which, if not originally suggested, was warmly supported, by Dr. Franklin, occasioned a violent ferment in the province, where many good men, though opposed to the unjust and insolent pretensions of the proprietaries, were shocked at the idea of a revolution so dishonorable to the memory and the family of that illustrious person to whom Pennsylvania owed its social origin and its name. The partisans of the measure, themselves, endeavoured to propitiate the public reverence for the name of William Penn, and justified their policy by appealing to the conduct of this patriarch himself, who, they remarked with truth, was prevented only by sickness and death from completing the transaction he had commenced for a surrender of his proprietary functions to the crown.[1] Amidst the collision and confusion of political sentiment that ensued, the proprietaries gained the advantage of alienating so many of the citizens of Philadelphia from their former regard for Franklin, that, at the annual election in the autumn of this year, he was deprived of the seat, which, as their representative, he had enjoyed for fourteen years in the provincial assembly. But the delusiveness of this triumph appeared, when the assembly, at its first meeting after the election, espoused the petition which had been previously voted, and intrusted to Franklin the duty of conveying it, and the honor of again representing the province, as its agent, at London. This appointment — which was suggested not less by Franklin's character, and former success in advocating the interests of his countrymen, than by the peculiarity of his present situation, which precluded him from lending his support to their cause in the assembly — was farther recommended by the influence and consideration which he appeared to possess at the British court. In the preceding year, his natural son, William Franklin, whether as a tribute to the father's merit and fame, or in recompense of his own valor, which had been honorably displayed during the last war with France, obtained the powerful recommendation of Lord Bute to the appointment of governor of New Jersey,[2] which was accordingly bestowed upon him. By the exertions of Governor Penn and the interest of the proprietaries, the embassy of Franklin from Pennsylvania to England was opposed in the assembly with a violence, which, though unsuccessful, appears to have keenly affected the feelings of Franklin, and given him a painful foretaste of that sacrifice of private friendship which every man who takes an active part in civil broils must either inflict or incur, and, at all events, should firmly prepare himself to undergo.[3] Of his present mission the immediate object proved, indeed, unsuccessful. The petition of the Pennsylvanian assembly to the throne was rejected, and the proprietary government allowed to remain unchanged.[4] But Franklin's sojourn in Europe proved far longer than he had expected; and this, his second embassage to England, as the representative of a portion of his countrymen, was attended with consequences more deeply and largely important to America than either its promoters or opponents had anticipated.

---

[1] *Ante*, Book VII., Chap. II.

[2] The salary of this office at that time was one thousand pounds a year. Burnaby's *Travels*.

[3] In one of the political compositions published by Franklin at this period, he expresses a deep and manly, but not repentant, sorrow for the hostility which he had provoked from men (says he) "the very ashes of whose former friendship I revere." — "*Esto perpetua*," he adds, with votive benediction of Pennsylvania and its social system: — a wish more propitious to human happiness than that of *Father Paul*, of Venice, from whom the expression is derived

[4] Proud. S. Smith. Franklin's *Memoirs*.

APPENDIX III.

Condition of the North American States — Virginia — New England — Maryland — the Carolinas — New York, New Jersey, and Pennsylvania — Georgia. — Political Feelings and Ideas in Britain and America. — Benjamin West. — Indian Affairs. — Moravian Missions.

At this interesting epoch [1764], we may with propriety pause awhile, to survey some particulars of the condition of the North American States, supplemental to the views occasionally disclosed from various points of our progress along the main stream of events. Though, from the defect of materials, our survey must be far less minute and extended than its importance deserves, yet, by collecting the scattered rays which may be extracted from various existing sources of information, some additional light can be thrown on the state of society in America at the present period, when a signal crisis in her fortune had occurred, and a grander and more important crisis in her fortune and political condition was at hand.

The war, which issued in the triumphs we have witnessed over the French, the Spaniards, and the Indians, exercised during its continuance a mischievous influence on the population and prosperity of the American provinces, which, however, the vigor and virtue of their excellent constitutions, aided by the happy result of the contest, enabled them very speedily to surmount. In the commencement of the war, the successes of the French and the ferocious ravages of the Indians tended to repress the flow of emigration from Europe to America; and, during the whole of its continuance, the sacrifice of life and resources, yielded to military exigence, and inflicted by hostile rage, diminished the means and the activity of domestic increase. But the progressive growth of America, though impeded, was by no means arrested during this war. In every instance in which materials for judgment can be obtained, we find the various States more wealthy and populous at the period of the treaty of Paris, than at the preceding date of the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle.

From Virginia, in the year 1758, there were exported seventy thousand hogsheads of tobacco, — "the largest quantity of this produce," says Jefferson, "ever exported from the colony in a single year."[1] The population of this province is said to have amounted, in 1763, to one hundred and seventy thousand persons, of whom one hundred thousand were slaves.[2] Burnaby, an English gentleman and scholar, who visited the North Ameri-

[1] *Notes on Virginia.* The average export was 55,000 hogsheads of 1,000 pounds each. Tucker's *Life of Jefferson.* About the year 1763, the herbage of Britain was enriched by the importation from Virginia of some valuable species of grass previously unknown in Europe. *Annual Register for* 1765. The researches which terminated in this beneficial result seem to have originated from the notion, conceived and suggested by Wych, an ingenious member of the London Society for the Encouragement of Arts, aided by Rocque, a French farmer settled in England, "that, as there are many animals which subsist wholly on the fruits of the earth, there must certainly be some plant or herb which is fit food for them, that naturally vegetates in winter; otherwise we must suppose the Almighty to have made creatures without providing for their subsistence, till they were taken by man out of the hands of nature and provided with dry food," &c. Ib.

[2] Warden. This computation, though adopted by several writers, is probably too low. President Adams, in his *Twenty-six Letters on Important Subjects*, asserts that Virginia, in 1764, contained 200,000 inhabitants.

can colonies in 1759 and 1760, and afterwards published an account of his travels, remarks that the progress of arts and sciences had been very slight and scanty in Virginia, where the College of William and Mary was yet the only established seminary of education, and by no means fulfilled the designs of its founders. This writer has expressed his conviction that no considerable town would arise in Virginia for some centuries.[1] The following description of the state of society in this province has been transmitted by an intelligent person, who was one of its inhabitants at the present period. From the character of the author (Wirt), by whom it has been approved and preserved, there is reason to believe it substantially just; but it is probably overcharged, as general descriptions of human character and manners commonly are. "In a country insulated from the European world, insulated from its sister colonies, with whom there was scarcely any intercourse, little visited by foreigners, and having little matter to act upon within itself, certain families had risen to splendor by wealth, and by the preservation of it from generation to generation, under the law of entails; and some of these had produced a series of men of talents. Families, in general, had remained stationary on the grounds of their forefathers, for there was no emigration to the westward in those days: the Irish, who had gotten possession of the valley between the Blue Ridge and the North Mountain, formed a barrier over which none ventured to leap; and their manners presented no attraction to the lowlanders to settle among them. In such a state of things, scarcely admitting any change of station, society settled itself down into several *strata*, separated by no marked lines, but shading off imperceptibly from top to bottom, nothing disturbing the order of their repose. There were, then, first, aristocrats, composed of the great landholders, who had seated themselves below tide-water on the main rivers, and lived in a style of luxury and extravagance insupportable by the other inhabitants, and which, indeed, ended, in several instances, in the ruin of their own fortunes. Next to these were what might be called *half-breeds*, the descendants of the younger sons and daughters of the aristocrats, who inherited the pride of their ancestors, without their wealth. Then came the pretenders, men who, from vanity, or the impulse of growing wealth, or from that enterprise which is natural to talents, sought to detach themselves from the plebeian ranks, to which they properly belonged, and imitated, at some distance, the manners and habits of the great. Next to these were a solid and independent yeomanry, looking askance at those above, yet not venturing to jostle them. And last and lowest, a *fæcula* of beings, called overseers, the most abject, degraded, unprincipled race; the flatterers of the great who employed them, and furnishing materials for the exercise of their pride, insolence, and spirit of domination."[2] The duties of these last mentioned persons, as the title by which they are distinguished imports, had relation to the management of that class of inhabitants, far more numerous than all the others, but of whose situation no notice has been preserved, — the negro slaves. A dismal conjecture of the real condition of this unhappy race necessarily arises from the character ascribed to those men to whom the power of aggravating or mitigating their bondage was confided.

To the class of Virginian yeomanry belonged Patrick Henry, whose

[1] Burnaby's *Travels through the Middle Settlements in North America.* Burnaby states that there were few Dissenters of any denomination in Virginia. But this is quite erroneous, — and strangely so, from a man who passed ten months in the province.

[2] Wirt's *Life of Henry.*

sudden and remarkable rise above the political horizon has already engaged our notice. Improving with equal ability and success the first happy fruits of his genius and fortune, Henry advanced with rapid strides to an acknowledged preëminence of all his contemporaries in Virginia, except Washington, whose character and capacity were of an entirely different description. And yet Virginia, at this period, was graced with the talents of Jefferson, the Randolphs, the Lees, and many other able, accomplished, and enterprising men. Henry's elevation, feebly obstructed for a while by the envy which mingled with the astonishment of the higher classes of Virginian society, was warmly seconded by the awakened spirit and energy of that class to which he peculiarly belonged, — to whose interests he devoted himself with unshaken fidelity and exhaustless zeal; and which, regarding him as its especial property, recognized its own triumph in the advancement of its favorite and champion. His invariable declaration as a politician was, that he *bowed to the majesty of the people*; and while he illustrated this profession by the whole strain of his brilliant career, he exercised a powerful influence on the destiny of his countrymen, and was carried aloft in the sequel by the fervor of their admiration, and their eagerness to assert their own republican majesty, to the highest pinnacle of official grandeur and distinction in Virginia.[1]

Massachusetts contained, in the year 1763, a population of at least two hundred and forty-one thousand persons, — of whom five thousand two hundred were slaves; Connecticut, one hundred and forty-five thousand five hundred, — of whom four thousand five hundred were slaves; and Rhode Island, upwards of forty thousand, — of whom four thousand six hundred were slaves. The population of New Hampshire at this period has not been distinctly noted; but in the year 1767 it is said to have amounted to fifty-two thousand seven hundred persons.[2] Of the population of Maine no notice has been transmitted. These numbers are certainly too low; and more credit is due to the computation of Dr. Stiles, who assigns to the whole of New England, at the present period, a population of upwards of five hundred thousand souls.[3] The States of New England were more eager to increase their population than to publish the details of its progressive growth. In the year 1763, the British ministers, who were intent upon schemes of rendering the resources of America directly tributary to the revenue of the parent state, instructed the governor of Massachusetts to obtain for them an accurate census of the number of inhabitants of this province. In compliance with their wish, the governor proposed to the assembly to enact a law requiring every parish and district to ascertain and report the amount of its population. But this measure was opposed with strong manifestations both of patriotic jealousy and of Puritan prejudice. Many persons entertained a suspicion (which the frame of their temper would have

[1] Wirt's *Life of Henry*. The utility, though not the agreeableness, of the moral lesson which Henry's history is fitted to convey is increased by the recollection, that, in the close of his life, even his great and well-deserved popularity was eclipsed, in consequence of his conscientious dissent on a political question from the majority of that people whose independence and glory he had signally contributed to promote. Such instances of the fleeting tenure of popular favor, while they damp the ardor of the selfish and splenetic, refine the motives and elevate the views of the upright and disinterested professors of patriotism. If Henry at all deserved his final loss of popularity, it was by occasionally stooping to arts, not base indeed, but very undignified, of augmenting it. He is said to have on many occasions affected a gross vulgarity of language and pronunciation, in order to gratify the vanity of the coarsest and most ignorant part of the provincial population.

[2] Warden. Holmes.

[3] Stiles, *apud* Holmes.

led them to infer from slighter grounds) that some sinister design of British tyranny and encroachment was couched under the proceeding; and not a few opposed it with religious scruples, and assimilated it to King David's unhallowed and calamitous policy in *numbering the people of Israel*. After being postponed from session to session, the proposed law was reluctantly passed by a small majority of the assembly;[1] and executed, most probably, with little diligence or exactness.

This was not the only recent instance of the traces that yet lingered in popular usage and sentiment, and even in the provincial jurisprudence, of that strong Puritan leaven which was originally imported into New England. Symptoms of the austere and rigid spirit of the first Puritan colonists broke forth on various occasions, during this century, in proceedings that remind us of the primitive statutes against finery of apparel and long or elaborately curled hair. The government of Connecticut repeatedly issued orders for reviving a strict execution of ancient laws against tale-bearing, tavern-haunting, idleness, and "the unseasonable assemblies of young people." We have formerly remarked[2] a law, by which, in the year 1646, the legislature of Massachusetts denounced the punishment of flogging against any man bestowing the salute of a kiss on a woman in the streets. A curious instance has been related of the execution of this law, more than a century after its enactment. We are informed by Burnaby the traveller, that, shortly before his visit to America (which took place in 1759), the captain of a British man-of-war, which was stationed off the coast of Massachusetts for the protection of its trade during the last war with France, happened to return from a cruise on a Sunday to Boston, where he had left his wife. Learning his arrival, this lady rushed down to the harbour to meet him; and, in a transport of joy, they could not refrain from tenderly embracing each other in the open street. For this breach of the laws and desecration of the Sabbath, the captain was summoned to appear before the magistrates, who, after a grave rebuke, sentenced him to be flogged. The punishment seems to have inferred no ignominy whatever; and, after having undergone it, he was freely admitted into the best company of the place, and even into the society of the magistrates, who so little guessed the resentment which lurked in his bosom, as to accept an invitation to an entertainment on board of his vessel on the day when she was to leave the station and sail for England. After regaling them with a handsome feast, he caused his sailors to flog them all on the deck of the vessel in sight of the town; and then telling them that he and they had now settled all their mutual claims and debts, he dismissed them and set sail. This story (somewhat varied) appeared in the English newspapers at the time. Burnaby declares that he was assured of the truth of it by the most respectable inhabitants of Boston.[3] Probably the strictness and even severity of manners prescribed by the laws of Massachusetts and Connecticut contributed, with the heavy taxes occasioned by their military exertions, to those frequent emigrations which now began to take place from their territories to Nova Scotia, New York, and others of the British colonies.

The conquest of the French dominions, and the reduction of the hostile Indians, which communicated a new energy to the principle of increase in all the British colonies, was beneficial in an especial degree to New England. In New Hampshire, more particularly, this advantage was speedily and strik

[1] Hutchinson. [2] *Ante*, Book II., Chap. II. [3] Burnaby

ingly apparent. For many years, the frontiers of this province had been, with little intermission, a scene of suffering and danger from the incursions of the Indian allies of France. At the conclusion of the war, many of the inhabitants of New Hampshire were enabled to return from savage captivity to their homes; and friends who had long been separated were restored to each other's society. The general joy was heightened by the consideration that Canada would no longer be a source of terror and distress. Relieved from this scourge, New Hampshire began to expand with happy vigor in the extension of settlements and the multiplication of its people. From the peace of Paris may be dated the flourishing state of this province, which till then was circumscribed and stinted in its growth by the continual pressure of danger from a savage enemy. But now that the land had rest, its frontiers were rapidly peopled and extended, both by internal increase, and by copious emigration from the other States of New England; and the territory, in particular, subsequently distinguished by the name of Vermont, and whose original cultivation we have already remarked, began to fill apace with inhabitants. Proportioned to its replenishment, unfortunately, was the warmth of the controversy in which New Hampshire and New York urged their rival pretensions to the government of this territory. The colonists of Vermont, who would probably have submitted with little opposition to the jurisdiction of New York, were provoked to the most violent and determined resistance of this pretension by the claims for heavy fines and quit-rents which were blended with it. Encouraged by two leaders of ardent and daring spirit, Ethan Allen and Seth Warner, both natives of Connecticut, a numerous body of the colonists, with arms in their hands, rejected the mandates and defied the menaces of the government of New York; and though the assembly of this province enacted a decree of outlawry against Allen and Warner, its power was unavailing to carry the sentence into effect, or to overcome the opposition which these adventurers promoted. The controversy was conducted with a virulence unfriendly to civilization and humanity; but it proved eventually serviceable in a high degree to the political interests of America, by educating a prompt and vigorous spirit of self-defence among the growing population of Vermont.[1]

A passion for occupying new territories and forming new settlements rose to an amazing height in New Hampshire, and in every other quarter of New England;[2] and the gratification of this taste fostered a stubborn resolution and habits of daring and hardy enterprise, congenial to the prevalent sentiments of independence, and propitious to the efforts which these sentiments portended. The continual migrations of this provincial race from their own proper territory to every other quarter of America exerted also (as it still continues to exert) a highly beneficial effect in improving and assimilating all the American communities, by spreading through their people the knowledge and virtue, the spirit, character, and habits so diligently cultivated in New England, and so honorably distinctive of her peculiar population. Among other new settlements created by the exuberant vigor of New England at this period was one whose primitive manners and hap

[1] When the king's attorney at New York urged Ethan Allen to abandon his opposition to the pretensions of this province, reminding him that *might commonly prevails over right*, Allen coolly replied, "The gods of the valleys are not gods of the hills." Allen was at the head of a numerous and determined body of hardy planters who were called "The Green Mountain Boys," from a range of hills within the territory which they inhabited. The name *Vermont* is derived from a translation into French of the name of these hills.

[2] Belknap. Williams's *History of Vermont*. Ira Allen's *History of Vermont*

piness, as well as the miserable desolation which it subsequently underwent in the Revolutionary War, have been rescued from neglect and oblivion by the genius of a poet of Scotland, — the settlement of Wyoming, on the banks of the river Susquehannah. The territory of this settlement had been purchased several years before, by an association of Connecticut planters, from the Indian confederacy of the Six Nations; but first the war with France, and afterwards the war with the Indians, deterred the resort of inhabitants to the soil till the year 1763, when it was first colonized by emigrants from Connecticut. The social union of various races of men, and the conversion of gallant warriors into patriarchs and husbandmen, so beautifully described by Campbell, in his *Gertrude of Wyoming*, is rendered probable by the increased resort which now took place of emigrants to America from every quarter of Europe, including a considerable number of British officers, who, deprived of their occupation by the peace, and smitten with the charms of rural life in America, transferred their residence to a land to which their victorious heroism had imparted additional value and security. This settlement, like the occupation of the Vermont territory, gave rise to a controversy on which poetry has no colors to bestow. A keen litigation for the dominion of it arose between the government of Connecticut, to which it properly belonged, and the proprietaries of Pennsylvania, who derived a plausible claim from the vagueness of their charter, and who, like the royal governors of New York and New Hampshire, were eager to augment their emoluments by multiplying the occasions of exacting fees for grants of land, to which the grantees had already, by previous purchase from the natural owners, a much more equitable title than those pretenders to sovereignty were able to confer.[1]

Shortly after the conquest of Canada, there was discovered at the mouth of the river St. Lawrence a valuable whale-fishery, which had been unknown to the French. Its resources were made tributary to the people of New England with such prompt and progressive vigor of appropriation, that in the year 1761 ten New England ships, and in 1763 no fewer than eighty, were profitably employed in this adventure.[2]

In New England, at this period, there were at least five hundred and thirty Congregational churches, besides the ecclesiastical associations which were framed upon the model of the church of England, and had of late years considerably extended their influence in all the States.[3] Much genuine piety still survived in New England; and this noble principle would probably have obtained both a wider range and a more lasting empire, if the antiquated institutions of Puritanism had been sooner and more fully surrendered to the changes which the innovating current of time had accomplished in the frame of general sentiment and opinion. But laws enacted by the fathers of New England, and consecrated by long respect, were more easily defended by a few zealous partisans, than abrogated by the indifference or dislike of a more numerous but disunited portion of the community. The professors of Puritan principles in New England had been always the stanchest advocates of provincial liberty; and perhaps their favorite policy of blending religious with political ordinances was now rather prudentially supported than sincerely espoused by the strong and rising party which regarded every object as of secondary importance, in comparison with the exaltation of popular power and the promotion of American independ-

[1] Trumbull. [2] *Annual Register for* 1764. [3] Holmes.

ence. Proud of the generous daring and fortitude, but ashamed of the fervent, though sometimes coarse and erring, piety of their forefathers, many New England patriots were willing to uphold in the amplest show of obsequious respect the ordinances of the primitive Puritans; while more or less consciously, and more or less openly, they studied to translate the religious zeal, which was the real parent principle of their conduct, into more earthborn fire, affecting nothing higher than political freedom. Others, confounding religion with one particular model of its outward ordinances, clung with traditionary reverence to practices of which the originating spirit and vital principle had subsided or departed. Such circumstances could not fail to engender consequences the most pernicious to the purity of Christian doctrine, and the warmth and sincerity of Christian sentiment. Laws and usages substantially condemned by the sentiments of a great majority of the social community, but preserved by the honest conviction of a few admirers, and the acquiescence of indifferent or interested supporters, could produce only grimace and formality; and infallibly tended to a general dereliction of that system of Christian piety which human weakness sought to incorporate with the mouldering fabric of its own fleeting institutions.[1]

No fewer than five printing-presses were at this time maintained in constant employment at Boston. Within the limits of the old Plymouth territory, which was now annexed to this province, there still remained upwards of nine hundred Indians. In the island of Nantucket about three hundred and fifty of this race were still to be found. In Duke's county, in the same province, there remained about three hundred Indians; and at Natick only thirty-seven of the Indian inhabitants survived. Nearly one thousand Indians continued to occupy lands within the territory of Connecticut. In the months of September and October, 1760, more than one hundred bears were killed in one district of the county of Hampshire, in Massachusetts. The manufacture of sugar and molasses from the juice of the maple-tree was first introduced into New England in the year 1765.[2]

Of the population and condition of Maryland at the present period no memorial has been preserved. The proprietary authority still subsisted in the family of Lord Baltimore; and though it was not exercised with that sordid and illiberal policy which provoked so much dislike against the kindred institution in Pennsylvania, it seems to have been regarded with little respect or affection. We have formerly remarked[3] a law of this province by which the importation of felons from the parent state was prohibited. But either this law was subsequently repealed, or, more probably, it had fallen into desuetude; for in the chronicles of English judicial transactions Maryland is more frequently particularized than any of the other colonies as the scene to which felons were conveyed. Four years after the present epoch, the proprietary himself was in some danger of being included in the annual cargo of convicts from England, and compelled to reside as an exiled felon in the country where he possessed the prerogative of a feudal sovereign. Frederick Calvert, Lord Baltimore, the unworthy descendant of the first

[1] This subject is illustrated with excellent sense and enlightened piety in two anniversary discourses by the Rev. W. P. Lunt, published at Boston in 1840. "Il semble que le Seigneur ait chargé successivement certaines portions particulières de son Eglise d'élever pour un temps le flambeau de sa parole parmi les hommes; et que lors que leur temps assigné est échû, il transporte sur d'autres cette tâche magnifique." Bost.

[2] *Universal History*. Holmes. *Annual Register for* 1760 and 1765.

[3] *Ante*, Book III.

proprietaries of Maryland, was an accomplished scholar and wit,[1] but an utter stranger to piety, morality, and decency. During the lifetime of Frederick, Prince of Wales, son of George the Second, he formed one of the tribe of factious and intriguing politicians of whom the petty court of that prince was composed, and is mentioned with no small opprobrium in the *Diary* of his associate, Lord Melcombe. He openly professed a systematic and exclusive devotion to voluptuous pleasure, and a contempt for all restraints except the penal laws of human society; and yet these laws, which he alone regarded, had nearly inflicted on him a doom equally unjust and ignominious. A consequence, by no means extraordinary, of one of the profligate amours which he indulged, was a false charge of rape, for which he underwent criminal trial at the assizes for the English county of Surrey in the year 1768. He was acquitted after a long judicial inquiry, in the course of which, though he denied the particular guilt imputed to him, he openly admitted his general libertinism in a speech more remarkable for its elegance than its modesty. It is impossible to doubt that the character and conduct of this nobleman, whom the people of Maryland were compelled to recognize as their proprietary sovereign, produced on their minds an impression very remote from respect for the institutions and supremacy of the parent state. The title, which Lord Baltimore thus disgraced, became extinct at his own death, which occurred at Naples in the year 1771. He bequeathed his rights over the province of Maryland to his natural son, Henry Harford, who was then a child at school, and whom the subsequent rupture between Britain and America prevented from ever deriving any advantage from the bequest.[2]

North Carolina, in the year 1763, is reported to have contained about ninety-five thousand white inhabitants. The contentment and prosperity of the people of this province had suffered a much greater abatement from the extortion and injustice practised by Governor Dobbs and other administrators of British authority, than from their share, comparatively a small one, of the calamities of the late Indian wars. Amidst a great deal of genuine American virtue and happiness, North Carolina contained a more numerous body of indigent and discontented freemen than existed in any or perhaps all of the other British settlements. Education was generally neglected; the laws and the executive officers enjoyed little influence or respect; and it was difficult among this people to recover payment of debts, or to obtain satisfaction for injuries.[3]

South Carolina, which had continued to advance in growth, notwithstanding the pressure of the war, reaped an ample and immediate share of the advantages resulting from the peace of Paris. In consequence of an act of its assembly, which appropriated a large fund to the payment of bounties to industrious laborers from Great Britain and Ireland, and to all foreign Protestants, resorting to the province within three years and forming settlements in its interior districts, vast numbers of emigrants from Germany, England, Scotland, and especially Ireland, eagerly embraced the prospect

[1] He published *A Tour to the East in* 1763–4, and some other literary compositions of slender merit and little note.

[2] *Annual Register for* 1768 and *for* 1771. Lord Melcombe's *Diary*. "Whatever was the aberrance of the last Lord Baltimore, he did not participate in the late unhappy measures [of the British government]. Maryland continued to grow in people, wealth, and happiness under his proprietarship. Men of genius and enterprise were found in every county; and the capital had become a little court of taste and fashion." Griffith's *History of Maryland*.

[3] Williamson Holmes.

and became citizens of the New World in South Carolina. Hither, in the year 1764, were transported, at the charitable expense of the British government and people, several hundreds of indigent but pious and industrious Germans who had repaired to England on the faith of an invitation from an adventurer of their own country, but were abandoned by him when he found himself unable to fulfil his promise of conducting them to occupy a territorial grant which he had hoped to obtain in America. In 1765, the province contained one hundred and thirty thousand inhabitants, of whom ninety thousand were slaves. Most of the free colonists were in easy circumstances; and some instances were not wanting of great accumulations of wealth. "It has been remarked," says the historian Hewit, at this period, "that there are more persons possessed of between five and ten thousand pounds sterling in South Carolina, than are to be found anywhere else among the same number of people. In point of rank, all men regard their neighbours as their equals, and a noble spirit of benevolence pervades the society." The planters were generally distinguished by their hospitable dispositions, their sociable manners, and the luxurious cheer of their tables. Almost every family kept a one-horse chaise; and some maintained the most splendid equipages that Britain could furnish. All the new literary publications in London were regularly transmitted to this province. Hunting and horse-racing were favorite amusements of the men. Assemblies, concerts, balls, and plays were common. "It is acknowledged by all," says Hewit, "but especially by strangers, that the ladies in this province considerably outshine the men.[1] They are not only sensible, discreet, and virtuous, but also adorned with most of those polite and elegant accomplishments becoming their sex." A wasteful and slovenly system of husbandry prevailed throughout all South Carolina.[2]

From the year 1756, when the State of New York, as we have seen, contained about ninety-seven thousand white inhabitants, no notice occurs of its population till the year 1771, when the number of white inhabitants is said to have amounted to upwards of one hundred and forty-eight thousand.[3] The advance of population in this province was repressed by the monopoly which a few wealthy planters had obtained of vast tracts of land, which reduced many emigrants to the necessity of becoming tenants instead of proprietors, and prompted many more to abandon their original purpose of settling in New York, and extend their migration to other provinces, where land could be obtained on terms more satisfactory. No credible statement has been transmitted of the population of New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware, or Georgia, at this epoch, nor at any subsequent period prior to the American Revolution. They had all, doubtless, considerably enlarged their growth, which now advanced with an amazing increase of vigor, from the security afforded by the treaty of Paris, and the augmented flow of emigration from every part of Europe. In the year 1760, the Quakers formed about a fifth part of the population of Pennsylvania.[4]

The inhabitants of the town of New York at this period are described as almost wholly engrossed with mercantile pursuits, from which they sought a relaxation in gay, expensive, and ostentatious festivity, — little

[1] This praise was justified in a very remarkable manner in the year 1780, when the courageous patriotism and inflexible fortitude of the women of South Carolina restored the expiring cause of liberty in the province.

[2] Warden. Hewit. *Annual Register for* 1764.

[3] Ramsay's *History of the American Revolution.*

[4] Burnaby.

conscious or heedful, in general, of any value that was not demonstrable by legers or recognized in commercial transactions, and far inferior in refinement of taste, elevation of sentiment, and extent of knowledge, to the citizens of Philadelphia. An injurious influence was exerted on the manners and habits of society in New York by the number of adventurers whose residence in the place was merely temporary, and who resorted to it for the purpose of accumulating fortunes with which they hoped to purchase pleasure or distinction in the metropolitan cities of Europe.[1] Yet some learned and ingenious men were produced in New York, and found a kindred spirit and willing associate in Colden, for many years the lieutenant-governor of the province, who was an accomplished scholar and philosopher, and devoted his leisure from official duty to the pursuits of literature with enterprising vigor and distinguished success.[2] In the year 1758, a course of academic tuition was commenced in a college at New York, for which a charter and a grant of money had been obtained from the crown four years before. In 1759, a donation of five hundred pounds was made to this institution by the society established in Britain for the propagation of the gospel in foreign parts; and in 1764, more than ten thousand pounds was collected by subscription in England for the benefit of the colleges of New York and Philadelphia.[3] A *Society for the Promotion of Arts, Agriculture, and Economy in the Province of New York* was established there in 1765, on the plan of the Society of Arts at London.

Belcher, the governor of New Jersey, dying in 1757, was succeeded in the following year by Francis Bernard, whom we have seen removed to the government of Massachusetts in 1760, when he was replaced in New Jersey by Thomas Boone. In 1761, Josiah Hardy succeeded to Boone, who was advanced to the government of South Carolina; and in 1763, Hardy was replaced by William, a natural son of Dr. Benjamin Franklin.[4] We have remarked the assumption of the government of Pennsylvania in 1763 by John Penn, son of one of the proprietaries. He retained this office till 1771, when he was superseded by his brother Richard; but on the death of their father in the same year, John, who then became himself a proprietary, again assumed the government of the province.[5]

In none of the British colonies were the advantages attendant on the treaty of Paris more speedily or strikingly manifested than in Georgia. This young provincial community, destitute of commercial credit, and peculiarly exposed to hostile molestation, had hitherto experienced but a feeble and languid progress; but from the present period it advanced with sudden and surprising rapidity in wealth and population. The British merchants, considering the colony securely established and likely to attain a flourishing estate, were no longer backward in extending credit to its planters, and freely supplied them with negroes and with the produce of the manufactures of Britain. But the colony was mainly indebted for the sudden growth which it now exhibited to its governor, Sir James Wright, who was endowed with wisdom to discern and resolution to pursue the most effectual means

[1] Galt's *Life of West*. Grant's *Memoirs of an American Lady*.

[2] Colden is most generally known by his excellent *History of the Five Nations*. He was also the author of a treatise entitled *Explication of the First Causes of Action in Matter and of the Causes of Gravitation*, published at New York in 1745.

[3] Winterbotham. Miller's *Retrospect of the Eighteenth Century*. *Annual Register for* 1759, *for* 1764, and *for* 1765.

[4] S. Smith.

[5] Proud.

for its improvement.[1] In addition to the attractions presented by the liberal and benevolent strain of his administration, he discovered and demonstrated the fertility of the low lands and river swamps, — by the judicious management and culture of which he acquired a plentiful fortune; and his successful example at once aroused the emulation of the planters, and prompted the resort of enterprising strangers. Many new plantations were formed both by retired British officers and by Carolinians around Sunbury and on the river Alatamaha. Stokes, an English lawyer who resided a considerable time in Georgia, declares, that, under the administration of Wright, "this province made such a rapid progress in population, agriculture, and commerce, as no other country ever equalled in so short a time." The rapidity of its progress is strikingly exemplified by a comparison of the present state of its exports with the amount which ten years after they attained. In 1763, the exports of Georgia consisted of 7,500 barrels of rice, 9,633 pounds of indigo, and 1,250 bushels of Indian corn, which, together with silk,[2] deer and beaver skins, naval stores, provisions, and timber, amounted in value to £27,021 sterling; while in 1773 the province exported staple commodities to the value of £124,677 sterling. The valuable plant, sago, whose nutritious and antiscorbutic properties had been remarked by Bowen, a traveller in China, was, by the same enterprising observer, discovered in Georgia, whence he imported it into Britain, and introduced its use about the year 1766. Among other emigrants, who formed a valuable accession to the population of Georgia about this period, were a number of Quakers, who, under the conduct of Joseph Mattock, a public-spirited member of this religious society, founded a settlement about thirty miles from Augusta, to which, in honor of the governor who actively promoted its establishment, they gave the name of Wrightsborough. Mattock was recognized as chief magistrate of this settlement, and continued to preside over it, with patriarchal grace, till a very advanced age. In the year 1760, the assembly of this province enacted a law requiring all persons, who pretended right to landed property in Georgia, to present themselves before the expiry of three years to the governor and council, and exhibit proof in support of their claims and titles.[3]

Burnaby, who was accustomed to the grandeur and comfort of England, remarks that all the elegant and even the luxurious fruits of wealth were displayed in the American provinces. In the houses of some of the inhabitants of New Jersey he found specimens of the works of the great painters of Europe. In a journey of twelve hundred miles through America, this traveller did not meet a single individual who solicited alms from him. He declares that the people, in most of the States which he visited, were strongly imbued with sentiments of independence; and that it was a frequent remark with them, that *the tide of dominion was running westward, and that America was destined to be the mistress of the world.*[4] So much jealousy, however, he observes, so much dissimilarity and mutual contrariety and alienation prevailed between the people of the different States, that a permanent union of their strength and councils seemed to him perfectly impossible.[5]

[1] Yet Governor Wright, it appears, with predominant, if not exclusive, regard to the supposed interests of British trade and supremacy, advised the English ministers to discourage the formation of settlements in the interior of the country. Walsh's *Appeal*.

[2] In 1759, upwards of ten thousand pounds' weight of raw silk was lodged at Savannah for exportation. Holmes.

[3] Hewit. Stokes's *Constitutions of the British Colonies*. Morse's *American Gazetteer*. Bartram's *Travels*. *Annual Register for* 1760 and 1766.

[4] See Note XXVII., at the end of the volume.

[5] Burnaby.

The disunion between the different provincial communities appears to have been a favorite consideration with those English politicians who were apprehensive of American independence. They knew that the natural progress of society in America was towards independence, and that the prevalent sentiments of many of the colonists tended to accelerate the arrival of this interesting epoch in their national existence; but they hoped that it would yet be long retarded, partly by British policy, and partly by the absence of united counsel and fellow-feeling between the colonial communities. Unhappily for their wishes, British policy was destined to operate very differently, and not only to stimulate the Americans to an earlier assumption of independence, by rendering it more than ever desirable to them, but to facilitate its attainment by compacting them in a federal union cemented by the strongest sense of common interest and danger. An English writer of considerable sagacity, in a political treatise which he published in the year 1764, endeavoured to combat the fears of American revolt entertained by his countrymen. "If the British constitution," says this writer, "should corrupt and fall to ruin, as all others have done, it will be a blessing to mankind, that its colonies, its children grown to maturity, should not be involved in the same destruction, but inherit by succession the blessings of liberty. *There is nothing but common and imminent danger or violent oppression can make them unite.*"[1] Almost all the political reasoners in Great Britain seem to have completely overlooked this obvious and forcible consideration, — that the same jealous spirit of independence, which ordinarily served to disunite the American provinces, would operate as a principle of union against any danger or encroachment common to the liberties of the whole. Yet all the statesmen of the mother country were not equally blind. Before the conclusion of the late war, the celebrated English lawyer, Pratt, afterwards Lord Camden, remarked to Dr. Franklin, "For all that you Americans say of your loyalty, I know you will one day throw off your dependence upon this country; and, notwithstanding your boasted affection for it, will set up for independence." Franklin answered, "No such idea is entertained in the minds of the Americans; and no such idea will ever enter their heads, unless you grossly abuse them." "Very true," replied Pratt, — "that is one of the main causes which, I see, will happen, and will produce the event."[2]

We have remarked[3] the various schemes of policy relative to America, which were entertained by the British cabinet after the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle. None of these schemes, except that of subjecting America to direct taxation by the British parliament, was even at the time decidedly renounced. The design of taxation, which we have seen rejected with prophetic warning of its impolicy by Sir Robert Walpole, was first embraced, and then, on farther consideration, abandoned by Pelham, whose conduct, in this instance, was imitated by Pitt. Shortly after Pitt's accession to power, it was signified to Dr. Franklin that this minister was disgusted with the dilatory manner in which troops and money were raised for the public service in America, and especially in the proprietary jurisdictions; that, if he should continue one of the ministry at the close of the war, he would take measures to deprive the colonies of the power of thus retarding the necessary supplies; and that, if he should previously leave the cabinet, he would trans-

[1] Farmer's *View of the Policy of Great Britain*, &c.
[2] Gordon.
[3] *Ante*, Book X., Chap. II.

mit the same purpose as a monitory bequest to his successors. The measures which Pitt contemplated were not then specified; but in the close of the year 1759, in a letter which he had occasion to write to Francis Fauquier, the lieutenant-governor of Virginia, he intimated, that, when the war was over, a direct revenue to Britain must be drawn from America by parliamentary taxation.[1] Fauquier, in reply, expressed his apprehension that this novel proceeding would excite much disgust and disturbance in the colonies; — a suggestion, which, enforced by his own farther consideration of the subject, seems to have diverted Pitt from his dangerous purpose.

The probable enlargement of the British settlements in America, by extension of the colonial occupation into the interior of the country, was a prospect regarded in Britain with an inquietude and perplexity increased by the considerations connected with the conquest of Canada. Should the existing provinces be suffered or encouraged so to extend themselves? should distinct inland provinces be formed? should no interior extension be permitted? were questions which employed the thoughts and divided the opinions of the statesmen of Britain. Their speculations on this subject, however discordant, issued all out of the parent principle of the subserviency of America to the wealth, power, and grandeur of Britain. To some politicians it appeared that the ultimate and inevitable independence of America would be retarded by extension of interior occupation, and its effects in opening new scenes of agriculture and widening the space which the colonists must first completely subdue and appropriate. But the preponderating opinion in the British cabinet was, that all interior extension of the British settlements in America should be avoided and resisted; and, in a report presented at this epoch by the English Board of Trade and Plantations to the Lords of the privy council, occasion is taken to "remind your Lordships of that principle which was adopted by this board, and approved and confirmed by his Majesty, immediately after the treaty of Paris, namely, the confining the western extent of settlements to such a distance from the seacoast, as that those settlements should lie *within the reach of the trade and commerce of this kingdom*, whereby also will be facilitated the exercise of that authority and jurisdiction which is conceived to be necessary for the preservation of the colonies in a due subordination to and dependence upon the mother country." That the rise of domestic manufactures in America would be promoted or retarded by the extension of interior territorial occupation was the main commercial argument reciprocated between the parties to this discussion.

Schemes of innovation in the constitutions of the American States, implying an enlargement of the power of the crown and of the influence of the church of England, were continually broached and discussed in the British cabinet. The English bishops incessantly pressed upon the ministry the adoption of Bishop Butler's project of introducing an Episcopal hierarchy into America; and, though the ministry were unable to devise any means of surmounting the difficulties by which this proposition had been formerly defeated, they hearkened to every suggestion relative to it, and pursued a policy which seems to have been intended to pave the way for its adoption. It was customary to impart to the officers of the crown in

[1] That Pitt had wisely chosen the correspondent to whom he imparted this project appears both from the soundness of the advice which he received, and from the representation which Jefferson has transmitted of Fauquier, whom he characterizes as "the ablest man who had ever filled the office of governor of Virginia." Jefferson's *Memoirs*.

America so much acquaintance with the policy of the cabinet as was necessary to direct their conduct into a suitable conformity with it, through the medium of despatches which bore the title of royal instructions. Every governor nominated by the king received a mandate of this description at his appointment; and if his command were long continued, his instructions were renewed and varied, in correspondence with the fluctuations of policy and the course of events. The instructions communicated to Benning Wentworth, governor of New Hampshire, in 1761, after prohibiting him from assenting to any law calculated to obstruct the importation of negro slaves into the province, commanded that "No schoolmaster from England shall be henceforth permitted to settle in the province, unless he produce the license of a bishop; and no other person now there, or that shall come from other parts, shall be permitted to keep school without your license first obtained." In the year 1762, an act was passed by the assembly of Massachusetts for incorporating a number of pious individuals in an association, of which the purpose is expressed in the title bestowed by the act, of *The Society for promoting Christian Knowledge among the Indians in North America*; but in the following year, this act was rescinded by the king and privy council, in compliance with the remonstrances of the Archbishop of Canterbury and a party of the English clergy, who insisted that it would be prejudicial to the interests and authority of the church of England. These measures (of which all the springs were ascertained and disclosed by the activity of the provincial agents at London, aided by the good offices of Pownall) were extremely disagreeable and irritating to the colonists; and that they failed to excite some violent commotion chiefly arose from the notorious impossibility of carrying them into full execution. The purpose of their promoters was rendered far more apparent and odious than effectual. Wentworth durst not deprive any popular and meritorious schoolmaster of his vocation; and men sincerely devoted to the purpose of evangelizing the Indians were not to be diverted from it by the denial of a statute of incorporation.

Much uneasiness was created about this time among the colonists by reports that agents in the employ of the British ministry had been travelling in the provinces since the year 1762, for the purpose of ascertaining by personal survey what alterations of the provincial institutions were most practicable and most likely to be conducive to the interests of British dominion, and of gaining, by tempting offers, the assent of leading men in America to the introduction of such measures.[1] From the view which we have already obtained of the state of political sentiment in America at this era,[2] it is impossible to doubt that these reports occasioned an injury to the influence of British authority on the great mass of the people of America, feebly, if at all, counterbalanced by the increased animation which the most adroit conduct of such missions could impart to the zeal of that small class of the colonial population who longed for the advancement of British prerogative, and for a concomitant augmentation of their own splendor and dignity. A strong sensation was produced in New Hamp-

[1] Gordon has preserved the following specimen of the letters of introduction which these persons were enabled to present to Americans who were accounted friendly to the interests of British prerogative:—"This is a gentleman employed by the Earl of Bute to travel the country, and learn what may be proper to be done in the grand plan of reforming the American governments."

[2] *Ante*, Book X., Chap. V. and VI.

shire, and thence propagated in other quarters of America, by the remarkable valedictory warning addressed in the present year to the Congregational ministers of Portsmouth, in that colony, by George Whitefield, the Methodist. "I can't in conscience leave this town," he declared, "without acquainting you with a secret. My heart bleeds for America. O poor New England! There is a deep-laid plot against your civil and religious liberties; and they will be lost. Your golden days are at end. You have nothing but trouble before you. My information comes from the best authority in Great Britain. I was allowed to speak of the affair in general, but enjoined not to mention particulars. Your liberties will be lost." Probably the mysterious terms of this communication added not a little to its efficacy.

To the combined influence of these various circumstances, we must doubtless, ascribe that impatient dislike and jealousy of Episcopal power and its encroachments which the bulk of the people in New England cherished at this period, and which blazed forth a few months after in a controversy so violent as to astonish all those who had not remarked the silent but rapid pace of sentiment and opinion. An insignificant dispute between some clergymen of different persuasions served to kindle this controversy, in which the comparative merits, theoretical and historical, of the church of England and the Protestant Dissenting churches were discussed by their respective partisans with a warmth of temper and vehemence of animosity which infected and agitated the spirits of a great portion of the inhabitants of British America. In their reciprocal heat and eagerness, both parties were transported far beyond the limits of equitable moderation and deliberate, conscientious opinion. Sentiments were exaggerated by the passions which their violent collision engendered. The defenders of the American churches excelled their adversaries in controversial vigor and ability, without excelling them in candor, meekness, or courtesy.[1] The church of England was reproached with the persecutions which heretofore drove the Puritans to America; while the Puritan churches, on the other hand, were assailed with the sharpest invectives on account of the intolerance they displayed in their infancy, and the persecution they had incited or sanctioned against the Quakers. Both parties supported their charges and recriminations with so many historical allusions as plainly to demonstrate with how much industry, but how little of real benefit, the lessons of history had been studied by either, and how exclusively the attention of each was attracted by the circumstances and details that seemed favorable to its own prepossessions. Though political topics were but sparingly introduced into this controversy, political affections and interests were from the first enlisted in support of the pleas maintained by the champions of either side,—who desisted not from their argumentative warfare, till it had regenerated to a considerable extent the flame of those passions which formerly contributed to separate the American portion from the European mass of the population of the British empire.[2]

[1] "In the literary compositions of both parties sharp expressions and personal invective were employed, under protestations of candor and good-will, which gave too great a complexion of cant and insincerity to the debates of the times in general. These writings may be considered as increasing the divisions which were rising in New England, as in a point whence, with diverging influence, they were about to spread over the American and European world." Minot.

[2] Franklin's *Correspondence*. *Annual Register for* 1765. Gordon. Minot. Walsh's *Appeal*.

In the conduct of the late war, or at least in its closing scenes, the colonists derived the most signal advantage from the operations of the armies despatched from Britain to America; and yet the intercourse between these troops and the provincials was attended with many unhappy consequences to their respective countries. At first, the absurd enforcement, which we have remarked, of insolent regulations, arrogating to the British a superiority which their exertions in the field were far from supporting, excited general disgust and resentment in America. Even when the relaxation of this foolish policy, and a series of victories propitious to the interests of the colonies, had contributed to improve the reputation of the British troops, they never became popular with the mass of the American people. They introduced infidel sentiments, libertine behaviour, and infamous diseases, hitherto almost entirely unknown in this quarter of the empire. Many of the British officers were infidels, — a class of persons, who, despite their usual protestations to the contrary, are by no means insensible to the desire of making proselytes; and additionally characterized by licentious conduct, unhappily allied with elegant and engaging manners. Of the provincial officers whom the war rendered familiar associates of these men, few had ever before heard the divine origin of the Scriptures questioned, or were provided with answers to the cavils of even the shallowest sophistry; and many, from the same ardor of disposition which impelled them to the field, were much more prone on all occasions to decide with promptitude than to investigate with cautious deliberation. A considerable number of the American officers were initiated into the vices of their companions in arms, and, having once imbibed a taste for licentious indulgence, soon experienced the attraction of those libertine principles which assisted to silence the reproaches of conscience. The peasantry, in general, regarded the British troops with an aversion justified by their original conduct, and unaltered by their subsequent successes against the common enemy; and of the richer colonists, many paid dearly for the attentions they lavished on the British officers, in the corruption of their own manners, and the exaggerated representations of their wealth and luxury which were transmitted to Britain.

American hospitality, stimulated to the highest pitch by the presence, the rank, and the services of so many British visitors, overflowed in ostentatious excesses, of which the real character was veiled by the pride and politeness of the entertainers and misapprehended by the ignorance of their guests. The provincial families the most distinguished by their hospitality to the British officers customarily embellished their festivities by borrowing each other's gold and silver plate; but they were afterwards highly incensed at the effect of this artifice of vanity, when they found that their guests had been not only completely deluded by it, but prompted to circulate in England such accounts of the wealth of the Americans, as inspired the English with the hope of drawing from so copious a mine some alleviation of the pressure of their national debt.[1] To the Americans it seemed the height of insolence and ingratitude, that their munificent hospitality should be acknowledged and celebrated by the objects of it, only as an additional reason for aggravating the burdens with which they were already loaded. While

[1] Grant's *Memoirs of an American Lady*. Belknap. Gordon. Franklin's *Memoirs and Correspondence*. Dwight's *Travels*. The Athenians seem to have been confirmed in the purpose of their unjust and unhappy expedition against Syracuse by a misconception, similarly engendered, of the wealth of the inhabitants of Egesta. Thucydides, Book VI.

the inhabitants of the parent state were cherishing the delusive expectation of shifting from themselves to their colonies the burden of their financial embarrassments, the provincial authorities were laboring assiduously to extirpate the foolish and pernicious habits which had contributed to the production of that erroneous notion. In the year 1761, an address of the assembly to the governor of Pennsylvania deplored the prevalence of "all sorts of luxurious and vicious public diversions," and entreated his assistance "to preserve the character which this province has hitherto borne, of a sober, sedate, industrious, frugal, and religious people." A more energetic effort to attain the same end was made, in the year 1765, by the province of Connecticut, where an ancient ordinance of New England was revived, for the appointment of *overseers* to guard the interests and restrain the expenses of fools and prodigals.[1]

Sensible of the prodigious advantage that the arms of Britain had obtained during the war from American coöperation, the British government eagerly exerted itself to fix and improve a principle so conducive to its naval superiority. With this view, soon after the treaty of Paris, the Lords of the Admiralty of Britain formed contracts with every province, island, and settlement in America for an instant supply of provisions, rigging, and all manner of naval stores to all British ships of war arriving on the American coasts.[2]

In the year 1760 was published the first volume of Hutchinson's *History of Massachusetts*. The second volume, which carried forward the provincial history till 1749, was not published till several years afterwards; and the third not till many years after the author's death. It is a work of great industry and ability, but written in a harsh, ungraceful style. Many judicious remarks and ingenious reflections of this author lose half their force from the indistinct terms and disproportioned strain of the language in which they are expressed. The third volume, in addition to this defect, is pervaded by a disagreeable vein of personal ostentation and political partiality, and is not more advantageous to Hutchinson's reputation as a writer, than the scenes which it describes were to his character as a statesman. In vain we seek in the pages of this author for the decent composure, the calm, majestic survey, becoming a historian. His genius seems to have received a mean bias from long and inveterate devotion to the interests of a party, and from his evil fortune in reaping from his labors a plentiful harvest of popular dislike. It seems as if he neither felt cordial sympathy with, nor expected it from, the mass of mankind.

In 1761, there occurred a transit of the planet Venus across the sun's disk; and as Newfoundland was the most westerly part of the earth whence the conclusion of the transit could be noted, it was generally desired by the astronomers of the age that some scientific observation should be made from that spot. Professor Winthrop, of Harvard College, whose eminence as an astronomer we have already remarked, undertook and ably performed this duty. The expenses of his voyage and operations were defrayed by the General Court of Massachusetts.[3]

A few years before the present epoch, Benjamin West, a young Penn-

[1] *Annual Register for* 1761 and *for* 1765. The process adopted in New England strongly resembles the ancient Scottish formula of *Interdiction*.

[2] *Annual Register for* 1764.

[3] Eliot's *New England Biography*. This work, to which I have had frequent occasion to refer, is a most instructive, impartial, and interesting performance.

sylvanian Quaker, excited some perplexity among the members of his religious society by an early, strong, and progressive indication of genius and taste for painting. The exercise of this art was disallowed, as a frivolous and useless pursuit, by the sectarian ordinances of the Quakers, which, however, were relaxed in his favor in consequence of the speech of John Williamson, a Quaker inhabitant of Pennsylvania, at a meeting of the society held for the purpose of considering this subject and regulating young West's destination. "It is true," said Williamson, "that our tenets deny the utility of that art to mankind. But God has bestowed on this youth a genius for the art; and can we believe that Omniscience bestows his gifts but for great purposes? What God has given who shall dare to throw away? Let us not estimate almighty wisdom by our notions, — let us not presume to arraign His judgment by our ignorance; but, in the evident propensity of the young man, be assured that we see an impulse of the divine hand operating towards some high and beneficent end." The Quakers, in accordance with the views of this speaker, directed West to follow the impulse of his taste; charging him, at the same time, to redeem the art of painting from the discredit it had incurred by ignoble applications, and praying that the Lord might verify in his life the utility of the gift which had induced them, in despite of their sectarian tenets, to permit him to cultivate the faculties of his genius and follow the peculiar bent of his disposition. West repaired to Rome in the year 1760; and, afterwards settling in England, became the greatest painter of the age.[1] Some of the most remarkable scenes of American history have been illustrated and perpetuated by his pencil. America has since been bereaved of the presence of several distinguished native painters, who, attracted by the patronage and munificence of the princes and nobles of Europe, have forsaken a land where the more equal division of wealth leaves little superfluity for the pecuniary recompense of the fine arts. The residence in America of the painters whom she may hereafter produce must be expected, from a more elevated and patriotic spirit among the artists, and the progress of cultivated taste among their countrymen.[2] Painters have not been the only eminent natives of America who have exercised their genius and achieved their fame in Europe. The celebrated Benjamin Thompson was born in the State of Massachusetts, in the year 1752. Embracing the cause of the parent state, in the War of Independence, he received the rank of knighthood from the British king. His philosophic and philanthropic labors subsequently gained him, from the Elector of Bavaria, the title by which he is most commonly known, of Count Rumford.

A remarkable change had been introduced of late years into the system of political intercourse between the British colonists and the Indians. Originally it was the practice of each State to treat separately with the tribes adjacent to its own territory and settlements. But the mischiefs attendant on this practice at length compelled the various provincial governments to study more concert and union in their negotiations and arrangements with the savages. It sometimes happened that one province, without any direct quarrel between its inhabitants and the Indians, was prompted to engage in war with this people in defence of some neighbouring colony

[1] Galt's *Life of West*. This distinguished man is said to have received some pictorial tuition in his youth from certain members of an Indian tribe. *Lives of Painters*.

See Note XXVIII., at the end of the volume.

and nothing was more common with the savages than to revenge upon one provincial community the affronts they had received from another. They regarded all white men who professed allegiance to the same king as substantially the same people, and justly responsible for each other's actions. [illegible] the close of the last century, we have seen treaties concluded with t[illegible]dians by conventions of the governors of several of the British provinces. But from the disunion and mutual jealousy between the respective provinces, as well as from the dissensions between many of the provincial assemblies and their governors, this improved diplomatic system was by no means advanced to the perfection of which it was capable. The failure of the project, which was agitated in 1754, of a domestic general government in America, empowered to make requisitions of the resources of all the provinces for the common defence, probably suggested to the British court the measure, soon after embraced, of vesting the entire management of Indian affairs in the crown; and the great influence which Sir William Johnson had acquired with the aboriginal people recommended him to the office, then first introduced, of royal superintendent of Indian affairs in the whole of the British colonial dominions. To the superintendent and a board of commissioners appointed by the crown was committed the exclusive privilege of making treaties with the savage tribes, and on those officers there was subsequently bestowed, by a royal proclamation issued shortly after the peace of Paris, the exclusive right of purchasing from the Indians all lands not already acquired and appropriated by the colonists. This important measure, by which the crown assumed to itself the control, so long possessed by the respective provincial governments, over the enlargement of their settlements, excited little or no jealousy in the colonies; partly because, from the short period which elapsed between its announcement and the rupture between Britain and America, sufficient time was not afforded to adopt the necessary arrangements for carrying it into entire and effective operation; and partly because, as the crown now undertook the expense of the periodical presents to the friendly tribes, the provincial assemblies were sensible at first of no other result from the new scheme of British policy, than the relief they obtained from a very heavy burden.

After the conclusion of the war with the Cherokees, a deputation of Cherokee sachems or chiefs was conducted, at the expense of the crown, to England, in the year 1762. These savage deputies were presented at court with all the formalities attending the reception of ambassadors from independent states,[1] and were entertained with the display of whatever was thought likely to impress them with a high idea of British power and grandeur. Yet, that the Indians were regarded by their civilized entertainers as in reality a subordinate and inferior race may perhaps be inferred from the fact, that on the dresses with which they were furnished in order to qualify them for their appearance at court the arms of the British crown were emblazoned. An odious and more significant testimony of the denegation of social equality to this race was afforded about two years after, when there was despatched from England to America a pack of *bloodhounds*, by whose peculiar instinct it was expected that the British troops

[1] "The head chief, called *Outacite* or *Mankiller*, on account of his many gallant actions, was introduced by Lord Eglinton, and conducted by Sir Clement Cotterel, master of the ceremonies. They were upwards of an hour and a half with his Majesty, who received them with great goodness; and they behaved in his presence with remarkable decency and mildness." *Annual Register*.

would be materially aided in discovering the tracks and retreats of Indian foes. The British have never stooped to the employment of martial instrumentality of so vile and barbarous a description, except in their contests with hostile Indian tribes or revolted negro slaves. Sir William Johnson was guided by a policy equally adroit and liberal in his conduct to the savage tribes. He cultivated their good-will by the respect which he showed for their manners and usages, and studied to promote their friendly coalition with the British colonists by encouraging the intermarriages of the two races. His exertions were attended with some success; for we find, that, in the year 1766, no fewer than eighteen marriages were contracted under his auspices between Indian chiefs and young white women of South Carolina.[1]

After a short and imperfect trial of the new system which appropriated to the crown the entire and exclusive management of Indian affairs, the British government confessed its impatience of the enormous expense with which the system was attended. So frequent and so considerable were the drafts of the commissioners upon the British treasury, on account of presents, real or pretended, to the savages, and of the erection and maintenance of the numerous posts which it was necessary to establish, in order to administer the royal prerogative, along the entire line of the frontier settlements, that the cabinet began to entertain the purpose of restoring to the respective provinces the conduct of their own concerns with their rude, untamed neighbours,[2] and were deterred from carrying this purpose into effect only by the progress of the quarrel in which Britain was led to invoke the aid of Indian arms against her revolted American subjects.

While the British government and the greater number of the British colonists, though occasionally prompted by interested motives to caress the Indians, yet despised them as a savage and inferior race, and were guided in their intercourse with them solely by commercial or political considerations, there had never been wanting, since the first foundation of civilized society in America, a class of men who pitied instead of contemning the barbarism of the indigenous people, and labored with generous zeal to elevate and refine their temporal and spiritual condition. We have remarked occasionally the missions which proceeded from New England among the Indians, and contemplated the holy labors of Eliot, Mayhew, Brainerd, and other pious and peaceful conquerors of the souls of men. The New England missions still continued to be prosecuted, in spite of the obstructions and counteracting influence of the quarrels and wars between the two races of people;[3] and were aided or imitated by the awakened Christian charity of several others of the provincial communities. But, since the death of Brainerd, by far the most admirable and interesting efforts for the conver-

[1] *Annual Register for* 1762, *for* 1765, and *for* 1766.

[2] Franklin's *Correspondence.*

[3] The New England missions, about this period, were impeded by the influence and opposition of Sir William Johnson, who was devoted to the interests of British ascendency, and averse to the formation of friendly relations between the provincial governments and the Indians. Eliot's *New England Biography.*

An attempt was made to educate three young Indians at New York, and at first it seemed likely to be attended with a happy issue. Two of the pupils, having acquired a considerable stock of polite accomplishments, returned to their native tribes, who, instead of regarding them with respect, received them with unanimous scorn and contempt. The third became an actor in the New York theatre, and had attained considerable histrionic distinction, when he was recalled to the woods by the menacing mandate of his savage kinsmen, who were incensed at his degradation. Galt's *Life of West*

sion and civilization of the Indian race proceeded from the society of the Moravian brethren, — a class of Christians which must be acknowledged to have surpassed every other in North America (prior to the Revolutionary War), in the patience and assiduity, the wisdom, self-denial, and efficacy of the conduct by which they studied to promote the welfare of mankind and enlarge the acknowledged dominion of God. There had arisen, unquestionably, among the Puritans as excellent individual missionaries as have ever existed in the world, since the days of those men of whom infallible wisdom has pronounced that *the world was not worthy*; but by no class of Protestant Christians was so much missionary merit acquired as by the Moravian brethren. In the education of their own children, not less than in their exertions to instruct adult heathens, the members of this society were preëminently successful. One main cause, doubtless, was, that they regarded tuition, whether of children in years or children in understanding, as a process calculated alike for the benefit of the instructors and of the pupils; and were primarily careful to apply to themselves, and practically demonstrate in their intercourse with others, the influence of the doctrines and precepts which they communicated.

We have already remarked the first resort of the Moravian brethren to North America, and have occasionally adverted to the qualities by which this portion of the colonial population was distinguished, — their indefatigable industry, their habits of neatness, order, and tranquil propriety, their mild and pacific manners, their devout sentiments and charitable conduct, their disclamation of all authority beyond the precincts of their own religious society, and their abstinence from the employment of negro slaves.[1] An incident which occurred in the year 1736 served to animate the purpose, which the Moravian society in Europe had cherished for some time, of attempting the instruction of the North American Indians. In the winter of that year, Conrad Weisser, a Pennsylvanian colonist of German descent, and interpreter between the provincial government and the Indians, was despatched by the governor of Pennsylvania to treat with the Six Nations and dissuade them from making war, which they were preparing to do, on an Indian tribe within the territory of Virginia. In performing this journey, of nearly five hundred miles, Weisser, forcing his way, mostly on foot, through deep snow and thick forests, was nearly exhausted by toil and hardship, when he met with two Indians who exhorted him not to faint, but to take courage, — adding, that the sufferings endured by a man in his mortal body cleansed the imperishable soul from sin. On his return, Weisser related this occurrence to Spangenberg, a bishop of the Moravian society in Pennsylvania, by whom it was reported to the brethren in Europe. They were greatly struck with it, and determined to spare no pains to instruct these blind yet thinking heathens in the knowledge of a better way to that expiation of which they obscurely felt the necessity, and impart to them the experience of the only fountain capable of cleansing the human soul from sin.

Rauch, a Moravian missionary, arriving at New York from Europe in the year 1740, commenced a course of apostolic labor among a tribe of poor, ferocious, and dissolute savages, inhabiting the borders of Connecticut and New York. The sachem, or chief of the tribe, declared of himself and his people that they were all helplessly sunk in misery, drunkenness, and every vice and crime that could defile and degrade human nature; and

[1] *Ante*, Book IX., and Book X., Chap. I. and II.

protested that the missionary would confer an inexpressible benefit upon them, if he could teach them how to lead a wiser and happier life. They listened with profound astonishment to the first promulgation of the doctrines of Christianity, but soon rejected them with unanimous derision. Rauch, however, was not to be discouraged; he persisted in his pious labors, without any other visible fruit except increased unpopularity and ridicule among the Indians; till one day the chief, who was himself the worst man of the tribe, earnestly requested him once more to explain how the blood of a Divine Redeemer could possibly expiate and obliterate the defilement of the human soul. Rauch declared that the most valuable gift in the world could not have afforded him a gratification comparable to the delight with which that question inspired him. He who so felt was formed to conquer in this glorious and happy field. Appearances of mental conversion and a considerable reformation of manners ensued among the tribe. But now was aroused the jealousy of a numerous band of European traders who derived a guilty gain from the dependence to which the savages were reduced by their vices and poverty. Some of them threatened to shoot Rauch, if he remained longer in the country; others assured the Indians that the missionary's instructions tended to delude them, and that his real purpose was to carry their children beyond seas and sell them for slaves. The abused and ignorant people, as credulous of this falsehood as they had been slow to believe divine truth, began to regard the missionary with rage and detestation, and meanwhile were copiously supplied with strong liquor by those perfidious counsellors, for the purpose of exciting them to wreak their erring fury on their benefactor.

Rauch overcame this opposition by a wisdom and virtue equal to every emergence. He softened the resentment of some of the white settlers and traders by the mild courtesy of his manners, and gained the protection of one of them by teaching his children to read and write. To the Indians he behaved with an unabated tenderness and confidence, which powerfully appealed to their remaining virtue, — to that sense of good which is never wholly obliterated while human life endures. They were struck with the new proof which he afforded of the efficacy of the principles which he had preached, in shielding their professor from evil and fear and rendering him always secure and happy; they were astonished that a man, whom they studiously endeavoured to insult by contumely and terrify by menace, should persist in following them with patience, benedictions, tears, and every other demonstration of affectionate and disinterested regard; and one of them, who had made an attempt to take the missionary's life, contemplating him as he lay stretched in placid slumber on the floor of the Indian's own hut, was constrained to acknowledge to himself, "This *cannot* be a bad man; he fears no evil; not even from us who are so savage; but sleeps comfortably and places his life in our hands." The Indians at length became generally convinced that evil could not be meditated by a man who was himself so completely exempted from the suspicion of it; his influence was restored and augmented, and his ministry attended with happy effects. All the Moravian missionaries were charged by their ecclesiastical superiors to study rather the confirmation of the faith than the increase of the numbers of professed converts. Rauch's first congregation consisted of ten baptized Indians, whose devotion, simple yet profound, enthusiastic yet sincere and sustained, excited the grateful delight of their pastor and his as-

sociates, and the wonder and the admiration of the wildest of the surrounding savages. Meanwhile, from the increasing resort of members of the Moravian brotherhood to Pennsylvania, there were formed the principal settlements of the society at places which obtained the names of Nazareth and Bethlehem; and from which, with all convenient speed, missionaries, animated with the same spirit as Rauch, carried the benefit of their instructions and example among the Delaware Indians, with the usual varieties of success which ever attend the preaching of the gospel, and which are far more strikingly manifested in tribes and nations to which the tidings are delivered for the first time, than in societies which have long been nominally Christianized, and where habit blunts the force of impressions and veils the significance of language.

In the year 1742, Count Zinzendorf, who was chief bishop or warden of the society of Moravian brethren, having visited their settlements in America, travelled, along with Conrad Weisser, Peter Boehler, and other associates, into the Indian territories, and preached to a great variety of tribes. Some of the fiercest warriors of the Six Nations, who, from a recent quarrel among themselves, had been roused to a state of high and dangerous excitement at the time when he casually met them, were exceedingly struck with the mixture of simplicity, authority, and benevolence that characterized his address to them; and, after some consultation, thus replied to it:—"Brother, you have made a long voyage over the seas, to preach to the white people and to the Indians. *You* did not know that we were here; and *we* knew nothing of you. This proceeds from above. Come therefore to us, both you and your brethren; we bid you welcome; and take this fathom of wampum in confirmation of the truth of our words." After a short but successful ministry in America, Zinzendorf returned to Europe in 1743,[1] leaving a numerous and increasing body of missionaries to pursue the labors thus felicitously begun. It was a rule with these missionaries to earn their own livelihood by bodily labor for behoof of the objects of their pious concern; and this rule their Christian moderation enabled them generally to practise, although their savage employers could afford only a slender recompense of their toil; but whenever they could not subsist in this manner, they were supplied with the necessaries of life by the society at Bethlehem. They lived and dressed in the Indian style; insomuch that they were sometimes mistaken for Indians by travellers; and Frederick Post, one of their number, did not scruple to marry a baptized Indian woman. In addition to the inevitable drudgery and privation which they incurred, they were frequently exposed to insult and danger from those savages who rejected the boon of the gospel with contempt, and heard its testimony against the corruption of human nature with indignation. Gideon Mack, one of the missionaries, having been waylaid by an Indian who presented his gun and desired him to prepare to die, for insulting the Indians by talking perpetually of their need of Christ, replied calmly, "If Christ does not permit you, you cannot shoot me." The savage, struck with the language and demeanour of his intended victim, dropped his gun, retired in silence, and soon after embraced the faith which, he perceived, was calculated to form the highest style of human character.

[1] He died at London in the year 1760, admired and lamented in the Old World and the New. Many of the Indians, though seventeen years had elapsed since his visit to them, were affected to tears by the tidings of his death.

A curious objection, which reminds us of incidents and reproaches that attended the first promulgation of the gospel upon earth, was raised by some Indians, who, observing their friends greatly moved by the discourses of the missionaries, exclaimed that these men must be sorcerers and in league with evil spirits, for that nothing but magic could produce such effects. The most formidable opposition was created by a number of white traders, who were incensed at the influence which the missionaries exerted in persuading the savages to abstain from the purchase of spirituous liquors, to avoid contracting debts, and to exchange hunting for agriculture. They were aided by some weak and ignorant or bigoted colonists of New York and New England, who looked on the Moravian society as a branch of the church of Rome, and were convinced that the spread of their tenets and influence would promote the interests of France among the Indian race. Several of the missionaries were seized as Romish teachers by the inhabitants of Connecticut, and detained in custody for some days, till they were liberated by command of the provincial governor. But in New York, which abounded with traders hostile to the conversion of the Indians, and contained a number both of clergymen and laymen devoted exclusively to the church of England, the opposition grew daily stronger, and was inflamed by the fluctuating politics of the Six Nations. Some of the colonists assured their savage neighbours that the Moravian brethren were not *legally* entitled to undertake the pastoral office which they exercised, — a statement which the Indians were totally unable to comprehend; others, and especially certain persons engaged in the Indian trade, attempted to debauch the new converts and seduce them to resume the vices they had forsaken; and the provincial magistrates committed several of the missionaries to prison, as enemies of the British government and corrupters of its Indian allies. The most respectable inhabitants of the province, who had at first imbibed prejudices against the missionaries, were speedily disabused, and not only encouraged them to persevere in their useful labors, but openly declared of them, that they were, of all men, the best instruments of the security of the colonists and the happiness of the Indians. At length, however, in consequence of a report that a number of the Indian converts had wholly detached themselves from their previous friendly connection with Britain, the public rage was kindled to such a pitch, that an act of the New York assembly was passed, prohibiting any member of the Moravian society from preaching or residing among the tribes connected with the province. This policy was little calculated to soothe or conciliate the Indians, who had generally conceived a high regard for the missionaries, — of whom some now quitted the province, and others, lingering in it with the hope of being yet permitted to resume their pious labors, were afterwards thrown into prison and treated with great severity. The Indians who seemed most attached to them became the objects of a strong aversion and jealousy to many of the colonists, who loudly and fiercely importuned the government to send troops to destroy them. Not long after the departure of the missionaries, a number of converted Indians of the confederacy of the Six Nations, forsaking their country and kindred, followed their teachers to Pennsylvania, and established themselves at Bethlehem.

In the mean time, and for several years after, Spangenberg, Nitschman, Cammerhoff, and a great many other pastors, supplied by the Moravian brotherhood, were actively and successfully engaged in proselytizing and

civilizing the savage tribes adjacent to the colonial settlements of Pennsylvania, Delaware, and New Jersey. The labors of these excellent men, to which we can advert but briefly, have been recorded with great minuteness, yet in a very interesting and agreeable manner, by the historian of the Moravian missions in America.[1] They collected various Indian societies, in which the duties of morality were practised, the habits of civilized life studied and pursued, and the profession of Christianity embraced with a sincerity which was tried and attested by severe suffering and patient virtue. The Indian converts and their children were taught to read; and some portions of the Christian Scriptures were translated into various dialects of the Indian tongue. So far from pretending to any civil superiority over their converts, the missionaries appeared at once their teachers and their servants; and, at all the settlements, not only participated in their rural labors, but appropriated to themselves the heaviest part of every drudgery, in consideration of the incompetence of Indian constitutions for steady and continuous toil. The progress of these beneficent exertions was interrupted by the outbreak of the last war with France, and by the ravages which the Indian allies of the French inflicted on the borders of Pennsylvania. Many of the Pennsylvanian colonists were progressively incensed to such a degree, by the devastation of their country, the massacre of their friends, and the danger of their families, that they conceived an incurable hatred and jealousy against the whole Indian race.

A sect of fanatics now sprung up in Pennsylvania, who clamorously demanded the total extirpation of the aboriginal tribes, lest the vengeance of Heaven should fall upon the Christians for not destroying the heathen, as the Israelites by divine command had been directed to destroy the Canaanites of old. The general delusion was increased by the publication of a letter, which was said to have been intercepted by the British forces, purporting to have been written by a French officer at Quebec to one of his friends, and extolling the Moravian brethren as the secret partisans and useful agents of France. This letter, whether the offspring of French or of English artifice, produced all the effect that its fabricators designed. A universal cry was raised through the British colonies, that the Moravian settlers were *snakes in the grass*, and the most dangerous because the most perfidious enemies of Britain. The persons and settlements of these calumniated men, in Pennsylvania, were now exposed to the greatest danger; and the provincial government, though sincerely inclined to protect them, was evidently incapable of withstanding the headlong rage with which the great body of the people imprecated vengeance on the Moravian brethren and their Indian flocks. The mildness and patience with which this injustice was endured by the objects of it was insufficient to quell the popular fury, which was on the point of venting itself in some notable outrage, when, to the general surprise, a sudden attack was made by the Indian allies of France on a considerable Moravian settlement, in which a number of the brethren and of their Indian associates were slain. This circumstance, concurring with the willingness of some of the Moravian settlers to prepare for defensive war against the enemy, and the liberal contributions of others to relieve the wants of their fellow-colonists who had suffered from hostile rage, produced a great and sudden abatement of the public jealousy and displeasure. The blessings of tranquillity and security were now en-

[1] Loskiel. See Note XXIX., at the end of the volume.

joyed in the Moravian settlements till the year 1763, when all the hatred and fear that the Indian race had ever excited in Pennsylvania were revived with augmented violence by the great Indian war which broke out at that period, and the dreadful desolation of the frontiers of this province which attended the first explosion of its fury. A general attack was now projected by a great number of the colonists on the Indian inhabitants of the province, of whom many were forced to fly; some were conveyed to Philadelphia by order of the government, which tendered them its protection; and some were cruelly slain.

In the county of Lancaster there had resided for several years a small society of Indians, who always demeaned themselves in a peaceable and friendly manner towards the white colonists. Yet a number of these colonists, consisting chiefly of Irish emigrants, who inhabited the township of Paxton, in the county of York, now resolved on the destruction of that harmless and defenceless society; and assembling on horseback for this purpose, repaired to the Indian settlement. Intelligence of the approaching attack was conveyed to its intended victims; but they disbelieved it, and, accounting the white people their friends, rejected all apprehension of danger from them. When the party who marched from Paxton arrived at the Indian settlement, they found only the old men, the women, and the children; all the rest of the tribe being absent at their various agricultural avocations. But the minds of the assailants were steeled by prejudice and passion beyond the prevalence of prayer, and the claims of age, infancy, and sex; and every individual of the Indian race who fell into their hands was murdered. This bloody deed excited grief and horror in all the sober and humane portion of the provincial community; and the remainder of the unfortunate Indians, who by absence escaped the massacre, were promptly conducted to the town of Lancaster, and lodged in its jail as a place of security. The governor of Pennsylvania at the same time issued a proclamation, expressing the strongest disapprobation of the deed, offering a reward for the discovery of its perpetrators, and prohibiting all future violence to peaceable inhabitants, whether white men or Indians. In contempt of this proclamation, a party of the assassins, reassembling shortly after, marched to Lancaster, where they broke open the jail and butchered all the unhappy objects of their animosity who were placed there for shelter.[1] Another proclamation was issued; but, like the former, it seemed rather to inflame than to allay the popular rage; for a strong detachment of Pennsylvanian colonists now marched towards Philadelphia, with the declared purpose of slaying the Indians who had been conveyed thither; and from the temper of a great part of the populace of that city, it was manifest that they were more disposed to favor than resist the bloody enterprise. From the English soldiers who were stationed in the town no aid could be obtained by the provincial government; they refused to permit the Indians to be quartered in their barracks; and crowds of people gathered around these persecuted, yet mild and patient beings, and loaded them with imprecations, disclosing so much bitterness and blindness of anger and malevolence, that the slightest retort would infallibly have produced the most tragical consequences. In

[1] These unhappy beings threw themselves on their knees, and protested their innocence of any hostile design against Britain. "In this posture they all received the hatchet." "The murderers have given out such threats against those who disapprove their proceedings, that the whole country seems to be in the utmost terror, no one daring to speak what he knows" *Annual Register for* 1764.

this emergency, a number of the more respectable citizens of the place, with weapons in their hands, proclaimed their determination to prevent Philadelphia from being defiled by the unresisted bloodshed of innocent men. The Quakers were particularly active on this occasion; and many of the younger members of this society, with a generous ardor, more admirable, perhaps, than the most rigid adherence to their sectarian principles, flew to arms in defence of the unfortunate Indians.

The insurgents having advanced to Germantown, within seven miles of Philadelphia, the governor of the province in dismay fled for safety and counsel to the house of Dr. Franklin; and Pennsylvania seemed to be on the brink of civil war. Franklin, however, and some other popular individuals, undertook to meet and expostulate with the insurgents; and in the conference that ensued exerted their sense, address, and influence so effectually, as to prevail with them to relinquish their ferocious purpose and return to their homes. To improve this happy success, Franklin immediately after composed and published a pamphlet in defence of the Indians, which produced a considerable effect in soothing the passions of his countrymen and restoring tranquillity. But the wrathful and jealous aversion with which the European colonists regarded the aboriginal race of people, though appeased, was by no means eradicated; and how easily its savage energy could be reawakened was manifested in the year 1768, when some Pennsylvanian planters, having committed an unprovoked and barbarous murder of ten Indians, were rescued by popular insurrection from the visitation of public justice. From the year 1763, however, till the revolt of America from the dominion of Britain, no general or considerable opposition resisted the exertions of the Moravian brethren to disseminate among the objects of their care the principles, habits, and benefits of piety, morality, and civilization. During this interval, they pursued their labors with patient and well rewarded diligence; combining the zeal of the Puritans with the mildness of the Quakers and the address of the Jesuits; and rejoicing in the promotion of divine glory and human good, attested by numerous conversions of Indians, who lived in the faith, and died in the conscious solace, of the gospel. Nor were these exertions relaxed even by the serious obstruction which their efficacy received from the events of the Revolutionary War.[1]

[1] Loskiel's *History of the Mission of the United Brethren among the Indians in North America*. *Annual Register for* 1768. Franklin's *Memoirs*. Some of the Indians slain in 1768 were the kinsmen of a chief united by friendship to the rulers of Pennsylvania. To a message from an officer of the provincial government, deploring the crime, denying all accession to it, and threatening vengeance on its perpetrators, the Indian chief returned the following answer:—"Brother, I am glad to hear from you. I understand that you are very much grieved, and that the tears run from your eyes. With both my hands I now wipe away those tears; and as I do not doubt but your heart is disturbed, I remove all sorrow from it, and make it easy as it was before. I will now sit down and smoke my pipe. I have taken fast hold of the chain of friendship; and when I give it a pull, if I find my brothers, the English, have let it go, it will then be time for me to let it go too, and take care of my family."

BOOK XI.

PROGRESS OF THE STATES OF NORTH AMERICA, TILL THEIR ASSUMPTION OF NATIONAL INDEPENDENCE.

CHAPTER I.

Relative Position of Britain and her Colonies. — Policy of the British Court — Severe Enforcement of the existing commercial Restrictions — Aggravation of the commercial Restrictions. — Project of the Stamp Act. — Remonstrances of the Americans. — Idea of American Representatives in the House of Commons. — The Stamp Act debated in England — and passed. — Act for quartering British Troops in America. — Proceedings in Massachusetts — and Virginia. — Ferment in America. — Tumults in New England. — The Stamp Officers resign. — Convention at New York. — Political Clubs in America. — Tumult at New York. — Non-importation Agreements. — The Stamp Act disobeyed — Deliberations in England — Act declaratory of parliamentary Power over America — the Stamp Act repealed.

The notion which we have remarked[1] as having been suggested to the people of New England, in the beginning of the eighteenth century, by the failure of various demonstrative essays of the British government to conquer Canada, — that it was not the will of Providence that North America should be subject to the sole dominion of one European state, — was substantially prophetic. The solitary superiority which Britain at length acquired over America was destined to be short-lived; and the concentration was nearly coeval with the dissolution of European ascendency and monarchical power in this quarter of the world.

It would be absurd to suppose that Great Britain, even by the mildest and most liberal system of policy, could have retained the American provinces in perpetual submission to her authority. Their great and rapid advancement in population, and the vast distance by which they were disjoined from the parent state, coöperated with other causes to awaken and nourish ideas of independence in the minds of their inhabitants, and portended an inevitable, though, in point of time, an indefinite, limit to the connection between the two countries. A separate and independent political existence was the natural and reasonable consummation to which the progress of society in America was tending; and Great Britain, eventually, had but to choose between a graceful compliance or a fruitless struggle with this irrepressible development. By wisdom and prudence, she might, indeed, have retarded the catastrophe, and even rendered its actual occurrence instrumental to the confirmation of friendship and good-will between the two countries; but her conduct and policy were perversely calculated to provoke and hasten its arrival, and to blend its immortal remembrance with impressions of resentment, enmity, and strife.

It has been justly remarked by an accomplished and intelligent American historian[2] of the Revolutionary War between Britain and his country, that great and flourishing colonies, the offspring of a free people, daily increasing in numbers, and already grown to the magnitude of a nation, planted

[1] *Ante*, Book VIII., Chap. I.
[2] Ramsay. I have been obliged to alter his language in order to develope his thought.

at a vast distance from their parent country, and governed by constitutions as liberal as her own, were novelties in the history of the world. To combine durably and satisfactorily colonies so circumstanced in one uniform system of government with the parent country required in the statesmen who might entertain such a design the most profound and varied knowledge of mankind, and the most extensive comprehension and righteous estimate of actual and probable things. A scheme so arduous was beyond the aim, and far beyond the grasp, of ordinary statesmen, whose guides were *precedents*, and who regarded artificial usage and formality as principles of human nature. An original genius, unfettered by hereditary or official prejudice, and exalted by just conceptions of human worth and rights, and of the mutual duties and obligations of mankind, might have struck out some plan that would have prolonged at least the political union of the two countries, by securing as much liberty to the colonies and as great a degree of supremacy to the parent state as their common good required. But no statesman equal to such views, actuated by such sentiments, or endowed with such knowledge and capacity, now presided, or perhaps ever did preside, over the helm of political affairs in Great Britain.

We have beheld various disputes and controversies arise from time to time between Britain and her colonies, and a reciprocal and progressive jealousy mingle with the other sentiments that resulted from their connection. Of the controversies that had already occurred between royal or national prerogative and provincial liberty, some, without being adjusted to the satisfaction of either party, had terminated by leaving each in possession, if not in the exercise, of pretensions inconsistent with the avowed claims of the other; and though in certain instances the colonists were obliged reluctantly to yield to the superior power which backed the pretensions of the parent state, the rapid increase of their strength and numbers manifestly rendered a submission thus obtained unstable and precarious. It was to royal charters, and not to the national generosity of the parent state, that the Americans owed those liberal domestic institutions which protected the interests and cherished the spirit of liberty among them. The whole strain of parliamentary legislation proclaimed that America was regarded by the British government and by the merchants and manufacturers who influenced its colonial policy, less as an integral part than a dependent and tributary adjunct of the British empire; and with the growth of the American States, there had grown an indignant conviction in the minds of many of their inhabitants, that their enjoyment of the hard earned fruits of the dangers, toils, and sufferings by which they had added so many provinces to the British crown was unjustly and tyrannically circumscribed, for the advantage of the distant community whence oppression had compelled them or their fathers to emigrate, and as the tribute for a protection which they always reproached as scanty and inefficient, and daily found less requisite to their security. We have seen,[1] that, long before the conquest of Canada was achieved, the American colonists were prepossessed with the conviction that Britain dreaded this acquisition as perilous to the stability of her colonial empire. The occasion they had judged, or supposed her to judge, so critical to their political relation now arrived. The late war, which, among other results, enlarged the British empire by the conquest of Canada, loaded Britain with a vast addition to her national debt, and

[1] *Ante*, Book X., Chap. II.

finally issued in a treaty, of which all parties perceived, as soon as the heat of controversy and the illusions of national glory subsided, that the grand effect consisted in the accession that was made to the domestic strength and resources of the British settlements in America.

While the issue of the contest was thus favorable to America, and, in immediate effect, profitless, if not disadvantageous, to Britain, its history afforded to the parent state occasion, more specious than just, to impute all her efforts to a generous concern for the protection and defence of her colonial offspring. From this there was a short and easy step to the persuasion, that the dependent people who reaped such high and exclusive benefit from the war should be compelled not only to relieve the parent state of the burdens which it had entailed on her, but to incur such additional sacrifices as might exempt the parent state from the apprehension of their abusing the advantages and opportunities now placed within their reach. If it was natural that such views should be impressed on the friends of British supremacy by the issue of the late war, it was not less natural that this issue should inspire the partisans of American liberty with opposite hopes and ideas. They naturally expected to reap advantage from the crisis whence their political opponents derived auguries of danger and trouble. Perhaps, if Pitt had still directed the policy of the British cabinet, a line of conduct might have been devised on the part of Britain, congenial, or at least less uncongenial than that which was actually adopted, to the wishes and sentiments of the colonists. But Britain had been precipitated, partly at least by Pitt's genius, into an emergency from which she was left to extricate herself by the counsel and exertion of feebler and inferior spirits; and the treaty of Paris, while it *seemed* to extirpate all future cause of dispute between Britain and France, manifestly enlarged and rendered more distinct and important every dispute that had hitherto occurred or that was likely to occur between Britain and her colonies. This treaty, in fact, was nearly coeval with the commencement of that quarrel or series of quarrels which issued in the revolt of America from Britain.

In surveying the first introduction of the system of commercial restrictions which Britain imposed on her colonies by the Acts of Navigation, we had occasion to remark[1] that a political connection between two countries of which the weaker is not entirely enslaved, founded upon or interwoven with such a commercial system, manifestly carried within itself the principles of its own dissolution. Britain termed herself the parent state; and, in conformity with the ideas suggested by this title, exacted from the American colonies an obedience analogous to that filial submission which recognizes the authority without discussing the reasonableness of parental commands. Unfortunately, she was not consistent in transferring to her colonial policy the principles, which, in domestic life, regulate the conduct of every wise parent towards his offspring, and teach him gradually to relax his control, and finally to content himself with an affectionate and reverential deference, the fruit of habitual respect and long remembered kindness. On the contrary, the views entertained and the objects pursued by Britain were such as necessarily required her to aggravate the severity of her control, in proportion to that very increase in the strength and resources of the colonies which rendered them increasingly averse to endure and additionally qualified to reject it. Doubtless, the lapse of time, though in the main in-

[1] *Ante*, Book I., Chap. III.

jurious, was yet in some degree propitious to the authority of Britain and to the connection between the two countries. The commercial restrictions had subsisted so long, that habit, without endearing them to the colonists, had trained many minds to regard them with a temper little less favorable to their continued endurance; and in the course of various controversies in which the colonists defended their chartered privileges and domestic institutions against British aggression, their leading politicians had seemed to vindicate, if not to applaud, the commercial restrictions, which they characterized as the only legitimate channel by which the authority of Britain could be exerted or her revenue augmented at the expense of America.

Assuredly, even although no other subject of quarrel had presented itself, the commercial restrictions alone must in process of time have occasioned the disruption of the American provinces from the British empire. Every step in the progressive advancement of those distant communities was a step towards potential independence. This was acknowledged by all the political writers and reasoners in Great Britain; but they indulged, and not altogether unreasonably, the hope that the day was yet far distant when Britain must either voluntarily forego her authority, or behold its bonds violently broken and cast off. They believed or hoped that America would advance slowly, silently, and blindly to the consummation of political and commercial independence; and they were totally insensible to the advantage and dignity of treating her with liberal kindness during her political nonage, and of openly acknowledging her independence, as a just consequence of her national maturity, and a foreseen and prepared concession to the expressed desire of her people. Their opinion respecting the remoteness of the period when America must necessarily be enfranchised from the commercial fetters imposed by the parent state was partly derived from a consideration, exaggerated perhaps, of the divisions and mutual jealousies by which united counsel and action on the part of the American colonies was obstructed. None of them, except Lord Camden, was able to foresee the erring course of policy by which Britain herself was to assist her colonies to surmount this obstruction. Even the most liberal and considerate of these politicians failed to perceive that the time was now come for anticipating, by a gradual relaxation, that entire removal of the commercial bonds of America which they all acknowledged to be finally inevitable. An abrupt and total enfranchisement of American commerce, conceded at last to irresistible force, was a prospect humiliating to Britain, and unpropitious to the lasting subsistence of friendship and good-will between the two countries. When we consider the apprehensions that had prevailed in Britain of the probable influence of the conquest of Canada in accelerating the era of American independence, and the knowledge which the British politicians must have possessed that the same events had been prospectively united in the speculations of the Americans, it seems strange that not one British writer or statesman should have perceived that now was the time for Britain to retreat with dignity and honor from the dangerous career in which she had so long persisted, and to infuse the influence of more liberal principles into the relations she maintained with the American colonists,—increased and rapidly increasing as they were in strength and numbers, and elated by a conquest which delivered them from the fear of every power except their own parent state,[1] and excited their spirits to a pitch of fervor which must

[1] The French court, though mortified by the loss of Canada, was by no means insensible

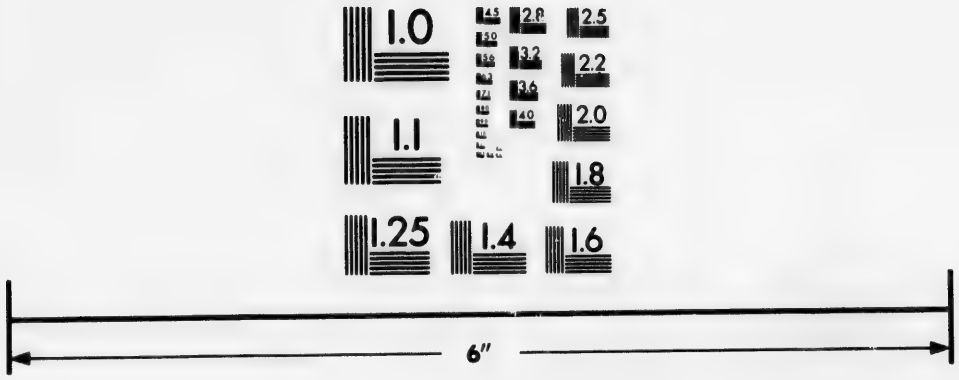
have rendered them peculiarly susceptible of the strongest impressions of gratitude or resentment.

This oversight, however, was but a trivial error in comparison with the rash and fatal conclusion which the British court and its counsellors embraced in the present critical juncture, — that the existing circumstances of the empire required an immediate extension and aggravation of the control exercised by the parent state over the colonies; and that Britain, for the preservation of her ascendency, endangered by the growth and the security of America, must forthwith embrace a course of policy tending at once to undo all the advantage she had gained to her own interest and reputation by conquering Canada, and to confirm all the distinct and opposite impressions of advantage resulting to America from the abstract circumstance of this conquest having been effected. The superior force of Britain had been the instrument, and her tutelar care the pretext, for a tyrannical system of colonial policy, which she now prepared to push to extremes of rigor never before attempted, and at a period when the original relations of strength between herself and her colonies had undergone a signal modification, and when she had just concluded a series of efforts tending certainly to their protection and advantage, but tending to it so effectually as to render her guardian aid in future unnecessary to them. Desirous to impress her colonial subjects with the belief that British protection was essential to their security, she long refrained from subduing the neighbouring settlements of France; and having eventually been provoked to undertake this conquest, she committed the great, but by no means unnatural, blunder of expecting to reap at least as much benefit from the service by which she delivered her colonies from the danger of hostile vicinity, as she had formerly gained from their conviction that her assistance was requisite to counteract and repel it. Often, before the actual conquest of Canada, did the American colonists urgently, but ineffectually, implore the protecting or vindictive aid of British troops. It was not till after this conquest was effected, that they learned, from the same English newspapers which announced the treaty of Paris, the intentions of the government of the parent state to maintain permanently a regular army in America, and support it at the expense of the colonies.

We have had frequent occasion to advert to the smuggling which prevailed in all the American provinces, and which from the first establishment of the Navigation Laws created and preserved channels of traffic contradictory of their provisions. This contraband trade continued to exist and increase, notwithstanding the opposition it received from the custom-house officers appointed by the British government, whose utmost exertions, indeed, would have been inadequate to suppress it, and whose activity in the discharge of their unpopular duties was, in almost all the colonies, somewhat relaxed by the apprehension of provoking an ebullition of public rage, the more dangerous to them because they could expect only a languid and re-

of the disadvantageous position in which Britain was placed, relatively to her own colonies, by the acquisition of it. In the commencement of their revolutionary struggle, the Americans besought the aid of France not only to free them from the yoke of Britain, but to enable them to conquer Canada, Nova Scotia, and Florida. The French court, it is certain, refused to accede to the projected conquests; and some time after declined even the more tempting proposal of reacquiring Canada to itself. "The cabinet of Versailles was compelled by good policy to regard the supremacy of England over Canada as a valuable source of inquietude and jealousy to the Americans. The neighbourhood of a formidable enemy necessarily enhanced the value which they attached to the friendship and support of the French monarch." Sevelinges's *Introduction to Botta's History of the War of American Independence.*

IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

2.8
3.2
2.5
3.6
4.0
2.2
2.0
1.8
1.1
1.0

luctant support from the provincial magistrates and assemblies. In the interval which elapsed between the conquest of Canada and the peace of Paris, the trade of the British settlements in America was largely and rapidly extended; and, as the contraband will always keep pace with the legitimate commerce which is unnaturally confined, the same period was signalized by a proportionate increase of smuggling. This circumstance was regarded with great and disproportioned jealousy by the British ministers, who hastened to adopt a system of remedial measures more forcible than judicious, and announcing entire ignorance or neglect of that fundamental maxim of sound policy which forbids the employment of violent counteraction in the cure of evils intimately connected with the sources of national prosperity. Meditating a more complete subjection of America to the dominion of the parent state, they resolved to begin by a more strict and vigorous exertion of the national prerogative in those instances in which the colonists were already accustomed to submit to its operation and to acknowledge its legitimacy.

In pursuance of this design, an attempt was made, shortly after the establishment of peace, by a novel expedient, ascribed to George Grenville, the chancellor of the British exchequer, to deal a blow which it was supposed would prove destructive to the contraband trade of the colonies. All the commanders and other officers of British ships of war stationed off the American coasts, or cruising in the American seas, now received injunction and authority from the crown to act in the capacity of officers of the customs: they were compelled to take the usual oaths of office administered to the civil functionaries with whom they were thus associated; and they were encouraged to reconcile themselves to what might otherwise have been reckoned a degradation of their service, by the extension to them of the usual custom-house policy which assigns an ample share of contraband and confiscated cargoes as the reward of the immediate captors. This measure at once afforded a great addition to the executive force of the custom-house establishment in America, and introduced a sudden and striking change in the style and temper by which the exertion of this force was characterized. Unconversant, and sometimes totally unacquainted, with the laws they were now required not merely to guard, but to administer, the British naval officers in the discharge of their new functions exerted against their fellow-subjects the same rough and impetuous energy which they had recently displayed with so much advantage and applause against the common enemy; and while they augmented the odium of an unpopular system by fully developing its vigor, they exposed even their legitimate operations to additional obloquy by numberless blunders and mistakes, into which they were hurried by their ignorance and habitual disregard of caution, and which rendered lawful commerce almost as perilous to the colonists as contraband trading. Some cargoes were unjustly confiscated; many vessels were unreasonably detained, to the heavy detriment of their owners; and, in several instances, these violations of justice were ascribed rather to eager cupidity and confidence of impunity than to involuntary error. The regular custom-house officers stationed in America were acquainted with the limits of the powers and duties committed to them; and were deterred from overstraining the one or violating the other by the fear of popular indignation, or of the justice of the provincial tribunals. But these restraints were derided by the naval officers, who exercised their new authority with a hardihood congenial to their professional character, and confirmed by the consciousness, that, whatever

wrongs they might commit, no nearer redress was competent to the sufferers than what might be obtained by an application to the admiralty or treasury of England.

To conceive the extent of the mischief thus inflicted, it is necessary to recollect that the British naval officers at that period were in general a race of persons very inferior to the humane, honorable, well educated, and high-minded men by whom this branch of public service has been subsequently adorned. The ministers of Great Britain were perplexed and provoked by the incessant complaints of these acts of injustice, and of the injury inflicted by their measures on that regulated commerce which it was the declared and immediate object of their policy to foster and encourage. They persisted, however, in the obnoxious experiment to which they had resorted; either from unwillingness to betray symptoms of retraction in the very outset of an extensive and arduous scheme of policy, or because they hoped that the naval officers would acquire, from longer familiarity with their new functions, a discrimination sufficient to restrain them from illegal outrage or dangerous excess.

But evils of still greater magnitude, and still more embarrassing in their nature, were destined to ensue from the employment of the naval officers, whose conduct, in proportion as they gained farther acquaintance with the regulations of the commercial code which they were required to administer, became proportionally more grievous and irritating to the Americans, and more detrimental both to the distinct and the united interests of the colonies and the parent state. A traffic had subsisted for many years between the British and the Spanish colonies in North and South America, to the great advantage of both, but especially of the former, and proportionally of their parent state; the chief materials of this traffic on the part of the British colonists being commodities of British manufacture, or productions of their own plantations, with the price of which they were enabled to purchase additional quantities of British goods for their own consumption. There had also subsisted a commerce not less ancient and extensive between the colonies of Britain in North America and those of the French in the West Indies; which was highly and mutually beneficial, as it consisted chiefly of commodities, which, unless thus exchanged, would have been entirely valueless or even cumbersome to their possessors. The British government, sensible that these branches of commerce did not contravene the spirit and purposes of the Acts of Navigation, and were attended with great advantage to the American colonies and their parent state, connived at them so broadly, that they were pursued without disguise or molestation, and were even exempted from interruption during the late war, till the invasion of the French West India Islands by the British forces, when they sustained a check, which, however, was withdrawn at the return of peace. But though not opposed to the spirit of the commercial code of Britain, they varied so far from the literal import of its provisions, as to afford to the new auxiliaries of the custom-house a plausible pretext of duty for measures to which they were prompted by the strongest temptations of interest; and accordingly they seized, indiscriminately, and confiscated all ships, whether American or foreign, engaged in conducting those branches of trade, which the custom-house officers stationed on shore had hitherto permitted to pass without question or notice, in consequence of a different view of the law, confirmed perhaps by a greater deference to popular sentiment and opinion. These

proceedings, which are supposed to have been equally surprising and unwelcome to the British ministers, excited much discontent in America where many persons declared that their country would speedily be deprived of all trade, whether legitimate or contraband; that the regulations by which their commerce had been hitherto fettered were now wantonly and violently straitened to such a degree as to strangle it altogether; and, in order to render these declarations more significant, proclaimed their intention to purchase in future no British commodities with which they could possibly dispense, since they were disabled from paying for them with the gold they had hitherto procured from the colonies of France and Spain.

It was impossible for the British ministers to disregard the complaints, equally just and forcible, which were provoked by this sudden and unlooked-for extension of the Trade Laws. They hastened to remove all doubts with respect to the legitimacy of the commerce between the American colonies and the settlements of France and Spain, by procuring an act of parliament[1] which expressly authorized this commerce, but, at the same time, loaded the most valuable articles it embraced with duties so heavy as to amount to a virtual prohibition. [April 5, 1764.] The system of colonial policy which Britain had so long pursued was carried to the highest pitch, and a new and important pretension was broached in support of it by this statute, of which the preamble announced, that "it is just and necessary *that a revenue be raised in his Majesty's dominions in America for defraying the expenses of defending, protecting, and securing the same.*" Besides the provisions relative to commerce with the French and Spanish settlements, the duties upon *enumerated commodities* were augmented; and measures of additional severity were proclaimed against Americans violating the commercial restrictions, and foreigners aiding or participating with them in contraband trade. It was farther enacted, that the penalties which might in future be incurred by the breach either of this statute, or of any of the other laws relative to the colonial trade, should be recoverable in any court of record within the colony where the offence was committed, or in any court of admiralty in such colony, or in any other part of America, at the election of the informer or prosecutor; and that defendants, even though acquitted, should not be entitled to costs or damages, unless the judge should certify that the prosecution had been utterly wanton and malicious. Thus, to secure the execution of unpopular regulations, was a form of legal process still more odious employed. Persons charged with offences against the revenue laws might, at the discretion of the prosecutor, be deprived of trial by jury, and compelled to defend themselves before distant tribunals, where the chances of conviction were multiplied by the rule which assigned to the judges and officers of admiralty courts a proportion of the fines and forfeitures awarded by their decrees.[2] This measure excited apparently more regret than resentment in the minds of the colonists, who contented themselves with expressing their sentiments of it in earnest, but ineffectual, petitions to the British government for some modification of its rigor. Even

[1] 4 Geo. III., Cap. 15.

[2] "In this triumphant career of the minister, the voice of America was silenced by a rule of the House of Commons not to receive any petition against a money bill. This rule, founded on the supposition that the people who are to pay the tax are present by their delegates in parliament, not less manifestly proved the absurdity and injustice of the existing case, in which the Americans, though the parties chiefly interested, were the only parties neither actually nor virtually represented." Minot. It is sometimes necessary to take liberties with this author's language in order to render his meaning more easily intelligible.

Hutchinson, the American historian and politician, whose views in general betray a strong bias in favor of the system pursued by the parent state, expresses the most unqualified reprobation of the impolicy of some of the provisions of this act, and ascribes the patience and submission with which the colonists endured its pressure to the practical relaxation which it received from the connivance or indulgence of the custom-house officers.[1]

But the submissive deportment, which, in spite of their discontent, the colonists maintained for a while under this sudden and severe aggravation of the commercial restrictions, was, if not mainly occasioned, at least considerably promoted, by the anxious expectation now awakened with regard to the issue of a legislative project, far more interesting and formidable to their apprehensions, which had been for some time entertained and openly announced by the British government. To this point all the fears and doubts engendered by previous rumors and speculations began to converge; and the colonists, absorbed by the interest of a great approaching crisis which involved the pretensions of the parent state to a new and important channel of dominion, were naturally impressed with more than usual moderation of sentiment in relation to an exertion of British prerogative, which, although overstrained and oppressive, was still confined to a channel of which they customarily acknowledged the legitimacy. We have seen, that, at a very early period of their history, the colonists on various occasions resented their subjection to the British commercial code, not merely on account of the oppressive severity of its regulations, but with express protestation against the injustice of financial burdens imposed on them by a parliament in which they were not represented; and that, appealing sometimes to the particular provisions of their royal charters, and sometimes to their general character of denizens of the British empire and partners in the whole scheme of British liberty, they questioned the competence, even while they submitted to the force, of parliamentary statutes, which, in imposing taxes on their commerce, seemed to them to usurp the proper functions of their own provincial assemblies.[2] In process of time, the colonists became gradually inured to this authoritative pretension. It had long formed a prominent part of the established political system under which the population of America was renewed and enlarged by domestic increase and foreign accession; while both the odium and the pressure of its actual enforcement was mitigated by the indulgent moderation or timidity of the revenue officers, and the growth and subsistence of an extensive contraband trade. An opinion gradually arose in America, that the regulation of foreign commerce was the prerogative by which the legislature of the parent state was distinguished from the legislative organs established in the remote provincial settlements. The expediency of a complete harmony of views and principles in the entire system of the national commerce, it was said, required that there should be conceded to the metropolitan legislature a privilege, limited indeed by certain principles, yet derogating considerably from the integrity of that constitutional liberty which in abstract right belonged to the colonies as a constituent portion of the British empire. So far, but no farther, the Americans were generally prepared, more or less willingly, to recognize the subjection of their favorite principles to circumstantial exigence. But in

[1] *Annual Register for* 1765, and *for* 1775. Minot. Hutchinson. Holmes.

[2] See particularly *ante*, Book II., Chap. IV.; Book IV., Chap. II.; Book VI.; Appendix I.; and Note XXVIII., at the end of Vol. I.

proportion at least to the pain of this concession was the jealous and resolute vigilance with which they contended for the sacredness of its restrictive limits; and while the system of domestic liberty which they enjoyed contributed to enlighten and quicken their resentful sense of the injustice of the commercial restrictions to which they were subjected, the retroaction of this sentiment served additionally to endear to them every principle, usage, and institution that supported or developed their system of domestic liberty. So early as the year 1696, we have seen that a proposition, originating in England, to impose a domestic tax on the colonies by parliamentary ordinance, was openly combated, as suggesting a measure beyond the competence of the British parliament.[1] Since that period, we have beheld the same design more than once resumed and abandoned by British ministers. Now, however, it was, if not more deeply pondered, at least more deliberately entertained; and the Americans, who had hitherto regarded it with suspicious aversion or contemptuous incredulity, were suddenly aroused to the necessity of finally admitting or successfully resisting its operation, by the intelligence of a near and certain attempt to carry it into execution.

It was in the commencement of the present year that the American assemblies were apprized, by their agents at London, of a communication which they had received from Grenville, the British minister, who acquainted them with his intention of procuring forthwith an act of parliament imposing a stamp duty on the colonies, but declared, withal, his willingness to substitute in place of this duty any other internal tax which the colonists themselves would preferably recommend, and which should present the likelihood of yielding an equal revenue. Grenville doubtless expected to facilitate the execution of his adventurous purpose, and to reduce some, if not all, of the American States to the attitude of acquiescence in the new pretension of parliament to administer their domestic taxation, by tempting them to suggest what they would consider the least obnoxious form in which this pretension could be exercised; and the disappointment of his expectation in this particular ought to have served as a warning against the danger of undertaking a novel and important stretch of power over a people with whose temper and sentiments it appeared that he was very little acquainted. For, instead of being seduced by his overture, or even considering it as an expression of courtesy or good-will, the Americans universally regarded the invitation to suggest a tax on themselves to the minister as a greater affront even than the projected measure of taxing them without their own consent. It was a maxim which always regulated the policy of Massachusetts, and which the example of this province had propagated in the neighbouring colonies, that it is better to endure the worst extremity of injustice with the silence of despair or resignation, than to purchase a mitigation of its severity by any act tending to recognize the legitimacy of its principle. The people who cherished this generous maxim only waited, whether consciously or not, the attainment of sufficient strength, and the occurrence of a fit season, to assume the rank of a free and independent commonwealth. Grenville had informed the American agents that either the stamp duty, or the substitutional tax which he expected the colonists to suggest, would be imposed during the session of parliament in the present year; but, whether the disappointment of his expectation left him unprepared with the details

[1] *Ante*, Appendix I.

of his own particular measure, or whether he persisted in hoping yet to receive from some part of America the suggestion he had invited, he advanced no farther during this year than to propose to the House of Commons a resolution which was adopted simultaneously with the bill for extending the commercial restrictions, — "that, towards farther defraying the expenses of protecting the colonies, it may be proper to charge certain stamp duties upon them." He was again mistaken, if he expected that the delay by which he thus prolonged the alarm, suspense, and deliberations of the colonists would contribute in any degree to facilitate the execution of his financial design. But, indeed, this design was so desperate and so fatally impolitic, that no system of subsidiary operations, whether in itself wisely or injudiciously concerted, could possibly have escaped the reproach of conducting to an issue disastrous and disgraceful.

The communication of the British minister's project excited mingled sentiments of alarm, aversion, and resentment in America; and the language in which the unanimous objection of the colonies was conveyed varied only in proportion as one or other of those sentiments preponderated in the minds of the inhabitants of the several States and of their leading politicians and counsellors. In the course of the present year, this project was discussed in all the provincial assemblies, and provoked from them all petitions and remonstrances to the British government, which differed indeed in their topics and tone, though breathing the same sentiment and purpose, and some of the more remarkable of which deserve a particular commemoration. The Pennsylvanian assembly was distinguished above all the others by the temperate, yet firm, dignified, and consistent strain of its debates and proceedings; in which there appeared no trace of those dissensions which had lately been reproduced in the province by the illiberal policy of the proprietary family. It was declared in this assembly, that the proposition of the British minister was a deviation from ancient usage, unconstitutional, unjust,[1] and unnecessary; that the parliament had *no right* to tax the colonies at all; that it had been hitherto the invariable practice, when pecuniary subsidies were required from the colonies, that the king, with the advice of his privy council, directed his secretary of state to write circular letters to the several provincial governments, explaining the particular exigence of the public service, and expressing the royal desire and confidence that they would provide for it by granting supplies proportioned to their abilities and loyalty; that the colonies had always evinced a dutiful compliance with those requisitions, and during the last war in particular exerted a liberality so far exceeding their proportionate liability to sustain the general burdens of the empire, that the king had acknowledged their claim to a compensation, and the parliament for five years successively returned them a part of their annual contributions; that the proposition to tax them in parliament was therefore equally wanton and iniquitous; that, by the constitution of the colonies, it was their sovereign alone who was competent to treat with them in relation to subsidies; and that it would be deroga-

[1] As the charter of Pennsylvania (see *Ante*, Book VII., Chap. I.) was more favorable to the prerogative of the British parliament than any of the other American charters, the Pennsylvanians never willingly cited it in this controversy. One of their advocates preferred to cite the following passage, extracted from an old European historian: — "There is neither king nor sovereign lord on earth, who has beyond his own domain power to lay the imposition of one farthing on his subjects without the consent of those who pay it, unless he does it by tyranny and violence." Philip de Comines, Cap. 108.

tory both to their rights and their dignity to make any treaty on this subject with the British minister, whose application to them, instead of communicating the wishes of the king, conveyed the command or menace of a financier, with whose projects, for aught they knew, the king might be totally unacquainted. In conformity with this latter sentiment, they took no formal or official notice of Grenville's project, but sufficiently indicated their opinion of it, while they professed their readiness to sustain a just proportion of the load of debt with which the British empire was burdened, by passing and recording in their journals a resolution of the following tenor:—"That as they always have thought, so they always shall think, it their duty to grant aid to the crown according to their abilities, whenever required of em in the usual constitutional manner." Dr. Franklin, whose second mission to England we have already remarked, was charged on this occasion with the office of communicating the foregoing resolution to Grenville, who paid no farther regard to it than what may be implied from the introduction, immediately after, of his threatened stamp bill into parliament. It was the firm persuasion of Franklin, that, if the minister had embraced the plan which was approved by the colonists, and had demanded subsidies of them by the intervention of requisitional letters from the king to the provincial governments, he would have obtained far larger sums from their voluntary grants than he expected to derive from the stamp duty.

The assemblies of Virginia and New York distinguished themselves on this occasion by the positive and absolute contradiction which they formally expressed and published of the *legitimacy* of the pretension to tax the colonies by act of parliament. From Virginia there were transmitted petitions[1] to the king and both houses of parliament, referring to the resolution of the House of Commons which proposed to extend a stamp duty to America, and affirming, in the plainest terms, the constitutional exemption of the colonists from parliamentary taxation. By the influence of the provincial council, however, there was insinuated into these petitions a prudential distinction between the *right* and the *power* of the British parliament; and while the right was absolutely denied, the exertion of the supposed power was deprecated in a tone which though firm was yet supplicatory, and which seemed to imply that no opposition beyond remonstrance was yet contemplated. It was declared, indeed, that the taxation of the colonies by a parliament *in which they cannot be represented* would necessarily *establish this melancholy truth, that the inhabitants of the colonies are the slaves of the Britons from whom they are descended;* but while the petitioners lamented the prospect of such bondage, and implored deliverance from it, they breathed not a syllable that implied either the power or the will to resist its infliction. A wise and prudent government, however, would have anticipated only the more dangerous and determined opposition to its measures, from the considerate policy with which the opponents and victims of these measures, while yet there was time to retract them, separated the most unqualified censure of them from the slightest appearance of defiance or menace. From the views and temper that prevailed with the people and government of Britain at this period, there is, indeed, every reason to suppose that such reasonable and salutary appre-

[1] These petitions were composed by Randolph (the attorney-general of the province), Lee, Carter, Wythe, Pendleton, Bland, and other members of the assembly. Richard Henry Lee prepared and proposed to the assembly the resolutions on which the petitions were founded.

hensions, however seasonably suggested, would have been entirely disregarded. It must nevertheless be acknowledged that the Virginian petition did not arrive in Britain till after the Stamp Act proposed by Grenville was actually introduced and considerably advanced. The petition of the assembly of New York, in addition to similar disadvantage in respect of the date of its transmission, was so intemperate and unguarded in its reprobation of the pretended prerogative of the British legislature, that the agent of the province was unable to prevail with any member of parliament to undertake the office of presenting it.

The deliberations of the assembly of Massachusetts were similarly retarded, partly by the difference of opinion which prevailed in this province, and partly by the policy of Governor Bernard, who interrupted the sessions of the assembly by long prorogations, and, with the assistance of his deputy, Hutchinson, perplexed its debates and obstructed its proceedings. There was, indeed, no portion of the American population more generally animated with a spirit of jealous opposition to British encroachment, or more united by a common sentiment of aversion to the project of parliamentary taxation, than the people of New England; yet, from the general diffusion, perhaps, of political knowledge, and the prevalence of political speculation and discussion among them, they certainly betrayed on this important occasion a remarkable discordance in the views they expressed and the principles they maintained and appealed to. Never had New England been distracted by the jumble of more confused and inconsistent counsels. All or almost all its inhabitants were prompted by the same sentiment of liberty to oppose the most determined resistance to the threatened aggression; but a great diversity of opinion prevailed with regard to the views and purposes which, consistently with truth and reason, or with interest and expediency, might or should be promulgated as the vindication and definition of the colonial resistance. Happily for the credit of New England, the identity of those resentful feelings, which were additionally inflamed by subsequent provocation, finally confounded and effaced the prevalent diversities of political opinion; though doubtless these diversities contributed, with other causes, to the success with which an adroit politician of Massachusetts exerted himself to reduce the language of his countrymen in the present crisis to a moderate and even submissive strain, which belied their real sentiments and tended to delude the parent state.

In every community, where a struggle with the supreme authority of the empire is provoked by tyranny or excited by faction, the poor are always more prone to precipitate matters to extremity than the rich, who, hoping less from change and dreading more from convulsion and discomfiture, are peculiarly interested in supporting moderate measures and cherishing conciliatory projects and ideas. But in addition to this general source of diversified opinion at a crisis like the present, there were circumstances in the particular situation of America which gave scope to the most perplexing varieties in the views of the political champions by whom her interests were advocated. The pressure of the commercial restrictions had lately been screwed to a pitch which created extreme discontent; and the discussion of this grievance, and of the means most likely to induce the British government to redress it, naturally mingled with the consideration of the more alarming project of the Stamp Act. Some politicians maintained that there was a wide and substantial distinction between these two meas-

ures; the first implying no more than a denial of indulgence; the second importing a violation of justice and right. While they deplored the severity of the late commercial regulations, they acknowledged the abstract competence of parliament to impose them; but they questioned its legitimate power to assume the domestic taxation of the colonies; and counselled their countrymen to solicit a mitigation of the one grievance as a boon or act of grace, but to resist the introduction of the other as an unwarrantable usurpation.

This was certainly the most prevalent opinion. Yet were there other politicians who recognized no solid distinction between the unjust origination of a novel organ of power, and the oppressive exercise of authority in a more customary or constitutional shape,—between the multiplication of political fetters, and the aggravation of their weight. Governor Bernard, whose insolence to the provincial assembly, and obsequious devotion to the British court, rendered him increasingly unpopular in Massachusetts, is said by Hutchinson to have agreed with the majority of the people in judging the prerogative of parliament bounded by commercial legislation, and that the remonstrances of the colonists ought to be confined to the project of usurping their internal taxation. Yet he retarded and obstructed their efforts to vindicate the rights which he believed to be their due; and he published a series of letters *on law and polity in relation to the colonies*, in which he maintained without distinction or restriction that the American colonists were constitutionally subject to parliamentary taxation.[1] Hutchinson himself, whose wise and upright conduct in the office of chief justice had retrieved the loss of public favor which he incurred by accepting this appointment, and who was now in the enjoyment of a short-lived gleam of popularity, embraced the opinion of those who considered that the distinction between internal and external taxation was pressed by its advocates a great deal too far; and that the late parliamentary statute, of which not merely the incidental effect, but the professed design, was to raise a revenue at the expense of the colonies, transgressed as certainly the grounds of British prerogative as the proposed Stamp Act threatened to do. Yet his conduct, like that of Bernard, exhibited a remarkable contrast with his opinions; and he, who deemed that the majority of his countrymen erred in not perceiving that a violation of their constitutional rights was committed by the last as well as menaced by the next expected measure of the parliament, was the agent by whom the Massachusetts assembly was persuaded, in its application to the British government, practically to disavow this imputation against either of those measures.

The views entertained by Hutchinson were communicated only to his private friends. From a laudable desire, by which he professes to have been guided, of avoiding to distract the public councils, and of coöperating with the prevalent party in order to preserve from destruction as much as possible of the fabric of American liberty, he refrained from publicly expressing his opinions, and even dissembled so far as to countenance the plea of an entire distinction between external and internal taxation, in the

[1] As a measure of *expediency*, indeed, he suggested that the Americans should be permitted to send representatives to the British parliament. He recommended that the provincial governments should be considerably altered in structure and reduced in number, "as the surest means of preventing revolt"; and that an order of nobility should be forthwith established by the crown in America. Bernard's letters excited much displeasure and inquietude both in Massachusetts and in the other American States.

hope (he said) that concessions to the one measure would fortify the objections that were urged against the other. He even exerted so much activity in the support of his country's interest, as to compose a vindication of the claims of America, which, however, with his habitual policy, he declined to avow, and transmitted for anonymous publication to one of his friends in England. The opinions of Bernard, of Hutchinson, and of various other politicians of double heart, who in the progress of the controversy came to be ranked as the adversaries of America and the partisans of Britain, appear in the outset of it to have been seasoned not inconsiderably with the principles of liberty. The main difference between these men and the more constant and faithful friends of America consisted in the force of the attachment they cherished for liberal principles, and the extent of the sacrifices they were willing to incur for their defence and promotion. While one class of politicians in America, not foreseeing the fatal extremities to which the dispute was tending, thus avowed a respect for liberty far exceeding the zeal and fortitude they were prepared to exert in its favor, the more numerous and more ardent single-hearted and determined votaries of freedom were induced, partly by prudence and partly by a perplexing discordance of opinion, to mitigate the harshness of their censure of British policy by expressions of respect and submission to British authority and power, which were far from corresponding with the deliberate frame and temper of their spirits. The majority, doubtless, were favorable to the plea, that the right of domestic taxation was the exclusive privilege of the provincial assemblies; and, for the preservation of this privilege, they were willing to concede, for the present at least, to Britain the prerogative of external taxation, and even, if necessary, to submit, though with much ill-humor and reluctance, to the late statute by which the exercise of this prerogative was so severely strained.

But there was also a party, distinguished less by its numerical strength than by the ardent zeal which pervaded it and the acknowledged patriotism and high popularity of the individuals who composed it, which openly maintained that the distinction currently received between external and internal taxation was chimerical and unfounded; that the supreme legislature, if vested with the power of imposing taxes on distant appendages of the empire, must possess this power to an indefinite and indefinable extent; and that either the British parliament was incompetent to tax the external commerce of the American States, or, if vested with this prerogative, must be equally entitled to tax at discretion every internal possession, emolument, and enjoyment of the colonists. These views were supported, especially, in a series of pamphlets composed by James Otis, of which the first was published in the summer of the present year; and which presented a formidable picture of the boundless pretensions and prerogatives of the parent state, softened, rather seemingly than effectually, by politic concessions to her superior power. It was maintained, indeed, in these pamphlets, that the electoral franchise and the power of taxation ought to be strictly reciprocal and commensurate; that the right of the colonists to participate in the application of this principle was practically recognized by the institution of their provincial assemblies, of which the functions could not be absorbed by the parliament without violating the principles of the British constitution, unless representatives elected by America were admitted to sit in the House of Commons; that the parliament had, indeed, the *power* to commit

this usurpation, which the colonists, in the first instance at least, could neither legally nor prudently oppose, except by petition and remonstrance; and that, "when the parliament shall think fit to allow the colonists a representation in the House of Commons, the *equity* of their taxing the colonists will be as clear as their *power* is at present of doing it, if they please."

The publications of Otis were so well calculated to promote impressions of British injustice and American danger and suffering, that the provincial assembly, of which a majority was certainly wedded to more moderate and practicable views than these pamphlets disclosed, yet so far approved and countenanced them as to order that copies of them should be transmitted to England and circulated there at the expense of the province. Whatever effect they may have produced in the parent state, their influence upon the colonists corresponded with the warmest wishes of the partisans of American liberty and independence. The Americans were much more alarmed and provoked by the writer's forcible representations of the strength and stretch of British prerogative, of the harsh and inequitable manner in which it was exercised, and of the slavish dependence to which its farther development was capable of reducing them, than impressed by his cautious monitions of the legal criminality and danger they would incur by resisting the exertions of this prerogative, or by his suggestion of the constitutional remedy by which its inequitable tendency might be corrected, and the interest and duty of the colonies reconciled by admitting representatives of the American people into the British House of Commons. The idea of representatives contributed by the Americans to the legislative assemblies of the parent state, which was first publicly suggested by the historian Oldmixon,[1] afterwards more deliberately considered and recommended by Dr. Franklin,[2] and now revived by Otis and others, was never definitively abandoned during the whole subsequent controversy between the two nations. At no time was it favorably regarded by any considerable party in either country; and perhaps there were some of its American partisans who were induced to support it because it proposed what they deemed an impracticable measure as a condition requisite to the equitable subjection of America to British taxation. The politicians of Britain in general considered that it would be impossible to adjust the proportions between the numbers of the American and British representatives; that the Americans would not be contented with the privilege of sending but a few; and that, if a considerable number were admitted, the balance of the British constitution would be destroyed, and a dangerous increase of power communicated either to the prerogative of the crown or to the strength of the democracy. The Americans, on the other hand, more justly dreaded that the parent state would never grant them a representative force adequate to the effectual defence of their interests; and that their distance from the seat of government and legislation would expose them to much oppression, and weaken the dependence of the American representatives upon their constituents. When some discussion arose on this subject in the assembly of Massachusetts, one of the members sneeringly remarked, that, if his countrymen were determined to have representatives in the British House of Commons, he could recommend to them a merchant who would contract to carry the American members of parliament to England for half the price which the royal court would bid for them on their arrival. Yet this measure was sin-

[1] See *ante*, Note XXVIII., at the end of Vol. I.

[2] *Ante*, Book X, Chap. III.

cerely espoused and ably maintained, till the last stage of the controversy, by a few distinguished supporters. Adam Smith, in particular, the greatest master of political philosophy that Europe has ever produced, recommended it to both countries in his celebrated treatise on the *Wealth of Nations*,[1] which was first published in the same year that witnessed the declaration of American independence. Two years after, and of course too late (even if it could ever have been seasonably attempted), the British government, with concession more or less sincere, offered to the people of America a share of parliamentary representation, together with the redress of every grievance of which they complained.[2]

The assembly of Massachusetts had already communicated instructions to their agents in England to endeavour to procure a repeal of the late act of parliament, which they characterized with no little warmth of complaint and vituperation; and, above all, to oppose the project announced by Grenville, with regard to which they remarked, that "the right of the subjects to be taxed by their representatives is the grand barrier of British liberty; and though a people may be free and happy without a particular branch of trade, they can be neither, if they have not the privilege of assessing their own taxes." When, after long prorogations, which excited much displeasure against the governor, they were in the close of the year at length enabled collectively to deliberate on the resolutions of the House of Commons in favor of Grenville's project, they were naturally prompted, by the increased danger by which their liberties were menaced and endeared, to defend them with still greater warmth; and, in the first fervor of their zeal and resolution, they prepared an address to the king which strongly asserted their *right* to be exempted from parliamentary taxation. They were induced, however, to depart from the open profession of this bold principle by the dexterous and assiduous exertions of Hutchinson, who plausibly represented to them that all the interests of America would be injured by an attempt to vindicate any one of them with pretensions so audaciously opposed to the declarations of the supreme legislature of the empire; that openly to deny the right of parliament to pursue, in one particular instance, the policy it had announced, was not only to enfeeble the objections urged by the colonists against other obnoxious measures, but to provoke the parliament by the strongest sense of insulted dignity to persist even in the measure thus especially stigmatized, and which it could no longer retract without confession of weakness or of injustice; and that the interests of America, in so far as they were affected by the late, or menaced by the expected act, would be most effectually consulted by petitioning against both merely as severe, ungracious, and impolitic proceedings, and forbearing to describe either as an instance of injustice or usurpation. The hopes thus excited, of obtaining relief from the parent state, provided her pride were not interested in withholding it, were aided by a prevalent opinion that the

[1] He admitted the difficulties with which this measure was prospectively threatened, but contended that they were not insurmountable; and that the most considerable of them arose not from the nature of things, but from the prejudices and opinions of the people of both countries. His scheme was, that the number of American representatives should be proportioned to the produce of American taxation. He maintained, that, from the rapid advancement of the colonies, it was far from unlikely, that, in less than a century, the produce of American would far exceed that of British taxation, and that the seat of empire would then be transferred to America. This was a prospect neither flattering to the pride of the English, nor grateful to the democratic and economical predilections of the Americans.

[2] *Annual Register for* 1778.

colonial agents in England, some of whom were officers or pensioners of the crown, had not sufficiently exerted themselves in the late transactions to defend the interests of the colonists and make known to the ministry the strong aversion with which their measures and propositions were regarded. The agents in reality had made but a feeble opposition to the regulations introduced by the late act of parliament; some of them even declared their opinion that these regulations would obtain general acquiescence; and when the proposition of the stamp duty was communicated to them, not one of them so justly guessed or so honestly anticipated the sentiments of his constituents as to offer the slightest obstruction to it, except Joseph Sherwood, a Quaker, the agent for Rhode Island, who protested that he would never consent to the imposition of taxes on America by a British parliament.

In conformity with the counsels of Hutchinson, though unfortunately for the credit of their author and the eventual satisfaction of Massachusetts, the assembly of this province was prevailed with to depart from its first declaration of its own exclusive right to administer the internal taxation of the people comprehended within its jurisdiction; and, instead of this, to address the House of Commons by a petition, which, forbearing to insist on *right*, sued for *favor*. The colonists were represented as thanking the parent state for the kind forbearance or connivance which had so long indulged them with the exercise of internal taxation through the medium of their own provincial assemblies,[1] and as humbly soliciting from British grace a continuance of the same boon, or at least such a delay of measures repugnant to it as might afford time to the petitioners, in conjunction with the other provincial governments, to present a more ample and accurate exposition of the state and condition of the colonies, and of the true interest of Great Britain with regard to them. With objections sound enough in themselves, but very feebly and frigidly urged against the late act of parliament, there were mingled arguments against the proposed Stamp Act, derived from the inconvenience that would result from draining the colonies of money, and farther reducing the narrow means which they possessed of purchasing articles of British manufacture. Indeed, from the language of the Massachusetts petition, it might have been supposed that an enthusiastic devotion to the interest and advantage of Britain was the sole, or at least the predominant, sentiment of a community which was in fact pervaded almost unanimously by a resentful sense and vigilant dread of British injustice and oppression. This transaction, under whatever colors it may have appeared at the time to those who actively or passively shared in it, certainly tended to produce the dangerous effect of at once deceiving the British government with regard to the degree and scope of the defensive spirit prevalent among the colonists, and of provoking this spirit to a higher pitch of excitation by suggesting to the colonists that they had sacrificed the manly assertion of their dignity and their rights to a prudential, and yet perhaps after all a

[1] The Americans were fond of comparing their political relation with Britain to that which then subsisted between Britain and Ireland. About five years after the present period, doctrines similar to those which Hutchinson now induced an American assembly to profess were broached in the Irish parliament by a minister of the crown, Sir George (afterwards Lord) Macartney, son-in-law of Lord Bute, who asserted, "that Ireland possessed a dependent government, and owed to England the highest obligations for the free exercise of its privileges," — a proposition which excited the liveliest indignation in the Irish parliament, and occasioned the rejection of the measure in behalf of which it was advanced. *Annual Register for* 1769.

fruitless, concern for their interests. It was impossible for them to reflect without anxiety on the rashness, disguised by politic show, which they had committed in sanctioning the pretensions of the parent state, and recognizing their enforcement as an act of legitimate authority, in the uncertain hope of inducing her to depart from them as an act of lenity and indulgence.

Shortly after the conclusion of this affair, the assembly of Rhode Island despatched delegates to Boston to procure an authentic copy of the Massachusetts petition, which they purposed to use as the model of an application from themselves in behalf of their own provincial community. But these delegates had hardly reached Boston, when there arrived in this city the reports of the transactions of the assemblies of Virginia and New York. The deputies of Rhode Island at once declared their preference of the sentiments expressed and the language employed by the New York assembly; and carried back with them a copy of its petition, which was cordially embraced and reëchoed by the unanimous voice of their constituents, who hesitated not a moment between the manly attitude of pleaders for right and the servile posture of suitors for grace. A corresponding impression was produced in Massachusetts, where the people, sympathetically affected by the brave and honest freedom with which other provinces, in openly professing the sentiments which *they* equally cherished, had either dignified the preservation of American liberty or diminished the disgrace of its overthrow, began to review their own conduct with sentiments of impatience and regret. They would now have acted very differently, if the matter had been still entire. Their uneasiness, indeed, was mitigated by the hope of a successful issue of their suit. Some circumstances, nevertheless, served plainly enough to indicate the progress which a spirit of opposition to the parent state was making in this and other parts of America. Instead of the former declarations of individuals in favor of the policy of avoiding to purchase the manufactures of Britain, more general and extended associations for the promotion of this object began to be formed; and, as a subsidiary measure, encouragements were offered by patriotic individuals and societies to the formation of domestic though inferior manufactures. But it was a circumstance still more deeply significant, that prudent, firm, and reasonable men throughout the American States began to unite in the opinion (suggested, or at least confirmed, by the unequal, if not discordant, tenor of the petitions from the several provinces) that their country's interest demanded the establishment of some common assembly which should deliberately revolve, and unequivocally express, the united, consentaneous purpose and voice of British America.[1]

So various and dissimilar, indeed, was the language of the American colonies, that, if Britain, at the present crisis [1765], had retracted or modified the system which she had begun to pursue, it might have been doubted whether her altered policy was the effect of interest, lenity, or timidity. But no such prudent, just, or generous purpose was entertained by the British cabinet. Although the later transactions in America were not yet reported in England, the resolutions of the assembly of Pennsylvania had been communicated by Franklin to the ministry, and the general aversion of the colonists to the new pretension of parliament was known or antici-

[1] *Annual Register for* 1765. Franklin's *Memoirs*. Wirt's *Life of Henry*. Minot. Gordon. Hutchinson. Bradford's *History of Massachusetts*. Pitkin's *Political and Civil History of the United States*.

pated. It was, doubtless, in reference to this feature in the actual condition of the empire, that the speech from the throne, at the opening of the session of parliament [January 10, 1765], while it recommended the establishment of such regulations as might serve additionally to bind together and strengthen every part of the king's dominions, expressed his Majesty's reliance on the firmness and wisdom of parliament in promoting the just respect and obedience due to the laws and *the legislative authority of the British empire*. One of the earliest measures proposed in this session of parliament was Grenville's bill for imposing a stamp duty on the American colonies. On the first reading of the bill, it was opposed as an unjust and oppressive measure by Colonel Barré, an officer who had served with the British army in America, and who was highly distinguished in the House of Commons as an eloquent and zealous advocate of the principles of liberty. Charles Townshend, another member of the house, who afterwards succeeded to the office of Grenville, supported the bill with much warmth, and, after severely reprobating the animadversions it had received from Colonel Barré, concluded his speech by indignantly demanding: — "And now, will these Americans, children planted by our care, nourished by our indulgence until they are grown up to a high degree of strength and opulence, and protected by our arms, — will they grudge to contribute their mite to relieve us from the heavy weight of that burden which we lie under?" Barré, in an explanatory speech, after repelling the censure personally addressed to himself, thus forcibly replied to the concluding expressions of Townshend: — "*They planted by* YOUR *care!* No, your oppressions planted them in America. They fled from your tyranny to a then uncultivated and inhospitable country, where they exposed themselves to almost all the hardships to which human nature is liable; and among others to the cruelties of a savage foe, the most subtle, and, I will take upon me to say, the most formidable, of any people upon the face of God's earth; and yet, actuated by principles of true English liberty, they preferred all hardships to those which they had endured in their own country from the hands of men who should have been their friends. *They nourished by* YOUR *indulgence!* They grew by your neglect of them. As soon as you began to care about them, that care was exercised in sending persons to rule them in one department and another, who were, perhaps, the deputies of deputies to some members of this house, sent to spy out their liberties, to misrepresent their actions, and to prey upon them, — men, whose behaviour on many occasions has caused the blood of those *sons of liberty* to recoil within them, — men, promoted to the highest seats of justice,[1] some of whom, to my knowledge, were glad, by going to a foreign country, to escape being brought to the bar of a court of justice in their own. *They protected by* YOUR *arms!* They have nobly taken up arms in your defence; and have exerted a shining valor, amidst their constant and laborious industry, for the defence of a country whose frontier was drenched in blood, while its interior parts yielded all their little savings to your emolument. And believe me, — remember, I this day told you so, — that the same spirit of freedom which actuated that people at first will accompany them still; — but prudence forbids me to explain myself farther. God knows I do not at this time speak from motives of party spirit; what I de-

[1] Some disgraceful instances of the abuse of royal patronage in the appointment of American judges are recorded in Garden's *Anecdotes of the Revolutionary War*.

liver are the genuine sentiments of my heart. However superior to me in general knowledge and experience the respectable body of this house may be, yet I claim to know more of America than most of you; having seen and been conversant with that country. The people, I believe, are as truly loyal as any subjects the king has, — but a people jealous of their liberties, and who will vindicate them, if ever they should be violated. But the subject is too delicate, — I will say no more."

At the second reading of the bill, a petition was tendered against it from all the merchants of London who traded to America, and who, anticipating the effect of the contemplated measure in that country, were struck with alarm for the security of their outstanding debts; but it was rejected in conformity with a rule of the house, that no petition should be admitted against a money bill in its progress. General Conway, a member distinguished alike by the liberality of his political sentiments and the magnanimous resolution of his character, strongly urged the house, on so great an occasion, to relax this rule, which, he asserted without denial, had not always been inflexibly maintained; but the ministers were bent on enforcing it in the present instance, in order to justify the application of it to the American petitions which had now arrived at London, and in some of which it was known that the *right* of Britain to tax the colonies was openly denied. The ministers wished to avoid a discussion of this delicate point, and perhaps imagined that they had gained their end and prevented the prerogative of the parent state from being publicly questioned, when the various petitions from the American provinces were rejected as summarily as the petition of the merchants of London. But in spite of their efforts to smother the flame of this dangerous controversy, it broke forth both in the parliament and the nation before the bill could be passed. Alderman Beckford, who, both as a senator and a magistrate, supported the character of one of the boldest patriots in England, united with General Conway in peremptorily disputing the right of the British parliament to impose taxes on America. Pitt had already, as he afterwards declared, embraced the same opinion; but he was prevented from yet publicly expressing it by a severe sickness, which rendered him at present incapable of attending to business. The supporters of the bill, thus constrained to argue in defence of a principle which they had hoped to be allowed silently to assume, insisted that the functions and authority of the British legislature extended over all the dominions of the empire; and while they admitted the mutual connection and dependence of the right of being represented and the power of imposing taxes, they assimilated the situation of the colonies to that of Birmingham, Manchester, and other large towns in England, which, having sprung up after the frame of the parliament was adjusted, had never yet obtained a share in the form of *actual* representation, — but, being (in current phrase) *virtually* represented, possessed all the substantial benefit of this popular right. The opponents of the measure replied, that the difference between the condition of those towns and the American provinces was as wide as the Atlantic ocean; that the towns referred to might, not unreasonably, be considered as *virtually* represented in a parliament which contained a copious infusion of interests precisely the same as theirs, and which imposed no burdens upon them but such as were shared by its own members and the whole population of the realm; but that the commercial restrictions by which America was so heavily loaded, for the real or supposed advantage of British

merchants and commerce, plainly demonstrated how completely the same ocean which separated the two countries had disjoined the interests or at least the views of their inhabitants, and how absurd was the pretext that the Americans enjoyed even a virtual representation in the British parliament; that the situation of the colonies was analogous rather to the condition of Ireland, which, though so much nearer to Britain, and originally gained to the British dominion by conquest, still retained her own independent legislature; and that the right of the colonies to participate in the same advantage had been hitherto acknowledged by the institution and exerted by the instrumentality of the representative assemblies which they all possessed.

Such was the commencement of that famous controversy respecting the right of Great Britain to tax America, of which the interest was afterwards so widely extended, and the features and topics so forcibly illustrated and amply diversified by the exertions of the ablest writers and politicians in the Old World and the New. At present, indeed, it excited comparatively but little attention in Britain, where its importance was generally undervalued, except within some mercantile circles, where political foresight was quickened by private interest, or aided by superior acquaintance with the condition and sentiments of the colonists. The nation at large, accustomed to regard America as a dependent state, and now flattered with the prospect of deriving from it a considerable mitigation of the burdens of the empire, listened reluctantly to arguments founded on previous instances of British ascendency exerted for the benefit of particular mercantile classes and channels of commerce, and which yet opposed this prerogative in the only instance that had ever occurred of its exertion for the general and undoubted advantage of the British community. So little impression was produced by the efforts of the opponents of the Stamp Bill, that, after it had finally passed the House of Commons, where two hundred and fifty members voted for it and only fifty against it, it was carried through the House of Lords without a moment's obstruction or a syllable of opposition. It seemed as if the interesting topic of controversy awakened by the measure had not yet penetrated into this elevated region of the legislature; as, so far from being discussed, it was not even adverted to by a single peer.

The bill soon after received the royal assent, and was passed into a law.[1] [March 22, 1765.] It began by referring to the statute of the preceding year, and declaring the necessity of a farther revenue than had been derived from the operation of that measure. In sequence of this preamble, it loaded the colonists with heavy duties, imposed on almost every transaction of a public, judicial, or commercial nature in America, and secured by the requisition, that papers stamped by the British government with the appropriate duties should be essential to the validity of all such transactions. A farther security was derived from the infliction of severe fines attached to every instance of neglect or evasion of the law. The details of this measure were by no means calculated to palliate the tyrannical injustice with which its principle was reproached in America. In addition to the positive weight of the various taxes imposed by the statute, many of them were attached to objects which the colonists considered with a peculiar jealousy of regard. The taxation of judicial proceedings, newspapers, and bills of lading, the indiscriminate rates affixed to papers at the probate offices, and the tax imposed on every degree or diploma conferred by semi-

[1] 5 Geo. III., Cap. 12.

naries of learning, have been particularized by American writers as branches of this measure especially offensive to their countrymen. To crown all, it was ordained that the penalties attached to violations of the act should be recoverable in the detested Courts of Admiralty. This was, indeed, to wound America in a part yet galled and inflamed by prior provocation. And thus, with strangely misguided councils, the parent state, instead of attempting to soften and facilitate the introduction of that obnoxious prerogative which she now resolved to exert over a people already disgusted with her treatment of them, contrived to render the first practical introduction of it additionally odious and irritating, by the arbitrary nature of the collateral and subsidiary measures with which it was combined. Perhaps, indeed, it was hoped, in the plenitude of ministerial ignorance, to balance or mollify the displeasure of the colonists by the opposite sentiment with which they might be supposed to regard a slender boon which the parliament at the same time conferred on them, in permitting American lumber to be carried to all the ports and markets of Europe, and even encouraging by a bounty its importation into Britain. But so trivial was this measure as a compensation, and so unseasonable as a favor, that it was universally regarded either with scorn or total indifference in America, where all other sentiments were swallowed up in the alarm excited by the Stamp Act. Nay, so paramount and engrossing was the importance which the Americans attached to this act, that for a while they hardly even remarked a contemporary statute by which the parliament required the provincial assemblies to provide quarters for all detachments of British soldiers in America, and to furnish them with beds, fire, and candles, at the expense of the colonies; though their disgust at such a requisition was sufficiently manifested when their attention was aroused in the sequel by an attempt to carry it into effect. On the day after the Stamp Act was passed, Franklin communicated the tidings by letter to a friend in his native country, and added, — "The sun of liberty is set; you must now light the lamps of industry and economy." But his friend prophetically answered, that torches of a very different description would be kindled in this emergency by the Americans.[1]

The colonists had firmly expected that the British government would be deterred by their petitions and remonstrances from persisting in the project of the Stamp Act; and when they learned the actual and opposite result, they were struck with an astonishment approaching, if not amounting, to dismay, and which seemed at first to quell every sentiment and confound every purpose of resistance. In Massachusetts, particularly, where the people had been encouraged to expect from the policy into which they were beguiled even greater advantages than mere deliverance from the Stamp Act, the disappointment was at once overwhelming from its magnitude, and humiliating from a grating sense of the prostration by which they had ineffectually attempted to evade it; and so profound and still was the pause during which the spirit of freedom that pervaded this province was collecting its force and studying the direction in which it might be exerted with the greatest advantage, that some of the partisans of the parent state mistook the preparation for the dispersion of a tempest, and exulted in the fancied victory of British prerogative, on the very brink of

[1] *Annual Register for* 1765. Gordon. Minot. Rogers. *American Biographical Dictionary.*

the conflict in which it was fated to perish. Hutchinson, among others, partook the delusion, and in letters to England announced that his countrymen were waiting, not to consider if they must submit to a stamp duty, but to learn when its operation was to commence, and what farther taxes were contemplated in case the produce of such duty should fall short of the expectations of the ministry. This man's influence and authority in Massachusetts were now entirely and for ever blasted; yet was he able, during the first confusion of public feeling, by dint of his address and of the remaining advantages of his situation, to procure from the assembly the re-election of himself and some of his partisans into the provincial council, where, still occupying the helm of affairs, he continued his exertions to direct the constitutional organs of the State against the adverse tide of popular sentiment and opinion, until it swelled to such a height as to overwhelm himself and all who adhered to him.

Governor Bernard, in the speech with which he opened the session of the assembly, forbore to make any express reference to the subject with which every mind was principally engrossed, the Stamp Act [June, 1765]; nor even indirectly alluded to it any farther than by remarking that it was happy for the colonists that their supreme legislature, the British parliament, was the sanctuary of liberty and justice; that their monarch who presided over the parliament realized the idea of a patriot king; and that, consequently, they would doubtless submit all their opinions to the determinations of a sovereign authority so august, and acquiesce in its measures with a perfect confidence that the just rights of every part of the British empire must be safe in the hands of the conservators of the welfare and liberty of the whole. He expatiated on the advantage which the colonists must derive from the permission to carry their lumber to European markets, which would furnish them with sufficient means to pay for the commodities they imported from Britain, and obviate every motive for persisting in vain attempts to transplant manufactories from their ancient and settled abodes. This speech was followed shortly after by a message recommending a pecuniary grant to Hutchinson in recompense of his services as lieutenant-governor. Never were services more unseasonably recommended to grateful consideration. The assembly took as little notice of the governor's speech as he had taken of the circumstance most interesting to their feelings and to the liberty and happiness of their country; but to his message they answered that they would make no grant whatever to the lieutenant-governor. Without a moment's delay, they proceeded to review and discuss the treatment they had received from the parent state; and, more desirous to mature their councils than to divulge their sentiments and designs, they appointed a select committee of their own body to concert and report the measures most suitable to the existing emergency. In conformity with the report of this committee, they soon embraced a purpose of decisive efficacy, and which originated the machinery of the American Revolution. They voted a declaration or resolution importing that they were sensible of the difficulties of the predicament in which the American colonies were placed by the late British statutes; that it was highly expedient that there should be held with all convenient speed a convention of committees from the assemblies of all the British colonies, to consult upon the present circumstances of the American people, and the difficulties to which they were and must yet farther be reduced by the operation of the acts of parliament

imposing duties and taxes upon them, and to concert a general and humble address to his Majesty and the parliament imploring relief; that the meeting should be held at New York on the first Tuesday of the month of October following; and that letters should forthwith be prepared and transmitted to the speakers of the respective assemblies in British America, acquainting them with this measure, and inviting their accession to it.

The project, thus announced, of strengthening the voice and eventually the force of the American States, by combining their councils, was so firmly yet temperately expressed, that the governor and his party did not venture to oppose it. Its promulgation was highly agreeable to the people, whose hopes were farther animated and their spirit additionally roused by the tidings which they now received of the courageous and determined expression, in other colonies, of sentiments congenial to their own. The parliamentary edict by which the stamp duty was definitively decreed did not deter some of the patriots of New York from repeating with undiminished, nay, with increased, force and spirit, the objections by which they had previously withstood its proposed introduction; and in a popular newspaper of this province there was published an inquiry into the soundness of the ministerial pretexts for taxing the colonies, which, considering the sentiments and temper so recently displayed by the inhabitants of New York, was calculated to produce a very powerful impression upon their minds, and, being now republished in New England, was there perused by the people with equal avidity and approbation. This treatise, or rather manifesto, demonstrated, in brief, forcible, and perspicuous terms, the absurdity of applying the doctrine of virtual representation in the British parliament to the American colonies. As every distinct interest in a commonwealth, it was insisted, ought to have its due influence in the administration of public affairs, so each of those interests should possess the power of appointing representatives proportioned in number to its own importance in the general scale of the empire. When two interests are so radically inconsistent, that the promotion of the one must be necessarily and proportionally injurious to the other, it is impossible that these two can unite in the same political system; and hence, if the interests of Britain and her colonies cannot (which, however, the treatise with more or less sincerity denied) be made to coincide,—if the welfare of the mother country, for example, require a sacrifice of the most valuable political rights of the colonists,—then, the connection between them ought to cease, and sooner or later must inevitably be dissolved, in a manner, perhaps, ruinous to one or both of the countries. The British nation, it was maintained, could not long pursue a policy towards her colonies diametrically opposite to the principles of her own domestic government, without either witnessing the conversion of this government altogether into a system of arbitrary power, or provoking the colonists to reject their partial burdens, and assert that freedom which was denied them by men who themselves had no better right to it. The doctrine of virtual representation was derided by the plea, that, if Americans might be represented in England without their own knowledge or consent, Englishmen might, by parity of reason and similitude of process, be represented in America. The laws passed in the colonies, it was declared, after obtaining the royal assent, were equivalent to acts of parliament; and hence, in conformity with the new ministerial doctrines, the provincial assemblies might at some future period be rendered instrumental by the

crown to the taxation of England. Even if it could be proved (which was denied) that there were towns and corporations in England, of which the situation was entirely analogous to that of the colonies, this circumstance, it was maintained, could serve to show only that some of the English as well as all the Americans were injured and oppressed, without affording the slightest apology for the oppression. It was denied that such terms as *dependence* or *independence* could ever be justly employed to characterize the situation of the colonies. They were *a part* of the British dominions; and, in an empire pervaded by the same political principles, how, it was asked, could one part be said to be dependent on another? All the parts, indeed, were reciprocally dependent on each other for the promotion and the secure and convenient enjoyment of their common and respective rights; but they derived these rights from the Author of nature, and not from the generosity or indulgence of their equals.

There was nothing which contributed at this period more effectually to cherish the warmth and propagate the influence of sentiments of liberty in America, than the resolutions embraced and published by the assembly of Virginia,—and which, as they were prior in actual date to the proceedings of all the other provincial assemblies, have enabled this State to claim the honor of giving the earliest impulse to American resistance.[1] Yet many of the inhabitants and almost all the leading politicians of Virginia, though they had withstood the purposes, were averse to dispute the commands, of the British government, and accounted the submission of the colonies to the Stamp Act unavoidable. Considering their countrymen as not yet able to make effectual resistance to the power of Britain, they shrunk even from the discussion of a topic calculated to promote opinions and awaken passions which might beget a premature revolt. Nor were these sentiments confined to Virginia. Some of the most eminent patriots and politicians of the other provinces were unwilling to abet or encourage an opposition which they believed could not possibly be successful, and even used means to reconcile their countrymen to the Stamp Act, or at least to engage their submission to it. It was asserted in a popular newspaper of Pennsylvania,[2] that the produce of the new stamp duties, for the first five years, was to be applied to the improvement of roads and the multiplication of bridges in America. Even Franklin, who considered the Stamp Act as inferring the total eclipse of American liberty, with a policy which would have drawn on any other man the most dangerous suspicions, engaged his friend Ingersoll, a patriotic and respected citizen of Connecticut, who was in England with him at the time when the act was passed, and had aided him in opposing it, to accept the appointment, which the ministry tendered to him, of distributer of stamps in his native province; and so little did he forebode the opposition which was to ensue, or the loss of popularity which his friend was to incur by accepting a share in the administration of the obnoxious law, that, when Ingersoll was departing for America, he charged him to communicate a gay, yet politic, counsel to the colonists, saying,—"Go home, and tell our countrymen to get children as fast as they can," meaning that America was not yet sufficiently populous to undertake a forcible assertion

[1] It is certain, nevertheless, that the transactions of the assembly of Massachusetts were concluded before the Virginian resolutions were known in that province. The one assembly had adjourned, and the other was dissolved, before either was acquainted with the transactions of the other.

[2] *Pennsylvania Gazette*, May 30th.

of her rights. Many of the Americans, however, entertained a different opinion, and, revolting from the idea of propagating slaves, determined that the birthright of freedom which they inherited from their fathers should be transmitted unimpaired to their own descendants.

It was by a party who cherished this generous sentiment that Patrick Henry was elected a member of the present assembly of Virginia, for the express purpose of supporting and animating the expected opposition to the late measure of the British government. But so much reluctance and hesitation to handle or even approach this dangerous subject prevailed in the assembly, and especially among those members whose rank and talents had secured to them hitherto a leading influence in its councils, that nearly the whole of the session was suffered to elapse without the slightest allusion having been made to the Stamp Act; when, at length, only three days before the appointed adjournment of the assembly, the topic which engrossed every mind, though no tongue had yet ventured to broach it, was abruptly introduced by Henry. After waiting thus long, in the hope of being preceded, in a matter so momentous, by some member of more established credit in the house, this intrepid politician produced to the assembly, and proposed for its adoption, a series of resolutions affirming, in the most unqualified terms and determined tone, that the Virginian colonists had originally imported with them from Britain, and ever since claimed, enjoyed, and transmitted, an entire participation in every political right and franchise competent to Britons; that the most substantial and valuable part of their political birthright was the privilege of being taxed exclusively by themselves or their representatives; that they had uninterruptedly exercised this privilege by the instrumentality of their provincial assembly; and that it had been constantly recognized by the king and people of Great Britain, and never yet voluntarily resigned or justly forfeited. This overture of Henry was encountered with the warmest opposition; nor is it surprising that among its most zealous opponents were some of the persons who had distinguished themselves by promoting the petitions of the preceding year, which expressed doctrines substantially the same with those advanced in the present resolutions. The same consideration of their own superior wealth and patrimonial stake in the province, which animated the zeal of these persons in *reprobating* parliamentary taxation, naturally operated to deter them from *resisting* it, — to which they would doubtless seem to pledge themselves by applying their former language to the present altered posture of affairs. That language, however, though disregarded by the parent state to which they addressed it, had produced an effect far exceeding their views and expectations in the colony, and roused in the great mass of its inhabitants a spirit of opposition to tyranny, undiluted and unbounded by prudential considerations.

The most violent debates ensued upon the motion of Henry, who, loaded with abuse and galled by menaces from some of his opponents, was provoked at one stage of the discussion to a tone of defiance, which produced a remarkable scene. "Cæsar," he exclaimed, "had his Brutus! Charles the First, his Cromwell! and George the Third," — here he was interrupted by a cry of *Treason!* raised by the speaker and echoed from all parts of the house; but drowning the cry by the commanding elevation of his own voice, and baffling the charge with superior presence of mind, he resumed the thread of his discourse with these words, — "George the Third,

I say, *may profit by their example.* If this be treason, make the most of it!" We may judge of the temper which Henry found or created in an assembly which could embrace a measure thus advocated, — thus openly associated with revolt and regicide. How altered was the strain of public sentiment in Virginia, since the days in which the peculiar boast of this province was the romantic gallantry with which it espoused the interests of monarchy against the arms of Cromwell![1] The resolutions, though opposed by every member who had hitherto enjoyed any preëminence or particular consideration in the assembly, and, among others, by several individuals who were afterwards distinguished as bold and generous champions of American liberty, were finally carried [May 28, 1765] by a small majority of votes. Fauquier, the lieutenant-governor of the province, no sooner learned this proceeding than he dissolved the assembly. But they had already set the example of resistance, and kindled or seasonably nourished a flame which was to spread over all America. Their resolutions were circulated and republished in every one of the States; and everywhere they produced a glow of kindred feeling and purpose.[2] The spirit of resistance thus awakened was sustained by the prospect of that powerful organ of its expression which was suggested by Massachusetts, and gradually mounted to such a height, that before the first of November, when the Stamp Act was appointed to take effect, the execution of this unhappy measure had become obviously and utterly impracticable.[3]

Amidst the general agitation, all at once a number of party names came into vogue, and operated with their usual efficacy in augmenting the warmth and acrimony of political affections and passions. The distinctive epithets of *Whig* and *Tory* — hitherto little used in America, where they were known merely as the titles bestowed on each other by two parties in the parent state, of which the one was understood to be friendly to liberty, and the other to arbitrary power — were now employed in all the provinces, and especially in Massachusetts, with as much animosity as signalized the dissensions of that remarkable era when they were first introduced into England.[4] The partisans of American liberty assumed to themselves the title of Whigs, and gave the appellation of Tories to the custom-house officers, the other functionaries appointed by the crown, and in general to all persons who administered the authority or supported the pretensions of the parent state in America. But the favorite appellation was suggested by the speech of Colonel Barré in the House of Commons, which obtained in all the provinces the warmest sympathy and applause, and in conformity with which the more ardent patriots everywhere appropriated to themselves the animating title of *Sons of Liberty*. The justice of the pretensions preferred by the parent state was denied, and the whole tenor of her policy towards America was vilified in speeches, pamphlets, and newspapers, which addressed the reason and the spirit of the colonists with

[1] *Ante*, Book I., Chap. II., *ad finem*.

[2] *The Pennsylvania Gazette* exhibited a remarkable proof of the sudden change in public sentiment occasioned by the Virginian resolutions. We have noted an effort made by that journal on the 30th of May to reconcile the Americans to the Stamp Act. On the 20th of June it displayed a very different spirit in the following observation: — "We learn from the northward, that the Stamp Act is to take place in America on All-Saints' day, the 1st of November next. In the year 1755, on the 1st of November, happened that dreadful and memorable earthquake which destroyed the city of Lisbon."

[3] Minot. Bradford. Wirt. Gordon.

[4] They were first employed by English politicians in the year 1680. Hume. Thus, both in Britain and America, they proved the harbingers of revolution.

every argument and consideration fitted to kindle resentment and justify resistance. If liberty, it was declared, be the peculiar due of those who have sense enough to know its value and fortitude enough to incur every danger and difficulty for the sake of its acquisition, then are the inhabitants of America more truly entitled to this blessing than even the people of Great Britain. The founders of the American commonwealths, it was justly remarked, had been originally constrained by oppression and hardship to emigrate from Britain; at their own cost, and with infinite toil and suffering, they had reared those institutions, and planted that system of freedom, of which Britain now attempted to bereave their descendants. Their acceptance of royal charters, it was insisted, could not reasonably infer any obligation beyond that allegiance which the supreme head of the realm might claim indiscriminately from all its subjects. The assistance which Britain had contributed to the defence of the colonies, it was argued, must be accounted either a friendly or an interested service. If it was an act of kindness, the colonists were willing to return a suitable proportion of gratitude; if it was a mercenary act, it was already repaid by the tribute derived from the restrictions of their commerce. But never had it been demanded by Britain, or conceded by the colonists, that the surrender of their liberties to her was to be the price of this service. It was denied that the submission of the colonists, on former occasions, to acts of parliament affecting their municipal institutions, afforded any fair precedent in support of the present claims of Britain. These exertions of parliamentary authority, it was passionately declared, were such stretches of arbitrary power, as the Americans would now no more submit to, than the English would endure a repetition of the *Star Chamber* jurisdiction established by Charles the First, or of the *dispensing power* usurped by James the Second.

A controversy, which came home to the bosoms of all classes of people in a great community, could not long be conducted in this animated strain, without provoking some violent and tumultuary proceeding. It was impossible that the people could hear it incessantly repeated or insinuated that America would not submit to the tyranny of England, without demonstrating some degree of readiness or inclination to verify the boast. The tumults which ensued might perhaps have been averted, if it had been possible to convoke at an earlier period the projected convention, and to have soothed the general inquietude by presenting the image of a deliberative body engaged in concerting the most effectual measures for common defence, and on whose wisdom and spirit the hopes of America might securely repose. But ere the time appointed for the convention had arrived, the rising ardor of the people became impatient of farther inaction; and it was additionally stimulated by the consideration which now began to occur, that the proceedings of the convention could not possibly have any effect or even be known in Britain, before the date at which the Stamp Act enjoined that its operation should commence. The influence of this consideration was not confined to the poorer and less reflective classes of the colonists; it was partaken by some of the most distinguished inhabitants and considerate politicians of Massachusetts, who fomented the ardor already overboiling in the breasts of their fellow-citizens, and cordially desired to witness an explosion of popular violence, which they vainly expected to moderate and restrain from outrageous excess, and which, thus confined, they hoped would not appear disproportioned to the provocation, but operate

beneficially in illustrating the past, and imparting animation and efficacy to the future, addresses of the American assemblies to Britain. Perhaps, also, a vague hope was entertained that a show of resistance might yet contribute to avert the fatal precedent of even a temporary operation of the Stamp Act. Nevertheless, it is generally admitted that neither the populace of Massachusetts nor the more considerate directors of their proceedings contemplated the extent, whether of evil or of good, that resulted from the first impulse that was given to the whirlwind of riot and anarchy.

The tumultuary scene which had formerly been produced in this province, by the attempt to subject the people to naval impressment,[1] afforded an instance where riot was promoted by the leading inhabitants without detection, was conducted by the mass of the people with entire impunity, and issued in a successful vindication of the provincial liberties. It was at present the more easy, though, doubtless, also the more dangerous, to produce a similar explosion in Massachusetts, from the peculiar impression which the late occurrences were calculated to make on the habitual temper and favorite sentiments of this people. Resolute and enterprising, firmly and ardently attached to liberty, and proudly cherishing the conviction that theirs was *the leading province of America*,[2] they had seen *their* representative assembly alone, of all the American legislatures, when menaced with the approach of arbitrary power, beseech exemption from it as an indulgence, instead of protesting against it as an act of tyranny and injustice; and they had envied the bolder tone of other assemblies, even while they cherished the delusive hope of reaping advantage from the submissiveness evinced by their own. Among other sentiments excited in this province by the intelligence that the Stamp Act had passed, was a painful embarrassment mixed with strong resentment, and derived from the remembrance of that language in which they had so lately characterized this measure, while they ineffectually petitioned against it. The embarrassment of the assembly was sufficiently manifested by the caution with which they forbore now either to repeat their former language or abruptly to assume a different strain; and their purpose was rather insinuated than expressed by the reference to a general convention, in which it was securely foreseen that the resolution to assert the *rights* of America would prevail. Proportioned to the restraint thus imposed on the expression of public sentiment and opinion through its constitutional organ, was the rage and mortification which swelled in the bosoms of the mass of the people, and at length transported them into acts of unbounded license and disorder. Whether the first indulgence of their passion was instigated by the counsel, or merely supported by the known sympathy and approbation, of the more considerable inhabitants, is matter of uncertain conjecture; but the former supposition derives some weight from the comparative order and limitation which marked the outset of the violence, but which were completely discarded in the course of its progress.

On the morning of the 14th of August [1765], there appeared suspended to a tree, which, in the sequel, acquired much notoriety and received the name of Liberty Tree, in the main street of Boston, effigies representing Andrew Oliver, the brother-in-law of Hutchinson, who had been appointed by the British government to be the distributer of stamps in Massachusetts, and of Lord Bute, who was generally regarded and detested as the secret

[1] *Ante*, Book X., Chap. II. [2] See Note XXIII., at the end of the volume

author of every arbitrary measure embraced by the British king and court. Hutchinson, as chief justice, commanded the sheriffs to remove these insulting and menacing emblems; but the sheriffs either durst not or were not disposed to obey. The council, convoked by the governor, declined in like manner to exasperate the people by opposing a manifestation of their sentiments, which, though indecent, was attended with no immediate violence or breach of the peace. At night the images were taken down and carried on a bier, amidst the acclamations of a vast multitude of people, through the court-house, and thence down King Street to the stamp-office, which Oliver, in anticipation of his functions, had lately caused to be erected. This building was instantly levelled with the ground, and the rioters were proceeding thence to Fort Hill in order to conclude their operations by burning their pageantry, when the appearance of Oliver's house, situated in that neighbourhood, tempted them with a new object on which to wreak the rage with which they were blazing. Hutchinson vainly endeavoured to exert his authority in defence of his kinsman's property; the insurgents, loading him with insult, roughly thrust him aside, and having broken into the house, from which the family had fled, demolished the windows and part of the furniture. On the following day [August 15], Oliver commissioned some of his friends to announce at the exchange that he had declined the office of stamp-master; a resignation which he was compelled to repeat again in the evening, in order to satisfy the doubts and soothe the gathering passion of a great concourse of people assembled round a bonfire. The populace, however, were but partially appeased. Accounting Oliver no longer a fit object of resentment, they resolved to discharge upon Hutchinson the violence for which they were prepared; and, accordingly marching to his house, demanded immediate assurance of the truth or falsehood of a report that he was a favorer of the Stamp Act. Hutchinson, whether from a punctilious sense of dignity, or from unwillingness to commit himself by any public declaration that might be offensive to the British government, declined to appear before their tumultuous array, or to return any answer to their requisition; and they were on the point of commencing a general attack upon his house, when they were diverted from this purpose by the exertions of a prudent and popular citizen, who justly feared that such an outrage would discredit their cause and endanger the advantage which it had already obtained. He pledged himself that Hutchinson was opposed to every parliamentary statute injurious to the country; he declared that it was insulting and unreasonable to require the public appearance of the lieutenant-governor and chief justice in this disorderly manner; and urged his hearers not to stain their proceedings with the iniquity of maltreating an individual who had spent forty years of his life in the service of the province. The people, yielding rather to their habitual deference to this speaker than to the force of his arguments, complied for the present with the counsel he gave, and quietly dispersed themselves.

So far, the career of popular violence seemed to be attended with success, and was almost wholly exempted from blame. Hardly a voice was raised in condemnation of disorderly force directed against an object so unpopular, and yet exerted with so much discrimination and self-control. Even Samuel Adams, one of the wisest and most austerely virtuous citizens of Massachusetts, was known to approve the demolition of the stamp-office. The misfortune was that the populace, inflamed by triumphant and applauded

violence, had tasted a gratification which it was much easier to tempt them to repeat than to persuade them to relinquish or restrain within moderate bounds. At the very time when the tempest was supposed to have entirely subsided, it burst out again with redoubled fury. Its second eruption was preceded by various unfounded rumors, and, among others, that, in consequence of Oliver's resignation, the governor had undertaken to conduct the distribution of the stamps. On Sunday, the 25th of August, Mayhew, a popular preacher in Boston, delivered from his pulpit a sermon in which the Stamp Act was warmly condemned, and to which, with extreme rashness, if not from unbecoming and incendiary zeal, he prefixed the text, "*I would they were even cut off which trouble you.*"

At twilight on the following day [August 26, 1765], the kindling of a bonfire served as the signal of assemblage to a large, disorderly multitude, who repaired in the first instance to the house of Story, the deputy registrar of the Court of Admiralty, and, forcing their way into it, destroyed all his private papers as well as the records and files of the court. Hallowell, the comptroller of the customs, was the next object of their vengeance. They broke into his house, and not only demolished all his furniture, but rioted on the liquors in his cellar till intoxication heightened their rage to frenzy. In this condition they directed their course to the dwelling of Hutchinson, where, partaking the tranquil happiness of domestic life, which the warmth and tenderness of his private affections peculiarly fitted him to enjoy, he sat unexpectant of the storm that was preparing to burst upon him and to desolate the scene of his felicity. Notice of their danger was conveyed to him and his family barely in time to enable them by a precipitate flight to save their lives from the frantic populace, whose rage was not satiated till it had converted the finest house in the province into a mass of ruins. The very partition-walls were beaten down; the furniture destroyed; the family paintings and plate defaced; a large sum of money pillaged; and a valuable collection of books and manuscripts, the fruit of thirty years' labor, almost entirely annihilated.[1]

These acts of outrageous violence were, with more or less sincerity, generally deplored or condemned. A numerous meeting of the citizens of Boston, including all the principal inhabitants and leading politicians of the place, assembled the next day, and unanimously resolved that the selectmen and magistrates should be directed to employ their utmost endeavours to prevent a repetition of the late disorders, and should be assisted in this duty by *a civic guard*, which the meeting directly proceeded to organize. It was not merely by the wealthy, the timid, and the partisans of Britain, that this measure was promoted. So much shocked were all the considerate friends of liberty with the extravagance which the populace had committed,[2] and so anxious to disavow it and to manifest their zeal to guard against its recurrence, that, if the attempt could now have been made to carry the Stamp Act into execution, the cause of British prerogative would

[1] "Perhaps the sun of liberty must always rise in the midst of anarchy, and gradually dispel its noxious vapors as he ascends to his meridian lustre." Minot. "So infatuated were the people at this period, that, if a man had any pique against his neighbour, it was only to call him a few hard names, and his house would be certainly pulled down and his life put in jeopardy." Eliot. "*Le passage du mal au bien, ne peut il se faire que par les voies de la violence?*" Millot.

[2] Mayhew, in particular, was so much affected, that, while he denied all intentional accession to the riot, he protested that he would willingly part with all his property to recall his unfortunate sermon. We shall find, however, that his political zeal blazed out not long after with as much fervor as ever.

have gained a great and perhaps decisive advantage. But this advantage was lost by delay, and counterbalanced by the impolitic behaviour of the governor. At the very time when he would have been effectually supported in measures tending to repress all violent opposition to established authority, he made an unseasonable concession to the popular desires, and gave a color of utility and good policy to the late commotion, by publishing a declaration that he had no authority to distribute the stamps, and harboured no such imprudent purpose as the assumption of functions which did not belong to him. He proffered, indeed, in conjunction with the council, very large rewards for the discovery of the rioters, and especially their ringleaders; but it was easier to discover than to convict or punish them. One of the ringleaders, a tradesman of some note, was apprehended by the sheriffs, but instantly released by them without even the formality of an inquiry, in consequence of a threat from a large and respectable portion of the civic guard, that they would disband themselves the moment he was committed to prison. Eight or ten persons of inferior condition were actually imprisoned, and some disclosures injurious to more important characters were expected from them; but they were soon placed beyond the reach of danger by the resolute interposition of a numerous body of their fellow-citizens, who, assembling without noise or tumult in the night, compelled the jailer to surrender his keys. The prisoners were liberated without obstruction or commotion, and enabled by their friends to live in exile or concealment till every prospect of a judicial visitation of their offence had vanished. The leading politicians of Massachusetts now took especial care to restrain the popular ardor from exploding again with that active violence which had proved so dangerous and ungovernable; but gradually recovering their confidence, without discarding their caution, and animated by the behaviour of the other colonies, they steadily pursued the purpose of cultivating among their fellow-citizens a spirit of resistance, in unison with a bias to that policy without which resistance could not be successfully undertaken. Among other expedients adopted for this purpose was the institution of a new political journal, of which the tendency was illustrated by the emblematic device prefixed to it,—a snake cut into pieces, each bearing the initial letters of the name of one of the American provinces, and the whole surmounted by the motto, *Join or Die*.[1]

The explosion of popular wrath and impatience in Massachusetts produced, or at least promoted, corresponding movements and convulsions in the other colonies, of which those that occurred in Rhode Island and Providence were the most violent. About ten days after the first commotion at Boston, a gazette extraordinary was published at Providence, with the motto, *Vox populi, vox Dei*, and underneath, the text, *Where the Spirit*

[1] Hutchinson. *Annual Register for* 1765. Minot. Bradford. Holmes. Eliot. No man capable of just reflection has ever been the eyewitness of a revolution accomplished by violence, without being deeply struck with the influence of wealth in rendering its possessors chary of their personal safety. The poor, who have nothing but their lives, promptly and boldly risk them in defence of that consciousness of liberty, which, like Nature's gift of air and light, is a blessing that cannot be supplied by any artificial good within *their* reach. No generous man ever saw a revolution *begun* in a civilized community, and against a powerful and established government, without feeling the inexpressible usefulness of the poor as the defenders of liberty. The utmost, in general, that the rich at first do, at such seasons, is to impel or promote the excitation of the poor, whose actual or apprehended violence affords to themselves in the sequel a safe pretence for avowed interposition, and an occasion of assuming the completion of an enterprise which they are more fitted to consummate than to commence. The *popular riot* produced the *civic guard* at Boston

of the Lord is, there is Liberty; and effigies of persons accounted partisans of British prerogative were exhibited with halters about their necks, and were hanged upon a gallows, and afterwards cut down and burned amid loud and universal acclamations. Three days after, a similar ceremonial was performed by the inhabitants of Newport; but it seemed to have inflamed, instead of satiating, their rage; for, assembling on the following day [August 28], they attacked and destroyed the houses of Howard, a lawyer, and Moffat, a physician, of whom the first had defended the pretensions of parliament with his pen, and the second in conversation had supported the same opinion. Johnston, the distributer of stamps, saved his house from a similar fate by publicly declaring that he would never undertake a function offensive to his countrymen. In Connecticut, about the same time, the people at sundry places exhibited, in contumelious parade, and committed to the flames, the effigies of Ingersoll, the distributer of stamps, and of various other individuals who advocated the authority of Britain or recommended the submission of America; and the resentment at length became so general and alarming, that Ingersoll thought proper to resign the obnoxious office, which he had not accepted without hesitation and reluctance, overcome by the urgency of Dr. Franklin. A similar resignation was produced by the spirit displayed at New York, where the Stamp Act was contemptuously reprinted and hawked about the streets, under the title of *The Folly of England and Ruin of America.* The project of obstructing the execution of this act by inducing the officers charged with its administration to resign their functions was successively embraced by all the British provinces in America, except Nova Scotia and Canada, which submitted to the act; and it was aided by the policy which induced the British government to confide these functions to natives of America. Messervé, the distributer of stamps for New Hampshire, son of a brave officer of this province who was slain at the last siege of Louisburg, in deference to the wishes of his countrymen resigned his office with an alacrity which they rewarded with the warmest approbation.

The establishment of the first newspaper in New Hampshire, which took place in the present year, contributed greatly to the animation and diffusion of public spirit.[1] [September, 1765.] Mercer, the distributer of stamps for Virginia, resigned his office as readily as Messervé had done, and obtained equal applause. The justices of the peace for the county of Westmoreland, in this province, gave public notice that they declined any longer to exercise judicial functions which might be rendered instrumental to the ruin of their country's liberty; and the Virginian lawyers in general declared their resolution rather to abandon their occupation than conduct it

[1] We find that newspapers had also been introduced into North Carolina and Georgia at this period. Prior to 1750, there were only seven newspapers in the American colonies. In the present year (1765) there were twenty-six. This is the machinery, which, collecting, combining, and organizing the force of those political sentiments and principles which are scattered throughout society, have produced that great living stream of public opinion of which the resistless energy has been so surprisingly developed since the middle of the eighteenth century. Before newspapers were known, the great mass of the inhabitants of every country were very imperfectly acquainted with the domestic policy of their rulers and the sentiments and interests of their fellow-citizens; and only from the pages of history could they learn to appreciate the foreign policy to which their own national force had been made subservient, and the emergencies, however interesting to themselves, that had befallen neighbouring states. The invention of newspapers formed, in every country where they were introduced, a channel for the expression of common interest and the flow of public opinion; and their multiplication has tended to combine and ally the force of all the contemporary streams.

with stamped papers. Hood, the distributer for Maryland, to avoid resigning his office, fled to New York; but he was quickly pursued thither by a number of the freeholders of his native province, whose remonstrances induced him to subscribe, and even attest on oath before a magistrate, a document importing his absolute and final resignation. In Pennsylvania, Allen, the son of the chief justice, and other public-spirited politicians, chiefly of the Presbyterian persuasion, endeavoured, vainly for some time, to persuade Hughes, the distributer, to resign his office. Even the proprietary party united with them in this attempt, from personal dislike to Hughes, who had seconded all Franklin's measures and been the chief promoter of his late mission to England, and whom Franklin, in return, had recommended to the British government as a fit person to execute the Stamp Act in Pennsylvania, if the Stamp Act were to be executed at all. That Franklin's own popularity escaped unharmed by so much active coöperation with the policy of the British government is not the least memorable instance of the good fortune that controlled and shaped the ends of his political career. Hughes was supported in his refusal to resign by the Quakers, and by a number of the Baptists and of the partisans of the church of England, who were willing to submit to the statute. The assembly, however, of which the Quakers no longer possessed the command, gave a vigorous impulse to the public spirit by unanimously protesting that the only legal representatives of the provincial population were the persons elected to serve as members of assembly; and that the taxation of the province by any other persons whatsoever was unconstitutional, unjust, subversive of liberty, and destructive of happiness. Resolutions of the same tenor were passed shortly after by the assemblies of Connecticut and Maryland. Finally, Hughes was constrained to resign [October 5] by the strong manifestation of public feeling produced in Philadelphia by the approach of the ships conveying the stamped papers from England; on which occasion all the vessels in the harbour hoisted their colors half-mast high, and a melancholy peal was tolled from the muffled bells of the churches. Ere the arrival of the day when the execution of the Stamp Act was appointed to commence, every distributer of stamps in America had resigned his office. The hopes and spirits of the colonists were animated by the tidings of the change of ministry which took place in England in the course of the summer, when Grenville and his colleagues were deprived of power, in consequence of a disagreement between them and the king respecting the terms of the regency bill; and a new administration was formed, at the head of which was the Marquis of Rockingham, a liberal Whig, and in which the office of secretary of state was held by General Conway.[1]

The time had now arrived, when the measure suggested by Massachusetts was to be carried into effect; and on the appointed day there assembled, in the town of New York, a convention, composed of twenty-eight delegates from the assemblies of Massachusetts, Rhode Island, Connecticut, New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware, Maryland, and South Carolina. The assembly of New Hampshire, for some unexplained reason, neglected to send delegates to this convention; and the assemblies of Virginia, North Carolina, and Georgia were prevented from electing

[1] Ramsay's *American Revolution*. *Annual Register for* 1765. Gordon. Belknap. Holmes. Dwight's *Travels*.

delegates by the expedient of long adjournments which the governors of these provinces had recourse to for this purpose. But no substantial advantage was gained by this attempt to disunite the colonies. On the contrary, they were prompted more strongly than ever to cherish the purpose of union by the opposition which this purpose received from the detested partisans of British prerogative; and the assemblies of the four colonies which were not represented on this occasion took the earliest opportunity to pass resolves and transmit memorials and petitions studiously accommodated to the sentiments and language of its proceedings. Colden, the governor of New York, attempted, by the expedient of adjournment, to prevent the assembly over which he presided from contributing to the composition of the convention; but a committee of management, which the assembly had elected in the preceding year to conduct extraordinary business emerging during its adjournments, undertook, with general approbation, to counteract the governor's policy, and elect delegates to represent itself and its constituents. In Massachusetts, Bernard and Hutchinson, instead of withstanding the nomination of delegates, had endeavoured to make it fall upon their own partisans. Their intrigues for this purpose were but partially successful; and though they were able to introduce dissension among the delegates of Massachusetts, they failed in the attempt a second time to stifle or disguise the sentiments of the province. Ruggles, whose appointment to be one of the delegates was the fruit of their exertions, refused to acquiesce in the measures of his colleagues; but his dissent was disregarded by the convention, and punished in his native province by a censure of the assembly and by the general contempt and displeasure of the people. Ogden, one of the delegates from New Jersey, also refused his assent to the proceedings of his colleagues; for which he was afterwards hanged and burned in effigy by his fellow-citizens.

The first measure of the convention was a declaration of the rights and grievances of the American colonists; in whose behalf they claimed a full participation in all the franchises and liberties of subjects born within the realm of Great Britain, — of which the most essential were the exclusive power of taxing themselves, and the privilege of trial by jury. The grievance chiefly complained of was the Stamp Act, which, by taxing the colonists without their own consent, and by extending the jurisdiction of Courts of Admiralty, was declared to have a direct tendency to bereave them of their birthright of freedom. In conformity with these views, a petition to the king and a *memorial* to each house of parliament were composed and signed by the members of the convention; representing, in firm, yet loyal and respectful language, that they were animated not less by attachment to the person, family, and government of the king, than by zeal for the preservation of those principles of liberty which had been incorporated with the first establishment of all the American communities; that they acknowledged a *due* subordination to parliament, consistently with the possession of an equal share in the system of political liberty enjoyed by the natives of Britain; that, while all British subjects were entitled to the privilege of being taxed only by their own representatives, the remote situation of the colonies rendered it impracticable that they should be represented except in their own subordinate legislatures; that, as the colonial settlements, on the one hand, had contributed to render Britain the most extensive and powerful empire in the world, so the colonists, on the other,

esteemed a connection with Britain their greatest happiness and safeguard; that the permanence of this connection would be most securely established by making liberty and justice its pillars, and practically demonstrating that the *inherent* rights and liberties of the people of America reposed on the principles of the British constitution; that the American legislatures possessed in sound theory, and in actual practice had always hitherto enjoyed, the same authority which the parliament of Ireland still retained, and which the Americans had never deserved to forfeit nor consented to forego; that the commercial duties lately imposed by parliament invaded this rightful authority, and introduced an odious distinction between the Americans and their fellow-subjects in Europe; that, without waiving their *claim* to be exempted from such impositions altogether, they complained of them as burdensome in their extent and grievous in their particular operation; and that they earnestly and humbly entreated the redress of their wrongs and restoration of their just rights and liberties.

Having concluded these transactions, and transmitted along with the reports of them a recommendation to all the colonies to appoint special agents in England who should unite their utmost endeavours in soliciting justice to America, the convention dissolved itself. The general approbation with which its proceedings were regarded tended to promote the growing inclination of the colonists in favor of a system of united councils; and as the provincial assemblies could not yet venture to advance this system to maturity by establishing a permanent convention, the more zealous politicians in several of the States sought to attain the same object by different and less regular paths, and cultivated the principle of union in a form which, without seeming to combine the force of the colonies, was peculiarly fitted to assimilate the sentiments and inflame the passions of the people. Political clubs and associations were formed in almost all the provinces, and assumed the title of *The Sons of Liberty*. These clubs now began to form treaties of union and correspondence with each other; and, being totally irresponsible for their conduct, freely indulged and inflamed their mutual ardor in secret councils and rival flights of the most daring spirit of resistance and language of menace. Several of them instituted processions, in which copies of the Stamp Act, after having been exposed to public opprobrium, were burned along with the effigies of its chief promoters. One of them proceeded so far as to circulate printed placards, which were even affixed to the doors of public offices, denouncing vengeance on the person, house, and effects of every man who should presume either to distribute or even to make use of stamped paper. The club established at Boston signified its commands to Oliver, long after he had resigned the office of stamp-master, that he should appear on a certain day at the foot of Liberty Tree, and there read aloud a declaration signifying what he had done, and attest it upon oath in presence of a magistrate. In vain he appealed to his former resignation, and entreated, that, if a repetition of this ceremony were necessary, it might be performed in the town-house; the club peremptorily refused to qualify its mandate or spare his humiliation, and he was compelled to obey. Innumerable satires, political proverbs, caricatures, and pasquinades were published; and incessant activity was exerted over all America to render British prerogative and its partisans hateful, contemptible, and ridiculous, and to fortify the cause of liberty by uniting it with attractions adapted to every variety of human taste, temper, and disposition.

The most promptly efficacious are not always the most creditable or wholesome measures; and notwithstanding the unquestionable benefit which the interests of liberty derived from those clubs, it is probable that to their operation must be ascribed the harsh and illiberal features by which some of the scenes of the American Revolution were defaced. The mystery which overhangs such associations frequently secures to their mandates and measures a respect and acquiescence from the mass of society, which a disclosure of their real elements and composition would neither merit nor be able to obtain; and in the secrecy of their conclaves, the dishonest, the cruel, and the dastardly are temptingly encouraged, and too often successfully enabled, to urge their ferocious and malignant suggestions in preference to the calmer counsels of the just, the liberal, and the truly brave.

The assembling of the convention at New York was an important event for the American States; and that they fully appreciated its importance was plainly shown by the eagerness with which they approved the proceedings of that body, adopted its sentiments and language, and complied with its directions. Among other consequences that resulted from it was the deliverance of the Massachusetts assembly from the embarrassment which had hitherto restrained its free and open assertion of the *rights* of its constituents. In the month of September, before the convention was held, Governor Bernard, having convoked the assembly, addressed [September 25] an elaborate speech to it upon the alarming aspect of public affairs. After referring to the recent tumults at Boston with expressions of suitable disapprobation, he undertook the defence of the late ministers of Britain and of the measures they had pursued. He declared his conviction of the supreme and unlimited authority of parliament; and farther, on grounds of expediency, recommended the unqualified submission of the province to the mandates of a power which it could not resist without augmented distress and inevitable ruin. The ordinary executive government of Massachusetts, he observed, was plainly too weak to contradict authoritatively the late popular declarations that the Stamp Act should not be executed within the province, or to oppose the force by which these declarations were supported; and therefore he now invited the provincial legislature either to strengthen the hands of the executive officers in proportion to the emergency, or at once to acknowledge, that, as the Stamp Act could not be executed, so also must all commerce be abandoned, all judicial and magisterial functions suspended, and the whole community resigned to anarchy and confusion. It was the more especially their interest, he assured them, to embrace the former part of the alternative, that they might confidently rely on the redress of all their grievances, provided they yielded in the first instance an implicit obedience to the authority of the parent state.

The assembly, though still constrained to dissemble the sentiments which they longed to avow, would have been more perplexed by this address, if it had immediately succeeded the Boston riots, or if it had preceded the intelligence already received of the change in the British cabinet, and of the determination expressed by the other provinces to resist the execution of the Stamp Act. After some delay, which they would willingly have prolonged, but which the anxious expectation of the people induced them to abridge, they returned to the governor's address a vague and cautious answer, importing, that, in a qualified sense, they acknowledged the su-

preme authority of parliament; that they could not presume to adjust the limits of this authority, but could as little hesitate to declare that "there were bounds to it"; that, if an act of parliament was just, it needed neither aid nor confirmation from a subordinate legislature; that, if it was unjust and tyrannical, it was null and void, as were formerly declared all statutes inconsistent with the franchises of Magna Charta; and that it was strange doctrine, and highly disrespectful to parliament, to affirm that it required obedience to an unjust law as a preliminary condition essential to its repeal; that they must desire to be excused from assisting in the execution of an act of parliament which their constituents regarded as subversive of liberty, and inconsistent with the fundamental principle of the British constitution, that taxation and representation are commensurate; that they knew of no general declarations by their countrymen of an intention to prevent the operation of the act of parliament, otherwise than by refraining from the proceedings and transactions which it loaded with imposts; that they saw much misery, but no criminality, in this choice; and "therefore must consider it unkind in your Excellency to reflect on a province, whose unshaken loyalty and indissoluble attachment to his Majesty's person and government was never before called in question, and, we hope *in God*, never will again."

But no sooner were the well foreboded proceedings of the New York convention promulgated in this province, than the assembly, renouncing all further reserve and ambiguity, by a unanimous vote [October 29], declaratorily resolved, that there were certain essential rights recognized by the political constitution of Great Britain, which were founded on the law of God and nature, and were the common property of mankind; that the people of Massachusetts, both by the general principle of birthright and by the particular terms of their charters, were entitled to participate in these advantages, and could not justly be divested of them by any law of society; that no man could rightfully take either the whole or a part of the property of another without the proprietor's consent; and that on this principle reposed the main pillar of the British constitution, namely, the representation of the people in the same branch of the legislature to which the power of taxing the people was confided; that the citizens of Massachusetts never had been and never could be adequately represented in the British parliament; that, in accordance with their general rights and their particular circumstances, they had always till now enjoyed the privilege of being taxed by their domestic assemblies alone; that all statutes imposing taxes on them, and enacted by any other authority whatever, were infringements of their *inherent and unalienable rights as men and British subjects;* and, finally, that these resolutions should be preserved on record, in order that a just sense both of liberty and of loyalty might be transmitted to posterity. Bernard, infatuated by insolence and selfish ambition, perceived now the failure of his policy, without, however, discerning or acknowledging its folly. In a wrathful and intemperate address which he delivered soon after to the assembly, he accused them of having countenanced all the riots that had occurred in Massachusetts, and of being themselves on the eve of open rebellion. To this charge the assembly promptly replied, that they repelled with scorn and indignation the pretext that they had either encouraged or justified the late riots; but they plainly declared their opinion that the obnoxious laws which provoked the tumults would never have been embraced

by the British parliament without the sinister instigation and pernicious counsel of the functionaries of Britain in America. "Impartial history," they declared, "will record that the people of this continent, after giving the strongest testimonies of their loyalty to his Majesty, by making the utmost exertions to defend his territories and enlarge his dominions in this part of the world, gave an equal testimony of a love of liberty and a regard to those principles which are the basis of his Majesty's government, by a glorious stand, *even against an act of parliament*, because they plainly saw that their essential, unalienable right of representation and of trial by jury, the very foundation of the British constitution, was infringed, and even annihilated by it."[1]

The day on which the operation of the Stamp Act had been appointed to commence [November 1, 1765] was not suffered to elapse without some remarkable tokens of public feeling in various parts of America. At Boston, it was ushered in by the tolling of bells; shops and warehouses were closed; effigies of the authors and abettors of the act were carried about the streets, and afterwards torn in pieces by the populace. In New Hampshire, the people, who had hitherto behaved with a remarkable degree of calmness and self-control, were now restrained from a general riot only by the assurance of their domestic government that no attempt would be made to execute the obnoxious law. At Portsmouth, the metropolis of this State, as well as in the towns of Newcastle and Greenland, the bells were tolled to denote the decease of liberty, and all the friends of the departed goddess were invited to attend her funeral, of which the ceremony was performed with much pomp and solemnity. A coffin, splendidly decorated, and bearing the inscription, "Liberty, aged CXLV. years,"[2] was carried in funeral procession from the State-house of Portsmouth, attended with the music of unbraced drums. Minute guns were fired until the coffin reached the place of interment and was deposited in a grave prepared for its reception, when an oration was pronounced in honor of the deceased friend of the people. Scarcely was the oration concluded, when some remains of life, it was pretended, were discovered in the body, which thereupon was eagerly snatched from the grave. The inscription on the lid of the coffin was immediately altered to *Liberty revived*; a cheerful peal resounded from the bells, and every countenance brightened with joy. Childish and even ridiculous as this pageant may appear to philosophic minds or tranquil spirits, it was well calculated to preserve the sentiment and cherish the earnest purpose of liberty in all classes of the people of New Hampshire.

At New York, the day was signalized by an eruption of popular violence, partly provoked by the impolitic behaviour of the governor in demonstrating his expectation of some such occurrence. In consequence of the resignation of the stamp-master, Colden took possession of the first cargo of stamps that arrived from England, and lodged them in Fort George. He was already the object of much popular dislike, which he contrived to augment by the ostentatious precautions he now adopted for the defence of the stamps in his custody. Offended by this appearance of menace or defiance, the people began to assemble in crowds in the streets, and, with the usual issue

[1] Bradford. Gordon. Minot. [Here ends the narrative of Minot; and here, accordingly, in tracing the labyrinth of American politics, we lose a guide more liberal, moderate, and impartial in his sentiments, than vigorous or perspicuous in his language.] Holmes. Hutchinson.

[2] Computed from the landing of the first colonists of New England at Plymouth, in 1620

of angry and multitudinous congregations, were easily impelled to perpetrate the violence which Colden had imprudently suggested. They began by seizing the governor's coach, in which they carried an effigy of himself to the public gallows, where they suspended the effigy along with a stamped bill of lading and a figure intended to represent the devil; and then, with shouts of execration, transporting the coach, gallows, and effigies to the fort, they burned the whole in triumphant challenge under the very muzzles of the guns. Thence they proceeded to the house of Major James, who had expressed approbation of the Stamp Act, and, after plundering it and ravaging his garden, consumed every article of the furniture in a bonfire. On the following day, they readily assembled again at the summons of one of their ringleaders, Isaac Sears, who had formerly commanded a privateer; and, in conformity with his suggestion, clamorously demanded that the stamped paper should be surrendered to their hands. After some negotiation, the governor submitted to deliver it up to the corporation of the city, and it was accordingly deposited in the town-hall. Ten boxes of stamped paper, which afterwards arrived, were promptly seized by the people and committed to the flames.

The supporters of colonial rights in the higher classes of society at New York were struck with alarm at the riotous outrage committed by their townsmen, and perceived the expediency of constituting prudent leaders for the management and control of the multitude. Having convoked a general meeting of the inhabitants [November 6], they proposed a resolution, which was readily embraced, to confide the interests of the province, with respect to British prerogative, to a committee who were authorized to institute a correspondence with all the other colonies. Sears and four other persons were charged with this function, which they exercised with much zeal and efficiency. From the want of such communication with each other, and consequently of union among themselves, many nations have lost their liberties, or failed in their attempts to regain them. In every age and country, the predominance of the few has been supported by the lack of union among the many; and human wisdom has never devised a system more subservient to the political advancement and illumination of the mass of society than a reciprocal exchange of sentiment and intelligence by corresponding committees. One of the earliest effects of the correspondence which was now established was the general adoption and extension of a measure which originated at New York, and proved eminently serviceable in creating within the parent state an interest in unison with the desires of the colonists. The merchants of New York were the first who exemplified the policy of directing their British correspondents to ship no more goods for them until the Stamp Act should be repealed; and they farther declared that they would not sell on commission any goods shipped from Britain after the first of January, in the ensuing year, until the tidings of such repeal should be received. This spirited and patriotic purpose was diffused by the clubs and corresponding committees over all America, and everywhere awakened applause and imitation. A similar non-importation agreement was framed by the merchants of Boston and Philadelphia shortly after; and at a meeting of the inhabitants of Philadelphia [December], it was resolved, though not unanimously, that, till the repeal of the Stamp Act, no lawyer should support the suit of an English creditor against an American debtor, nor any American make remittances to England in payment of debts. These Philadelphia

resolutions were extremely unjust, but by no means unnatural; for nothing is more congenial to the temper of mankind than to retaliate the injustice which provokes their own impatience and complaint. Even when remonstrating against arbitrary power, the Americans refused to permit Quakers, and other timid or conscientious individuals, to submit, as they were inclined, to the Stamp Act; and to reinforce their own protestations against the injustice of the British parliament, they refused or obstructed the payment of their debts to the very merchants who had strenuously endeavoured to prevent the injustice of which they complained. It may be reasonably surmised, that, both in this and in other instances, the heated passions of the multitude were artfully directed into channels corresponding with the private interest of sordid and hypocritical counsellors. The non-importation agreement was gradually propagated throughout all America [1766], though its terms were not everywhere the same; for in some parts, and especially in New England, it was resolved to adhere to it, until not only the Stamp Act, but also the previous commercial impositions were abolished. In every colony and every class of society, these compacts were enforced by the guardian care of the political clubs, and aided by the formation of collateral conventions, which adopted subsidiary purposes. To encourage a woollen manufacture in America, it was recommended to the colonists to abstain from eating the flesh of lambs. Not a butcher durst afterwards expose a lamb for sale. Instead of wearing British cloth, which was formerly accounted a mark of fashion and gentility, the wealthiest colonists now set the example of clothing themselves in old or in homespun habiliments; and, instead of being married by licenses, on which a duty was now imposed by the Stamp Act, the richer Americans agreed to imitate the procedure of their humbler countrymen, and neither to contract nor countenance marriages celebrated by any other authority than public proclamation in church. Associations were formed and resolutions expressed to abstain from particular luxuries which could be procured only from Britain. The American women distinguished themselves by the eagerness with which they promoted these purposes, and rendered both themselves and the interests of liberty additionally dear to their countrymen by their prompt and cheerful surrender of every ornament and indulgence of which the use was accounted a demonstration of servility or a contribution to the resources of arbitrary power. The domination of Britain was, indeed, much more seriously endangered by the prevalence of industrious and frugal habits among the colonists, than by the most violent and menacing declarations of their provincial assemblies. Economy is essential to national as well as to individual independence. "Save your money, and you save your country" became a proverb with the people of New England. The self-control and endurance practised by those who dispensed with the costly British luxuries to which they had been accustomed served at once to loosen the dependence of America on Britain, to prepare the Americans for the rigors of warfare, and to diminish the resources of their enemy and oppressor. So forcibly were these considerations impressed on the mind of Franklin, that, when the proposition for the repeal of the Stamp Act was afterwards entertained in England, he declared his opinion that the interests of America would be more effectually promoted by a suspension of this act, which would at once postpone a struggle dangerous to the weakness of the colonists and promote among them habits of virtue inconsistent with final or lasting subjugation.

The only semblance of respect which the Stamp Act obtained in America was the general suspension of commercial and judicial business that ensued for a while in almost all the provinces. This state of things could not and did not last long; the people soon resumed their former pursuits, and the provincial magistrates their functions, and risked the consequences of exercising them in defiance of the act of parliament. Courageous traders sent their vessels to sea, without any new ceremony of precaution; more timid merchants and ship-masters gave a color of legitimacy to their transactions by obtaining certificates that the persons who were appointed distributers of the stamps refused to deliver them. So strong was the current of public will, that the custom-house officers hesitated not a moment to give way to it, and granted clearances to every vessel that sailed, without a syllable of objection to the want of stamps. In Rhode Island, the courts of law were never closed for a single day. In Virginia and Maryland, before they had been closed a single month, they were reopened by general consent. In Massachusetts, most of the judges in the inferior courts gave notice that they would discharge their functions as usual; but the judges of the Supreme Court firmly refused at first to entertain any legal proceedings without stamps; and even the most patriotic of the lawyers were prompted, by inveterate professional prejudice, to account it impossible to conduct judicial business in open disregard of a subsisting act of parliament, however unjust and tyrannical. At length [January 23, 1766] the popular party prevailed so far as to obtain from the assembly a resolution "that the shutting up the courts of justice is a very great grievance; and that the judges, justices, and all other public officers in this province ought to proceed as usual." The judges were compelled to yield obedience to this resolution; and the colonists enjoyed the triumph of beholding the mandate of their domestic legislature prevail over the command of the British parliament. The judges, however, declared that they submitted only for self-preservation, — being sensible that they were in the hands of the populace; and, by the connivance of the lawyers, but little judicial business was transacted. In South Carolina, the governor still refused his sanction to the transaction of public business without stamps; but the assembly, having ascertained that the copy of the Stamp Act transmitted to him from England had been sent in an irregular and unusual manner, laid hold of this pretext, and insisted that he had received no such formal notification of the act as to render it incumbent on them or him to pay any attention to its injunctions.

The consciousness of having thus practically disavowed the authority of parliament and defied its power seemed to inspire the colonists with additional boldness of tone, and to impart additional spring and latitude to their speculations and purposes. Treatises were published in the journals of New York, openly denying that the British parliament possessed even the shadow of jurisdiction over America, and limiting the constitutional relation between Britain and America to the common subjection which the two countries acknowledged to the same monarch. The clubs and corresponding committees redoubled their exertions to influence and unite public feeling; and all who had distinguished themselves by peculiar intemperance of language or conduct consulted their safety or vented their zeal in efforts to implicate the great body of their countrymen as deeply as themselves in demonstration of resistance. A union of all the clubs in America was proposed, approved, and partially accomplished; the members pledging themselves with their

lives and fortunes to defend *the British constitution in America* against the measures disclosed in "a certain pamphlet which has appeared in the shape of an act of parliament, called and known by the name of the Stamp Act"; to support each other in all their past and future opposition to those measures; and to bring to condign punishment all betrayers of their country who should promote such measures by assistance or submission. The people in various places were invited to form associations for the protection of their fellow-citizens who had signalized themselves by generous zeal for American liberty. To these invitations the most cordial assurances of support were generally returned. [February.] Most of the towns in Massachusetts replied to an application of this nature, by signifying *the determination of their inhabitants to march with their whole force to the support of the British constitution, and consequently the relief of those that shall or may be in danger from the Stamp Act or its abettors.*[1] Popular license, in short, was carried to the highest pitch it could admit without assuming a different name.

The tidings of all these remarkable events in America were successively transmitted to Britain, where they produced a strong impression on the public mind, together with much contrariety of purpose and opinion. One point, indeed, became every day more undeniably manifest and more pressingly urgent. All parties agreed that affairs could no longer be suffered to remain in their present posture, and that Britain must either forthwith exert her utmost force to carry the Stamp Act into execution, or promptly repeal it. Each of these views of policy was espoused by different statesmen, and warmly supported by numerous partisans. The new ministers, and especially Secretary Conway, who formerly denied the power of parliament to tax America, were desirous to repeal the Stamp Act; but their sentiments were perplexed and their language modified, partly by the violent opposition to any such measures by the members and friends of the late cabinet, and partly by the pride naturally attending the possession of power, and by aversion to bend or even to seem to bend in concession to the hostile and menacing attitude which America displayed. To make war on the Americans in support of the act seemed, if not absolute suicide, at least tantamount to making use of one arm to cut off the other. The prior declarations of parliament and the present temper aroused in the British people forbade every thought of repealing the act on the ground of incompetence; and the violent conduct of the Americans rendered it difficult to reconcile the dignity of the British empire with a repeal founded on the plea of expediency. In circular letters to the provincial governors, Conway expressed the royal displeasure at the riots which had taken place, but added withal that it was "*hoped* that the resistance to the authority of the mother country had found place only among the lower and more ignorant of the people." In fact, many respectable tradesmen, and even some of the principal inhabitants of various parts of America, had both promoted and partaken the resistance of their countrymen; and of this the ministers received ample and even exaggerated information from the letters of the royal governors. But, eager to procure a repeal of the Stamp Act, both as a measure of good policy and a stigma upon their predecessors, they willingly countenanced the idea that the agitations in the colonies were neither general nor formidable; they wished to confine the discussion of the matter to considerations of equity and com-

[1] *Annual Register for* 1765 and *for* 1766. Belknap. Gordon. Holmes. Franklin's *Memoirs*. Hutchinson.

mercial expediency; and affecting to believe that the distress, of which many English manufacturers loudly complained at this period, was wholly occasioned by the non-importation compacts of the Americans, they promoted petitions to parliament for a repeal of the Stamp Act from the principal trading and manufacturing towns in England. No instigation was needed to prompt the merchants of London to aid this purpose; they petitioned and exerted all their influence to obtain the repeal.

The wishes of the ministry were ably seconded by the American agents in Britain, and especially by Dr. Franklin, who was examined at the bar of the House of Commons [February 3] with regard to the actual condition of America, and the sentiments, opinions, and conduct of his countrymen. The genius which he displayed on this occasion, with a steady self-possession that gave it the fullest effect, — the extent and variety of knowledge he manifested, — the clearness and comprehension of his views, — and the graceful, perspicuous, and forcible language in which his testimony was delivered, attracted universal attention and general praise. Of some of his statements the inaccuracy is certain; and the good faith with which they were propounded is, at least, doubtful. He was perplexed by the inconsistent desires of vindicating the conduct and protecting the interests of his countrymen, on the one hand, and yet of avoiding to wound the pride of the British nation and government, on the other. After delivering a succinct and interesting description of America, he defended the Americans with equal force and ingenuity. He affirmed that they were willing to submit to external taxes imposed by parliament; but reckoned themselves, both as partakers of the British constitution, and also in conformity with a just interpretation of their provincial charters, exempted from the authority of parliament in relation to internal taxes; that the Stamp Act was calculated to operate with especial disadvantage in America, and was the cause of the diminished affection of the colonists to the parent state, and of the late non-importation agreements to which they had resorted; that the effect of a longer subsistence of these agreements would be the permanent establishment of domestic manufactures in America, and the extinction of the colonial market for British manufactures; that the riots were mere transient and unpremeditated ebullitions of popular passion, condemned by the representative assemblies, and disavowed by all respectable Americans; and that it would be absurd to send a military force to America in order to execute the Stamp Act, as the soldiers would find nobody prepared or disposed to contend with them, and would have no occasion to use their arms, unless they were to employ them in slaying men for refusing to buy stamped paper. A British army despatched to America, he said, would not find, but might easily create, a rebellion in that country. Franklin, during his present stay in England, had been hitherto agent only for the province of Pennsylvania; but such was the impression of his political genius and sagacity produced in America by the report of this examination, that he was appointed soon after to be agent also for Massachusetts, New Jersey, and Georgia.

The policy of the British ministers was counteracted by the efforts of their parliamentary opponents, who, in letters which they exhibited from the royal governors and other officers of the crown in America, found materials for a description very different from Franklin's of the actual state of affairs in the colonies. These functionaries, who had encouraged the authors of the Stamp Act to believe that it would be easily carried into execu

tion, and who had themselves personally sustained numerous indignities in the course of the opposition it eventually provoked, were prompted, both by concern for the reputation of their counsels and by vindictive feelings, to impute the opposition to the intrigues of a few factious men, and at the same time to give the most irritating picture of the excesses with which it was attended. From these representations the friends of the Stamp Act deduced the conclusion, that America had openly defied the power and authority of Britain, and was in a state of actual rebellion. And has it come to this (they asked), that Britain must yield to the commands and menaces of America;[1] and that parliament must recede from a prerogative which it has solemnly asserted, in accommodation to the will of a handful of British subjects, who, so far from deserving favor or indulgence, merit the severest chastisement for the undutiful insolence they have displayed? This appeal was but too well calculated to interest the passions of the English, — a people remarkably distinguished by their haughty fear of seeming to yield to intimidation, and (like most great nations) much more susceptible of a vigilant jealousy than of a liberal estimate of their dignity and honor. So strong was its effect both in parliament and on the nation at large, that Franklin, who anxiously watched the progress of the discussion, assured his friends in America that in all probability the repeal of the Stamp Act would not be obtained. The embarrassment of the ministers was unexpectedly increased by the openness and impetuous determination with which Pitt, who had now regained his health, and who neither communicated nor acted in concert with them, undertook the defence of the boldest and most objectionable proceedings of the Americans. Inflamed with resentment and disdain by a speech of Grenville, who declared that this people were encouraged to persist in a mad, ungrateful, and rebellious career by reliance on the countenance of some British statesmen, — Pitt warmly replied, that such an imputation should never discourage *him*. "We are told that America is obstinate," he proceeded, "that America is almost in open rebellion. Sir, *I rejoice that America has resisted.* Three millions of people, so dead to all the feelings of liberty as voluntarily to submit to be slaves, would have been fit instruments to make slaves of all the rest."[2] Deprecating any attempt to execute the Stamp Act, he declared, "I know the valor of your troops and the skill of your officers; but in such a cause your success would be hazardous. America, if she fell, would fall like the strong man; she would embrace the pillars of the state, and pull down the constitution with her. The Americans have been wronged; they have been driven to madness by injustice. Will you punish them for the madness you have occasioned? No; let this country be the first to resume its prudence and temper." He concluded by declaring his opinion, "that the Stamp Act be repealed absolutely, totally, and immediately; and that the reason of the repeal be assigned, that it was founded on an erroneous principle."

[1] Shakspeare has anticipated this strain of sentiment in the following lines: —

"*O Dieu vivant!* shall a few sprays of us,
Our scions put in wild and savage stock,
Spirt up so suddenly into the clouds,
And overlook their grafters." — *Henry the Fifth.*

"We did not send them forth to be scorned by them, but to have the governance of them, and to be honored by them as is becoming," was the remark of the Corinthians on the protestation of their colonists of Corcyra, "that colonists are not sent out to be the slaves of them that stay, but to be their equals." Thucydides.

[2] Charles Fox expressed a similar sentiment, when he declared in the House of Commons that "the resistance of the Americans to the oppression of the mother country has undoubtedly preserved the liberties of mankind."

But the language of Pitt on this occasion was much more palatable to the Americans than to the English, to whom he vainly recommended that rare triumph of wisdom, so hard a science to mankind, well-timed retreat. His auditors prized much more highly the imaginary dignity that was wounded by suggestions of the spirit and resolution of the people with whom they were contending, than the real dignity of generous forbearance in a mischievous and impolitic quarrel. To facilitate the repeal of the Stamp Act, by satisfying or soothing the irritated pride which was roused against such concession, the ministers first introduced a bill "for the better securing the dependency of his Majesty's dominions in America upon the crown and parliament of Great Britain." This bill, which was carried without a division in either house, obtained the name of the *Declaratory Act.*[1] It proclaimed that some of the American colonies had unlawfully pretended that the right to tax them resided exclusively in their own domestic assemblies, and that riotous and seditious outrages had been committed by mobs deluded by this opinion; and enacted declaratively, that the king and parliament had right to make laws "*to bind the colonies and people of America, subjects of the crown of Great Britain, in all cases whatsoever.*" A bill for repealing the Stamp Act was then proposed to the House of Commons. Its preamble varied widely from the suggestion of Pitt, and expressed merely that "the continuance of the said act would be attended with many inconveniences, and may be productive of consequences greatly detrimental to the commercial interests of these kingdoms." The memorial of the American convention was tendered in support of this measure; but the house refused to hearken to the application of an assembly unknown to the laws and constitution. Very few petitions from America were presented; and those only which were couched in a submissive or moderate strain. But numerous petitions were exhibited from English merchants and manufacturers; and so many facts and circumstances were cited and established, as to render the preamble of the bill perfectly incontrovertible. Yet with all this, and notwithstanding the precaution that was employed to render the preamble inoffensive to English pride and consonant with English commercial ambition, the bill was violently opposed by the members of the former cabinet, and by their friends and various other persons in both houses, who insisted that to recede at the present juncture from actual taxation, and remain contented with a declaratory assertion of this authority, was virtually to surrender the prerogative of Britain to the force and opposition of America, to encourage faction by success and impunity, and to insure resistance against the first attempt to give a practical application to the Declaratory Act. The opposers of the repeal, indeed, wandered far beyond this topic, and, with an eagerness to promote discussion that contrasted remarkably with their desire only a year before to evade or abridge it, revived in every stage of the proceedings the question of the right of parliament to tax America. With a plausible show of constitutional principle, they maintained, that, if the colonies, in their advanced state of opulence and power, should be permitted to contribute to the national expenditure by making free grants to the crown, as they had hitherto customarily done upon requisition, the crown might be rendered independent of parliament for pecuniary supplies.

[1] 6 Geo. III., Cap. 12. With similar policy, the British cabinet of which the Duke of Wellington was premier prefaced its tardy and extorted concessions to the Catholics of Ireland by an act of insolent rigor which robbed the concessions of almost all their grace. So unfruitful hitherto have been the lessons of history.

Of the friends of the repeal bill, some contented themselves with arguing in support of the undeniable truths expressed in its preamble; others, embracing the invitation to discuss the general question of parliamentary prerogative, insisted either that this prerogative was sufficiently guarded by the Declaratory Act, or that America was already taxed in a peculiar manner, and in the only manner adapted to her peculiar situation, by the commercial restrictions. This last view was supported in substance, though professedly controverted with much nicety of discrimination, by Pitt in the House of Commons, and by Pratt, chief justice of the Court of Common Pleas (whom the new ministry had invested with the title of Lord Camden), in the House of Lords. "You have no right," said Pitt, "to tax America. Nevertheless, I assert the authority of this kingdom to be sovereign and supreme in every circumstance of government and legislation whatsoever. Taxation is no part of the governing or legislative power; the taxes are a voluntary gift and grant of the commons alone. The concurrence of the peers and of the crown is necessary only as a form of law. This house represents the commons of Great Britain. Here we give and grant what is our own; but it is unjust and absurd to suppose that we can give and grant the property of the commons of America. This constitutional right has ever been exercised by the commons of America themselves, represented in their own provincial assemblies; and without it, they would have been slaves. At the same time, let the sovereign authority of legislative and commercial control, always possessed by this country, be asserted in as strong terms as can be devised; and if it were denied, *I would not suffer even a nail for a horse-shoe to be manufactured in America.* But the Americans do not deny it. We may, and they are willing that we shall, bind their trade, confine their manufactures, and exercise every power except that of taking money out of their pockets without their consent. There I draw the line; there are the bounds, *Quos ultra citraque nequit consistere rectum.*" Nothing can be a stronger proof of the blinding influence of the political passions, than that the man who expressed such sentiments should have been hailed by the Americans as the liberal patron of their interests and generous defender of their liberty. "My position is this," said Lord Camden; "and I repeat it, and will maintain it to my last hour; taxation and representation are inseparable. This position is founded on the laws of nature. It is more; it is itself an eternal law of nature. For whatever is a man's own is absolutely his own. No one has a right to take it from him without his consent. Whoever attempts to do it commits an injury; whoever does it commits a robbery."

After debates more violent and protracted than had occurred since the British Revolution, the repeal bill passed the House of Commons at three o'clock of the morning [February 22], by the votes of two hundred and seventy-five against one hundred and sixty-seven members. Amidst general acclamations, it was soon after carried to the House of Lords by Conway, the mover, accompanied by more than two hundred members, — a larger concourse than was ever remembered to have accompanied the progress of any former bill. In the upper house, the feebler arguments of its opponents were reinforced by superior influence; and Lords Strange and Bute scrupled not to declare that the private sentiments of the king were adverse to it. Nothing could be more unconstitutional than the promulgation of such intelligence, whether it were true or false. The ministers ascertained by in-

quiry that it was true;[1] but were neither deterred from prosecuting the measure which they had carried so far, nor prevented from conducting it to a successful issue. Notwithstanding much opposition and two protests, the bill was carried through the House of Lords; and finally, receiving the royal assent, was passed into a law.[2] [March 19.] The bare prospect of this change was hailed with the liveliest joy in London, where the church-bells were rung and the houses illuminated as soon as the progress of the bill through the House of Commons was made known. Similar demonstrations of public joy and gratulation attended the final completion of the measure.

In America, where the people had been taught to regard the repeal as a hopeless proposition, the intelligence of its political consummation and actual prevalence produced a transport of mingled triumph, surprise, and gratitude. Loud and general was the exhibition of exulting sentiment; but in the loudness of the clamor the distinctness of its accents was lost. In the provincial assemblies, it was impossible that even those members who sympathized not in the general flow of enthusiastic sentiment could decently refuse to unite in the expressions of it suggested by their colleagues; and among the people at large, many who had more or less deliberately contemplated a perilous and sanguinary conflict were unfeignedly rejoiced to behold this terrible extremity averted or retarded. Amidst the first emotions of surprise and pleasure, the alarming terms of the Declaratory Act were little heeded. The assembly of Massachusetts presented an address of grateful thanks to the king, in which they declared their apprehension that the Americans had been greatly misrepresented to his Majesty, and injuriously reproached with aversion to the *constitutional* supremacy of the British legislature. Thanks were also voted to the royal ministers, and to Lord Camden, Pitt, Colonel Barré, and other individuals who had promoted the repeal or defended the Americans. Similar demonstrations occurred in New Hampshire. The assembly of Virginia voted that a statue of the king should be erected in this province; and in a general meeting of the inhabitants of Philadelphia, it was unanimously resolved, "that, to demonstrate our zeal to Great Britain, and our gratitude for the repeal of the Stamp Act, each of us will, on the 4th of June next, being the birthday of our gracious sovereign, dress ourselves in a new suit of the manufactures of England, and give what homespun clothes we have to the poor." Professions of joy, gratitude, and attachment to Britain, equally loud and warm, and perhaps as sincere and deliberate, resounded through all the other American communities. And yet, even amidst the first warm gush of hope and exultation, was heard the warning voice of some enlightened or stubborn patriots, whose moody, discontented souls were strangers to the general joy, and who accounted the triumph of their countrymen immoderate, disproportioned, and premature. Christopher Gadsden, of South Carolina, in particular, who had been a delegate from this province to the late convention, and was afterwards distinguished as a civil and military leader

[1] All the peculiar favorites of the king were strongly opposed to every concession, substantial or apparent, to America. The lords of the bed-chamber, it was reported, and most of the bishops, urged that America should be rather desolated by fire and sword than pacified by concession. The Duke of Cumberland, the king's uncle, so famous for his military ravages in Scotland after the battle of Culloden, supported the same inhuman policy prior to his own death, which occurred on the 31st of October, 1765. In the House of Commons, all the Scottish members except two voted against the repeal of the Stamp Act.

[2] 6 Geo. III., Cap. 11.

in the revolutionary struggle, hesitated not to assure his friends that the public hopes were fallacious; that a permanent restoration of cordial friendship with Britain was impossible; and that it was madness on the part of America to remit her vigilance, or relax her preparation for a contest which must inevitably ensue. His views and sentiments were approved by those to whom they were communicated; and a secret association was formed to watch every suitable opportunity of acting in conformity with them. Mayhew, the Boston preacher, who has already attracted our notice, delivered a sermon in reference to the repeal of the Stamp Act, much more fraught with republican sentiment than with incitements to loyal or pacific consideration. "Having been initiated in youth," said this political and polemical divine, "in the doctrines of civil liberty, as they were taught by such men as Plato, Demosthenes, Cicero, and other renowned persons among the ancients, and such as Sidney, Milton, Locke, and Hoadley, among the modern, — I liked them; they seemed rational. And having learned from the Holy Scriptures that wise, brave, and virtuous men were always friends to liberty, *that God gave the Israelites a king in his anger because they had not sense and virtue enough to like a free commonwealth*, and that liberty always flourishes where the Spirit of the Lord is imparted, — this made me conclude that freedom was a great blessing."[1]

Thus ended the first act of that grand historic drama, the American Revolution. That it was the first makes no slight addition to its importance. It was on this account the more fitted to convey a lesson which Britain might have seasonably and advantageously appropriated; as it showed thus early with what determined spirit the Americans cherished the principles of liberty in unison with their still remaining attachment to the parent state and her authority and institutions. The folly she committed in totally neglecting the lesson may be palliated, perhaps, by the consideration of those efforts which were made both by friends and by enemies of the Americans to disguise its real character, and of the fluctuating state of the British cabinet at this period, which was very unfavorable to deliberate and consistent policy.

CHAPTER II.

Sentiments of the Americans. — Leading Politicians in America. — Randolph — Jefferson — Adams — Hancock — Rutledge, and others. — Renewed Collision between British Prerogative and American Liberty. — New York resists the Act for quartering Troops. — Acts of Parliament taxing Tea and other Commodities in America — and suspending the Legislature of New York. — Policy of France. — Progress of American Discontent. — Circular Letter of the Massachusetts Assembly. — Governor Bernard's Misrepresentations. — Royal Censure of the Massachusetts Assembly. — Riot at Boston. — Firmness — and Dissolution of the Massachusetts Assembly. — Convention in Massachusetts. — Occupation of Boston by British Troops. — Violence of the British Parliament. — Resolutions of the Virginian Assembly — and Concurrence of the other Provinces. — Remonstrance against British Troops in Massachusetts. — Miscellaneous Transactions — Dr. Witherspoon — Dartmouth College — Methodism in America — Origin of Kentucky — Daniel Boon.

THE controversy with regard to the Stamp Act concluded, as some previous disputes between Britain and America had done, by an adjustment

[1] *Annual Register for* 1765 and *for* 1766. Franklin's *Memoirs*. Belknap. Gordon. Burk's *Virginia*. Ramsay. Bradford. Eliot. Rogers.

ill calculated to afford lasting satisfaction to either country, and leaving each in possession of pretensions denied by the other. It differed, indeed, from preceding disputes in this important circumstance, which was calculated to enhance the mischief of its imperfect adjustment, — that, instead of having been waged merely between a particular British cabinet or Board of Trade and a single American province, it had occupied the attention and aroused the interest of the great body of the people both in Britain and America. If Britain repealed the Stamp Act, it was not till after America had disobeyed it; and if she proclaimed by the Declaratory Act her pretension to the prerogative of taxing America, this was no more than the Stamp Act had already assumed and the resistance of America had practically refuted. Many persons in America considered the Declaratory Act as a mere empty homage to British pride, intended not to afford a handle for renewing the dispute, but to disguise the mortification of defeat; and some proclaimed this conviction with a contemptuous openness that savored more of hardihood than of prudence and moderation. A wise and generous restraint of insolent triumph, though naturally improbable, was yet reasonably due to the balked lust of power and the wounded pride of the parent state. The parliament authoritatively condemned the independent sentiments expressed by the Americans, and the actual violence with which these sentiments were supported; but the Americans were sensible that their language and conduct had been substantially successful, and had rendered the Stamp Act inefficacious long before its formal repeal. Britain finally desisted from enforcing this act, for reasons, real or pretended, of mercantile convenience; but America had first resisted and prevented its enforcement, on totally different grounds. Some persons might be interested to maintain, and some might be willing to believe, that no actual resistance had been offered to the power of Britain, except by the transient rage of the poorest and most ignorant inhabitants of America; but no pretext or protestation could disguise the grand fact, that a British statute was deliberately disobeyed and rendered inoperative in the scene of its application; and that, during the whole period of the subsistence of the Stamp Act, not a sheet of stamped paper was employed in America.

The benefit conferred by the repeal of this statute was rather the deliverance from an impending and dangerous civil war, than the removal of an actual burden. And hence, as well as for other reasons, the gratitude produced in America by the repeal was much more lively than lasting. Pitt's remarkable words, "I rejoice that America has resisted," produced a far deeper and more permanent impression,[1] which coincided with the reflection speedily arising, that Britain by the Declaratory Act reserved to herself a pretext for renewing the quarrel at the first convenient opportunity, and affixed an opprobrious stigma on the exertions to which America was so greatly beholden, and to which, in all probability, she must again,

[1] Yet the effect of this impression on the Americans was very much overvalued in England, where even the author of the celebrated *Letters of Junius* did not scruple to designate Pitt and Camden as the authors of American resistance. "Their declaration," says the first of these letters, which appeared in January, 1769, "gave spirit and argument to the colonies; and while, perhaps, they meant no more than the ruin of a minister, they in effect divided one half of the empire from the other." Junius ascribes Pitt's vehement opposition to the Stamp Act to a desire of driving Grenville from office. But Grenville had ceased to be minister before Pitt's opposition was exerted. Facts and dates may be less entertaining, but they are more instructive, than the most ingenious theories. Resistance was practised in America before it was defended in England.

at no distant period, be indebted for a similar deliverance. Besides, although the grievance of the commercial restrictions had been latterly, for politic reasons, but little insisted on by the Americans, the discontent occasioned by the aggravated pressure of these restrictions was deep and widely spread, and had greatly increased the acrimony with which the dispute respecting the Stamp Act was conducted. Much irritation that had been engendered by the commercial restrictions was vented in abuse of the Stamp Act; and this measure, consequently, in addition to its own intrinsic importance, acquired an adventitious interest, which, in the eyes of considerate persons, did not long survive its repeal. As the excitement produced by the sudden and unexpected cessation of peril subsided, the consideration arose, that the repeal of an act, which the Americans by their own spirit had previously rendered inoperative, was beneficial only to the resident population of Britain, by tending to restore the interrupted importation into America of British manufactures. All of pleasurable retrospect that was left for the Americans was the exulting consciousness of the spirit they had exerted, and which, if a British parliament condemned, at least Pitt and Camden warmly applauded; and this spirit, mingling with the discontent that was nourished by the commercial restrictions, gave to the general current of sentiment and opinion throughout America a bias very far from propitious to the authority of Great Britain.

The intelligence of the Declaratory Act and the Act of Repeal was followed by a circular letter from Secretary Conway to the American governors [June, 1766], in which "the lenity and tenderness, the moderation and forbearance, of the parliament towards the colonies" were celebrated in strains which touched no responsive chord in the bosoms of the Americans, who were farther required to show "their respectful gratitude and cheerful obedience in return for such a signal display of indulgence and affection." This letter also transmitted a directory resolution of the British parliament, adjudging "that those persons who had suffered any injury or damage, in consequence of their assisting to execute the late act, shall be compensated by the colonies in which such injuries were sustained." In conformity with this resolution, Hutchinson and his fellow-sufferers, whose solicitations to the British government had procured it, claimed compensation for their losses from the assembly of Massachusetts; and the governor, in a speech of the most dictatorial and unconciliating tone, recommended an immediate grant of public money for this purpose. It seemed as if Bernard, in the fervor of his zeal for British dignity, sought to repudiate every semblance of approach to courtesy or condescension towards the colonists, both by the insolent terms in which he alluded to the modification of British policy, and by the invidious topics which he mixed with the demands for compensation. With censure equally haughty and unconstitutional, he chid the assembly for not having included a single officer of the crown in their recent election of provincial counsellors, — a reprimand which they instantly replied to in terms of mingled resentment and disdain. The justice of the demand of compensation preferred by Hutchinson and the other sufferers from the riots was unquestionable; for every community is bound to protect its members from lawless violence, and to indemnify them for the injuries which they may sustain from the inefficiency of its police to afford such protection. But the assembly, inspired with anger and scorn by the officious insolence and folly of the governor, indulged on the present occa-

sion the same temper that had recently prevailed in the British nation and parliament, and regarded with disgust an act of justice prescribed to them in a tone which seemed to encroach upon their dignity. To manifest their independence and gratify the people, they first refused any grant at all; though they declared, doubtless with little sincerity, their purpose to discover the rioters and cause *them* to make amends for the damage they had done; and afterwards, when the governor addressed to them a renewed and more peremptory requisition, they postponed the consideration of it, till they had consulted their constituents. Finally, having gratified their pride at some expense of justice, they performed, as a sacrifice to generosity, the act which from the first they must have known to be unavoidable, and granted a liberal compensation by a bill, which, however, was passed only by a small majority, and in which farther homage was rendered to popular feeling by a clause assuring complete indemnity and oblivion to all persons who had been concerned in the riots. The temper by which they were actuated was significantly disclosed by a resolution which they passed, "that it was the indispensable duty of the sufferers to have applied first to the government *here*, instead of to the government *at home*." Though the bill was affirmed by the governor, its terms, and especially the provision of indemnity to the rioters, gave much offence to the British court. It was subsequently annulled by the king; but the annulment obtained little notice, and produced no effect. Hutchinson was so far from making any open objection to accept the sum awarded to him, as a generous gift, instead of a just retribution, that, after the bill was passed, he desired leave to express his grateful thanks for it to the assembly. The parliamentary injunction of compensation to the sufferers from the riots was rendered still farther unpopular by mean and rapacious attempts of individuals to take unjust advantage of it. Messervé, in particular, who had resigned the office of distributer of stamps in New Hampshire, finding the approbation of his fellow-citizens a reward too unsubstantial for his appetite, claimed from the assembly of this province a pecuniary compensation for his losses. But the assembly, having ascertained that he had lost nothing but his office, disallowed his claim; and he forthwith became a partisan of the British court, which rewarded him with an appointment in England.[1]

Among other important consequences which resulted from the Stamp Act quarrel and the dangerous extremity to which it was pushed, were, that it paved the way to a permanent union of the public councils and policy of all the American States; and, in every one of them, discovered to the people the men who were best fitted to be their leaders, and on whose genius, courage, and patriotism they might most safely rely. When a federal league between the provinces was proposed in the year 1754, the origination of this project with the British government was sufficient to inspire the Americans with a suspicious aversion to it, which combined with and was aided by the jealousies and dissensions that prevailed among themselves. But during the late quarrel, their mutual jealousies had been swallowed up in the sense of common interest and danger; and they saw that purposes of union were promoted by all the most considerate, as well as the most animated, asserters of American liberty, and thwarted only by the partisans of British prerogative. The quarrel was pushed so far, and America had so daringly rebelled, that, for some time, a revolutionary war

[1] Belknap. Bradford. Hutchinson. Gordon. Fitkin. *Annual Register for* 1766.

was contemplated by many, and the most violent and vindictive infliction of British force expected by all. This was a time that tried men's souls, and called forth those master spirits which in ordinary seasons have no perceptible existence, because no peculiar and appropriate sphere of action. Hitherto the great bulk of the inhabitants of America had confined the exertion of their active and reflective powers to the cultivation of their territorial resources and the improvement of their domestic accommodations; they had, indeed, often jealously watched and sometimes boldly questioned particular restraints imposed on them by the parent state; but, in the main, they submitted or deemed that they submitted peaceably to her guidance and authority; and so far their minds were accommodated to a state of national pupilage. But now, all at once, was the restraint of British authority suspended; all the American communities were for the first time united in one common purpose and course of action which arrayed them in open defiance of the parent state; and hopes the most elevated and ambitious, dangers at once awful and animating, and projects vast, unbounded, and interesting, combined to inflame the ardor, to rouse and collect the fortitude, and to nourish and elicit the genius and capacity of the American people. Republican governments and democratical interests, especially in the beginning of a revolutionary controversy with opposite principles, have a wonderful influence in uniting ambition with virtue, and in stimulating and diffusing the energy of their partisans. A rich and powerful spring of oratory, at once the fruit and the instrument of political agitation and republican sentiment, now broke forth in America. Eloquence was warmed by bravery, and bravery exalted by eloquence. The orators, formed by the occasion, turned the occasion to their account. Their glowing language awakened in the bosoms of their countrymen feelings long and deeply cherished, and which rushed into light and life, from the obscurity and silence to which they had been hitherto condemned, with the vigor of maturity and the vivacity of fresh existence.

The most remarkable of the political leaders and orators who sprung up at this period were natives of Virginia, Massachusetts, and South Carolina. In Virginia, there were particularly distinguished, after Patrick Henry, whom we have already repeatedly noticed, and who held the first place as a popular champion and favorite, Edmund Pendleton, a graceful and persuasive speaker, a subtle and dexterous politician, energetic and indefatigable in the conduct of business; Richard Bland, celebrated for the extent and accuracy of his knowledge, unrivalled among his contemporaries as a logician, and who published this year an *Inquiry into the Rights of the British Colonies*, in which the recent claims of America were defended with much cogency of reasoning; George Wythe, not more admired for the strength of his capacity and the elegance of his wit, than respected for the simplicity and integrity of his character; Peyton Randolph, whose high repute and influence with his countrymen, unaided by the captivation of eloquence, was founded on qualities more honorable both to him and to them, the solid powers of his understanding and the sterling virtues of his heart; and Richard Henry Lee, one of the most accomplished scholars and orators in America, and who was commonly styled the Virginian Cicero. Washington, who, since the reduction of Fort Duquesne in 1758, had withdrawn from military life, and never quitted his domestic scene but to discharge the duties of a member of the Virginian assembly, now calmly but firmly es-

poused the cause of his native country in opposition to the pretensions of the British government; nor was there an individual more respected in Virginia, or more generally known and esteemed by all America, than himself; but, devoid of oratorical powers, tranquil, sedate, prudent, dignified, and reserved, he was little qualified by genius or habit to make a brilliant figure as a provincial politician, and waited the development of a grander scene of counsel and action, more adapted to the illustration of his majestic wisdom and superior sense. Various other individuals, who have gained renown as defenders of the liberty and founders of the independence of America, began, shortly after this period, to be distinguished in the list of Virginian politicians; of whom the most remarkable was Thomas Jefferson,[1] preëminent as a statesman, scholar, and philosopher; a forcible, perspicuous, and elegant writer; an intrepid and enterprising patriot; and an ardent and inflexible asserter of republican sentiments and the principles of purest democracy. None of his contemporaries exceeded him in politeness and benignity of manner; and few approached him in earnestness of temper and firmness of purpose. This rare combination of moral qualities enhanced the efficacy of his talent and genius, and greatly contributed to the ascendant he obtained over the minds of his countrymen. From the very dawn of the controversy between Britain and America, Jefferson, and his friend and patron, Wythe, outstripped the political views of most of the contemporary American patriots, and embraced the doctrine which ascribed indeed to the crown some prerogative, but denied to the parliament any degree or species of legitimate control over America. Arthur, the brother of Richard Henry Lee, and afterwards ambassador from America to France, was at this time pursuing the study of the law in London, but more actively engaged, as a gratuitous coadjutor of Dr. Franklin, in watching the measures of the British government; and rendered important service to his countrymen by transmitting early intelligence of the ministerial plans and purposes.

In Massachusetts, at the present epoch, the most distinguished popular leaders and champions of the cause of America were James Otis, who has already engaged our observation; Samuel Adams, John Hancock, Thomas Cushing, and James Bowdoin, merchants; Samuel Cooper, a clergyman; Josiah Quincy, Jr., and Robert Treat Paine, lawyers; and John Winthrop, Professor of Mathematics in Harvard College. Samuel Adams was one of the most perfect models of disinterested patriotism, and of republican genius and character in all its severity and simplicity, that any age or country has ever produced. At Harvard College, in the year 1743, he made an early display of those political sentiments which he cherished through life, by maintaining, in the thesis which gained him his literary degree, that "it is lawful to resist the supreme magistrate, if the commonwealth cannot otherwise be preserved." A sincere and devout Puritan in religion, grave in his manners, austerely pure in his morals, simple, frugal, and unambitious in his tastes, habits, and desires; zealously and incorruptibly devoted to the defence of American liberty, and the improvement of American character; endowed with a strong, manly understanding, an unrelaxing earnestness and inflexible firmness of will and purpose, a capacity of patient and intense application which no labor could exhaust, and a calm and determined courage which no danger could daunt and no disaster depress, — he rendered his virtues more efficacious by the instrumentality of

[1] In early youth he caused to be engraved the motto, *Ab eo libertas, a quo spiritus.*

great powers of reasoning and eloquence, and altogether supported a part and exhibited a character of which every description, even the most frigid that has been preserved, wears the air of panegyric. He defended the liberty of his countrymen against the tyranny of England, and their religious principles against the impious sophistry of Paine. His moral sentiments ever mingled with his political views and opinions; and his constant aim was rather to deserve the esteem of mankind by honesty and virtue, than to obtain it by supple compliance and flattery. Poor without desiring to be rich, he subsequently filled the highest offices in the State of Massachusetts without making the slightest augmentation to his fortune; and after an active, useful, and illustrious life, in which all the interests of the individual were merged in regard and care for the community, he died without obtaining or desiring any other reward than the consciousness of virtue and integrity, the contemplation of his country's happiness, and the respect and veneration of his fellow-citizens. It has been censoriously remarked of him by the severer critics of his history, — and the censure is the more interesting from the rarity of its application to the statesmen of modern times, — that his character was superior to his genius, and that his mind was much more elevated and firm than liberal and expansive. In all his sentiments, religious and political, no doubt, there appeared some tincture of those peculiar principles and qualities which formed the original and distinctive character of the people of New England; and he was much more impressed with the worth and piety, than sensible of or superior to the narrow, punctilious bigotry and stubborn self-will of his provincial ancestors.

Hancock differed widely from Adams in manners, character, and condition. He was possessed of an ample fortune, and maintained a splendid equipage; yet he ruled the wealth which commonly rules its possessors, for, while he indulged a gay disposition in elegant and expensive pleasures, he manifested a generous liberality in the most munificent contributions to every charitable and patriotic purpose; insomuch that his fellow-citizens declared of him, that he plainly preferred their favor to great riches, and embarked his fortune in the cause of his country. Courteous and graceful in his address, eager and enthusiastic in his disposition, endowed with a prompt and lively eloquence, which was supported by considerable abilities, though not united with brilliant genius or commanding capacity, he embraced the popular cause with the most unbridled ardor; and leaving to more philosophical patriots the guardianship of public virtue and the control of popular license, he devoted himself exclusively to the promotion of whatever objects tended immediately to gratify the wishes of the majority of the people. He continued to hope for a reconciliation with Britain much longer than Adams, who, after the promulgation of the Stamp Act, neither expected nor desired such an issue; but when, in consequence of the final rupture between the two countries, and the overthrow of regal dominion in America, a republican constitution was to be composed, — Adams showed himself the more desirous to secure an energetic government, in which the magistrates, though appointed by the choice of the people, should be invested with force enough to withstand unreasonable or unrighteous movements of popular passion and caprice, — while Hancock preferably advocated an unbounded scope to democratical principle, or rather license, in a government pliable to every gust of popular will. Adams was termed the *Cato*, and Hancock the *Lucullus*, of New England. Among the first generations of the inhabitants of this

country, the severer virtue of Adams, in competition with the gayer character of Hancock, would have carried almost all the suffrages of their fellow-citizens; and even at no distant date retrospective from the present era, the manners of Hancock would have been rather tolerated and pardoned, than generally approved. But a change, gradually arising in the taste and opinion of the public, had latterly been so widely developed, that Hancock was now by far the most popular character in Massachusetts. He was, indeed, the idol of the great mass of the people, and openly preferred to Adams by all but a small minority of the community, consisting of stanch Puritans and stern republicans.[1]

Cushing was less distinguished by energy or talent than by his descent from a family renowned in New England for ardent piety and liberal politics. He possessed respectable, though by no means splendid or even eminent abilities; and, being long the speaker of the assembly of Massachusetts, obtained in England, from the number of bold, ingenious, and able compositions to which his name was officially subscribed, a reputation very disproportioned in importance to that which he possessed in America,—where his countrymen generally regarded him rather as an honest and well meaning, than an able, or even ardent, friend of American liberty. But nothing is more common than to charge revolutionary leaders with producing the storm which in fact they conduct only as long as they consent to be carried forward by its impulse. Bowdoin, one of the wealthiest persons in Massachusetts, was also a man of great information and ability, regulated by strong good sense; liberal, honorable, and upright; a prudent and moderate, but firm and consistent patriot. Cooper, pious, eloquent, and accomplished, was first prompted to unite the character of a politician with the office of a minister of the gospel by the tidings of the Stamp Act, which suggested to him, he declared, that tyranny was opposed not more to civil than to religious liberty. From that period, he took an active part in behalf of the liberties of his country, both as a contributor of political essays to the periodical publications of Boston, and as a correspondent of Dr. Franklin. He was eminent as a scholar, and ardent as a patron and coadjutor of every institution for the advancement of learning, liberty, piety, or virtue; and, doubtless, his previous character as a divine contributed to promote the efficacy of his exertions as a politician. Quincy, a distinguished lawyer and orator, the descendant of one of those English barons who extorted from King John the signature of *Magna Charta*, showed that the spirit displayed by his ancestor at Runnymede was transmitted to him, unimpaired by the eclipse of family grandeur and the lapse of five centuries. He was the protomartyr of American liberty, in defence of which, both with his tongue and pen, he exerted an energy so disproportioned to his bodily strength, as to occasion his death a short time previous to the declaration of American independence.[2] Robert Treat Paine, one of the most eminent lawyers in Massachusetts, held a high place in the public estimation for intelligence, firmness, and zeal. Ever prompt, active, and decided as a champion of American liberty, he was universally admired for the brilliancy of his wit,

[1] On the day when Hancock was first elected a member of the provincial legislature of Massachusetts, Samuel Adams, walking in the streets of Boston with John Adams, pointed to Hancock's dwelling and said, "This town has done a wise thing to-day. They have made that young man's fortune their own." Tudor's *Life of Otis*. Quincy, in his *History of Harvard University*, has too clearly proved that Hancock preferred the fame of generosity to the dignity of justice, and was readier to make presents than to pay debts.

[2] He died 26th April, 1775.

and respected even by his political opponents for his pure and inflexible uprightness. Winthrop, who inherited one of the most venerable names in New England, revived its ancient honor and still farther embellished it by the highest attainments in science and literature, by a character adorned with religion and virtue, and by a firm and courageous devotion to the liberty of his country. It was in the present year that the assembly of Massachusetts, whether with a view of enhancing or of gratifying the popular interest in its proceedings, adopted a resolution, which was instantly carried into effect, that its debates should be open to the public, and that a gallery should be erected for the accommodation of the audience. The orators of the popular party derived new courage and animation from the looks of their listening countrymen, who, in turn, were inspired with the generous ardor which their presence promoted. Eloquence, like music, is often more powerful than reason and honor in imparting the height of noblest temper to human courage and resolution.

In South Carolina, among many bold and able champions of their country's rights, the most notable were John Rutledge, a man endowed with extraordinary powers of mind, — prompt, penetrating, energetic, and decisive; and, in oratory, the rival, or, as some accounted, the superior, of Patrick Henry; — Christopher Gadsden, a frank, fearless, intrepid, upright,[1] and determined republican; — Henry Laurens, a zealous patriot and enlightened politician, afterwards highly distinguished by the dignity which he achieved, and the talent and fortitude which he exerted, in the service of America; — Edward Rutledge, the brother of John, and whose eloquence was as graceful and insinuating as his brother's was impetuous and commanding; — and David Ramsay, a learned and ingenious man, sincerely religious, austerely moral, and warmly patriotic, a forcible speaker, and an elegant writer. At an early stage of the controversy with Britain, Ramsay was an advocate for the immediate assertion of American independence; and after bravely and ably contributing to the attainment of this object, he related the struggle by which it was won, in one of the best and most impartial histories that have been composed of the Revolutionary War.[2]

A few months after the repeal of the Stamp Act, there occurred a change in the composition of the British cabinet, which excited much surprise and regret among the liberal politicians of England, and some inquietude in America. [July 30, 1766.] The Marquis of Rockingham and several of his Whig colleagues were dismissed from their employments, and succeeded by the Duke of Grafton, a Tory, who was placed at the head of the administration, — Charles Townshend, one of the promoters of the Stamp Act, who was appointed chancellor of the exchequer, — Lord Shelburne, who as secretary of state occupied the department to which the management of American affairs peculiarly belonged, — Lord Camden, who was appointed lord chancellor, — and Pitt, now created Earl of Chatham, who accepted the office of lord privy seal. The two latter appointments greatly displeased the Whigs and popular party in England, who beheld with disgust such men as Camden and Pitt (or, as he must now be called, Lord Chatham) contribute to

[1] When the Revolutionary War broke out, Boone, the royal governor of South Carolina, observed, — "God knows how this unhappy contest will end, or what the popular leaders of South Carolina can be aiming at; — but Gadsden I know to be an honest man, — *he* means well."

[2] Wirt, § 2. Campbell's *Virginia*, Appendix. Eliot. Rogers. Bradford. Gordon Holmes. Jefferson's *Notes*, Query 23. Garden's *Anecdotes of the American Revolution*. Jefferson's *Memoirs and Correspondence*.

strengthen a ministry raised on the downfall of Rockingham and his patriot friends. They were calculated, however, to give pleasure to the Americans, and to balance the apprehensions excited by the elevation of Townshend; and their tranquillizing influence in this quarter was aided by letters from the provincial agents at London [September, 1766], who reported that Lord Shelburne expressed to them a sincere regard for America, and desired them to assure their constituents that they had nothing to fear from the present administration. Whatever hopes might have been derived from these circumstances were completely disappointed. Lord Chatham, during almost the whole period of his continuance in office,[1] was disabled by ill health from attending to business; he had little or no influence with his colleagues, who were moreover at variance with one another; and he reaped nothing more from his second elevation to ministerial dignity, than the discredit of forming part of an administration which acted in direct opposition to the policy he had advocated, and resumed the very measures he had most strongly condemned.[2]

Though the Stamp Act was repealed, the Americans still continued to manifest resentment against its promoters and abettors. Every dignity and advantage that popular favor or suffrage could bestow was conferred on those who had signalized themselves by the zeal or ability of their opposition to it; and the reproach, even when unfounded, of being one of its partisans, was enough to blast any man's character and obstruct the success of any measure he proposed. Anniversary processions and other ceremonies, commemorative of the Stamp Act, were instituted; but all had triumphant reference to periods and particulars of American resistance, without the slightest symptom of thankful allusion to British repeal. Fitch, the governor of Connecticut, had shown a disposition to comply with the Stamp Act; for which, at the annual election of their magistrates, his fellow-citizens now punished him by deprivation of the office to which he would otherwise have been reappointed. Pitkin was in the present year elected governor, and Trumbull lieutenant-governor, of this province, by the votes of all the inhabitants except the adherents of the church of England, who unanimously supported Fitch, and thereby rendered both themselves and their favorite ecclesiastical institution highly obnoxious to the popular party in America. About ten years after, Pitkin was succeeded in office by his present deputy, Trumbull, descended from the earliest colonists of New England, a man universally revered for his piety, wisdom, uprightness, and patriotism, and who, with distinguished prudence, firmness, and ability, occupied the helm of public affairs in his native province during all the agitations and convulsions that ensued from that critical period till the year 1783, when age and infirmity at length compelled him to decline any longer to administer the government of Connecticut.[3]

The renewal of disputes between Britain and America was occasioned

[1] He continued to hold the privy seal till October, 1768.

[2] *Annual Register for* 1766. Hutchinson. Franklin's *Correspondence.*

[3] Gordon. Eliot. Chastellux, the French traveller, thus describes Governor Trumbull in the seventieth year of his age: — "He is governor *par excellence;* for he has been so fifteen years without intermission; and equally possessing the public esteem during the subsistence and after the overthrow of the British authority. His whole life is devoted to business, which he passionately loves, whether important or not; or rather, in his eyes, there is none of the latter description. He has all the simplicity in his dress, all the importance, and even all the pedantry, becoming the great magistrate of a small republic. He brought to my mind the burgomasters of Holland, the Heinsiuses and the Barnevoldts."

partly by the operation of a measure devised by the same cabinet from which the Stamp Act had emanated, and partly by new measures embraced by the present administration. Nearly at the same time, there occurred in both countries (so ripe were both for quarrel) transactions calculated to bring again the prerogative of the parent state into collision with the rights which her colonies possessed or pretended. The first symptoms of renewed controversy arose from the act of parliament which we have remarked, in 1764, respecting the quarters and accommodations to be supplied to British troops stationed in America. In the close of the present year, several companies of royal artillery arrived in the harbour of Boston; and it was rumored that more were soon to follow. The provincial assembly being at this time adjourned, the governor by his own authority directed that provision should be made for the accommodation of the troops at the expense of the province; an assumption of power, which the assembly was no sooner convoked than it called him to account for. [January, 1767.] He answered by pleading the necessity of the case, and referring to the act of parliament, whose requirement he had carried into effect at a time when the assembly, from the suspension of its functions, was incapable of demonstrating the necessary obedience. But this answer was by no means satisfactory to the assembly, who perceived that the enforcement of such a parliamentary requisition, without their concurrence, was an exertion of the very authority against which they had contended in their resistance to the Stamp Act. They warmly protested, that with them alone, and not with the executive magistrate, resided the power of raising and appropriating supplies for public service; and that, on any other supposition, the governor might load the province with an intolerable expense, which the assembly must afterwards provide the means of defraying, even though they should utterly disapprove its object and purpose. The general discontent was increased by the prevalence of a report that more troops were speedily to arrive; and the assembly demanded of Bernard if these tidings were authentic. He answered, that he had received no official intelligence that warranted the public alarm; but it was suspected at the time, and ascertained not long after, that he himself had urgently solicited a numerous reinforcement of troops from the British ministry, and had obtained private information that his desire would be complied with. In the course of the summer, a small addition was made to the troops which had previously arrived; and on this occasion, Bernard applied directly to the assembly to make provision for their support in the Castle, where they were quartered. The assembly referred this application to a committee; and finally, after several days' deliberation, resolved "that such provision be made for the troops, while they remain here, as has been *heretofore usually* made for his Majesty's regular troops when *occasionally* in the province."

But it was at New York that the operation of the act for quartering troops produced the most important consequences, and, indeed, provoked a direct impugnation of the authority of parliament. The assembly of this province had yielded a ready obedience to the parliamentary resolutions for indemnifying the sufferers by the riots, and passed a bill for this purpose in the preceding year, without any of the scruples or delays by which Massachusetts thought proper to vindicate her dignity. But when they were now required by the new governor, Sir Henry Moore, to make provision for executing the act of parliament respecting the quartering of British troops,

they firmly refused to comply; signifying, in a responsive address, "that, according to the construction put upon the act of parliament here, it is required that all the forces which shall at any time enter this colony shall be quartered during the whole year in a very unusual and expensive manner; that, by marching several regiments into the colony, this expense would be rendered insupportably heavy; and that we cannot, therefore, consistently with our duty to our constituents, put it in the power of any person (whatever confidence we may have in his prudence and integrity) to lay such a burden on them."[1] Thus again was the asserted prerogative of the parent state deliberately denied, and an act of parliament openly repudiated and disobeyed by an American province and its domestic government. Various new manufactories, at the same time (one, in particular, for the production of brass wire, and another for enamelling trinkets in the style practised at Birmingham and Sheffield), sprung up at New York.

Meanwhile, the project of taxing America by act of parliament was resumed by the British cabinet and definitively embraced, notwithstanding the adverse opinions of Chatham, Camden, and Conway, who continued to strengthen by their adherence an administration which they were totally unable to guide by their counsels. A great change or reaction was already apparent in the opinion and temper of the parliament,—where the repeal of the Stamp Act was now as generally regretted as the act itself had been condemned only a year before. Ambition and pride again prevailed over the just and reasonable policy to whose control they had yielded a temporary submission; and, like the infatuated Egyptian monarch and his servants, the rulers of Britain repented the deliverance that had been conceded to a dependent people.[2] All the courtiers protested that the king was in a humiliated state, and urged Townshend, the chancellor of the exchequer, to remember the language he formerly held, and to retrieve the dignity of the crown by some financial measure that would give a practical effect to the Declaratory Act.[3] In conformity with these views and sentiments, a bill was introduced into the House of Commons by Townshend, imposing duties on all glass, lead, painters' colors, tea, and paper, imported into the American provinces. [May, 1767.] The preamble of the bill declared, that "it is expedient that a revenue should be raised in his Majesty's dominions in America, for making a more certain and adequate provision for defraying the charge of the administration of justice and the support of civil government in those provinces, where it shall be found necessary; and towards farther defraying the expenses of defending, protecting, and securing the said dominions. By one clause in the bill, the king was empowered to establish, by sign manual, a general *civil list*, in every province of North America, to an indefinite extent, with salaries, pensions, and appointments to an unlimited amount; and it was provided, that, after liquidation of the contents of the civil list, the residue of the revenue to be derived from America should abide the disposal of the British parliament. This bill met with hardly the shadow of opposition in parliament, where perhaps some members chose to regard it as a commercial regulation, and others more

[1] Bradford. Hutchinson. Gordon.

[2] "And they said, *Why have we done this*, that we have let Israel go from serving us?" Exod. xiv. 5.

[3] "America," says a warm partisan of the British government, "was at this time in such a state, that it would have been good policy to abstain from farther taxes of any kind." Hutchinson. Every new dispute was readily inoculated with the venom of the ancient quarrel.

or less willingly acknowledged that any discussion of its principle was precluded by the terms of the Declaratory Act. Richard Jackson, a member of the House of Commons, opposed the clause authorizing a civil list. Its object, he said, was to render all the public officers and magistrates in America independent of the people; and although he admitted that the judges ought to be independent both of the people and the crown, yet he insisted that the dependence of the governors upon the provincial assemblies was just and expedient, as affording the only safeguard which the colonists possessed against the perversion or abuse of the executive power. The royal governors sent to America, he observed, were often needy, unprincipled men, and always dependent for the duration of their functions on the pleasure of the crown; and great mischief and injustice would arise from rendering them totally independent of the people. Only one other member of the house supported Jackson in this objection; and without farther discussion or obstruction, the bill was passed into a law.[1] Edmund Burke has asserted, and it seems no wise improbable, that Townshend expected that this act would be rendered palatable to the Americans, or at least far less unpalatable than the Stamp Act, by the considerations, that the revenue it assigned was derived from external or port duties, to which they had been represented as willing to submit, and that those duties were by no means heavy, and, excepting the tax upon tea, were not imposed on any of the grand articles of commerce. We shall find, indeed, that a very different impression from what Townshend anticipated was actually produced by the first of these considerations; but before it had time to operate at all, any advantage which might have been gained from it, or from the other extenuating suggestions, was more than counterbalanced by the contemporary proceedings of the parliament with regard to America, which unhappily combined to inflame the discontent, great or small, which the measure we have remarked was of itself calculated to awaken. For, to insure the payment of the new taxes, as well as to promote a stricter execution of all the trade laws, an act was passed, immediately after, for establishing at Boston a board of commissioners of the customs for America, — an establishment, which, even independently of the new imposts with which it was associated, would have been regarded with aversion by the colonists.

And while these measures were in progress through the houses of parliament, another and still more offensive exertion of British authority was elicited by the tidings that arrived of the refusal of the New York assembly to make provision for the accommodation of British troops within their provincial territory. The wrathful impatience provoked by this intelligence was industriously fomented by Grenville and his adherents, who declaimed in passionate and yet plausible strains on the progress of disobedience in America, where the people were now encouraged, by their recent triumph over the Stamp Act, to resist another parliamentary measure, against which they had not even observed the ceremony of petitioning. To pacify the clamor raised on this occasion, the ministers introduced into parliament an act,[2] which was instantly passed, and which prohibited the assembly of New York from exercising any of the functions of legislation till they complied with the prior statute for providing quarters and accommodations to his Majesty's troops. [July.] No measure could have been devised more calculated to spread alarm throughout America, and rekindle the flames of

[1] Stat. 7 Geo. III., Cap. 46. [2] Stat. 7 Geo. III., Cap. 59.

the Stamp Act controversy. It was a blow which rendered their domestic legislation — the privilege most deeply cherished by the colonists, and for which they had recently contended with so much warmth, resolution, and unanimity — insecure and precarious; at once depriving New York of this advantage, and proclaiming, by inevitable inference, that every colonial assembly in America depended for its existence on the satisfaction which its conduct might afford to the royal ministers and the British parliament, and was liable to be suspended or abolished by an exertion of parliamentary power. And thus, by a series of measures, which, occurring at the same time, seemed but kindred branches of one scheme of policy, and mutually promoted the offensive impressions they were severally fitted to produce, did Britain at once revive and extend every cause of quarrel, jealousy, and irritation, that had arisen between herself and her American colonies. By the act which we have last remarked, she assumed and exemplified the power of depriving them of that institution behind which they had shielded themselves from the interference of parliament with their internal taxation. By the establishment of a board of customs in America, she announced a more rigid execution of the trade laws. By the new duties which she imposed under the guise of external taxes, she tempted the colonists to question, as, indeed, many of them had already done, the competency of subjecting them even to external taxation by parliament; and by the establishment of the civil list, she authoritatively determined in her own favor a point, which, after many disputes with the colonists, she had formerly abandoned to them,[1] and deprived them of the control they had so long exercised over their provincial governors and magistrates.

It is strange that the British government should have so blindly disregarded or so inadequately appreciated the great and increasing danger of the predicament in which its colonial dominion was involved by these public and protracted disputes with the Americans. Every other nation in the world was tempted to desire the downfall of the British ascendency in America, as involving the destruction of that system of monopoly by which Britain reserved, or at least attempted to reserve, the whole of the American trade to herself. So far, the interests of America manifestly converged with those of many powerful states in opposition to British authority; and if the Americans were provoked to vindicate those interests by force of arms, it might easily be conjectured that they would not be left to wage the conflict unassisted by nations which had so deep a stake in its issue. The principles of good faith and honor might, indeed, operate more or less forcibly to deter other sovereign states, in amity or at peace with the British monarch, from seducing or encouraging his subjects to revolt; but the emergent probability of such revolt, with the near prospect of its collateral advantages, was but too likely to overpower those self-denying considerations. All the late measures which had been employed for a stricter enforcement of the trade laws operated to the prejudice not merely of America, but of every nation that was restrained from trading with her; drew the bands of common interest between them and her closer than before; and increased the earnest expectation and attention with which they regarded her conduct, and watched the progress of the disputes between her and her parent state. France, besides partaking the general interest of commercial nations in opposition to the British colonial empire and monopoly, was additionally in-

[1] See *ante*, Book VIII., Chap. II.

cited to desire the revolt of America, as an event that would avenge or countervail the loss of Canada, and divest Britain of that powerful branch of her naval force which America was likely to supply, and which in any future war that might arise would render the insular colonies of the French an easy conquest.[1] As France was induced by stronger motives than any other European nation to desire the separation of America from Britain, so was she less deterred by honorable scruples from attempting to promote it. On the very day on which the Duke de Choiseul (an implacable enemy of the British empire) signed, as the minister of France, the preliminaries of the late treaty of peace concerted at Fontainebleau, he entered into a secret convention with Spain, by which it was agreed that the war should be renewed against England at the expiry of eight years,—a time which was thought sufficient to repair the exhausted strength of the two Bourbon monarchies; and this perfidious design he continued secretly but steadily to cherish and promote, till its completion was intercepted by the decline and fall of his own ministerial credit.[2]

Hardly a month after the last acts of parliament which we have remarked had been passed, the French ambassador at London addressed himself to Dr. Franklin in a style that discovered to this acute politician the wish of the French court to inflame the quarrel between Britain and America. [August, 1767.] But Franklin, though sincerely attached to the interests of his countrymen, still cherished the hope that the quarrel might be accommodated, and the grandeur of the British empire maintained in consistence with the preservation of American liberty. His son was at this time the royal governor of New Jersey; he himself was the postmaster-general of America; and so favorably was he regarded at the British court, that it was proposed, not long after, as he himself has related, to appoint him under-secretary of state for American affairs. It was also reported to him, and received with the credit willingly given to so flattering a communication, that the king expressed a high esteem for his character. At the present period, and for some time after, he entertained a very favorable opinion of George the Third, whom, in letters to his friends in America, he described as "the best king that any nation was ever blessed with"; nor had he yet survived the hostile feelings and views which he once cherished against France. His sentiments underwent at a later epoch a very great change; but as yet, though at bottom the determined friend of America, he entertained as much respect and affection for Britain and her institutions and authority, as could consist with that preponderating attachment. Convinced that every degree of liberty which he deemed essential to human welfare and happiness *must* finally be secured to America, whether separated from or connected with the main trunk of the British empire, he was desirous to restrain his countrymen from precipitating their dispute with the parent state to an extremity; and blamed their violence in his letters to America, while he endeavoured to palliate or disguise it in his representations to the statesmen and authorities of England. On the present occasion, though awake to the drift of the French ambassador, he seems neither

[1] That great political writer, Gentz, in his treatise on the finances of Britain, remarks the passionate prejudice by which French statesmen have been misled into the most erroneous estimate of the value of the American colonies to the British empire. Even now (says he, writing in 1799) French politicians seem incapable of perceiving the manifest truth, that the loss of the colonies has prodigiously augmented the wealth and strength of Britain.

[2] The subsequent affair of Falkland Islands was a fragment of this design.

to have utterly extinguished the hopes nor to have encouraged a full disclosure of the views of this minister, who was probably content to hint the sentiments of his court in a manner intelligible to Franklin's sagacity, without startling his honor as an officer of the British crown; and though interested in the policy of France, both as an officer of the crown and a partisan of America, Franklin desired equally to conceal from the British government and from his countrymen the impression which he received on this subject; and communicated it only to his son, under a strict injunction of secrecy.[1]

Nor was this the only, or even the most notable, attempt of the French court to animate the spirit and resistance of the Americans, and promote a total breach between them and the British nation. Both prior and subsequent to the present period, various emissaries employed by the court of France travelled in disguise through the American States, examining in what points the British dominion was most vulnerable, and seizing every opportunity to fan the flame of discontent, and insinuate that revolt would be facilitated by foreign assistance. The most distinguished of these emissaries was a German baron, named De Kalb, a brave and enterprising officer, who had long served in the French army, and afterwards held a commission from the revolutionary government of America. He was a devoted partisan and indefatigable agent of France, and retained this function even while employed as an officer in the American army; maintaining, like some other French officers similarly circumstanced, a close correspondence in cipher with the cabinet of Versailles, both before and after the open espousal of the American cause by the French government. Though active, subtle, and adroit as an intriguer, De Kalb appears to have been but a superficial observer. He often complained of his want of success in stimulating the Americans to revolt; and expressed his astonishment at the blundering folly with which the English government effaced the ardent and deep-rooted attachment which still (he was persuaded) linked the colonists to their parent state. It seems, indeed, highly probable that his suggestions at first (and he was employed from a very early period) neither were nor could be so acceptable as he desired to the Americans, whose jealousy of the British government not only was mixed with a great deal of affection for the British people, but could not readily coalesce with prospects of the aid and friendship of nations which, as the enemies of Britain, they had often regarded through the unfavorable medium of hostile relations with themselves.

The idea, particularly, of French aid and favor was more likely at first to chill the ardor than to warm the courage of the Americans in a dispute with Britain; for the French had been their enemies since the foundation of the colonial settlements; and the most interesting portions of their history and recollections consisted of dangers and sufferings entailed by the hostilities of France, or of triumph and advantage associated with the success of Britain over her rival. Though the honor and candor of De Kalb are far from unexceptionable, no good reason has been shown for taxing

[1] After relating the extraordinary civilities and caresses of the French ambassador, and his inquisitiveness about the affairs of America, Franklin remarks,—"I fancy that intriguing nation would like very well to meddle on occasion, and blow up the coals between Britain and her colonies; but I hope we shall give them no opportunity." Yet he adds that he is setting off on a visit to Paris, furnished with letters of introduction from the French ambassador.

him (in the representations to which we have adverted) with want of sincerity, and still less for imputing to him gross and wilful falsehood. But he seems, in the account of his missions, and in his estimate of the sentiments and dispositions of the Americans, to have been blinded by an enthusiastic devotion to the interests of France, and an exclusive predilection for French character, temperament, and manners.[1] The employment of De Kalb, and of other agents of France in America, is an indisputable fact; the success of their exertions is a point controverted and controvertible. A recent European historian of the American Revolution has been betrayed into exaggeration in describing the intrigues of France as the main cause of that catastrophe; and some American writers have been transported by patriotic zeal and indignation into an opposite error, and too hastily denied that the intrigues of France exerted any influence at all on the sentiments of their countrymen.[2] It would require more than mortal discernment to ascertain how far either of these disputants is wrong or both of them are right. It is certain, that, at an early period of the Revolutionary War, and before France had ventured openly to support America, several of the agents of the French ministers obtained commands in the American army; and that, even before this army was formed, some of the leaders of the popular party in America confidently relied on the assistance of France, Holland, and Spain, in case of a final rupture with Britain.[3]

The act of parliament which imposed duties on tea and other articles imported into America excited as much concern and anxiety, and experienced an opposition as determined, though not as violent, as the Stamp Act had done. Instead of the aversion with which the colonists regarded the recent act being diminished by the consideration that the duties which it imposed were, strictly speaking, external taxes, the imposition of these duties, and the sanction which they received from an extension of the principle of external taxation, tended to destroy all the respect or acquiescence

[1] "There is," says De Kalb, in one of his letters, "a hundred times more enthusiasm for the American Revolution in any one of our coffee-houses of Paris than in all the thirteen provinces of America united." La Fayette, who was more intimately acquainted with the Americans than De Kalb, formed a juster estimate of the calm, yet firm and determined, purpose of liberty which they cherished. That great and good man assured me, that, very shortly after his first arrival in America, he clearly perceived that the Americans, even though wholly unassisted in the struggle with Britain, would never lay down their arms till they achieved their independence, and that this impression was confirmed by all his subsequent experience. That most penetrating and intelligent of observers, Talleyrand, in his *Mémoire sur les Relations Commerciales des États Unis avec l'Angleterre*, declares it impossible that the French should ever transcend, or even equal, the British in the friendship and regard of the Americans.

[2] Garden, in particular, has passed a severe censure on Botta for exaggerating the influence of the French intrigues. But, in order to support his own equally inadmissible assertion, that these intrigues were totally inefficacious, he appeals only to De Kalb, whom he had previously denounced as a perfidious calumniator of America.

La Fayette informed me that De Kalb was employed by the French minister, Choiseul, who rewarded his services, but kept aloof from direct intercourse with him, and retained the power of disavowing his agency; and that both De Kalb and other agents of France indulged themselves in much exaggeration, and far outstepped the limits of their instructions, in the representations and overtures which they addressed to the Americans. The conduct of the French court, in relation to the quarrel between Britain and her colonies, was exceedingly fluctuating, and its purposes long unfixed.

David Hume was at this period one of the secretaries of the British embassy at Paris; but, with all his sagacity and penetration, he neither discovered nor seems even to have suspected the insidious and vindictive policy of the French government.

[3] *Annual Register for* 1767 and *for* 1775. Hutchinson. Bradford. Gordon. Franklin's *Memoirs*. Botta's *History of the War of the Independence of America*. Stedman's *History of the American War*. Garden. Wirt. Ferrand's *History of the three Partitions of Poland*.

which this prerogative had ever obtained in America. That there was no solid distinction between internal and external taxation had been maintained by Otis, in America, and by Grenville, in the British parliament; it was a deduction that manifestly followed from the reasonings of Pitt and Camden; and was a tenet embraced and avowed by many other politicians, both among the friends of America and the partisans of Britain. It was now supported in an able and spirited treatise entitled *Letters of a Pennsylvanian Farmer*,—the production of John Dickinson, a citizen of Pennsylvania, which obtained a prodigious circulation and high popularity in America, and gained its author the thanks of the assembly of Massachusetts. He warned his countrymen not to be deluded by the moderate rate of the new duties,—a circumstance which he characterized as artfully intended to prepare their necks for the reception of a collar whose increasing weight would gradually bow them to the ground; and he encouraged them to hope that a deliverance from this evil would be obtained by a resumption of the same general and animated opposition which had procured the repeal of the Stamp Act.

These *Letters*[1] gave so strong an impulse to the spirit of discontent and resistance in America, that they would probably have incited the people to some violent and tumultuary proceedings, if the public attention had not been previously directed to a system of opposition at once more effectual, prudent, and magnanimous. Some of the leading politicians in Massachusetts, having suggested that the last of the defensive measures employed against the Stamp Act, the non-importation agreement, had been more efficient than all the others, and was peculiarly applicable to the present emergency, the notion was eagerly embraced; and, at a general meeting of the inhabitants of Boston [October 28, 1767], resolutions were proposed and adopted to discontinue the importation of commodities from England, and especially of all those on which the new duties were laid, until not only the act imposing them, but all the late revenue acts, likewise, should be repealed;—and, as a subsidiary measure, to promote by every possible effort the growth of domestic manufactures and the practice of industry and economy. These resolutions were propagated throughout America, and from the first zealously executed in New England, where a considerable change of manners now began to appear. Of late years a taste for gay and expensive pleasures had been gaining ground among the descendants of the Puritans, especially in Massachusetts; and several attempts were made, though ineffectually, to procure a repeal of the law which prohibited theatrical entertainments. But now a general simplicity of dress and living was diligently cultivated; and even the taste for expensive funerals, which the law had vainly attempted to restrain, was sacrificed to the practice of habits which were justly accounted the firmest as well as the most respectable

[1] They were attributed, in England, to Dr. Franklin, whom, in fact, they were the means of converting from the opinion which he had recently expressed of the legitimacy of external taxes imposed by the parliament on America. In a letter written in the spring of the following year, after alluding to Dickinson's work, he says,—"The more I have thought and read on the subject, the more I find myself confirmed in opinion that no middle doctrine can be well maintained; I mean not clearly with intelligible arguments. Something might be made of either of the extremes; that parliament has power to make *all laws* for us, or that it has power to make *no laws* for us; and I think the arguments for the latter more numerous and weighty than those for the former."—"I know not," he adds, "what the Boston people mean by the *subordination* they acknowledge in their assembly to parliament, while they deny its power to make laws for them,"—and doubtless the Boston people attached to this phrase as little of definite import as he was able to discern in it.

bulwarks of American freedom. But it is easier to induce mankind in general to pursue liberty with passionate zeal, than to merit and secure it by patient fortitude and virtue.

In other parts of America, some disinclination was shown at first to imitate the austere example of New England; and the merchants of New York and Philadelphia, in particular, more impressed with the inconvenience they had endured than with the advantage they had gained from the former non-importation agreement, declined, for a while, to repeat the experiment. *They remembered* (said their sturdier countrymen) *and longed for the flesh-pots of Egypt.* Nothing could be more discouraging to the New Englanders; for the efficacy of the measure depended on its general adoption. Yet they persisted with a firm and stubborn determination, which even those who refused to imitate could not forbear to praise; and it was generally declared in the provinces, that, "if America be saved from the impending danger, New England will be her acknowledged guardian." By degrees, however, the example of this people obtained imitation as well as applause. The political clubs, which began to resume their functions and activity, employed every art of persuasion and even intimidation to induce their countrymen to embrace the non-importation agreement, which, by their aid and other auxiliary circumstances, obtained a general, though not till two years after the present period a universal, prevalence in America.[1] In several of the provinces, meanwhile, and especially in New England, there was published in pamphlets and newspapers a great variety of political essays, inquiries, strictures, and arguments, many of which impugned and vilified the sovereign authority of the parent state with a boldness of freedom unknown before. America, it was said had now passed her national minority; and with the age came the right and the capacity of independence. It was maintained that freemen were not to be governed, any more than taxed, but by their own consent, signified by their own representatives; and that the British parliament was no more entitled to derive present authority from the past exercise or abuse of power over America, than a private trustee or guardian was entitled to retain his government of a ward advanced to manhood, on the plea of having ruled him in his nonage and pillaged his estate.[2] The longer the controversy between Britain and her colonies endured, the larger became the views, the stouter the importunity, and the more violent the language of American writers and politicians. The more narrowly the foundations of sovereign authority were explored, the more fatally were the pillars of British domination shaken and undermined.[3]

Although the act of parliament suspending the functions of the assembly of New York excited much alarm and indignation among the American people, and was stigmatized in all their newspapers as a measure fraught with general danger, yet the several provincial governments were so completely

[1] Yet, between 1764 and 1767, the annual exports from Britain to America are said to have sustained a diminution of £1,500,000 sterling. *Political Register for* 1767. Many Americans were disheartened in consequence of having prospectively overrated the effects of their hostile commercial policy. "Events proved," says Ramsay, "that young nations, like young people, are prone to overrate their own importance."

[2] *Annual Register for* 1768. Franklin's *Memoirs and Correspondence.* Bradford. Gordon.

[3] "The whole science of politics, in its most extended signification, was freely debated in public and private assemblages, and discussed through the medium of the press. There were here few of those prejudices which elsewhere are engrafted by habit upon the intellect, and which assume the aspect of established principles. Many a received dogma was swept away with contempt." General Cass's *Discourse.*

disconnected by any legal or formal tie, that censure, complaint, or even public notice of that measure by any of the other States or their representative assemblies seemed an irregular and incompetent proceeding. The assembly of Virginia, nevertheless, was not deterred by this consideration from passing a resolution in which it denounced, as grievous encroachments upon American liberty, not only the act which was confined to New York, but the previous and more general statute, for disobedience to which New York was punished. If the parliament, it was warmly declared, can lawfully compel the colonies to furnish a single article of accommodation to the troops sent from England, it may by parity of reason oblige them to furnish clothes, arms, and every necessary, even including the pay of the officers and soldiers; a doctrine totally incompatible with the existence of liberty or the security of property in America.

Massachusetts, which had suggested the convention of 1765, again took the lead in proposing by united counsels to surmount or diminish the grand impediment by which the interests of American liberty were obstructed. The assembly of this province now addressed to all the sister colonies a circular letter [February 11, 1768], signifying that they had seriously considered the great evils to which the inhabitants of America were subjected from the operation of several acts of parliament imposing taxes upon them, and requesting the other colonies to unite in suitable measures to obtain redress. The letter concluded with warm expressions of loyalty to the king, and "of firm confidence that the *united* and dutiful supplications of his distressed American subjects will meet with his royal and favorable acceptance." The assembly were deterred from proposing a repetition of the national convention which had taken place three years before by the intelligence they had received of the jealousy and alarm with which that measure was regarded by the British government; and, on the present occasion, they were contented with proposing mutual correspondence between the colonies, and uniformity of language in their addresses to the crown. Along with their circular letter they despatched copies of a petition to the king, a representation to the royal ministers, and a letter of instructions to their provincial agent at London, which they had composed and transmitted to England. In these compositions, they declared that the parliament doubtless possessed supreme legislative power over the whole empire, but that, as it derived its authority from the political system or constitution of the state, it could not overleap the bounds of constitutional principles without destroying its own foundation; that, in conformity with the principles of the British constitution, the American colonists enjoyed the right of being taxed by their own representatives alone, and had hitherto exercised it by the instrumentality of their subordinate legislatures; that they were therefore entitled (exclusive of any consideration of charter franchises), with a decent firmness becoming the character of freemen and subjects, to assert their natural and constitutional right; and that it was their humble opinion that this right was violated by the acts of parliament imposing taxes upon them for the express purpose of raising a revenue; that the American judges were not, like the judges of England, independent of the crown; and that freedom and justice were not secured to a people deprived of all control over governors and judges holding their commissions by the tenure of royal will and pleasure; that the creation of a civil list with an indefinite number of public officers, whose salaries were to be fixed and allotted by

the king and paid by the colonists, and the statute requiring the colonists to furnish provisions to the British troops, were burdensome and oppressive; that they had reason to believe that the enemies of the colonists had represented them to the king as factious, disloyal, and aiming at independence; but that this assembly could assure his Majesty, with regard to the people of Massachusetts, and as they also believed of all his American territories, that the charge was unjust. The circular letter, and other relative compositions of the Massachusetts assembly, produced a strong sensation throughout America. Notwithstanding all the caution and moderation with which this measure was conducted, its great importance was clearly perceived. The assembly of New Hampshire, while they expressed approbation of the conduct of Massachusetts, timidly declined to imitate it, under pretence that their session was near its close, and that such a period was unsuitable to the transaction of important business; a behaviour for which they received the commendations of the king in the following year. But most of the other provincial assemblies acceded zealously and promptly to the overture of Massachusetts, and adopted petitions and representations of the same tenor with those of which copies were transmitted to them. The Virginian assembly warmly applauded the generous concern manifested by Massachusetts for American liberty.

Important and formidable to British authority as this measure undoubtedly was, it seems not more, nay, rather less, properly obnoxious to the censure of the British government than the proposition of a general convention in 1765, upon which no public censure had been passed. But the conduct of Massachusetts was now to be judged by a ministerial conclave much less liberal and indulgent than that which existed at the former epoch. The British cabinet, in the close of the last year, underwent a considerable change, of which every particular was unpropitious to a generous or conciliating policy towards America. Townshend, the chancellor of the exchequer, dying, was succeeded by Lord North, a man devoted to royal prerogative. The management of American affairs was withdrawn from Lord Shelburne, and committed to Lord Hillsborough, a determined partisan of the highest pretensions and largest authority of the parent state over her colonies. Conway had resigned; other changes of similar character and import had taken place; and though Lord Chatham continued to hold office till the autumn of the present year, he was rendered quite insignificant in the cabinet by ill health and the disregard of his colleagues. Bernard, besides, who was the object of general dislike in Massachusetts, and engaged in continual altercations with the assembly, where he was as eager to extend the special prerogative of the governor as to support the general prerogative of the parent state, sought to revenge himself upon his antagonists by exciting prepossessions in the British cabinet against the whole provincial population. For this purpose, he industriously collected and transmitted all the most violent publications that had recently appeared at Boston; assuring the ministry that these compositions faithfully represented the sentiments by which the whole province was actuated, and that he daily expected a rebellion. He afterwards endeavoured to correct this hasty expression, and rushed into the opposite extreme of declaring that he had completely misunderstood the sentiments of the people, which were, he said, almost universally opposed to the publications which he had been led to believe congenial to them. He even extolled with elaborate commenda-

tion the prudence, moderation, and conciliating temper of the assembly, in communications to the ministry dated only a few days before the petition to the king, the representation to the ministers, and the circular letter to the other colonies were despatched. Provoked and astonished by this occurrence, and eager to justify himself, he conveyed a false and irritating account of the whole transaction to Britain, which unfortunately found too much credit with the royal cabinet.

The tenor of his misrepresentations appears from a despatch which Lord Hillsborough instantly addressed to him [April 22, 1768], reprobating the vote in favor of the circular letter as "unfair, contrary to the real sense of the assembly, and procured by surprise"; and instructing him to require the assembly to rescind the surreptitious resolve which had given birth to the circular letter, and to declare their disapprobation of *that rash and hasty transaction*. In case of their refusal to comply with this requisition, he was directed to dissolve the assembly and transmit to England an account of its behaviour. Circular letters were at the same time addressed by Lord Hillsborough to the governors of all the American provinces, inclosing copies of the obnoxious composition of the Massachusetts assembly, and signifying, that, "As his Majesty considers this measure to be of the most dangerous and factious tendency, calculated to inflame the minds of his good subjects in the colonies, and promote an unwarrantable combination, and to exhibit an open opposition to and denial of the authority of parliament, and to subvert the true principles of the constitution, it is his Majesty's pleasure that you should, immediately upon the receipt hereof, exert your utmost influence to defeat this flagitious attempt to disturb the public peace, by prevailing upon the assembly of your province to take no notice of it, — which will be treating it with the contempt it deserves." Such an amazing effusion of spleen, insolence, and folly, perhaps, never before disgraced the councils of a civilized community. It excited general disgust in America, and served only to induce the other provinces to afford new symptoms of their willingness to make common cause with Massachusetts. Greatly lowered, indeed, was the language of England, both in dignity of sentiment and majesty of tone, since Hillsborough succeeded Pitt as the interpreter of her will to America.

Additional cause of offence and quarrel arose in America from the operation of the act by which a board of customs was established at Boston. Paxton, one of the commissioners, had long been an object of general dislike to the people of Massachusetts, on account of the zeal with which he seconded all the pretensions of British prerogative; and only his absence from the province during the Stamp Act riots had saved him from a share of the popular vengeance on that occasion. He and his colleagues now enforced the trade laws with a rigor hitherto unknown, and which contributed not a little to increase the prevailing inquietude and irritation. At New York there was printed and circulated a manifesto or proclamation, assuring the inhabitants that commissioners of customs would soon be established there as well as at Boston, and summoning every friend of liberty to hold himself in readiness to receive them with the same treatment which had been bestowed upon "a set of miscreants under the name of stamp-masters, in the year 1765." All the efforts of the governor to discover the authors of this inflammatory publication proved ineffectual. In this province the spirit of liberty was no way depressed, nor was even the conduct of public business

obstructed, by the act of parliament restraining the assembly from the exercise of legislative functions. With a plausible show of obedience to the letter of the statute, the assembly forbore to enact formal *laws*; but whenever money was needed for public purposes, they passed *resolutions*, to which the people lent a prompt and cheerful obedience; and thus the act, though sufficient to exasperate, proved quite impotent to punish.

It had been the practice in every quarter of British America for the officers of the customs to allow merchants and shipmasters to enter in the custom-house books only a part of their imported cargoes, and to land the remainder duty-free. To this practice, which became so inveterate that the colonists regarded the advantage accruing from it as a right rather than an indulgence, the commissioners now resolved to put a stop. A sloop called the Liberty, belonging to Hancock, having arrived at Boston laden with wine from Madeira [June 10, 1768], the captain, as usual, proposed to the tidewaiter who came to inspect the cargo, that part of it should be landed duty-free; but, meeting a refusal, laid violent hands upon him, and, with the assistance of the crew, locked him up in the cabin till the whole cargo was carried ashore. The next morning he entered a few pipes of the wine at the custom-house, as having formed all his lading; but the commissioners of the customs, insisting that the entry was deceptive, caused the sloop to be arrested. To secure the capture, it was proposed that the vessel should be removed from the wharf and towed under the guns of the Romney man-of-war; and, by the assistance of the Romney's boats, this was accordingly performed, in spite of the opposition of a great assemblage of people, who, finding their remonstrances disregarded, assaulted the custom-house officers with a violence that had nearly proved fatal to their lives. [June 12.] On the following day, the populace, again assembling before the houses of the collector, comptroller, and inspector-general of the customs, broke their windows, and then, seizing the collector's boat, dragged it through the town and burned it on the common. Their violence, whether satiated or not, was checked at this point by the flight of the commissioners and other officers of the customs, who, learning that renewed assemblages of the people were expected, and believing or affecting to believe that farther outrages were meditated against themselves, hastily left the place, and took refuge, first on board the ship of war, and afterwards in Castle William. [June 13.] The city, meanwhile, resounded with complaints of the insult that was offered to the inhabitants in removing the sloop from the wharf, and thus proclaiming apprehensions of a rescue. These complaints were sanctioned by the assembly, who declared that the criminality of the rioters was extenuated by the irritating and unprecedented circumstance of the seizure; but added, nevertheless, that, as the rioters deserved severe punishment, they must beseech the governor to direct that they should be prosecuted, and to proclaim a reward for their discovery. The rioters, however, had nothing to fear; nor was any one of them ever molested. A suit for penalties was afterwards instituted against Hancock in the Court of Admiralty; but the officers of the crown, finding it beyond their power to adduce sufficient evidence of facts, which, though every body knew, nobody would attest, abandoned the prosecution and restored the vessel. The conduct of the officers in taxing the people, by implication, with the purpose of rescue was generally condemned. It was, indeed, remarked by the few who ventured to defend it, that a rescue had actually

taken place eighteen months before. But to this the advocates of the people replied, that the popular temper had undergone a change since then, — as was verified by the fact that no subsequent rescue had been attempted; — a fact the more certain, though the less significant, as in reality no seizure in the interim had been made. Unluckily, about a month after the arrest of Hancock's vessel, a schooner, which was seized with a smuggled cargo of molasses, and left at the wharf under the care of the custom-house officers, was boarded during the night by a numerous body of men, who easily overpowered and confined the officers, and carried the cargo on shore. The inhabitants in general were greatly scandalized to find their recent declarations so completely falsified; and the selectmen of Boston, sending for the master of the schooner, ordered him to surrender the molasses directly under pain of the displeasure of the town. He obeyed this injunction without a moment's hesitation.

In the midst of the ferment produced by the seizure of Hancock's vessel, Bernard acquainted the assembly of Massachusetts with the communication which he had received from Lord Hillsborough. [June 21.] The patriotic spirit of this body was additionally roused and invigorated, instead of being depressed, by the intelligence; and it was farther sustained by the arrival of friendly and approving letters from the assemblies of Virginia, Connecticut, New Jersey, and Georgia.[1] They easily repelled the charges levelled against the conduct of the former assembly, and by a great majority of voices refused to rescind its proceedings. "When Lord Hillsborough knows that we will not rescind our acts," said Otis, in a speech which was highly extolled by the popular party, and denounced as a treasonable effusion by the partisans of Britain, "he should apply to parliament to rescind theirs. *Let Britain rescind her measures, or her authority is lost for ever.*"[2] Several members, who had in the former session opposed the resolution for the circular letter, now voted against rescinding it, protesting that they would not submit even to royal dictation in the discharge of their legislative functions. The assembly addressed a letter to the Earl of Hillsborough, recapitulating the several votes and resolutions which had passed in the former session relative to the circular letter, — showing that this matter was transacted in the meridian of the session, in full convocation, and in conformity with the sentiments of a large majority of the members, — and defending, in terms forcible and manly, yet decent and respectful, the transaction which was said to have given so much offence to the king. To the governor they finally voted an address, of which the tenor was so firm and spirited that it merits more particular commemoration. [June 30.] "It is to us incomprehensible," they declared, "that we should be required under peril of dissolution to rescind the resolve of a former house, when it is evident that that resolve has no existence but as a mere historical fact. Your Excellency must know that the resolve is, to speak in the language of the common law, not now executory, but to all intents and purposes executed. If, as is most probable, by the word *rescinding* is intended the passing a vote in direct and express disapprobation of the measure taken by the former house, as illegal, inflammatory, and tending to promote unjustifiable combinations against his Majesty's peace, crown, and dignity,

[1] The assembly of this province was dissolved by the governor, Sir James Wright, on account of its letter to Massachusetts. *Annual Register for* 1769.

[2] So much had Otis's courage increased since the year 1765, when, on first reading the Virginian resolutions, he declared them a treasonable composition.

we must take the liberty to testify and publicly to declare that we hold it to be the native, inherent, indefeasible right of the subjects, jointly or severally, to petition the king for the redress of grievances, provided that the same be done in a decent, dutiful, loyal, and constitutional way, without tumult, disorder, and confusion. If the votes of this house are to be controlled by the direction of a minister, we have left to us but a vain semblance of liberty. We have now only to inform you that this house have voted *not to rescind*; and that, on a division on the question, there were ninety-two nays, and seventeen yeas." That the people might know their friends, the assembly ordered at the same time that the names of the voters on both sides of the question should be printed and published. The list of the majority was circulated with demonstrations of honor and applause; the list of the minority [1] was placarded with testimonies of contempt and derision. On the following day the governor dissolved the assembly. [July 1.] Partly for this act of power, which, though enjoined to him by a royal mandate, was produced by his own misrepresentations, and partly on account of the intelligence which was received from England of his continual solicitations that a military force should be despatched to Massachusetts, most of the towns and corporations in this province united in declarations, which were published in the newspapers, denouncing Bernard as a traitor and enemy of the country.[2]

It seemed as if every attempt to vindicate the newly extended prerogative of the parent state was fated to produce only a responsive and more successful effort of the colonists to assume an attitude more and more nearly realizing a practical independence of British authority. The Stamp Act, among other consequences, produced, in the convention at New York, the first demonstration of the readiness of the provinces to *unite* in opposition to the prerogative of Britain; the act of parliament which professed to restrain the powers and functions of the New York assembly served in effect to enlarge them; the act imposing duties on tea and other articles elicited the remarkable proceedings which we have witnessed in Massachusetts; and now the arbitrary dissolution of the Massachusetts assembly, by the command of a minister, who ignorantly or wilfully misrepresented its transactions, produced a measure still bolder and more decided. Governor Bernard having, in answer to several applications, declared that he would not without his Majesty's command again assemble the representatives of the people till the month of May in the following year, when, in conformity with the provincial charter, a new assembly must necessarily be convoked, — a strong desire was manifested by the people to counteract this arbitrary suspension of democratical authority by an irregular exertion of it. In compliance with the wishes of their fellow-citizens, the selectmen of Boston proposed to all the corporations and parishes in Massachusetts a convention of committees of their members to deliberate on constitutional measures for obtaining a redress of their grievances. This project of an assembly of popular representatives, convened without the express authority of law and simply by virtue of the inherent rights of the people, was countenanced by the wealthier inhabitants of the province, who were sensible alike of the

[1] "Like the list of the *Straffordians* at London, in the preceding century." Hutchinson.

[2] *Annual Register for* 1768. Franklin's *Private Correspondence*. Bradford. Gordon. Hutchinson. Eliot. *Political Register for* 1768, — where some curious extracts from the American newspapers are preserved. *An Appeal to the World, or Vindication of the Town of Boston from the Aspersions of Governor Bernard. The True Sentiments of America.*

dangers of chilling or stimulating the ardor by opposing the desires of their countrymen, and were willing to court their suffrages to sit in the convention, in order to retain in their own hands the management of this new and untried political organ. To what extremity the present temper of the people was capable of precipitating them was strikingly betokened at a general meeting of the citizens of Boston in the beginning of September, at which it was resolved, that, *as there is a prevailing apprehension in the minds of many of a war with France*, all the inhabitants of the province should be warned forthwith to provide themselves with arms and ammunition, in order to be ready to repel sudden danger.[1]

In consequence of the applications of the selectmen, a convention of committees, chosen by ninety-six towns and eight districts of Massachusetts, assembled at Boston. [September 22, 1768.] Many persons regarded this proceeding with alarm; and some considered it tantamount to an act of high treason. The members of the convention were sensible of the arduous and delicate predicament in which they were placed, and of the expediency of strict and guarded moderation in the exercise of undefined functions and authority. They began by disclaiming all power or pretext of legislation. In resolutions which they framed and published, and in a petition which they presented to the governor for the convocation of an assembly, they made warm professions of loyalty to the king, expressed their aversion to standing armies, and also to popular tumults and disorders, and their readiness to assist in suppressing riots and preserving peace; and strongly recommended patience and good order to their countrymen. The governor refused to receive their petition, or otherwise recognize them as a legitimate assemblage; adding, that, as a friend of the province, he counselled them to desist from the dangerous and criminal course in which they were engaged. The convention, having prepared and transmitted a petition to the king, expressed in the most temperate and respectful language, after a short session, dissolved itself. The British ministers, agreeing with Bernard in regarding the convention as a criminal association, refused to permit the petition from it to be presented to the king, who was thus confined to the knowledge merely that such a convention had been held, without being made acquainted with its actual language and demeanour.

Bernard, Hutchinson, the commissioners of the customs, and other partisans of royal prerogative, had for some time urgently solicited from the British government the detachment of a strong military force, which they represented as absolutely necessary to the vigor and even the existence of legitimate executive power in Massachusetts. [September 27, 1768.] It was supposed or pretended by some of the leading popular politicians, that the flight of the commissioners of the customs from Boston was a mere politic device to reinforce this solicitation. In effect, the very day after the Massachusetts convention was dissolved [September 28], two British regiments, escorted by seven armed vessels, arrived at Boston from Halifax. The first operation of the fleet was to assume a position which commanded the town; and, presently after, the troops, amounting to upwards of seven hundred men, under cover of the guns of the ships, landed without opposition, and marched, with muskets charged, bayonets fixed, and every

[1] Several of the stanchest patriots in America expressed much disapprobation of the irritating menace implied in this invitation to take arms, and of the disingenuous pretence on which it was founded.

other symptom of martial preparation, into the common. In the evening, the selectmen of Boston were required by the royal functionaries to provide quarters in the town for the two regiments; but they peremptorily refused. A temporary shelter in Faneuil Hall was, however, permitted to one regiment which was destitute of camp equipage. On the following day, the State-house, by order of the governor, was opened for the reception of the soldiers, and two field-pieces, along with the main-guard, were stationed in its front. Boston presented the appearance of a garrisoned town. An ostentatious display was made of the presence and alertness of a military force; and every arrangement in the distribution of this force seemed to be studiously calculated to provoke the indignation of the citizens, whose temper, never remarkable for tolerance, was already chafed into a very keen susceptibility of provocation. The lower apartments of the State-house, which had been used by the merchants as an exchange, the chamber of the assembly, the court-house, Faneuil Hall, — places which were hitherto the seats and organs of justice, freedom, and commercial convenience, — were now converted into a military citadel. Though the assembly was dissolved, the council continued its sittings; and it was not without disgust that, in repairing to their chamber, the counsellors found themselves compelled to pass the guards placed at the door of the State-house. The common was covered with tents; soldiers were continually marching and countermarching to relieve the guards; and the sentinels challenged the inhabitants, as they passed at night in the streets. The votaries of liberty resented this vexatious obtrusion of military power; and all devout persons were shocked to see the solemnity of Sunday profaned, and the religious exercises of the people disturbed, by the exhibition of military parade and the unholy clangor of drums and other martial music. After the troops had obtained quarters, the council were required to provide barracks for them in conformity with the act of parliament; but they resolutely declined to lend any assistance to the execution of that obnoxious statute. General Gage, the commander-in-chief of the British forces in America, leaving his head-quarters at New York, came for a while to Boston to support the requisition of the governor to the council [October]; but, finding his urgency fruitless, he contented himself with hiring the houses of individual inhabitants for the accommodation of the troops. The people in general were disgusted and offended, but not overawed, by the presence of the soldiers; nor were their sentiments altered by the large additions soon after [November 10] made to the military force at Boston, which, before the close of the year, amounted to four thousand men.[1]

By this impolitic demonstration did the British ministers attempt to invigorate the force of government at the extremity of the empire, while divisions and frequent fluctuations in the cabinet weakened its influence at home, and while England itself was a scene of riot, disorder, and violent opposition to established authority. Of the disorders which arose at this time in England the chief ostensible cause was the persecution waged by the ministers against the celebrated John Wilkes, a profligate, unprincipled man, who, in a season of public ferment and agitation, usurping the all-atoning title of a patriot, performed this part with such spirit and ability as to render him the idol of the people, and to provoke the government to vindictive measures so unworthy and illegal as still farther to animate the gen-

[1] Bradford. Gordon. Hutchinson. Holmes. *Annual Register for* 1768.

eral affection for Wilkes and the corresponding rage against his adversaries. The cry of "Wilkes and liberty," with which all England now resounded and continued for some years after to resound, was reëchoed by numerous voices in the colonies;[1] and the accounts of the embarrassed situation of the ministry and the convulsions in the parent state, transmitted by the colonial agents to their countrymen, doubtless tended to fortify the spirit of American resistance.[2]

All the rigorous measures of the ministry with regard to the colonies received the sanction of the parliament. In the close of this year, the House of Lords passed a censure on the non-importation agreements lately resumed in New England, as factious and menacing combinations, — which had no other effect than to render this engine of resistance more popular in America. In the commencement of the following year [1769] the same aristocratical branch of the British legislature embraced resolutions condemning all the recent proceedings of the people of Massachusetts; and particularly declaring the election of deputies to a popular convention, and the assembling of that convention, daring insults offered to his Majesty's authority and audacious usurpations of the powers of government, for which it was requisite that the principal actors should be brought to condign and exemplary punishment. These resolutions were communicated to the House of Commons, whose accession to them was demanded by the Lords. This was opposed by several members, and among others by Pownall, who had formerly been governor of Massachusetts, by Colonel Barré, and by Edmund Burke, who had recently commenced in public life a career on which his large capacity and fervid genius have shed a brilliant and dazzling lustre.[3] They warmly censured the late severities employed by the ministry against Massachusetts, and declared their conviction that the people of this province were unjustly treated. "Away with these partial, resentful trifles," said Barré, addressing himself to the ministers, "calculated to irritate, not to quell or appease, — inadequate to their purpose, unworthy of us! Why will you endeavour to deceive yourselves and us? You know that it is not Massachusetts only that disputes your right; but every part of America. From one end of the continent to the other, they tell you that you have no right to tax them. My sentiments of this matter you well know. Consider well what you are doing. Act openly and honestly. Tell them you *will* tax them; and that they *must* submit. Do not adopt this little, insidious, futile plan. They will despise you for it." Pownall declared, that, from his

[1] Wilkes rewarded his American partisans, and embarrassed his enemies in the British cabinet, by warmly defending and applauding the conduct of the Americans. In a speech to the livery of London at Guildhall, in 1776, he said: — "All public spirit is here visibly decaying, and that stern, manly virtue of our fathers, which drove from this land of freedom the last Stuart tyrant, is held in contempt by their abandoned offspring. A dissolution of the empire, ruin, and slavery are advancing rapidly upon us, and we are ripe for destruction. If we are saved, it will be almost solely by the courage and noble spirit of our American brethren, whom neither the luxuries of a court, nor the sordid lust of avarice in a rapacious and venal metropolis, have hitherto corrupted." *Annual Register for* 1776. This was mere factious cant. From Stephens's *Life of Horne Tooke* it appears that Wilkes heartily hated and despised the Americans, who, in these sentiments, received the only compliment that such a man was competent to bestow.

[2] *Annual Register for* 1768. Hutchinson. Franklin's *Private Correspondence*. See Note XXX., at the end of the volume.

[3] Of Burke it has been, I think, justly remarked by a writer in the *Annual Review*, that, "while vague rhapsodies about liberty decorated his harangues, his object was to introduce his party to power, and, by equivocal concessions to the American people, and flattering patronage of the American chieftains, to purchase a pacific reconciliation capable of being corrupted afresh into dependence."

acquaintance with the character, sentiments, and resources of the Americans, he was convinced that they could not be coerced into submission to oppressive laws; that, although they were a sober, patient, and loyal people, especially in Massachusetts, where he had resided, they might be exasperated beyond farther endurance; and that they would undoubtedly contend for their rights recognized by charter and inherited by them as British subjects, till either they recovered them or were annihilated by superior force. "That spirit," said he, "which led their ancestors to break off from every thing which is near and dear to the human heart, has but a slight and trifling sacrifice to make at this time; they have not to quit their native country, but to defend it; not to forsake their friends and relations, but to unite with and stand by them in one common union." The House of Commons, however, sanctioned and espoused the resolutions of the Lords; and both houses, in a joint address to the king, expressed their perfect satisfaction with the measures he had pursued; tendered the strongest assurances of effectual support to him in such farther measures as might be found necessary to maintain a due execution of the laws in Massachusetts; and besought him to direct the governor to take the most effectual methods for procuring information of all treasonable offences committed within the province since the 30th of December, 1767, and to transmit the names of the offenders to one of the secretaries of state, in order that his Majesty might issue a special commission for bringing them to trial *in England*, in conformity with the provisions of the statute of the thirty-fifth of Henry the Eighth.[1] The last part of this address, which proposed the transportation from Massachusetts of persons whom the government might reckon offenders, to be tried before a tribunal in England, gave the highest offence to the colonists and provoked their severest animadversions.

When the intelligence of these transactions in the British senate arrived in America, the assembly of Massachusetts had not yet been convoked. The earliest as well as the most important measures to which they gave rise occurred in Virginia. This province had witnessed, in the autumn of the previous year, the arrival of the last popular governor whom she was to receive from Britain, Lord Botetourt, an upright, honorable, benevolent, and accomplished man, a sincere and zealous friend of religion and virtue, and a liberal patron of science and literature in Virginia. His desire to promote the welfare and happiness of the people whom he governed, though not wholly inefficacious, was counteracted by his principles of duty to the parent state, and the strain and tendency of that course of policy which for some time past she had pursued; and it was perhaps happy for his fame that a sudden death closed his administration, after an endurance of only two years.[2] Some offence was given by the pompous parade[3] with which he repaired to meet and open the first assembly convoked since his arrival [May 8], when he was drawn by eight milk-white horses, in a state-coach presented to him by the king for the purpose of increasing his authority by adding splendor to his dignity; and the same formalities were observed which attend the opening of parliament by the British monarch. The sterner and more jealous abettors of American freedom and resist-

[1] We have witnessed only one instance of the application of this statute to America, in the trial of Culpepper, in 1680, *ante*, Book IV., Chap. I.

[2] He died at Williamsburg, in October, 1770.

[3] A good deal of state was always affected by the royal governors in America, and especially in Virginia, where the governor's mansion at the provincial metropolis was styled *the palace*. Tucker's *Life of Jefferson*.

ance were displeased with this pageantry, which they perceived was designed to captivate the senses of the people and impress them with reverence and abacement. The governor's speech to the assembly, however, breathed such unaffected good-will and conciliation as to dissipate every sentiment of jealousy against himself, and elicited in reply an address in the highest degree respectful and complimentary. But the members of the assembly had not been heedless or indifferent spectators of the progressive measures of the parent state, to the consideration of which, beginning with the last parliamentary taxes, and ending with the recent parliamentary declarations, they promptly yet deliberately addressed their attention. Their consultations were no longer embarrassed by division of sentiment, — all shades and distinctions of opinion being absorbed by one common and earnest solicitude for American liberty and the most determined purpose of opposition to British encroachment. In this spirit, they embraced unanimously a series of resolutions [May 16, 1769], which they directed their speaker forthwith to transmit to all the houses of assembly in America, with a request that they would unite in corresponding measures. It was declared in these resolutions that the sole right of imposing taxes on the inhabitants of this colony is now, and ever has been, legally and constitutionally vested in the provincial assembly; that it is the privilege of the inhabitants to petition their sovereign for redress of grievances, and that it is lawful to procure the concurrence of his Majesty's other colonies in dutiful addresses praying the royal interposition in behalf of the violated rights of America; that all trials for treason or any other crime, committed or alleged to have been committed in this colony, ought to be conducted before his Majesty's colonial courts; and that the transportation of any person, suspected or accused of any crime whatsoever committed in the colony, for trial in another country, is derogatory to the rights of British subjects, inasmuch as the accused is thereby deprived of the inestimable privilege of being tried by a jury of his vicinity, as well as of the power of producing witnesses at his trial. The assembly at the same time framed an address to the king, in which, amidst assurances of loyalty to his crown and attachment to his person, they expressed a deep conviction that the complaints of *all* his American subjects were well founded.

Lord Botetourt, alarmed by the intelligence of these transactions, suddenly presented himself on the following day [May 17] to the assembly, which he thus briefly addressed: — "Mr. Speaker and Gentlemen, I have heard of your resolutions, and augur ill of their effects. You have made it my duty to dissolve you; and you are dissolved accordingly." This, like the other vindictive measures which we have previously remarked, served only to give an additional shock to the British authority which it was designed to support. The members promptly obeyed the governor's mandate; but instantly reassembled in a dwelling-house, where, professing to assume no other capacity than that of an association of private citizens and freeholders, they chose their late *speaker*, Peyton Randolph, to be their *moderator*; and, in defiance of the censorious resolution of the House of Lords, unanimously signed an agreement to import no more goods from Britain, and ordered copies of it to be dispersed for accessory signatures throughout the colony. The people acceded to this ordinance with an eagerness which perhaps the strongest recommendation of its authors, convoked as an assembly sanctioned by British authority, would have been unable to produce.

The influence of this brave and generous stand in defence of American liberty was extensively propagated through the other provinces, and the conduct of Virginia became the theme of general praise and imitation. Inspired by this example, the assembly of South Carolina refused obedience to the act for providing accommodations to British troops, and passed resolves corresponding to those of Virginia. This assembly also voted and remitted, in the course of the present year, the sum of fifteen hundred pounds to a political society established at London under the title of *Supporters of the Bill of Rights*, which was understood to be friendly to the interests and claims of America.[1] The assemblies of Maryland, Delaware, and Georgia adopted the Virginian resolutions. The same policy was espoused by the assembly of North Carolina, which was straightway dissolved by Tryon, the governor; whereupon the members, with additional conformity to the example of Virginia, reassembled on the footing of a private association, and unitedly embraced a resolution against importing goods from Britain. Before the close of the year, the assembly of New York also passed resolves in harmony with those of Virginia. It was now that the non-importation agreement, revived by Massachusetts, was generally adopted throughout America. Inspectors were appointed by the political clubs or other popular associations to search all vessels arriving from England, and publish the names of any Americans who should presume to disregard that agreement; and all the power of the British government was insufficient to protect individuals thus denounced from the storm of popular hatred and indignation. Animated with the spirit of the measure, the colonists even extended the interruption of intercourse which it defined far beyond the limits of its express requisitions; and refrained from or curtailed every expenditure from which the people or the government of Britain were supposed to derive advantage. The Americans had been accustomed annually to purchase at least an eighth part of the whole number of tickets in the British lottery; but in the present year the orders from all the colonies did not amount to one hundred tickets. To supply the articles formerly imported, various manufactures now began to spring up in America. In the following year, all the candidates for the degree of bachelor of arts at Harvard College presented themselves in suits of black cloth, the manufacture of New England. The authorities of this college afforded a proof at the same time of the prevalence of republican principles in the province, by abolishing the practice that had hitherto prevailed of arranging the students in each class according to the supposed rank of the families to which they belonged, and ordaining that they should in future be ranged in the alphabetical order of their names.[2]

When the assembly of Massachusetts was at length necessarily convoked, in conformity with the directions of the provincial charter [May 31, 1769],

[1] Some time after, the provincial governor, in obedience to the king's commands, signified to the assembly the high displeasure with which his Majesty had learned this transaction. The assembly, resenting or contemning the governor's communication, were gratified and emboldened by the letter of acknowledgment which they received from a committee of the Supporters of the Bill of Rights. This letter, subscribed by Sergeant Glynn and other distinguished British patriots, expressed at once the profoundest contempt and the liveliest abhorrence of the policy of the British government, and warmly declared that the people of England would never be accessory to the manifest design of enslaving their fellow-subjects in America. *Annual Register for* 1770.

[2] *Annual Register for* 1769 and *for* 1770. Burk's *Virginia*. Campbell. Bradford. Gordon. Ramsay. Holmes. Williamson. Quincy's *History of Harvard University*. *Collections of the Georgia Historical Society*.

it plainly appeared how little the interests of British prerogative had gained from the penal dissolution by which the functions of that body were so long suspended. In the frequent town-meetings convoked by mere popular will during the abeyance of the assembly, little restraint or moderation prevailed; the increased force of passionate currents in more numerous congregations of men was strikingly illustrated; and the spirit of liberty, freely indulged, had largely expanded. Men were now accustomed to hear that the rights of the American legislatures superseded all claim of the British parliament to legislative authority over America; and the longer this doctrine was uttered, the more generally acceptable it became. In one of those meetings, an objection having been urged against a particular motion, on the ground that it implied a general independence of parliament, Samuel Adams warmly combated the objection in a speech, which he concluded by declaring, that "*Independent we are, and independent we will be.*" Familiarized with such sentiments, even the most timorous and prudential politicians ceased to regard them with alarm. Such was the state of the public mind in Massachusetts, when the representative assembly was again convoked. Their first transaction was the appointment of a committee, who signified to the governor, that an armament investing Boston by sea and land, and a military guard with cannon mounted at the door of the State-house where the representatives of the people assembled, were inconsistent with the dignity and freedom of their deliberations; and that they expected that his Excellency, as the king's representative, would order both the naval and the military force to be withdrawn during the legislative session. The governor answered to this application, that he possessed no authority over either the ships or the troops of the king; and as the assembly, with reiterated complaint,[1] firmly declined to transact business while surrounded with an armed force, he adjourned the session to the town of Cambridge. [July 6.] There he transmitted to them the accounts of the expense already incurred in quartering the British troops, with a message requiring that funds should be appropriated to its liquidation, and a provision made for the future quartering of the forces in Boston and Castle Island according to act of parliament. The assembly, on the following day [July 7], without returning any direct answer to this message, embraced and recorded a series of resolutions equalling in spirit the resolves of Virginia, and as boldly gainsaying the recent parliamentary declarations. Besides reiterating every claim and complaint on which the Virginian assembly had insisted, they declared, that a general discontent on account of the revenue acts, the expectation of the sudden approach of military power to enforce these acts, and the dissolution of the assembly, were circumstances which justified the people in assembling by a convention of committees, to consult for the promotion of peace and good order, and to present their united complaints to the throne; that the convention could not possibly be illegal, as its members disclaimed all powers of government; that the establishment of a standing army in the province in time of peace was an invasion of the undoubted rights of its

[1] "The use of the military power to enforce the execution of the laws," they declared in a remonstrance to the governor, "is, in our opinion, inconsistent with the spirit of a free constitution and the very theory of government, — that the body of the people, the *posse comitatus*, will always aid the magistrate in the execution of such laws as ought to be executed. The very supposition of an unwillingness in the people in general that a law should be executed carries with it the strongest presumption that it is an unjust law, at least that it is unsalutary. *It cannot be their law;* for, by the nature of a free constitution, the *people* must *consent* to laws before they can be obliged in conscience to obey them."

inhabitants; that a standing army was not known as a branch of the British constitutional government; that sending armed troops into the colony, under pretence of assisting the civil authority, was unprecedented, illegal, and highly dangerous to the liberties of the people; that this measure was occasioned by the counsels and misrepresentations of Governor Bernard to the British ministry; and that the arrangement, in conformity with which the troops were distributed in Boston, and the injunction laid on the assembly to make way for them by retiring to Cambridge, were deep and studied affronts to the province, and insulting indications that the civil power was overmastered by military force. It was no small addition to the general discontent, that Bernard, in proportion as he became odious to the people, seemed to rise in favor with the British court, from which he now received the title of a baronet. Undismayed and perhaps rather incited by this circumstance, the assembly unanimously voted a petition to the king that he might be removed for ever from the government of the province; but their petition, whether it really exerted any influence or not, was treated with the semblance of contemptuous disregard. Bernard, having again [July 12] urgently required the assembly to inform him whether they would or would not make provision for the troops, and receiving for answer that their honor, their interest, and their duty to their constituents forbade them to grant any such provision, prorogued them till the commencement of the following year, when he appointed them to meet at Boston. This was the last act of his illiberal and unhappy administration of the government of Massachusetts; for he departed shortly after to England [August, 1769], where the ministers desired a personal consultation with him on the state of affairs in America; and never returned, though he continued for two years longer to hold the title of governor of Massachusetts. His official functions during this interval were executed by Hutchinson, the lieutenant-governor.[1]

Amidst these agitating scenes of passion, contention, and violence, and the thickening, stormy aspect of the political horizon of America, there occurred at this period some transactions, memorable, yet of milder interest, and illustrative or promotive of the excellence and improvement of American character. We have alluded to the generous efforts of Lord Botetourt, by which knowledge and piety were promoted in Virginia. A more powerful impulse was imparted to these pursuits, and a signal advantage conferred also on the cause of civil liberty, by the resort to America of Dr. John Witherspoon, one of the greatest divines that the church of Scotland has ever produced, — pious, pure, upright, sincere, and dauntless in his character and conduct, — endowed with a vigorous and comprehensive mind, — an accomplished scholar, and second to none of his contemporaries either in the attainments of ethical philosophy or in the felicities of graceful and perspicuous eloquence. Harassed by long persecution from a numerous party both among the clergy[2] and the laity of his native country, against whom he vainly strove to restore the primitive strictness of ecclesiastical discipline, and to defend the popular election of ministers in opposition to the pretensions of royal and aristocratical patronage in the

[1] Bradford. Gordon. Hutchinson. Eliot. Pitkin. Among other friends of America by whom Bernard was loaded with opprobrium on his return to England, old General Oglethorpe is said to have personally expressed to him the utmost disgust and abhorrence at his conduct. Wirt. When he was asked if he had not been afraid to ride or walk out alone in a province where he was so generally detested, he answered, "No; they are not a bloodthirsty people."

[2] Of whom the principal leader was Dr. Robertson, the historian.

church of Scotland, he at length accepted an invitation to preside over the College of New Jersey, and for this purpose repaired in the foregoing year to Princeton, — sacrificing to his hopes of usefulness in this sphere a valuable estate which one of his relations offered to settle upon him if he would remain in Scotland. He produced an important change in the system of education both of the New Jersey College and of other American seminaries; extending the study of mathematical science, and introducing into the course of instruction in natural philosophy many improvements which were previously but little known. The system of tuition in moral philosophy he placed on a new and improved basis; and he is cited as the first teacher in America of the substance of those doctrines of the philosophy of the human mind which the Scottish metaphysician, Dr. Reid, afterwards more fully developed. Under his presidency, more attention was paid than before to the principles of taste and composition, and to the study of elegant literature. Witherspoon cordially espoused the cause of America in the controversy with Britain; defending it with admirable vigor and simplicity by his pen; exalting it in the pulpit by associating the interests of civil and religious truth and freedom; and zealously coöperating in its active vindication by his counsels and labors in the revolutionary senate. He was accompanied from Scotland by a number of his countrymen, who formed a settlement which long continued honorably to reflect the piety and good morals, the industry, simplicity, and moderation of its founders.[1]

The present year was signalized in Rhode Island by the commencement of a course of collegiate instruction at Warren, in the county of Bristol. In consequence of the petition of a number of respectable inhabitants of this province, the fundamental charter of the college was granted by the provincial assembly in 1764. By this charter there were incorporated thirty-six trustees, of whom twenty-two were Baptists, five were Quakers, five Episcopalians, and four Congregationalists; and it was provided that this proportion should be perpetually preserved! a provision which will be derided or applauded, according as it is regarded as an attempt to perpetuate existing diversities, or to defend and secure the liberty of religious opinion. In conformity with the spirit of all the other institutions of the province, it was farther decreed by the collegiate charter that all the members of the college should for ever enjoy free, absolute, and uninterrupted liberty of conscience; and that Protestants of any denomination whatever should be eligible to all the official appointments, except that of president of the trustees, which was reserved exclusively for an individual of the Baptist persuasion. In 1770, this college was removed to Providence.[2]

Dartmouth College, in New Hampshire, was also founded in the present year. It derived its name from William, Earl of Dartmouth, one of its most considerable benefactors, and owed its existence to the active piety and benevolence of Eleazer Wheelock, minister of the parish of Lebanon, in Connecticut. At Lebanon, Wheelock had many years before founded and assisted in conducting an academy devoted especially to the instruction of missionaries designed to spread the gospel among the Indian tribes. Many of the children of the Indians themselves received education at this school with so much apparent advantage, that sanguine expectations were formed

[1] *Life of Witherspoon*, prefixed to his *Works*. MS. account of him. Miller's *Retrospect*. Dwight's *Travels*.

[2] Morse, Art. *Rhode Island*.

of the efficacy of their assistance in persuading their countrymen to embrace Christianity. Some of them displayed considerable genius, and acquired the elements of literature and science with as much facility as any of their white companions; but, in the end, almost all of them renounced the advantages they had gained, and returned to the rudeness and freedom, as they esteemed it, of savage life. One of them, however, Sampson Occom, a Mohican, persisting in his abstemious manners, advanced so far in learning, and conducted himself with so much propriety, that he received a regular ordination to ministerial functions from the presbytery of Suffolk in Long Island. Shortly after, he became a missionary, and preached for a while to the Indians; but soon quitting a sphere where his change of manners exposed him to contempt and aversion, for one where it rendered him the object of interest and admiration, he began to preach among the European colonists to crowded and astonished audiences. Few persons had believed that an Indian was capable of preaching with intelligence and propriety; and multitudes regarded the fact with as much rapture as if it had been a miracle. Wheelock, who had been for some time contemplating an enlargement of the plan of his academy, perceiving the impression that Occom produced, was struck with the idea of sending him along with another friend of his own, of European extraction, to England, in order to solicit benefactions for a college to be erected in the wilderness, and devoted principally to the education of Indian youths. This well devised project was executed in the year 1766, when the appearance of Occom in England excited a lively sensation in the minds of people of all ranks.[1] Here was demonstrative proof that attempts to convert the Indians were not misapplied; that an Indian could even maintain a life so blameless, display so much piety, and acquire so much knowledge, as to be judged worthy of receiving clerical ordination; and that (which, indeed, was no very significant circumstance) he could preach in such a manner as to engage the attention of a polite English audience. All diffidence of the propriety of Indian missions was now dispelled, and the most obstinate disbelief put to silence. Occom, indeed, possessed respectable, but not superior talents, sincere religious impressions, and an eloquence, of which the efficacy was aided by the peculiarity of his appearance and the simplicity of his manners. The deficiencies in his discourses, to which persons of profound and enlightened piety might have objected, were more than atoned in their eyes by consideration of his savage extraction; and the plainness with which he stated the most humiliating truths of the gospel was stripped of much of its offence to worldly and aristocratic hearers by a manner which it was impossible to tax with vulgarity. In such circumstances, benefactions to the projected college were solicited with a success which exceeded the most sanguine expectations of Wheelock and his friends. The king declared himself a patron of the institution; his example was followed by many persons of distinction; and large sums of money in aid of its design were subscribed in England, Scotland, and America. The money collected in England was placed in the hands of certain trustees, of whom the Earl of Dartmouth, president of the Board of Trade, and himself a considerable subscriber, was at the head; and the funds contributed in Scotland were committed to the Society for promoting Christian Knowledge.

[1] "14th April, 1766. Yesterday a North American Indian, a convert to the Christian religion, preached a sermon at the Rev. Dr. Chandler's meeting, in the Old Jewry, to a very numerous and polite audience." *Chronicle of the Annual Register for* 1766.

As an improvement on the original plan, it was determined to increase the number of youths of European extraction to be educated with the Indians both in literary and in agricultural exercises; that the Indians might be the more strongly invited to these employments by the prevalence of example, and weaned from the prejudice they had universally imbibed, that to delve the earth was a pursuit beneath the dignity of man. When, in the present year, the design of withdrawing the college from Connecticut was finally announced, various offers of land for the reception of the transplanted establishment were made by the neighbouring provinces. Wheelock, with the approbation of the trustees in England, accepted the invitation of New Hampshire; and the township of Hanover, on the eastern bank of Connecticut River, was finally appropriated as the most convenient site of the institution. In a charter of incorporation afterwards granted by the governor of New Hampshire, Wheelock was declared the founder and president of Dartmouth College; a board of twelve trustees was constituted with perpetual succession; and the college was endowed with a landed estate of forty-four thousand acres in extent. The establishment proved advantageous to the European colonists of America; but its primary design of educating Indians and missionaries to the Indians was completely frustrated and abandoned in despair.[1] The number of Indian students and missionaries progressively decreased; but the number of lay students of European extraction was progressively augmented.[2] We have already remarked the high consideration which has been always most justly attached to the instruction and the instructors of youth in America, and especially in the States of New England. The annals of these provinces, during the eighteenth century, present us with many instances of men, who, after gaining distinguished eminence in the civil or military service of their country, devoted a large proportion of their fortunes to the erection of seminaries of education, and who in some instances assumed a personal share in the labors of tuition. The instruction of mankind is doubtless a more interesting task, and the beneficial influence of education on the mass of the community more visible and decisive, in American than in European states. The connection between moral improvement and temporal prosperity is peculiarly close in America, where the field of exertion is boundless, and the competition of talent is free; and where every new fountain of knowledge sees the benefit of its streams reflected from an immediate expanse of public prosperity and private happiness.

Dr. Lionel Chalmers, a native of Campbelltown, in Scotland, who had emigrated in early youth to America, where he attained very high repute as a physician, began about this time to distinguish himself by a series of useful and excellent disquisitions on the soil, climate, and diseases of South Carolina.[3]

The exertions of George Whitefield, the Methodist, in America, have already engaged our attention. In this country, Whitefield was more desirous to awaken a general concern for religion, and to promote exertions of charity and benevolence on religious principles, than to found a distinct religious sect or association. Though originally the pupil of Wesley, he

[1] "You are not to suppose that any blame is on that account to be attached either to Dr. Wheelock, or to any others intrusted with this concern. An Indian student cannot be obtained, ordinarily, without extreme difficulty. What is at least as unfortunate, his habits are in a great measure fixed before he can be brought to a place of education, and more resemble those of a deer or a fox than those of a civilized youth. In the literal sense, he must be *tamed*; and to tame him is scarcely possible." Dwight.

[2] Belknap. Holmes. Dwight.

[3] Ramsay.

was, shortly after his first visit to America, completely and even passionately estranged from the peculiar creed and the friendship of his spiritual preceptor. But farther experience of the world, and of each other's characters and views, substantially reunited these illustrious men; and though Whitefield to the last condemned the logical unsoundness of part of Wesley's doctrine, yet he regarded him with the warmest love and veneration, and in his last illness desired that Wesley might preach his funeral sermon. Whitefield died in New England, about a year after the present period. During the greater part of his career in America, Wesley, resigning this sphere of exertion to him, made no attempt to interfere with or disturb his labors. But in the present year, Wesley, animated by the success he had obtained in England, and accounting farther forbearance unnecessary, despatched for the first time two of the preachers of his peculiar doctrines and ordinances to America, — where their exertions, aided by subsequent coadjutors, were so successful, that, within twenty-four years after, the Wesleyan Methodists in America amounted in number to more than sixty thousand persons, of whom about sixteen thousand were people of color.[1] Methodism, from this epoch, spread widely in America; and piety and virtue, gravity and industry, moderation and contentment, were the fruits which invariably attended its progress. A great many slaveholders were induced by the Methodist preachers to give liberty to their negroes.

A transit of the planet Venus across the sun's disk, occurring this year, was surveyed from Harvard College by Winthrop, with science *truly so called*, because blended with religion. He was desirous to arrest the attention of the existing generation of his countrymen by the consideration of a celestial phenomenon which they could never again behold; and delivered two lectures on the subject in the college chapel, which, at the request of his audience, he afterwards published.[2] This excellent and accomplished man successfully defended the employment of electrical *conductors* against the opposition of some ignorant fanatics, who maintained, that, as thunder and lightning are tokens and instruments of divine displeasure, it must be impious to attempt any restraint of their vindictive efficacy.[3]

It was in the present year, also, that the celebrated Daniel Boon, of North Carolina, a colonel of militia, but more commonly known by his subsequent title of General in the service of America, commenced that course of adventurous and exploratory labor from which originated the plantation and establishment of the province of Kentucky. This territory was first visited in 1767 by John Finlay, an inhabitant of North Carolina, and some fellow-travellers, who circulated the most flattering accounts of it in America. In the present year, it was visited by Boon, who, with Finlay and some other hunting associates, remained two years in the country, and completely explored it. In the following year, it was again visited and surveyed by James Knox and forty other Virginian hunters. The first permanent settlement in Kentucky was made by Boon and his family, accompanied by certain of their Virginian and Carolinian friends, in the year

[1] Holmes.

[2] Eliot. Winthrop prefixed this motto to the publication of his lectures: — *Agite, mortales! et oculos in spectaculum vertite, quod huc usque spectaverunt perpaucissimi; spectaturi iterum sunt nulli.*

David Rittenhouse also made a scientific observation of the same celestial phenomenon, and at one stage of the spectacle is reported to have fainted from excess of delight and admiration. Dr. Rush.

[3] Quincy's *History of Harvard University.*

1773. This occupation was reckoned an infringement of the rights of the Cherokee Indians, whose claim to the territory had been recently recognized in a treaty between them and the British government; but it was legitimated about two years afterwards, by an extensive purchase of the land adjacent to Kentucky River, which was transacted with the Cherokees by Richard Henderson, of Virginia. The colonization of the new territory was gradually extended by the resort of emigrants to it from several of the American States. Of all the early settlers the most renowned was Daniel Boon. He was a native of Virginia, and a very remarkable specimen of human character and taste; contemplative, sagacious, and though little conversant, yet not wholly untinctured, with letters;[1] ardent and enterprising, yet enamoured of solitude; and no less distinguished by the strength and vigor of his frame, and the courage and constancy of his soul, than by the tenderness of his heart and the mildness of his manners. He first removed from his native province to a desert part of North Carolina; and thence, accompanied by a small band of friends who partook his tastes and depended on his genius, he performed his more famous migration to Kentucky. These adventurers, attached to hunting and solitude, served as an advanced guard or body of pioneers to a race of more stationary colonists; commencing settlements at a great variety of spots, which they successively abandoned to other emigrants, from whose approaches and vicinity they invariably receded. Bravely persisting in a course of life fraught with labor and danger, and yet attended with health, strength, and happiness unstained by guilt,[2] they laid the foundation of a great and flourishing State, which, only fifteen years after its colonization began, contained a population of more than eighty thousand souls.[3]

CHAPTER III.

Impolicy of the British Measures. — Affray between the Troops and the People of Boston. — Partial Repeal of the Tea-duty Act — unsatisfactory to the Americans. — Perplexity of the British Ministry. — Tucker's Scheme. — Writers on the American Controversy. — Insurrection of the Regulators in North Carolina. — Resistance in Rhode Island. — Governor Hutchinson. — Proceedings in Massachusetts — and in Virginia. — Attempt of Massachusetts to abolish the Slave-trade — resisted by the British Government. — British Attempt to exact the Tea-duty — successfully resisted in America — tumultuously defeated at Boston. — Disclosure of Hutchinson's Letters. — Dismissal of Franklin from the British Service. — Taunting Language in England. — The Shakers. — European Emigrations to America.

NOTHING could be more unwise or illiberal than the plan, if plan it may be called, of policy pursued by the British government in the controversy with America. It was varied only by alternations of unjust encroachment, haughty menace, and concession so tardily yielded and so insolently expressed, as to be always inefficacious, and generally affronting. Where it

[1] All the accounts of him that I have seen agree in representing him as wholly illiterate; and yet, many years after this period, he wrote an interesting and even elegant narrative of his early adventures in Kentucky, which is published in Imlay's *Topographical Description of the Western Territory of North America*, and also prefixed to Metcalf's *Collection of Narratives of Indian Warfare in the West.*

[2] See Note XXXI., at the end of the volume.

[3] Humphrey Marshall's *History of Kentucky. Narrative of the Adventures of Daniel Boon, from his first Arrival in Kentucky, in* 1769, *to the End of the Year* 1782. Holmes. Warden.

announced vigor, it served to rouse and exasperate the Americans; where it affected lenity, it encouraged without conciliating them.[1] Its illiberality arose from the character of the king and the temper of the British parliament and nation; its incoherence and imbecility may be traced partly to the composition, and partly to the fluctuations, of the British cabinet.[2] Each successive administration, inheriting the spirit of its predecessors, or controlled by the temper of the court or nation, but regardless of the credit of the measures of former cabinets, and willing to evade any share of their unpopularity, repealed them with a readiness that inspirited, and yet with an insolence that provoked, the colonists; assigning as the sole reasons of repeal motives of English interest and convenience, which arraigned the wisdom of the authors of those measures, guarded the dignity of the repealing cabinet, and soothed the pride of the nation. The lessons so plainly taught by the introduction and the repeal of the Stamp Act, instead of operating as a warning, were perversely used as a model, to which the British government with steadfast pride continued ever after to accommodate its policy, which was always wise too late, and vibrated between the opposite traits of rashness in repeating irritating measures, and delay in applying remedial ones, which were invariably deferred till the relative evils had become incurable. It seemed as if the first false step made by Grenville had pledged his country to persist in a perilous experiment, in which the chances of success were additionally diminished by frequent changes in the instrumental process, arising mainly from the fluctuating composition of the cabinet. Those changes, it is true, were promoted in some degree by the violent resistance of the Americans to every form in which the overture of bereaving them of their liberties was repeated; but this circumstance was either never clearly perceived or never justly appreciated by the British ministers, who, with amazing folly, believed, that, by abandoning an assault upon American liberty in one quarter, they would facilitate an attempt upon it in another. With strange disregard or misconception of the most notorious properties of human nature, they believed, or at least acted as if they believed, that all the indignant and courageous spirit aroused in a brave and free people by an obnoxious measure must be instantly dissipated or assuaged by its repeal; that provocations might be repeated without producing any increase or accumulation of hostile and impatient sentiment; and that it was always in their power, by a change of policy, however tardy, however ungracious, however flattering to the efficacy of American resistance, at once to disband all the swelling host of angry passions from whose collected fury and victorious force or menace they were compelled to retreat. Yet every observant man, who has witnessed the rise and progress of a revolution, must have remarked that a nation excited to violent resistance of oppression is less gratified by immediate success than disquieted by a crav-

[1] It was about this time that a party of English noblemen and gentlemen, travelling in Germany, were entertained at Potsdam by Frederick (styled the Great), king of Prussia, who took occasion to turn the discourse on the controversy between Britain and America. He said that it was a difficult thing to govern men by force at such a distance; that, if the Americans should be beaten, which appeared a little problematical, still it would be next to impossible to draw a revenue from them by taxation; that, if the English intended conciliation, their measures were too rough; and if subjugation, they were too gentle. Moore's *Travels in Germany.*

[2] The frequent changes of administration in the commencement of the reign of George the Third have been ascribed, with much show of reason, by Edmund Burke, to a design cherished at court of destroying, by deceiving, disuniting, and disgracing, the leading members of the Whiggish aristocracy of England. See Burke's *Thoughts on the Causes of the existing Discontents.*

ing demand for some object whereon to wreak its exuberant energy and unexpended rage. What would have been the entire effect of a deliberate espousal and steady prosecution of lenient and liberal policy it is impossible to define; but we may safely conclude that most probably it would have promoted the interest, and certainly it would not have impaired the honor and dignity, of Great Britain. A uniform course of rigorous assertion of authority, on the other hand, would have accelerated a critical struggle, of which the retardation was highly favorable to the interests of American liberty. By the course (for truly it is an abuse of language to term it a plan) which was actually pursued, the Americans were thoroughly aroused by attacks on a great variety of points, animated by partial successes, strengthened by the lapse of time, and confirmed in obstinacy of purpose by protracted and indecisive contention.

Every principle of good policy, deducible from the issue of the Stamp Act, manifestly inculcated that Britain should either desist altogether from attempts to tax America, or at least should impose no tax obnoxious to the general opposition, or defeasible by the general resistance of the colonists. A second and similar failure in an experiment of such importance was by all means to be avoided; and Townshend, indeed, had vainly imagined that by his Tea-duty Act he at once asserted the authority of Britain, and obviated the scruples and objections of America. But, with the present ministry, this measure possessed no claim of parental or kindly regard sufficient to counterbalance the difficulties occasioned by the vehement opposition of the Americans, and the remonstrances of the British merchants who suffered from the non-importation agreements. Reckoning the authority which they administered defied, and actuated by a sense of offended dignity, they embraced vindictive measures against the colonists on account of the mode in which they had conducted their opposition to a statute for which the cabinet itself entertained little concern or respect. They even warmly opposed a proposition for the repeal of this statute, which, with strange inconsistency, was introduced in the close of the same session of parliament that produced the violent address to the king against the province of Massachusetts. On this occasion, it was contended by the ministers and their friends, with sincere and exalted folly, that repeal, though warranted and even enjoined by general principles of national policy, was forbidden by the peculiar circumstances of the juncture; and Lord North, in particular, declared, that, "however prudence or policy may hereafter induce us to repeal the late act, I hope we shall never think of it *till we see America prostrate at our feet.*" Yet, no sooner was the parliamentary session concluded, than the ministers gave notice to the provincial agents and other persons interested in American affairs at London, that in the following year the grievances of America should be certainly redressed; and in the course of the summer, Lord Hillsborough, in circular letters to all the colonies, signified the intention of himself and his colleagues "to propose in the next session of parliament taking off the duties on glass, paper, and colors, *upon consideration of such duties having been laid contrary to the true principles of commerce*"; and declared that the cabinet "entertained no design to propose to parliament to lay any farther taxes on America for the purpose of raising a revenue."

Lord Botetourt, on receiving this intelligence, hastened to communicate it to the Virginian assembly (which he reconvoked) in a speech so cour

teous and conciliatory, and expressive of so much warmth of regard for America, that his language gave to the tidings it conveyed more influence than was due to their own intrinsic grace; and yet the assembly, though they returned an affectionate and respectful answer to his communication, expressed hope and confidence in a tone that implied fear and distrust. When the impression produced by Lord Botetourt's gracious manners had subsided, they recorded in their journals a protest expressive of their conviction that partial remedies were incompetent to heal the existing distempers. To the Americans in general the intelligence transmitted by Lord Hillsborough was far from satisfactory. The purposed exception of the duty on tea from repeal, and the professed design of repealing the other duties upon mere commercial principles, excited anew their jealousy, and confirmed them in the opinion that the groundwork of the present grievances was not to be abandoned, but to be reserved for a future opportunity of fresh essays for the imposition of internal taxes boundless in extent and endless in duration. No sooner was the tenor of Lord Hillsborough's letter made known in Massachusetts, than the merchants and traders of Boston, at a general meeting, unanimously resolved that the projected repeal was intended merely to gratify the British manufacturers, and was inadequate to repair or remedy the grievances of America; and they renewed their former agreement to import no more goods from Britain till the late revenue acts should be totally repealed. So little of pacific influence did Lord Hillsborough's communication exert, that, in Pennsylvania, a much stronger demonstration of aversion was elicited by the terms of the proposed repeal than had been provoked by the measure itself which was to be partially abrogated. A committee of the principal merchants of Philadelphia, in a letter addressed to the merchants of London, protested that the system of government disclosed by all the measures of the present reign was such as *the Americans* could not tamely submit to [November 25, 1769]; that this system tended to sap the foundations of liberty, justice, and property in America, and to strip her citizens of every blessing essential to the dignity and happiness of human life; that these were not merely the ideas of speculative politicians, but the sentiments and language of the people in general; for in no country was the love of liberty more deeply rooted, or the knowledge of the rights of freemen more widely diffused, than in America; that nothing short of a repeal of all the late revenue acts, and the restoration of that state of things which existed prior to the commencement of these innovations, now could or would satisfy the minds of the people; that Britain by her fleets and armies might overawe the towns, and by her severe restrictions, her admiralty courts, and custom-house officers, ruin the trade of America; but that, while every American farmer was a freeholder, the spirit of liberty would continue to prevail, and all attempts to divest them of the privileges of freemen must be attended with consequences injurious both to the colonies and to the parent state.[1]

The little confidence reposed by the Americans in the British cabinet, and in its promises of a redress of grievances, was still farther impaired by a change which the ministry soon after underwent, in the secession from its ranks of Lord Camden, who resigned the seals [January, 1770], and of Dunning, the celebrated constitutional lawyer and friend of liberty, who had been solicitor-general. But before the projected measure of the cabinet

[1] Gordon. Bradford. Burk's *Virginia*. Hutchinson.

was carried into effect, a circumstance occurred in America fitted to counteract the efficacy even of a much greater stretch of conciliation. The British senate had been assured by Franklin that a military force despatched to America, though it would not find, would easily create, a rebellion; but more credit was given by the present ministers to the representations of Bernard, Hutchinson, Oliver, Paxton, and other partisans of prerogative, that an impending rebellion could be averted only by the exhibition of military power. Ever since the arrival of the troops at Boston, the inhabitants of this city regarded the presence of these instruments of despotic authority with an increasing sense of indignity; and reciprocal insults and injuries paved the way for a tragical event which made a deep and lasting impression of resentment in America. An affray, which commenced between an inhabitant of the town and a private soldier, having been gradually extended by the participation of the fellow-citizens of the one and the comrades of the other, terminated to the advantage of the soldiers, and inflamed the populace with a passionate desire of vengeance, which, it has been justly or unjustly surmised, was fomented by some persons of consideration, who hoped that the removal of the troops would be promoted by a conflict between them and the towns-people. [March 2, 1770.] A corresponding animosity was cherished by the soldiers, some of whom were severely hurt in the affray. They began to carry clubs in their hands when they walked in the streets, gave other symptoms of willingness to renew the conflict, and evinced the most insulting contempt for the citizens, to whom their presence was already sufficiently offensive. After the lapse of three days from the first affray [March 5], and after various symptoms had betrayed that some dangerous design was harboured on both sides, a party of soldiers, while under arms in the evening, were assaulted by a congregation of the populace, who pressed upon them, struck some of them, loaded them with insults, terming them *bloody-backs* (in allusion to the barbarous practice of flogging in the British army) and cowards, and tauntingly dared them to fire. The conduct of the soldiers was far from blameless. They had previously by studied insult provoked the rage of the people, and now exasperated it by retorting the verbal outrages, which they possessed the most fatal means of avenging. One of them at last, on receiving a blow, fired at his assailant; and a single discharge from six others succeeded. Three of the citizens were killed, and five dangerously wounded. The town became instantly a scene of the most violent commotion; the drums beat to arms; thousands of the inhabitants flocked together, and beheld the bloody spectacle of their slaughtered fellow-citizens with a rage that would have prolonged and aggravated the calamities of the night, if Hutchinson, the deputy-governor, and the other civil authorities, had not promptly interfered, and, arresting the soldiers who had fired, together with their commanding officer, and loudly blaming them for firing without the order of a magistrate, held forth to the people the hope of more deliberate vengeance, and prevailed with them to disperse. The next morning [March 6], Hutchinson convoked the council, which was engaged in discussing the unhappy event, when a message was received from a general assemblage of the citizens, declaring it to be their unanimous opinion, that nothing could restore the peace of the town and prevent further conflict and carnage, but the immediate removal of the troops. Samuel Adams, who communicated the desire of his fellow-citizens, expressed it in the tone of command

and menace. After some hesitation, Hutchinson and the commander of the forces, who each desired to throw the responsibility of the measure upon the other, perceiving that it was inevitable, consented to embrace it; the troops were withdrawn, and the commotion subsided. One of the wounded men died; and the four bodies of the slain were conducted to the grave with every ceremonial expressive of public honor and affection by an immense concourse of people, followed by a long train of carriages belonging to the principal inhabitants of the town.

Captain Preston, who commanded the party of troops engaged in the fatal affair, and all the soldiers who had fired, were committed to jail, and arraigned on an indictment of murder. Their trial was awaited with earnest expectation, and for some time with passionate hope or stern satisfactory conviction in the public mind that it would terminate fatally for the accused. Considering the mighty cloud of passion, prejudice, and exaggeration, through which their conduct was viewed, such an event would have merited more regret than reprobation. Captain Preston, though entirely innocent, was exposed to peculiar danger from the generosity with which, in vindicating his men when first reproached by the civil authorities, he neglected to exculpate himself from the charge implied in their questions, of having authorized and ordered the firing; and the odium under which he labored was not a little increased by the publication, at London, of a partial and irritating representation of the unhappy transaction, derived from statements furnished by himself, but distorted by the intemperate zeal of injudicious friends. But the defence of the prisoners was undertaken by two of the most eminent lawyers and determined patriots in Massachusetts, — Josiah Quincy, Jr., whom we have already noticed, and John Adams, a kinsman and intimate friend of Samuel Adams, and who afterwards held the high office — the highest that a friend and champion of human liberty and happiness has ever filled — of president of the United States of America. These men were not less eager to guard the justice and honor of their country from reproach, than to defend her liberty from invasion; and they exerted themselves in defence of their clients with a manly eloquence and reasoning worthy of their cause, and worthily appreciated by the integrity, justice, and good sense of the jury. Robert Treat Paine, to whom the public voice assigned the office of prosecutor, discharged this arduous duty with an uprightness and ability becoming a sound lawyer and wise patriot. Preston was acquitted; as were likewise all the soldiers except two, who were found guilty of manslaughter. This event was truly honorable to Massachusetts. Some British politicians, indeed, are said to have regarded it merely as an act of timidity, or a mechanical adherence to legal rules. But (as an ingenious American writer[1] has finely observed), in this forbearance of the people, on an occasion where truth and reason, combating violent passion, pronounced the bias of their feelings unjust and wrong, there was exhibited a force and firmness of character which promised to render them unyielding and invincible when supported by a sense of justice and right. The vigor with which extreme injustice is resisted corresponds not unfrequently in direct proportion with the patient fortitude exerted in the endurance of its initial manifestations. Though the issue of the trial was generally approved in Massachusetts, the anniversary of the *massacre*, as it was termed, was observed with much solemnity; and the ablest of the provincial

[1] James Fenimore Cooper.

orators were successively employed to deliver annual harangues calculated to preserve the irritating remembrance fresh in the popular mind.

Various affrays, though of a less serious description, occurred between the British troops at New York and the populace of this city, where much discontent was excited by the conduct of the assembly, in consenting at length to make provision, though only occasionally and reluctantly, for the accommodation of the soldiers. Some violent writings having been published on this subject, addressed to *the betrayed inhabitants of New York*, M'Dougall, a Scotchman, the publisher, was committed to jail on a charge of sedition; but his imprisonment was alleviated and dignified by visits and demonstrations of regard which he received from great numbers of people, including some of the principal gentlemen and ladies of the province; and the government finally liberated him without having ventured to bring him to trial.[1]

In conformity with Lord Hillsborough's promise, the duties which had been imposed on glass, paper, and painters' colors were now repealed by an act of parliament conceived in precisely the same terms as the law that repealed the Stamp Act. The duty on tea was continued, with the avowed purpose of preserving the claim of parliament to sovereign legislative authority in America. This reservation, like the Declaratory Act which accompanied the repeal of the stamp duty, left the grand cause of contention in its entire force; for it was not the particulars, but the principle of taxation, to which the colonists were most stubbornly opposed. Even supposing, which there is great reason to doubt, that the breach between the parent state and her colonies could yet have been repaired, the present measure, so far from being adequate to repair, was calculated to widen it. Enough was yielded to encourage the Americans; enough retained to exasperate them. With strange inconsistency, the ministers declared in the House of Commons, in reply to a proposition of some of the members for a total repeal of the duties, that, although these duties were absurd and impolitic, and although the repeal of them was urgently desirable in order to put an end to the American combinations against importing English goods, yet the insolence of these combinations and of the other proceedings of the colonists was so offensive, that a total repeal was incompatible with the dignity of Great Britain. Thus, with unhappy logic, was it argued, that the dignity of Great Britain required her to persist in a course impolitic and untenable; and that American resistance, while it enjoined a partial departure from this course, necessitated also a partial adherence to it. The ministers openly declared that the language of the Americans became every day bolder and more violent; a truth which they who thus propounded it seemed to be incapable of appreciating. For, with such rising spirit and temper as the Americans displayed, it was evident that an accommodation with them became daily more difficult; and that at every successive stage of the controversy their demands would be both enlarged in substance and aggravated in the extent of their encroachment upon British dignity. Such a storm of passion had been raised in America as was not likely to subside at once, even though all the avowed causes of quarrel were suddenly re-

[1] *Annual Register for* 1770. Holmes. Bradford. Gordon. Hutchinson. Franklin's *Memoirs*. *Life of Quincy*, by his son, Josiah Quincy. Rogers. The people of South Carolina suspended for a while all commercial intercourse with New York, on account of her departure from the non-importation policy.

moved; and such views had been awakened in the breasts of many of the colonists as only the most flattering advantages were likely to dispel.

The popular leaders, gratified by the importance and interest of the position to which the controversy advanced them, were by no means disposed to overrate the advantages of any particular scheme for its accommodation. Some, doubtless, cherished the design of independence, — a purpose which the royal ministers with great impolicy openly imputed in parliament to the Americans in general; and some, who harboured no such wish or project, were yet desirous that their past efforts should be as successful as possible, and opposed all accommodation not founded on an entire removal of American grievances. In holding a controversy with Britain, America practically approached the condition of an independent commonwealth; and while the ambitious design of realizing this idea was suggested to her in the language of insult and menace by the British cabinet, the prospect of it was manifestly regarded with much complacency by other European states. It was about this time, as Franklin relates, that several of the foreign ambassadors at London assiduously cultivated his acquaintance, and treated him as one of their diplomatic body.[1] The danger of a quarrel with America ought to have been impressed with especial force on the British government in the present year by the insolent aggression to which Spain was prompted, partly in conformity with the policy to which she was engaged by the secret treaty which we have remarked with the French minister, Choiseul, and doubtless in part by the actual embarrassment of her rival in American empire. In the midst of peace between the two crowns, a Spanish force violently dispossessed the English of a settlement they had formed in Falkland's Islands; and accompanied this outrage with the most insulting marks of contempt for the British flag. But the British government, instead of being warned by its embarrassments effectually to conciliate the Americans, was induced by them tamely to submit to the indignity sustained from Spain, and to accept a species of apology which was very unsatisfactory to the national pride.

It was a canon of ancient wisdom, that a sovereign, withholding the just rights of his people, gives them rights to whatever they may please to desire.[2] We have seen how much the views and demands of the Americans were recently enlarged. The discussion of British authority in one point lowered its influence in all; and the flame kindled by one peculiar topic of complaint was gradually extended, till it embraced every other. The Americans were now determined to resist the external no less than the internal taxation of parliament; and nothing short of a repeal of all the late duties, and a thorough revision and modification of the trade laws, had the most remote chance of restoring harmony between them and the parent state. Some effect, indeed, was produced by the present measure of partial repeal, and contributed, perhaps, to delude the British ministers with the hope that their policy was successful. The general plan of non-importation was now relinquished by the Americans; but this in truth was a mere indulgence of their own convenience, and was most erroneously regarded by those who deemed it a corresponding concession to the inter-

[1] In relating this, he imputes it to "the desire they have, from time to time, of hearing something of American affairs, — an object become of importance in foreign courts, who begin to hope that Britain's alarming power will be diminished by the defection of her colonies."

[2] *Omnia dat qui justa negat.*

ests of Britain. Resolutions were embraced in the principal commercial towns, that no tea should be imported while the duty was continued. Associations were formed in some parts to drink none but smuggled tea; and in others, to abstain from the use of tea altogether. The assembly of Massachusetts [November, 1770] expressed displeasure at the departure from the general non-importation agreement, and published resolutions for promoting industry, frugality, and domestic manufactures. In a message to Hutchinson, who, by adjourning the assembly to Cambridge, and by a punctilious deference to the wishes and authority of the British government, had already involved himself in warm disputes with them, they insisted on the right of the people to *appeal to Heaven* in a controversy with rulers who abused their authority; they appointed a solemn fast to seek the direction and blessing of God; and being informed by Hutchinson [1771[1]] that he could not, consistently with the instructions of the king, assent to an income tax which they had voted, unless they would qualify it so far as to exempt the emoluments of the royal commissioners of customs from its operation, they answered, with passionate asperity,—"We know of no commissioners of his Majesty's customs, nor of any revenue his Majesty has a right to establish *in North America*. We know and feel a tribute levied and extorted from those who, if they have property, have a right to the absolute disposal of it." Hutchinson about this period made sundry attempts, by the instrumentality of the provincial council and the courts of law, to punish the printers of newspapers in which his own conduct and the policy of Britain were arraigned; but all his measures were baffled and his purpose was invariably defeated.[2]

Among other subjects of discontent and apprehension in America, there was one which was supplied by the policy of the prelates of England, who, with persevering importunity, solicited the British government to establish an Episcopal hierarchy in the colonies.[3] These applications, of which intelligence was procured by the provincial agents, excited the general disgust of the Americans, who beheld in the project only a measure instrumental to the aggrandizement of British prerogative, and the multiplication of royal functionaries whose emoluments were to be derived from the American civil list. In the year 1768, the assembly of Massachusetts proclaimed that a general alarm was excited among the inhabitants of the province by the projected imposition upon them of that very ecclesiastical system from whose tyranny their fathers had retired to America; and in the present year, the assembly of Virginia passed a vote of grateful thanks to some gentlemen of this province who distinguished themselves by their writings and other exertions to animate their countrymen to resist the introduction of Episcopacy. The British ministers, however, had no intention of acting at this juncture in compliance with the impolitic counsel of the bishops. Distracted and embarrassed by domestic dissensions, the quarrel with Spain, and the disappointing and mischievous result of every measure relative to the colonies that had latterly been adopted, they were

[1] This year died in Massachusetts the ex-governor Shirley.

[2] *Annual Register for* 1770 and *for* 1771. Franklin's *Private Correspondence*. Gordon Holmes. *Memoir of Isaiah Thomas*, in the *Archæologia Americana*.

[3] Their infatuated prosecution of this object proved exceedingly detrimental to the political interests to which they were most ardently devoted, and was not crowned with success until America had successfully revolted and compelled Britain to acknowledge her independence. The first consecration by the English hierarchy of bishops in America took place in 1787, by authority of an act of parliament passed in the preceding year.

at present averse to any active interference in American affairs. Prudence and perplexity alike engaged them to pause awhile in a path so encumbered with difficulties that it seemed impossible to move either forward or backward in it without stumbling. Afraid to advance or enforce the pretensions of the parent state, and ashamed to recede from them, they wished to take no new step with regard to America till the harmony which they vainly expected from their last measure should be completely established. But the delusiveness of this expectation was clearly perceived by some British politicians; and not long after the repeal act of the preceding year, an attempt was made in the House of Commons to effect a radical change of that policy which was visibly tending to produce the revolt of America. Resolutions were proposed for restoring all matters relative to American trade and finance to the state in which they had been at the commencement of the king's reign. The strongest argument in support of this proposition was a simple recapitulation of the late measures and of their undeniable results: — taxes imposed, repealed, reimposed, and repealed again, — an attempt to raise a revenue in America for the relief of the burdened people of England, producing only an aggravation of the distress of the English merchants and manufacturers, — schemes of fortifying the British dominion in America, issuing in a state of things that betokened its entire overthrow, — assemblies dissolved for contumacy, and reconvoked without making the slightest submission, — multitudes denounced as guilty of sedition and even of treason, and yet not an individual tried or punished for either of these offences, — troops sent to prevent a rebellion, but actually serving to provoke it, — every branch of the British government degraded, and the resentment and resistance of America progressively augmenting and invariably triumphant. The ministers, overwhelmed with doubt and perplexity, shrunk from the discussion to which they were invited; and, without attempting to answer or deny these representations, obtained from a majority of the house a rejection of the proposed resolutions. A proposition of similar resolutions, made to the House of Lords by the Duke of Richmond, met with a similar fate.[1]

Only one Englishman at the present juncture had the sagacity to perceive that the views and pretensions of Britain and America were quite incompatible, and that, in the warmth of the controversy, these conflicting views had been so far disclosed and matured, that a cordial reconciliation was no longer possible. This was Dr. Josiah Tucker, dean of Gloucester, one of the most learned and ingenious writers on commerce and political economy that England has ever produced. With a boldness equal to the comprehension of his view, he openly recommended, in several tracts which he published about this time, an immediate separation of the two countries, and a formal recognition of the independence of the American States.[2] The doctrine which he inculcated was, that, when colonies have reached such a degree of wealth and population as to be able to support themselves, the authority of the parent state whence they emanated must necessarily be trivial and precarious; and that, consequently, in all cases of this kind, it is the dictate of prudence and sound policy, that the parties, instead of wait-

[1] Bradford. *Annual Register for* 1770, and *for* 1771. Franklin's *Private Correspondence.*

[2] The voluntary return of the Americans (disunited among themselves, and tired with expatiating in the vague expanse of boundless freedom) to British domination was predicted, as the certain effect of Tucker's scheme, in some humorous verses, ascribed to Soame Jenyns, and published in the *Annual Register for* 1776.

ing to be separated by emergent quarrel and strife, should dissolve their connection by mutual consent. Such, he contended, was now the situation of the British colonies in America; and in urging upon Britain the consequent policy of releasing them from farther control, he maintained with much force and sound judgment that this measure would be attended with a great alleviation of the national expenditure, and with increase instead of diminution of the national gain. By calculations and reasonings, of which only exasperated pride or inveterate prejudice could withstand the cogency, he demonstrated that Britain, in her dealings with the Americans, must derive far more commercial profit from their entire freedom and consequent prosperity, than she could do while their resources were cramped by the restrictions attendant on her domination. For his unpalatable counsel Tucker was derided, as a puerile and fantastic visionary, both by those of his countrymen who supported and by those who opposed the measures of their government.[1] But time illustrated his views and honored his wisdom.

Several eminent writers preceded Tucker in publicly expressing and defending their various sentiments and opinions with regard to the points involved in the controversy between Britain and America; and many continued to follow in succession on both sides of the question, till force was employed to decide what reason proved unable to adjust. The most distinguished writers in support of the prerogative of Britain were Adam Smith, Dr. Johnson, and George Chalmers. Of the writers on the other side, the most eminent of the native Americans were Otis,[2] Bland, Dickinson, and Franklin, — and of their European coadjutors, Doctors Price, Priestley, and Witherspoon, Thomas Paine, and the ex-governor Pownall. It is not my purpose here to undertake a critical analysis of the works of these writers; and yet some notice seems proper of the more remarkable features of the controversy which they conducted. Smith, while he maintained that it was reasonable that the colonies should contribute to the support of the general burdens of the empire, recommended, though less positively, that they should be represented in the British parliament; and deprecated, in every event, a war with them, in which Britain was, he affirmed, not only unlikely to succeed, but certain that every drop of blood that flowed was the blood of those whom she called or desired to call her subjects.[3] Otis, on the other hand, while he asserted the right of America, in her actual circumstances, to be exempted from British taxation, acknowledged that this right would be superseded by a participation in the privilege of sending representatives to the British parliament;[4] and Dickinson, who had roused the strongest spirit of resistance to the British claims, withstood for a while the purpose which this spirit produced, and incurred a temporary loss of popularity by firmly resisting upon principle the project of independence.[5] The inefficiency of Dickinson's powers when exerted

[1] Tucker's *Tracts*, in the British Museum. Watkins's *Life of the Duke of York*. This author relates, that, after the independence of America had been irrevocably conceded, George the Third, meeting Tucker at Gloucester, observed to him, "Mr. Dean, you were in the right, and we were all in the wrong." Burke, in the House of Commons, termed Tucker's scheme "a childish one." There was, indeed, something like childishness in the supposition that a scheme fraught with so much liberality and moderation would ever be adopted by a prince of arbitrary disposition and by a haughty nation.

[2] Otis's political life was terminated this year by insanity, occasioned, it is said, by the intensity of his exertions in behalf of American liberty.

[3] Smith's *Wealth of Nations*, Book IV., Chap. VII.

[4] Otis's *Rights of the Colonies Asserted and Proved*.

[5] Rogers's *Biographical Dictionary*.

to restrain his countrymen from revolt, contrasted with their efficacy when displayed in the publication of the *Farmer's Letters*, illustrates the nature and limits of the influence exercised on the councils of America by her political writers and orators. They were totally incompetent to guide or control the current of public sentiment and opinion; and it was only when exerted in harmony and correspondence with its fixed bent, that their genius was able to modify the public measures and resolutions. They frequently seemed to command a popular assembly or community, when they merely animated its rooted determination, and became its leaders, while they steered it in a current by which it was insensibly borne along, and conducted it in the course which it was already prepared to pursue. "In civil wars," said that great captain, statesman, and patriot, La Noue Bras-de-Fer, "the plough not unfrequently guides the oxen." Dr. Johnson, whose views were prescribed, as his pamphlet was revised, by the British ministers, argued with great vigor and ingenuity, but in an arrogant, overbearing, and disdainful tone, heightened by the customary swell of his diction, that the colonists, by the terms of their charters and the peculiarity of their social position, purchased the advantage of defence from a powerful state during their national infancy, in return for subjection to its legislative dominion, of which the exercise was enlarged in proportion to the capacity of the subject state to endure it. He insisted that the claim of America to be exempted from parliamentary taxation, and to coöperate with the rest of the British empire in defraying the national expenses through no other channel than that of her own provincial assemblies, was a claim which supposed dominion without authority, and subjects without subordination.[1] Chalmers referred exclusively to the colonial charters, and to the opinions of lawyers and antiquarians, in support of the British pretensions;[2] and, like Johnson, overlooked or undervalued the consideration, that no prerogative, however accommodated to the language of ancient parchments, or sanctioned by the critical exposition of legal logic, could be otherwise regarded by the Americans than as an encroachment on their national liberty, if it was exerted in opposition to the general current of their sentiments and prepossessions. Submission to power, in an instance or to an extent generally odious to the feelings of a people or party, however reasonably or plausibly linked to the theory of their municipal constitution or the peculiar maxims of their political creed, cannot fail to be resisted by the powerful dictates of freer reason and universal sense; — as, indeed, the British government might have learned from various circumstances attending the Revolution of 1688, and particularly from the important though temporary accession of the Churchmen and Tories to that memorable transaction.

In the present controversy, as well as in that which was engendered by the British Revolution, we are surprised to find how frequently frivolous topics are introduced on both sides, how seldom real motives are fully avowed by either, and how often both parties seem to warp their principles in order to embarrass their antagonists or to fortify themselves by alliances with prudential considerations. The nature, rules, and limits of the connection between Britain and America formed a great political problem, involving

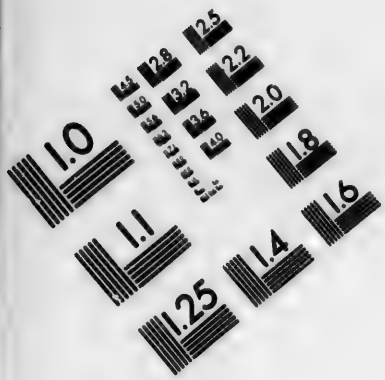
[1] Johnson's *Taxation no Tyranny*, and *The Patriot*. In Moore's *Life of Sheridan* are preserved some notes, composed by this distinguished orator and wit, for an answer which he projected, but never completed, to Dr. Johnson's argumentation.

[2] Chalmers's *Political Annals of the Colonies* and *Introduction to the History of the Revolution of the Colonies*.

numerous interests and the general principles of civil liberty, and of which a satisfactory solution was vainly sought from parchment authorities, the faded fruits of a past season and remote period, when neither the grantors nor the occupiers of Ame can territory contemplated any thing like the present state of the two countries. Though the Americans were generally animated by a strong aversion to British prerogative, a jealous sense of dependence and ill-treatment, and an earnest hope and purpose to be free, — few of their advocates declined to accept the challenge of their adversaries to stake the issue of this controversy on a mixed and confused discussion of the principles of the British constitution, and of the provincial usages and the legal import of the provincial charters ; and, according as one or other of these sources of authority was thought to administer support to British prerogative or American liberty, were they alternately cited and derided on both sides, in the conduct of this argumental contest. It had been more creditable for both parties, if the controversy could have been conducted without any reference whatever to the provincial charters. For, if it was absurd that the British government, which had on some occasions modified and in various instances attempted to subvert altogether those charters, should yet assert their absolute inviolability in so far as they seemed to confirm its disputed prerogative over the colonies, — it was no less unreasonable that the colonists should appeal *to* their charters alone, wherever their tenor, unaltered by authority, seemed to favor the colonial pleas, and yet appeal *from* them to the principles of the British constitution, or, with more latitude, to the maxims of abstract reason and the natural rights of man, in every instance in which the original terms or subsequent alterations of the charters seemed to warrant the adverse pretensions. The Americans were far more sensible than willing to proclaim their full sense of the injustice and absurdity of the doctrine which would render the rights and liberties of a numerous and enlightened people dependent on the terms of charters and compacts framed between a handful of men in a distant and ignorant age. Their ancestors, they deemed, had no legitimate commission to settle unalterably the terms of future existence. Among other argumentative artifices of the partisans of America, they continually palliated and underrated the acts of tumultuary violence by which the vindictive measures of the British government were provoked ; maintaining with great vehemence, but little veracity, that the disturbances in America were quite insignificant, and that Britain, with tyrannical injustice, punished whole provinces for the riotous proceedings of a few obscure and ignorant men.

Price, in defending with his usual and admirable perspicuity the claims of the Americans, relied on the principles, more or less fixed, of the British constitution, of which he supposed America to be entitled to as ample a practical share as England herself. To him it seemed contrary to reason that the British dominion should spread without a corresponding enlargement of the prevalence of the British constitution.[1] Franklin at first accounted that a supreme control over every part of the British empire resided in the parliament, and, as a witness in behalf of America at the bar of the House of Commons, he admitted the legitimate exertion of this control in the regulation of commerce and the imposition of external taxes. Altered circumstances and farther consideration led him to abandon this notion ; and he ad-

[1] Price's *Observations on Civil Liberty*. For this pamphlet Dr. Price received the thanks of the civic corporation of London. *Annual Register for* 1776.



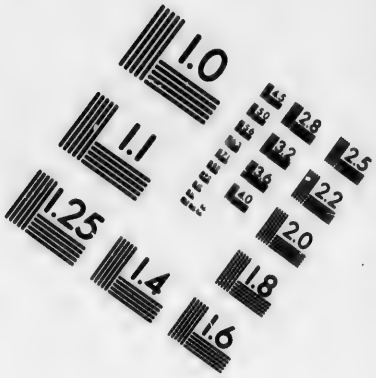
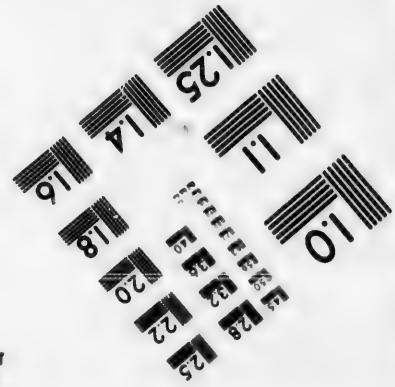
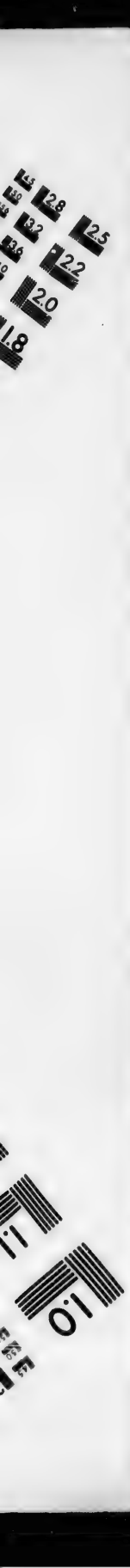


IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503


2.8
2.5
3.2
2.2
3.6
2.0
4.0
1.8
1.1
1.0

vised the assembly of Boston to acknowledge a dependence on the king alone, and to desist from and repudiate its unmeaning profession of recognizing "a due subordination" to parliament. His countrymen entered readily into this altered view, which, indeed, many of them had anticipated; and it was at the present period the general sentiment of the Americans, that all the control which parliament had ever before exerted over them was either an unjust usurpation or a temporary guardianship, which the national maturity of America rendered no longer legitimate. In witty and ironical compositions which he furnished to the public journals, Franklin assimilated the pretensions of Britain over America to such claims as the king of Prussia or other German potentates might arrogate over the British people as descendants of emigrants from Germany. Yet, accustomed to consider himself an officer of the British crown, familiar with the greatness and power of Britain, and cherishing a complacent regard for the grandeur of an empire which his genius had dignified and his counsels had enlarged, it was with long reluctance (never, indeed, entirely eradicated) that Franklin contemplated the prospect of its dismemberment, and the perilous extremity of American revolt and civil war; and this reluctance was increased by the conviction he entertained that industry and economy would of themselves render the Americans practically, as the progress of population must render them irresistibly, independent of Britain, and enable them without a struggle either to dissolve their connection with her or to dictate the terms of it. His views and reasonings on this subject were often nice, subtle, and fine-spun; resembling rather the visions of a speculative philosopher than the judgments of an experienced politician. His eagerness to conciliate and temporize was so much more visible to the British court, than the concurrent and far more deeply rooted sentiment which he cherished of jealous and determined attachment to his countrymen and their cause, as to have induced many persons in England to question, though unjustly, his sincerity. In reality, he was a great deal more sincere than consistent. Laboring to extenuate in the eyes of the British ministers the ebullitions of violence in America, he prevailed upon his own mind to underrate the significance of these symptoms; and even after dismissal from office, accompanied with the most offensive indignities by the British government, had closed his hopes of promotion in its service, he persisted in clinging to the delusive idea that harmony might be restored and the dismemberment of the British empire prevented.[1]

The views and sentiments of Paine, though supported with athletic force of intellect, clear, lively spirit, and a glowing, intrepid eloquence well calculated to warm and arouse, were founded on principles (if any, indeed, properly speaking, can be traced at their foundation) the most vague and inde-

[1] Franklin's *Memoirs and Correspondence*. On his return to Pennsylvania from England, in 1775, Franklin, as one of the trustees of the College of Philadelphia, proposed as the subject of a prize essay to the students, "The Motives to, and the Advantages of, a perpetual Union between Britain and her Colonies." His own view of those motives and advantages was thus expressed: — "Britain will derive advantage from our assistance in war, and our employment of her merchants and manufacturers in peace; while her government will be strengthened by the disposal of profitable posts and places among us. On our side, we have to expect the protection she can afford us, and the advantage of a common umpire in our disputes. By a prudent moderation and kindness on her part, and by a decent behaviour on ours, bearing with the infirmities of her government as we would with those of an aged parent, though firmly asserting our privileges, *and declaring that we mean at a proper time to vindicate them*, this advantageous union may still be long continued." It is difficult to read this, and especially to trace it to Franklin, without a smile of surprise or incredulity.

terminate. A native of England and son of a Quaker, this ingenious man, prior to his removal to America, had beheld only the artificial and complicated municipal frames of European commonwealths, wherein the general rights of mankind were nearly buried under the privileges and trappings of oligarchy; and the principles of liberty formed a theory traceable (if at all) only by difficult and operose research amidst established usages that widely departed from its obvious dictates. In America, he found a closer correspondence between the established municipal systems and the lineaments of those principles of liberty which he regarded as the genuine offspring of truth, sense, and nature; and, with ardent hope and desire, he hailed the prospect of a higher development of those principles, from the rejection and overthrow of the opposite principles of regal and aristocratical preëminence, which rather embarrassed the theory than influenced the practical effect of the American institutions. Paine was an enthusiastic votary of the temporal happiness and liberty of mankind, but ignorant and regardless of their highest duties and noblest destination. Though as yet guiltless of those blasphemous impieties which have rendered his name odious to Christian ears, he was already a disbeliever of revealed religion, of which the doctrines were taught to him in his youth by ignorant and weak-minded instructors, and discredited to him in his manhood by the cant and grimace of hypocrites and tyrants, — of arbitrary princes and their hireling clergy, in whose mouths the precepts delivered by the divine Friend and Redeemer of the human race were transmuted into the cozening language and interested counsels of the oppressor to the slave. Some glimmerings of this sentiment were discernible in the essays by which he animated the Americans to resist Britain and contend for liberty.[1] For this he underwent a severe and indignant castigation from Witherspoon, who was as much offended to see the rights of man separated from his duties, liberty made a cloak for licentiousness, and the interests of America linked with infidelity, as Paine had been offended with a religion dishonored by hypocritical professors and tyrannical patrons. No writer argued in defence of American resistance and revolt with more force or simplicity than Witherspoon, who insisted that a subject nation, like an individual youth, advanced with corresponding steps to manhood and to liberty; that America was now so far advanced, that she could no longer, except by tyranny, be governed by a distant empire; that the incompetence of Britain to retain her dominion was proved by the injustice, fluctuation, impolicy, and inefficiency of her recent measures; and the capacity of the Americans for independence, by the spirit, firmness, and efficacy of their resistance. In opposition to the Quakers and some other professors of Christianity, whom Paine loaded with angry malediction and sarcastic insult for renouncing all resistance to established authority, as inconsistent with certain precepts in the New Testament, Witherspoon calmly yet firmly maintained that the prohibitive strain of those precepts had no relation whatever to the actual circumstances of the Americans in their controversy with England; and that it was both the right and the duty of every friend of religious liberty in America to contend for the preservation of political freedom.[2]

Under governments of a mixed nature, indeed, and founded on human compacts, the practical question of the right of a Christian people to re-

[1] Paine's *American Crisis*.

[2] Witherspoon's *Sermons* and *Address to the Scottish Residents in America*

sist *the powers that be* is never so simple as theorists are apt to represent it. Who are the powers that be? In England, during the reign of Charles the First, for example, the parliament had as much claim to that title as the king. In America, at the epoch of which we treat, the provincial assemblies partook it with the organs of power in the parent state; and when they and the mass of the population, in order to oppose the encroachments, were compelled to disown the authority of those organs, they wholly engrossed it. It was the opinion of Witherspoon, and of many other persons of sincere, deep, and enlightened piety in America, that, where collisions arise between different authorities in the same empire, every man possesses the right of choosing the side he shall support, bounded by the duty of consulting the interests of religion and liberty, and of respecting the opinions and wishes of the majority of the community. The Scriptural precepts referred to by the Quakers, and other advocates of submission, they deemed were intended (in so far as their application might be supposed universal) to inculcate the *duty* without defining the *limits* of obedience to civil authority, and to recommend a peaceable, moderate, and contented disposition, and averseness to wanton or unnecessary change.[1] John Wesley was at first opposed, on religious principles, to American resistance, and, in letters to the Methodists in America, endeavoured without effect to dissuade them from embracing the cause of their country. But he very soon changed his opinion, and even encouraged the Americans in revolt by expressions of his good wishes and approbation.[2]

All great passions in their effervescence exert a contagious influence; and there is something in the aspect of a people gallantly struggling for freedom, and indignantly resisting the oppression of a stronger and predominant power, wonderfully calculated to interest the favor and kindle the ardor of liberal and energetic minds. The American controversy, like every other revolutionary vortex, absorbed a great variety of human sentiment and character. Virtue and vice, patriotism and licentiousness, ambitious genius and wild enthusiasm, ever combine to warm the feelings and multiply the numbers of the partisans and promoters of revolutionary

[1] The influence of the genuine principles of Christianity is at once favorable to social order and opposed to the pretensions of arbitrary power. Those American States in which religion had the greatest prevalence were the most distinguished for social order and warm yet rational attachment to liberty. In monarchical governments, if kings would be content to abstain from interference with the religion and the religious institutions of their subjects, they might derive the full benefits of the quiescent agency of Christianity on the human mind. By uniting *the state* with *the church*, sovereigns contrive to make the church partly responsible for the errors of their own civil policy, and defeat the efficacy of the religious precepts which enjoin submission and moderation, by taking the preaching of these precepts into their own hands, and counteracting their preaching by their own example. When they who style themselves the human heads of the church are free to press and pursue every temporal privilege and political claim, shall the members be deprived of the same latitude? Thus men must feel; and, unhappily, princes, cultivating an alliance with the church, have been much more successful in discrediting religion than in strengthening their own pretensions. A political church introduces a confusion into men's notions, and with one hand stirs the passions on which it seeks to pour oil with the other. The pernicious policy of uniting ecclesiastical establishments with municipal government is very forcibly exposed by De Tocqueville, in his treatise on *Democracy in America*. May we not apply to communities the apostolical injunction to individual slaves, — to abide patiently the lot which, rooted and fixed as it was, could not presently be altered, and could not be resisted without violence, convulsion, and bloodshed, — and which yet was qualified by the permissive direction, "If thou mayest be made free, use it rather"? The right to be free becomes a duty, when it is united with the power.

[2] Southey's *Life of Wesley*. Wesley's niece, Mrs. Wright, the celebrated modeller in wax, was born in Pennsylvania, and warmly attached to the interests of America, which she appears to have promoted by exertions more politic than strictly honorable. Franklin's *Private Correspondence*

change. At such seasons, genius and talent, apart from every other virtue except devotion to the public cause, bear a high premium in popular estimation; and the general esteem is apt too fondly to consecrate the qualifications which seem peculiarly and immediately to redound to the general honor and advantage.[1] The talents and passions of ardent minds enrol themselves in the public service; and men, whose eloquence has merely adorned and illustrated the stream of popular sentiment and opinion, are too often hailed with exaggerated encomium as its sources or guides. It was happy for the Americans, that, during the whole of their revolutionary controversy, mere talent never obtained an influence exceeding or even approaching the authority of sense and virtue. The bold and glowing sallies of genius and enthusiasm were admired; but the public, though warmed, was not dazzled by them, and preferably derived its policy from the moderate but sound and steady counsels of wise and honest men. The Americans were generally imbued with the persuasion (which some notable events in their subsequent experience tended to illustrate and confirm) that a nation can never be safely indifferent to the moral character of its political chiefs and leaders, and that private virtue and prudence afford the surest test of the purity and stability of patriotic purpose and resolution.[2] All the valuable services which the Americans received from their eloquent and zealous partisan, Thomas Paine, though justly appreciated and richly requited by them, could never render his name popular in America. In the beginning of the nineteenth century, one Thomas Paine, of Boston, obtained an act of the legislature of Massachusetts authorizing him to change his name to Robert Treat Paine, "because he was unwilling to bear the name of a certain noted infidel and reviler of religion."[3]

North Carolina had been for some time past convulsed with disorders, which at length broke out in an insurrection so completely disconnected with the general agitation by which America was pervaded, that the insurgents afterwards formed one of the strongest bodies of royalist partisans, who, dissenting from their countrymen in general, adhered to and supported the pretensions of Britain. And yet, in reality, it was the corruption or incapacity of functionaries of the British government that produced the very evils of which those persons now complained. We have formerly remarked[4] the abuses which prevailed in the civil administration of this province, and which the appointment of Tryon to be its governor was expected to cure. This expectation was disappointed. One of the most irritating abuses was the exaction of exorbitant fees by public officers on all legal proceedings, and particularly on all deeds and ceremonies requisite by law to the validity of sales and acquisitions of landed property. Tryon, in conformity with his instructions, issued a proclamation against this abuse; but, as he either negligently or corruptly confined himself to proclaiming, without attempting to execute, a purposed reform, his conduct served only to sanction, without curing or alleviating, the general discontent. In addition to this grievance, a number of the sheriffs and of the receivers of the provincial taxes were

[1] It was a proverbial saying in ancient Greece, that "Civil discord is a season in which the highest reputation may be gained by the worst men." Plutarch, *Life of Alexander.*

[2] "We have here an explanation of a striking fact in the history of our Revolution; we mean the want or absence of that description of great men whom we meet in other countries, men who, by their distinct and single agency, and by their splendid deeds, determine a nation's fate. There was too much greatness in the American people to admit this overshadowing greatness of leaders." Dr. Channing's *Remarks on the Life and Character of Bonaparte.*

[3] Stuart's *Three Years in North America.*

[4] *Ante*, Book X., Chap. VI.

suffered to continue long indebted to the provincial treasury for a heavy arrear of public moneys which they had collected, but delayed to account for; and it was not unreasonably surmised that the weight of the taxes was aggravated by this misapplication of their produce. An association was gradually formed by a great number of poor colonists, who assumed the title of *Regulators*, and who entered into a compact, which they ratified by oath, to pay no taxes whatever, till all exorbitant fees were abolished, and official embezzlement punished and prevented. The general ill-humor was increased by a vote of the assembly of a large sum of money to build a palace for the governor, as an expression of public gratitude for the repeal of the Stamp Act; and also by the imposition for this purpose of a tax, which began to operate at the very time when the parliamentary impost on tea, glass, paper, and painters' colors was promulgated. Tryon with great difficulty pacified the Regulators by promises which were only delusively fulfilled. Fanning, one of the recorders of conveyances of land, was tried on six indictments for extortion, and found guilty in every instance. The royal judges, however, sentenced him to pay only the fine of one penny, — a sentence more insulting to the people than would have been the boldest injustice in openly absolving him.

This, and other similar transactions, revived the association of the Regulators, who, incensed and blinded with indignation and ignorance, easily became the dupes of leaders of whom some were madmen and others knaves. One of those leaders, named Few, whose life was afterwards vindictively abridged by the executioner, instead of being charitably prolonged in a lunatic asylum, alleged that he was commissioned by Heaven to deliver the whole world from oppression, and specially directed to commence his work in North Carolina. After various outrages, the Regulators, assembling in the present year to the number of two thousand, declared their purpose of abolishing courts of justice, exterminating all lawyers and public officers, and prostrating the provincial government itself beneath some wild and indeterminate scheme of democracy, which, doubtless, its abettors as little comprehended as they were qualified to accomplish. All the sober and respectable part of the community perceived the necessity of defending themselves against the folly and fury of the insurgents, whom Tryon was soon enabled to oppose with eleven hundred of the provincial militia. In a battle at Almansee [May 16, 1771], the Regulators were completely defeated, with the loss of three hundred of their number, who were found dead on the field. Seventy of the militia were killed or wounded. Twelve of the defeated insurgents were afterwards tried and condemned to die for high treason [June, 1771]; six of these were executed; the rest of the fugitives, except some of their leaders who escaped from the province, submitted to the government and took the oath of allegiance.

Tryon, though he had dissolved an assembly for imitating the Virginian resolutions in 1769, was yet in the main popular with all the most substantial and respectable inhabitants of North Carolina. This advantage he owed to the diligence with which he avoided to provoke or aggravate disputes with the assembly, and to the zeal with which he opposed a proposition of Lord Charles Montague, the governor of South Carolina, for establishing a boundary line very unfavorable to the northern province. Nevertheless, only a short time after he had suppressed the insurrection of the Regulators, Tryon was removed to the government of New York, and succeeded in

North Carolina by Josiah Martin, a vain, weak, and insolent man, who endeavoured to lower the character of his predecessor by defending and countenancing all who were supposed to have aided or befriended the Regulators; and to recommend himself to the British ministry by seizing every opportunity of disputing with and complaining of the provincial assembly.[1] This was an appointment most unpropitious to the credit and authority of the British government with all the inhabitants of the province, except those unfortunate persons whose ignorance, deluded by the caresses of Martin, induced them to transfer their resentment from the parent state to the provincial institutions. And when we consider, that, in the same year, Hutchinson, one of the most unpopular characters in America, was appointed to succeed his former principal, Bernard, as governor of Massachusetts, — and that his two brothers-in-law, Andrew and Peter Oliver, unpopular both by their public conduct and their connection with him, were appointed, the first, lieutenant-governor, and the second, chief justice of this province, it must be acknowledged that the perplexity and hesitation latterly betrayed by the cabinet of the parent state issued in counsels that were far from disclosing the influence of deliberate wisdom or the discernment of sound policy. On the inauguration of Hutchinson, the authorities of Harvard College addressed him with felicitation more complimentary than sincere, and the students performed an anthem set to words of the following strain: — "Thus saith the Lord: From henceforth, behold! all nations shall call thee blessed; for thy rulers shall be of thy own kindred, your nobles shall be of yourselves, and thy governor shall proceed from the midst of thee."

An act of violence committed by the colonists of Rhode Island, though less memorable in respect of its intrinsic importance than the insurrection of the Regulators in North Carolina, excited more general attention from its significance as an indication of the height to which the general current of American sentiment was rising. [1772.[2]] The commander of the Gaspee, an armed British schooner stationed at Providence, had exerted much activity in supporting the trade laws and punishing the increasing contraband traffic of the Americans; and had provoked additional resentment by firing at the Providence packets in order to compel them to salute his flag by lowering theirs as they passed his vessel, and by chasing them even into the docks in case of refusal. The master of a packet conveying passengers to Providence [June 9], which was fired at and chased by the Gaspee for neglecting to pay the requisite tribute of respect, took advantage of the state of the tide (it being almost high water) to stand in so closely to the shore that the Gaspee in the pursuit might be exposed to run aground. The artifice succeeded; the Gaspee presently stuck fast, and the packet proceeded in triumph to Providence, where a strong sensation was excited by the tidings of the occurrence, and a project was hastily formed to improve the blow and destroy the obnoxious vessel. Brown, an eminent merchant, and Whipple, a ship-master, took the lead in this bold adventure, and easily collected a sufficient band of armed and resolute men with whom they embarked in whale-boats to attack the British ship of war. At two o'clock the next morning [June 10], they boarded the Gaspee so suddenly and in such numbers, that her crew were instantly overpowered, without hurt to any one

[1] Williamson. Holmes. *Annual Register for* 1771.

[2] This year, a territorial dispute between the province of Connecticut and the Mohegan or Mohican tribe of Indians, which had endured for thirty years, was terminated by a decree of the British privy council in favor of the province. *Annual Register.*

except her commanding officer, who was wounded. The captors, having despatched a part of their number to convey him together with his private effects and his crew ashore, set fire to the Gaspee and destroyed her with all her stores. The issue of this daring act of war against the naval force of the king was as remarkable as the enterprise itself. The British government offered a reward of five hundred pounds, together with a pardon if claimed by an accomplice, for the discovery and apprehension of any person concerned in the treasonable attack on the Gaspee; and a commission under the great seal of England appointed Wanton, the governor of Rhode Island, Peter Oliver, the new chief justice of Massachusetts, Auchmuty, the judge-admiral of America, and certain other persons, to preside upon the trial of the offenders. But no trial took place. Nobody came forward to claim the proffered reward; some persons, who were apprehended in the hope that they might be induced by threats and terror to become witnesses, were enabled by popular assistance to escape before any information could be extracted from them; and in the commencement of the following year, the commissioners reported to the British ministry their inability, notwithstanding the most diligent inquisition, to procure evidence or information against a single individual.[1]

Meanwhile, the flame of discontent was fanned in Massachusetts by the personal animosity that daily increased between Hutchinson and the majority of the provincial assembly. Hutchinson, whom we have had frequent occasion to notice, was a man endowed with much address, agreeable manners, and respectable talents, of which the efficacy was promoted by great industry and activity; but vain, ambitious, and credulous; a diligent and successful student of the laws, history, and politics of New England, yet never attaining a just estimate of the character and genius of her people. In former years he had been a popular citizen; and was reckoned, not indeed a zealous, but a prudent patriot, and a dexterous politician. His popularity, redeemed from a partial eclipse by the uprightness, diligence, and ability with which he discharged the functions of chief justice, was irretrievably ruined by circumstances which we have already recounted. He still retained a number of friends, by whom, among other topics of commendation, his birth in New England and the politeness of his manners were favorably contrasted with the British extraction and the personal insolence of Bernard. But those circumstances eventually rendered him only more deeply and generally detested, when it was discovered that he, a native of America, and a person of so much seeming moderation that no violent counsels had been expected from him, was at this period carrying on a secret correspondence with the British ministry, whom he strenuously exhorted to undertake the most important innovations on the provincial institutions, for the purpose of extending royal prerogative and abridging popular liberty. Then, indeed, almost all his countrymen fell away from him; and he became more odious than it was possible for Bernard or any other native of England to have rendered himself in America. During the whole scene of the controversy with Britain, and of the revolution that ensued from it, the moderation which the Americans displayed towards the natives of Britain was strikingly contrasted with the implacable rage, impatience, and hatred they indulged against American Royalists;[2] and a curious saying be-

[1] Gordon. Holmes. Quincy.

[2] Americans whose predilection for the royal cause was only suspected, or had vented itself merely in ambiguous language or conduct, were frequently *tarred and feathered* by their

came current in America, that, "Although we are commanded to forgive our enemies, we are nowhere required to pardon our friends." Hutchinson was already to his countrymen an object of strong and general dislike; and it was highly impolitic of the British ministers to embarrass the execution of their measures with the adventitious weight of his peculiar unpopularity. Professing an earnest desire to obtain accurate reports of the state of public feeling and opinion in America, they would have pursued this end more wisely by sending out a new governor from England to Massachusetts, than by conferring this office on a man whose representations had already proved fallacious, and who had taken such an active part in the late political struggles that his views were necessarily warped by his passions. As firmly as Cardinal Wolsey (a spirit of far higher order) did, and probably with as much self-deceit, Hutchinson believed that his political conduct was entirely disinterested, and ascribed all his exertions to abet royal prerogative to a genuine and simple zeal for the due dignity of the crown and the general welfare and honor of the empire. He resembled not a little his official predecessor, Governor Dudley. Both were sincerely attached to their country; but both, dazzled by ambition, enamoured of aristocracy, and bent on preëminence, were led by mixed motives of political principle and personal convenience to prefer a splendid, wealthily endowed magistracy, invested with a powerful control over the citizens, to a system of government more humble in its garb and pretensions, and more dependent on the will and approbation of a free people.[1]

Hutchinson had enjoyed his commission as governor but a very short time, when he acquainted the provincial assembly that he no longer required a salary from them, as the king had made provision for his support. By this measure the British court expected gradually to introduce into practical operation the principle for which it had already contended, of rendering the emoluments, as well as the communication and endurance, of executive functions in America wholly dependent on the pleasure of the crown; and probably it was supposed that the Americans would give little heed to the principle of an innovation of which the first practical effect was to relieve them from a considerable burden. But the Americans valued liberty more than money, and justly accounted it the political basis on which reposed the stability of every temporal advantage. Hutchinson's communication was deliberately pondered, and about a month afterwards [July 10], the assembly by

countrymen, — that is, their naked bodies were first smeared with tar, and then rolled in a heap of feathers. The burlesque and even jocular cast of this operation blinded the eyes of the populace to its cruelty; laughter stifled humanity and compassion; and ferocity was disguised and promoted by blending vengeance with sport. In the French Revolution, the number of real or supposed aristocrats, who, with mingled jest and cruelty, were hanged by the populace on the lamp-posts of Paris, illustrated still more forcibly the danger of connecting ludicrous ideas with penal inflictions.

The American Royalists subsequently exacted a bloody and disproportioned revenge of the insults they had endured from their countrymen. When they took arms in behalf of Britain, they surpassed even the Indians in the rapine, perfidy, and ferocious cruelty which characterized their warfare.

[1] In America, says an eminent political writer, magistrates, deprived of all imposing state and costume, are reduced to depend on personal merit alone. They are invariably accessible to all, attentive to every application, and gracious in their language; perfectly sensible that they have received the right of placing themselves above others by their power, only on condition of descending to the level of all by their manners. De Tocqueville *on American Democracy*. This was what Dudley, Hutchinson, and the other partisans of royalty and aristocracy desired earnestly to avoid, and what the genius of democracy has accomplished in America, — where (to use an expression of the historian Sismondi) the government belongs to the people, and not the people to the government.

a message declared to him, that the royal provision for his support, and his own acceptance of it, was an infraction of the rights of the inhabitants recognized by the provincial charter, an insult to the assembly, and an invasion of the important trust which from the foundation of their commonwealth they had ever continued to exercise. Hutchinson, who, like many scholars, entertained sentiments rather kindly than respectful of the mass of mankind, and never justly appreciated the fortitude, resolution, and foresight of his countrymen, appears to have been struck with surprise at their conduct on this occasion. This, at least, is the most intelligible explanation of his behaviour, when, some time after, they desired his assent to the usual provision they made for the salaries of the judges. Instead of frankly granting or withholding his sanction, he continued to hesitate and temporize, until a remonstrance from the assembly elicited from him the avowal, for which they were quite prepared, that he could no longer authorize a provincial provision for the judges, as the king had undertaken to provide for *their* remuneration also. The assembly instantly passed a resolution declaring that this measure tended to the subversion of justice and equity; and that, while the tenure of judicial office continued to depend on the pleasure of the king, "any of the judges who shall accept of and depend upon the pleasure of the crown for his support, independent of the grants of the assembly, will discover that he is an enemy to the constitution, and has it in his heart to promote the establishment of arbitrary power in the province." We shall here so far overstep the march of time and order of events as to notice the issue of this particular dispute, which did not occur till the commencement of the year 1774, when four of the judges acquainted the assembly that they had received the salary voted to them by the representatives of the people, and refused to accept emolument from any other quarter; but Oliver, the chief justice, announced that he had received the king's salary, and without his Majesty's permission could not accept any other emolument. The assembly thereupon tendered an impeachment against Oliver to the governor and council; and as Hutchinson refused to receive it, they protested that his refusal was occasioned by his own dependence on the crown. They had never, indeed, any hope that it would be received, and were incited to these measures by the desire of rendering Hutchinson and Oliver additionally unpopular.

In the close of the present year, Samuel Adams suggested to his countrymen the expediency of a measure fitted to counteract the representations of Hutchinson and his adherents, who gave out that the popular opposition was more formidable in appearance than in reality, and was at bottom merely an intrigue of a few factious men; and in conformity with his suggestion, the inhabitants of Boston [November 22, 1772], elected twenty-one of their fellow-citizens as a committee empowered to correspond with the rest of the inhabitants of the province, to consider and represent the common grievances, and to publish to the world an account of their transactions. The committee thus elected prepared and dispersed throughout the province a report of all the encroachments that had been attempted or committed upon American liberty, together with a circular letter which concluded in these terms: — "Let us consider, brethren, that we are struggling for our best birthright and inheritance, of which the infringement renders all other blessings precarious in their enjoyment, and consequently trifling in their value. *We are not afraid of poverty, but we disdain slavery.* Let us disappoint

the men who are raising themselves on the ruin of this country. Let us convince every invader of our freedom that we will be as free as the constitution which our fathers recognized will justify."

The powerful influence of this measure was not confined to the province of Massachusetts, nor even to the States of New England. A few months after [March, 1773], the assembly of Virginia declared their resolution of maintaining an uninterrupted intercourse with the sister colonies, and for this purpose appointed a committee of eleven persons, who were instructed to use their utmost endeavours to procure authentic intelligence of all the transactions of the British parliament or ministry relative to America, and to maintain a correspondence on this subject with the other provincial communities. This measure, which produced an important effect in animating the resolution and harmonizing the proceedings of the Americans, was so grateful in particular to the citizens of Boston, that, in a letter of instructions which they addressed shortly after to their representatives in the assembly, they desired them seriously to consider if the salvation of American liberty and the restoration of friendship between America and Britain did not demand an immediate concurrence with *the wise and salutary proposal of our noble patriotic sister colony of Virginia*. The recommendation of the citizens of Boston was favorably received by the assembly of Massachusetts, which instantly appointed a committee of correspondence with the other colonies. In a circular letter published shortly after by this committee, the prospect of a quarrel between England and Spain was remarked in these terms: — "Should a war take place, which by many is thought to be probable, America will be viewed by the administration as important to Great Britain. Her aid will be deemed necessary; her friendship will be courted. Would it not, then, be wise in the several American governments to withhold all kind of aid in a general war, till their rights and liberties are permanently restored and secured?" "With regard to the *extent of rights*," they added, "which the colonies *ought to insist upon*, it is a subject which requires the greatest attention and deliberation. This is a strong reason why it should claim the earliest consideration of every committee; that we may be prepared, when *time and circumstances* shall give to our claim the surest prospect of success. And when we consider how one great event has hurried on after another, *such a time may come sooner than we suppose*."

Hutchinson, about this time, with a rash confidence in his own talents and an eager hope of recommending himself to the British court, undertook in his speeches to the assembly of Massachusetts to support by argument the legislative supremacy of parliament, — a doctrine which we have seen that his own original opinions outstripped those of his countrymen in opposing. This misplaced exertion of zeal was generally disapproved, even in England, where it was remarked with displeasure that principles solemnly established by the crown and parliament were at once unhinged and degraded by the presumptuous argumentative patronage of a provincial governor. The assembly, though with some reluctance, accepted his challenge to argue the point; and the general impression in America pronounced them victors in the discussion.[1]

Among other subjects of dispute with the British government and its officers was one more creditable to Massachusetts than even her magnani-

[1] Eliot, art. *Hutchinson*. Franklin's *Private Correspondence*. Hutchinson. Gordon. Bradford. Holmes Pitkin.

mous concern for the liberty of her citizens and their fellow-colonists. Negro slavery still subsisted in every one of the American provinces; and the unhappy victims of this yoke were rapidly multiplied by the progressive extension of the slave-trade.[1] Georgia, the youngest of all the States, contained already fourteen thousand negroes; and in the course of the present year alone, more than six thousand were imported into South Carolina. In New England the number of slaves was very insignificant; and their treatment so mild and humane as in some measure to veil from the public eye the iniquity of their bondage. A provincial law, enacted in the year 1712, prohibited the importation of slaves into Massachusetts, without restraining her merchants from participating in the vile traffic that ministered to the supply of slaves to other States. But the recent discussions with regard to liberty and the rights of human nature were calculated to awaken in generous minds a juster impression, if not of slavery, at least of slave-dealing; and during the latter part of Governor Bernard's administration, a bill prohibitory of all traffic in negroes was passed by the Massachusetts assembly. Bernard, however, in conformity with his instructions from the crown, refused to affirm this law, and thus opposed himself to the virtue as well as to the liberty of the people whom he governed. On three subsequent occasions, laws abolishing the slave-trade were enacted by the same assembly during Hutchinson's administration; but all were in like manner negatived by the governor. And yet it was at this very period, while Britain was permitting her merchants annually to make slaves of more than fifty thousand men, that her orators, poets, and statesmen loudly celebrated the generosity of English virtue in suffering no slaves to exist on English ground, and the transcendent equity of her judicial tribunals in liberating one negro[2] who had been carried there. Though Massachusetts was thus prevented from abolishing the slave-trade, the relative discussions that took place were by no means unproductive of good. A great amelioration became visible in the condition of all the negroes in the province; and many of the proprietors gave liberty to their slaves.[3] This *just* action—for such, and such only, it deserves to be termed—has obtained hitherto scarcely any notice from mankind; while the subsequent and similar conduct of the Quakers in Pennsylvania has been celebrated with warm and general encomium. So

[1] "The number of negro slaves bartered for in one year (1768) on the coast of Africa, from Cape Blanco to Rio Congo, by the different European nations, was as follows: Great Britain, 53,100; British Americans, 6,300; France, 23,520; Holland, 11,300; Portugal, 1,700; Denmark, 1,200; in all 104,100, bought by barter for European and Indian manufactures; £15 sterling being the average price given for each negro." *Annual Register for* 1769.

"It is evident," says the Abbé Raynal, "from the most accurate and undeniable calculations, that there dies every year in America the seventh part of the blacks that are imported thither from Guinea. Fourteen hundred thousand unhappy beings, who are now in the European colonies in the New World, are the unfortunate remains of nine millions of slaves that have been conveyed thither."

[2] Somersett, the negro liberated by the English Court of King's Bench in 1772. Howell's *State Trials*. Somersett's case is erroneously supposed to have been the first of the kind that occurred in Great Britain. More than ten years before, a negro slave imported into Scotland was liberated by the sentence of the Admiralty Court of Glasgow, in which Thomas Grahame, the grandfather of the author of this *History*, then held the office of judge.

[3] Bradford. Holmes. Franklin's *Private Correspondence*. "The great revolution which has taken place in the Western World may probably conduce (and who knows but that it was designed?) to accelerate the fall of this abominable tyranny [the institution of negro slavery]; and now that this contest and its attendant passions are no more, there may succeed perhaps a season for reflecting, whether a legislature, which had so long lent its assistance to the support of an institution replete with human misery, was fit to be trusted with an empire the most extensive that ever obtained in any age or quarter of the world." Paley's *Moral and Political Philosophy*.

capricious is the distribution of fame; and so much advantage does the reputation of virtue derive from alliance with sectarian spirit and interest. Some enslaved negroes in Massachusetts obtained justice to themselves by legal process. Between the year 1770 and the commencement of the Revolutionary War, various suits for freedom and for wages on account of past service were instituted by those negroes against their masters; and in every case the provincial juries returned verdicts in favor of the plaintiffs.[1]

The British government, meanwhile, having rashly determined to enforce the Tea-duty Act,—of which the most considerable effect hitherto was a vast importation of smuggled tea into America by the French, the Dutch, the Danes, and the Swedes,—attempted to compass by policy what constraint and authority had proved insufficient to accomplish. The measures of the Americans had already occasioned such diminution of exports from Britain, that the warehouses of the English East India Company contained above seventeen millions of pounds of tea, for which it was difficult to procure a market. The unwillingness of the Company to lose their commercial profits, and of the ministry to forego the expected revenue from the sale of tea in America, induced a compromise for their mutual advantage. A high duty was imposed hitherto on the exportation of tea from England; but the East India Company were now authorized by act of parliament to export their tea free of duty to all places whatever. [May, 1773.] By this contrivance it was expected that tea, though loaded with an exceptionable tax on its importation into America, would yet readily obtain purchasers among the Americans; as the vendors, relieved of the British export duty, could afford to sell it to them even cheaper than before it was made a source of American revenue.

The crisis now drew near when the Americans were to decide whether they would submit to be taxed by the British parliament, or practically support their own principles, and brave the most perilous consequences of their inflexibility. One common sentiment was awakened throughout the whole continent by the tidings of the ministerial device, which was universally reprobated as an attempt, at once injurious and insulting, to bribe the Americans to surrender their rights and bend their own necks to the yoke of arbitrary power. A violent ferment arose; the corresponding committees and political clubs exerted their utmost activity to rouse and unite the people; and it was generally declared, that, as every citizen owed to his country the duty at least of refraining from being accessory to her subjugation, every man who countenanced the present measure of the British government should be deemed an enemy of America. To the several committees was intrusted the power of launching this dangerous proscription. Some of the popular leaders expressed doubts of the prudence of actual resistance to a measure of so little intrinsic importance, and preferably urged that the people should be restrained from violence till the occurrence of an opportunity of exciting and directing their force against some invasion of American liberty more momentous and alarming. But to this suggestion it was reasonably and successfully replied, that such an opportunity might never occur again; that Britain, warned by the past, would avoid sudden and startling innovations; that her policy would be, by multiplying posts and offices, and either bestowing them on her partisans or employing them to corrupt her antagonists, to increase her force pro-

[1] Walsh's *Appeal*.

portionally faster than the force of the patriotic party would increase by the growth of the American population; that she had latterly sent out as her functionaries a number of young men, who, marrying into provincial families of influence and consideration, had weakened the force of American opposition; and that *now* was the time to profit by the general irritation of the people and the blunders committed by Britain, in order to precipitate a collision which sooner or later was inevitable, and to prevent a seeming accommodation of the quarrel which would only deteriorate the interests of America.

The East India Company, confident of finding a market for their tea, reduced as it now was in price, freighted several ships to America with this commodity, and appointed consignees to receive and dispose of it. Some cargoes were sent to New York, some to Philadelphia, some to Charleston the metropolis of South Carolina, and some to Boston. The inhabitants of New York and Philadelphia prevailed with the consignees to disclaim their functions, and forced the ships to return with their cargoes to London. The inhabitants of Charleston unladed the tea, and deposited it in public cellars, where it was locked up from use and finally perished. At Boston, the consignees, who were the near kinsmen of Governor Hutchinson, at first refused to renounce their appointments [November 5]; and the vessels containing the tea lay for some time in the harbour watched by a strong guard of the citizens, who, from a numerous town-meeting, despatched peremptory commands to the ship-masters not to land their obnoxious cargoes. After much delay, the consignees, alarmed by the increasing violence of the people, solicited leave from the governor to retire, but were encouraged by him to persist. They proposed then to the people that the tea should be landed, and preserved in some public store or magazine; but this compromise was indignantly rejected. At length the popular rage broke through every restraint of order and decency. From the symptoms of its dangerous fervor the consignees fled in dismay to the Castle; while an assemblage of men, dressed and painted like Mohawk Indians, boarded the vessels and threw the tea into the ocean.[1] [December 16.] It was remarked with some surprise, that during the whole of this transaction the civil and military force of government, including the garrison of Castle William and several ships of war in the harbour, remained completely inactive. The governor, indeed, issued a proclamation forbidding the people to assemble in factious meetings. But the council, when their protection was implored by the consignees, refused to interfere at all in the matter; and though, after the outrage was committed, they condemned its perpetration, and invoked legal vengeance on all who had been engaged in it, the futility of this demonstration was obvious to every eye. To procure legal proof that would implicate even a single individual was notoriously impossible. The conduct of the East India Company, in assisting the policy of the British government, excited strong displeasure in America. This sentiment was manifested in a singular manner in Rhode Island, where a confederacy of respectable women united in resolutions to abstain from and discourage the use of tea procured from the East India Company. Learning that an inhabitant of the province had imported some of the obnoxious commodity, they requested him to return it; and he instantly complied.[2] Thus again

[1] See Note XXXII., at the end of the vol[illegible]
Annual Register for 1773 and *for* 1774. Gordon. Franklin's *Private Correspondence.*

was another notable scheme of the British government rendered completely abortive.

The people of Massachusetts were the more easily excited to the violence we have remarked by the disclosure which took place in the summer of the present year of the secret correspondence, formerly adverted to, of Hutchinson and some other kindred politicians with the British ministry. According to the defensive statement published by Franklin of his own share in this transaction, a person of character and distinction in England, whom he refused to name (perhaps the ex-governor Pownall),[1] after having repeatedly assured him that all the measures of the British government the most offensive to America had originated from, and indeed greatly fallen short of, the suggestions and solicitations addressed by native Americans to the British ministry, at length verified this statement by exhibiting a series of letters (how procured by himself was never explained) addressed to persons holding official situations in England, from Hutchinson, Oliver, and other individuals, representing all the popular transactions in America under the most irritating colors, and warmly pressing an alteration of the provincial constitutions, and the support of British prerogative by military power. Franklin, struck with surprise, as he affirmed, at this discovery, and indulging all the latitude of political passion, solicited and obtained leave to send the letters to Massachusetts, on condition that they should be communicated only to a few of the leading politicians of this province, and neither printed, copied, nor generally divulged. He declared that he considered a disclosure of the contents of these letters a debt he owed to his constituents, and the production of the original documents essential to the verification of his statement of their contents. How the letters reached, and whether by fair and honorable means (which is hardly possible), the hands of the individual from whom he received them, is left a matter of conjecture and uncertainty by the obscurity which still prevents that individual from being distinctly or satisfactorily recognized. Various persons were exposed to the suspicion of having purloined the letters; and a duel, originating in a dispute on this subject, having taken place between Whately, a London banker, brother of a former secretary of the treasury, and Temple, the deputy-governor of New Hampshire, Franklin, in order to prevent farther bloodshed, and exonerate innocent persons from suspicion, volunteered the avowal of his share in the transaction. His profession of having been actuated by a sense of duty to his countrymen in Massachusetts was sarcastically disputed by antagonists, who maintained, more plausibly than reasonably, that this sentiment was inconsistent with the condition by which he restricted, or rather attempted to restrict, the communication of the letters to a few individuals, and to withhold this important disclosure from the main body of his constituents. But the condition attached to the exhibition of the papers was prescribed to Franklin, and perhaps originated from an apprehension of provoking the populace of Boston to some act of violence against the person of Hutchinson, if the matter were suddenly blazed abroad.

Franklin was farther reproached by his antagonists with treachery, in prying into and disclosing the *private letters* (for they were not official de-

[1] Pownall was a more enterprising than scrupulous politician. About twenty years after the revolt of North America, he published a pamphlet exhorting the British government to encourage and assist the American colonies of Spain to emancipate themselves from the dominion of their parent state.

spatches) of individuals without their permission, and for the purpose of stimulating the resentment of the colonists against the British government, in whose service he himself at the time held an office of trust. In answer to this charge, he insisted that the correspondence of public officers relative to public affairs, and containing statements which formed the source of great public measures, was not a private, though it might be, as in the present case it had been, a secret transaction; that its secrecy was highly injurious both to Britain and America, inasmuch as the parent state was deceived by partial and clandestine representations; while the colonists, unacquainted with these calumnies, were unable to vindicate themselves, and, ignorant of the real source of the harsh measures recently employed against them, harboured against Britain a resentment more justly merited by a few individuals in America; and that he hoped, by disclosing the letters to the popular leaders, to induce them to employ their influence to moderate the displeasure of the people against the parent state. But in reality the policy of the British government was more the cause than the effect of the communications it received from its provincial functionaries; the popular leaders in Massachusetts were already informed of the general tenor of Hutchinson's correspondence with the British court; and Franklin's argument, were it as sound as it is plausible, would sanction that specious but pernicious axiom of casuistical morality, that upright intentions may justify dishonest actions, and the generosity of the proposed end extend the protection of its own glory to the character, however ambiguous, of the means pursued for its attainment. Yet that he really cherished the view which he professed, subtle and chimerical as it appears, is rendered probable by the fact, that for two years more he continued to hope and endeavoured to promote a reconciliation between Britain and America; and that during this period he repeatedly expressed, not merely indulgence, but approbation, of the conduct of his son, the royal governor of New Jersey, who was a stanch supporter of British prerogative, — a sentiment which he could not reasonably have entertained, if he had expected that the controversy between British prerogative and American liberty would terminate in a civil war.[1] It was farther defensively urged by Franklin, that copies of many letters which were intended to be secret, written both by himself and other friends of the Americans in England were procured and conveyed to Britain by the partisans of British prerogative in America; and however unsatisfactory to the pure, elevated, and inflexible requisitions of theoretical morality, this consideration will be allowed by all practical politicians, not indeed completely to exonerate Franklin from blame, but to suggest a forcible apology for his conduct. For it is, and I hope always will be, accounted a proposition repugnant to sense and honor, that any individual, however situated, can laudably, or even blamelessly, peruse and communicate the contents of letters which have passed between other living men not engaged in war with his country, and have reached his own hands by a channel which he declines to explain. Nothing but the blind rage or blinding casuistry of political passion could color even for a moment so extravagant a proposition. The controversy to which this affair gave rise was unnecessarily complicated by the question of whether the letters deserved to be regarded as private or official communications, — a point, comparatively speaking, of very little importance. The honor of the means by which they were procured, and

[1] See Note XXXIII., at the end of the volume.

the worth and honor of the ends to which they were applied, are the only questions deserving of regard.

Shortly after the letters were received in Boston, some expressions unguardedly or artfully dropped by one or two of the persons to whom they were imparted caused a rumor to arise of matters deeply interesting to the public weal which it was in the power of certain individuals to disclose. The real truth was distorted by mystery and alarm; the public mind became exceedingly agitated; and at length the assembly, interposing, demanded a disclosure of the letters, which were accordingly delivered up to them by the custodiers.[1] Possessed now of the testimony of Hutchinson's perfidy (for such was the light in which they viewed his conduct), they desired him to inform them if he acknowledged the authorship of the letters which purported to be his. He requested that they might be sent to him for examination; but the assembly declined to comply with his request, and deputed a committee of their own body to exhibit the letters to him; and to this deputation he acknowledged that he had written them. The assembly thereupon caused the letters to be made public, and, having passed resolutions [June 15] strongly condemnatory of Hutchinson and Oliver, transmitted a petition to the king complaining of these individuals for calumniating his subjects to his ministers, and praying him to remove them from their official situations in the province. This petition was presented by Franklin, as the provincial agent; and the cause was appointed to be tried before the privy council. Franklin assured the ministers that they were now presented with an opportunity of reëstablishing harmony between Britain and America, by a gracious reception of the complaints of the colonists, and sacrificing to their indignation the insidious counsellors by whom the international quarrel had been fomented; and from the language of the Earl of Dartmouth, successor of Lord Hillsborough, he was led for a while to hope that this conciliatory experiment would be attempted.

But Franklin had become the object of strong suspicion and dislike to the prevailing party in the British court and cabinet, who highly resented his sarcastic strictures in the newspapers upon their colonial policy, and were informed by their partisans in America that his letters to the popular leaders were replete with the most treasonable counsels and malicious instigations. Besides, the line of conduct which he recommended to the ministry on the present occasion was such as honor and shame alike forbade them to embrace. It was impossible that they should consent to punish two of their partisans for communications which they themselves had encouraged them to make, and had sanctioned by the corresponding measures they adopted. In truth, Hutchinson and Oliver had rather flattered than inspired the imperious disposition of the British court. After some delay, the petition of the Massachusetts assembly was discussed before the privy council [January 29, 1774]; when Wedderburn, the solicitor-general (afterwards Lord Loughborough), attending as the counsel for Hutchinson, discharged a torrent of insulting sarcasm and outrageous invective and ribaldry[2] against

[1] Some of the expressions in the letters were peculiarly calculated to create offence and irritation in America. Hutchinson expressed the most arrogant contempt for the popular leaders, and declared that the people in general, when not deluded by false alarms, equally despised them. Oliver, in suggesting a particular measure to the ministry, observed of it, that, "By such a step, *the game will be up with my countrymen.*"

[2] "This wily American," said Wedderburn, "has forfeited all the respect of societies and men. Into what companies will he hereafter go with an unembarrassed face, or the honest

the character and conduct of Franklin, whose venerable appearance and illustrious reputation could neither check the flow of the pleader's witty malice, nor deter the lords of the council from testifying by laughter and applause the entertainment which this unworthy and indecent scene afforded them. A more decorous and temperate harangue would have proved far more injurious to the cause and character of Franklin. But, as usual, intemperate attack produced indiscriminate vindication; and the partisans of American liberty were provoked to extol Franklin's conduct with unmerited encomium, because their antagonists had assailed it with disproportioned reprobation.[1] The discussion terminated by a judgment of the privy council acquitting Hutchinson and Oliver from blame and rejecting the petition of Massachusetts. On the following day, Franklin was dismissed by the British government from the office of postmaster-general of America. These proceedings, and especially the elaborate malignity of insult heaped upon a man whom they so highly admired and respected, sank deeply into the minds of the Americans. Another act of British power, that was directed with the most childish absurdity against the scientific repute of Franklin, awakened the liveliest derision and disdain in America. For the king shortly after, transported by the blindest abhorrence of the American philosopher for whom he had once professed esteem, actually caused the electrical *conductors* invented by Franklin to be removed from the palace of Buckingham House, and replaced by instruments of far less skilful construction and efficient capacity.[2]

But the triumph of Hutchinson was short. He had now become so generally hateful to his countrymen, that it was impossible for the British government, with the slightest regard to the interest of its own service, to retain him any longer as the representative of the king in Massachusetts. The strong measures, besides, which the government was provoked to embrace by the intelligence of the destruction of the East India Company's tea at Boston, required that a more vigorous and less odious hand should be employed in their execution. Hutchinson accordingly was commanded soon after to repair to England, professedly to communicate information to the ministers with regard to the state of the colonies. Along with Tryon, who was afterwards recalled from New York, and Carleton, the governor of Canada, he was desired by the cabinet to declare his opinion whether the Americans, in the last extremity, would venture to resist the arms of Britain. Hutchinson confidently predicted that they would either not fight at all, or at most offer no farther opposition than what a few troops could easily quell. Carleton protested that America might certainly be conquered, but that a considerable army would be necessary for this purpose; and that, for

intrepidity of virtue? Men will watch him with a jealous eye, and hide their papers from him. He will henceforth esteem it a libel to be called *a man of letters,—homo trium literarum.*"

[1] Some persons have even ventured to defend Franklin's conduct by assimilating his position to that of the minister of one of two belligerent states. But war had not yet arisen between Britain and America; and Franklin himself was a British officer as well as an American agent. If Athens had been at war with the other states of Greece, the virtue of Aristides would not have condemned nor Athenian wisdom rejected the project of Themistocles for surprising and capturing the Grecian fleet. Franklin's conduct will recall to some readers a remarkable passage in the life of Sir Henry Vane.

[2] Franklin's *Memoirs*. *Annual Register for* 1774. Gordon. Stuart's *Three Years in North America*. About a year after the insulting treatment of Franklin in England, Don Gabriel, one of the princes of the royal family of Spain, sent him a present of a version of Sallust which he had produced. Franklin, in acknowledging this mark of respect, took occasion to inform the prince that there was rising in America a powerful state, whose interest, he judged, would dictate a close and friendly connection with Spain. Franklin's *Private Correspondence*.

himself, he would not venture to march against New York or Boston with a smaller force than ten thousand men. Tryon declared that Britain would require large armies and long efforts to bring America to her feet; that her power was equal to any thing; but that *all* that power must be exerted in order *to put the monster in chains.* The representations of Hutchinson were the most congenial to the sentiments and the temper of the British government; and, unfortunately for England, they were corroborated by the kindred folly and ignorance of many British statesmen and officers. "The Americans are a degenerate race of Europeans, — they have nothing of the soldier in them," was the customary language of men who were destined by their own defeats to illustrate the valor which they depreciated, and who learned too late to consider the Americans as a regenerated race of Europeans, in whom the energy of freemen more than supplied the mechanical expertness of severely disciplined slaves. General Clarke, with an impudence equalled only by the absurdity of his language, declared in a company of learned men at London, and in the hearing of Dr. Franklin, that, with a thousand British grenadiers, he would undertake to march from one end of America to the other, and shamefully mutilate all the male inhabitants, partly by force and partly by a little persuasion. Another general officer asserted, in the House of Commons, that "*The Yankees* (a foolish nickname which now began to be applied to the Americans) *never felt bold.*" The speeches of other military officers in parliament, and of the prime minister, Lord North, conveyed ideas equally calculated to delude their countrymen and to inflame by contumely all the rage and courage which injustice and injury had already kindled in the Americans. "*Believe me,* my lords," said the Earl of Sandwich, first lord of the admiralty, in the House of Peers, "the first sound of a cannon will send the Americans a running as fast as their feet can carry them." Unfortunately for his country, he *was* believed. The extraordinary and injudicious delay and hesitation, which contributed to defeat the subsequent military operations of Britain in America, have been ascribed to these representations, and to the conviction they promoted, that only a distinct and certain view of their own danger was requisite to obtain from the Americans an abandonment of every pretension that could possibly induce a conflict with the force of Britain. The British government, and the nation in general, deluded by ignorance, prejudice, offended pride, and false views of interest, were now fully animated with that haughty spirit which precedes and produces disappointment and calamity; and the evil genius of England seemed to rise in almost every breast.[1] While the delusion lasted, Hutchinson was caressed by the court, and rendered so giddy by vain expectation, that, in letters to America, he announced his approaching elevation to a British peerage. A short time, however, sufficed to open the eyes of the ministry and the nation, so far at

[1] Even the administrators of British authority were constrained to acknowledge this, long before the termination of the contest. In 1778, Lord Carlisle, William Eden, and George Johnstone were appointed commissioners of the British crown for the pacification of revolted America. To this end, they (vainly) offered large concessions than America prior to her revolt had ever demanded; and Johnstone, in a letter to his friend Laurens, the president of the American Congress, urged him not to "follow *the example of Britain in the hour of her insolence.*" *Annual Register for* 1778.

Not less insolent and absurd were the language and conduct of the Spanish Cortes in 1810. "*I know not to what class of beasts the Americans belong:* such were the expressions heard and applauded in the Cortes, when the rights of the colonists were agitated in that assembly." Napier's *History of the Peninsular War.*

least as to render the folly and mischief of *his* counsels glaringly apparent. He was permitted thenceforward to hide his disgrace and the misery that preyed on his closing life in a retirement near London, undisturbed by ambitious prospect, and uncheered by a single ray of court favor. He lived to see Britain, to whose predominance he was so much devoted, involved in disgrace and disaster, and his native America irrecoverably alienated from her and wasted with fire and sword, by the conduct and policy which he had abetted; and died before the conclusion of the struggle, oppressed with a load of mortification, and heart-broken by the deaths of children whom he tenderly loved.[1]

Some attempts were made, about this period, to encourage the production of silk, and to promote the cultivation of the grape and the manufacture of wine in the Southern States of America. In the year 1772, a considerable quantity of fine silk was exported from Purysburg, in South Carolina, to England; and in the same year, St. Pierre, a Frenchman inhabiting that province, obtained from the society established at London for encouragement of the arts a gold medal for wine, the produce of his plantation, and from the Board of Trade a recommendation to the patronage of the Lords of the Treasury for his successful culture of silk and vines.[2]

In the year 1773, William Bartram, son of the great American botanist, who has already engaged our notice,[3] undertook, at the request of Dr. Fothergill, a Quaker and distinguished physician in London, an exploratory tour in Carolina, Georgia, and Florida; directed chiefly, though not exclusively, to the extension of botanical science. He afterwards published the details of his travels and observations, in a very interesting work.[4] It describes accurately and eloquently the scenery and natural productions of the regions visited by the author, and relates his personal adventures with much simplicity and elegance. It is copiously interspersed with fine and ardent expressions of devotional sentiment, derived from what is called natural (not revealed) religion, and of benevolent regard and even tender concern for the happiness of all living creatures. It contains, however, some passages in which thoughts and actions little redolent of piety or virtue are recorded with serene satisfaction or uncompunctious indifference. And yet the author professed the tenets and was (like his father) a member of the society of Quakers.

In the course of this year, there was extended to America the ramification of a singular religious sect, engendered by a coalition between some French fanatics who called themselves *prophets*, and a portion of the Quaker community of England. The separate association that ensued took the name of *The Shakers*; because they conceived themselves the depositaries of truths fitted by their awful grandeur and solemn importance to shake the human soul. A woman named Anne Lee, who was recognized as the spiritual mother of the society in England, and had been immured for some time as a lunatic in an English madhouse, escaping from her confinement, set sail now with some associates for America. The deliverance of the vessel that

[1] Eliot. Franklin's *Private Correspondence*. Dwight. The only dignity which Hutchinson obtained in England was conferred by the University of Oxford, which, on the 3d of July, 1776 (the day preceding the declaration of American independence), bestowed upon him, and upon Peter Oliver, the title of Doctor in Civil Law. *Catalogue of Graduates in the University of Oxford*, 1659–1782.

[2] *Annual Register for* 1772.

[3] Book X., Chap. II., *ante*.

[4] *Travels*, &c., by William Bartram.

conveyed her from the violence of a storm was ascribed by her followers to the exertion of her miraculous power; and when she died, some years after, she was declared by the American Shakers to have been "taken up out of the sight of the true believers." Of this society, which rapidly and extensively diffused its influence and multiplied its votaries, the principles seem to have been borrowed by derivation or exaggeration from the peculiar notions of the Quakers and the Methodists. One of the most respectable of their distinctive tenets was, that a dirty, slovenly, careless, or indolent person could not possibly be a true Christian. Hence, a regulation arose, that every member, male and female, of the society, must be invariably neat and clean, and constantly employed in some description of honest and moderate labor.[1]

A new college was founded, in the present year, in Virginia. This institution, though supported by several eminent scholars and philosophers, never attained a flourishing state, and chiefly claims our notice from the significant name it assumed of *Hampden-Sidney College*.[2]

Dr. John Ewing, a native of Maryland, who had acquired a high reputation by his lectures on natural philosophy in the University of Pennsylvania, and received the most flattering testimonies of honor and esteem from the University of Edinburgh and the corporations of the principal towns in Scotland, visiting Britain in 1773, was introduced to Lord North, to whom he predicted, with characteristic frankness, sagacity, and patriotism, the issue of the dispute with America, if the British persisted in their scheme of taxation.[3]

During the whole period of her controversy with Britain, America derived a continual increase of strength from domestic growth[4] and from the flow of European emigration. Her territories presented varieties of human condition and diversified attractions adapted to almost every imaginable peculiarity of human taste, — from scenes of peace and repose, to circumstances of romantic adventure and interesting danger, — from the rudeness, the silence, and solitude of the forest, to the refinements of cultivated life, and the busy hum of men in flourishing, populous, and improved societies, — from the lawless liberty of the back settlements, to the dominion of the most austerely moral legislation that ever prevailed among mankind. No complete memorial has been transmitted of the particulars of the emigrations that took place from Europe to America at this period; but (from the few illustrative facts that are actually preserved) they seem to have been amazingly copious. In the years 1771 and 1772, the number of emigrants to America from the North of Ireland alone amounted to 17,350, almost all of whom emigrated at their own charge; a great majority consisting of persons employed in the linen manufacture, or farmers, and possessed of some property which they converted into money and carried with them. Within the first fortnight of August, 1773, there arrived at Philadelphia three thousand five hundred emigrants from Ireland; and from the same document which has recorded this circumstance it appears that vessels were arriving every month, freighted with emigrants from Holland, Germany, and especially from Ire-

[1] Dwight's *Travels*. [2] Miller's *Retrospect*. [3] *American Quarterly Review*.

[4] The population of Connecticut, according to a census published by its provincial assembly, amounted this year to 191,392 white persons, and 6,464 blacks, — *Annual Register for* 1774, — an increase of about 50,000 souls, since the year 1763 (Appendix III., *ante*), in a province which received but few emigrants, and supplied a considerable emigration to other quarters of America.

land and the Highlands of Scotland. About seven hundred Irish settlers repaired to the Carolinas in the autumn of 1773; and, in the course of the same season, no fewer than ten vessels sailed from Britain with Scottish Highlanders emigrating to the American States. As most of the emigrants, and particularly those from Ireland and Scotland, were persons discontented with their condition or treatment in Europe,[1] their accession to the colonial population, it might reasonably be supposed, had no tendency to diminish or counteract the hostile sentiments towards Britain which were daily gathering force in America. And yet these persons, especially the Scotch, were in general extremely averse to an entire and abrupt rejection of British authority. Their patriotic attachment, enhanced as usual by distance from its object, always resisted and sometimes prevailed over their more rational and prudent convictions; and more than once, in the final struggle, were the interests of British prerogative espoused and supported by men who had been originally driven by hardship and ill usage from Britain to America. Among other emigrants doubtless cherishing little reverence for their native country, whom Britain continued to discharge upon her colonies, were numbers of convicted felons, who were conveyed in general to the States in which tobacco was cultivated, and labored during the allotted period of their exile with the negro slaves. Of these persons, the most abandoned characters generally found their way back to England; but many contracted improved habits, and remained in America. All enlightened and patriotic Americans resented as an indignity, and all the wealthy slave-owners detested as a political mischief, this practice of the parent state, — of which the last instance seems to have occurred in the course of the present year.[2] In England, many persons were so unjust and unreasonable as to make the conduct of their government in this respect a matter of insult and reproach to the Americans, — as if the production of crime were not a circumstance more truly disgraceful to a people than their casual and involuntary association with criminals.

A convention was held this year in Georgia, by Sir James Wright, the governor of the colony, with a numerous deputation of the chiefs of the Creek and Cherokee tribes, who willingly ceded to the British king several millions of acres of valuable land, in the most fertile and salubrious part of the country, for the payment of debts which they owed to European merchants who had traded with them. A transaction of very different character occurred at the same time in Virginia, where a war broke out with the Ohio Indians, in consequence of a series of reciprocal injuries, wherein the European colonists, if not the aggressors (which, however, there is reason to suppose they were), at least merited the reproach of exceeding their savage antagonists in the infliction of summary, indiscriminate, and disproportioned revenge. The Virginian government despatched a strong body of militia, under the command of Colonel Lewis, to oppose the enemy; and after a bloody engagement in the woods, in which the colonial troops repulsed the Indians, but with great difficulty, and the loss of several hundred men on their own side, the quarrel was adjusted and peace again restored.[3]

[1] "September 23, 1775. The ship Jupiter, from Dunstaffnage Bay, with two hundred emigrants on board, chiefly from Argyleshire, set sail for North Carolina; the men declaring that the oppressions of their landlords were such as they could no longer submit to." *Annual Register for* 1775. Many passages of similar import occur in the British journals at this epoch.

[2] Holmes. *Annual Register for* 1772, *for* 1773, and *for* 1774. Franklin's *Works*.

[3] Jefferson. Burk. Holmes Jefferson's account (by no means creditable to his own

CHAPTER IV.

Boston Port Bill — and other British Measures — their Effects in America. — Proposition of a General Congress. — Suffolk Resolutions. — Meeting of the first American Congress — its Proceedings. — Transactions in New England.— Proceedings of the British Ministry and Parliament. — Defensive Preparations in America. — Affair of Lexington. — The Americans surprise Ticonderoga and Crown Point. — Battle of Bunker's Hill. — Second American Congress — prepares for War — elects a Commander-in-chief. — George Washington. — Transactions in Virginia. — Progress of Hostilities. — American Invasion of Canada.

THE dispute between the mother country and her colonies had now attracted so much interest and attention in Europe, and the national spirit and pride of the English people were so much provoked by the undisguised defiance of an inferior and dependent state, that, even if it had been the wish, it was no longer in the power, of the king's ministers to overlook an open contravention of the sovereign authority, or to refrain from vindicating this prerogative with a rigor and energy proportioned to the affront it had received. In this position of the ministry and temper of the nation, the intelligence which was received of the recent events in America, and especially of the destruction of the tea at Boston, was communicated to both houses of parliament by a message from the king [March 7, 1774], in which the American colonists were reproached with attempting at once to injure the commerce and subvert the constitution of Great Britain. Although it was manifest, from the documents which accompanied the royal message, that the opposition by which the sale of the tea in America had been defeated was common to all the colonies, yet the ministers and a great majority of the parliament, exasperated at the peculiar violence displayed at Boston, determined to select this town as the sole or at least the primary object of legislative vengeance. It was reckoned that a partial blow might be dealt to America with much greater severity than could be prudently exerted in more extensive punishment; and it was, doubtless, expected that the Americans in general, without being irritated by personal suffering, would be struck with terror by the rigor inflicted on a town so long renowned as the bulwark of their liberties. Without even the decent formality of requiring the inhabitants of Boston to exculpate themselves, but definitively assuming their guilt, in conformity with the despatches of a governor who was notoriously at enmity with them, the ministers introduced into parliament a bill for suspending the trade and closing the harbour of Boston during the pleasure of the king. [March 14, 1774.] They declared that the duration of this severity would depend on the conduct of those on whom it was inflicted; for it would assuredly be relaxed, as soon as the people of Boston should make compensation for the tea that was destroyed, and otherwise satisfy the king of their sincere purpose to render due submission to his government. The bill, on its first introduction to the House of Commons, encountered little opposition; only a few members vaguely remarking that America was altogether in a very distempered condition, and that a malady so general and formidable demanded remedial applications, not partial and violent, but deli-

countrymen) of this Indian war in Virginia is rendered particularly interesting by the grand and solemn, yet touching and tender, harangue which he has preserved of Logan, an Indian chief, to Lord Dunmore, the governor of Virginia. Logan seems to have been the original whence Campbell derived the fine conception of Outalissi.

cate, temperate, and of diffusive efficacy; and though a more special and forcible opposition, exerted in long debates, attended the progress of the measure, yet was it carried in both houses of parliament without a single division in either.[1] It was deemed inexpedient by obstinate resistance to weaken a blow which the government, supported by a majority, was determined to inflict. Several Americans resident at London presented ineffectual petitions to both houses against the bill. Bollan, the agent for the council of Massachusetts, tendered a petition desiring to be heard at the bar of the House of Commons in behalf of the council, as well as of himself and other inhabitants of Boston, against a measure so injurious to their native country and its commerce. But the house refused even to permit his petition to be read; assigning a nice and subtle technical objection to the representative functions which he claimed, and which yet had been recently recognized in other parliamentary transactions. This proceeding gave an air of insolent injustice and of vindictive precipitation to the policy of the British government, and was heavily censured, not only by the partisans of America, but by all prudent and impartial men. It was rendered the more irritating to the people of Massachusetts by the recollection, that the same governor, whose charges they were now precluded from gainsaying, had been indulged in the utmost latitude of defence, when *his* conduct was arraigned and *they* were his accusers.

The Boston Port Bill was but the first step in the march of coercive policy which the British ministry were now determined to pursue. It was followed shortly after [April, 1774] by an act which introduced the most important alterations into the structure of the provincial government of Massachusetts, and bereaved this people of the most valued and considerable of the privileges which were assured to them by the charter granted after the Revolution of 1688. By this second legislative measure, it was enacted that the provincial council, heretofore elected by the representative assembly, should henceforth be appointed by the crown; that the royal governor should enjoy the power of nominating and removing judges, sheriffs, and all other executive officers whose functions possessed the slightest importance; that jurymen, hitherto elected by the freeholders and citizens of the several towns, should in future be nominated and summoned by the sheriffs; and that no *town-meetings* of the people should be convoked without a permission in writing from the royal governor, and no business or matter be discussed at those meetings beyond the topics specified and approved in the governor's license. The town-meetings (as they were called), against which the latter provision was directed, were not less valued by the Americans than dreaded by the British government, which regarded them as the nurseries of sedition and rebellion. Their institution was coeval with the first foundation of civilized society in New England, and their endurance had sustained only a short interruption during the reign of James the Second, and the tyrannical administration of his minister, Sir Edr[illegible] Andros; and while they presented the image, they partly supplied the place, of that pure democratical constitution which was originally planted in Massachu-

[1] Shortly after the bill was passed, there appeared in the English newspapers the following epigram: —

"TO THE MINISTRY.

"You 've sent a rod to Massachuset,
Thinking the Americans will buss it;
But much I fear, for Britain's sake,
That this same rod will prove a snake."

setts, and the modification of which by the second provincial charter that followed the British Revolution had always been to a numerous party among the colonists the subject of regretful or indignant remembrance. In losing this privilege, the people of New England beheld themselves stripped of the last remaining vestige of those peculiar advantages which were gained by the courage and virtue of their forefathers; and, in invading it, the British government palpably assimilated its own policy to that of a reign which had provoked successful revolt, and which was now universally reproached as tyrannical.

It was anticipated by the British ministers that tumults and bloodshed might probably ensue on the first attempt to carry the new measures into execution; and, not satisfied with the control which by the second statute they usurped over the administration of justice, they proceeded still farther to insure impunity to their functionaries by framing a third act of parliament [April 21, 1774], which provided, that, if any person were indicted for murder or for any other capital offence committed in aiding the magistracy of Massachusetts, it should be competent to the governor of this province to remit the accused party for trial either to another colony or to Great Britain. It was in vain that Edmund Burke, Colonel Barré,[1] and other liberal politicians (who had also ineffectually opposed the second statute) raised their warning voices against this measure of superfluous insult and severity, and appealed to the recent issue of Captain Preston's trial as a refutation of the suspicions by which American justice was impeached. "I regret your error," said an aged member of the House of Commons to his colleagues, "and I regret to see that it is partaken by the people. But you will soon be undeceived. If there ever was a nation running headlong to its ruin, it is this." Again were the ministers seconded, as before, by large majorities in both houses of parliament. Among other active supporters of the measure was Lord George Sackville Germaine, who, for his conduct at the battle of Minden in the preceding reign, was by the sentence of a court-martial branded with cowardice and incapacity and disabled from ever again exercising military command, but who had now become a favorite and minister of George the Third. The three acts were proposed and carried in such rapid succession as contributed greatly to enhance their inflammatory operation in America, where they were regarded as forming a complete system of tyranny. *By the first* (exclaimed the organs of popular opinion in all the American States), *thousands of innocent persons are robbed of their livelihood for the act of a few individuals; by the second, our chartered liberties are annihilated; and by the third, our lives may be destroyed with impunity.* The Boston Port Bill, says an American writer,[2] distinguished no less by the personal aid than by the literary celebrity which he conferred on the independence of his country, might rather have provoked rage than promoted union among the provinces; but the arbitrary mutilation of important privileges recognized by a solemn charter, decreed without a trial, and by the mere despotic will of the British parliament,

[1] "The Americans," said Colonel Barré, "may be flattered into any thing; but they are too much like yourselves to be driven. Have some indulgence for your own likeness; respect their sturdy English virtue." Yet Barré had voted for the Boston Port Bill. About a year after, Burke indignantly protested in the House of Commons, that "the faults which grow out of the luxuriance of freedom appear much more shocking to us than the base vices which are generated in the rankness of servitude."

[2] Ramsay.

convinced every political thinker in America that the cause of Massachusetts was substantially the cause of all the American commonwealths.

Towards the close of this memorable session of the British parliament, an act was passed with relation to the province of Canada, which merits our notice both on account of the policy and apprehensions which it discloses on the part of the royal cabinet, and of the effect which it produced in America, where now it was hardly possible for any measure of the supreme government to inspire confidence or afford satisfaction. It was commonly called *The Quebec Bill*, and the object of its enactments was at once greatly to enlarge, at the expense of the original American possessions of England, the territory of Canada, and totally to alter the civil and ecclesiastical constitution of this province. Both these changes, it was supposed, would be agreeable to the Canadians, and contribute to attach them to the British crown, or at least disincline them to any participation in the sentiments, councils, and enterprises of the ancient colonies of England. After the conquest of Canada, Britain, with the hope of consolidating all her American possessions by assimilation of their municipal systems, introduced into that province a representative assembly, trial by jury, and various other portions of the framework of English polity and jurisprudence. The church of England, too, was proclaimed the supreme ecclesiastical establishment, and invested with privileges which encroached on the prior possessions of the Roman Catholic clergy. It was now declared by the British ministry (and was certainly true) that these measures were neither equitable in themselves nor congenial to the tastes and habits of the Canadians; and by the Quebec Bill, a legislative council, of which the members were nominated by the king and held their offices during his pleasure, was substituted in place of a representative assembly; trial by jury (except in criminal cases) was abolished; all the previously superseded laws of France were reëstablished; and the Catholic hierarchy restored to all its pristine wealth, dignity, and privileges. It was generally conceived by the people of America that the chief object of this measure was to convert the Canadians into proper instruments in the hands of British power for reducing them to a state of slavery. As Britain had new-modelled the chartered government of Massachusetts, and claimed equal authority over all the other provinces, the Americans were apprehensive, that, in the plenitude of her imagined power, she would impose on them all, in their turns, a political constitution similar to that which she introduced into Canada.[1]

If intimidation was the effect which the cabinet of London hoped to produce by its new measures, either particularly in Massachusetts or generally in America, it reaped from them as much disappointment as had attended all its previous operations. It has been conjecturally maintained by some writers,[2] that a powerful army, despatched from England to Boston at this period, would have either completely overawed the people of New England, or provoked them to plunge abruptly into a revolt which the other provinces were not yet prepared to second. The effect of the measures that were actually embraced was, to produce an increase of irritation, union, and resolution throughout all America. That the new measures might be executed with suitable vigor, the government of Massachusetts, withdrawn

[1] *Annual Register for* 1774. Gordon. Franklin. Ramsay. Holmes. Pitkin.
[2] Botta, and others.

from Hutchinson, was conferred on General Gage, the commander-in-chief of the royal forces in North America, who, arriving at Boston [May 13, 1774], obtained from the citizens a reception of which the courtesy was a tribute partly to his plausible but insincere professions and deportment, and partly to the demerits and unpopularity of his predecessor. He addressed the provincial council in terms which led them to believe that he credited their assurance, that the accounts of the disorders in Massachusetts, conveyed by Hutchinson to England, were greatly exaggerated; and yet, at the same time, he himself transmitted to the British government a bitter invective against all the inhabitants and local authorities of the province. In the same vessel which brought the new governor, there arrived the first copy that was received of the Boston Port Bill, of which the provisions were discussed in a numerous town-meeting on the following day. It was recommended by this civic convocation, as the most certain means of rescuing the liberties of America from destruction, that all commercial intercourse whatever with Britain and the West Indies should be renounced by the American States till the repeal of the act. "The impolicy, injustice, inhumanity, and cruelty of this act," they declared, "exceed all our powers of expression. We therefore leave it to the just censure of others, and *appeal to God and the world*." Authenticated reports of this proceeding were instantly conveyed to all the American assemblies.

At each successive arrival of the recent parliamentary statutes from Britain, innumerable copies of them were printed and circulated with amazing despatch in every quarter of America; and, as the great bulk of the people were struck with a warm and resentful sense of the injuries inflicted on the inhabitants of Massachusetts, their indignation was progressively wound up to a most formidable pitch by the variety and repetition of provocation. The most diligent exertions, meanwhile, were employed by the leading politicians of America, from dissimilar motives, to cherish the general ardor, and yet restrain every partial and irregular ebullition of revolt. Timid and temporizing politicians, who either hoped or were determined never to embrace the extremity of a conflict with the arms of Britain, sought to recommend their pacific counsels without forfeiting their popularity, by freely condemning the conduct of the British government; while the more resolved and ardent patriots, clearly perceiving that the extremity of war was inevitable, sought to increase the zeal and number of their adherents by protracting an irritating controversy, and to consolidate the strength of the American communities by rendering the common sentiments with which they were inspired subservient to a federal union. At Philadelphia, a liberal contribution was made for the relief of such of the poorer inhabitants of Boston as might be deprived of their livelihood by the consequences of the Port Bill. In Virginia, a strong impression was produced by a pamphlet, composed and published by Thomas Jefferson, entitled *A Summary View of the Rights of British America*. This performance its author designed as an exposition to the British monarch of the wrongs inflicted on America and the sort of redress she would demand. "Open your breast, Sire," he says, addressing the king, "to liberal and expanded thought. It behooves you to think and act for your people. The great principles of right and wrong are legible to every reader; to peruse them requires not the aid of many counsellors. The whole art of government consists in the art of being honest." The Virginian House of Burgesses resolved that the

first of June, the day on which the operation of the Port Bill was to commence, should be set apart by the members as a day of fasting, humiliation, and prayer, in order *devoutly to implore the divine interposition to avert the heavy calamity which threatened destruction to their civil rights, and the evils of a civil war; and to give them one heart and one mind firmly to oppose, by all just and proper means, every injury to American rights.*[1] The Earl of Dunmore, a man whose rashness, arrogance, and incapacity rendered him a very unfit guardian of the interests of Britain in circumstances so arduous and perplexing, had been removed from the government of New York, which he held for a while, and was appointed governor of Virginia, where he succeeded the popular and lamented Lord Botetourt. On the publication of the foregoing resolution, he dissolved the provincial assembly; but previous to their separation, eighty-nine of the members signed a declaration, in which they protested, "that an attack made upon one of our sister colonies to compel submission to arbitrary taxes is an attack made on all British America, and threatens ruin to the rights of all, unless the united wisdom of the whole be applied." They also recommended to the committee of correspondence, already established in Virginia, to propose to the respective committees in the other colonies the appointment of deputies from all the American States to meet *annually in general congress*, in order to watch over the united interest of America, and to deliberate upon and ascertain the measures best calculated to promote it. "A tender regard," they significantly added, "for the interests of our fellow-subjects, the merchants and manufacturers of Great Britain, prevents us from going farther at this time; most earnestly hoping that the unconstitutional principle of taxing the colonies without their consent will not be persisted in, thereby to compel us, against our will, to avoid all commercial intercourse with Britain." At New York, the numbers and activity of the Tory party restrained the assembly and the people at large from publicly expressing their sentiments with regard to the treatment of Massachusetts; but Sears, M'Dougall, and other popular leaders, transmitted to their friends at Boston the strongest assurances of sympathy and support.

On the day when the operation of the Boston Port Bill was appointed to commence [June 1], all the commercial business of the capital of Massachusetts was concluded at noon, and the harbour of this flourishing town was closed, — till the gathering storm of the Revolution was to reopen it. At Williamsburg, in Virginia, the day was devoutly consecrated to the religious exercises recommended by the assembly. At Philadelphia it was solemnized by a great majority of the population with every testimonial of public grief; all the inhabitants, except the Quakers, shut up their houses; and after divine service, a deep and ominous stillness reigned in the city. In other parts of America it was also observed as a day of mourning; and the sentiments thus widely awakened were kept alive and exasperated by the distress to which the inhabitants of Boston were reduced by the continued operation of the Port Bill, and by the fortitude with which they endured it. The rents of the landholders in and around Boston now ceased or were greatly diminished; all the wealth vested in warehouses and wharves was rendered unproductive; from the merchants was wrested the com-

[1] "With the help of Rushworth [meaning, doubtless, Rushworth's *Collection of Documents relative to the Civil War between Charles the First and his People*], whom we rummaged for the revolutionary precedents of the Puritans of that day, we cooked up a resolution, — somewhat modernizing their phrases." Jefferson *apud* Tucker

merce they had reared, and the means alike of providing for their families and paying their debts; the artificers employed in the numerous crafts nourished by an extensive commerce shared the general hardship; and a great majority of that class of the community who earned daily bread by their daily labor were deprived of the means of support. But, animated still by that enduring and dauntless spirit of freedom which had been the parent principle of the New England communities, the inhabitants of Boston sustained the pressure of this calamity with inflexible fortitude. Their virtue was cheered by the sympathy, and their sufferings were mitigated by the generosity, of the sister colonies. In all the American States contributions were made for their relief. Corporate bodies, town-meetings, and provincial conventions, from all quarters, transmitted to them letters and addresses, applauding their conduct and exhorting them to perseverance.[1]

Although republican government was neither established nor even as yet openly affected in America, the prospect of it was beginning to dawn on the minds of men, and to educe that public spirit which no other form of civil polity is equally qualified to inspire. Among other erroneous calculations of the British ministers, they had expected that the Boston Port Bill would prove a source of jealousy and disunion within the province of Massachusetts, by scattering among the neighbouring towns the benefits of all the commerce that was previously confined to the metropolis. But this policy was regarded with a generous disdain in Massachusetts, and produced only increased union and firmness of purpose among her people. The inhabitants of Marblehead offered to the Boston merchants the use of their harbour, wharves, and warehouses, together with their personal services in lading and unlading goods, free of all expense. The citizens of Salem concluded a remonstrance against the British measures, addressed to General Gage, in this honorable and patriotic strain: — "By shutting up the port of Boston, some imagine that the course of trade might be turned hither, and to our benefit; but nature, in the formation of our harbour, forbids our becoming rivals in commerce with that convenient mart; and even were it otherwise, we must be lost to every idea of justice, and dead to all the feelings of humanity, could we indulge one thought of raising our fortunes on the ruins of our suffering neighbours." A great, though hitherto dependent country, of which the inhabitants thus resolutely withstood the power of the parent state, and approved themselves incapable alike of being intimidated by danger, impelled by distress, or seduced by interest, to a desertion of the cause of liberty, was ripe for national independence. The public agitation was not a little increased by the publication of another pamphlet written by Jefferson, in which sentiments, approaching, if not amounting, to assertion of independence, were expressed with a fearless vigor and distinctness that greatly endeared the author to his countrymen, and caused him to be included in an act of attainder against certain of the leading patriots of America, which was introduced into one of the houses of the British parliament, but suppressed by the course of events, which recommended more cautious policy.

In the midst of the ferment thus renewed in America, the assembly of Massachusetts, which had been adjourned from Boston to Salem by General

[1] Both on this and on other occasions, expressions of sympathy and encouragement, and even more substantial marks of friendship, were conveyed to the Americans from their friends in Britain. See Note XXXIV., at the end of the volume.

Gage [June 7], revived a project which formerly emanated from its councils, and the resumption of which we have seen recently suggested by the assembly of Virginia. It was resolved, that a general congress, or convention of committees delegated by all the North American States, was highly expedient, and, indeed, urgently necessary, for the purpose of concerting proper measures for the recovery and establishment of the just rights and liberties of the Americans, and for "the restoration of that union and harmony between Great Britain and the colonies, most ardently desired by all good men." In prosecution of this resolve, a committee of five of the most distinguished patriots of Massachusetts was appointed to meet with the committees that might be delegated by other provinces, at Philadelphia, in the month of September; and authenticated reports of these proceedings were transmitted from Salem to all the representative assemblies in America. The necessity, or at least the advantage, of the proposed congress was universally acknowledged by the friends, more or less ardent and determined, of American liberty; and as these formed everywhere the great bulk of the population, the measure originated by Massachusetts was gradually adopted by every colony from New Hampshire to South Carolina;—that is, by twelve of the existing North American States; Georgia, the thirteenth and youngest, not yet taking an active part in the political transactions, which, nevertheless, she watched with no indifferent eye. In several of the States, the royal governors endeavoured to prevent the election of deputies to the congress, by refusing to convoke the assemblies; but in all these cases the inhabitants formed provincial congresses, by which deputies to the Continental Congress were elected. When the resolve to appoint deputies was carried in the assembly of South Carolina, a proposition was introduced immediately after by some of the members, for instructing the delegates to what point it was admissible for them to pledge the concurrence of the province in the general measures to which its accession might be invited. John Rutledge warmly combated this proposition, insisting, that, unless the delegates were unshackled by restraint, and suffered to exercise their judgments with manly freedom, their power of serving the country would be inadequate to the exigencies of the pending crisis; and when the members around him, rather subdued by his energy than aroused to partake it, anxiously inquired, "What ought we to do, then, with these delegates, if they make a bad use of their power?" he replied, with his usual decision and impetuosity, "*Hang them.*" The commissions or instructions, however, which were communicated to the respective committees of delegates by the provinces which they severally represented, directed their attention merely to the reëstablishment of the rights and liberties of America as a colonial possession of Britain, and invested them ostensibly with no other function but that of deliberating, and reporting the counsels matured by their united deliberations. But all the ardent friends of America, all the partisans of Britain, and all, in short, except those whose penetration was obstructed by divided hope and purpose, plainly perceived that the formation of a general deliberative council for America at a crisis like the present, as it was an essential requisite, was also a bold and deliberate approximation, to united revolt.

General Gage had now, by an imprudently overstrained exertion of the high powers intrusted to him by the British government, rendered himself nearly as odious to the people of Massachusetts as any of the preceding

governors of this province. Soon after his arrival, two regiments of infantry, with a park of artillery, were landed at Boston, and encamped on the common; and this armament was gradually reinforced by sundry regiments from Ireland, New York, Halifax, and Quebec. Gage was desirous of having barracks erected for the accommodation of his troops; but even among the numerous laborers who were deprived of the means of support by the operation of the Port Bill, not one could be found willing to accept the governor's offers of employment. Resenting the popular odium to which they found themselves exposed, the soldiers retorted by insolence of behaviour, and even by acts of violence, against various individuals who had signalized themselves by the warmth or steadiness of their opposition to British policy; and Isaiah Thomas, a patriotic printer, whom Hutchinson had ineffectually prosecuted, was now constrained to remove by night his printing-press from Boston by the threats and preparations of the soldiers to destroy it. The provincial committee of correspondence, having revived and extended the ancient non-importation agreement,[1] bestowed on their association the title of *A Solemn League and Covenant*, — a name of evil omen to British monarchy, and which provoked Gage to issue a proclamation reprobating the compact as illegal and even treasonable. He took occasion at the same time to warn the people against *religious hypocrisy*, — an insinuation which was resented as an insult to the whole province. Daily some additional instance occurred of the determined purpose of the inhabitants to obstruct the views and recent arrangements of the British government. The grand and petty juries, summoned to attend the courts of law and perform their important functions, firmly refused to serve under a constitution which they denounced as a tyrannical violation of the provincial charter; and the judges, who dared not venture to fine or even censure them, assumed the right of deciding causes without the intervention of a jury, — a proceeding which served only to increase the general aversion and impatience at the existing condition of things. In some places, the people assembled in numerous throngs, and so completely filled the court-houses and blocked up every avenue to them, that neither the judges nor their attendants could obtain admission; and when the sheriffs commanded them to make way for the court, they answered, "that they knew no court independent of the ancient laws of their country, and none other would they acknowledge." They would submit to a suspension of regular government, rather than permit the streams of justice to flow in the new channel prescribed by the recent acts of parliament, or reconduct them forcibly in the old one sanctioned by their charter.

The jealousy excited by successive arrivals of British troops at Boston was increased by the position of a British guard on the peninsular avenue called Boston Neck, and by the diligence with which the troops were employed in repairing and manning the fortifications at that entrance of the town. It was with the utmost difficulty that the popular leaders restrained the explosion of an immediate revolt throughout the province, on the discovery that Gage had despatched a body of the troops during the night to

[1] Botta asserts, that among the most eager promoters of the non-importation agreement in America were some hypocritical knaves, who monopolized the profits arising from a clandestine importation of the commodities thus excluded from open and general commerce. But he has not thought fit to support his statement by citing any proof either of the reality of such practices or of the extent to which they were carried. It is undeniable, indeed, that among the Americans (as doubtless among every people that has undergone the ordeal of a revolution), some persons, who before the sword was drawn were the most hot-brained and hot-mouthed partisans of their country's cause, proved in the hour of trial men of faint hearts and mean souls.

Charlestown [September 1], near Boston, and had seized all the gunpowder in the arsenal at that place. To gratify and yet regulate the popular sentiment, and to prevent the inhabitants of this province from *breaking the general line of American opposition by rushing forward precipitately to premature conflict* (such was the language and the counsel of the more cautious politicians of Pennsylvania), town-meetings in utter disregard of British law were held in various parts of Massachusetts, and from them the counsels of a vigorous and yet prudent preparation for the extremity of civil war were with more or less disguise addressed to the people. Gage threatened to disperse these meetings with his troops; but his threats were contemned and his power defied. The selectmen of the towns assured him that he mistook the meaning of the act of parliament with regard to town-meetings; that it prohibited only the fresh convocation of such assemblies; and that those which he now threatened to disperse had not been so convoked, but were held in virtue of adjournments decreed by meetings which had been legally convoked prior to the parliamentary prohibition.

The most remarkable demonstration at this period occurred in an assembly of the inhabitants of the county of Suffolk [September 6], by which, among many other spirited resolutions, it was declared,[1] "that *no obedience is due from this province to either or any part of the recent acts of parliament*, but that they should be rejected as the attempts of a wicked administration to enslave America." This assembly farther declared, that the decrees of judges acting in submissive conformity to the recent violation of the provincial constitution were entitled to no respect whatever; and that, to obviate the inconvenience attending a suspension of justice, it was now the patriotic duty of creditors to exercise forbearance, and of debtors to fulfil their engagements with all possible diligence. They recommended to all collectors of taxes, and other officers having public money in their hands, to retain it until the government of the province should be placed on a constitutional basis, and to their countrymen at large a prompt and strict attention to their duties as militia-men, — adding, that, for themselves, they were determined to act merely on the defensive, so long as such conduct could be justified by reason and the principles of self-preservation, *but not a moment longer*. They concluded by exhorting the people to avoid all riot and disorder, and, by a steady, manly, uniform, and persevering opposition, to convince their enemies, that, in a contest so important, in a cause so solemn, the conduct of the Americans should be "such as to merit the approbation of the wise, and the admiration of the brave and free, of every age and of every country." These resolves, which in deliberate boldness exceeded any that had yet been embraced in America, were immediately forwarded to the Continental Congress now assembled, and were explicitly sanctioned by this great American council.[2]

On the 5th of September, the general congress, elected by the twelve

[1] These resolutions were composed by Dr. Joseph Warren, who afterwards fell at Bunker's Hill. They commenced with the following preamble: — "Whereas the power, but not the justice, the vengeance, but not the wisdom, of Great Britain, which of old persecuted, scourged, and exiled our fugitive parents from their native shores, now pursues us, their guiltless children, with unrelenting severity; and whereas this *then* savage and uncultivated desert was purchased by the toil and treasure, or acquired by the valor and blood, of those our venerable progenitors; to us they bequeathed the dear-bought inheritance; to our care and protection they consigned it; and the most sacred obligations are upon us to transmit the glorious purchase, unfettered by power, unclogged with shackles, to an innocent and beloved offspring."

[2] *Annual Register for* 1774 and *for* 1775. Gordon. Burk. Eliot. Bradford. Garden's *Anecdotes*. Ramsay. Belknap. Pitkin. Holmes. *Memoir of Isaiah Thomas*, in the *Archæologia Americana*. Tucker's *Life of Jefferson*.

oldest and most powerful States of America, assembled at Philadelphia. "Such," said the British statesman, Edmund Burke, at the time, "has been the unhappy effect of the measures pursued, perhaps somewhat too avowedly, and for that reason the less wisely, for reducing America by division, that those twelve colonies, clashing in interests, frequently quarrelling about boundaries and many other subjects, differing in manners, customs, religion, and forms of government, with all the local prejudices, jealousies, and aversions incident to neighbouring states, are now led to assemble by their delegates in a general diet, and taught to feel their weight and importance in a common union." Peyton Randolph, of Virginia, was chosen president of the assembly, which was forthwith organized for the transaction of business with all the formalities of a regular legislature. In this assembly, which consisted of fifty-five members, the wealth, the talent, the spirit of the Americans, — all the particulars, in short, that command the respect and constitute the character and force of a nation, — were justly and fully represented. In point of the number of their deputies, the States were not equally represented; and as their relative importance was not accurately known, it was arranged that the representatives of each province should give one single vote upon every question discussed by the congress.[1] It was farther determined that the meetings of the congress should be held with closed doors, and that not a syllable of its transactions should be published except by order of a majority of the States. This judicious regulation, among other advantageous results, withheld from public view every symptom of doubt or divided purpose and opinion among the members of the congress. The most eminent and respected citizens of the various colonies were now for the first time assembled together. Known to each other by reputation and correspondence, but personally unacquainted; conscious that the eyes of their agitated countrymen, together with the rising expectation and interest of Europe, were earnestly fixed upon them, and that the liberties of three millions of people and the destiny of the greatest commonwealth in the world were staked on the wisdom and vigor of their conduct, — they were deeply and even painfully impressed with the solemn responsibility that attached to the functions they had undertaken. A long and embarrassing silence that followed the organization of the assembly was broken by Patrick Henry, who, with calm yet earnest and majestic eloquence, depicted his country's wrongs, and rekindled in his colleagues the ardor and emulation which had been for a while suspended, not by mean timidity, but by a generous awe and profound conception of the grand and swelling scene, of which the conduct and issue reposed on their present deliberations. The debates and other transactions of the congress were now conducted with a happy mixture of firmness, prudence, talent, and despatch. The utmost credit and respect were imparted to their resolves by a unanimity chiefly the fruit of concessions made with profound policy by the more ardent and (in principle) uncompromising partisans of liberty, who already cleaved to the purpose of American independence with fixed and undiverted aim.[2] Nevertheless, some concessions were extorted or dexterously

[1] *The States United and the States Separate* was a favorite expression of Samuel Adams, and often delivered by him as a toast at public and private entertainments.

[2] The conduct of Samuel Adams on the present occasion was thus described by Galloway, an American, who at first espoused the cause of his country, and was one of the representatives of Pennsylvania in this congress, but, after the disasters which befell the American arms in the close of the year 1776, fell off to the cause of Britain. "Samuel Adams eats little, drinks little,

obtained from the other party in the assembly; and in certain of their proceedings we recognize an industrious zeal to inflame the spirits and augment the numbers of the opponents of British prerogative, exerted at the expense of a departure from the strict line of candor and integrity. But when was it seen that even the most meritorious party, in a great political quarrel, uniformly bounded its exertions within the limits of honor and moderation; accounted truth and virtue dearer than success, or even equally dear; or refrained from indulging and fomenting that propensity, peculiarly incident to political strife, which prompts its partakers to impute every possible and imaginable depravity to their adversaries? So equally were the talents requisite to the discharge of their functions distributed among the members of this congress, that the leading orators invariably proved, and indeed acknowledged themselves, inferior in the arts of written composition to their less eloquent colleagues.[1]

The congress having determined, in opposition to the wishes of the more ardent party, to restrict their attention to such American grievances as had been inflicted subsequently to the year 1763, proceeded to frame and publish a Declaration of the Rights of America; a memorial to all their American countrymen; an address to the king, and one to the inhabitants of Great Britain; a letter to the people of Canada; and a variety of other declarations, resolves, counsels, and remonstrances, — in the composition of which Richard Henry Lee, John Jay (who espoused the cause of his country with all the ardor of youth, while the dignity and gravity of his deportment gave him the influence of riper years), and Philip Livingston particularly distinguished themselves. Livingston was the inheritor of a name highly renowned in the church of Scotland, and which was destined to heighten and enlarge its honorable lustre in America. The congress asserted in those writings all the claims and rights which we have already so frequently particularized, and demanded the repeal of every statute by which those rights were invaded. To the king they appealed as a sovereign whose true interest and glory were inseparable from the liberty and happiness of which his ministers were attempting to bereave them. To the people of Britain[2] they earnestly vindicated the noble value which they attached to a full share in the system of the British constitution, and represented the danger portended to the whole system by the extinction of

sleeps little, thinks much, and is most indefatigable in the pursuit of his object. It was this man, who, by his superior application, managed at once the factions in congress at Philadelphia and the factions of New England." Galloway's *Historical and Political Reflections on the Rise and Progress of the American Rebellion*, published in England in 1780. Of Samuel Adams says Hutchinson, "such is the obstinacy and inflexible disposition of the man, that he can never be conciliated by any office or gift whatever." A writer in the *American Quarterly Review* thus panegyrically characterizes Samuel Chase, of Maryland, the contemporary and political associate of Adams: — "He was the Samuel Adams of Maryland, *impiger, inexorabilis*." While Hancock and others, with mixed sentiment, aspired to the character of leaders of the congress, Samuel Adams, with single eye, studied and was content to be its soul.

[1] Patrick Henry, in particular, was obliged to resign to others the task of composing the resolves and declarations which his own eloquence had elicited. When he was asked, on his return to Virginia, whom he thought the greatest man in congress, he answered, "If you speak of eloquence, Mr. Rutledge, of South Carolina, is by far the greatest *orator*; but if you speak of solid information and sound judgment, Washington is, unquestionably, the greatest *man* on that floor."

[2] The address to the British people thus commenced: — "Friends and fellow-subjects: When a nation, led to greatness by the hand of liberty, and possessed of all the glory that heroism, munificence, and humanity can bestow, descends to the ungrateful task of forging chains for her friends and children, and, instead of giving support to freedom, turns advocate for slavery and oppression, there is reason to suspect she has either ceased to be virtuous, or been extremely negligent in the appointment of her rulers."

liberty, its vital principle, in so large and flourishing a department of the empire. "Place us," they declared, "in the situation in which we were at the close of the last war, and our former harmony will be restored." To the Americans, among other grievances, they enumerated the late Quebec Bill, which they denounced as a wicked attempt to establish the Romish faith and a model of tyranny within the British empire, for the gratification of a French colony recently conquered at the expense of the blood and treasure of the ancient colonies of Britain. Yet, in their letter to the Canadians, they endeavoured to provoke the discontent of this people by the most plausible and ingenious comments on the Quebec Bill; assuring them that the restored system of French law to which they were attached could not possibly be administered to their satisfaction by English functionaries; and urging them to make common cause with the British Americans, and elect deputies to the Continental Congress. Similar invitations were addressed to the colonies of St. John's, Nova Scotia, Georgia, and the Floridas. The congress also framed an agreement for the strictest abstinence from all commercial intercourse whatever with Britain, which they warmly recommended to the universal adoption of their countrymen; with the additional advice, that the names of all persons rejecting or violating the agreement should be proclaimed in the newspapers, as enemies to the rights of America. With willing conformity to the instructions of many of their constituents, they reprobated the slave-trade as a practice equally injurious and dishonorable to America, and urged an instant and entire dereliction of farther importation or purchase of slaves.

During the whole session of the congress, a constant communication was maintained by expresses between Boston and Philadelphia. Apprized, by letters from the Massachusetts committee of correspondence, of the operations of General Gage in surrounding Boston with fortifications and intercepting its intercourse with the country, the congress first addressed a letter to the general, requesting him to desist from such measures, and then voted a resolution, approving the resistance of the inhabitants of Massachusetts to the late acts of parliament, and declaring, that, if a forcible execution of these acts should be attempted, "*in such case all America ought to support Massachusetts in her opposition.*" They recommended, notwithstanding, to the people of that province a demeanour guardedly peaceable towards Gage and his troops, and a firm perseverance in the line they had adopted of *acting on the defensive*. They declared, at the same time, that all persons accepting or obeying authority conferred by the statutes which violated the charter of Massachusetts "ought to be held in abhorrence by all good men, and considered as the wicked tools of that despotism which is preparing to destroy those rights which God, nature, and compact have given to America." Yet, in this and all the other compositions which issued from the congress, an extraordinary loyalty to the king, and a vehement solicitude for the restoration of ancient harmony with Great Britain, were repeated in professions, certainly more politic than sincere on the part of many of the members, who had long regarded a peaceful accommodation of the quarrel as impossible.

Of the debates which occurred within the walls of the congress no complete or authentic report was preserved; but, from some detached particulars that have been transmitted, it appears that the probability and the consequences of a war with Britain were deliberately discussed. On one occa-

sion, when some of the more scrupulous and temporizing party endeavoured to moderate the fervor of their colleagues by reminding them that the British fleets would find little difficulty in battering and destroying all the seaport towns of America, Christopher Gadsden, of South Carolina, thus replied to the alarming suggestion: — "Our seaport towns, Mr. President, are composed of brick and wood. If they are destroyed, we have clay and timber enough to rebuild them. But, if the liberties of our country are destroyed, where shall we find the materials to replace them?" An estimate was made by the congress of the total population of the twelve provinces which its members represented, and which, on a very moderate computation, were reckoned to contain 3,026,678 free inhabitants. It is impossible to peruse the recorded transactions of this congress, without being impressed with the highest admiration both of the firm and elevated tone, and of the energetic and elegant diction, in which the rights and the purposes of America are expressed. Lord Chatham declared, that, notwithstanding his ardent admiration of the free states of antiquity, the master-spirits of the world, he was constrained to acknowledge, that, in solidity of reasoning, force of sagacity, and wisdom of conduct, the American congress was second to no human assembly of which history has preserved a memorial. After a session of eight weeks, the congress decreed its own dissolution [October]; but not without bequeathing the advice that another congress should be held on the 10th of May in the ensuing year, at Philadelphia, unless the redress of American grievances were previously obtained; and that all the colonies should elect deputies as soon as possible, to be in readiness to form the new congress, if events should render its convocation necessary or expedient.

The counsels and resolves of the Continental Congress obtained the cordial sanction and acquiescence of the provincial congresses and legislative assemblies of all the States except New York, whose assembly, unexpectedly, declined to recognize them. In this province, the unequal distribution of property tended to foster an aristocratic spirit very remote from the general taste and temper elsewhere prevalent in North America. The city of New York had long been the head-quarters of the British troops maintained in this quarter of the empire; and many of the oldest and wealthiest families in the province were connected with persons of rank, influence, and Tory principles in Great Britain. Hence, the party attached there to the royal government was peculiarly distinguished by its numbers and other elements of social consideration. Yet the apparent secession of this province from the American cause on the present occasion was much more prejudicial to the British government, by which its importance was greatly overrated,[1] than to the other American States, which, though displeased, were no way daunted or spirit-stricken by the occurrence. The British government was continually deluded by its Tory friends in America. The most stanch and zealous of these partisans customarily exaggerated every trifling instance of success, in order to illustrate the value of their own services; while others of them, in whom patriotic attachment was at bottom much stronger than Tory predilections, long continued to oppose and reprobate every approach of their countrymen to that revolt, which, when no longer avoidable, they

[1] The British ministers, says Ramsay, were confirmed in their haughtiest purposes by the seeming defection of New York from the cause of her sister colonies. "They flattered themselves, that, when one link of the continental chain gave way, it would be easy to make an impression on the disjointed extremities."

themselves partook. In all the other provinces there was demonstrated for the congress a degree of respect and deference which seemed to invest it with the character more of a legislative body than a council; and its recommendations were as generally and punctually carried into effect as the laws of the most respected government and best regulated state have ever been. Every particular in its language and tone that savored of determined resistance was copied and reëchoed with zealous homage, and even enhanced by the exaggeration which is incident to imitators. Shortly after its recommendation of abstinence from all commercial intercourse with Britain was published, a brig, laden with tea, arrived from London at Annapolis, in Maryland. Alarmed by the rage and menaces of the people, the shipmaster implored the counsel and protection of Charles Carroll of Carrollton, an eminent lawyer, fast rising into a patriotic distinction which every added year of his long life deservedly enhanced, who advised him to burn the vessel and cargo, as the surest means of allaying the popular excitement. This counsel was followed; the sails were set, the colors displayed, and the brig burned amidst the acclamations of the multitude.

In Massachusetts, the aspect of public affairs became daily more inauspicious to peace and reconcilement. The semblance, indeed, of subordination to the British crown was maintained; but so hollow and unsubstantial was this semblance, that every attempt of the governor to exert his authority served only to show how withered and decayed were the bands which yet in theory connected the colonists and their domestic institutions with the royal prerogative. Gage had issued writs for the convocation of an assembly at Salem, on the 5th of October; but, alarmed by the temper of the people and the increasing spread of discontent, he judged it expedient to countermand the writs by a proclamation suspending the meeting of the assembly. The legality of this proclamation, however, was generally denied in Massachusetts; and the new representatives, to the number of ninety, assembling on the day originally appointed, and neither the governor nor any substitute attending, they resolved themselves into a provincial congress, and soon adjourned to Concord. Here they made choice of Hancock to be their president, and appointed a committee to present to the governor a remonstrance against all his recent measures, concluding with an earnest request that he would desist from the construction of the fortress which he was erecting at the entrance of Boston, "*and restore that place to its neutral state.*" Gage, who, though capable of dissimulation, possessed a hotter temper than befitted his elevated station and difficult predicament, took fire at this language; he expressed the warmest displeasure at the supposition of danger from English troops to any but the enemies of England; and desired the committee to convey to the congress his warning counsel that they should hasten to desist from their illegal proceedings. Disregarding his admonition and defying his power, the provincial congress adjourned to Cambridge, where, relieved from all doubts of the general support of America, they embraced and pursued measures of unexampled boldness and vigor. They appointed a committee to prepare a plan for the immediate defence of the province; gave orders for the enlistment of a number of the inhabitants to be in readiness, *at a minute's warning*, to appear in arms; elected three general officers (Preble, Ward, and Pomroy) to command these *minute-men* and the provincial militia, in case of their being called to active service; and appointed a council of safety and a

committee of supplies. One of the secretaries whom they elected was Benjamin Lincoln, afterwards a general in the American service, and highly distinguished as a gallant and indefatigable partisan of his country's cause. Reassembling after an adjournment of a few weeks [November], the same congress, sensible that their countrymen applauded their measures, and that their constituents were prepared to yield implicit obedience to their decrees, passed an ordinance for the equipment of twelve thousand men to act on any emergency, and for the enlistment of a fourth part of the militia as minute-men; appointed two additional general officers, Thomas and Heath; and sent delegates to New Hampshire, Rhode Island, and Connecticut, to request the coöperation of these provinces in completing an army of twenty thousand men. A committee was likewise appointed to correspond with the inhabitants of Canada; and circular letters were addressed to all the clergymen of Massachusetts, requesting their assistance to avert impending slavery.

And now all America was aroused by expectation of awful conflict and mighty change.[1] New England, upon which the first violence of the storm seemed likely to descend, was agitated by rumors and alarms, of which the import and the influence strikingly portrayed the sentiments and temper of the people. Reports, that Gage had commanded his troops to attack the Massachusetts militia, or to fire upon the town of Boston, were swallowed with the avidity of rage and hatred, and instantly covered the highways with thousands of armed men, mustering in hot haste, and eager to rush forward to death or revenge. Every thing betokened the explosion of a tempest; and some partial gusts announced its near approach, and proved the harbingers of its fury. In the close of the year, there reached America a proclamation issued by the king, prohibiting the exportation of military stores from Great Britain. The inhabitants of Rhode Island no sooner received intelligence of this mandate, than they removed from the public battery about forty pieces of cannon; and the assembly of the province gave orders for procuring arms and martial stores, and for the immediate equipment of a military force. In New Hampshire, a band of four hundred men, suddenly assembling in arms, and conducted by John Sullivan,[2] an eminent lawyer and a man of great ambition and intrepidity, gained possession by surprise of the castle of Portsmouth, and confined the royal garrison till the powder-magazine was ransacked and its contents carried away.[3]

The accounts received in Britain of these transactions produced no disposition on the part of the British government to relax the system of coercive measures which it had recently undertaken. In a speech from the throne [November 30], the king acquainted the parliament that a most daring spirit of resistance and disobedience to the laws unhappily prevailed in the province of Massachusetts, and had broken forth in fresh violences of a highly criminal nature; that these proceedings were countenanced and encouraged in his other colonies, and unwarrantable attempts were made to obstruct the commerce of his kingdom by unlawful combinations; and that he had taken such measures and given such orders as he judged most proper and effectual for carrying into execution the acts passed in the commencement of the year with regard to Massachusetts. Addresses which approved

[1] "The events of this time may be transmitted to posterity; but the agitation of the public mind can never be fully comprehended but by those who were witnesses of it." Ramsay.

[2] Afterwards major-general in the American army.

[3] *Annual Register for* 1774 and *for* 1775. Gordon. Belknap. Wirt. Pitkin. Holmes. Rogers's *American Biographical Dictionary*. Eliot. *American National Gallery*.

and reëchoed this speech were proposed in both houses; and, though they produced warm debates, they were carried by large majorities. In spite of this apparent firmness of purpose, the British cabinet could not contemplate without some hesitation and perplexity the extension to the other provinces of America of those rigorous measures which had been inflicted with so little of beneficial effect upon Massachusetts; and the parliament was adjourned for the Christmas holydays, without having taken any farther step in relation to colonial affairs. But the intelligence, received during this interval, of the meeting and transactions of the American congress precluded farther indecision, and imperatively demanded either an instant retractation of the resisted prerogative of Britain, or a vigorous and decisive retort of the blow which her authority had received. The consideration of American affairs was accordingly the first business to which the attention of the reassembled parliament was directed. [January 20, 1775.] At this critical juncture, Lord Chatham, after a long retirement from public life, resumed his seat in the House of Lords; and, venerable alike from age, achievement, and renown, endeavoured, with all the remaining energy of his commanding spirit and impressive eloquence, to dissuade his countrymen from attempting to subdue the Americans by military force. He enlarged on the ruinous events that were impending on the nation in consequence of the project, equally unjust and impracticable, of taxing America; he pronounced a glowing panegyric on the American congress and its transactions; arraigned the whole ministerial system of American politics; and moved that an address should be presented to the king, to advise and beseech him, that, in order to open a happy way to the settlement of the dangerous troubles in America, by beginning to allay ferments and soften animosities in that country, and preventing, above all, some sudden and fatal catastrophe at Boston, he should command General Gage to remove the troops from that town as speedily as the rigor of the season would permit. This motion was supported by the Marquis of Rockingham and Lords Camden and Shelburne, but rejected by a great majority of the peers. Yet a respectable minority, in both houses of parliament, was warmly, though ineffectually, seconded in their efforts for conciliation, by petitions from many of the English merchants and manufacturers, and particularly from the towns of London and Bristol.

A few days after [January 26], a petition was tendered to the House of Commons from Bollan, Franklin, and Lee, as the agents for the provinces of America, stating that they were directed by the American Continental Congress to present a memorial from it, the contents of which it was in their power to illustrate by much important information; and praying to be heard at the bar in support of the memorial. A violent debate ensued. The adherents of the ministry, while they refused to hear and discuss the complaints of America, insultingly censured them as containing nothing but *pretended* grievances; and a large majority united in rejecting the application. Lord Chatham still persisted in indulging hopes of conciliation; and to this end, with a very unwarrantable reliance on the moderation and placability both of the British government and of the Americans, presented to the House of Lords [February 1] the outlines of a bill, which he entitled *A provisional Act for settling the Troubles in America, and for asserting the supreme legislative Authority and superintending Power of Great Britain over the Colonies.* He proposed, on the one hand, to legalize the convo-

cation of a new American congress, which should first acknowledge the supreme legislatorial power of the British parliament, and then allot to the crown a certain and perpetual revenue, applicable, under parliamentary direction, to the alleviation of the national debt, — and on the other, to restrict the jurisdiction of admiralty courts in America within its ancient limits, and to suspend all the British statutes of which the Americans had latterly complained. This distinguished statesman had recently cultivated the acquaintance, which in the plenitude of his power he formerly slighted, of Dr. Franklin; who, less affected by the eclipse of Lord Chatham's official grandeur than the fallen minister himself was, regarded him with undiminished admiration, and willingly met his advances to intimacy. He imparted the outlines of his bill to Franklin, whose opinion was, that, although inadequate to the wishes of the Americans, it would conduce to tranquillize them, and serve as the basis of further treaty. When the measure was broached in the House of Peers, Lord Sandwich, one of the ministers, assailed it with violent and disdainful abuse; refused to believe it the genuine production of any British nobleman; and, turning with a significant look to Franklin, who was present, declared it was doubtless the production of an American, and of one well known as the most bitter and mischievous enemy of Great Britain. Lord Chatham in reply vindicated his project, and claimed the whole responsibility attached to its composition; but added, withal, that, if he were the first minister of Britain, he would not be ashamed to seek the counsel and assistance of one so well versed in American affairs as Franklin, whom he eulogized as the just object of the world's admiration, and an ornament not merely to the British empire but to human nature. We have seen, indeed, that these were not the views he entertained and was governed by when he actually *was* the first minister of Britain. The issue of the debate was, that the bill was rejected without even being allowed to lie on the table of the house.[1] This result, together with the subsequent conduct of the British government, induced Franklin to think that his farther tarriance at London was not likely to prove useful to his constituents. After a last vain endeavour, in conjunction with Lord Howe, with David Barclay, a Quaker and descendant of the celebrated Barclay of Urie, and with Dr. Fothergill, to promote an adjustment of the differences between Britain and her colonies,[2] he returned, in the spring of the present year, to America, where his

[1] The following striking reflections were elicited from Dr. Franklin on this occasion: — "To hear so many of these *hereditary* legislators declaiming so vehemently against, not the adopting merely, but even the *consideration* of a proposal so important in its nature, offered by a person of so weighty a character, one of the first statesmen of the age, who had taken up this country when in the lowest despondency and conducted it to victory and glory through a war with two of the mightiest kingdoms in Europe; to hear them censuring his plan, not only for their own misunderstandings of what was in it, but for their imaginations of what was not in it, which they would not give themselves an opportunity of rectifying by a second reading; to perceive the total ignorance of the subject in some, the prejudice and passion of others, and the wilful perversion of plain truth in several of the ministers; and upon the whole, to see it so ignominiously rejected by so great a majority, and so hastily too, in breach of all decency and prudent regard to the character and dignity of their body, as a third part of the national legislature, gave me an exceeding mean opinion of their abilities, and made their claim of sovereignty over three millions of virtuous, sensible people in America seem the greatest of absurdities, since they appeared to have scarce discretion enough to govern a herd of swine. *Hereditary legislators!* thought I. There would be more propriety, because less hazard of mischief, in having (as in some university of Germany) *hereditary professors of mathematics!*" We have seen the language of Lord Sandwich and the conduct of his colleagues copied with much fidelity in 1836 by the British peers, who, in seeking to vilify the liberal policy they opposed by ascribing it to the suggestion of the Irish politician, O'Connell, established most satisfactorily the claim of that *illustrious* body to the enjoyment of *hereditary* wisdom.

[2] It was happy for Franklin's credit with his countrymen, that the very moderate terms

fellow-citizens of Pennsylvania straightway elected him a member of the second Continental Congress.

During the latter part of Franklin's agency at the British court, he had enjoyed the society and zealous coöperation of his countryman, Josiah Quincy, Jr., who, though hovering on the brink of an early grave, yet burning with unquenchable patriotism, was attracted to England rather by vast impetuous desire than by reasonable probability of serving the interest of America. This accomplished and most enthusiastic man, who now beheld Europe for the first time, was struck with admiration amounting to astonishment, but unmingled with dread, at the strength and extent of Britain's military resources and establishments. His zeal for the extreme of American resistance and his confidence in its efficacy, so far from being daunted, were inflamed by his residence at London; and that sentiment and conviction he labored, with more of fiery energy and daring than of sound judgment and prudence, to impart to his friends at Boston, to whom the statements and counsels conveyed in his letters were as dangerous and might have proved as pernicious as the opposite errors inculcated by Hutchinson on the British ministers. Transported by generous but deluding passion beyond the bounds of sober reason, he hearkened too readily to the vehement and indeliberate language of Englishmen whom sincere liberality or mere party spirit induced to espouse the claims of America, and, thus misled, did not hesitate to assure his countrymen that the only danger they were exposed to arose from the opinion entertained of them both by friends and foes in Europe, that they were an abject and cowardly race of men; that this injurious opinion had been recently confirmed by their forbearance (which he had always blamed) to inflict vengeance by their own hands on the person of Hutchinson; and that they possessed a numerous and powerful band of friends in England, who were only deterred from openly declaring themselves by distrust of American firmness, but who, if they saw the Americans brave the shock of but one single encounter with the British troops, would instantly wrest the helm of government from the present ministers, and not only redress every grievance of America, but even concede her political independence. He continually reminded the Americans, that no nation had ever achieved its deliverance from oppression and dependence by a bloodless contest; and protested that *now*, when they were united together in an extraordinary degree, was the fit time for attempting an inevitable appeal to the sword. To all British overtures of conciliation he urgently counselled them to answer that they would treat only with arms in their hands, and not begin to treat till Britain had retracted every measure they complained of, and practically avowed their independence by withdrawing all her land and naval forces from America. The amiable, magnanimous, and enlightened, though intemperate author of these rash counsels and suggestions left Britain to return to his country about the same time with Dr. Franklin, but breathed his last just as he came within sight of the American coast. His name, once high in the rolls of European chivalry, is now one of the glories of New England.

which he proposed were rejected by Britain, — for certainly they would not, at present, have given satisfaction to America. In the commencement of great and dangerous contests, it is not uncommon for political leaders to make proffers of accommodation which they have no serious intention, or at least not the power, to fulfil, but of which the expected rejection is counted on as affording a politic imputation against the opposite party. On the very night before Franklin's departure from London, Fothergill, in a confidential billet to him, avowed his conviction that all the overtures of the British cabinet were specious, hollow, insincere, and utterly unworthy of American attention.

Notwithstanding the urgency of the crisis, some days elapsed before the British ministers followed up their triumph over Lord Chatham's policy by suggesting any proposition of their own. The system which in the interim was digested in the cabinet reflected little credit on the wisdom or consistency of the counsels from which it emanated. A joint address was finally [February 9] moved and voted from the Lords and Commons to the king; returning thanks for the communication of documents relative to the state of the British colonies in America; declaring their opinion that *a rebellion* actually existed in the province of Massachusetts; beseeching the king to pursue the most effectual measures for assuring due obedience to the laws and authority of the supreme legislature; and solemnly pledging themselves with their lives and fortunes to support his Majesty in the maintenance of the just rights of his crown, and of those of the two houses of parliament, against all rebellious attempts to infringe them. In the course of the debates that arose on this occasion, three noblemen, who had been members of the cabinet by which, in 1767, the taxation of America was resumed, protested openly, and to the amazement of the whole nation, that they had neither shared nor approved that measure, and that they regarded it as the cause of all the actual and impending calamities of the empire.

On the day after the address was voted, Lord North, the prime minister, introduced into the House of Commons a bill for restraining the trade and commerce of the provinces of New Hampshire, Massachusetts, Rhode Island, and Connecticut, with Great Britain, Ireland, and the British West India Islands, and prohibiting those provinces from pursuing any fishery on the banks of Newfoundland. He observed that the penal acts of the preceding year were confined to Massachusetts alone; but declared that the other New England States had subsequently aided and abetted their offending neighbours, and were, besides, so near to them, that the intentions of parliament would be frustrated, unless the restraints he now proposed were extended to the whole of New England. This measure was opposed with great warmth of zeal and vigor of argument, as alike inhuman and impolitic. "You are provoking a rebellion," it was urged, "by one class of statutes; and then recruiting the rebel army by another." Many petitions were presented from various parts of Britain against the bill; and the English Quakers particularly, in an earnest remonstrance against its cruelty, deprecated the attempt to destroy by famine a body of people whom they pronounced to be as loyal and meritorious as any of the subjects of the British crown.[1] The most urgent petitioners against the measure were those English merchants who had lent money to American planters on the security of mortgages of their landed estates, and who looked forward with equal alarm to the independence and to the impoverishment of America. After much opposition in both houses, the bill was passed into a law. [March 30.] But while it was yet in dependence, Lord North suddenly announced, and prevailed with the parliament to sanction, an overture which he termed a *conciliatory proposition*, by which it was proclaimed that parliament would forbear to tax any colony which should make provision for contributing its proportion of the expenses attending the common defence of the empire, and for the support of civil government and the administration of justice within its own communes. This was a concession somewhat vague and

[1] The British fisheries proving shortly after remarkably unproductive, a great outcry was raised, both in Britain and America, that this was a judgment of Heaven on those who attempted to bereave a whole people of the gifts of nature.

equivocal in its import; for it neither recognized nor denied the distinction between internal and external or commercial taxation. Yet, tendered but a few years before, it might have prevented or retarded the American Revolution. Introduced as it was, at this late stage of the controversy, when passion had controlled speculation and effaced nice distinctions, and incorporated as it was with a system of increased rigor towards America, it neither could nor was seriously intended to produce reconcilement. Indeed, the minister, while he actually weakened the force of his menaces by this show of hesitation, was so much afraid of seeming to yield, that he rendered the present overture worse than powerless by openly acknowledging that it was designed to divide America and to unite all domestic parties in Great Britain. This impolitic sincerity was calculated to affront the Americans, who needed not its assistance to see clearly through so palpable a device. The proposition was conveyed to the several colonial governors in a circular letter from Lord Dartmouth; but it was treated with contempt by a people too much impressed with the expediency of union, and too well aware of the nature and state of the contest in which they were embarked, to be deceived by an overture that was conciliatory only in name.

Scarcely had the bill been passed for restraining the trade of New England, when intelligence was received that the inhabitants of the Middle and Southern States of America were supporting their Northern brethren in every measure of resistance. This produced an additional edict for extending the restraints of the former one to New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Maryland, Virginia, and South Carolina. Whatever were the views that prompted the discrimination thus exercised by the British government, — the exemption of New York, Delaware, and North Carolina from this penal enactment was considered in America as calculated to promote disunion: and the three exempted colonies, spurning the proffered grace, voluntarily declared their participation in the restraints imposed on their neighbours. So infelicitous were the rulers of Britain in all their measures, and so little acquainted with the disposition and temper of the people of America. There are seasons, as it has been often and justly remarked, when all circumstances seem to conspire towards the nourishment and increase of maladies, whether physical or political. At the very time when the parliament was enacting the restraining laws, the assembly of New York was preparing a petition to parliament for redress of grievances; and it both enraged and astonished those who had recently vaunted the submissive loyalty and moderation of this province, to find its assembly peremptorily declare, "that exemption from internal taxation, and the exclusive power of providing for their own civil government and the administration of justice in the colony, are esteemed by them their undoubted and unalienable rights."[1] The body politic, composed of the parent state and her colonial

[1] *Annual Register for* 1775. Gordon. Franklin's *Memoirs*. Holmes. Ramsay. Pitkin. Quincy's *Life of Josiah Quincy, Jr.* The British government and the American Tories (blinded by insolence, ignorance, and rage) grossly deceived each other, each relying a great deal too far on the other's force and activity.

It is likewise true that the partisans of liberty in America were dangerously deceived by the effect of the violence and intolerance exerted for the promotion of this cause in several of the provinces. A delusive appearance of unanimity was frequently produced in communities where a strong minority were in their hearts dissenters from the general will, and ready, on the first favorable opportunity, openly to range themselves against the predominant domestic party by whose violence they were overawed. Persecution, whether exerted in religious or in political controversy, naturally tends to the production of no better qualities than hypocriti-

progeny, was now so gangrened and overcharged with evil humors, that no imaginable system of remedial policy could have arrested or even considerably modified the headlong pace with which it was advancing to dissolution; and the political physicians of Britain to whom the treatment of the case was confided had in reality no other choice than to suffer that great catastrophe to ensue as the natural issue of the malady, or themselves to accomplish it by the instrumentality of hopeless operation.

While the additional restraining act was in progress through the House of Commons, a petition and memorial, couched in very strong terms, was transmitted by the assembly of Jamaica in defence of the claims and conduct of the Americans. In support of this and of other applications of a similar tenor, Glover (the author of *Leonidas*), as agent for the West India planters and merchants, delivered an able and eloquent speech at the bar of the house; but wisdom and wit were exerted in vain to stem the swollen current of regal ambition and national pride. A project of conciliating the Americans by expressly conceding their right to administer their own domestic taxation, proposed to the House of Commons by Edmund Burke and illustrated by the richest display of his admirable genius and unrivalled oratory, was rejected by a great majority of voices.

It was an unfortunate circumstance for the British government, and a strong reason for dissolving its colonial dominion, that it was disabled by distance from adapting its measures to the actual and immediate posture of affairs in America. Months elapsed between the occurrence of events in the colonies, and the arrival of the relative directions from England; and every symptom of the political exigence had frequently undergone a material change, before the concerted prescription, wise or unwise, was applied. Before the recent proceedings in parliament could produce any effect or were even known in America, the quarrel had made a fearful stride; and the odious rigor and despised pretences of conciliation which those measures disclosed were announced to a people already roused to fury by the shock of war and the effusion of blood.

The example of Massachusetts in preparing for defence was followed by the other provinces; and warlike counsels were boldly broached in the provincial assemblies and congresses. When [March 23] some members of the Virginian assembly urged the postponement of these preparations, reminding their colleagues of the power of Britain and the comparative weakness of America, and insisting that it would be time enough to fly to arms when every well-founded hope of peace had entirely vanished,—Patrick Henry, with vehement and victorious eloquence, contended that *that time had already come*. "It is natural," said he, "to man, to indulge in the illusions of hope. We are prone to shut our eyes against a painful truth, and listen to the song of that enchantress till she transforms us into

cal zeal or timid acquiescence. Seeking to make partisans, it makes enemies of those who might otherwise have been contented with a passive neutrality.

The best political estate (perhaps) ever attained by any commonwealth is that wherein the deliberate will of the majority has had the fullest scope. But, as a better is imaginable, so I hope it is also attainable. I mean one in which the power, however strong, of a dominant majority respects and gives a justly proportioned scope to the sentiments (not directly hostile to the general safety) of the minority of the population. This social consummation so devoutly desirable must be the product of some machinery calculated to spread as widely as possible the light of intelligence and the warmth of humanity. There are doubtless times and occasions, when the minority of the citizens have as little right to exhibit practical dissent from the will of the majority as could be claimed by the minority of a ship's crew in relation to the conduct of the vessel during a storm or an engagement.

beasts. *There is no longer any room for hope.* We must *fight.* I repeat it, Sir, we *must* fight. An appeal to arms and to the God of Hosts is all that is left us. They tell us that we are weak, and unable to cope with so formidable an adversary. But when shall we be stronger? Will it be when our supineness shall have enabled *our enemies* to bind us hand and foot? Sir, we are not weak,[1] if we make use of those means which the God of nature has placed in our power. Three millions of people armed in the holy cause of liberty, and in such a country as ours, are invincible by any force which *our enemy* can send against us. Nor shall we fight our battles alone. That God who presides over the destinies of nations will raise up friends to aid us. The battle is not to the strong alone; but to the vigilant, the active, the brave. Besides, we have no longer a choice. If we were base enough to desire it, it is now too late to retire from the contest. There is no retreat but in submission and slavery. Our chains are forged; their clanking may be heard on the plains of Boston. The war is inevitable,— and let it come! Gentlemen may cry, 'Peace! Peace!' —but there is no peace. The war is actually begun. The next gale that sweeps from the north will bring to our ears the clash of resounding arms." These last words proved prophetic.

The Provincial Congress, which had now [1775] superseded the General Court of Massachusetts, assembling in the beginning of February, published an address acquainting the people, that, from the large reinforcements of troops that were expected at Boston, the tenor of intelligence from Britain, and other indications, they had reason to apprehend that the sudden destruction of the colony was intended; and urging in the strongest terms the militia in general, and the minute-men in particular, to spare neither time, pains, nor expense to perfect themselves in military preparation. They also passed resolutions for procuring and making firearms and bayonets; and decreed an issue of provincial bills of credit to the amount of fifty thousand pounds.[2] The military preparations which they recommended were diligently pursued, and artillery and provisions were collected at various places. General Gage was not an inattentive spectator of these proceedings. Having learned that some military stores belonging to the colonists were deposited in Salem, he despatched Colonel Leslie from Castle William, on the 26th of February, with one hundred and forty soldiers in a transport to seize them. The troops, landing at Marblehead, proceeded to Salem; but not finding there the object of their expedition, they advanced along the road leading to Danvers, whither the stores had been removed, and reached the drawbridge laid across the river. Here a number of the country people were assembled, and on the opposite side the American Colonel Pickering had mustered thirty or forty armed men, and, having drawn up the bridge, stood prepared to dispute the passage of the river. Leslie commanded them to lower the bridge; but, as they peremp-

[1] "Thrice is he armed who hath his quarrel just," exclaimed Richard Henry Lee, in his speech on the same occasion. In another citation from Shakspeare, Lee shortly after foretold the final appeal to arms. On the adjournment of the assembly, while he was taking leave of two of his colleagues who were standing with him in the porch of the capitol, he inscribed with a pencil these lines on one of the pillars:—

"When shall we three meet again?
In thunder, lightning, and in rain;
When the hurly-burly 's done,
When the battle 's lost and won."

[2] On these bills of credit was represented an American grasping a sword, and pointing to the well known words of Algernon Sydney:— *Ense petit placidam sub libertate quietem.*

torily refused, he was preparing to cross the river in some boats that were moored to the shore, when the people, who had gathered around him, perceiving his intention, sprang into the boats and scuttled them with axes. The day of this occurrence was a Sunday; and, as most of the neighbouring inhabitants were at church, this circumstance (as Gage was supposed to have anticipated) prevented the diffusion of alarm and diminished the concourse of armed Americans. A conflict, nevertheless, was on the point of ensuing, when it was averted by the prudent interposition of Barnard, one of the Congregational ministers of Salem, who, finding Leslie determined to cross the river, but willing, if this point were yielded, to content himself with marching thirty paces beyond it and then return without attempting farther progress, prevailed with his countrymen to indulge the British with this empty triumph, which, indeed, could have been pushed no farther, as the stores were already removed, during the delay that had been created. At length the bridge was lowered; and Pickering with his men, still facing the British troops, retired to the line they had measured and marked. Leslie and his soldiers, after advancing to the stipulated point, returned and embarked for Boston. Thus ended the first military enterprise of the Revolutionary War, — without effect and without bloodshed; but not without additionally kindling the spirit, the vigilance, and the jealousy of the Americans, and inflaming the bitter animosity progressively created between them and the British soldiery. They declared that Gage and his troops (doubtless encouraged by secret orders from Britain) had treated them as rebels, before the British government itself dared to affix this stigma upon them; and that the previous seizures of arms on their own part in New Hampshire and Rhode Island were merely retaliatory measures and defensive preparations. In such circumstances, an expedition as harmless as the last was not likely again to occur; and it needed less the sagacity of Patrick Henry to foresee, than his spirit and intrepidity firmly to contemplate, the more serious trial which the resolution of the people of Massachusetts was soon to undergo.

A magazine of military stores had been collected with silent but laborious assiduity at the inland town of Concord, about sixteen miles from Boston, when Gage, apprized of this circumstance, resolved to destroy the hostile apparatus. For this service he detached at night [April 18] Colonel Smith and Major Pitcairn, who, at the head of eight hundred grenadiers and light-infantry, commenced a secret and expeditious march for Concord. Although several British officers, who dined at Cambridge on the preceding day, had taken the precaution to post themselves at various points on the road leading to Concord, in order to intercept any expresses that might be sent from Boston to alarm the country, yet sundry messengers, despatched for this very purpose, contrived to elude their vigilance and communicated an alarm, which was rapidly spread by church-bells, signal guns, and volleys of small arms. Reuben Brown, a citizen of Concord, actually rode a hundred miles in the space of twenty-four hours in order to disseminate the intelligence. The British troops, arriving at Lexington on the following morning at five o'clock, found about seventy of the minute-men of that town assembled in arms on the parade. [April 19.] Major Pitcairn, who commanded the British van, approaching the Americans, exclaimed, — "Disperse, you rebels; throw down your arms and disperse!" This order, which they refused to obey, was followed by a discharge from the

British troops, whose fire, huzza, and rapid advance compelled the scanty band of their adversaries to an instant flight. The fire continued after the dispersion, whereupon the fugitives stopped, rallied, and returned it. Eight Americans were killed and several were wounded in this affray. The British detachment now pressed forward to Concord. Here the inhabitants, roused by the signals of alarm, were drawn up in order of defence; but observing the number of the regulars to be more than they could prudently encounter, they retired across the north bridge to some distance from the town, and waited for reinforcements. A party of British light-infantry followed them and took possession of the bridge, while the main body of the troops entered the town and hastened to execute their commission. They had leisure to spike two cannons, and to cast into the river five hundred pounds of ball and sixty barrels of flour; and this paltry result was all the advantage derived from a violent and sanguinary enterprise that was to kindle the flames of war between two nations. Meanwhile the provincial militia were reinforced; and Major Buttrick, of Concord, assuming the direction of them, advanced towards the bridge. Unaware of the occurrence at Lexington, and anxious that the Americans should not be the aggressors, he commanded his followers to refrain from giving the first fire; and this mandate, so difficult to agitated and undisciplined men, he enforced by the example of his own lively yet calm and collected courage. As he advanced, the British detachment which occupied the bridge retired to the Concord side of the river; and on his nearer approach, they fired and killed a captain and one of the privates of the American militia. The Americans instantly returned the fire; a skirmish ensued, and the regulars were forced to give ground with some loss. They were soon joined by their main body; and the whole force commenced a precipitate retreat. All the inhabitants of the adjoining country were by this time in arms; and they attacked the retreating troops in every direction,—some pressing on their rear, and some firing upon them from behind stone walls and other coverts. Thus harassed during a retreat of six miles, the British reëntered Lexington, where, most opportunely for them, they were joined by Lord Percy, who arrived with a detachment of nine hundred men and two pieces of cannon. After halting two hours at Lexington, the troops, now amounting in number to about seventeen hundred, resumed their march; and the Americans, instantly renewing their attacks, continued to pour an irregular but galling fire upon the enemy's front, flanks, and rear. The close discharge of musketry by expert marksmen exposed the troops to considerable danger, and produced a good deal of confusion; but though unable to repel or even effectually retort the assaults they sustained from every quarter, the British kept up a brisk retreating fire on their assailants.[1] A little after sunset they reached Bunker's Hill, where, exhausted with the labors of this disastrous day, they remained during the night, shielded from farther attack by the guns of the Somerset man-of-war, and next morning reëntered Boston. Of the Americans engaged in this affair, fifty were killed, and thirty-four wounded. Of the British, sixty-five were killed, one hundred and eighty wounded, and twenty-eight made prisoners. To their wounded prisoners the Americans behaved with the utmost ten-

[1] Lord Percy, as he marched through the country in the morning, with taunting derision of the Americans, caused his band to play that beautiful air to which the ridiculous name of *Yankee-Doodle* has been given. But as he returned in the afternoon, the Americans, with sharper scoff, called out to him that he should now make the band play *Chevy-Chase*.

derness and humanity, and they apprized Gage that he was at liberty to send the surgeons of his own army to minister to them.

The Provincial Congress of Massachusetts, being at this time assembled, promptly despatched to England an account of the conflict that had taken place, with depositions intended to prove that the British were the aggressors. They also transmitted an address to the inhabitants of Britain, in which professions of loyalty to the king were united with assurances of a determination *not tamely to submit* to the persecution and tyranny of his evil ministers. *Appealing to Heaven* (they warmly protested) *for the justice of our cause, we determine to die or be free.*

As the controversy between Britain and her colonies was to be finally decided by an appeal to arms, it was a circumstance of great moment to the American cause, that the first bloodshed by which this dire prospect was illustrated occurred in New England, — where the people were so much connected with each other by consanguinity and by similarity of manners, condition, and of religious and political sentiments, that the slaughter of a single individual was resented with wide-spread concern and indignation.

The affair of Lexington proved accordingly the signal of war. When the tidings reached Connecticut, the young men of this province, burning with rage and valor, flew to arms, and desired to be conducted to the assistance of Massachusetts ; and aged parents, sharing the zeal of their sons, charged them to *behave like men or never to return.* Israel Putnam, one of the most intrepid of mankind, and the most experienced and respected officer in Connecticut, received the intelligence as he was ploughing the fields which he had often before defended against French and Indian foes. It was the sentiment of all who ever witnessed the achievements or partook the campaigns of this gallant veteran, that *Putnam dared to lead where any dared to follow.* He instantly unyoked his team ; and, with that prompt but inflexible determination which invariably characterized his life and conduct, cast all private cares and concernments behind him, and marched at the head of a numerous body of his countrymen to the neighbourhood of Boston. Thither also promptly repaired three regiments furnished by New Hampshire, one of which was commanded by John Stark, a native of this province, who afterwards attained the rank of general in the American army, and achieved a high reputation in the Revolutionary War. There was now assembled an insurgent force of twenty thousand men, who formed a line of encampment from Roxbury to the river Mystic, and kept the British troops blockaded within the peninsula of Boston. A kindred spirit of courageous preparation broke forth in others of the American States. Troops were raised, and funds provided for their support ; the public money in the provincial treasuries was seized ; and forts, magazines, and arsenals were secured by the provincial militia. At New York, the precarious ascendency which the Tories had been able to obtain was instantly and entirely swept away by the flow of popular spirit and sympathy provoked by the Lexington conflict ; and the public voice of the province now proclaimed the determination of its people to espouse the quarrel and share the fate of their American countrymen. Shortly after that conflict, a numerous body of the citizens of Baltimore enrolled themselves voluntarily in the American army before Boston, and, to prevent the minds of the people from being relaxed or dissipated, the provisional government of Maryland prohibited assemblages for fairs, cock-fighting, and

horse-racing. They exerted, at the same time, the most honorable and generous efforts to protect from popular rage persons known or supposed to be disaffected to the American cause. General Gage, meanwhile, cooped up in Boston, expecting an attack from the provincial troops by which he was begirt, and dreading the coöperation they might receive from their friends in the city, offered to all persons who might desire it a free egress from Boston, on condition of an entire surrender of their arms. Though the condition was fulfilled, many of the citizens and their families who desired to quit the place were detained by Gage, who pretended that some arms were still concealed, and who in reality was overawed by the vehemence with which the American Tories protested against the surrender of hostages, whose presence alone, they believed, restrained the besiegers from setting fire to the town.

It was readily perceived by all who now reckoned war inevitable, that the possession of Ticonderoga and Crown Point would confer an important advantage on America, and, indeed, was indispensable to her security. Struck with this consideration, some of the principal inhabitants of Connecticut conceived the bold design of seizing those fortresses by surprise. About forty volunteers (of whom the most notable was David Wooster, afterwards a distinguished general in the American service) repaired accordingly from Connecticut to Bennington, in the territory of Vermont, where the projectors of the expedition had arranged to meet Colonel Ethan Allen, a man of singularly daring spirit, and possessed of great influence in that district,[1] whom they intended to engage to conduct the enterprise, as well as to raise among the hardy mountaineers around him the necessary complement of force for its execution. Allen, readily entering into their views, met them with two hundred and thirty men at Castleton, where they were unexpectedly joined by Colonel Benedict Arnold, a bold and active American officer, who, having conceived the same project, was admitted to act as an auxiliary to Allen, with whom the chief command remained. Proceeding on their adventurous expedition, Allen and his followers arrived in the night of the 9th of May on the banks of Lake Champlain opposite to Ticonderoga. Embarking in boats, which were procured with some difficulty, Allen and Arnold crossed the lake with eighty-three of their men, and accomplished a landing near the fortress without being discovered. The two colonels, after contending who should enter first, advanced together abreast, and made their way into the fort at the dawn of day. [May 10.] All the garrison were buried in sleep, except a sentry, who attempted to fire upon the party; but his piece missing fire, he retreated through the covered way to the parade. The Americans rushed after him, and, having formed themselves in a hollow square, gave three huzzas which instantly aroused the garrison. A slight and brief skirmish with cutlasses or bayonets ensued. De la Place, the commander, was required to surrender the fort. "By what authority?" he asked, with no unreasonable surprise. "I demand it," replied Allen, "in the name of the great Jehovah, and of the Continental Congress." This extraordinary summons was instantly obeyed; and the fort, with its valuable stores and forty-nine soldiers, was surrendered without farther re-

[1] He was formerly outlawed by the government of New York (see Appendix III., *ante*) for encouraging the people of Vermont to resist its claim of jurisdiction over them; but, eluding the doom denounced on him by his enemies (like Alcibiades), he made them painfully sensible that he was still alive.

sistance. Colonel Seth Warner was then despatched with a party of men to Crown Point, and he easily succeeded in gaining possession of this place, in which a sergeant and twelve privates formed the whole of the garrison. The important pass of Skenesborough was surprised and occupied at the same time by a detachment of volunteers from Connecticut; and here a number of soldiers and several pieces of cannon were taken. A British sloop of war, lying off St. John's, at the northern extremity of Lake Champlain, was boarded and captured by Arnold, — who commenced in this manner a career of brilliant but short-lived glory, too soon clouded by private vice, vanity, and prodigality, and finally tarnished by public treachery and dishonor. And thus the Americans, without the loss of a single man, acquired by a bold and decisive stroke two important posts, a great quantity of artillery and ammunition, and the command of Lake George and Lake Champlain. The Continental Congress learned this enterprise with mingled sentiments of exultation and anxiety. Dreading the appearance of aggression in widening the breach between Britain and America, they recommended to the provincial committees of New York and Albany to cause the artillery and stores to be removed from Ticonderoga to the south end of Lake George, and to make an exact inventory of them, "in order that they may be safely returned, when the restoration of the former harmony between Great Britain and the colonies, so ardently wished for on our part, shall render it prudent and consistent with the overruling law of self-preservation."[1]

The councils of New England were as vigorous as her military operations. On the 5th of May, the Provincial Congress of Massachusetts published a resolution importing "that General Gage has, by his late transactions, utterly disqualified himself from serving this colony, either as its governor, or in any other capacity; and that, therefore, no obedience is in future due to him; but that, on the contrary, he ought to be considered and guarded against as an unnatural and inveterate enemy to the country." From this period the authority of Gage in Massachusetts reposed on the bayonets of his soldiers, and was confined within the limits of the town they occupied. But in the close of the same month his prospects seemed to brighten; and his force at least gained an increase from the arrival at Boston of a considerable accession to his troops from Britain, along with the Generals Howe, Burgoyne, and Clinton, all of whom had acquired high military reputation in the last war. Gage, thus reinforced, prepared to act with more vigor and decision than he had latterly displayed. He began by issuing a proclamation, which offered, in the king's name, a free *pardon* to all the American insurgents who should forthwith lay down their arms, and return to the habits and duties of peaceable subjects, "excepting only from the benefit of such pardon Samuel Adams[2] and John Hancock, — whose offences," it was added, "are of too flagitious a nature to admit of any other consideration than that of condign punishment"; and announced the dominion of martial law in Massachusetts, "as long as the present unhappy occasion shall require." And thus, as Edmund Burke remarked, the British

[1] Wirt. *Annual Register for* 1775. Gordon. Rogers. Eliot. Bradford. Holmes. Pitkin. Dwight. Ramsay. Griffiths.

[2] Gage some time before had privately signified to Adams that a high reward would be conferred on him, if he would desert the American cause and "make his peace with the king." Adams thus answered: — "I trust I have long since made my peace with the King of kings. No personal consideration shall induce me to abandon the righteous cause of my country." Rogers.

commander offered mercy to those who were openly in arms and actually besieging him in his station, while he excluded from mercy two men who were five hundred miles from him and actually at the time (as members of the second congress) sitting in an assembly which had never by statute been declared illegal. To signalize Adams and Hancock in this manner was to employ the only means within his competence of endearing these men and their principles to the Americans, whom the proclamation, instead of intimidating or dividing, served but additionally to unite and embolden.

From the movements visible among the British troops, and their apparent preparations for some active enterprise, the Americans were led to believe that Gage designed to issue from Boston and penetrate into the interior of Massachusetts; whereupon, with a view to anticipate or derange the supposed project of attack, the Provincial Congress suggested to Putnam and Thomas, who held the chief command in the army which blockaded Boston, that measures should be taken for the defence of Dorchester Neck, and that a part of the American force should occupy an intrenched position on Bunker's Hill, which ascends from and commands the entrance of the peninsula of Charlestown. Orders were accordingly communicated to Colonel Prescott, with a detachment of a thousand men, to take possession of that eminence; but, through some misapprehension, Breed's Hill, instead of Bunker's Hill, was made the site of the projected intrenchment. By his conduct of this perilous enterprise, and the heroic valor he displayed in the conflict that ensued, Prescott honorably signalized a name which his descendants have farther adorned with the highest trophies of forensic and literary renown. About nine o'clock of the evening [June 16], the detachment moved from Cambridge, and, silently traversing Charlestown Neck, gained the summit of Breed's Hill unobserved. This eminence is situated at the extremity of the peninsula nearest to Boston; and is so elevated as to overlook every part of that town, and so near it as to be within the reach of cannon-shot. The American troops, who were provided with intrenching tools, instantly commenced their work, which they pursued with such diligence, that, before the morning arrived, they had thrown up a redoubt of considerable dimensions, and with such deep silence, that, although the peninsula was nearly surrounded by British ships of war and transports, their operations were only first disclosed to the astonished army of Britain by the dispersion of the nocturnal darkness under whose shade they had been conducted. At break of day [June 17], the alarm was communicated at Boston by a cannonade which the Lively sloop of war promptly directed against the intrenchments and embattled array of the Americans. A battery of six guns was soon after opened upon them from Copp's Hill, at the north end of Boston. Under an incessant shower of bullets and bombs, the Americans firmly and indefatigably persevered in their labor, until they completed a small breastwork, extending from the east side of the redoubt to the bottom of the hill, towards the river Mystic. We have remarked the mistake that occasioned a departure from the original plan of the American enterprise, and led to the assumption of Breed's Hill instead of the other eminence which it was first proposed to occupy. By a corresponding mistake, the memorable engagement which ensued has received the name of *The Battle of Bunker's Hill*, — a name which only vanity or pedantry can now hope or desire to divest of its long-retained celebrity, and its animating influence on the minds of men. It would be wiser, perhaps, to change

the name of an insignificant hill than of a glorious battle in which the prize contested was the freedom of North America.

Gage, perceiving the necessity of dislodging the Americans from the position they had so suddenly and daringly assumed, detached about noon on this service the Generals Howe and Pigot, with ten companies of grenadiers, ten of light-infantry, and a suitable proportion of field-artillery. These troops, crossing the narrow bay interjected between Boston and the American position, landed at Moreton's Point, and immediately formed in order of battle; but perceiving that the Americans, undaunted by this demonstration, and with spirit erected to the utmost height, firmly waited the attack, they refrained from advancing till the arrival of a reinforcement from Boston. Meanwhile the Americans were also reinforced by a body of their countrymen, commanded by the Generals Warren and Pomroy; and the troops on the open ground, tearing up some adjoining post and rail fences, and fixing the stakes in two parallel lines before them, filled up the space between with new-mown grass, and formed for themselves a cover from the musketry of the enemy. Collecting all their courage, and undepressed by the advantage which their adversaries derived from the audacity of assault, they stood prepared for an effort which should yield their countrymen, if not victorious liberty, at least a memorable example of what the brave and the free can do to achieve it.

The British troops, strengthened now by the arrival of the second detachment, and formed in two lines, moved forward to the conflict, having the light-infantry on the right wing commanded by General Howe, and the grenadiers on the left conducted by General Pigot; the former to attack the American lines in flank, and the latter the redoubt in front. The attack was begun by a heavy discharge of field-pieces and howitzers; the troops advancing slowly, and halting at short intervals to allow time for the artillery to produce effect on the works and on the spirits of their defenders. During their advance, General Gage, who surveyed the field of battle from Copp's Hill, caused the battery at this place to bombard and set fire to the village of Charlestown, situated beneath the position of the Americans, whom, from the direction of the wind, he expected to annoy by the conflagration. Charlestown, one of the earliest settlements of the Puritans in New England, a handsome and flourishing village, containing about four hundred houses, built chiefly of wood, was quickly enveloped in a blaze of destruction; but a sudden change of the wind, occurring at this crisis, carried the smoke to a quarter which neither sheltered the approach of the British nor occasioned inconvenience to the Americans. The conflagration added a horrid grandeur to the interesting scene that was now unfolding to the eyes of a countless multitude of spectators, who, thronging all the heights of Boston and its neighbourhood, awaited, with throbbing hearts, the approaching battle. The American troops, having permitted Howe's division to approach unmolested within a very short distance of their works, then poured in upon them such a deadly and confounding fire of small arms, that the British line was broken in an instant, and fell precipitately back in headlong rout towards the landing-place. This disorder was repaired by the vigorous exertions of the officers, who again brought up the repulsed troops to the attack; but the Americans, renewing their fire with a precision of aim derived from their habits of life, and unexampled, perhaps, in the conduct of any former battle fought since the invention of gunpowder, again spread

such carnage through the hostile ranks, that the British were a second time driven back in complete confusion. At this critical juncture, General Clinton, arriving upon the field from Boston, aided the efforts of Howe and the other officers in rallying the disheartened troops, who with some difficulty were a third time led on to the charge. The Americans had been but scantily supplied with cartridges, partly from an overstrained attention to economy in the consumption of an article urgently needed and sparingly possessed by their countrymen, and partly in deference to the counsels of some old provincial officers, whose ideas of battle were derived from their experience in hunting, and in the system (very similar to that employment) of Indian warfare, and who insisted, that, as every shot ought to kill a man, so to give the troops any more ammunition than was absolutely necessary to inflict on the enemy a loss that would be tantamount to defeat was to tempt them to neglect accuracy of aim and throw their fire away. To the discredit of this counsel, the powder of the Americans now began to fail, and consequently their fire to slacken. The British at the same time brought some of their cannons to bear upon the position of the Americans, and raked the inside of the breastwork from end to end; the fire from the ships, batteries, and field-artillery was redoubled; and the redoubt, attacked on three sides at once with impetuous valor, was carried at the point of the bayonet. Yet so desperate was the resistance of its defenders, that, even after their officers had commanded a retreat, they continued to fight till the redoubt was half filled with the assailants.

During these operations, Pigot's division was attempting to force the left point of the breastwork, preparatory to an attack on the flank of the American line; but while his troops advanced with signal intrepidity, they were received with unyielding firmness and determination. The Americans in this quarter, as well as at the redoubt, reserved their fire until the near approach of the enemy, and then poured in their shot with such well-directed aim as to mow down the advancing troops in whole ranks at every volley. But no sooner was the redoubt lost, than the breastwork also was necessarily abandoned. And now the Americans, beaten, but unsubdued, had to perform their retreat over Charlestown Neck, which was completely raked by the guns of the Glasgow man-of-war and of two floating batteries; but, great as was the apparent danger, the retreat was accomplished with inconsiderable loss. The British troops were too much exhausted, and had suffered too severely, to improve their dear-bought victory by more than a mere show of pursuit. They had brought into action about three thousand men, and their killed and wounded amounted to one thousand and fifty-four. The number of Americans engaged was fifteen hundred, and their killed, wounded, and missing amounted to four hundred and fifty-three. They lost some gallant officers, of whom the most generally known and lamented was Joseph Warren, a young physician of Boston,[1] lately promoted to the rank of general in the American army, and who, having ably and successfully animated his countrymen to resist the power of Britain, now gallantly fell in the first battle that their resistance produced.[2] And thus ended a day that showed too late to the infatuated politicians of Britain how greatly they

[1] "No part of the community," says an American writer, "engaged with greater ardor in the cause of the country than the members of the medical profession." Among others who distinguished themselves by deserving this remark was John Brooks, who afterwards became governor of Massachusetts.

[2] *Annual Register for* 1775. Bradford. Gordon. Dwight.

had underrated the arduous difficulties of the contest they provoked, and how egregiously those men had deceived them who confidently predicted that *the Americans would not fight.*[1] No other imaginable result of the conflict could have been more unfavorable to the prospects of Britain, whose troops, neither exhilarated by brilliant victory nor exasperated by disgraceful defeat, were depressed by a success of which it was evident that a few more such instances would prove their ruin.

The second Continental Congress of America had assembled, meanwhile, at Philadelphia, on the 10th of May, when Peyton Randolph was again elected president by his colleagues. Hancock produced to this assembly a collection of documentary evidence, tending to prove, that, in the skirmish of Lexington, the king's troops were the aggressors; together with a report of the proceedings of the Provincial Congress of Massachusetts on that occasion. The time was now arrived when the other provinces of America were required definitively to resolve, and unequivocally to declare, whether they would make common cause with the New England States in actual war, or, abandoning them and the object for which they had all so long jointly contended, submit to the absolute supremacy of the British parliament. The congress did not hesitate which part of the alternative to embrace, but unanimously determined [May 26],[2] that, as hostilities had actually commenced, and large reinforcements to the British army were expected, the several provinces should be immediately *put in a state of defence*; adding, however, *that, as they ardently wished for a restoration of the harmony formerly subsisting between the mother country and the colonies*, they were resolved, for the promotion of this desirable object, to present once more a humble and dutiful petition to the king. Yet the members of this body perfectly well knew that the king and his ministers and parliament not only denied the legality of their assemblage and their right to represent the sentiments of America, but openly denounced them as a seditious and traitorous association; and by a great majority of the American people the sentiments of loyalty, which they had once cherished or professed for the British crown and empire, were now extinguished, and either lost in oblivion or remembered with disdain. But it is a general practice of mankind, and the peculiar policy of governments, to veil the most implacable animosity and the most decisive martial purpose under a show of professions more than ordinarily forbearing and pacific; nor can any proclamation be more ominous of violence, than that in which a kingdom or commonwealth judges it expedient to vaunt its own moderation. Massachusetts, having informed the congress of her destitution of regular government, and solicited advice for the remedy of this defect, received in answer the counsel, that the freeholders should elect the members of a representative assembly; that these

[1] General Burgoyne, the British commander, in narrating the engagement that occurred between his own army and the American troops on the 7th of October, 1777, remarked,—"If there be any persons who continue to doubt that the Americans possess the quality and faculty of fighting, call it by whatever term they please, they entertain a prejudice that it would be very absurd longer to contend with."

One of Burgoyne's officers, Major Ackland (whose wife, Lady Harriet Ackland, acquired a high celebrity by her fortitude and conjugal tenderness), having been severely wounded while gallantly fighting with the American troops, returned to Britain, where he was killed in a duel by a far less brave man, to whom he gave the lie for reproaching the Americans with cowardice.

[2] The declaration, which they embraced and published, setting forth the causes and necessity of taking arms, was composed by Dickinson, and contains this remarkable expression:—"*We have counted the cost of the contest, and find nothing so dreadful as voluntary slavery.*"

representatives should appoint counsellors; and that the representatives and counsellors should together provisionally exercise the powers of government. This counsel was straightway embraced. Equal efficacy attended a recommendation addressed to all the colonies, that they should appoint *committees of general safety* to guard and administer the public interest during the occasional recess of the provincial assemblies.

Besides their second petition to the king, the congress renewed their applications to Canada and other places, and published an admirable address to the inhabitants of Great Britain and Ireland. In this last composition, the British people were addressed with the endearing appellations of "Friends, Countrymen, and Brethren"; and entreated, by these and every other of the ties which bound the two nations together, seriously to receive and consider the present and probably final attempt to prevent their dissolution. After again recapitulating former injuries, and recounting the recent acts of hostility in the wanton destruction of American life and property, they demanded *if the descendants of Britons could tamely submit to this?* "No!" they added, "we never will! While we revere the memory of our gallant and virtuous ancestors, we never can surrender those glorious privileges for which they fought, bled, and conquered. Admit that your fleets and armies can destroy our towns and ravage our coasts; these are inconsiderable objects,—things of no moment to men whose bosoms glow with the ardor of liberty. We can retire beyond the reach of your navy; and, without any sensible diminution of the necessaries of life, enjoy a luxury which, from that period, *you* will want, — the luxury of being free. Our enemies charge us with sedition. In what does this sedition consist? In our refusal to submit to unwarrantable acts of injustice and cruelty? If so, show us a period in your history in which you have not been equally seditious. We are reproached with harbouring the project of independence; but what have we done that can warrant this reproach? Abused, insulted, and contemned, we have carried our dutiful petitions to the throne; and we have applied to *your* justice for relief. What has been the success of our endeavours? The clemency of our sovereign is unhappily diverted; our petitions are treated with indignity; our prayers answered by insults. Our application to you remains unnoticed, and leaves us the melancholy apprehension of your wanting either the will or the power to assist us. Even under these circumstances, what measures have we taken that betray a desire of independence? *Have we called in the aid of those foreign powers who are the rivals of your grandeur?* Have we taken advantage of the weakness of your troops, and hastened to destroy them before they were reinforced? Have not we permitted them to receive the succours we could have intercepted? Let not your enemies and ours persuade you that in this we were influenced by fear or any other unworthy motive! The lives of Britons are still dear to us. When hostilities were commenced,—when, on a late occasion, we were wantonly attacked by your troops, though we repelled their assaults and returned their blows, yet we lamented the wounds they obliged us to inflict; nor have we yet learned to rejoice at a victory over Englishmen." After reminding the British people that the extinction of liberty in America would be only a prelude to its eclipse in Britain, they concluded in these terms:—"A cloud hangs over your heads and ours. Ere this reaches you, it may probably burst upon us. Let us, then (before the remembrance of former kind-

ness be obliterated), once more repeat these appellations which are ever grateful to our ears, — let us entreat Heaven to avert our ruin, and the destruction that threatens our *friends*, *brethren*, and *countrymen*, on the other side of the Atlantic."

Aware that a great deal of discontent existed in Ireland, the congress conceived the hope of rendering this sentiment conducive to the multiplication of their own partisans and the embarrassment of the British court; and to this end in their address to Ireland they alluded to the past oppression and present opportunities of this people with a politic show of sympathy and friendship calculated at once to foment agitation among them, and to attach to themselves the numerous bands of Irish emigrants who had resorted and still continued to resort to the American provinces. "The innocent and oppressed Americans," they declared, "naturally desire the sympathy and good-will of a humane and virtuous people who themselves have suffered under the rod of the same oppressor."[1]

Having thus made their last appeals to the king and people of Great Britain, the congress proceeded to organize their military force, and issued bills of credit to the amount of three millions of Spanish milled dollars (for the redemption of which the confederated colonies were pledged) to defray the expenses of the military establishments and operations.[2] Articles of war for the regulation of the continental army were framed; measures were pursued for the enlistment of regiments; and a declaration or manifesto was published, setting forth the causes and necessity of recourse to arms, and withal protesting that American resistance would end as soon as American wrongs were redressed. A battalion of artillery was formed, and the command of it intrusted to Henry Knox, a native of Boston, whom the force of his genius and the peculiar bent of his taste and studies had already qualified to sustain the part of an accomplished master of the art of war, and whose successful exertions in the sequel to improve the American ordnance and artillery excited the surprise and admiration of the most accomplished officers of Europe. In all the provinces the enlistment of troops was promoted by the operation of the late acts of parliament, which deprived many of the inhabitants of America of their usual employments and means of subsistence.

The nomination of a commander-in-chief of the American forces was the next, and not the least important, measure which demanded from the congress the united exercise of its wisdom and authority. Its choice (and never was choice more happily directed) fell upon George Washington, whom previous scenes have already introduced to our acquaintance,[3] and whose

[1] Every person acquainted with British history is aware of the important concessions in favor of the people of Ireland that were extorted from Britain by the progress of her quarrel with America.

[2] This expedient was preferred to direct taxation, which, indeed, the congress was not authorized to impose. The Americans, it has been said, during the whole contest, discovered a much greater readiness to risk their lives than their fortunes in defence of their liberty. Their leaders, accustomed to declaim against all taxation but that which emanated from the provincial assemblies, were afraid to claim for the congress a power which was denied to the British parliament. "The contest being on the very question of taxation, the levying of imposts, unless from the last necessity, would have been madness." *Instructions of Congress to Franklin*, their ambassador at the French court, in 1778. The provincial assemblies and congresses possessed more power and exerted more vigor than the general congress, which they always preceded in demonstrations of resistance and approaches to independence. Tyrants formerly recruited their exchequers by debasing the current coin of their realms. Infant republics, in modern times, have not more creditably raised supplies by the expedient of paper money.

[3] *Ante*, Book X., Chap. III. and IV.

services, especially in Braddock's campaign, had been always the more fondly appreciated by his countrymen, from the flattering contrast they suggested between British rashness and misconduct, and American skill, foresight, and energy. The deputies of the New England States, less acquainted with the achievements and character of Washington than the people of the southern provinces, and warmly admiring their own officers, would willingly have conferred this high dignity upon one of them; and Putnam, Ward, and several others were named as candidates; but the partisans of these officers, perceiving that Washington possessed a majority of suffrages, and that his was the name the most widely spread abroad in America, forbore a vain opposition, and promoted the public confidence by uniting to render the election unanimous. [June 15.] Of the other officers who had been proposed, some,[1] though inhabitants, were not natives of America; and some had distinguished themselves by undisguised and headlong zeal for American independence. None of them possessed the ample fortune of Washington, who, in addition to this advantage and to the claim arising from previous services, was a native American; and though a firm friend of American liberty, yet moderate in his relative views and language, and believed still to cherish the hope, or at least the wish, of reconcilement with the parent state. In conferring the supreme command on him, the partisans of conciliation meant to promote a friend, and the partisans of independence hoped to gain one. Nature and fortune had singularly combined to adapt and to designate this individual for the distinguished situations which he now and afterwards attained, and the arduous duties they involved. A long struggle to defend the frontiers of Virginia against continual incursions of the French and Indians, — the command of a clumsy, ill-organized provincial militia, prouder of being free citizens than effective soldiers, and among whom he had to introduce and establish the restraints of discipline, — obliged with minute labor and constant activity to superintend and give impulsion to every department of the service over which he presided, to execute as well as order, to negotiate, conciliate, project, command, and endure; — there could not have been a better preparatory education for the office of commander-in-chief of the motley, ardent, and untrained levies that constituted at present the army of America. His previous functions and exertions, arduous rather than splendid, excited respect without envy,[2] and, combined with the influence of his character and manners, qualified him to exercise command and prepared his countrymen to brook his ascendency. The language and deportment of this truly great man were in general remarkably exempt from every strain of irregular vehemence and every symptom of indeliberate thought; disclosing an even tenor of steadfast propriety, an austere but graceful simplicity, sound considerate sense and prudence, the gravity of a profound understanding and habitual reflection, and the tranquil grandeur of an elevated soul. Of this moral superiority, as of all human virtue, part was the fruit of wise discipline and resolute self-control; for Washington was naturally passionate and irritable, and had increased the vigor and authority of every better quality of his mind by the conquest and subjection of those rebellious elements of its composition. Calm, modest, and reserved, yet dignified, intrepid, inflexibly firm, and persevering; indefatigably industrious and methodical; just, yet merciful

[1] Gates and Charles Lee, for example.

[2] "Whom envy dared not hate," says a great English bard, in allusion to Washington.

and humane; frugal and calculating, yet disinterested; circumspect, yet enterprising; serious, virtuous, consistent, temperate, and sincere, — his moral portraiture displays a blended variety of excellence, in which it is difficult to assign a predominant lustre to any particular grace, except perhaps a grave majestic composure. Ever superior to fortune, he enjoyed her smiles with moderation, endured her frowns with serenity, and showed himself alike in victory forbearing, and in defeat undaunted. No danger or difficulty could disturb his equanimity, and no disaster paralyze his energy or dishearten his confidence. The same adverse vicissitude that would have drained an ordinary breast of all its spirit served but to call forth new streams of vigor from Washington's generous soul. His countenance and general aspect corresponded with the impression produced by his character. Fixed, firm, collected, and resolved, yet considerately kind, it seemed composed for dignity and high exploit. A sound believer in the divine doctrines of Christianity, he was punctual and devout in discharging every public and private office of Christian piety. Perhaps there never was another man who trod with more unsullied honor the highest ways of glory, or whose personal character and conduct exercised an influence so powerful and so beneficial on the destiny of a great nation. That he was childless was, considering his situation, a fortunate circumstance, as it obstructed the jealousies that might have impaired the public confidence, and facilitated the disinterested purpose of declining all emolument for his services,[1] — a purpose declared in the modest yet firm and resolute speech in which he accepted the commission now conferred on him by his colleagues in congress. This assembly assured him that they would support and adhere to him with their lives and fortunes; and, with a studied conformity to the language of the Roman senate in seasons of public danger, instructed him, in the discharge of the great trust he had received, to make it his especial care *that the liberties of America receive no detriment.* Departing to assume the exercise of his function [July 2], Washington found, on his arrival in Massachusetts, that the British army, in two divisions, had intrenched itself on Bunker's Hill and Dorchester Neck, adjoining to Boston, where it was still blockaded by the American forces who occupied both sides of the river Charles. About two months afterwards, General Gage embarked for England, and the command of the British forces devolved on Sir William Howe.[2]

The partisans of the American cause at New York had already regained their ascendency in the councils of this province, which sent representatives to the present congress, and desired advice relative to the conduct that should be pursued on the arrival of an additional body of British troops, which was daily expected at the provincial metropolis. The congress recommended that the troops should be permitted to remain in the barracks at New York, but not suffered to construct fortifications or assume a position that would enable them to intercept the intercourse between the city and the country; that, as long as the soldiers demeaned themselves peaceably, they should be treated with civility; but that the inhabitants should be ready to repel force by force. The British ministers entertained a high

[1] See Note XXXV., at the end of the volume.

[2] It has been said that this command was first offered to General Oglethorpe, rather in compliment to his seniority in the British Army List, than with the expectation of his accepting it; that he actually, and to the surprise of the British ministers, signified his willingness to accept the proffered command; but that, instead of the armaments which they were willing to furnish, he demanded powers of concession and conciliation, which they refused to confer. Ramsay's *American Revolution.*

opinion of the address and abilities of Tryon, the governor of this province, and had formed expectations of his services with which his conduct was very far from corresponding. Struck with alarm at a resolution of the Continental Congress which recommended to all the provincial assemblies and committees the arrest of *suspected persons*, of whatever rank or station, he hastily fled from New York and took shelter on board of a British ship of war.

This congress first applied to its constituents the title of *The Twelve Confederated Colonies*; a numeration, however, which they were soon agreeably invited to alter; for on the 20th of July, a day which they had solemnized by the appointment of a fast throughout America, they received intelligence that Georgia now acceded to the general union and had elected deputies to congress. The cause of American liberty had been actively espoused in this province (which now contained fifty thousand white inhabitants), from the very commencement of the controversy with Britain, by a small but increasing party, of which the principal leader was Noble Wimberly Jones, a physician, who accompanied Oglethorpe in his first voyage from England, and who distinguished himself by a warm and determined opposition to the Stamp Act. Recent proof was afforded to the American people of the inclination of the Georgians in favor of the common cause. Captain Maitland having arrived at a Georgian port from London with a cargo of gunpowder, the people boarded his vessel and took the powder into their own possession. All the counteracting efforts and policy of Sir James Wright, the governor, though pursued with consummate skill, prudence, and vigor, and supported by the influence of his well deserved popularity, were insufficient to repress the rising spirit of resistance in this the youngest and weakest of the provincial commonwealths. The congress, now representing *The Thirteen* States of North America, resolved [July 25] to maintain a body of forces, not exceeding five thousand in number, within the province of New York; and, having organized a post-office establishment extending from Falmouth in New England to Savannah in Georgia, unanimously appointed Franklin the postmaster-general. [July 26.] This eminent philosopher and politician, divided between his attachment to American liberty and his desire of preserving the integrity of the British empire, employed much of his time in projecting alternately plans of reconcilement with Britain, and of permanent union and confederation between the States of America.[1]

The national congress, having made provision for the establishment of hospitals adapted to the reception of twenty thousand sick or wounded men, adjourned for a month. [August 1.] On their reassembling [September 5], the principal subject of their deliberations was the expediency of an invasion of Canada, for the purpose of anticipating the expected attack of a British force from that quarter. To the issue of these deliberations we shall subsequently advert. During the present session, Peyton Randolph, the first president of the congress, suddenly died. He had vacated the chair in May preceding, and John Hancock had been elected his successor.[2]

[1] No less divided were the sentiments of Franklin's grand-nephew, Jonathan Williams, afterwards a general in the American service. Writing from France this year, Williams says, "Although I profess myself an American, I am still an Englishman; I only wish the titles to be synonymous"; and declares his conviction that the favor expressed by the French for the American cause proceeded entirely from hatred of England.

[2] *Journals of Congress*, May 19 and October 23, 1775.

In one instance, the members of this congress overestimated, or at least practically outstripped, the general pace of sentiment and opinion in America, and exposed themselves to the charge of incautious precipitancy. They composed and published a plan of federal association (similar to that which was ultimately adopted) between all the provinces, by which a permanent congress was to be established, and vested with power to administer the general defence, and regulate all financial operations and other matters appertaining to this function, *till* a happy reconciliation with Britain should be effected. This suggestion, whether premature or not (for it was perhaps intended to familiarize the minds of men with a prospect from which they might be expected at first to recoil), excited a general demur and hesitation throughout America; but only in North Carolina did it meet with a distinct and positive rejection. The provincial assemblies were averse to part with so much power as it was proposed to confer on the general congress; and many persons shrunk in temporary panic from a measure which they justly regarded as destructive of all prospect and chance of pacific accommodation with Britain. With this exception, the proceedings of the present congress, even more than those of the former, were the theme of grateful applause throughout the American States, who imitated its language, and, though reluctant to invest it with express legislative authority, yet willingly gave the force of laws to its counsels and recommendations. The convention of South Carolina, in an address to Lord William Campbell, the new governor[1] of this province, declared, as the congress had done, that they adhered to the British crown, though they took arms against British tyranny. Some of the leading patriots in the province, suspecting that the governor was fomenting a conspiracy of the Royalists against the cause of America, employed M'Donald, a captain in the provincial militia, to discover the governor's policy by feigning to share his sentiments. Lord William unwarily avowed the reality, and disclosed the particulars of the intrigue he was conducting; but soon perceiving the snare into which he had fallen, and learning that it was proposed to arrest him, he fled from Charleston, and, as a last resource, endeavoured (not unsuccessfully), by insidious addresses to the remains of the unfortunate party called *Regulators* in North Carolina, to recruit the force of the Royalists, and rekindle the embers of civil war. The convention of Virginia declared *before God and the world* that they bore true faith to the king, and would disband their forces whenever the liberties of America were restored; — as doubtless they did, — though not till after Britain acknowledged the independence of America.

In this province the march of the Revolution was accelerated by the intemperate measures of Lord Dunmore, the governor. Having by a sudden and clandestine operation removed a portion of the public stores during the night from Williamsburg on board of armed vessels, and finding his conduct sharply arraigned by the provincial convention, he retorted their censure and condemned all their proceedings in a proclamation which concluded with the usual formula of "God save the king." They replied to him by a proclamation which concluded with "God save the liberties of America"; and Patrick Henry marched against him at the head of a detachment of the provincial militia. Lord Dunmore, who at first solemnly swore, that, if any violence were offered to himself, he would proclaim liberty to all the

[1] The frequent changes of royal governors at this epoch detracted much from the reputation of the British cabinet for firm, consistent, deliberate purpose.

negro slaves in the province, and lay Williamsburg in ashes, finding that his menaces inflamed the public rage, instead of inspiring fear, was obliged to procure a respite from the approaching danger by granting a bill of exchange for the pecuniary value of the stores which had been removed; but soon again involving himself by his violence in a quarrel (from which the utmost prudence could hardly have kept him free) with the popular party, he fled hastily from Williamsburg, took refuge on board the Fowey, a British man-of-war, and thus practically abdicated his functions, — an example, which, greatly to their own discredit, and unhappily for the interest of the principles they espoused, was followed by several of the other royal governors of American provinces. The Virginian assembly invited their fugitive governor to return, which he refused to do unless they would previously announce their acceptance of Lord North's *conciliatory proposition*. He even refused to signify his assent to certain statutory regulations which awaited this formality, unless the members of assembly would attend him and solicit his concurrence on board the British vessel. The assembly replied by an address (composed by Thomas Jefferson) which announced a firm and dignified rejection of those requisitions, and concluded with an "appeal to the even-handed justice of that Being who doth no wrong, earnestly beseeching him to illuminate the councils and prosper the endeavours of those to whom America has confided her hopes, that, through their wise direction, we may again see reunited the blessings of liberty and prosperity, and the most perfect harmony with Great Britain." In imitation of the measure recommended by the general congress to Massachusetts, a provisional government was now established in Virginia. Lord Dunmore, however, still continued to hover about and menace the coasts of the province, and by proclamations invited the inhabitants of Tory principles to make head against *the rebels*, and negro slaves to gain their freedom by espousing the cause of the king.[1] Landing at Norfolk [October 15] with a party of these adherents, he destroyed or carried away a considerable quantity of ordnance. By other attacks of a similar description, he ravaged many parts of the province confided by Britain to his superintending care, and excited additional rage and hatred against the authority which he professed to represent and administer. Among the foremost of the Virginians to take arms in defence of the popular cause was George Wythe, who, though highly distinguished as a lawyer and statesman, was always inclined to approve his patriotism rather by actions than by words, and, diligently inuring himself to the toils and other duties of the field, would have continued to pursue a military career, if the voice of his countrymen had not recalled him to participate in their legislative councils as the sphere in which his peculiar talents were likely to be exerted with the greatest advantage.

Wentworth, the governor of New Hampshire, alarmed at the spread of revolutionary sentiments in this province, retired from his post; and thus accelerated the advance of the Revolution, by enabling or compelling the partisans of liberty openly to assume, without appearing to usurp, the administration of the supreme executive power which he had vacated. Mar-

[1] M'Adam, the celebrated improver of roads, who was in America at this time, assured me that the negro slaves in general were attached to monarchical, and inimical to republican power. In the years 1778 and 1779, both Georgia and South Carolina, but especially the latter province, sustained dreadful calamities from the vindictive fury of their negro slaves, of whom great numbers revolted against their masters on the first approach of a British army, and fought for their own liberty against the liberty of America.

tin, the governor of North Carolina, from real or affected apprehension for his own safety, caused his house to be surrounded with cannon, of which several pieces were seized and carried off by the people. Alarmed at the outrage which his own preparation had provoked, Martin took refuge in Fort Johnson, on the river of Cape Fear, where he endeavoured to rally around him a number of Scottish emigrants who regarded with aversion a final rupture with Britain, and to excite insurrection among the negro slaves of the colonists; but he was forced to evacuate his stronghold, and to fly from the province, by the approach of a body of provincial troops conducted by Colonel Ashe, who abandoned the service of the British king and espoused the cause of the American people. The spirit of resistance already kindled in the southern provinces was chafed to the highest pitch of vindictive exasperation by the insidious addresses of Martin, Lord Dunmore, and other British functionaries, to the negro slaves in America. This influence was doubtless experienced in Maryland, where a popular congress now assumed the functions of the provincial assembly, and where the planters found no inconsistency or contradiction between their claims as freemen and their possessions as slave-owners.[1] A remarkable activity of martial preparation was exerted in this province; the principal inhabitants set the example of arming themselves; and the Provincial Congress, besides levying and expending large sums of money for the procurement of ammunition, commanded every citizen to provide himself with arms, under pain of being proclaimed an enemy to his country. Corresponding movements and proceedings took place in the neighbouring province of Delaware.

Franklin, the governor of New Jersey, perceiving that his people were daily falling away from their allegiance to Britain, and that his authority over them was merely nominal, contented himself with expressing to the provincial assembly the regret with which he beheld the existing troubles and heard the wishes that were breathed for American independence; for his own personal security he declared that he desired no better safeguard than the good faith of the people of New Jersey. The assembly in answer protested that he was mistaken in supposing the Americans to be aiming at national independence; that he might dismiss all doubt and inquietude with regard to his own safety; that they could not compose the existing troubles; and, earnestly deploring them, must still more keenly regret the unjust and tyrannical acts of parliament from which they arose. But not long after, Governor Franklin, persisting in a vain adherence to the cause of British prerogative, was denounced as an enemy of his country, and deposed and imprisoned by the people of New Jersey. In all the States of North America, before the close of the present year, the sceptre had substantially departed from Great Britain; and not only a vast preponderance of numbers, but the effectual authority, and in many parts the open and exclusive administration of municipal power, belonged to the partisans of American revolt and liberty.[2] In Georgia, though a convention representing the majority of the people signified their adherence to the American cause and the Continental Congress, yet their ascendency was disputed and their efficiency controlled by the number of Royalists inhabiting the province, and by the presence of a de-

[1] "We know too much of slavery to be slaves ourselves," is represented as a customary expression of the free citizens of American States where negro slavery has extensively prevailed.

[2] "This pleased me well," said an active American politician; "for I knew, if government was once assumed, upon whatever motives, they would find that the Rubicon was passed, and that they could never return to their ancient form." Gordon.

tachment of British troops quartered in it. These troops, after a bloody combat, succeeded in recapturing the fort of Savannah, which had been occupied by a party of the insurgents; but this advantage was counterbalanced by the arrival of an American regiment which the congress embodied and despatched for the protection of liberty in Georgia. Sir James Wright, the governor of this province, was arrested by the daring effort of a small troop of volunteers, commanded by Colonel Habersham, and imprisoned by decree of the provincial assembly. Liberated on parole, he violated his engagement, and by nocturnal flight gained the shelter of a British ship of war that was stationed at Tybee.

The system of predatory and vindictive hostility, which we have seen Lord Dunmore embrace, was pursued by many of the British commanders in a manner little creditable to the wisdom of their views or the generosity of their sentiments. Infatuated with tyrannical insolence, they provoked the Americans by menace and contumely, and rendered them desperate by a barbarous cruelty and devastation. Wallace, a captain in the British navy, whose vessel was appointed to cruise along the coasts of Connecticut and Rhode Island, judged himself warranted by the present posture of affairs to launch indiscriminate havoc on the inhabitants of America, and accordingly ravaged and destroyed every village and hamlet that his guns could reach. The province of Massachusetts, on receiving this intelligence, promptly despatched a military force, under the command of General Lee, to the assistance of their allies; and the assembly of Rhode Island decreed the pains of death and confiscation of goods on all who should hold even the slightest correspondence with the forces of the British king. Of this decree a practical application was straightway administered by an act of the same assembly confiscating various estates (and among others an estate in Rhode Island belonging to Hutchinson, the ex-governor of Massachusetts), of which the owners were declared by the act to be traitors to the liberty of America. In compliance with a resolve of the Provincial Congress of Massachusetts, that Tories should not be allowed to convey their effects out of this province, the inhabitants of Falmouth had obstructed the loading of a ship which was engaged to carry masts to Great Britain. In addition to such paltry cause of offence, Mowat, the commander of a British sloop of war, who had frequently been entertained at Falmouth with the most friendly hospitality, was roughly seized and detained for a few minutes by some individuals who were infuriated by the recent news of the battle of Bunker's Hill. He was instantly released by the interposition of the principal inhabitants; but, incensed at the affront, he complained of it to the British Admiral Greaves, who was too easily persuaded to intrust him with a number of armed vessels, with which he arrived at the devoted town on the 17th of October. Next day, he opened a heavy cannonade and bombardment, which, with the aid of a party sent on shore under cover of the naval guns, reduced the greater part of the town to ashes. A hundred and thirty-nine dwelling-houses and two hundred and seventy-eight warehouses were destroyed on this occasion.[1]

[1] *Annual Register for* 1775. Gordon. Wirt. Burk. Bradford. Ramsay. Holmes. Pitkin. Dwight. Botta. Tucker's *Life of Jefferson*. Walsh's *Appeal*. McGuire's *Religious Opinions of Washington*. *Collections of the Georgia Historical Society*. Some American politicians showed a disposition to retaliate the devastations committed by the British troops. There is reason to believe that it was by the instigation, or at least with the encouragement, of Silas Deane, the American envoy to France, that an English vagabond, named Hill, attempted to set

Nothing could be more impolitic on the part of Britain than such a system of warfare, of which the indiscriminate havoc involved every party, hostile, neutral, or friendly, in one common destruction. "It is calculated," said Edmund Burke in the House of Commons, "to produce the highest degree of irritation and animosity, but never has induced and never can induce any one people to become subjects to the government of another. It is a kind of war adapted to distress an independent people, but not to coerce disobedient subjects." The men whom those ravages deprived of home and employment were constrained to seek a refuge in the American camp; and were provoked to hostility or confirmed in it by resentment against the British, and by gratitude to their own countrymen, by whom their families were sheltered and supported. The British troops, in conformity with the language of their government, long continued to regard the Americans rather as *rebels*[1] whom they were sent to chastise, than as legitimate belligerents entitled to claim the courtesies of civilized war, — a consideration more fitted to enhance the cruelty than to promote the efficiency of their own warfare. In a contest with America, the main advantage which Britain possessed was the superior discipline of her troops; but this advantage was diminished by the indulgence of a barbarous license and cruelty, productive of disorderly habits and corruptive of the principle of discipline; and it was balanced by the conviction inevitably impressed on the British officers and soldiers, that their triumph would be attended with little honor and their defeat with deep disgrace. The Americans, on the contrary, were prepared to rush into the contest with all the energy inspired by an indignant detestation of the oppression which they hoped to repel, and a firm and animating conviction of the justice, advantage, and glory of the objects which they hoped to obtain. And as the war was prolonged, they acquired by experience that discipline which alone gave any superiority to the arms of their opponents.

The Massachusetts assembly having passed an act for the equipment of armed vessels, and for granting letters of marque and reprisal against the shipping of Britain, a privateer, commanded by Captain Manly, of Marblehead, was quickly put to sea, and soon after [November 29, 1775] captured a brig from Woolwich containing a great quantity of military stores and ammunition, and, almost in immediate sequence to this achievement, a number of vessels from London, Glasgow, and Liverpool, freighted with cargoes destined for the use of the British forces. A court of admiralty was formed by the provincial authorities; and by its sentence, the prizes were formally

fire to the British dockyards at Bristol and Portsmouth. On the trial (in 1777) of Hill, who was hanged for this offence, the counsel for the crown thus vainly and foolishly expressed himself: — "I wish Mr. Silas Deane were here. A time may come, perhaps, when he and Dr. Franklin will be here." And again, — "Silas Deane is not here yet: he will be hanged in due time." Howell's *State Trials*.

[1] Some of the British commanders, with ostentatious insult, applied this epithet to the Americans, even at the time when a prudent regard to their own safety imperiously withheld them from inflicting the treatment corresponding to it. In August, 1775, General Gage, writing to Washington, who had taxed him with cruelty to the American prisoners in Boston, strongly denied the charge, and plumed himself on his kind and humane treatment of men whom at the same time he characterized as "*rebels* whose lives by the laws of the land are destined to the *cord*." He added that his prisoners were treated though humanely yet indiscriminately, "as I acknowledge no rank that is not derived from the king." To this remark Washington replied, "You affect, Sir, to despise all rank not derived from the same source with your own. I cannot conceive one more honorable than that which flows from the uncorrupted choice of a brave and free people, the purest source and original fountain of all power." Bradford. Ramsay.

condemned. A detachment of the militia of New Jersey, embarking in a small coasting-vessel, surprised, boarded, and captured a large British ship, carrying cattle, coals, and beer to the troops at Boston. A distinguished actor in this achievement was Aaron Ogden, whom a long and gallant career of service in his country's cause subsequently conducted to the highest municipal honors that his native province could confer. South Carolina was early and active in martial preparation; but the whole quantity of powder in the province did not exceed three thousand pounds. The occasion seeming to require extraordinary exertions for obtaining a farther supply of this essential commodity, a committee of twelve persons, authorized by the provincial assembly, sailed from Charleston for East Florida (which retained its adherence to the British government), and, boarding by surprise a British vessel near St. Augustine, brought off fifteen thousand pounds of powder.[1] Before the close of the year, the Continental Congress gave orders for the construction and equipment of thirteen vessels of war.

The British government at this crisis betrayed no symptom of wavering in its purpose to effect by force the submission of the American people.[2] The king refused even to notice the second petition of the congress, and, at the opening of parliament in October, declared that the colonists were in a state of actual revolt, and that the object of their rebellion was to establish an independent empire. He added, that, to defeat their purpose, the most vigorous and decisive measures were necessary; and that he had increased all his forces, and also engaged the aid of a body of Hessians and other German stipendiary troops. An application which this monarch had previously addressed to the States General of Holland, for leave to engage in his service some battalions of Scottish adventurers who were enrolled under the banners of the Dutch republic, met with a positive refusal. Although the employment of German mercenaries in a quarrel between the king of Britain and his own subjects was severely censured by the wiser and more liberal of the British politicians, the views and policy of the court obtained the acquiescence of large majorities in both of the legislative chambers.

The second petition of the congress to the king had been intrusted to Richard Penn, one of the proprietaries of Pennsylvania and formerly governor of this province, who conveyed it to London, but, on presenting it to Lord Dartmouth, was peremptorily informed that *no answer would be returned*. Penn had since remained more than two months in England without the slightest intercourse or communication with the ministers, — a circumstance which excited just but unheeded censure in the House of Commons, — when, in consequence of a motion of the Duke of Richmond, he was examined on the state of affairs in America at the bar of the House of Lords. In his answers to the questions which were addressed to him on this occasion, Penn (who was himself no friend to American revolt or independence) affirmed that the Continental Congress was universally respected and implicitly obeyed in America; that in Pennsylvania more than

[1] Ebenezer Platt, one of the persons who performed this exploit, having fallen soon after into the hands of the British forces, was sent to England, where the government preferred a charge of high treason against him. He was imprisoned on this charge, but never brought to trial. *Annual Register for* 1777.

[2] It was this year that, for the first time, that great genius, but abject and (compared with his genius) despicable man, Gibbon, the historian, took a seat in the British House of Commons, where, as he relates in his autobiography, "I supported with many a sincere and silent vote *the rights, though not perhaps the interest*, of the mother country."

twenty thousand effective men, including the most respectable inhabitants of the province, had voluntarily enrolled themselves to undertake actual service, if necessity required; and that the Pennsylvanians perfectly understood the arts of casting cannon and of making gunpowder and small arms; that the Americans were as expert as the Europeans in ship-building; that the language of the congress expressed undoubtedly the general sense of the people of America; and that the petition to the king with which he had been intrusted was considered in America as an olive-branch, and had procured him there numerous compliments as the messenger of peace; that in proportion to the hope which had been attached in America to the petition would, he feared, be the despair of friendly adjustment inspired by its evil reception; that the Americans were willing to recognize the sovereignty of Britain, but so firmly opposed to the injustice (as they reckoned it) of her claim of taxation, that, rather than yield to it, they would, he believed, embrace the policy of courting foreign succour; and that it was little likely that even the presence of a strong military force would induce many colonists to support the pretensions of the British parliament against the authority of the American congress. When Penn had withdrawn, it was moved by the Duke of Richmond "that the matter of the American petition affords ground for conciliation of the unhappy difference subsisting between the mother country and the colonies, and that it is highly necessary that proper steps be immediately taken for attaining so desirable an object"; but after a long and violent debate the motion was rejected.

In the close of the year [December], an act of parliament was passed, authorizing the confiscation of all American ships and cargoes, and of all the vessels of other countries engaged in trading with the American ports. One of the opponents of this measure in the House of Commons remarked, that, as the indiscriminate rapine proclaimed by the statute would oblige even the most submissively disposed of the Americans to unite with their countrymen in resistance, it ought to receive the title of "An act for more effectually carrying into execution the resolves of congress." By a clause in this act, which was much and justly reprobated, the commanders of British ships of war were empowered to seize the crews of all American vessels whatever, and, besides confiscating their property, compel them to take arms against their countrymen under pain of being treated as mutineers. It was in vain that the wisdom and eloquence of Lord Chatham, Charles Fox, Edmund Burke, and other great statesmen, were exerted to inspire their countrymen with milder, juster, and more generous counsels. "Is there either justice or consistency," they demanded, "in despoiling a man of his goods as a foreign enemy, and at the same time compelling him to serve the state as a citizen?" The king, together with the great body of the parliament and nation,[1] was bent on vengeance and war. Whatever estimate might be formed of the farthest views and purposes of the Americans, it was evident now that they were prepared by force of arms to emancipate their commerce from the control which had been imposed on it for the fancied advantage of Britain; and the strong, though erroneous, impression of this advantage that was commonly entertained exerted a deep and active influence on the opinions and sentiments of the British people. In Scotland, especially, where political liberty was little known or valued, and where the sentiments engendered by the feudal system of manners still survived its decay,

[1] See Note XXXIV., at the end of the volume.

there was manifested an earnest and general approbation of the language and conduct of the government, and a most animated inveteracy against the Americans. The ministers themselves declared openly in both houses of parliament that they had been duped and misled by erroneous representations of the condition and sentiments of the colonial population; and Lord Barrington, one of their colleagues, while he protested that America must be subdued in order to preserve her constitutional dependence on Britain, admitted that the project of imposing taxes on her people could no longer be rationally entertained. So baseless did the original views and pretensions of Britain already appear to have been! The other ministers, indeed (with the exception of the Duke of Grafton, who, professing that he had been fatally deceived, abruptly forsook them and became the advocate of reconcilement with America), were fain to modify the impression of disappointment produced by Lord Barrington's language, which to some of their alarmed supporters they represented, with more or less sincerity, as a mere politic device employed to divide and weaken the Americans. Lord Mansfield, the chief justice of England, in defending the ministerial policy, declared in the House of Lords that it was now too late to entertain or discuss the questions of original right and wrong, that the nation was engaged in war and must disregard every object but victory, and that "the justice of the cause must give way to the exigence of our present situation." "If we do not, my Lords, get the better of America," said he, "America will get the better of us." Littleton, formerly governor of South Carolina, now a member of the House of Commons, defended the propriety and predicted the efficacy of martial rigor on the part of Britain; protesting, that, "if a few regiments were sent to the southern colonies of America, the negroes would rise and imbrue their hands in the blood of their masters." The only potentates in Europe that showed any inclination to second the policy of the British court were the kings of Denmark and Portugal; the former of whom this year issued an edict prohibiting his subjects from trading with the Americans. By the Portuguese monarch there was published in the following year a proclamation declaring that the cause of the British king was the common cause of all sovereign princes; and prohibiting his subjects from holding any intercourse whatever with the Americans, and the ships and natives of America from presuming to enter his dominions.

An enterprise deeply affecting the relative interests of Britain and America, and materially advancing their quarrel, had latterly been embraced by the American congress, and carried into effect by the vigor of Washington. The movements of Sir Guy Carleton and the British troops whom he commanded, in Canada, led the American congress to anticipate from this quarter a formidable invasion of their northwestern frontier. To counteract the impending blow by an attack on the quarter whence it was expected to proceed, the American leaders were sensible, was to divest their warfare of its merely defensive aspect, and to make a daring advance to the assumption of national independence. But they perceived that the danger with which they were menaced was great and imminent; they deemed it inconsistent with reason and policy to await a stroke which might be diverted by a timely exertion of vigor; and they warmly protested that no man was morally obliged to remain an inactive spectator of the conduct of an enemy who was loading a gun for his destruction. Of the conse

quent expeditions into Canada which were projected by the congress and executed by their forces a detailed account would be foreign to the purpose of this work, of which the concluding portion regards as its main object the history of the international quarrel, and views the military operations as (comparatively) unimportant, except in so far as they displayed, inspired, or confirmed in the Americans the purpose of final and absolute revolt.[1] The conduct of the enterprise to which we shall now briefly advert was committed to Generals Schuyler and Montgomery, of whom the first was soon obliged by bad health to retire from active service. Montgomery commenced the siege of St. John's and compelled it to surrender, after a bloody action, in which he defeated a British force that marched to its relief. During the siege, Ethan Allen, who had distinguished himself by the surprise of Ticonderoga, fell into the hands of a party of the enemy's troops, and, instead of being treated as a prisoner of war, was sent to England fettered as a traitor. Montgomery, advancing from St. John's, took unresisted possession of Montreal, from which Sir Guy Carleton, by a hasty flight and in disguised apparel, with difficulty escaped to Quebec. Washington had previously detached against this place a force commanded by Arnold, which, after enduring the most dreadful hardships and exerting the most admirable fortitude and energy, suddenly emerged from the depths of an unexplored wilderness, and struck the city and its defenders with astonishment and consternation. But arrested at this critical moment by the difficulty of procuring boats in order to cross the St. Lawrence, Arnold and his followers saw the opportunity which they had purchased so dearly, of a successful effort of surprise, slip out of their hands. The English and Canadian inhabitants of the place, though previously discontented and at variance, now united for the common defence of their respective possessions, which were staked on the stability of the existing government, and a troop of Canadian farmers and peasants, who at first joined the invaders, soon withdrew from them in disgust at the impolitic rudeness and disrespect with which the Americans behaved to the Catholic priests. Montgomery, arriving from Montreal in the beginning of December, and uniting his forces with those of Arnold, was slain in a desperate and ineffectual assault upon Quebec.

In this sanguinary conflict, and in every circumstance of the campaign which afforded scope to the display of soldierly qualities, no officer in the American army was more conspicuous than Colonel Morgan, who now, by his heroic constancy and brilliant valor, laid the foundation of a fame which every year of his country's danger and glory contributed to en-

[1] I agree with the two illustrious Americans to whom the following observations are ascribed: — "Mr. Jefferson preferred Botta's Italian *History of the American Revolution* to any that had yet appeared; remarking, however, the inaccuracy of the speeches." — "Mr. John Adams said, that of all the speeches made in congress from 1774 to 1777, inclusive of both years, not one sentence remains except a few periods of Dr. Witherspoon printed in his works." Hall's *Travels in Canada*, &c. This author, whom I have already had occasion to cite, must not be confounded with the later traveller, Captain Basil Hall. I have had the pleasure of learning from Josiah Quincy, President of Harvard College, that John Quincy Adams, late president of the United States, honored my performance with the same commendation which Jefferson bestowed on the labors of Botta.

Most of the American accounts of the Revolutionary War are overcrowded with names that leave no distinct or lasting impression on the minds of general readers, and loaded with an accumulation of petty details. This is Homer's style, but quite unfit for the lasting representation of a scene so greatly superior in dignity and interest to the subject of his lay. In surveying any great object in the physical or moral world, a certain distance, local or temporal, is essential to a just appreciation of its grandeur and proportions.

large. Anthony Wayne, hitherto known to his countrymen only as a supporter of the principles of liberty in the Pennsylvanian assembly, also commenced with much honor in this campaign a career that conducted him to the highest military renown. The martial taste and genius of Wayne (awakened probably by the interesting events of the war that issued in the British conquest of Canada) were signally illustrated in his boyhood, when he narrowly escaped expulsion from school for diverting his comrades from their studies by the continual rehearsal of sieges, skirmishes, and battles. Aaron Burr, likewise, more generally known by his subsequent title of Colonel Burr (grandson of the great Jonathan Edwards, and afterwards vice-president of the United States of North America) first distinguished himself in this campaign by the inflexible fortitude and the determined spirit of adventurous enterprise which he displayed, first as a voluntary associate of Arnold's followers, and then as aid-de-camp of Montgomery, the commander-in-chief; he was only nineteen years of age, when, deaf to the remonstrances of all his friends and relations, he braved and sustained the fatigues and dangers of the Canadian expedition. In the subsequent scenes of the Revolutionary War, till his broken health compelled him to abandon the field, he continued to approve himself one of the most skilful, intrepid, and efficient officers in the American army; but he obstructed his own promotion and the recognition of his real merit by his inordinate ambition, his moody, jealous pride, his splenetic obstinacy, and the unbounded license of profligacy which he indulged in his intercourse with women. The annals of America present no other instance of the dark, hard, restless, dangerous character disclosed in the career of Burr. Montgomery himself, whose fall we have remarked, was a native of Ireland, and, after serving with the British army during the last war in America, had married and established himself in the State of New York, and transferred his patriotic attachments to the new scene of his residence and domestic affections. His loss was deeply deplored, and his merits as a gallant and experienced officer and generous friend of liberty were enthusiastically commemorated in all the American States. Even the partisans of Britain admired his character, while they blamed his conduct; and Lord North, in alluding to him in the British House of Commons, exclaimed, "Curse on his virtues! for they have undone his country." Arnold, on whom the command of the invading forces now devolved, contrived through the whole winter to maintain the blockade of Quebec; and it was not till the arrival of the following year and of strong reinforcements to the British army from Europe, that he and his American troops, successively abandoning post after post, were finally compelled to evacuate Canada.[1]

Among all the scenes of war to which the quarrel between Britain and America gave rise, this expedition was honorably distinguished both by the intrepid valor and endurance of the Americans, and (with the exception of the indignities inflicted on Allen) by the generous concern and respect for each other reciprocally demonstrated by the belligerent forces. The Americans warmly celebrated the merits of Carleton as a magnanimous foe, and ascribed to his undisguised abhorrence of the employment of Indian auxilia-

[1] *Annual Register for* 1775 and *for* 1776. Gordon. Ramsay. Holmes. Williams's *History of Vermont*. Armstrong's *Life of General Wayne*. Davis's *Memoirs of Aaron Burr*. Walsh's *Appeal*. Pitkin. This last cited work, though invaluable from the access to novel and important American documents which its writer enjoyed, is rendered extremely perplexing to ordinary readers by its negligent composition and disregard of chronological arrangement

ries the policy which, unfortunately for Britain, prompted her ministers to divest him of his command and preferably intrust it to General Burgoyne.[1] The Canadian expedition of the Americans and its result, misrepresented by the folly and insolence of Burgoyne, induced the British cabinet to entertain a very erroneous view of the importance and facility of hostile operations in this quarter, and in the sequel exerted a very injurious influence on its military policy,—which, instead of directing the British forces to act with combined vigor upon one point, divided them into two armies, of which the operations were totally unconnected, and of which the one was appointed to invade America in front from the seacoast, while the other, descending from Canada by the lakes, attempted from the rear to penetrate into the interior of the revolted provinces.

CHAPTER V.

Popular Feeling and public Policy in America.—American Negotiations with France.—La Fayette.—Condition of the American Army.—Operations of Washington.—Retreat of the British Army from Boston.—Hostilities in South Carolina.—The Americans declare their Commerce free.—Conduct of the American Quakers.—Proceedings in Congress.—Declaration of American Independence.—Conclusion.

Our historical progress has at length conducted us to the last year [1776], during any part of which even a shadowy semblance or rather pretext of political union subsisted between Britain and the provinces of North America. For more than ten years, the parent state had, by a series of most impolitic measures, prolonged a quarrel of constantly augmenting bitterness with her colonies, and provoked them to demonstrate a more and more determined resistance to her authority. Since the refusal of the Americans to submit to the Stamp Act in 1765, the temper and deportment of both parties disclosed a reciprocal and progressive hostility; and every year had enlarged the numerical force of the partisans of America, confirmed their resolution, and extended the compass of their democratic view and purpose. In this country a whole generation had grown up from infancy to intelligent youth and manhood's dawn since the controversy began. Their education under such circumstances had not inculcated the respect that was formerly entertained for the parent state; and with the fearless, generous spirit that distinguishes their season of life, they warmly embraced the interests of liberty, and hailed the prospect of their country's independence.[2] Nor was the general ardor for liberty confined to the more

[1] Carleton learned from his own feelings and understanding what Burgoyne ascertained by a lamentable experience, that the vindictive and ungovernable fury of the Indians was more fitted to provoke rage and despair than to inspire fear or recommend submission. Like these half-tamed beasts of prey employed in the chase by the inhabitants of Eastern countries, they became dangerous to their employers whenever their unchained ferocity encountered a check or disappointment.

[2] Almost all the young men in America were ardent patriots. At the commencement of the war, the College of New Jersey was deserted by many of its students, who rushed to join the ranks of the American army. Thither also repaired, from the school at which he was placed in South Carolina, at the age of fourteen, Andrew Jackson, afterwards president of the United States. Joel Barlow, the American poet, then a student at Yale College, always passed his vacations in the American camp. At the age of seventeen, John Marshall, of Virginia, afterwards so highly distinguished as a patriot, a lawyer, and chief justice of the

youthful inhabitants, or even to the stronger sex in America; it glowed in the gentle bosoms of women, and triumphed over the feebleness and timidity of age. The female inhabitants of the county of Bristol, in Massachusetts, equipped a regiment at their own expense. The oldest German colonists at Philadelphia formed themselves into an armed *company of veterans*, and in the election of their officers gave the command to a man nearly a hundred years of age. While the Americans of British descent were inspired with indignation by the intelligence that Britain had drawn a mercenary host from Germany to invade them, the colonists of German origin experienced no distraction of sentiment from this prospect; their zealous attachment to the adopted country where they found liberty and happiness was not abated by the hostility with which it was menaced from the instruments of that tyranny whence they themselves had sought refuge in America.

This country at present exhibited the singular spectacle of a people professing allegiance to a distant monarch, whose commands they had for ten years openly disobeyed; zealously adhering to a domestic government which that monarch denounced as a traitorous usurpation; and maintaining an army avowedly raised to fight his troops, already engaged in battle with them, and latterly employed in the invasion of his territories. A state of things so heterogeneous could not subsist much longer; and, notwithstanding the exertions that were made to bridle the impetuosity of the partisans of independence, this great consummation was rapidly maturing, and became with more certainty from day to day the substantial, though unacknowledged, purpose of the Americans. Nay, its advancement was promoted even by the exertions of the moderate and temporizing politicians, and the concessions which they obtained from the more ardent party of their countrymen. In language more guarded and calm than the British parliament, the American congress was, in purpose and action, more steady, consistent, and prospective.[1] *Professions* of loyalty to the king induced timid and wavering men to acquiesce in *measures* which practically realized independence, and rendered a speedy and open declaration of it unavoidable. "In the beginning of the dispute," exclaimed an American patriot, "we aimed not at separation from Britain, but *there 's a divinity that shapes our ends.*" An attitude was gradually assumed, maintained, and improved, from which it was impossible to retreat without certain ruin, or to advance without the assertion of national independence. Various symptoms had of late betokened the approaching birth of this event. Paine and other popular writers, in works which were extensively read and relished, attacked the principle of regal government with energetic reprobation and ingenious

United States, forsook his classical and juridical studies to enrol himself in the militia of his native State. Such also was the conduct of John Trumbull, of Connecticut, whose talent as a draughtsman was appreciated and employed by Washington, and who now devoted to the military service of his country the pictorial genius which was afterwards exerted in delineating the scenes and particulars of her glory. No small surprise and admiration was excited in America by the discovery that some of the ablest and most eloquent compositions in support of liberty, that were published in the year 1774, were the productions of Alexander Hamilton, a student at New York College, only seventeen years of age. This young man in the present year entered the American army as an officer of artillery. He rose to the rank of general, and gained high distinction as a soldier, a statesman, and a political writer. Many years after, he was slain in a duel by Aaron Burr, his equally ardent, but far less virtuous, contemporary in youthful zeal and gallant exertion for American liberty.

[1] From the debates in the British parliament only two years after the present epoch, one might suppose that a great majority of the members had always execrated a war with America, and had been gradually betrayed into measures, of which, at the time, they perceived neither the full import nor the fatal consequences.

ridicule; and animated the Americans to declare themselves an independent people, — supporting the legitimacy and exalting the dignity of this claim by every consideration that could prove it to their reason or wed it to their desire. In electing members to the second congress, the people of Maryland expressly charged their delegates not to consent to the assumption of independence *unless* they found a majority of the congress convinced of the expediency of that measure and determined to espouse it. The inhabitants of the county of Mecklenburg, in North Carolina, on learning the affair of Lexington, felt all their doubts dissolved, and instantly embraced and published a violent resolution, declaring themselves independent, and all political connection with Britain abandoned. The project of independence was discussed in every province and assembly, and daily gained partisans, of whom some pursued it with passionate desire, and others contemplated it with patient expectation. Drayton, whom the assembly of South Carolina now appointed chief justice of this province, in a charge delivered by him to a grand jury, thus expressed himself: — "The Almighty created America to be independent of Great Britain; let us beware of the impiety of being backward to act as instruments in the almighty hand now extended to accomplish his purpose." All these symptoms of public feeling were watched with interest and cherished with policy by the prevailing party in the national congress, which, without ever expressly alluding to independence, except in professions that they were not aiming at it and would fain avoid it, only waited a fit juncture for asserting this pretension with the most decisive efficacy. Before taking so critical a step, it highly imported them to assure themselves with extraordinary wariness and care of finding a firm and stable footing in the perilous path which it would pledge them to tread.

Anticipating the approaching rupture, and desirous to fortify their country by every possible means against the shock of a tremendous and inevitable conflict, the American congress had for some time directed their attention to the acquisition of foreign succour. In the month of November of the preceding year, a committee, consisting of Franklin, Jay, Dickinson, Harrison, and Johnson, was appointed for the purpose of holding a secret correspondence with the friends of America in Great Britain, Ireland, *and other parts of the world.* The real object of this committee was to sound the dispositions of the principal powers of Europe, and particularly of France and Spain, with respect to the American controversy; and, if possible, to obtain from them assistance or a pledge of it in a war for American independence. The requisite negotiations commenced immediately after by a correspondence between Franklin and a Frenchman of his acquaintance, named Dumas, who resided in Holland and was known to be friendly to the American cause; a sentiment which likewise prevailed to a great and growing extent among the Dutch, who could not but deeply sympathize with a people whose situation so nearly resembled what had once been their own. These negotiations were attended with such promising results, that, in the spring of the present year, Silas Deane, one of the deputies to congress from Connecticut, was secretly despatched by the committee as political agent for America to the court of France, — where he continued to discharge this important function, till the exercise of it was openly acknowledged, and confided to worthier hands, by the mission of Franklin and Arthur Lee to Paris after the declaration of independence.

The contagious influence of revolutionary movements in behalf of liberty appears to have been very little understood or regarded by the cabinets of Europe at this period. It required, indeed, a greater diffusion of knowledge than yet existed, together with an efficacious machinery for the circulation of sentiment and opinion (subsequently afforded by the maturity of the *periodical press*), in order fully to develope that important principle of social life, which has no perceptible existence in a barbarous and illiterate age. All the commercial states of Europe, as we have frequently remarked, were interested in the destruction of the British monopoly of American commerce; and of late they began more highly to appreciate, by partially obtaining, the advantage of that catastrophe. In proportion as the breach was widened between Great Britain and America, the contraband trade between America and those states increased; and it was now yielding to them an extent of profit which they ardently desired to retain, and which only a final severance of the British colonies from their parent state could render legitimate and permanently secure. The friendly interest in the cause and fortune of America, thus derived from motives of commercial gain, was aided in France both by the strong predilection for liberty that was recently aroused in this country, and by national jealousy and antipathy against Great Britain. A literary band, composed of the most eloquent and ingenious writers in France, had, for a series of years, exerted themselves with equal zeal and success to awaken among their countrymen a hatred of royalty and aristocracy and a passion for republican freedom. The hatred which they sought to kindle was fanned by the tyranny and prodigality exemplified by their own domestic government, and the democratic visions which they engendered found an attractive bodily show in the condition and prospects of the Americans. The events of the last war, besides wounding the pride of France, had taught her by severe lessons to dread the accession of force which Britain derived from her American colonies. Issuing from the ports of America, four hundred privateers had successfully cruised on French property; and besides a colonial militia of 23,800 men, who coöperated with the regular British forces in America, the colonists had, by their powerful and seasonable aid both of men and provisions, materially contributed to the reduction of Martinique and Havana. Their growing importance rendered those colonies daily more formidable to the rivals of their parent state; and their prolonged union with Britain threatened destruction to the commerce and colonies of France. This the Duke de Choiseul clearly perceived; and, though his plans had perished with his ministerial power, the policy to which they were subservient was by no means disregarded by his successors. With improvident acquiescence or vindictive satisfaction, the French government now beheld the rise and gradual spread among its people of a passionate zeal for American liberty, which it ascribed to mercantile competition and national rivalry, and encouraged, or at least permitted, a number of French officers and engineers to indulge their enmity to Britain or their thirst for martial enterprise by accepting commissions which were readily tendered to them by Deane in the American army. The attraction to this confluence of republican and revolutionary spirits, whether martial or commercial, national or philanthropic, though chiefly experienced in France, was not confined to this country. German officers (some of whom had been trained to the art of war in the armies of Frederick the Second of Prussia) hastened across

the Atlantic to exert their skill and talents in defence of American liberty. Polish noblemen[1] were among the earliest and bravest of its champions; and the name of Kosciusko acquired in America a part of its claims on the gratitude and admiration of mankind.

Vergennes, the present French minister, encouraged Deane to expect all but *open* assistance in the actual posture of affairs; and a pretended commercial establishment was soon after formed in Holland, through which military stores and other succours, the gift of the French government, were transmitted in the guise of mercantile consignments to America. Under strict injunctions of secrecy, two millions of livres were presented by the French court to congress; American agents were secretly permitted to fit out a number of vessels from French ports to cruise against the British shipping; and various prizes thus acquired were brought in and sold in France. By the influence of the French court, a secret contribution of arms and money in aid of the Americans was likewise procured from Spain. In the progress of the negotiations that ensued, the Americans endeavoured to interest the cupidity of France by proposing to her an advantageous commercial treaty and the reconquest of Canada, and to provoke her pride by suggesting that now was the time "*to obtain satisfaction from Britain for the injuries received in the last war commenced by that nation in a manner contrary to the law of nations!*" But surely the American politicians from whom this suggestion proceeded must have been blinded by passion or duped by the extravagance of their own cunning, when they hoped (if they really could hope) to awaken the sympathy of France by *reproaching* England with the late war, and decrying those conquests which had inspired their own most ardent wishes and triumphant exultations. Even so late as the year 1775, the congress, in their final address to the British king, which was circulated throughout all Europe, had characterized the late war as "the most glorious and advantageous that ever was carried on by British arms, and to the success of which your loyal colonists contributed by such repeated and strenuous exertions as frequently procured them the distinguished approbation of your Majesty, of the late king, and of parliament." The French, besides, had no longer any desire to reobtain Canada; the possession of which by Britain they judged likely to conduce to the more entire dependence of America on the power and friendship of France.[2] The utmost duplicity was practised by both the parties in

[1] Among these was Count Pulaski, who had been outlawed for his share in the desperate enterprise by which a few conspirators seized and carried off Stanislaus, king of Poland, in the midst of his capital, in the year 1771. After a gallant career in America, he was mortally wounded in a conflict with the British troops in 1779. The Polish monarch, on receiving the intelligence of his death, is said to have exclaimed, "Pulaski! always brave, but always the enemy of kings." Another Polish nobleman, Count Grabouski, joined as a volunteer the British army in America. In the nineteenth century we have seen the American States, by a territorial grant, afford a new country to many brave, unhappy Poles, driven from their native land by Russian tyranny.

[2] Some of the members of congress were so far transported by exasperated zeal beyond the bounds of sense and moderation, that they proposed to bestow on France what they would not now have yielded to Britain, by transferring to the French ports the same monopoly of American commerce which the British had hitherto enjoyed. Treaties framed in conformity with such passionate propositions could not have been durably binding or satisfactory. The counsels of the revolutionary government of America, though sometimes warped by passion, never evinced a lasting departure from the principles of sound policy. In 1778, an expedition for the conquest of Canada, suggested by D'Estaing and La Fayette, was opposed by Washington, and declined by the American congress. Britain, far more sincerely than America, endeavoured to employ Canada as a bribe to the French, to whom she vainly offered to restore her now regretted conquest as the price of their deserting the American cause.

this negotiation; and each (but chiefly the court of France) was entrapped in the toils of its own craft and insincerity. When Lord Stormont, the British ambassador at Paris, complained of the transmission, which he had discovered, of military stores to America from France, and of the shelter and facilities afforded in this country to American privateers, the French government flatly denied any participation in these transactions, and even carried dissimulation so far as to throw its own agents into prison. And about two years after the present period, when the American congress was dissatisfied with the conduct of Silas Deane, — and when Paine, their secretary for foreign correspondence, had, in order to depreciate the vaunted services of that envoy, published a statement which showed, that, before the American declaration of independence, and before even Deane's arrival in France, a promise of succour was given by this power to America, — in consequence of a remonstrance from the French government, the congress consented to sacrifice its own integrity to the reputation of its ally, and published a denial of Paine's statement, which nevertheless was unquestionably true. They characterized all the secret succours they had received from France as mere mercantile consignments to them from the private individuals whom they well knew to be agents of the French minister; and were severely punished by the embarrassing claims which these agents (emulating the impudence and hypocrisy of the parties between whom they transacted) preferred for repayment of their pretended advances.[1]

The court of France, regardless of the contest which itself was actually waging against the principles of liberty with the provincial parliaments of the kingdom, and actuated by jealousy, ambition, and an insatiable spirit of intrigue, was willing to embarrass and weaken Great Britain by fomenting the quarrel between her and America, but demurred openly to patronize American revolt and independence. Ill-treated as the Americans had been, this court could not, without absurd and manifest hypocrisy, affect an honest concern for a people whom it had long sought to enslave, nor honest disapprobation of a treatment far more liberal than itself had ever bestowed on the colonies of France; and though it did undervalue, it could not entirely overlook, the impolicy and peril of sanctioning and allowing its subjects to participate in a democratic controversy with monarchical authority. "Let France avoid open hostilities," said the celebrated French minister, Turgot, in a representation which he addressed to his court and colleagues, "but privately aid the Americans with arms, ammunition, and money. An offensive war on our part would unite the mother country to her colonies by giving to the minister a pretext for yielding, and to the colonies, a motive for acceding to his propositions, in order to obtain time to consolidate themselves, to ripen their projects, and to multiply their means." It was the force of public sentiment and opinion in France, partly nurtured by the intriguing policy of the French court, that ultimately overcame the scruples of this court, and prevailed with it to espouse openly the cause of America. The most active, the most influential, and the most generous promoter and partisan of this cause in France, and indeed in Europe, was a young French

[1] Pitkin. Franklin's *Private Correspondence*. Botta. The congress showed more regard to the principles of honor in its domestic than in its foreign policy. It withstood and counteracted the general but erroneous impression of the incapacity of Generals Schuyler and St. Clair, which the Americans derived from the unexpected surrender of Ticonderoga to Burgoyne in the year 1777; but instructed its foreign agents to propagate that impression in Europe as an antidote to the unfavorable prognostic that might be formed of American spirit and good fortune.

officer, the Marquis de la Fayette. The circumstance[1] from which his connection with America originated was curious and remarkable, and occurred in the commencement of the present year, when this illustrious friend of human liberty, then in the nineteenth year of his age, was in garrison with his regiment at the town of Metz. Here arrived, in the progress of a continental tour which he was pursuing, the Duke of Gloucester, brother of the king of Britain, who, having contracted a marriage that was deemed unsuitable to his dignity, was discountenanced by his reigning brother and denied the privilege of presenting his duchess at court. The duke sought to cover his disgrace under the show of a conscientious opposition to the measures and policy of the British government, and vented his discontent in passionate declamations in favor of liberty and reprobation of arbitrary power. Having accepted an invitation to dine with the French officers at Metz, he launched, after dinner, into an animated exposition of British tyranny and of the gallant spirit of resistance which it had provoked in America, and indulged his spurious zeal on this theme with such success, as to kindle in the breast of young La Fayette a purer and more generous fire, and awaken the first glimmering of that purpose which soon after broke forth with so much honor and glory in the enterprise by which he staked his life and fortune on the cause of American freedom. And thus the irritated pride and effervescent impatience of a discontented scion and ally of royalty was able to rouse the zeal, dormant as yet from lack of knowledge and opportunity, of a champion, as virtuous and heroic at least as the world has ever produced, of the principles of democracy and the just rights of men. So strange (was the remark of La Fayette himself fifty-three years after) are the concatenations of human affairs![2]

We must now transfer our attention from Europe to America, and briefly survey the posture and conduct of the American forces, which, encamped in Massachusetts, watched the motions and blockaded the position of Howe and the British army. Washington, on his arrival at the camp, had found (he acknowledged) the materials for a good army, but assembled, rather than combined, and in a state of the crudest composition. Never was a military commander beset by a greater or more perplexing variety of counteractions. The troops having been separately raised by the various provincial governments, no uniformity existed among the regiments. Animated by the spirit of that liberty for which they were preparing to fight, and unaccustomed to discipline, they neither felt the inclination nor appreciated the importance of subjection to military rules. Every one was more forward to advise and to command than to obey, — forgetful that independence must be securely acquired before it can be safely enjoyed, and unaware that liberty, to be gained by battle, must be preceded by submission, nearly mechanical, to the sternest restraint of absolute authority. In many of the regiments the officers had been elected by their troops, whose suffrages too often were gained by a show of enthusiastic confidence which was mistaken for genius and valor, and of furious zeal for American liberty which not less erroneously was supposed the certain test of pure honor, generous virtue, and sound patriotism. In other cases, it proved, that, when a regiment was in process of constitu-

[1] Related to the author by La Fayette himself.

[2] "La Fayette trouvait la cause des Américains juste et sacrée : l'affection qu'il lui portait était d'autant plus vive, qu'indépendamment de la candeur de son caractère, n'ayant encore que dix-neuf ans, il était dans l'âge où le bien paraît non seulement bon, mais beau, et où tous les sentimens deviennent des passions." Botta. See Note XXXVI., at the end of the volume.

tion, the men elected only those for officers who consented to throw their pay into a joint stock, from which all the members of the regimental body, officers, drummers, and privates, drew equal shares. These defects were counterbalanced by the ardent zeal and stubborn resolution of the troops, and the strong persuasion they cherished of the justice and glory of their country's cause. When the last speech of the British monarch to his parliament was circulated in the camp, it produced a violent burst of universal indignation, and was publicly burned by the soldiers with the strongest demonstrations of contempt and abhorrence. They expunged at the same time from their standards every emblem appropriate to the British crown, and adopted a flag variegated with thirteen colored stripes, in allusion to the number of the confederated provinces. The difficulty of establishing a due subordination in the American camp was greatly enhanced by the shortness of the terms for which the regiments were enlisted, none of which were to endure for more than a few months. Nor was it long before Washington, in addition to his other embarrassments, made the alarming discovery, that his troops labored under a deficiency of bayonets, and that all the powder in his possession was barely sufficient to furnish each man with nine cartridges.[1] By the exertion of consummate address, and with a magnanimous sacrifice of his own reputation to his country's interest, he succeeded in concealing these dangerous deficiencies both from the enemy and from the general knowledge of the American people, some of whom, with audacious absurdity and injustice, imputed to him a wilful forbearance to destroy the British forces, for the sake of prolonging his own importance at the head of the American army. Destitute of tents, a great portion of this army was lodged in scattered dwellings, a circumstance unfavorable equally to discipline and to promptitude of operation. There was no commissary-general and consequently no systematic arrangement for obtaining provisions. A supply of clothes was rendered peculiarly difficult by the effect of the non-importation agreements. There was besides a lack of engineers, and a deficiency of tools for the construction of works. The American States were unaccustomed to combined exertion, which was farther obstructed by the incompact and indefinite frame of the federal league into which their common rage and danger had driven them. Practically independent of the supreme authority of congress, and little acquainted with each other's condition and resources, the provincial governments respectively indulged too often a narrow jealousy of imposing on their constituents a disproportioned share of the general burdens; and from inexperience, in addition to other causes, their operations were so defective in harmony, that stores of food, clothing, and implements of war, collected for the army, sometimes perished, and were often injuriously detained by neglect of the means of transporting them to their appointed destination.

Washington, happily qualified to endure and overcome difficulties, promptly adopted and patiently pursued the most judicious and effectual means to organize the troops, to fit them for combined movements and active service, and to introduce and mature arrangements for securing a steady flow of the necessary supplies. Next to these measures, he judged the reënlistment of the army the most interesting. To this essential object he had early solicited

[1] Shipments of ammunition and warlike stores were made about this time from Ireland to the North American States. Some of the parties concerned in these transactions were discovered and imprisoned by the British government. *Annual Register for* 1776.

the attention of congress, who appointed a committee of its members to repair to the military head-quarters at Cambridge, in order to consult with the commander-in-chief and the magistrates of the New England States on the most eligible mode of preserving, supporting, and regulating a continental army. Recruiting orders were issued; but the progress in collecting recruits was not proportioned to the public exigence. Many Americans, firmly attached to the cause of their country, indulged their reluctance to the toil and hardship of military life under the shelter of a fond credulity which still lingered in contemplation of an adjustment of the dispute with Britain without farther bloodshed. At the close of the last year, when all the original troops not engaged on the new establishment were disbanded, there had been enlisted for the army of 1776 little more than nine thousand men. An earnest recommendation of Washington to try the influence of a *bounty* was at length acceded to by the congress [January, 1776], and during the winter the number of recruits was considerably augmented. Soon after his assumption of the supreme command, Washington engaged as his secretary and aid-de-camp Joseph Reed, a distinguished lawyer in Pennsylvania, and latterly a determined advocate of American independence, who had resigned a lucrative forensic practice at Philadelphia, in order to serve as a volunteer in the continental army in Massachusetts. In his new functions Reed displayed so much valor and ability, that, on the promotion of Gates in the present year to a command directed against the British forces in Canada, he was appointed to succeed to the post thereby vacated of adjutant-general of the American army.[1]

Before this army received its proper military organization, or discipline had strengthened the hands of the officers, they were obliged to supply their defective power by the influence of their own example and the authority of their personal character. Passion and zeal had collected the first levies of men. But passions spend themselves, and zeal declines, — while habits of discipline abide; and though they render the character of an army much less romantic and interesting, they mightily increase its steadiness and vigor as an effective machine. After the first ardor of the American troops was somewhat spent, considerable vices and disorders broke out among them. The virtue (and it was very great) that still manifested itself in their ranks was the more creditable from its superiority to the contagious influence of evil example, and as arising purely from natural character and sentiment, and not from that professional sense of honor educated by the habits of civilized schools of war. Great disadvantage has accrued to the reputation of the American troops from the almost intolerable pressure of the distress and privations to which they were exposed; and in some of the works that record their campaigns, the virtue they long exerted in resisting temptations to mutiny and disorder is obscured by the acts of pillage and desertion to which the extremity of suffering did in the end occasionally impel them. Never before had there arisen in the world a war so universally interesting to mankind as the revolutionary warfare between Britain and America. Unlike prior wars, its incidents were instantly recorded by numerous pens and extensively circulated with the minutest detail. Harsh lines and features were thus preserved, which would have escaped or been softened

[1] It was this officer who two years after thus replied to the offers of riches and *honors* by which the agents of Britain endeavoured to detach him from the cause of his country: — "I am not worth purchasing; but, such as I am, the king of Great Britain is not rich enough to buy me."

in a more distant survey; and circumstances both melancholy and disgusting, the concomitants of every war, have by many writers and readers been regarded as almost, if not entirely, peculiar to the war of the American Revolution.

The conflicts of Lexington and Bunker's Hill, and other similar encounters that signalized the commencement of hostilities, tended to delude the Americans with very exaggerated notions of the efficacy of their militia, which had been exhibited in situations peculiarly favorable to a force of this description. They entertained a rooted prejudice against troops of the line, and, appreciating the example of Braddock as erroneously as that unfortunate commander had appreciated his own position, they cherished the chimerical hope of organizing every year a new militia force capable of withstanding the attack of a regular army. The prevalence and the dangerous consequences of this delusion were strikingly illustrated by the general panic and consternation that followed the first victories of the disciplined troops of Britain in the close of the present year. It was a more surprising and more honorable trait in the character of the American troops and people, that even in such trying circumstances they were never tempted to withdraw the generous confidence which they reposed in their commanders, but invariably displayed a noble superiority to those mean suspicions of treachery which rage and vanity so readily suggest to nations irritated by reverses after having been intoxicated by success. A numerous party in the congress, however, continued long to resist the formation of a regular army; and even when this could no longer be avoided, they jealously opposed the measures that were necessary to the improvement of its military habits and discipline. "God forbid," they exclaimed, "that the civic character should be so far lost in the soldiers of our army, that they should cease to long for the enjoyments of domestic happiness. Let frequent furloughs be granted, rather than the endearments of wives and children should cease to allure the individuals of our army from camps to farms."[1]

Lord Dunmore, the fugitive governor of Virginia, still continued, with a flotilla carrying a force composed of British troops and American Royalists, to ravage the Virginian coasts. On the first day of this year, the town of Norfolk, which had formerly experienced his hostility, was by his directions reduced to ashes by the guns of the Liverpool man-of-war. This vessel on her arrival from England having joined Lord Dunmore's flotilla, a flag was sent on shore to demand if the inhabitants of Norfolk would supply his Majesty's ship with provisions. On the return of a negative answer, the town was bombarded, and property to the value of three hundred thousand pounds sterling destroyed. The provincials themselves demolished the houses and wasted the plantations situated near the water, in order to deprive the ships of every resource of supply. The barbarous and inglorious cruise, in which Lord Dunmore persisted for some time longer, issued in the discomfiture of his arms and the ruin of his American associates. Everywhere committing havoc, but everywhere repulsed, he beheld some of his vessels driven by storms on the coast, where the survivors of the

[1] "Men unaccustomed to control," said an enlightened American patriot, "cannot in a day be taught the necessity, or be brought to see the expediency, of strict discipline. Experience has shown that our militia will not stand fire. They will not fight from home. Men must learn to fight as they learn any thing else. No laws can be too severe for the government of men who live by the sword, and who have this only reply for their ravages, — *Quis negat arma tenenti?*"

crews were made prisoners by their exasperated fellow-citizens. Constrained at length to consult his own safety in preference to empty visions of conquest or the farther pursuit of a perilous revenge, Lord Dunmore, having first burned the least valuable vessels of his squadron, bade adieu with the rest to the scene of his barbarity and disgrace; and the miserable remnant of soldiers and Royalists, as well at once by tempest, famine, and disease, sought refuge in Florida, Bermudas, and the West Indies.

The exertions by which Martin, the fugitive governor of North Carolina, signalized his constancy to the cause of Britain, were as illiberal and unsuccessful as those of Lord Dunmore, though, happily, less protracted and mischievous. Attacked in the commencement of the present year by a body of provincial troops and militia, the partisans of royalty whom Martin's intrigues had drawn to a head, though greatly superior in number to their assailants, sustained a defeat which completely blasted the hopes and extinguished the activity of this party in North Carolina.

During the winter, the British troops that occupied Boston suffered great privations from scarcity of food and of fuel. An armament, which their commander despatched in quest of provisions to Savannah, in Georgia, was opposed by the militia of this province, and, after some sharp encounters, finally repulsed. Washington had hitherto found ample scope for his most strenuous activity within the limits of his own encampment;[1] but desirous now by some grand and important achievement to elevate the spirits of his army and country, he conceived the project of attacking Boston as soon as the circumstances of his situation might seem to justify an effort so critical and adventurous. Towards the middle of February, the coldest portion of the season having begun, and the ice becoming sufficiently firm to support the troops, he was disposed to undertake that enterprise; but deferred it with reluctance in consequence of the almost unanimous disapprobation of his council of war. The effective regular force of the Americans in this quarter now amounted to upwards of fourteen thousand men, — in addition to which, the commander-in-chief called into active service about six thousand of the militia of Massachusetts; and with these forces he determined to take possession of the Heights of Dorchester, whence he would possess the power of inflicting severe annoyance on the British soldiery and shipping in the town and harbour of Boston. By assuming this position, from which an attempt to dislodge him by the enemy was certain, he expected to bring on a general action, during which he intended to cross with a part of his forces from the Cambridge side of the river and attack the town of Bos-

[1] "It is not in the pages of history, perhaps," he observed in a letter to the congress, "to furnish a case like ours. To maintain a position within musket-shot of the enemy for six months together without ammunition, and at the same time to disband one army and recruit another within that distance of more than twenty British regiments, is more, probably, than ever was before attempted." — "During the siege of Boston, General Washington consulted congress upon the propriety of bombarding the town. Mr. Hancock was then president of congress. After General Washington's letter was read, a solemn silence ensued. This was broken by a member making a motion, that the house should resolve itself into a committee of the whole, in order that Mr. Hancock might give his opinion upon the subject, as he was so deeply interested from having all his estate in Boston. After he left the chair, he addressed the chairman of the committee of the whole in the following words: — 'It is true, Sir, nearly all the property I have in the world is in houses and other real estate in the town of Boston; but if the expulsion of the British army from it and the liberty of our country require their being burnt to ashes, issue the orders for that purpose immediately.'" Sanderson's *Biography of the Signers of the Declaration of Independence.* "The animation of the times raised the actors in these scenes above themselves, and excited them to deeds of self-denial which the interested prudence of calmer seasons can scarcely credit." Ramsay.

ton; counting, doubtless, on being aided by a simultaneous insurrection of the citizens. To conceal his design by diverting the attention of the British army, a heavy bombardment of their lines was commenced one evening [March 2] and continued during the two following nights. On the third evening [March 4], immediately after the firing began, a strong detachment of the American forces under the command of General Thomas, proceeding from Roxbury, took silent possession of Dorchester Heights. The ground was almost impenetrably hard, but the night was mild; and by laboring with great diligence, the troops before morning advanced their works so far as to cover themselves in a great measure from the shot of the enemy. When the British, at break of day [March 5], discovered these works, magnified to their view by the intervention of a hazy atmosphere, they were struck with astonishment, and gloomily anticipated a repetition of the carnage of Bunker's Hill. "The rebels have done more in one night," said General Howe, "than my whole army would have done in a month."

Nothing now remained but to abandon the town or instantly to dislodge the Americans from Dorchester Heights. Howe, with more enterprise and energy than usually characterized his military policy, decided to venture an attack; and took measures for the embarkation on the same evening of two thousand chosen troops on this important and hazardous service. The Americans, remarking this demonstration, prepared to abide the encounter with a lively valor, which was inflamed to the utmost eagerness by Washington's seasonable remark to them, that this was the anniversary of the *Boston massacre*, and that the day of vengeance for their slaughtered countrymen had arrived. But the royal troops were hardly embarked in the transports, when a tremendous storm arose, and the fury of the elements, intercepting human strife, rendered the execution of Howe's design impracticable. A British council of war was assembled the next morning [March 6], and recommended the evacuation of Boston with all possible speed. Whether from the numerous preparations which were requisite, or from a lingering sentiment of shame in the breast of the British commander, some delay occurred before this measure was carried into effect. Meanwhile, the Americans were actively engaged in strengthening and extending their works; and on the morning of the 17th of March, the British discovered a breastwork which had been constructed by their enemies during the night at Nook's Hill, on Dorchester Peninsula, and completely commanded Boston Neck and the southern quarters of the town. Delay was no longer consistent with safety. A flag of truce was sent by the selectmen of the town to Washington, intimating that Howe was making preparation to retire, and that he was willing to leave the town undamaged provided his own retreat were unmolested. Washington declined to give any pledge to this effect, but expressed himself in terms that tranquillized his countrymen and the British commander. At four o'clock the next morning [March 18], the discomfited British army, amounting to about ten thousand men, and attended by all the inhabitants of Boston who were attached to the royal cause, began to embark; and in a few hours they were under sail for Halifax, in Nova Scotia. As the British rear-guard embarked, Washington, at the head of his successful forces, marched into Boston, whose remaining inhabitants hailed their deliverance and deliverer with triumphant joy. A considerable quantity of valuable military stores fell into the possession of the victors; and a British vessel, arriving at Boston soon after, with a tardy

reinforcement to the fugitive army, was forced to surrender the troops she conveyed as prisoners of war. The American congress testified their satisfaction with this exploit by a formal resolve, "That thanks be presented to General Washington and the officers and soldiers under his command for their wise and spirited conduct in the siege and acquisition of Boston, and that a medal of gold be struck in commemoration of this great event and presented to his Excellency." Shortly after the departure of the British troops from the town, the fortification of its harbour was undertaken and accomplished by the zeal of the people of Boston and of the neighbouring districts. Many persons (clergymen as well as laymen) aided as volunteers in this important service; and only the poorest of the inhabitants who took a share in it received wages for their labor.

It was at this period, that a remarkable debate occurred in the British House of Lords on a motion of the Duke of Grafton for pacifying America by concessions. The motion was negatived by a great majority of voices; the supporters of the ministry now explicitly declaring that the season for conciliation was past, and that to America there remained only the alternative of absolute conquest or unconditional submission.

While a part of the British troops were employed this year in reinforcing the garrison of Quebec and recovering Canada from the American invaders [May], another body had been directed to acquire and occupy some commanding position in the southern provinces of America. The conduct of this enterprise was committed to General Clinton and Sir Peter Parker, who, having formed a junction at Cape Fear, resolved to attempt the reduction of Charleston, the metropolis of South Carolina. For this place they accordingly sailed with two thousand eight hundred land forces; and crossing Charleston Bar, anchored about three miles from Sullivan's Island. [June 4.] The people of South Carolina had already made the most strenuous efforts to put the province, and especially its capital, in a posture of defence. Works were constructed on Sullivan's Island, which lies about six miles below Charleston towards the sea, and affords a post well adapted to the annoyance and interruption of ships approaching the town. The militia of the State now repaired in great numbers to Charleston; and General Charles Lee, on whom the national congress bestowed the immediate command of all the forces in the southern department of the commonwealth, arrived at this critical juncture with a detachment of regular troops from the northern provinces. After having consumed much valuable time in preparatory inquiries and arrangements, Parker attacked [June 28] the fort on Sullivan's Island with a squadron which poured upon it a fire from two hundred and fifty-four cannons. On the fort were mounted twenty-six guns, with which the garrison, consisting of three hundred and seventy-five regulars and a few militia, under the command of Colonel Moultrie, made a gallant defence; while Colonel Thompson, at the head of seven hundred men, confronted and prevented an attack which was menaced by Clinton in another quarter of the island. The assault was maintained for ten hours. Shortly after it began, the flag-staff of the fort, struck by a shot, fell down upon the beach; whence it was instantly resumed by Jasper, a sergeant in the American army, who, springing from the wall, and reascending amidst a furious storm of battle, replaced it on the top of the rampart. Three of the British ships, advancing to attack the western wing, became entangled with a shoal; and to this incident the final deliverance

of the garrison was ascribed. At night the firing ceased on both sides, the British ships slipped their cables, and the enterprise was abandoned. In this action, the deliberate and well directed fire of the garrison severely shattered the hostile vessels, of whose crews more than two hundred were killed and wounded. Ten men killed and twenty-two wounded formed the amount of the loss sustained by the garrison. Though many thousand balls were fired from the British squadron, yet the works of the fort were but little damaged. Its walls were formed chiefly of the wood of the palmetto, a tree indigenous to South Carolina, and of a remarkably spongy nature; whence, the shot that took effect was buried in the wood without shivering or splintering the object of resistance. Scarcely a hut or tree on the island escaped uninjured. Among other American officers engaged in this affair was Francis Marion, so highly renowned in the progress of the war for enterprising valor and inflexible fortitude and perseverance. The thanks of congress were voted to Lee, Moultrie, and Thompson,—an honor very little merited by Lee, who had rashly proposed to evacuate Sullivan's Island, and was restrained from the commission of such a perilous act of folly and timidity only by the resolute interference of John Rutledge.[1] Yet Lee was a very skilful officer, and, though eccentric, an able and courageous man.

Relieved from the presence of the British armament, the southern provinces had leisure to employ their forces in repelling and punishing an attack they sustained from a different quarter. No sooner did the controversy between Britain and America assume an aspect that betokened war, than the policy of the parent state was exerted to induce the Indian tribes to espouse her interest and support her quarrel. In the month of July, 1775, a number of Indian chiefs, instigated by the hope of a wide, ferocious range in carnage, pillage, and devastation, and conducted by Johnson, the principal agent of Britain with these savages, repaired to Montreal and solemnly pledged themselves to support the cause of the British king against the American people. They readily hearkened to Johnson's plausible representation that the king was their natural protector against those encroaching colonists, who, if they should succeed in their opposition to Britain, would probably next attempt the extirpation of their colored neighbours. Stuart, another British agent, by magnificent promises of reward and assistance, had more recently induced the Creeks and the Cherokees to interrupt their friendly relation with Virginia and the Carolinas. The Creeks, eagerly rushing to war, were as suddenly depressed and paralyzed by the manifest inability of Stuart to fulfil his insidious promises. Imploring and obtaining pardon from the colonists, they rejected a subsequent overture of alliance

[1] *Annual Register for* 1776. Gordon. Bradford. Ramsay's *Histories of the American Revolution* and of the *Revolution of South Carolina*. Holmes. Garden. Botta. Rogers. Pitkin. Nothing could exceed the bravery which the British displayed in their attack on Sullivan's Island. The behaviour of Morris, captain of the Bristol man-of-war, was particularly celebrated. After receiving a severe wound in the neck, and having his right arm shattered by a chain-shot, he retired to the cockpit of his vessel, where the mangled limb was amputated. No sooner was this operation performed than he reascended the deck, where, as he was undauntedly directing and animating the fight, he received a third and mortal wound. Such valor must have triumphed but for the equal valor with which it was encountered. The American sergeant, Jasper, executed what even the romantic courage of Hotspur would hardly have deemed "an easy leap." A sword was presented and a commission offered to this gallant man by the provincial government of South Carolina. The sword he gratefully accepted, the commission he modestly declined. And yet Lord George Germaine, who had himself been cashiered by a court-martial for cowardice, expected to subdue and enslave such men.

from the Cherokees, protesting that they had wonderfully escaped from destruction, and were determined never again to court such jeopardy or need such good fortune. The Cherokees, with more stubborn ferocity, adhered to their hostile purpose; and, encouraged by the approach of Clinton and Parker, committed the most ruthless ravages on the Virginian and Carolinian frontiers. Attacked by the combined forces of these provinces after the repulse of the British from Sullivan's Island, the Cherokees were defeated in various engagements and forced to evacuate their territory and take refuge in Florida.

The most important enterprise by which the British government proposed to illustrate the campaign of this year was the occupation of New York by a powerful body of troops, composed of a detachment from the army of Sir William Howe, aided by reinforcements despatched from England under the command of his brother, Lord Howe, who, along with himself, in addition to their military functions, were appointed to exercise the vain office of commissioners for restoring peace and harmony between Britain and America, by granting *pardons* in the king's name to such Americans as would surrender their arms and sue for indulgence. Washington was sensible of the danger to which New York was exposed from the importance which the British must attach to its occupation; and, during the siege of Boston, had detached General Lee from the camp in Massachusetts, to conduct defensive preparations in Long Island and New York. Lee arrived at New York two hours after the appearance of some British ships of war off the harbour, and, finding the citizens much alarmed by the prospect of an attack on the town, he publicly proclaimed, that, "If the men-of-war set one house on fire in consequence of my coming, I will chain a hundred of their friends together by the neck and make the house their funeral pile." He farther composed the formula of a tremendous oath, which he employed Captain Sears to administer to all persons suspected of inclination to the royal cause. But the congress condemned and forbade such proceedings, by proclaiming their resolve, "That no oath, by way of test, be imposed upon or required of any of the inhabitants of these colonies by any military officer." Soon after the evacuation of Boston, Washington, having despatched reinforcements to the American troops in Canada, and leaving some troops in Massachusetts, repaired himself with the main body of his army to New York, where his head-quarters were established on the 14th of April. Here the renewed and augmenting difficulties of his arduous predicament afforded wide and constant scope to the exercise of his own wisdom and of his countrymen's patience and fortitude. The reciprocal jealousies and prejudices of the continental troops of the different States broke forth in dissensions,[1] which their common interest and danger were unable to prevent, and which all their commander's influence barely sufficed to compose; and so imperfect was the provision of military stores, that the citizens of New York were fain to surrender the leaden weights of their windows to eke out the ammunition of their defenders. Every province and almost every seaport town in America was pervaded by the apprehension that its own individual danger from British attack was the most real and immediate; and hence applications for instant succour so numerous and

[1] "Their animosities," said an American officer, in a letter to a friend, "have already risen to such a height, that the Pennsylvania and New England troops would as soon fight each other as the enemy."

so urgent were addressed to Washington, that it required all his firmness and vigor to prevent the feeble American force and the deficient stock of public arms from being divided and subdivided to such an extent as to be unequal to the proper defence of any one place. Meanwhile, Sir William Howe and the Generals Clinton and Lord Percy, with their forces which had been withdrawn from Boston, waited anxiously at Halifax for the promised succour from Britain; and it was not, till, in despair of its arrival, they had sailed for New York, that they were joined by the auxiliary British armament conducted by Lord Howe and Lord Cornwallis. But so much of the year was then elapsed, that the ineffectual attempts of the commissioners, as well as the consequent military operations of the British troops, fall not within the scope of this work.

The late rigorous measures of the British king and parliament, in concurrence with the actual progress of hostilities, the irritating devastation of the American coasts, and the elevating successes that crowned the American arms, had contributed to inflame and propagate in America the firmest purpose of decisive warfare, and every sentiment tending to a distinct assertion of national independence. It was openly proclaimed by the recent acts of parliament, that the inhabitants of America, so far from being included any longer within the pale of royal protection, were delivered up to the most vindictive severities of military execution. "Protection and allegiance are reciprocal," became the general exclamation of the Americans; "and to withdraw the one is to discharge the other." By invading Canada the Americans had practically expressed their determination to assert independence rather than yield submission or endure conquest; and in rejecting the conciliatory overture of the Duke of Grafton, the British government had left them no other choice but between the dignity of independent freemen and the degradation of pardoned rebels.

Nothing rendered the royal government more generally odious, or contributed with more decisive efficacy to confirm and extend the purpose of independence, than the measure of employing German mercenary soldiers in the subjugation of America.[1] When the Americans learned that foreigners were summoned to interfere in a domestic quarrel, and that, instead of contending with men educated in the same acknowledged principles with themselves, they were to be exposed to the hired ferocity of German slaves, the last tie that held them to Britain, the allegiance they professed to their prince, was dissolved. "He employs," they exclaimed, "the borrowed tools of the most detestable tyrants of Europe, who trade in human blood, to subvert American liberty, and to erect on its ruins the same despotic power of which they are the fit instruments and guardians in their own native land, and from the rigor of which so many of their own oppressed countrymen have already sought refuge among us." These sentiments were warmly

[1] In the sequel, also, it contributed to sustain and render effectual the resolution of independence. The German auxiliaries of Britain, at first from wanton indifference for the Americans, and afterwards from resentment of the furious abhorrence to which they found themselves exposed, indulged their cruelty and cupidity in the most barbarous devastation and pillage. The English generals could neither restrain the barbarity of the Germans nor wholly preserve their own troops from the contagious influence of such evil example. Nothing tended more effectually to rouse the Americans from the depression occasioned by the first successes of the British and German forces than the vindictive rage with which they were inspired by the rapine and insolence of the victors. Written *protections* granted to Americans by the British officers were vainly presented to soldiers who, not understanding English, could not read them.

expressed by the Americans at the very time (and indeed somewhat posterior to the time) when their own domestic government had deeply engaged in negotiations for obtaining the aid and interposition of France in the quarrel with England. If England seek the aid of foreign powers (it was asked), may not and must not America do the same? And how can she hope to obtain open and active assistance, till she seek it in the character of an independent state? Among the violent declarations elicited at this period from the American communities, we distinguish a resolution of the Committee of Safety for the province of Georgia to defend their metropolis, Savannah, to the last extremity, and to burn the town and shipping rather than suffer them to fall into the hands of the British, — a flight of lofty sentiment and ebullition of bold words, it must be confessed, very inadequately supported by the subsequent conduct of the people of that province.

Not less was the displeasure excited in America by discovery of the exertions that were made by British officers and agents to excite the Indian tribes to espouse the cause of Britain, and promote it by their cruel and barbarous system of warfare; although the American governments had themselves made urgent application to the Indians, and solicited their savage aid to the cause of liberty and independence. There was certainly, however, a wide difference between employing Indian savages to resist the hostilities of armed soldiers, and engaging them to attack defenceless citizens and husbandmen, and make war on villages, plantations, and families. The Continental Congress, besides, accounted the sanction it gave to the employment of Indian auxiliaries a measure of necessary defence and rightful retaliation. An entire neutrality was preferably desired and earnestly recommended to the Indians by this assembly.[1] But the Indians in general manifested a decided preference of the British to the American cause. Britain had of late years diligently cultivated the friendship of those savages; and while she enjoyed access to the most considerable of the tribes through Canada on the north and Florida on the south, and was abundantly capable of supplying their numerous wants, the Americans were compelled to suspend much even of their usual intercourse with the Indians by their own non-importation agreements, which deprived them of the articles chiefly required in the Indian trade. It might have been foreseen from the first, as it was clearly manifested in the sequel, that the employment of such auxiliaries in such a contest was less likely to affect its final issue than to beget odium, animosity, and irritation. Britain suffered most from these unfavorable sentiments; because her camps and fortresses, the only possessions she enjoyed

[1] For a while, some of the Indian tribes professed a strict neutrality between Britain and America. The Oneida tribe of the Six Nations thus replied to the overtures of the Americans: — "Brothers! we have heard of the unhappy differences and great contention between you and Old England. We wonder greatly and are much troubled in mind. Brothers! possess your minds in peace with respect to us, and take no umbrage that we refuse joining in the contest. We are for peace. We cannot intermeddle in a dispute between two brothers." To this professed neutrality the Oneida tribe steadily adhered. All the other tribes of the Six Nations espoused the cause of Britain. Some Indian nations, however, embraced the interests of America. A small tribe thus expressed its sentiments to the Provincial Congress of Massachusetts: — "Brothers! we have always been friends. When you were small, we were great, and we protected you. Now you are great and tall, we are small and not so high as your heel; and you take care of us. Brothers! whenever we see your blood running, we will revenge it. Though we are small, we will gripe hold of your enemy's heel, that he cannot run so fast and so light as if he had nothing at his heels." The Indian converts of the Moravian missionaries, at the expense of provoking insult and violence from both the belligerents, firmly declined all participation in the war, declaring that "the Great Being did not make men to destroy men, but to love and assist each other."

in America, were less exposed to Indian ravage than the settlements and plantations of the Americans.

In consequence of the recent Cherokee war, some Americans, who, till the close of the preceding year, professed themselves Tories, and disavowed all right of resistance to their parent state, now became active Whigs, and eagerly took arms, in the first instance against the Indians, and finally against Britain, as the instigator of their barbarous devastations. Lord Effingham, Lord Pitt, son of the Earl of Chatham, Wilson, a member of the Irish parliament, and several other persons, distinguished by their rank or character, who held commissions in the British army, protesting against the injustice of the quarrel and the disgraceful association required from them with German mercenaries and savage Indians, withdrew at this period from the British service, — an example that was not imitated by Lord Percy, who procured himself to be matriculated a member of the tribe of Mohawks, and accepted an Indian name, which he ostentatiously employed in his intercourse with the savage allies of his country. Among others who refused to serve against America was a young naval lieutenant named Cartwright, long afterwards highly celebrated as a zealous and disinterested patriot, under the title of Major Cartwright. He was urged to accept a commission in the service of America; but he declared, that, though he would never accede to an unjust and offensive war upon that country, he would yet *stick to England as long as a plank of her remained above water*. Many natives of Britain, however, were less scrupulously attached to their particular birthplace; and, having formed connections by residence in America and intercourse with it, conceived, that, in this great divulsion of the empire, they were entitled to choose which portion of it they would adhere to. Some daring adventurers, also, of dubious character and extraction, found in this tempestuous crisis an element congenial to their restless souls, and figured as partisans of liberty, more or less genuine, on the scene of American affairs. Among these was a person who obtained the rank of general in the American army, and was named Alexander. He had been in Britain an unsuccessful claimant of the Scottish title of Lord Stirling, and pronounced an impostor by decree of the House of Lords. The Americans, though arrayed against royal and aristocratical pretensions, readily complimented Alexander with the empty ascription of a title, the substantial loss of which, perhaps, occasioned his espousal of their cause. It was remarked, that, on the very day [February 28] after that on which Lord Pitt resigned his commission, two Indian chiefs from Canada were presented at the British court and obtained a gracious reception from the monarch who had hired them to steep their weapons in his people's blood. One of them, carrying a tomahawk in his hand, and having his face painted with the representation of streaks of blood, attended the king at a review of a body of troops that were preparing to embark for America.

Petitions and instructions now began to flow to the congress from most parts of America, desiring and authorizing the open proclamation of American independence. Notwithstanding these indications, the congress, prudently desirous in a matter of such importance to follow rather than to precede the march of public spirit and opinion, still hesitated to broach the claim of independence, and waited a more general and deliberate expression of the national wish and readiness for this consummation. They studied by gradual approach to familiarize the public mind to the contemplation of

independence, and by preparatory measures so far to realize this predicament as to diminish the alarm necessarily connected with its fateful name. In this politic course they were prompted to make a notable stride by the tidings which arrived in the spring of the rejection of their last petition to the king, and of the acts of parliament authorizing the employment of German troops and the confiscation of American ships, and by the general and lively indignation which these tidings provoked. The measures they embraced on this occasion imported the boldest defiance of British authority, and tended to unite the fortune of America with the interests of every other commercial state in the world. They directed [March 23] reprisals to be made by armed vessels, both public and private, on all British ships and cargoes, and, deliberately breaking the shackles of that monopoly by which their commerce had been so long held in bondage, they declared *the ports of America open to all the world except Great Britain.* On the same day they embraced and published a resolve, "that no slaves be imported into any of the colonies." About two months after [May 10], emboldened, perhaps, by the expulsion of the British troops from Boston, the congress, as a provocation and preparatory step to independence, recommended to the various provincial assemblies and conventions an entire suspension throughout America of all authority derived from British appointment, and the adoption of such forms of government as they should judge most conducive to the happiness and safety of their constituents. This recommendation of the congress was instantly carried into effect; and all the provincial governments were now reconstructed in conformity with the principle, that in each commonwealth the will of the citizens was the supreme and independent source of power, and that the majesty of the crown was superseded by the majesty of the people. John Rutledge was elected governor of South Carolina, and Patrick Henry of Virginia. Some varieties occurred in the details of the new political structures; but the general features of their composition were alike, and the same fundamental principles pervaded them all. This change was effected with little agitation and without any dangerous convulsion. The general diffusion of knowledge in America defended its inhabitants from the chimeras of ignorant enthusiasm. Familiarized with a reasonable and orderly freedom, they were not likely to mistake the features of a political blessing which had been always embodied in their favorite domestic institutions. They cherished, revered, and pursued it with an ardor passionate, yet tempered by sober sense and reason, and untinctured with that visionary strain of undisciplined fancy which misleads expectation and misguides practice. Every mode of happiness and enjoyment adapted to the capacities of human nature is cherished with more solid regard, and cultivated with more judicious concern in proportion to the virtuous freedom of acquaintance habitually admitted between its objects and its admirers. The experience of an oppressive and degrading yoke of tyranny, while it inflames the desire of liberty, promotes a false conception of the nature and value of this condition, promotes extreme and ceaseless innovation in the season of revolutionary change, and paves the way, through the lassitude and impatience of disgust and disappointment, to that worst of all revolutions, a restoration of abrogated tyrannical power. Some of the royal governors unnecessarily deserted their executive functions, and, in the plenitude of rashness, insolence, and ignorance, predicted an inextricable chaos and confusion as the result of an abrupt extinction of

the lamp of royal prerogative. Never was policy more effectually balked, nor prediction more completely falsified. No violent shock or extensive change was required to enable the American States to accomplish the transition to what they desired from what they had already theoretically or practically enjoyed.

This memorable year was additionally signalized by the third and last voyage of the illustrious navigator, Captain Cook, — an exploit recommended to our present notice by its connection with the history and labors of a distinguished American traveller. John Ledyard, a native of Connecticut, cherished from his earliest years an ardent desire to explore the undiscovered regions of the globe. He was placed at Dartmouth College, with a view to his acquisition of so much theological knowledge as might qualify him for the profession of a clergyman; but, diverted by taste or driven by penury from his academic pursuits, he forsook the college and performed a part of his homeward journey in a canoe constructed by his own hands. Yielding to the favorite inclination of his genius, he passed several years among the Indians, studying their manners and cultivating the means of recommending himself to the favor and protection of savages. He was enabled to visit England by engaging himself as a common sailor on board a ship bound from New York to London, and now gained admission among the associates of Cook's last voyage, — accepting the humble situation of corporal of marines rather than forego an opportunity so inviting to his inquisitive and adventurous spirit. The qualities he displayed in this voyage won the praise of his great pattern and commander, who recognized with esteem the kindred genius which was afterwards illustrated with so much honor and renown by the travels of Ledyard in Europe, Asia, and Africa.[1]

In all the States of America there was a party of the inhabitants firmly attached (from prejudice, from principle, or from interest) to the royal cause, and who received the appellation of *Tories* from the rest of their countrymen, by whom they were regarded with implacable rage and detestation.[2] The vain efforts of these persons to stem the prevailing current of national sentiment and purpose were now aided by the sect of Quakers[3] in America, who, after a long retreat from politics and political controversy, came forward this year with rekindled zeal in support of the declining cause of royalty, and published at Philadelphia a declaration of non-resistance to the king, whom they pronounced to be set over them by God, and lawfully removable by the same great Being alone. They seemed entirely to exclude from the scheme of nature and Providence the operation of the divine will through human instrumentality.[4] As a *sect*, or religious society, the Quakers

[1] Miller's *Retrospect*. St. John's *Memoirs of Ledyard*. Ledyard was born in 1751, and died at Grand Cairo in 1788.

[2] John Adams, in a letter to his friend Cushing during the Revolutionary War, reminds him, that "I strenuously recommended at first to fine, imprison, and hang all Americans inimical to the cause, without favor or affection." He adds, "I would have hanged my own brother, if he had taken part with our enemy in this contest." *Annual Register for* 1781. Adams at a later period deplored and vainly endeavoured to restrain in his countrymen the fury and violence that had been sanctioned and fomented by such language.

[3] Voltaire, speculating on the probable conduct of the Quakers at this crisis, shows at least his acquaintance with their policy on former occasions. In a letter to the king of Prussia, dated the 30th of March, 1776, he says: — "I do not believe that my dear Quakers will fight with their own hands, but they will pay others to fight for them."

[4] We have seen it proclaimed by one of the most illustrious patriarchs of the Quakers, that *Good men will never suffer bad laws*. *Ante*, Book VII., Chap. I.

exposed themselves to general reproach in America by this proceeding, and by the repeated testimonies which they subsequently published, during the Revolutionary War, of adherence to Britain and sympathy with the occasional success of her arms. But as a *body of men*, the conduct of the American Quakers was nowise uniform or consentaneous. Many enlightened and estimable persons who had hitherto professed Quakerism in America, now openly embracing the American cause and taking arms in its defence, were excommunicated by their more consistent fellow-sectaries. Among those were Thomas Mifflin, who afterwards became president of the congress, and Nathaniel Greene, the greatest military genius that America produced in the Revolutionary War. Some others of the members of congress were professed Quakers, who (we learn from the letters of Anthony Benezet) were distinguished by the warmth of their patriotic zeal, and the violence of the hostility which they expressed and promoted against Britain. Of the Quakers who adhered to their doctrine of non-resistance, there were some who demeaned themselves during the whole of the contest with a strict neutrality, supported by the most magnanimous intrepidity. One of these, Warner Mifflin, whose serene, dauntless heart was awed neither by the pride nor by the violence of man, sought an interview with General Howe, and upbraided him with the desolation inflicted by his troops on America; and when the Quakers had become objects of general dislike and suspicion to the Americans, at the risk of being considered and treated as a spy, he penetrated to Washington in his camp and defended their conduct. The behaviour of some other Quakers, however, was by no means defensible either by the general principles of honor, or by those peculiar sectarian principles to which they professed an inviolable adherence. They exasperated the Americans by congratulating the British on their victories, even when these victories were sullied by the most barbarous outrage, rapine, and cruelty; and two of them were hanged for assisting a party of British troops to rescue some of their captive comrades, by disclosing the place where they were confined by the Americans as prisoners of war.[1]

We willingly turn to a more agreeable feature in the contemporary proceedings of the American Quakers. Our attention has been too often solicited by that painful circumstance in the composition of American society, negro slavery. The present circumstances of the free colonists were peculiarly fitted to impress them with clear and just notions of the merits, both moral and political, of this institution. Protesting against established authority, and appealing from its maxims and pretensions to the general rights of man and the presumed will of God, they sought the protection of principles which manifestly sanctioned a similar appeal against the bondage to which their own negro slaves were consigned.[2] If the pious and the reasonable

[1] See Note XXXVII., at the end of the volume.

[2] Innumerable citations to this effect might be extracted from the speeches of American patriots and the resolves and manifestoes of American assemblies. The proclamation, by which the Continental Congress, in 1775, justified its military preparations, commenced in the following manner:—"If it were possible for men who exercise their reason to believe that the Divine Author of our existence intended a part of the human race to hold an absolute property in, and an unbounded power over, others, marked out by his infinite goodness and wisdom as the objects of a legal domination never rightly resistible, however severe and oppressive; the inhabitants of these colonies might at least require from the parliament of Great Britain some evidence that this dreadful authority over them has ever been granted to that body. But a reverence for our great Creator, principles of humanity, and the dictates of common sense must convince all those who reflect upon the subject, that government was instituted to promote the welfare of mankind, and ought to be administered for the attainment of that end." &c.

were impressed with this consideration, the timid and interested were not less struck with apprehension of the dangerous accession which the hostile force of England was likely to derive from the enslaved negro population. In all the provinces, an increased humanity was now displayed in the treatment of negro slaves and of Indian neighbours. The humane exertions of a party among the Quakers to mitigate the evils of slavery have already on several occasions demanded our notice, and merited a praise inferior only to that which is due to the unvaunted proceedings we recently remarked[1] in Massachusetts. But the disinterested example which had been afforded by many of the inhabitants of Massachusetts was now to be imitated by a majority of the society of Quakers. Two years prior to the present period, the annual convocation of the Quakers of Pennsylvania and New Jersey published an ordinance menacing with excommunication all members of their ecclesiastical community who should import, buy, or sell negro slaves, or retain negroes in a state of slavery for a longer period than the legal or customary endurance of the indentures of white servants. And in the present year, the same assembly enacted a statute of excommunication against every Quaker who should for a moment longer detain a negro in a state of slavery.[2] Thus the emancipation of their slaves by the Quakers (though some contumacious members of the sect were excommunicated, and many sold their slaves to elude that penalty), and the emancipation of themselves from British tyranny by the Americans in general, were contemporary events. And *which*, it may be asked, — the act of just sacrifice, or the act of generous exertion, — was the transaction most honorable to human nature? Without attempting the impossibility of answering this question to the satisfaction of every class of thinkers, it may be remarked, with little hazard of contradiction, that the conduct of the American Quakers would have afforded scope for more unmixed commendation, if they had refrained from embarrassing the exertions of their countrymen for the achievement of political liberty. The oppressed and degraded state of freed negroes in North America has rendered their manumission in actual effect very little beneficial, if not positively detrimental, to the welfare and happiness of mankind.[3]

The American congress had now received from a majority of the thirteen confederated States which it represented either urgent entreaties or deliberate consent and authority to the dissolution of all farther political connection with Great Britain. One or two of the provincial assemblies yet

The original draught of the *Declaration of Independence* contained a strong protest against the iniquity of negro slavery. But this clause was surrendered by an approving majority to a dissenting minority of the members of congress.

"If there be," said Day, the author of *Sandford and Merton*, "an object truly ridiculous in nature, it is an American patriot signing resolutions in favor of liberty with the one hand, and with the other brandishing a whip over his affrighted slaves." Day in the present year (1776) reprobated the policy and predicted the discomfiture of the British operations in America in a poem entitled *The Devoted Legions*. Thus wrote, with dying hand, one of the greatest and best of mankind: — "Go on in the name of God and in the power of his might, till even *American slavery, the vilest that ever saw the sun*, shall vanish away." John Wesley to William Wilberforce, 1791.

[1] *Ante*, Chap. III. The first decisive interference of the *legislature* of Massachusetts on this subject occurred in the year 1777, when a British vessel with a cargo of negro slaves was captured by an American privateer and carried into Salem. The captors proposed to sell the negroes; but the legislature forbade the sale, and directed that the negroes should be set at liberty. Bradford.

[2] *Annual Register for* 1776. Gordon. Holmes. Pitkin. Garden. Rogers. Ramsay. Clarkson's *History of the Abolition of the Slave-trade*. Brissot's *Travels in America*. Botta. Stone's *Life of Joseph Brant*.

[3] See Note XXXVIII., at the end of the volume.

refrained from giving any explicit directions on this subject to their representatives; the directions from Maryland were latterly unfavorable to an immediate assertion of independence; and those from Pennsylvania and Delaware were flatly opposed to it. But the leading partisans of independence perceived that the season had arrived when this great design must be either openly espoused or definitively abandoned; they remarked, that, in general, the main objections that were still urged against it applied rather to the *time* than to the measure itself, and they were convinced that in every one of the States the majority of the people, however credulous or desirous of a reconciliation with Britain, would rather repudiate such views than retain them in opposition to the declared and general policy of America. On the 7th of June, accordingly, it was formally proposed in congress, by Richard Henry Lee of Virginia (where the project of independence was openly espoused by unanimous vote of the provincial assembly), that the American States should be declared free and independent. This proposition induced long and animated debates, and afforded scope to the largest display of wisdom, genius, and eloquence in the discussion of a question than which none more interesting to human liberty and happiness was ever before submitted to the decision of a national assembly. The American congress, in its original composition, exhibiting the citizens of a subordinate commonwealth in the act of assuming into their own hands the reins of government which a superior state had previously wielded over them, presented a spectacle of deep and stirring interest to human nature and civilized society. Deliberating now if the grand conception which it had suggested was to be despondingly abandoned or resolutely fulfilled, it addressed the universal sentiments of mankind with extended interest and augmented dignity. While European sovereigns were insulting and violating every sanction and safeguard of national right and human liberty by the infamous partition of Poland, a revolutionary principle of nobler nature and vindictive destiny was developed to the earnest and wondering eyes of the world, in America.[1] A very ordinary degree of knowledge and reflection may enable any person to suggest to himself the principal arguments which *must* have been employed in the conduct of this solemn and important debate; but no authentic report of the actual discussion has been transmitted. John Adams, who supported the project of independence, and Dickinson, who opposed it, were acknowledged to have preëminently distinguished themselves by their rhetoric and ingenuity. Adams (as we are desired by tradition to believe, and authorized by probability to suppose) forcibly maintained that a restoration of union and harmony between Britain and America was impossible; that military conquest alone could restore the British ascendency; and that an open declaration of independence was imperiously required to harmonize the views of the Americans, to elevate and confirm their spirits in an inevitable conflict, and to enable them to seek, expect, and obtain effectual succour from foreign powers.[2] Prudence and justice alike demanded that

[1] See Note XXXIX., at the end of the volume.

[2] Before the close of this year the congress were practically sensible of the advantage which only an open pretension to independence was capable of opposing to the impressions created by defeat and misfortune. Seeing many of their constituents and some of their troops disheartened by the first successes of the bands of disciplined mercenaries employed by Britain, they declared by a manifesto to their countrymen that essential services had already been rendered to them by foreign states, and that they had received the most positive assurances of farther aid. This was derided as a false and vain boast by the British journals; notwithstanding a proclamation of the king of Spain, in the month of October, declaring all the Spanish ports freely open to American vessels.

the brave men who had taken arms in defence of their country's freedom should be enabled to dismiss the apprehension of fighting for a hollow and precarious reconciliation and a return to the yoke of dependence. Dickinson is said to have insisted (and very plausibly, it must be allowed) that an instant dissolution of the American confederacy would be produced by the mere act of Great Britain in withdrawing her fleets and armies at the present juncture; but in maintaining, as he is also reported to have done, that the same breach of federal union, aggravated by an effervescence of popular spirit incompatible with civil order, must ensue from the withdrawment of the British troops at a later period, and after a prolonged contest and the excitation of furious passion in every part of America, he disregarded the continued influence of that bond of union whose initial operation he was so strongly impressed with, and undervalued the wisdom and virtue which his countrymen were capable of exerting for the extinction of the flames of revolutionary passions. Some members of the congress opposed a declaration of independence as unwarrantable or premature; and others for a while were reluctantly deterred from supporting it by the instructions of their constituents. After the discussion had been protracted for nearly a month, during which interval the hesitation or opposition of a minority of the States was overborne, as had been foreseen, by the general current of national will, — the measure proposed by Lee was approved and embraced by a vote almost unanimous;[1] and a document, entitled *Declaration of the Independence of the Thirteen United States of North America*, composed by Thomas Jefferson, was subscribed by all the members who were willing to indulge the wish, to accomplish the glory, and to confront the danger of their country.[2] [July 4.]

This admirable production commenced in the following manner: — "When, in the course of human events, it becomes necessary for one people to dissolve the political bands which have connected them with another, and to assume among the powers of the earth the separate and equal station to which the laws of nature and of nature's God entitle them, a decent respect to the opinions of mankind requires that they should declare the causes which impel them to the separation.

"We hold these truths to be self-evident: — that all men are created equal; that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable rights; that among these are life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness; that to secure these rights governments are instituted among men, deriving their just power from the consent of the governed; that, whenever any form of government becomes destructive of these ends, it is the right of the people to alter or to abolish it, and to institute new government, laying its foundation on such principles, and organizing its powers in such form, as to them shall seem most likely to promote their safety and happiness. Prudence, indeed, will dictate that governments long established should not be changed

[1] *Annual Register for* 1776. Gordon. Rogers. Pitkin. Botta. On the 15th of June, the representatives of the people of New Hampshire voted unanimously that their delegates at the Continental Congress be instructed to join with the other colonies in declaring the Thirteen United Colonies *a free and independent state*, provided the regulation of their internal police be reserved to their own provincial assembly. On the 28th of June, chiefly by the influence of Charles Carroll of Carrollton, the assembly of Maryland declared its espousal of the project of independence. On the 3d of July, it was declared by unanimous vote of the Massachusetts assembly, "that, if congress shall think proper to declare the colonies independent, this house will approve of the measure."

[2] See Note XL., at the end of the volume.

for light and transient causes; and, accordingly, all experience hath shown that mankind are more disposed to suffer while evils are sufferable, than to right themselves by abolishing the forms to which they are accustomed."

After a recital, couched in strains at once simple, spirited, manly, and dignified, of the wrongs which the American States had endured from the government and people of Great Britain, the Declaration thus concluded:—"We must therefore acquiesce in the necessity which denounces our separation, and hold them, as we hold the rest of mankind, enemies in war,—in peace, friends.

"We, therefore, the representatives of the United States of America in general congress assembled, appealing to the Supreme Judge of the world for the rectitude of our intentions, do, in the name and by the authority of the good people of these colonies, solemnly publish and declare, that these United Colonies are, and of right ought to be, Free and Independent States; that they are absolved from all allegiance to the British crown, and that all political connection between them and the state of Great Britain is, and ought to be, totally dissolved; and that, as free and independent states, they have full power to levy war, conclude peace, contract alliances, establish commerce, and to do all other acts and things which independent states may of right do. And for the support of this Declaration, with a firm reliance on the protection of Divine Providence, we mutually pledge to each other our lives, our fortunes, and our sacred honor."[1]

Thus, at once, all the vague and various notions respecting the legitimate boundaries of royal prerogative or British supremacy, by which the Americans had been hitherto divided and perplexed, were finally discarded from the international controversy, which now presented only the one grand and simple question,—Whether the inhabitants of North America should in future exist as conquered colonists, or as a free and independent people.

This great transaction, involving at once the creation of a new empire, and the exposure of it in the very hour of its birth to the vindictive hostility of the most puissant monarchy in the world, was conducted in the metropolis of the State of Pennsylvania,—a city which had existed little more than ninety years, and whose extent of population would have entitled it to very little distinction in a European commonwealth,—the centre of Quakerism in America,—and of which the inhabitants were generally characterized by moderation of temper and sobriety of manners. Pennsylvania, after repeatedly opposing, was one of the latest of the provinces in assenting to, the project of independence. Hence, as well as from the privacy with which the deliberations of the congress were still conducted, no adventitious fervor was imparted to this assembly by the contagious vicinity of popular excitement, or the animating presence and sympathy of a crowded and admiring audience. In the congress thus sequestered from an influence of which the most enterprising assemblies in the world have acknowledged the powerful efficacy, the heroic or ambitious partisans of American independence were aware that the glory of the measure must be shared with all their colleagues; while the cautious and timid were conscious that the danger of it was equally extended to every individual who should sanc-

[1] The articles of confederation between the States, which defined the powers of congress, were not arranged and ratified till a later period. They were published almost contemporaneously with a royal proclamation (in England) enjoining a fast for *the deliverance of America from the tyranny and injustice of rebels, who* (so said the proclamation) *had assumed there the exercise of arbitrary power.*

tion the Declaration. Every man, indeed, who signalized his espousal of this decisive measure, irrevocably staked his life and fortune on the achievement of his country's freedom, and linked his own fate to the political destiny of North America.[1]

The Declaration of Independence was proclaimed by order of the congress, and received with shouts of applause, and an instant and eager expulsion of every badge of royal authority and British connection in all the confederated States; and, on the evening of its arrival at New York, a leaden statue of the king of Britain, which had been erected in former days, was hurled from its pedestal and given up to be melted into bullets for the use of the American army. The enthusiasm, with which the great measure announced to them was hailed and embraced by the troops of this army, showed how fully they appreciated the altered and exalted attitude which it imparted to their own condition and to that of their country.[2]

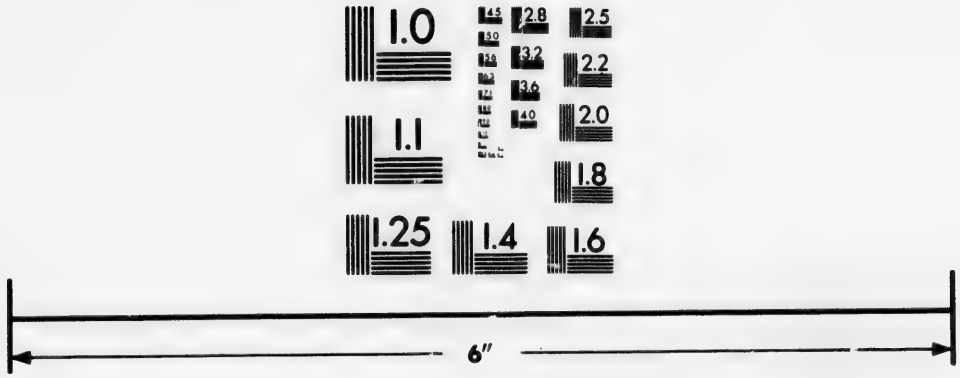
In reviewing these remarkable tides in the affairs of men, it is difficult to resist the temptation of speculating on the consequences that might have resulted from a conduct and policy different from that which was actually pursued. Had Britain, after the treaty of Paris, discerned the change which her relation with America had actually undergone, and liberally recognized it; had she, instead of aggravating the pressure of her commercial restrictions, and introducing new regulations still more arbitrary and severe, begun with prevenient grace to relax those bonds; and finally, acknowledging the national maturity of her colonies, declared them independent; and, trusting to their grateful friendship, sought to negotiate with them a commercial treaty beneficial to her own people, — would the consequences of this policy, more magnanimous than any nation had ever yet shown itself equal to,[3] have proved more conducive than the scenes which actually ensued to the happiness of Britain, America, and mankind in general? To suppose so would be to impeach the wisdom or beneficence of the dominion exerted by Providence over the passions of men and the stream of events. As the commonwealths of America did not owe their existence, so they were destined not to owe their independence, to European grace and liberality. If Britain had merely persisted in her original course of policy, without aggravating its severity, the *Americans*, notwithstanding, would doubtless have revolted in process of time; but in

[1] See Note XLI., at the end of the volume.

[2] *Annual Register for* 1776. Botta. Burk. In Virginia, the Declaration of Independence was welcomed with transports of joy. The provincial assembly instantly commanded that the name of the king should be expunged from every formulary of public prayer, and that a new and appropriate seal of the commonwealth should be framed. For this Virginian seal various devices were suggested. Dr. Franklin proposed a figure of Moses standing on the shore of the Red Sea, and extending his hand over the waves collected for the destruction of Pharaoh, with the motto, *Rebellion to tyrants is obedience to God.* Jefferson suggested a different device, with the motto, *Rex est qui regem non habet.* The device actually adopted was suggested by Wythe, and disclosed on one side a figure of Virtue, the genius of the commonwealth, treading on Tyranny, represented by a man prostrate, a crown fallen from his head, a broken chain in his left hand and a scourge in his right, with the motto, *Sic semper tyrannis;* on the reverse, a group, of which the principal figures were the goddess of Liberty and Ceres holding a cornucopia, with the motto, *Deus nobis hæc otia fecit.* In all the States the formula of legal writs was changed from "George, by the grace of God king," to "The people of America, by the grace of God free and independent."

[3] "There are instances in which individual rulers, weary of power, have freely resigned it; but no people ever yet voluntarily surrendered authority over a subject nation." Heeren's *Reflections on the Politics of Ancient Greece.* It has been said, with melancholy semblance of truth, that *A nation has no heart.*

IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

2.8
2.5
3.2
3.6
2.2
2.0
1.8
1.1
1.0

that case, most probably, either the revolt would have been partial, irregular, and proportionally ineffective; or, if it had been general, it would, from the increased growth and strength of the provinces, have been instantly successful. The sudden increase in the mode and measure of British domination caused all the States to revolt simultaneously; and the long and arduous struggle that ensued served to knit them together in strong conjunction and prepare them for permanent federal association.

NOTES

TO

THE SECOND VOLUME.

NOTE I. Page 58.

The people of New England were not in this respect more credulous than the inhabitants of the parent state. A shock of an earthquake having been experienced in London on the 8th of February, 1750, and another somewhat more violent on the 8th of the following March, a common soldier, disordered in his intellects, began to preach in the streets, "and boldly prophesied that the next shock would happen on the same day of April, and totally destroy the cities of London and Westminster. Considering the infectious nature of fear and superstition, and the emphatic manner in which the imagination had been prepared and prepossessed, it was no wonder that the prediction of this illiterate enthusiast should have contributed in a great measure to augment the general terror. The churches were crowded with penitent sinners; the sons of riot and profligacy were overawed with sobriety and decorum. The streets no longer resounded with execrations, or the noise of brutal licentiousness; and the hand of charity was liberally opened. Those whom fortune had enabled to retire from the devoted city fled to the country in hurry and precipitation, insomuch that the highways were encumbered with horses and carriages. Many who had in the beginning combated these groundless fears with the weapons of reason and ridicule began insensibly to imbibe the contagion, and felt their hearts fail in proportion as the hour of probation approached; even science and philosophy were not proof against the unaccountable effects of this communication. In after ages it will hardly be believed, that, on the evening of the 8th of April, the open fields that skirt the metropolis were filled with an incredible number of people assembled in chairs, in chaises, and coaches, as well as on foot, who waited in the most fearful suspense until morning and the return of day disproved the truth of the dreaded prophecy. Then their fears vanished; they returned to their respective habitations in a transport of joy; and were soon reconciled to their abandoned vices, which they seemed to resume with redoubled affection, and once more bade defiance to the vengeance of Heaven." Smollett.

NOTE II. Page 69.

Various European bards have essayed, more or less successfully, to wake, or at least to imitate, the lyre of the Indian Muse. The songs of Outalissi, in Campbell's *Gertrude of Wyoming*, will outlast all the genuine productions of Indian poets, and probably the Indian race itself. Of these European compositions, the

best (in point of fidelity to Indian sentiment and character) that I have ever met with is a little German poem of Schiller, of which I have been furnished with the following English version by my friend, Sir John Herschel. It is entitled,

THE DEATH-SONG OF A NADOWESSEE[1] CHIEF.

See, where upon the mat he sits
  Erect before his door,
With just the same majestic air
  That once in life he wore.

But where is fled his strength of limb,
  The whirlwind of his breath,
To the Great Spirit when he sent
  The peace-pipe's mounting wreath?

Where are those falcon eyes, which late
  Along the plain could trace,
Along the grass's dewy wave,
  The reindeer's printed pace?

Those legs, which once with matchless speed
  Flew through the drifted snow,
Surpassed the stag's unwearied course,
  Outran the mountain roe?

Those arms, once used with might and main
  The stubborn bow to twang?
See, see, their nerves are slack at last,
  All motionless they hang.

'T is well with him, for he is gone
  Where snow no more is found,
Where the gay thorn's perpetual bloom
  Decks all the fields around;

Where wild birds sing from every spray,
  Where deer come sweeping by,
Where fish, from every lake, afford
  A plentiful supply.

With spirits now he feasts above,
  And leaves us here alone
To celebrate his valiant deeds
  And round his grave to moan.

Sound the death-song, bring forth the gifts,
  The last gifts of the dead, —
Let all which yet may yield him joy
  Within his grave be laid.

The hatchet place beneath his head,
  Still red with hostile blood;
And add, because the way is long,
  The bear's fat limbs for food.

The scalping-knife beside him lay,
  With paints of gorgeous dye,
That in the land of souls his form
  May shine triumphantly.

Very similar to the foregoing effusion is an Indian declamation in honor of a dead chief, preserved in Davis's *Travels in America*.

NOTE III. Page 96.

THE French traveller Volney, in his *View of the United States*, thus contrasts the English, German, and Dutch colonists of America with those of French extraction.

"The settler of British or German descent is of a cold and phlegmatic temper,

[1] Of this tribe some notice occurs in Carver's *Travels in North America*.

and deliberately forms a plan of husbandry which he steadily pursues. He attends sedulously to every thing that can influence the success of his projects. He never becomes idle, till his end is accomplished, and he has put his affairs on a good footing.

"The impetuosity of the Frenchman leads him to embrace precipitately any plausible or flattering project, and he proceeds in his career without laboriously computing expenses and contingencies. With more genius for his portion, he laughs at the dulness and caution of his Dutch and English neighbour, whom he stigmatizes as an ox; but his neighbour will sedately and wisely reply, that the patient ox will plough much better than the mettlesome racer. And, in truth, the Frenchman's fire easily slackens, his patience is worn out, and, after changing, correcting, and altering his plans, he finally abandons his project in despair.

"His neighbour is in no haste to rise in the morning, but, when fairly up, he applies steadily to work. At breakfast he gives cold and laconic orders to his wife, who obeys them without contradiction or demur. Weather permitting, he goes to plough or chop wood; if the weather be bad, he prosecutes his in-door tasks, looks over the contents of his house and granary, repairs his doors or windows, drives pegs or nails, makes chairs or tables, and is always busied in rendering his habitation more comfortable and secure. With these habits, he is nowise averse to sell his farm for a good price, and remove, even in old age, still farther into the forest, cheerfully recommencing all the labors of a new settlement. There will he spend years in felling trees, building a hut and a barn, and in fencing and sowing his fields. His wife, as placid and patient as himself, will second all his labors; and they will sometimes pass six months together without seeing the face of a stranger. In four or five years, comfort, convenience, and ease will grow up around them, and a competence will reward their solitary toils.

"The Frenchman, on the contrary, will be up betimes, for the pleasure of surveying and talking over matters with his wife, whose counsel he demands. Their constant agreement would be quite a miracle; the wife dissents, argues, and wrangles, and the husband has his own way or gives up to her, and is irritated and disheartened. Home, perhaps, grows irksome; so he takes his gun, and goes a shooting, or a travelling, or to chat with a neighbour. If he stay at home, he either whiles away the hours in good-humored talk, or he scolds and quarrels. Neighbours interchange visits; for to visit and talk are so necessary to a Frenchman, that, along the frontiers of Canada and Louisiana, there is nowhere a settler of that nation to be found, but within sight or reach of some other. On asking how far off the remotest settler was, I have been told, 'He is in the woods with the bears, and with nobody to talk to.'

"This temper is the most characteristic difference between the two nations; and the more I reflect upon this subject, the firmer is my persuasion, that the Americans and the northern Europeans, from whom they are descended, chiefly owe their success in arts and commerce to habitual taciturnity. In silence they collect, arrange, and digest their thoughts, and have leisure to calculate the future; they acquire habits of clear thinking and accurate expression; and hence there is more decision in their conduct, both in public and domestic exigencies; and they at once see the way to their point more clearly and pursue it more directly.

"On the contrary, the Frenchman's ideas evaporate in ceaseless chat; he exposes himself to bickering and contradiction; stimulates the garrulity of his wife and sisters; involves himself in quarrels with his neighbours; and finds, in the end, that his life has been squandered away without use or benefit."

Volney would have found an appropriate text to the foregoing discourse in this sentence of Solomon:—"In all labor there is profit; but the talk of the lips tendeth only to penury."

NOTE IV. Page 121.

The following extracts from the first part of John Wesley's *Journal* illustrate the manners of himself and some of his fellow-passengers.

"Now we begin to be a little regular. Our common way of living was this. From four of the morning till five, each of us used private prayer. From five to seven, we read the Bible together, carefully comparing it (that we might not lean to our own understandings) with the writings of the earliest ages. At seven, we breakfast. At eight, were the public prayers. From nine to twelve, I usually learned German, and M. Delamotte, Greek; my brother writ sermons, and Mr. Ingham instructed the children. At twelve, we met to give an account to one another of what we had done since our last meeting, and what we designed to do before our next. About one, we dined. The time from dinner to four we spent in reading to those of whom each of us had taken charge, or in speaking to them severally, as need required. At four, were the evening prayers, — when either the second lesson was explained, or the children were catechized and instructed before the congregation. From five to six, we again used private prayer. From six to seven, I read in our cabin to two or three of the English passengers, and each of my brethren to a few more in theirs. At seven, I joined with the Germans in their public service; while Mr. Ingham was reading between the decks to as many as desired to hear. At eight, we met again to exhort and instruct one another. Between nine and ten, we went to bed, where neither the roaring of the sea, nor the motion of the ship, could take away the refreshing sleep which God gave us."

Having described a storm at sea, and condemned himself as unfit, because he found himself unwilling, to die, he thus alludes to the more lively and triumphant faith of the Moravians: — "I had long before observed the great seriousness of their behaviour. Of their humility they had given a continual proof, by performing those servile offices for the other passengers, which none of the English would undertake; for which they desired and would receive no pay, saying, 'It was good for their proud hearts,' and 'their Saviour had done more for them.' And every day had given them occasion of showing a meekness which no injury could move. If they were pushed, struck, or thrown down, they rose again and went away; but no complaint was found in their mouth. There was now an opportunity of trying whether they were delivered from the spirit of fear, as well as from that of pride, anger, and revenge. In the midst of the psalm wherewith their service began, the sea broke over us, split the mainsail in pieces, covered the ship, and poured in between the decks, as if the great deep had already swallowed us up. A terrible screaming began among the English. The Germans calmly sung on. I asked one of them afterwards, 'Was you not afraid?' He answered, 'I thank God, no.' I asked, 'But were not your women and children afraid?' He replied mildly, 'No; our women and children are not afraid to die.'" At the time when the danger seemed most imminent, and the vessel was expected immediately to founder, an infant was brought to Wesley to be baptized. "It put me in mind," he says, "of Jeremiah's buying the field when the Chaldeans were on the point of destroying Jerusalem, and seemed a pledge of the mercy God designed to show us, even in the land of the living."

Of the manners of the Germans in Georgia Wesley subsequently gives this representation: — "They were always employed, always cheerful themselves, and in good-humor with one another." He adds: — "They met this day to consult concerning the affairs of their church; Mr. Spangenberg being shortly to go to Pennsylvania, and Bishop Nitschman to return to Germany. After several hours spent in conference and prayer, they proceeded to the election and ordination of a bishop. The great simplicity as well as solemnity of the whole

almost made me forget the seventeen hundred years between, and imagine myself in one of those assemblies where form and state were not, but Paul the tent-maker or Peter the fisherman presided, yet with the demonstration of the Spirit and of power."

NOTE V. Page 129.

"If the reigns of many European proprietors of slaves," says Dr. Moore, the traveller and novelist, "were faithfully recorded, it is much to be feared that the capricious cruelties which disgrace those of Caligula and Nero would not seem so incredible as they now do." Charles Wesley, who visited South Carolina, on his return from Georgia, in the year 1736, inserts the following remarks in his *Journal:* — "I had observed much and heard more of the cruelty of masters towards their negroes; but now I received an authentic account of some horrid instances thereof. I saw, myself, that the giving a slave to a child of its own age, to tyrannize over, to abuse and beat out of sport, was a common practice; nor is it strange, that, being thus trained up in cruelty, they should afterwards arrive at such perfection in it." After describing various modes of penal torture that were inflicted on the slaves, and even talked of with indifference by many of the planters, Charles Wesley adds: — "Another much applauded punishment is drawing the teeth of their slaves. It is universally known here that Colonel Lynch cut off the legs of a poor negro, and that he kills several of them every year by his barbarities. It were endless to recount all the shocking instances of diabolical cruelty, which these men, as they call themselves, daily practise upon their fellow-creatures, and that upon the most trivial occasions. I shall only mention one more, related to me by an eyewitness. Mr. Hill, a dancing-master in Charleston, whipped a female slave so long that she fell down at his feet, in appearance dead; when, by the help of a physician, she was so far recovered as to show some signs of life, he repeated the whipping with equal rigor, and concluded the punishment with dropping scalding wax upon her flesh. Her crime was over-filling a tea-cup. These horrid cruelties are the less to be wondered at, because the law itself, in effect, countenances and allows them to kill their slaves, by the ridiculous penalty appointed for it. The penalty is about seven pounds, — one half of which is usually remitted, if the criminal inform against himself." MS. *Journal of C. Wesley.*

Hewit has drawn a melancholy picture of the general treatment of slaves in South Carolina at this period. Extreme and even wanton cruelty was ordinarily inflicted on them. The slaves of humane masters were often worse treated than others, for they were abandoned to overseers. Numbers skulked in the woods, where they were hunted and shot like wild beasts. The planters withheld from them all moral and religious instruction; declaring that negroes were an inferior race of beings, far below the intellectual stature of white men. They indulged their ostentation in maintaining a numerous retinue of domestic slaves; and nothing was more common than for guests at banquets to declaim upon the brutality and treachery of the race to which the sable attendants standing by and hearing the discourse belonged. Yet Hewit extols the general benevolence and humanity of that generation of the planters of Carolina. It was unfortunate for many of them that they had suddenly attained great wealth, and that the insolent and imperious temper incident to rapid prosperity was not mitigated by a liberal education.

After the American Revolution, the farther importation of negroes into South Carolina was forbidden by law; and the proportions between the freemen and the slaves underwent a change highly promotive of the security and the humanity of the one and of the comfort and consideration enjoyed by the other. Indeed,

a law to the same effect had been enacted by the assembly of South Carolina several years before the Revolution; but it was disallowed by the royal governor, as contrary to the policy and injurious to the trade of Great Britain.

Traces of the cruelty with which slaves were anciently treated in South Carolina have lingered, it must be confessed, till a very late period, both in the laws of this province and the manners of its inhabitants. During this nineteenth century, slaves were doomed to be burned alive for murder, burglary, or fire-raising. In the year 1808, two negroes were actually burned alive over a slow fire in the market-place of Charleston. Bristed's *America and her Resources.* "The grand jury of Charleston, for the term of January, 1816, reported, as a most serious evil, that instances of negro homicide were common within the city for many years; the parties exercising unlimited control as masters and mistresses, indulging their cruel passions in the barbarous treatment of slaves," &c., &c., "and thereby bringing on the community, the state, and the city the contumely and reproach of the civilized world." Warden. They who entertain such a sense of the evil will, it may be hoped, in time find a remedy for it.

We have seen the British found and rear a settlement of free negroes at Sierra Leone, the very spot, where, two centuries before, they first participated in the slave-trade. And, more recently, we have beheld the Americans transport to the settlement of Liberia, in Africa, the emancipated descendants of those negroes whom their ancestors had procured as slaves from the African shore. Absurd and delusive, indeed, has this latter experiment proved.

What strange inconsistencies may coexist with even the worst evils of slavery is strikingly displayed in the life of that distinguished Roman who united all the abstractions and refinements of the Pythagorean philosophy with the most odious inhumanity to his slaves. Plutarch's *Life of Marcus Cato.* According to Aulus Gellius, Plutarch himself could insult with philosophical discourse the slave whom he was causing to writhe under the torture of the lash. But none of the truly great men of North America have been either severe or even willing slave-masters. Washington, writing to his friends Morris and Mercer, in 1786, protested that he would never again purchase a slave, and that he ardently desired the abolition of negro slavery. Patrick Henry and Jefferson, as we have seen, entertained the same views and sentiments. Franklin attacked the system of negro slavery by an ironical defence of the practice of Christian slavery in Morocco. During the Revolutionary War, John Jay declared, that, "Till America embrace this measure [abolition of slavery] her prayers to Heaven for liberty will be impious." Some of the most distinguished champions of the Revolution emancipated their slaves by testamentary bequest, — as Judith, the deliverer of Israel, prior to her death, "made her maid free."

NOTE VI. Page 142.

The following description of a Georgian planter's method of life occurs in the *American Museum for* 1790.

"About six in the morning, he quits his bed and orders his horse to be got ready; he then swallows a dram of bitters to prevent the ill effects of the early fogs, and sets out upon the tour of his plantation. In this route he takes an opportunity to stop at the negro-houses, and if he sees any lurking about home, whose business it is to be in the field, he immediately inquires the cause. If no sufficient cause be given, he applies his rattan whip to the shoulders of the slave, and obliges him instantly to decamp. If sickness be alleged, the negro is immediately shut up in the sick-house, bled, purged, and kept on low diet, till he either dies or gets into a way of recovery. After having examined the overseer relative to the

welfare of the poultry, hogs, cattle, &c., he proceeds round the farm, takes a cursory view of the rice, corn, or indigo fields, and examines into the state of the fences and other inclosures. About the hour of eight, his circuit is finished, when, before he alights at his own door, a tribe of young negroes in the primitive state of nakedness rush out to meet him and receive the horse.

"Breakfast being over, he again mounts a fresh horse, and rides to the county-town or the first public-house in the neighbourhood, where he talks politics, inquires the price of produce, makes bargains, plays a game at all-fours, or appoints days for horse-races or boxing-matches. About four o'clock, he returns, bringing with him some friends or acquaintances to dinner. If the company be lively or agreeable, he rarely rises from table before sunset. If it be a wet evening, or the weather be very disagreeable, cards or conversation employ him till bed-time. If it be fair and no moonlight, after an early supper, a fire is kindled in a pan, and two or three of them set out, stored with some bottles of brandy, preceded by a negro who carries the fire, in order to shoot deer in the woods; as those creatures are so attracted by a light, that they constantly stand still and fix their eyes upon the blaze, by the reflection of which from the eyeball they are easily discovered and shot.

"About midnight, they return, according to luck, with or without game; their shins and faces sadly scratched, and themselves fit for nothing but to be put to bed. This is the general routine of existence among such of the Georgians as live in the more retired and woody parts of the State. Others have their weekly societies for sentimental and colloquial amusement. As to trade and business, it is entirely managed by overseers and factors." Winterbotham.

NOTE VII. Page 155.

Some readers, unacquainted with Brainerd's *Journal*, may be gratified by the following extracts from it, illustrative of his ministrations among the Indians.

"I explained the story of the rich man and Lazarus, Luke xvi., 19. The word made powerful impression upon many, especially while I discoursed of the blessedness of Lazarus in Abraham's bosom. This, I could perceive, affected them much more than what I spoke of the rich man's torments. And thus it has been usually with them. They have appeared much more affected with the comfortable than the dreadful truths of God's word." "There were sundry Indians newly come here, who had frequently lived among Quakers, and, being more civilized than the generality of the Indians, they had imbibed some of the Quakers' principles, especially this, — that, if men would but live according to the dictates of their own consciences (or the *light within*), there is no doubt of their salvation. These persons I found much worse to deal with than those who are wholly under Pagan darkness, who make no pretences to knowledge in Christianity, nor have any self-righteous foundation to stand upon. However, they all, except one, appeared now convinced that this was not sufficient to salvation, since Christ himself had so declared in the case of the young man." "An Indian woman came to me, discovering an unusual joy in her countenance; and when I inquired the reason of it, she replied, *that God had made her feel that it was right for him to do as he pleased with all things.*" An Indian conjuror, having been converted, declared that he felt that some mysterious power which he formerly possessed had now wholly departed from him. "Another old Indian having threatened to bewitch me and my people, this man presently challenged him to do his worst, telling him that he himself had been an eminent conjuror, and that notwithstanding, as soon as he felt the word of God in his heart, his power of conjuring immediately left him." "It is worthy of remark, that numbers of

these people are brought to a strict compliance with the rules of morality and sobriety, and to a conscientious performance of the external duties of Christianity, without having them frequently inculcated, or the contrary vices particularly exposed. God was pleased to give the grand gospel truths of the total depravity of human nature, and the glory and sufficiency of the remedy provided in Christ, such an influence on their minds, that their lives were quickly reformed, without my spending time in repeated harangues upon external duties." "When these truths were felt at heart, there was no vice unreformed, no external duty neglected. Drunkenness, the darling vice, was broken off, and scarce an instance of it known for months together. The reformation was general, and all springing from the internal influence of divine truths upon their hearts; not because they had heard particular vices specifically exposed and repeatedly spoken against. So that happy experience, as well as the word of God, and the example of Christ and his apostles, have taught me that the preaching which is suited to awaken in mankind a lively apprehension of their depravity and misery, to excite them earnestly to seek after a change of heart, and to fly for refuge to Christ as the only hope set before them, is likely to be most successful toward the reformation of their external conduct. I have found that close addresses, and solemn applications of divine truths to the conscience, strike death to the root of all vice; while smooth and plausible harangues upon moral virtues and external duties, at best, do no more than lop off the branches of corruption."

NOTE VIII. Page 156.

Cicero inculcated the same maxim, though he was unable to illustrate its efficacy with equal patience and detail. "*Non intelligunt homines*," says the Roman orator, "*quantum vectigal est parsimonia.*"

Franklin's lessons of parsimony have been severely censured by some writers, who charge him with teaching mankind to consider the replenishment of their purses as the chief end of their being. This censure, though exaggerated, is not entirely without foundation. Economy or parsimony, like the string of a necklace, derives a value more important than its own intrinsic worth from the objects with which it is subserviently connected. It is difficult to panegyrize one virtue, without bestowing disproportioned praise on it; and Franklin, in his eagerness to withstand the pernicious influence of prodigality, seems at times to have forgotten that avarice is also an infirmity of human nature.

Even in America, neither the genius nor the character of Franklin has commanded unanimous praise. He is characterized by a late American writer, as "a singular composition of formal gayety, of sprightly gravity, of grave wit, of borrowed learning, of vicious morality, of patriotic treachery, of political folly, of casuistical sagacity, and republican voluptuousness." Marshall's *History of Kentucky*. Of some of these expressions I am unable to divine the meaning. In one sense, all learning *must* be borrowed. Of plagiarism, or affectation in the display of his learning (except, perhaps, his familiarity with the French language, which was the acquisition of his old age), Franklin cannot be justly accused. His theoretical morality was not vicious. It was very refined and elevated; though devoid of the dignity of religious origin, and of the authority of religious motive. His practical morality was neither lofty nor pure. In his *Memoirs* he represents himself as a fugitive in early life from his family,—the infidel son of pious parents, — the subverter of the faith of his friends and associates, — and regardless of virtue and honor in his intercourse with women. He married a woman whom he had previously deserted, after gaining her affections, and who, in the interval, had become the wife of another man, of whose death neither Franklin nor she pos-

sessed any assurance. Doubtless he confesses his faults, — but with little more penitence than we find in the *Confessions* of Rousseau. His embezzlement of the money intrusted to his keeping by a friend, though corrected as far as possible by subsequent restitution, yet, as being an *untradesmanlike* action, seems to have given him more concern than the irreparable injury he did to the faith and morals of several young men, his companions. His complaints in old age of the ingratitude of his country, and the inadequate recompense he received from it for services which had gained him immortal fame, are unworthy of his character and genius. Before he stooped to so mean a strain, he had depressed his view to the contemplation and calculation of the pecuniary value of his exertions. Many persons have read his *Memoirs*, without being aware that the son to whom they are addressed was not his legitimate offspring.

One of the finest tributes that Franklin's fame has ever received was rendered by the printers of Nantes, in the year 1790, when, assembling in consequence of the intelligence of his death, they (among other expressions honorable to his memory) embraced by unanimous vote a resolve, that, as Franklin had never printed an obscene or immoral line, so they, in admiring respect and extension of such example, would rather destroy their types and printing-presses than ever prostitute them to applications unfriendly to the worth and welfare of the human race. Camille Mellinet's *Commune et Milice de Nantes*, Vol. VI.

It is remarkable that Franklin, the strenuous advocate of parsimony in the reward of public services, and who even maintained that the chief officers of a commonwealth ought to serve their country gratuitously, should have distinguished himself above all his countrymen by the bitterness with which he lamented and condemned the inadequate remuneration of his own services. So difficult is it for any man, whether in sentiment or in action, to treat others altogether as he would have others treat himself. Whether America be really a loser by her parsimony in rewarding public services is a question which it is much easier to discuss ingeniously than to solve satisfactorily. Men of talent, and of enlarged rather than elevated minds, must ever feel themselves interested in maintaining the affirmative. Certainly (in theory, at least) the American principle of remuneration tends to exalt virtue above mere talent, and to purify the desire of fame. On this subject, an interesting statistical work of an American writer presents the following observations: — "One important cause of the stability and peace of this State (Connecticut) is, that the salaries annexed to all public offices are small. Various causes have united in producing this fact. The inhabitants were at first few and poor, and unable to give any other. When the salaries were enlarged to their present standard, they were worth three times their present value. Now they are quite inadequate to the decent support of those who receive them. After they were once established, there were always reasons which could be conveniently alleged against increasing them. To refuse voting for the expenditure of public money is always the road to popularity for little men; and there are always men of a secondary standing in society, who hope, that, when offices are cheap, they may fall to themselves, because they will be declined by their superiors. There is, however, a share of wisdom in this scheme. Whenever public offices are attended with great emoluments, they are coveted by every man of ambition, avarice, or pleasure. The sight of the prize rouses in every such man an energy which is excessive, and but too commonly able to compass its object. In the early and sound periods of their republic, the Romans pursued the same policy as the Americans. Their public offices were accompanied by small emoluments. The reward held out to the candidate was the esteem of the community. This was a prize whose value could be comprehended only by good sense and worth." Dwight.

It has been said, and doubtless with some truth, that republics are ungrateful. Whoever honestly serves a republic devotes himself to the welfare of mankind,

and ought to have declined the service, if, in addition to the happiness of coöperating with great and generous designs, he cannot be contented with the gratitude and esteem of the candid, the wise, and the good. Sallust (*Bell. Jugurthin.*) applauds the republican policy of cherishing a more earnest remembrance of injuries than of benefits. Valerius Maximus (Lib. V., Cap. 3) apologizes for it, and contends that public is less blamable than private ingratitude. The people of free states, always prone to suspect their conspicuous fellow-citizens of *encroaching ambition*, easily conceive jealousy, even of their acknowledged benefactors, scan the career of public officers with a vigilance of observation little akin to benignity, and gladly reduce and beat down every aspiring pretension to superior merit and national gratitude. The Athenians sickened of the unceasing praise of Aristides; and the Parisians experienced a similar corruption of sentiment from the hyperbolical panegyric with which Mirabeau and his associates, with diabolical ingenuity, overloaded the character of La Fayette.

NOTE IX. Page 196.

"THE most remarkable circumstance attending the progress of this bill, which made its way through both houses and obtained the royal assent, was the number of contradictory petitions in favor and in prejudice of it, while it remained under consideration. The tanners of leather in and about the town of Sheffield, in Yorkshire, represented, that, if the bill should pass, the English iron would be undersold; consequently a great number of furnaces and forges would be discontinued; in that case, the woods used for fuel would stand uncut, and the tanners be deprived of oak bark sufficient for the continuance and support of their occupation. They, nevertheless, owned, that, should the duty be removed from pig-iron only, no such consequences could be apprehended; because, should the number of furnaces be lessened, that of forges would be increased. This was likewise the plea urged in divers remonstrances by masters of iron-works, gentlemen, and freeholders, who had tracts of woodland in their possession. The owners, proprietors, and farmers of furnaces and iron-forges belonging to Sheffield and its neighbourhood enlarged upon the great expense they had incurred in erecting and supporting iron-works, by means of which great numbers of his Majesty's subjects were comfortably supported. They expressed apprehension, that, should the bill pass into a law, it could not in any degree lessen the consumption of Swedish iron, which was used for purposes which neither the American nor British iron would answer; but that the proposed encouragement, considering the plenty and cheapness of wood in America, would enable the colonies to undersell the British iron, a branch of traffic which would be totally destroyed, to the ruin of many thousand laborers, who would be compelled to seek their livelihood in foreign countries. They likewise suggested, that, if all the iron-manufacturers of Great Britain should be obliged to depend upon a supply of iron from the plantations, which must ever be rendered precarious by the hazard of the seas and the enemy, the manufacture would probably decay for want of materials, and many thousand families be reduced to want and misery. On the other hand, the ironmongers and smiths belonging to the flourishing town of Birmingham, in Warwickshire, presented a petition, declaring that the bill would be of great benefit to the trade of the nation, as it would enable the colonists to make larger returns of their own produce, and encourage them to take a greater quantity of the British manufactures. They affirmed that all the iron-works in the island of Great Britain did not supply half the quantity of that metal sufficient to carry on the manufacture; that, if this deficiency could be supplied from the colonies in America, the importation from Sweden would cease, and considerable

sums of money be saved to the nation. They observed that the importation of iron from America could no more affect the iron-works and freeholders of the kingdom, than the like quantity imported from any other country; but they prayed that the people of America might be restrained from erecting slitting or rolling-mills, or forges for plating iron, as they would interfere with the manufactures of Great Britain.

"Many remonstrances to the same effect were presented from different parts of the kingdom; and it appeared, upon the most exact inquiry, that the encouragement of American iron would prove extremely beneficial to the kingdom, as it had been found, upon trial, applicable to all the uses of Swedish iron, and as good in every respect as the produce of that country." Smollett.

NOTE X. Page 202.

In the year 1749, a singular congregation of scattered members of the human race was occasioned in North America by the missionary labors of the Moravians. "In the summer of this year," says the historian of New Jersey, "three natives of Greenland passed through the province, dressed in seal-skins with the hair on, after the manner of their own country. They consisted of two young men and a young woman converted to the Christian religion by the Moravian missionaries. They had left Greenland about two years before in a Moravian ship (which carried a house ready-framed for worship to be erected there, that country affording no wood for building), and had since visited the brethren in several parts of Europe, as England, Holland, and Germany. Their eyes and hair were black, like the Indians here; but their complexion somewhat lighter. Two Indian converts from the Moravian mission at Berbice, near Surinam, were also with them. They went together to the Moravian settlement at Bethlehem, in Pennsylvania, where they met with some Delaware and Mohican Indians, converts also of the Moravians; and though their native lands are so vastly remote as the latitude of 5° 41′ and 65° North, yet what they observed of each other's eyes, hair, and complexion convinced them that they were all of the same race. They could find, however, no similitude in their several languages." S. Smith. Kalm notices the meeting of these three races, and adds, "I had no opportunity of seeing them; but all those who had seen them, and whom I conversed with, thought that they had plainly perceived a similarity in their features and shape; the Greenlanders being only somewhat smaller. They concluded from hence, that all these three kinds of Americans were the posterity of one and the same descendant of Noah, or that they were perhaps yet more nearly related."

NOTE XI. Page 209.

"Vermont has been settled entirely from the other States of New England. The inhabitants have of course the New England character, with no other difference but what is accidental. In the formation of colonies, those who are first inclined to emigrate are usually such as have met with difficulties at home. These are commonly joined by persons who, having large families and small farms, are induced, for the sake of settling their children comfortably, to seek for new and cheaper lands. To both are always added the discontented, the enterprising, the ambitious, and the covetous. Many of the first, and some of all these classes, are found in every new American country, within ten years after its settlement has commenced. From this period, kindred, friendship, and former

neighbourhood prompt others to follow them. Others still are allured by the prospect of gain presented in every new country to the sagacious, from the purchase and sale of lands; while not a small number are influenced by the brilliant stories which everywhere are told concerning most tracts during the early progress of their settlement. A considerable part of all who *begin* the cultivation of the wilderness may be denominated foresters or pioneers. The business of these persons is no other than to cut down trees, build log-houses, lay open forested grounds to cultivation, and prepare the way for those who come after them. These men cannot live in regular society. They are impatient of the restraints of law, religion, and morality; grumble against the taxes by which rulers, ministers, and schoolmasters are supported; and complain incessantly as well as bitterly of the extortions of mechanics, farmers, merchants, and physicians, to whom they are always indebted." "In the wilderness to which they have retreated, they must either work or starve. They accordingly cut down some trees, and *girdle* other; they furnish themselves with an ill-built log-house and a worse barn; and reduce a part of the forest into fields half-inclosed and half-cultivated. On the scanty provision thus afforded they feed a few cattle, with which, and the supplemental produce of the chase, they contrive to keep their families alive.

"A farm thus far cleared promises immediate subsistence to a better husbandman, who is induced to purchase it by the little advantages which have already been imparted to it, though he would not plant himself in an absolute wilderness. The proprietor is always ready to sell; for he loves this irregular, adventurous, half-working, and half-lounging life; and hates the sober industry and prudent economy by which his bush-pasture might be changed into a farm, and himself raised by thrift to independence. Receiving for his improvements more money than he ever before possessed, and a price for the soil somewhat enhanced by surrounding settlements, he willingly quits his house to build another like it, and his farm, to girdle trees, hunt, and saunter in another place." "The second proprietor is commonly a farmer; and, with an industry and spirit deserving no small commendation, changes the desert into a fruitful field. This change is accomplished much more rapidly in some places than in others; as various causes, often accidental, operate. In some instances, a settlement is begun by farmers, and assumes the aspect of regular society from its commencement. This, to some extent, is always the fact. Yet the foresters constitute a part, and frequently the majority, of the original inhabitants of every new settlement."[1]

"In a political view, the emigration of these foresters is of very serious utility to the ancient settlements. All countries contain restless inhabitants; men impatient of labor, and readier to contract debts than to pay them; who would rather talk than work; whose vanity persuades them that they are wise, and prevents them from discovering that they are fools; who have nothing to lose, and therefore expect to be gainers by every scramble, and, of course, spend their lives in

[1] I have taken some liberty (as little as possible) with the language of this author, which, in spite of his sense, talent, and learning, is invariably prolix, and frequently quaint, vulgar, and indistinct. Dwight possessed all the strong corporate feelings and prejudices, which, in Europe, are so frequently attached to the professional scholar and divine; and viewed with little indulgence a state of society, in which, from the first, a fixed and liberal provision was not made for clergymen and schoolmasters How different his representation of the *backwoodsmen* of the British settlements from that of Volney! — which, notwithstanding, he eagerly transcribes, in another portion of his work, and proudly appeals to, as a confession of the moral superiority of his countrymen to the colonial progeny of France. Williams, the historian of Vermont, thus celebrates the dignity of that condition of life by which the colonization of this province has been extended: — "Mathematicians have measured and settled the bounds of the solar system; but the new settler has, in fact, enlarged the bounds of the habitable creation. The philosophers have expanded our minds with the ideas and evidence that other planets are inhabited; but the simple and honest farmer has made the earth a place for more inhabitants than it ever had before. And while the astronomers are so justly celebrating the discoveries and the new planet of Herschel, all mankind should rejoice that the peasant in the wilderness has found out a way to make our planet bear more men."

disturbing others, with the hope of gaining something for themselves. Under despotic governments, they are awed into quiet; but in every free community, they create, to a greater or less extent, continual turmoil, and have often subverted the peace, liberty, and happiness of their fellow-citizens. In the Roman commonwealth, as before in the republics of Greece, they were emptied out, as soldiers, upon the surrounding countries, and left the sober inhabitants in comparative quiet at home."

"The institutions and the habits of New England, more, I suspect, than of any other country, have prevented or kept down this noxious disposition; but they cannot entirely prevent either its existence or its effects. In mercy, therefore, to the sober, industrious, and well disposed inhabitants, Providence has opened in the vast western wilderness a retreat sufficiently alluring to draw them away from the land of their nativity."

"It is, however, to be observed, that a considerable number even of these people become sober, industrious citizens, merely by the acquisition of property. The love of property, to a certain degree, seems indispensable to the existence of sound morals. I have never had a servant in whom I could confide, except such as were desirous to earn and preserve money. The conveniences and the character attendant on the possession of property fix even these restless men at times, when they find themselves really able to accumulate it, and persuade them to a course of regular industry. I have mentioned that they sell the soil of their first farms at an enhanced price; and that they gain for their improvements on them what, to themselves at least, is a considerable sum. The possession of this money removes, perhaps for the first time, the despair of acquiring property, and awakens the hope and the wish to acquire more. The secure possession of property demands every moment the hedge of law, and reconciles a man, originally lawless, to the restraints of government. Thus situated, he sees that reputation also is within his reach. Ambition prompts him to aim at it, and compels him to a life of sobriety and decency. That his children may obtain this advantage, he is obliged to send them to school, and to unite with those around him in supporting a schoolmaster. His neighbours are disposed to build a church and settle a minister. A regard to his own character, to the character and feelings of his family, and very often to the solicitations of his wife, prompts him to contribute to both these objects. When they are compassed, he is induced by the same motives to attend the public worship of God, and, in the end, perhaps, becomes a truly religious man." Dwight's *Travels.*

NOTE XII. Page 215.

COLLINSON was particularly distinguished by his warm regard for the Americans, and his anxious desire to illustrate their attainments and promote their improvement. "Perhaps in some future period," says his biographer, "the account which Collinson procured of the management of sheep in Spain, with respect to their migrations from the mountains to the plains, and back from the plains to the mountains, may not be considered among the least of the benefits that have accrued from his extensive and inquisitive correspondence. When America is better peopled, the mountainous parts more habitable, the plains unloaded of their vast forests, and cultivated, the finest sheep in the world may possibly cover the plains of Carolina, Georgia, and East and West Florida, in the winter months, and retreat to the mountains as the summer heats increase and dry up the herbage." *Annual Register for* 1776.

NOTE XIII. Page 234.

Franklin retained a parental partiality for his plan, notwithstanding the unanimous disapprobation with which it was rejected by his countrymen, and even after the issue of the American Revolution might have tempted him to rejoice that it had not been adopted. His expressions on this subject are remarkable. "The different and contrary reasons of dislike to my plan," says he, "make me suspect that it was really the true medium; *and I am still of opinion, it would have been happy for both sides, if it had been adopted.* The colonies, so united, would have been sufficiently strong to have defended themselves; there would then have been no need of troops from England; of course, the subsequent pretext for taxing America, and the bloody contest it occasioned, would have been avoided." *Memoirs*, Part II.

NOTE XIV. Page 250.

"Hendrick had lived to this day with singular honor, and died fighting with a spirit not to be excelled. He was at this time from sixty to sixty-five years of age. His head was covered with white locks, and, what is uncommon among Indians, he was corpulent. Immediately before Colonel Williams began his march, he mounted a stage and harangued his people. He had a strong, masculine voice, and, it was thought, might be distinctly heard at the distance of half a mile; a fact, which, to my own view, has diffused a new degree of probability over Homer's representations of the effects produced by the speeches and shouts of his heroes. Lieutenant Colonel Pomroy, who was present, and heard this effusion of Indian eloquence, told me, that, although he did not understand a word of the language, yet such was the animation of Hendrick, the fire of his eye, the force of his gesture, the strength of his emphasis, the apparent propriety of the inflexions of his voice, and the natural appearance of his whole manner, that himself was more deeply affected with this speech than with any other which he had ever heard. In the *Pennsylvania Gazette*, September 25, 1755, he is styled 'the famous Hendrick, a renowned Indian warrior among the Mohawks'; and it is said that his son, being told that his father was killed, giving the usual Indian groan upon such occasions, and suddenly putting his hand on his left breast, swore that his father was still alive in that place, and that here stood his son." Dwight's *Travels*.

NOTE XV. Page 253.

"Our answers, as well as his (Morris's) messages, were often tart, and sometimes indecently abusive; and, as he knew I wrote for the assembly, one might have imagined that when we met we could hardly avoid cutting throats. But he was so good-natured a man, that no personal difference between him and me was occasioned by the contest; and we often dined together. One afternoon, in the height of this public quarrel, we met in the street. 'Franklin,' said he, 'you must go home with me and spend the evening; I am to have some company you will like'; and, taking me by the arm, led me to his house. In gay conversation over our wine, after supper, he told us jokingly, that he much admired the idea of Sancho Panza, who, when it was proposed to give him a government, requested it might be a government of blacks; as then, if he could not agree

with his people, he might sell them. One of his friends who sat next me said, 'Franklin, why do you continue to side with those d—d Quakers? Had you not better *sell* them?' 'The governor,' said I, 'has not yet *blacked* them enough.'" Franklin's *Memoirs*. "Morris had been trained to disputation from his boyhood; his father, as I have heard, accustoming his children to dispute with one another for his diversion, while sitting at table after dinner. But I think the practice was not wise; for, in the course of my observation, these disputing, contradicting, and confuting people are generally unfortunate in their affairs." Ibid.

NOTE XVI. Page 256.

We have already adverted to the differences of opinion which existed among the Quakers themselves with regard to the legitimacy of defensive war, and which, slumbering in seasons of peace, have been always developed by the approach of danger and hostility. I knew a Quaker captain of a trading-ship, who was excommunicated by his fellow-sectaries in Shields, for carrying guns in his vessel during war. He was subsequently taken prisoner by the French, after an obstinate engagement at sea. On the restoration of peace, he contrived by stratagem to obtain readmission into a Quaker society at London, without professing penitence for the fault which had occasioned his expulsion from the brotherhood at Shields. So far was he, indeed, from cherishing any penitential sentiments on the subject, that he defended his conduct to me, and inveighed with some contempt and displeasure against the juggling hypocrisy of men who excommunicated their brethren for carrying arms in self-defence, and yet readily embraced the protection of convoy for their own vessels at sea, which he described as the universal practice of the Quakers. "I would rather," said he, with more of the feelings of an Englishman than of a Quaker, "fight in defence of my own life and livelihood than hire others to fight for me."

A remarkable, and, as far as I know, a solitary instance of offensive war, promoted and conducted by a Quaker, occurred in the beginning of the year 1758; when Thomas Cumming, a Quaker merchant of London, persuaded the British government to despatch an expedition, which he accompanied, for the reduction of the French settlements on the river Senegal. Cumming declared his aversion to bloodshed, and his conviction that the French would surrender, as they actually did, without obliging their invaders to resort to such extremity. Smollett. "On this occasion," says Smollett, "Mr. Cumming may seem to have acted directly contrary to the tenets of his religious profession; but he ever declared to the ministry, that he was fully persuaded his schemes might be accomplished without the effusion of human blood; and that, if he thought otherwise, he would by no means have concerned himself about them. He also desired, let the consequence be what it might, his brethren should not be chargeable with what was his own single act. If it was the first military scheme of any Quaker, let it be remembered it was also the first successful expedition of this war, and one of the first that ever was carried on according to the pacific system of the Quakers, without the loss of a drop of blood on either side."

"In 1745," said Dr. Johnson, "my friend, Tom Cumming, the Quaker, said he would not fight, but he would drive an ammunition cart; and we know that the Quakers have sent flannel waistcoats to our soldiers, to enable them to fight better." Boswell's *Life of Johnson*.

NOTE XVII. Page 258.

"It was urged in support of this act, that many of the foreigners settled in America had served in foreign countries, and acquired experience in the military profession; and that the soldiers who might enlist from this class of people could not be so well disciplined by any other persons as those who were acquainted with their language and manners.

"A very zealous opposition was raised to the act by many respectable members of parliament; and the agent for the province of Massachusetts Bay joined them, petitioning the House of Lords to be heard against it. The reasons which they urged were, that the bill was inconsistent with the act for the farther settlement of the crown and better securing of the rights and liberties of the subject, which expressly provided that no foreigner, even although he should be naturalized or made a denizen, should be capable of enjoying any office or place of trust, civil or military; and this provision had been considered and reverenced as an essential and sacred part of the British constitution; — that the incorporating of these emigrants into a separate regiment [which was contemplated] would tend to keep up their ignorance of the English language, and of the laws, orders, and usages of the country, and prevent their uniting with the old subjects; — that many of the settlers, for the sake of whose services the employment of foreign officers was proposed, had not resided the full time requisite to entitle them to naturalization, and they would, without such residence, be improper persons to be made part of his Majesty's forces; — that the supposition, that these new subjects would be more easily induced than the native Americans to become part of his Majesty's standing forces, and that they would be particularly serviceable in garrison, was ill-founded; because the cheapness of land, the high price of labor, and the value of civil liberty, being the chief causes which prevented the Americans becoming soldiers for life or for any indefinite time, and the new subjects having come to the colonies with an intent to enjoy these great advantages, it was probable that the same causes would produce the same effects upon their minds; or if any of them should be engaged in the service, it would probably be those who had no property, little industry, and whose motive for going to the war would be supplied by their idleness; — that such persons wanting the love which natural-born subjects have for their country, their fidelity would be proportionally insecure; and that they would be particularly unfit to garrison the forts upon the frontier, which were erected in parts remote from the English settlements, and intended to preserve and cultivate a good correspondence and promote a commerce with the several Indian nations which frequent them, and where all circumstances conspire to make it necessary that the garrisons, with every thing else, appear as much English as possible; — that the raising and disciplining a regiment in the colonies by foreign officers would be disagreeable to the colonies in general, and especially to those in which the chief strength of his Majesty's arms in America lay; to the officers at large in the provincial corps, as well as those who, after distinguishing themselves by their good behaviour, might derive the honor and favor of receiving those commissions which were proposed to be given to the foreigners; and to the main body of the Americans who were in arms, whose general sentiments concerning foreigners were such that it would be difficult, if not impossible, to reconcile their minds wholly to this measure." Minot.

Minot's *History of Massachusetts* (embracing the period from 1749 till 1764) is a performance creditable to the sense and talent of its author. But the style is frequently careless, and even slovenly and ungrammatical.

NOTE XVIII. Page 265.

"Such are the connections, dependencies, and relations subsisting between the mechanical arts, agriculture, and manufactures of Great Britain, that it requires study, deliberation, and inquiry in the legislature, to discern and distinguish the whole scope and consequences of many projects offered for the benefit of the commonwealth. The Society of Merchant Adventurers in the City of Bristol alleged, in a petition to the House of Commons, that great quantities of bar-iron were imported into Great Britain from Sweden, Russia, and other ports, chiefly purchased with ready money, some of which iron was exported again to Africa and other places, and the rest wrought up by the manufacturers. They affirmed that bar-iron imported from North America would answer the same purposes; and the importation of it tend not only to the great advantage of the kingdom, by increasing its shipping and navigation, but also to the benefit of the British colonies; — that, by an act passed in the twenty-third year of his present Majesty's reign, the importation of bar-iron from America into the port of London, duty-free, was permitted; but its being carried coastways, or farther by land than ten miles, had been prohibited; so that several very considerable manufacturing towns were deprived of the use of American iron, and the outports prevented from employing it in their export commerce. They requested, therefore, that bar-iron might be imported from America into Great Britain, duty-free, by all his Majesty's subjects. This request being reinforced by many other petitions from different parts of the kingdom, other classes of men, who thought several interests would be affected by such a measure, took the alarm; and, in divers counter-petitions, stated many ill consequences, which, they alleged, would arise from its being enacted into a law. Pamphlets were published on both sides of the question, and violent disputes were kindled upon this subject, which was justly deemed a matter of national importance.

"The opposers of the bill which was solicited observed, that large quantities of iron were yearly produced at home, and employed multitudes of poor people, there being no less than one hundred and nine forges in England and Wales, besides those erected in Scotland; the whole producing eighteen thousand tons of iron; — that, as the mines in Great Britain are inexhaustible, the produce would, of late years, have been considerably increased, had not the people been kept under continual apprehension of seeing American iron admitted duty-free; a supposition which had prevented the traders from extending their works, and discouraged many from engaging in this branch of traffic. They alleged that the iron-works already carried on in England occasioned a consumption of one hundred and ninety-eight thousand cords of wood, produced in coppices that grow upon barren lands, which could not otherwise be turned to any good account; — that, as the coppices afford shade, and preserve a moisture in the ground, the pasture is more valuable with the wood than it would be if the coppices were grubbed up; consequently, all the estates where these now grow would sink in their yearly value; — that these coppices, now cultivated and preserved for the use of the iron-works, are likewise absolutely necessary for the manufacture of leather, as they furnish bark for the tanners; — and that, according to the management of these coppices, they produced a great number of timber-trees necessary for the purposes of building. They asserted, that neither the American iron, nor any that had yet been found in Great Britain, was so proper for converting into steel as that which comes from Sweden, particularly that sort called *ore ground;* but as there are mines in the northern parts of Britain, nearly in the same latitude with those of Sweden, furnished with sufficient quantities of wood, and rivers for mills and engines, it was hardly to be doubted but that people would find metal of the same quality, and, in a few years, be able to prevent the necessity of

importing iron either from Sweden or Russia. They inferred that American iron could never interfere with that which Great Britain imported from Sweden, because it was not fit for edged tools, anchors, chain-plates, and other particulars necessary in ship-building; nor diminish the importation of Russian iron, which was not only harder than the American and British, but also could be afforded cheaper than that brought from our own plantations, even though the duty on this last should be removed. The importation of American iron, therefore, duty-free, could interfere with no other sort but that produced in Britain, with which, by means of this advantage, it would clash so much, as to put a stop, in a little time, to all the iron-works now carried on in the kingdom, and reduce to beggary a great number of families whom they support.

"To these objections the favorers of the projected bill replied, — that, when a manufacture is much more valuable than the rough materials, and these cannot be produced at home in sufficient quantities, and at such a price as is consistent with the preservation of the manufacture, it is the interest of the legislature to admit a free importation of these materials, even from foreign countries, although it should put an end to the production of that material in this island; — that, as the neighbours of Great Britain are now more attentive than ever to their commercial interests, and endeavouring to manufacture their rough materials at home, this nation must take every method for lowering the price of materials; otherwise, in a few years, it will lose the manufacture, and, instead of supplying other countries, be furnished by them with all the fine toys and utensils made of steel and iron; — that, being in danger of losing not only the manufacture but the produce of iron, unless it can be procured at a cheaper rate than that for which it is sold at present, the only way of attaining this end is by diminishing the duty payable upon the importation of foreign iron, or by rendering it necessary for the undertakers of the iron mines in Great Britain to sell their produce cheaper than it has been for some years afforded; — that the most effectual method for this purpose is to raise up a rival, by permitting a free importation of all sorts of iron from the American plantations; — that American iron can never be sold so cheap as that of Britain can be afforded; for in the colonies labor of all kinds is much dearer than in England: if a man employ his own slaves, he must reckon in his charge a great deal more than the common interest of their purchase-money; because, when one of them dies or escapes from his master, he loses both interest and principal; — that the common interest of money in the plantations is considerably higher than in England; consequently, no man in that country will employ his money in any branch of trade by which he cannot gain considerably more *per cent.* than is expected in Great Britain, where the interest is low and profit moderate; a circumstance which will always give a great advantage to the British miner, who likewise enjoys an exemption from freight and insurance, which lie heavy upon the American adventurer, especially in time of war. With respect to the apprehension of the leather-tanners, they observed, that, as the coppices generally grow on barren lands, not fit for tillage, and improve the pasturage, no proprietor would be at the expense of grubbing up the wood to spoil the pasture, as he could make no other use of the land on which it was produced. The wood must be always worth something, especially in counties where there is not plenty of coal, and the timber-trees would produce considerable advantage; therefore, if there was not one iron-mine in Great Britain, no coppice would be grubbed up, unless it grew on a rich soil, which would produce corn instead of cord-wood; consequently, the tanners have nothing to fear, especially as planting hath become a prevailing taste among the landholders of the island.

"The committee appointed to prepare the bill seriously weighed and canvassed these arguments, examined disputed facts, and inspected papers and accounts relating to the produce, importation, and manufacture of iron. At length, Mr. John Pitt reported to the house their opinion, implying that the liberty, granted by an

act passed in the twenty-third year of his Majesty's reign, of importing bar-iron from the British colonies in America into the port of London, should be extended to all the other ports of Great Britain. The house having approved this report, and a bill being brought in accordingly, another petition was presented by several noblemen, gentlemen, freeholders, and other proprietors, owners, and possessors of coppices and woodlands in the West Riding of Yorkshire, alleging that a permission to import American bar-iron duty-free would be attended with numberless ill consequences, both of a public and private nature; specifying certain hardships to which they, in particular, would be exposed; and praying, that, if the bill should pass, they might be relieved from the pressure of an act passed in the reign of Henry the Eighth, obliging the owners of coppice-woods to preserve them, under severe penalties; and that they might be permitted to fell and grub up their coppice-woods, in order to a more proper cultivation of the soil, without being restrained by the fear of malicious and interested prosecutions. In consequence of this remonstrance, a clause was added to the bill, repealing so much of the act of Henry the Eighth as prohibited the conversion of coppice or underwoods into pasture or tillage: then it passed through both houses, and received the royal sanction." Smollett.

NOTE XIX. Page 274.

As Franklin's *Historical Review of the Constitution of Pennsylvania* is not easily to be found, except in a voluminous edition of his works, nor indeed has a place in every edition of them, some readers may be gratified by the following transcript of a few remarkable passages from it.

"To obtain an infinite variety of purposes by a few plain principles is the characteristic of nature. As the eye is affected, so is the understanding; objects at a distance strike us according to their dimensions, or the quantity of light thrown upon them; near, according to their novelty or familiarity, as they are in motion or at rest. It is the same with actions. A battle is all motion; a hero all glare: while such images are before us, we can attend to nothing else. Solon and Lycurgus would make no figure in the same scene with the king of Prussia; and we are at present so lost in the military scramble on the continent next us, in which, it must be confessed, we are deeply interested, that we have scarce time to throw a glance towards America, where we have also much at stake, and where, if anywhere, our account must be made up at last.

"We love to stare more than to reflect; and to be indolently amused at our leisure, rather than commit the smallest trespass on our patience by winding a painful, tedious maze, which would pay us nothing but knowledge."

"A father and his family — the latter united by interest and affection, the former to be revered for the wisdom of his instructions and the indulgent use of his authority — was the form in which Pennsylvanian society was first presented. Those who were only ambitious of repose found it here; and as none returned with an evil report of the land, numbers followed: all partook of the leaven they found; the community still wore the same equal face; nobody aspired; nobody was oppressed; industry was sure of profit, knowledge of esteem, and virtue of veneration.

"An assuming landlord, strongly disposed to convert free tenants into abject vassals, and to reap what he did not sow, countenanced and abetted by a few desperate and designing dependents, on the one side; and on the other, all who had sense enough to know their rights, and spirit enough to defend them, combined as one man against this landlord and his encroachments, is the form it has since assumed.

"And surely, to a nation born to liberty like this,[1] bound to leave it unimpaired as they received it from their fathers in perpetuity to their heirs, and interested in the conservation of it in every appendage of the British empire, the particulars of such a contest cannot be wholly indifferent.

"On the contrary, it is reasonable to think that the first workings of tyranny against liberty, and the natural efforts of honest men to secure themselves against the first approaches of oppression, must have a captivating power over every man of sensibility and discernment among us.

"Liberty, it seems, thrives best in the woods. America but cultivated what Germany brought forth."

"It is not, indeed, to be presumed, that such as have long been accustomed to consider the colonies, in general, as only so many dependencies on the Council Board, the Board of Trade, and the Board of Customs, or as a hot-bed for causes, obs, and pecuniary emoluments, and bound as effectually by instructions given to governors as by laws, can be prevailed upon to consider these patriot rustics with any degree of respect. But how contemptuously soever these gentlemen may talk of the colonies, how cheap soever they may hold their assemblies, or how insignificant the planters and traders who compose them, truth will be truth, and principle principle, notwithstanding. Courage, wisdom, integrity, and honor are not to be measured by the sphere assigned them to act in, but by the trials they undergo, and the vouchers they furnish; and, if so manifested, need neither robes nor titles to set them off."

The following sentence expresses the principle on which, little more than ten years after, the revolt of the colonies from the dominion of Britain was justified: — "The birthright of every British subject is, to have a property of his own in his estate, person, and reputation; subject only to laws enacted by his own concurrence, either in person or by his representatives; and which birthright accompanies him wheresoever he wanders or rests, so long as he is within the pale of the British dominions and is true to his allegiance."

With grave, yet pungent and animated satire, Franklin unfolds the changes which William Penn gradually introduced into the constitution of Pennsylvania, and the dissensions that had ever since prevailed between that great man and his descendants, on the one hand, and the colonists and provincial assemblies, on the other. But it would be impossible to do justice to these passages, without transcribing from them more largely than my limits will admit.

"It is not necessary, in private life, to bargain that those who purchase for their own use and advantage should pay the price out of their own pockets; but in public it is. Persons who stand on the same ground will insist on the same rights; and it is matter of wonder, when any one party discovers folly or insolence enough to demand or expect any preëminence over the other: whereas prerogative admits of no equality, and presupposes that difference of place alters the use of language, and even the very nature of things. Hence, though protection is the reason, and, consequently, should be the end, of government, we ought to be as much upon our guard against our protectors as against our enemies.

"Power, like water, is ever working its own way; and whenever it can find or make an opening, is altogether as prone to overflow whatever is subject to it. And though matter of right overlooked may be reclaimed and reassumed at any time, it cannot be too soon reclaimed and reassumed."

"The true state of Pennsylvania is now before us. It is apparent the assemblies of that province have acted from the beginning on the defensive only. The defensive is what every man, by the right and law of Nature, is entitled to. Jealousy is the first principle of defence: if men were not to suspect, they would rarely, if ever, be upon their guard."

"And this being the truth, the plain truth, and nothing but the truth, there is

[1] Britain, where the work was published.

no need to direct the censures of the public, which, on proper information, are always sure to fall in the right place. The parties before them are the two proprietaries of a province, and the province itself. And who or what are these proprietaries? In the province, unsizable subjects and insufficient lords. At home, gentlemen, it is true, but gentlemen so very private, that in the herd of gentry they are hardly to be found; not in court; not in office; not in parliament.

"And which is of most consequence to the community; whether their private estate shall be taxed, or the province shall be saved? whether these two private gentlemen, in virtue of their absolute proprietariship, shall convert so many fellow-subjects, born as free as themselves, into vassals; or whether so noble and useful a province shall for ever remain an asylum for all that wish to remain as free as the inhabitants of it have, hitherto, made a shift to preserve themselves? *Sub judice lis est.*"

This eloquent and ingenious performance was generally ascribed, at the time, in England, to James Ralph, a sprightly, entertaining, and once popular writer, but now almost entirely forgotten. His birthplace is unknown; but he is supposed to have been a native of Philadelphia, which he quitted in company with Franklin, in 1725, for England, where he acquired much consideration, and earned a pension by his political and historical compositions. Ashamed of blameless poverty and humble usefulness, on his arrival in England, he assumed for a while the name of his companion, Franklin, whose friendship has eventually been the means of rescuing the name of Ralph from entire oblivion. Franklin's *Memoirs*. Watkins's *Biographical Dictionary*.

NOTE XX. Page 282.

"After the taking of Fort Duquesne, General Forbes resolved to search for the relics of Braddock's army. As the European soldiers were not so well qualified to explore the forests, Captain West, the elder brother of Benjamin West, the painter, was appointed, with his company of American sharpshooters, to assist in the execution of this duty; and a party of Indian warriors, who had returned to the British interests, were requested to conduct him to the places where the bones of the slain were likely to be found. In this solemn and affecting duty, several officers belonging to the forty-second regiment accompanied the detachment, and with them Major Sir Peter Halket, who had lost his father and a brother in the fatal destruction of the army. It might have been thought a hopeless task, that he should be able to discriminate their remains from the common relics of the other soldiers; but he was induced to think otherwise, as one of the Indian warriors assured him that he had seen an officer fall near a remarkable tree, which he thought he could still discover; informing him, at the same time, that the incident was impressed on his memory by observing a young subaltern, who, in running to the officer's assistance, was also shot dead, on his reaching the spot, and fell across the other's body. The Major had a mournful conviction in his own mind that the two officers were his father and brother; and, indeed, it was chiefly owing to his anxiety on the subject, that this pious expedition, the second of the kind that history records, was undertaken.

"Captain West and his companions proceeded through the woods and along the banks of the river, towards the scene of the battle. The Indians regarded the expedition as a religious service, and guided the troops with awe and in profound silence. The soldiers were affected with sentiments not less serious; and as they explored the bewildering labyrinths of those vast forests, their hearts were often melted with inexpressible sorrow; for they frequently found skeletons

lying across the trunks of fallen trees, — a mournful proof, to their imaginations, that the men who sat there had perished from hunger, while vainly attempting to find their way to the plantations. Sometimes their feelings were raised to the utmost pitch of horror by the sight of skulls and bones scattered on the ground, — a certain indication that the bodies had been devoured by wild beasts; and in other places they saw the blackness of ashes amidst the relics, — the tremendous evidence of atrocious rites.

"At length they reached a turn of the river, not far from the principal scene of destruction; and the Indian who remembered the death of the two officers stopped: the detachment also halted. He then looked around in quest of some object which might recall distinctly his recollection of the ground, and suddenly darted into the wood. The soldiers rested their arms without speaking. A shrill cry was soon after heard; and the other guides made signs for the troops to follow them towards the spot from which it came. In a short time they reached the Indian warrior, who, by his cry, had announced to his companions that he had found the place where he was posted on the day of battle. As the troops approached, he pointed to the tree under which the officers had fallen. Captain West halted his men round the spot, and, with Sir Peter Halket and the other officers, formed a circle, while the Indians removed the leaves, which thickly covered the ground. The skeletons were found, as the Indian expected, lying across each other. The officers having looked at them some time, the Major said, that, as his father had an artificial tooth, he thought he might be able to ascertain if they were indeed his bones and those of his brother. The Indians were therefore ordered to remove the skeleton of the youth, and to bring to view that of the old officer. This was immediately done; and, after a short examination, Major Halket exclaimed, 'It is my father!' and fell back into the arms of his companions. The pioneers then dug a grave, and the bones being laid in it together, a Highland plaid was spread over them, and they were interred with the customary honors.

"When Lord Grosvenor bought the picture of the death of Wolfe, Mr. West mentioned to him the finding of the bones of Braddock's army, as a pictorial subject capable of being managed with great effect. The gloom of the vast forest, the naked and simple Indians supporting the skeletons, the grief of the son on recognizing the relics of his father, the subdued melancholy of the spectators, and the picturesque garb of the Pennsylvanian sharpshooters undoubtedly furnished topics capable of every effect which the pencil could bestow, or the imagination require, in the treatment of so sublime a scene. His Lordship admitted, that, in possessing so affecting an incident as the discovery of the bones of the Halkets, it was superior even to that of the search for the remains of the army of Varus; but as the transaction was little known, and not recorded by any historian, he thought it would not be interesting to the public." Galt's *Life of West.*

NOTE XXI. Page 283.

"Nor was encouragement refused [in England] to those who distinguished themselves by extraordinary talents in any branch of the liberal arts and sciences, though no Mæcenas appeared among the ministers, and not the least ray of patronage glimmered from the throne. The protection, countenance, and gratification secured in other countries by the institution of academies and the liberalities of princes, the ingenious in England derived from the generosity of a public endued with taste and sensibility, eager for improvement, and proud of patronizing extraordinary merit. Several years had already elapsed since a society of private persons was instituted at London, for the encouragement of arts, manufac-

tures, and commerce. It consisted of a president, vice-president, secretary, register, collector, and other officers, elected from a very considerable number of members, who paid a certain yearly contribution for the purposes of the institution." — "The funds thus contributed, after the necessary expense of the society had been deducted, were expended in premiums for planting and husbandry; for discoveries and improvements in chemistry, dyeing, and mineralogy; for promoting the ingenious arts of drawing, engraving, casting, painting, statuary, and sculpture; for the improvement of manufactures and machines, in the various articles of hats, crapes, druggets, mills, marbled paper, ship-blocks, spinning-wheels, toys, yarn, knitting, and weaving. They likewise *allotted sums for the advantage of the British colonies in America*, and bestowed premiums on those settlers who should excel in curing cochineal, planting logwood-trees, cultivating olive-trees, producing myrtle-wax, making potash, preserving raisins, curing safflower, making silk and wines, importing sturgeon, preparing isinglass, planting hemp and cinnamon, extracting opium and the gum of the persimmon-tree, collecting stones of the mango, which should be found to vegetate in the West Indies, raising silk grass, and laying out provincial gardens." Smollett.

NOTE XXII. Page 283.

"In the legal history of a commercial country, the fortune of the only bankrupt law which could ever be obtained becomes a matter of curiosity. This law, having been laid before the king for the royal approbation, agreeably to the charter, was referred to the Lords of Trade. After mature consideration, they gave it as their opinion, that, although a bankrupt law be just and equitable upon its abstract principle, yet it had always been found in its execution to afford such opportunities for fraudulent practices, that, even in England, where, in most cases, the whole number of creditors were resident on the spot, it might well be doubted whether the fair trader did not receive more detriment than benefit from such a law. But if a like law should take place in a colony, where (as they were informed) not above one tenth part of its creditors were resident, and where that small proportion of the whole, both in number and value, might (as under the present act they might), upon a commission being issued, get possession of the bankrupt's effects, and proceed to make a dividend, before the merchants in England, who composed the other nine tenths of the bankrupt's creditors, could even be informed of such bankruptcy; it was easy to foresee that such a law would be beneficial to the very small part of the creditors resident in the colony only, and that the rest of them, who resided in England, would be exposed to frauds and difficulties of every sort, and might be greatly injured in their properties. This opinion prevailed, and the law was accordingly disapproved by the king, to the great inconvenience of many debtors, who had actually surrendered their effects under it." Minot.

NOTE XXIII. Page 285.

On this occasion, the assembly of Massachusetts presented the following address to Governor Pownall, who had communicated to them the wishes and solicitations of Amherst. It is a curious and interesting document to the student of American history.

"The several reasons and motives which your Excellency has from time to time laid before the two houses, in order to induce an augmentation of the forces

for the service of the present year, have been maturely weighed and considered by us.

"We have likewise had an opportunity, in the recess of the Court, of acquainting ourselves with the state of the several parts of the province, and its ability for raising an additional number of men. We acknowledge with gratitude, that the interest and ease of the people has been considered by your Excellency in making the last levy, as far as could consist with his Majesty's service, and the purposes for which the men are raised. The distress brought upon the inhabitants is, notwithstanding, extremely great. The number of men raised this year we are sensible, is not equal to that of the last. The assembly then made the greatest effort that has ever been known in the province. They looked upon it to be their last effort; they had no expectations that it would be repeated; and it was really so great as to render it impracticable for us to make the like a second time. The number of our inhabitants is, since then, much lessened: some were killed in battle; many died by sickness while they were in service, or soon after their return home; and great numbers have enlisted in his Majesty's regular forces.

"The unprecedented charge of the last year also tends to increase the distress of the province. The expense of the regiments raised for his Majesty's service amounted to nearly one hundred and twenty thousand pounds sterling: besides this, the inhabitants of the several towns in the province, by fines or by voluntary contributions, to procure men for the service, paid at least sixty thousand pounds sterling more; which was, in all respects, as burdensome as if it had been raised as a tax by the government. The defence of our own frontiers, and the other ordinary charges of government, amount to at least thirty thousand pounds sterling more.

"Because the province last year raised seven thousand men, it is inferred that it is able to raise the same number this year, and no allowance is made for its being so much reduced in its estate and number of inhabitants.

"We have generally been the first in proposals for public service, and have determined what force we would employ; other governments have followed after us, in just what proportion they pleased; and we wish it had been an equal one. We are now lessened, and they are increased; and we are yet urged to continue the same proportions. We have always chosen to avoid entering into the consideration of quotas or proportions; but we seem now obliged to do it. We conceive, that, in order to determine a just proportion, the wealth, the number of inhabitants, and the charges of each government for its immediate defence are all to come under consideration. If this be allowed to be a just rule to determine by, we are sure, that, not only in all past years, but in this present year also, we have done more, in proportion, to the general service, than any one government upon the continent.

"We know of no quota settled for each colony. The agreement made at Albany, by the commissioners, in the year 1754, has been generally urged as a rule of proportion since that time. But it was agreed by the same commissioners, that regard should always be had to the special services of any colony for its immediate defence. We are obliged to keep six hundred men in pay, for the defence of our frontiers and seacoasts. This charge some of the other governments are wholly free from, and the rest subject to in a very small degree. Exclusive of these six hundred men, we have already raised five thousand men, for the general service. Connecticut has raised in proportion[1] to the five thousand only, according to the Albany plan, without any regard to the six hundred. Every other government falls short even of that: so that we have this year already done more in proportion than any of our neighbours.

[1] This statement was made, apparently, before Connecticut finally consented herself to raise five thousand men.

"We are told that we are *the leading province;* we have been so for many years past, and we have been as long unequally burdened. We have borne it patiently, although we have seen our people leaving us, and removing to other governments, in order to live more free from taxes. A few years ago, for this reason alone, four of our principal towns refused any longer to submit to our jurisdiction; and another government[1] found a pretence for receiving them, and they are not yet returned to us.

"Under these distresses, we are still willing to afford every reasonable aid in our power. A farther impress would distress and discourage the people to such a degree, that, as well in faithfulness to the service, as to the particular interest of this province, we are bound to decline it. But, great as our burdens are, we have now proposed a bounty more than double what has ever yet been given by the province, in order to procure a voluntary enlistment of fifteen hundred men, over and above the five thousand already raised; and we have reason to hope that this bounty will be sufficient, and have the effect your Excellency desires." Minot.

NOTE XXIV. Page 288.

"NIAGARA is, without exception, the most important post in America, and secures a greater number of communications, through a more extensive country, than, perhaps, any other pass in the world; for it is situated at the very entrance of a strait by which Lake Ontario is joined to Lake Erie, which is connected with the other three great lakes by the course of the vast river St. Lawrence, which runs through them all, and carries their superfluous waters to the ocean." — "From the time when the French were first acquainted with this place, they were fully sensible of its importance, both with respect to trade and dominion. They made several attempts to establish themselves here; but the Indians constantly opposed it, and obliged them to relinquish a fort which they had built, and guarded this spot for a long time with a very severe and prudent jealousy.

"But whilst *we* neglected to cultivate the love of the Indians, the French omitted no endeavours to gain these savages to their interest; and prevailed at last, under the name of a trading-house, to erect a strong fort at the mouth of the strait. This advantage was obtained for his country by a French officer of an enterprising genius, who had been a prisoner among the Iroquois (one of the tribes of the Six Nations) for a long time, and, according to their custom, was naturalized, and became very popular among them." — "The trading-house which he obtained leave to build, extended and strengthened by various additions, at last became a regular fortress, which had ever since awed the Six Nations and checked our colonies."

"As to these immense lakes, which are all, in a manner, commanded by this fort, the reader need only cast his eyes on the map of North America to be convinced of their importance. They afford by far the most extensive inland navigation in the whole universe. Whoever is master of them must, sooner or later, command that whole continent. They are all surrounded by a fine, fruitful country, in a temperate, pleasant climate. *The day may possibly come, when this noble country, which seems calculated for universal empire, will sufficiently display its own importance.*" Wynne.

[1] Connecticut. — See Chap. II., *ante*.

NOTE XXV. Page 321.

"Mr. Otis, at the first town-meeting of Boston after the peace, having been chosen moderator, addressed himself to the inhabitants in a speech, which he caused to be printed in the newspapers, to the following effect: — 'We in America have certainly abundant reasons to rejoice. Not only are the heathen driven out, but the Canadians, much more formidable enemies, are conquered and become fellow-subjects. The British dominion and power may now be said, literally, to extend from sea to sea, and from the great river to the ends of the earth. And we may safely conclude, from his Majesty's wise administration hitherto, that liberty and knowledge, civil and religious, will be coextended, improved, and preserved to the latest posterity. No other constitution of civil government has yet appeared in the world, so admirably adapted to these great purposes, as that of Great Britain. Every British subject in America is, of common right, by acts of parliament, and by the laws of God and nature, entitled to all the essential privileges of Britons. By particular charters there are peculiar privileges granted, as in justice they might and ought, in consideration of the arduous undertaking to begin so glorious an empire as British America is rising to. Those jealousies, which some weak and wicked minds have endeavoured to infuse with regard to the colonies, had their birth in the blackness of darkness; and it is great pity they had not remained there for ever. The true interests of Great Britain and her plantations are mutual; and what God in his providence has united, let no man dare attempt to pull asunder.'" Hutchinson.

NOTE XXVI. Page 331.

"In few of the hard-fought battles and signal victories of Europe, which are celebrated with so much *éclat*, is there such an exhibition of obstinate, persevering fortitude, and of military skill, as appeared in this action." Trumbull.

"Those who have experienced only the severities and dangers of a campaign in Europe can scarcely form an idea of what is to be done and endured in an American war. To act in a country cultivated and inhabited, where roads are made, magazines are established, and hospitals provided; where there are towns to retreat to, in case of misfortune, or, at the worst, a generous enemy to yield to, from whom no consolation except the honor of victory can be wanting; — this may be considered as the exercise of a spirited and adventurous mind, rather than a rigid contest, where all is at stake, and mutual destruction the object; and as a contention between rivals for glory, rather than a deadly struggle between sanguinary enemies. But in an American campaign every thing is terrible; the face of the country, the climate, the enemy. There is no refreshment for the healthy, nor relief for the sick. A vast inhospitable desert surrounds the troops, where victories are not decisive, but defeats are ruinous, and simple death is the least misfortune which can happen to a soldier. This forms a service truly critical, in which all the firmness of the body and the mind is put to the severest trial, and all the exertions of courage and address are called out. If the actions of these rude campaigns are of less dignity, the adventures in them are more interesting to the heart, and more amusing to the imagination, than the events of a more regular war." *Annual Register for* 1763.

Yet only a few years after this period, a philosopher no less distinguished than Adam Smith ventured to assert, in the plenitude of learned ignorance and ingenious error, that "Nothing can be more contemptible than an Indian war in North America." Smith estimated the importance of war by a very vulgar test,

if he regarded only the number of men actually slain or exposed to slaughter. His ideas of the Indians and their hostility would perhaps have been very different, if, instead of being kidnapped in his infancy for a few hours, by a gang of roguish Scottish Gypsies, he had been scalped by the tomahawk of a Cherokee or Delaware Indian. Colonel Barré, who had served in America, declared, in his celebrated speech in the British House of Commons, upon American taxation, in the year 1765, that the Indians were, as enemies, "the most subtile and the most formidable of any people upon the face of God's earth." This testimony of an experienced officer outweighs the opinions of a thousand such presumptuous penmen as Smith and Chalmers.

NOTE XXVII. Page 346.

It is remarkable, that the same idea, long before promulgated by Sir Thomas Browne and Bishop Berkeley, of the westward progress of national dominion and glory, with especial reference to the prospects of America, was also expressed in the year 1760, by an Italian *improvvissatore*, who, meeting West, the American painter, at Rome, where he had gone to study the fine arts, was moved to display his peculiar genius in a poetical effusion of the following tenor.

"He sung the darkness which for so many ages veiled America from the eyes of science. He described the fulness of time, when the purposes for which America was raised from the deep were to be manifested. He painted the seraph of knowledge descending from heaven, and directing Columbus to undertake the discovery; and he related the leading incidents of the voyage. He invoked the fancy of his auditors to contemplate the wild magnificence of mountain, lake, and wood, in the new world; and he raised, as it were, in vivid perspective, the Indians in the chase, and at their horrible sacrifices. 'But,' he exclaimed, 'the beneficent spirit of improvement is ever on the wing, and, like the ray from the throne of God, which inspired the conception of the Virgin, it has descended on this youth; and the hope which ushered in its new miracle, like the star that guided the Magi to Bethlehem, has led him to Rome. Methinks I behold in him an instrument chosen by Heaven to raise in America the taste for those arts which elevate the nature of man, — an assurance that his country will afford a refuge to science and knowledge, when, in the old age of Europe, they shall have forsaken her shores. But all things of heavenly origin, like the glorious sun, move westward; and Truth and Art have their periods of shining and of night. Rejoice, then, O venerable Rome, in thy divine destiny! for, though darkness overshadow thy seats, and though thy mitred head must descend into the dust, as deep as the earth that now covers thy ancient helmet and imperial diadem, thy spirit, immortal and undecayed, already spreads towards a new world, where, like the soul of man in paradise, it will be perfected in virtue and beauty more and more.'" Galt's *Life of West.*

NOTE XXVIII. Page 353.

"The idea that the works of the artists were public was so deeply fixed among the Greeks, that it could not be eradicated even by the profanations of the Romans. The works of art, according to this idea, belong not to individuals, but to the cultivated part of mankind. They should be a common property. Even in our times, when individuals are permitted to possess them, censure is incurred, if others are not also allowed to enjoy them. But even where this privilege is con-

ceded, it is not a matter of indifference whether an individual or the nation is the possessor. The respect shown to the arts by the nation, in possessing their productions, confers a higher value on the labors of the artists. How much more honored does the artist feel, how much more freely does he breathe, when he knows that he is exerting himself for a nation which will account its glory increased by his works, instead of toiling to obtain the money and gratify the caprices of individuals! Such was the condition of the arts in Greece. When emulation arose among the cities, to be distinguished by the possession of works of art, a field was opened for a Phidias and Polygnotus, for a Praxiteles and Parrhasius. They were better rewarded by glory than by money. Some of them never worked for pay." Heeren's *Reflections on the Politics of Ancient Greece* (Bancroft's translation).

NOTE XXIX. Page 360.

A FEW extracts from this work may be acceptable to some readers, who either cannot procure it, or are deterred by its bulk from perusing it.

"No extensive plan was originally aimed at; but the instructions given to the missionaries by Count Zinzendorf were nearly to the following effect: — 'That they should silently observe whether any of the heathen had been prepared by the grace of God to receive and believe the word of life. If even only one were to be found, then they should preach the gospel to *him;* for God must give the heathen ears to hear the gospel and hearts to receive it, otherwise all the labor bestowed upon them would be vain. He also recommended them to preach chiefly to such heathen as had never heard the gospel; adding, that we were not called to build upon foundations laid by others,[1] nor to disturb their work, but to seek the outcast and forsaken.'"

An Indian convert thus related his experience: — "Brethren, I have been an heathen, and have grown old amongst the heathen; therefore I know how heathen think. Once a preacher came to us, and began to explain that there was a God. We answered, 'Dost thou think us so ignorant as not to know that? Go back to the place whence thou camest.' Then, again, another preacher came, and began to teach us, and to say, 'You must not steal, nor lie, nor get drunk.' We answered, 'Thou fool! dost thou think that we do n't know that? Learn, first, thyself, and then teach the people to whom thou belongest, to leave off these things. For who steals, or lies, or who is more drunken than thine own people?' And thus we dismissed him. After some time, Brother Rauch came into my hut, and sat down by me: he spoke to me nearly as follows: — 'I come to you in the name of the Lord of heaven and earth: he sends to let you know that he will make you happy, and deliver you from the misery in which you lie at present. To this end, he became a man, gave his life a ransom for man, and shed his blood for him,' &c., &c. When he had finished his discourse, he lay down upon a board, fatigued by the journey, and fell into a sound sleep. I then thought, 'What kind of man is this? There he lies, and sleeps. I might kill him, and throw him out into the wood; and who would regard it? But this gives him no concern.' However, I could not forget his words; they constantly recurred to my mind. Even when I was asleep, I dreamt of that blood which Christ shed for us. I found this to be something different from what I had ever heard, and I interpreted Rauch's words to the other Indians. Thus, through the grace of God, an awakening took place amongst us. I say, therefore,

[1] In conformity with this advice, the Moravian missionaries withdrew from a place where they found that Brainerd was teaching. Of him and his labors they expressed a high admiration.

brethren, preach Christ our Saviour, and his sufferings and death, if you would have your words to gain entrance among the heathen."

"The Indian convert Jonathan, meeting some white people who had entered into so violent a dispute about Baptism and the Holy Communion, that they at last proceeded to blows,—'These people,' said he, 'know certainly nothing of our Saviour; for they speak of him as we do of a strange country.'"

"A trader was endeavouring to persuade the Indian convert Abraham that the brethren were not privileged teachers. He answered, 'They may be what they will; but I know what they have told me, and what God has wrought within me. Look at my poor countrymen there, lying drunk before your door. Why do you not send privileged teachers to convert them, if they can? Four years ago, I also lived like a beast, and not one of you troubled himself about me; but when the brethren came, they preached the cross of Christ, and I have experienced the power of his blood according to their doctrine; so that I am freed from the dominion of sin. Such teachers we want.'"

"The Indian convert Daniel was now asked upon his death-bed, whether he was contented to die. To this he answered, with a smile, 'that he was satisfied with whatever our Saviour should do with him.' During his whole illness, he preached the gospel to his countrymen; and his happy departure to the Lord produced a great emotion in the hearts of all present."

"An European man, being once present as a spectator when the Sacrament was administered to the Indian congregation, declared afterwards, that, though he had received the Communion many hundred times, yet he had never till now perceived its powerful effect on the heart; adding, that this was truly the Supper of the Lord, and that, whilst he lived, he should never lose the impression it had made upon him."

"Meanwhile, the persecutions against the brethren engaged in the mission did not cease; and sometimes they were even cruelly treated. Nor can it be denied that some occasion was given by the inconsiderate zeal of the awakened Indians. They would often boldly reprove the white people for their sinful way of life; and whenever they were interrogated, spoke the truth without any reserve or caution. For instance, a Dutch clergyman in Westenhuck asked an Indian whom he had baptized if he had been at Shekomeko (the scene of one of the Moravian missions), and if he had heard the missionary preach, and how he liked him. The Indian answered, 'I have been there, and attended to the missionary's words, and like to hear them. I would rather hear the missionary than you; for, when he speaks, it is as though his words laid hold of my heart, and a voice within said, *That is truth;* but you are always playing about the truth, and never come to the point. You have no love for our souls; for, when you have once baptized us, you let us run wild, without troubling yourself any further about us. You act much worse than one who plants Indian corn; for the planter sometimes goes to see whether his corn grows or not.' Upon another occasion, a white man asked John, the Indian, 'whether the brethren were Papists.' John desired to know who the Papists were; and when he heard of the worship of images, he answered, 'that he supposed those people were more like Papists, who worshipped their cows, horses, and plantations.' The white man replied, 'But why are the people so enraged against the brethren?' John answered, 'Why did the people crucify the Lord Jesus, and throw Paul bound into prison?'"

"An Indian woman from Menissing paid a visit to John, and told him, that, as soon as she had a good heart, she also would turn to the Lord Jesus. 'Ah,' replied John, 'you want to walk on your head! How can you get a good heart, unless you come first to Jesus?'"

"Samuel, the Indian, endeavoured likewise to speak to his own brother, in regard to his conversion, but received this unexpected answer: 'My ancestors are all gone to the devil; and where they are I will be likewise.'"

"The missionaries were repeatedly removed from station to station; the brethren being of opinion that frequent changes of ministers might be useful in preventing too strong an attachment to and dependence upon men, and fixing the hope of the Indians more upon God alone."

"The missionaries praised God, especially, for the unreserved manner in which the Indians owned their defects and asked advice. One of them said, 'that he was in doubt how he should behave in future; his heart being as unbroken as a stubborn horse.' He added, 'A man may have a very wild horse; but if he can only once make it eat salt out of his hand, then it will always come to him again: but I am not so disposed towards our Saviour, who is continually offering me his grace. I have once tasted grace out of his hand, and yet my heart still runs away, even when he holds out his grace unto me. Thus we Indians are so very stupid, that we have not even the sense of beasts.'" Loskiel.

It is unhappily the fault of most religious memoirs and reports, that they are a great deal too long. *The Acts of the Apostles*, the first and the best, are also the shortest Missionary Reports that have ever been published.

NOTE XXX. Page 439.

Franklin, in a letter written from London to America, in May, 1768, thus describes the situation of affairs in the parent state: —"Even this capital, the residence of the king, is now a daily scene of lawless riot and confusion. Mobs patrolling the streets at noon-day; some knocking all down that will not roar for Wilkes and Liberty. Courts of justice afraid to give judgment against him; coal-heavers and porters pulling down the houses of coal-merchants that refuse to give them more wages; sawyers destroying saw-mills; sailors unrigging all the outward-bound ships, and suffering none to sail till merchants agree to raise their pay; watermen destroying private boats and threatening bridges; soldiers firing among the mobs, and killing men, women, and children: which seems only to have produced an universal sullenness, that looks like a great black cloud coming on, ready to burst in a general tempest. What the event will be God only knows. But some punishment seems preparing for a people who are ungratefully abusing the best constitution and *the best king* any nation was ever blessed with; intent on nothing but luxury, licentiousness, power, places, pensions, and plunder; while the ministry, divided in their counsels, with little regard for each other, worried by perpetual opposition, in continual apprehension of danger, intent on securing popularity in case they should lose favor, have, for some years past, had little time or inclination to attend to our small affairs, whose remoteness makes them appear still smaller." Some of the opinions expressed by Franklin in the foregoing letter gradually underwent a material change. In subsequent letters, he declares his conviction that all the arbitrary measures of the British government originated from the individual will and character of the king. The first hint of this occurs in a letter written to his son, Governor Franklin, in 1773, wherein he says: "The late measures have been, I suspect, very much the king's own; and he has, in some cases, a great share of what his friends call *firmness*." In writing to La Fayette, in the year 1779, he remarks, that it may be reckoned certain that the English nation, in their conduct to other states, will omit whatever is prudent, and do whatever is imprudent, "at least while the present ministry continues, or, rather, while *the present madman* has the choice of ministers." The senseless conduct of George the Third, in expelling Franklin's electrical *conductors* from the palace of Buckingham House, doubtless contributed to persuade the philosopher that the monarch was a madman.

In the year 1767, we have seen Franklin characterize the French as "*that in-*

triguing nation," to whose insidious policy he wished that no scope might be afforded. Twelve years afterwards, we find him declaring that "the Spaniards are, by common opinion, supposed to be cruel, the English proud, the Scotch insolent, and the Dutch avaricious; but I think the French have *no national vice* ascribed to them. They have what may be called follies, *perhaps* (!), but not vices; and, in short, there is nothing wanting in the character of a Frenchman, which belongs to that of an agreeable and worthy man." Franklin's *Private Correspondence.*

Franklin has noticed, with just contempt, the attribute of *firmness* (always exerted in opposition to generous and liberal principles) which George the Third affected, and loved to have ascribed to him. One Nowell, a Tory clergyman, who preached the anniversary sermon in commemoration of the death of Charles the First before the House of Commons, on the 30th January, 1772, compared the living to the beheaded prince, and the house (on account of some opposition to illiberal measures of the court) to the band of English regicides. The house, as usual, passed a vote of thanks to the preacher; but had so negligently attended to his discourse, that, only a month after, on hearing some passages of it recited from a published copy, they unanimously commanded the vote of thanks to be expunged from their journals. *Annual Register for* 1772.

NOTE XXXI. Page 449.

"Or all men, saving Sylla the man-slayer,
Who passes for in life and death most lucky
Of the great names which in our faces stare,
The General Boon, backwoodsman of Kentucky,
Was happiest among mortals anywhere;
For, killing nothing but a bear or buck, he
Enjoyed the lonely, vigorous, harmless days
Of his old age in wilds of deepest maze.

"Crime came not near him,—she is not the child
Of solitude; health shrank not from him,—for
Her home is in the rarely trodden wild,
Where if men seek her not, and death be more
Their choice than life, forgive them, as beguiled
By habit to what their own hearts abhor
In cities caged. The present case in point I
Cite is, that Boon lived hunting up to ninety;

"And, what 's still stranger, left behind a name
For which men vainly decimate the throng,—
Not only famous, but of that *good* fame
Without which glory 's but a tavern song,—
Simple, serene, the antipodes of shame,
Which hate nor envy e'er could tinge with wrong,
An active hermit, even in age the child
Of nature, or the Man of Ross run wild.

"'T is true he shrank from men even of his nation,
When they built up unto his darling trees,—
He moved some hundred miles off for a station
Where there were fewer houses and more ease;
The inconvenience of civilization
Is that you can neither be pleased nor please;
But where he met the individual man,
He showed himself as kind as mortal can.

"He was not all alone: around him grew
A sylvan tribe of children of the chase,
Whose young, unwakened world was ever new,
Nor sword nor sorrow yet had left a trace

On her unwrinkled brow, nor could you view
A frown on Nature's or on human face;
The free-born forest found and kept them free,
And fresh as is a torrent or a tree.

"And tall, and strong, and swift of foot were they,
Beyond the dwarfing city's pale abortions,
Because their thoughts had never been the prey
Of care or gain: the green woods were their portions;
No sinking spirits told them they grew grey,
No fashion made them apes of her distortions;
Simple they were, not savage; and their rifles,
Though very true, were not yet used for trifles.

"Motion was in their days, rest in their slumbers,
And cheerfulness the handmaid of their toil;
Nor yet too many nor too few their numbers;
Corruption could not make their hearts her soil;
The lust which stings, the splendor which encumbers,
With the free foresters divide no spoil;
Serene, not sullen, were the solitudes
Of this unsighing people of the woods."—Lord Byron

NOTE XXXII. Page 474.

"THE people of Boston are characteristically distinguished by a lively imagination, an ardor easily kindled, a sensibility soon excited and strongly expressed; a character more resembling that of the Greeks than that of the Romans. They admire, when graver people would only approve; detest, when cooler minds would only dislike; applaud a performance, when others would listen in silence; and hiss, when a less susceptible audience would only frown. This character renders them sometimes more, sometimes less amiable, usually less cautious. From this cause, their language is frequently hyperbolical, and their pictures of objects in any way interesting highly colored. Hence, also, their enterprises are sudden, bold, and sometimes rash. The tea shipped to Boston by the East India Company was destroyed. At New York and Philadelphia, it was stored (i. e. locked up from use). From the same source, also, both persons and things are suddenly, strongly, and universally applauded or censured. Individuals of distinction command a popularity which engrosses the public mind and runs to enthusiasm. Their observations and their efforts are cited with wonder and delight; and such as do not join in the chorus of applause incur the suspicion of being weak, envious, or malevolent. When the sympathetic ardor is terminated, the persons who have received this homage are, without any change of character, regarded, perhaps through life, as objects deserving of no peculiar esteem or attachment." Dwight's *Travels*.

Whatever claims to credit this sketch may possess, it derives none from the allusion to the transactions with regard to the East India Company's tea. The difference of circumstances sufficiently accounts for the different conduct of New York and Boston. If the people of Boston threw a cargo of tea into the water, the people of New York threw a cargo of stamps into the fire.

The destruction of the tea at Boston, and other events that arose out of the controversy between Britain and America, are celebrated by Burns, in his song beginning,

"When Guilford good our pilot stood," &c.

NOTE XXXIII. Page 476.

In a letter to his son, dated in October, 1773, Franklin, after expressing his own final opinion, that the British parliament had no right to enact any law obligatory upon America, adds, "I know your sentiments differ from mine on these subjects. You are a thorough government man; which I do not wonder at; nor do I aim at converting you. I only wish you to act uprightly and steadily, avoiding that duplicity which in Hutchinson adds contempt to indignation. If you can promote the prosperity of your people, and leave them happier than you found them, whatever your political principles are, your memory will be honored." Franklin's *Private Correspondence*, Part II. Governor Franklin, thus encouraged, persisted in adhering to the British government during the whole of the Revolutionary War; and it was by his orders, as president of a board of associated loyalists at New York, that one of the foulest atrocities that distinguished the war (the murder of Captain Huddy, an American officer, at the very close of the struggle) was committed. Ramsay. That the father did not expect the war, or that, notwithstanding the foregoing expressions, he was not prepared for a steady and inflexible adherence of his son to the political principles which the young man espoused, appears from the terms of the letter in which he answered an overture of reconciliation from the unfortunate ex-governor in the year 1784. "Nothing has ever hurt me so much," he then declared, "or affected me with such keen sensations, as to find myself deserted in my old age by my only son; and not only deserted, but to find him taking up arms against me in a cause wherein my good fame, fortune, and life were all at stake." — "There are natural duties," he adds, "which precede political ones, and cannot be extinguished by them." Franklin's *Memoirs*.

It is certain that "a man cannot serve two masters" whose views and interests are irreconcilably distinct; but he may long delude himself with the hope of reconciling their views and blending their interests. Franklin himself was so desirous of preserving the integrity of the British empire, that, while a seeming hope or even possibility of this remained, the superior force of his attachment to American liberty was unknown alike to himself and to his friends and associates, — some of whom were, doubtless, surprised by the violent flow of his passions when only one channel remained for them. Soon after the battle of Bunker's Hill, Franklin thus wrote to his ancient and intimate friend, the king's printer at London: "Mr. Strahan! You are a member of parliament, and one of that majority that has doomed my country to destruction. Look at your hands, Sir! They are red with the blood of your countrymen. You were once my friend. Now, you are my enemy; and I am yours, B. Franklin." With much philosophic calmness and composure of general demeanour, relieved by occasional indulgence of playful wit, Franklin combined a wonderful force of action and warmth of zeal.

NOTE XXXIV. Page 489.

Yet the Americans possessed at this time many warm friends in England, whose zeal broke forth in some remarkable demonstrations. In the month of February, 1775, a pamphlet published at London, defending the conduct of Britain, with arguments that struck at the very foundation of British constitutional liberty, was complained of by a peer of Whiggish principles to the House of Lords, by whom it was ordered to be burned by the hands of the common executioner. A few days after, on the complaint of a Tory peer, the House of

Lords ordered the same treatment to be inflicted on some of the writings of Thomas Paine, in defence of the Americans and reprobation of the British king, which had been republished in England. The populace of London endeavoured to obstruct this latter ceremonial; and, immediately after its performance, publicly burned, with marks of strong displeasure and contempt, a recent parliamentary address on American affairs. *Annual Register for* 1775.

These demonstrations of popular feeling, however, seem to have been inspired rather by dislike of the ministers, than hearty sympathy with the Americans. Lord Chatham, in proof of the insolence with which his countrymen were animated against that people, relates that even the lowest of the populace of London habitually talked of "our American subjects"!

When the Boston Port Bill was passed, a political society at London, calling itself the Supporters of the Bill of Rights, voted a contribution of five hundred pounds to relieve the distress occasioned by the bill to the people of Boston. *Annual Register for* 1775.

On the 7th of June, 1775, a number of gentlemen, members of a political club called the Constitutional Society of London, united in a declaration of abhorrence of the attack upon the Americans at Lexington. They subscribed a sum of money which they expressly appointed "to be applied to the relief of the widows, orphans, and aged parents of our beloved American fellow-subjects, who, faithful to the character of Englishmen, and preferring death to slavery, were, for that reason only, inhumanly murdered by the king's troops, at or near Lexington, in the province of Massachusetts, on the 19th of last April." This proceeding, which was chiefly promoted by the celebrated scholar, philosopher, and politician, John Horne Tooke, was published by him in the newspapers of London. Horne Tooke was consequently tried for a libel; and, notwithstanding a most ingenious and spirited defence, found guilty, and sentenced to a pecuniary fine and a year's imprisonment. Howell's *State Trials.*

In a debate in the House of Commons in October, 1775, Governor Johnstone, one of the members, thus expressed himself: — "To a mind that loves to contemplate the glorious spirit of freedom no spectacle can be more affecting than the action at Bunker's Hill. To see an irregular peasantry, commanded by a physician, inferior in numbers, opposed by every circumstance of cannon and bombs that could terrify timid minds, calmly waiting the attack of the gallant Howe, leading on the best troops in the world, with an excellent train of artillery, and twice repulsing those very troops who had often chased the battalions of France, and at last retiring for want of ammunition, but in so respectable a manner that they were not even pursued, — who can reflect on such scenes and not adore the constitution of government which could breed such men?"

In the month of July, 1776, Lord Chatham prosecuted Woodfall, the printer of a London newspaper, for *a libel*, in having asserted that his Lordship's sentiments coincided with those of the British ministry, and were unfavorable to the Americans. A technical error in the requisite formalities of legal procedure caused this action to terminate in a nonsuit. *Annual Register for* 1776.

NOTE XXXV. Page 518.

"Can tyrants but by tyrants conquered be,
And Freedom find no champion and no child,
Such as Columbia saw arise, when she
Sprung forth a Pallas, armed and undefiled?
Or must such minds be nourished in the wild,
Deep in the unpruned forest, 'midst the roar
Of cataracts, where nursing Nature smiled
On infant Washington? Has earth no more
Such seeds within her breast, or Europe no such shore?" — Lord Byron.

"Great men have always scorned great recompenses:
Epaminondas saved his Thebes, and died,
Not leaving even his funeral expenses:
George Washington had thanks, and naught beside,
Except the all-cloudless glory (which few men's is)
To free his country." — Ibid.

"There is something charming to me" — thus John Adams wrote at the time to his friend Elbridge Gerry, of Massachusetts — "in the conduct of Washington. A gentleman of one of the first fortunes upon the continent, leaving his delicious retirement, his family and friends, sacrificing his ease, and hazarding all in the cause of his country. His views are noble and disinterested."

"Washington," said General Henry Lee, on learning his death (and all America reëchoed the declaration), "was first in war, first in peace, first in the hearts of his countrymen." His popularity, however, was not always uninterrupted. During his second presidency, it was deemed, with ungrateful injustice, by a numerous body of his countrymen, that he had died to all his former glory. But, superior even to this keen mortification, he possessed his great soul in uncomplaining patience. If Pericles was supported by the fortune of Athens, Washington with greater glory supported the fortune of America.

There has recently been given to the world the following sketch of Washington's character, by the pen of one of his most illustrious friends: — "His judgment was slow in operation, being little aided by invention or imagination, but sure in conclusion; hence the common remark of his officers of the advantage he derived from councils of war, where, hearing all suggestions, he selected whatever was best; and certainly no general ever planned his battles more judiciously. His integrity was the most pure, his justice the most inflexible, I have ever known. His temper was naturally irritable and high-toned; but reflection and resolution had obtained a firm and habitual ascendency over it. If ever, however, it broke its bounds, he was most tremendous in his wrath. On the whole, it may truly be said, that never did nature and fortune combine more perfectly to make a man great, and to place him in the same constellation with whatever worthies have merited from man an everlasting remembrance." Jefferson's *Memoirs*.

Jefferson, Franklin, and various other associates and eulogists of Washington, were incapable of appreciating principles that were strangers to their own souls. But the claim of Washington to "the highest style of man" has been successfully vindicated in the recent work of Mr. McGuire. It is there satisfactorily shown that religion not merely engaged the attention of Washington's mind, but captivated the deep affection of his calm, steadfast heart. From various anecdotes related in this interesting performance I select the following. In the summer of 1779, Washington, exploring alone one day the position of the British forces on the banks of the Hudson, ventured too far from his own camp, and was compelled by a sudden storm and the fatigue of his horse to seek shelter for the night in the cottage of a pious American peasant, who, greatly struck with the manners and language of his guest, and listening at the door of his chamber, overheard the following prayer from the father of his country: — "And now, Almighty Father, if it is thy holy will that we shall obtain a place and a name among the nations of the earth, grant that we may be enabled to show our gratitude for thy goodness by our endeavours to fear and obey thee. Bless us with wisdom in our councils, success in battle, and let all our victories be tempered with humanity. Endow also our enemies with enlightened minds, that they may become sensible of their injustice, and willing to restore our liberty and peace. Grant the petition of thy servant, for the sake of Him whom thou hast called thy beloved Son; nevertheless, not my will, but thine be done." McGuire's *Religious Opinions and Character of Washington*.

There is a strange disregard of propriety and congruity in the complimentary

terms of Franklin's testamentary bequest to Washington. "I leave to General Washington my gold-headed stick, surmounted by the cap of Liberty. If it were a sceptre, he would become it, and has deserved it." But Washington's glory is for ever associated with the triumph of republican authority over sceptred and monarchical sway. He caused the *populi fasces* to prevail over the *purpura regum*.

NOTE XXXVI. Page 536.

All the information conveyed in this paragraph of the text is derived from conversations which I had the honor and advantage of holding with La Fayette, at his house in Paris, in the month of May, 1829. Though the sequel of his communications is hardly pertinent to the object of the present work, I think it far too interesting to be omitted; and accordingly transcribe, as follows, from the manuscript journal, which I enlarged after every conversation with La Fayette, and the accuracy of which I ascertained by subsequent personal correspondence with himself.

La Fayette, brooding over the design suggested to him by the language of the Duke of Gloucester, entered, soon after, into communication with Silas Deane, and subsequently with Dr. Franklin, when the Doctor arrived at Paris as commissioner from America to France. On learning the first successes of the British army, which followed shortly after the American declaration of independence, both Franklin and Deane protested that they could not encourage La Fayette to pursue his romantic purpose, as they feared that the cause of American liberty was irretrievably lost. Undeterred by this remonstrance, he resolved to persevere; and, awaiting the completion, which Franklin undertook to superintend, of an equipment of various articles which he was to take with him to America, he paid a visit to England, where his uncle, De Noailles, a timid, circumspect man, resided as ambassador from France. Noailles presented his nephew to the British king, who (aware of Franklin's negotiations at Paris, and desirous of cultivating friendly relations with the French) said to La Fayette, "I hope you mean to stay some time in Britain." La Fayette answered, that this was not in his power. "What obliges you to leave us?" asked the king. "Please your Majesty," replied La Fayette, "I have a very particular engagement, which if your Majesty were aware of, you would not desire me to stay." The king subsequently expressed displeasure at that reply, when the events that ensued disclosed its hidden import. La Fayette was invited to attend the review of a detachment of British troops, prepared to embark for America. He declined, under pretence of sickness; thinking it would be dishonorable thus to inspect the condition of troops with whose enemies he purposed to unite himself. "But," he remarked to me, with some animation, "I met them six months after at Brandywine." One night, at an entertainment given by the Duke of Devonshire, at which La Fayette was present, the Duke of Dorset unexpectedly entered, having just arrived from Paris. He announced as news, that the French court had commanded the American commissioners to depart from France; and, at the same time, delivered to La Fayette some letters, which he had brought over for him. They were from Franklin, and stated both that his own negotiation with the French court was prospering, and that the equipment for La Fayette's voyage was completed. La Fayette immediately repaired to his uncle, and announced his instant departure for France. Noailles, after remonstrating ineffectually against this manifestation of indifference to the British monarch's civilities, demanded if his nephew would soon return to London. La Fayette answered, that he did not know. "Well," said the ambassador, "shall I conceal your departure, and tell the king,

when he next inquires for you, that you are unwell?" La Fayette was struck with this proposition, and, eagerly seizing the opportunity it presented of advancing a point he had greatly at heart, of embroiling the courts of France and Britain, replied, "My dear uncle, I could not have asked you to do that; but, since you have offered, I shall really be glad if you will do it." So the ambassador consequently did; and the British ministers, on learning, soon after, the departure of La Fayette for America, behaved to Noailles in a manner that showed them fully persuaded of his accession to his nephew's designs. Neither he nor the court of France, however, knew any thing about them, till after La Fayette had embarked; and then the French government despatched two vessels, in good earnest, to pursue the gallant adventurer, with the purpose of intercepting his expedition to America, and bringing him forcibly back. Several years after, when Noailles, then ambassador at Vienna, received a visit from his nephew, he said to him, with a significant look, "Now, La Fayette, I hope you have not come here to play me another such trick as you did at London."

The conduct of the French court towards the Americans, La Fayette remarked, was fluctuating and indecisive, and, towards Britain, "of a very *Austrian* complexion,"—the reverse of upright and honorable.[1] That great statesman, Turgot, in 1775, presented a memorial to his colleagues in the French cabinet, representing the impolicy of openly aiding the Americans; Necker (according to his daughter, Madame de Staël,—*Considérations sur la Révolution Française*) gave similar counsel to Louis the Sixteenth; and in effect it was long before the French government consented publicly and decisively to espouse the cause of American independence. They preferred the middle course of affording secret succours to the Americans; till the displeasure and reproaches of England and the strong current of public sentiment and opinion in France overbore the scruples of the French monarch to declare himself the unprovoked enemy of the king of Britain, and the ally of a revolted people and republican commonwealth. Even then it was manifest to all discerning eyes, that what the French court immediately and distinctly desired was to render the British and the Americans the instruments of each other's destruction; and that, as the final issue of a long and exhausting warfare, that court would have preferred the dear-bought success of Britain to the establishment of American independence. A few years before, when Corsica revolted from the sway of the Genoese, France purchased and pursued the claims of defeated tyranny.

Spain, La Fayette remarked, was reluctantly dragged into the quarrel by France.[2] During the war, an American plenipotentiary resided at Madrid, but was not received at court; and even after the peace of 1783, and the recognition by Britain of American independence, the Spanish court, from a reasonable apprehension of the security of its own colonial dominion in South America, refused for a while to unite in that recognition, or to receive Carmichael, the ambassador

[1] And yet, when Lord Carlisle, and the other commissioners appointed by Britain in the year 1778, made a representation to this effect in one of their addresses to the American congress, La Fayette, transported by zeal and passion beyond the usual consistency and ingenuousness of his character, charged Lord Carlisle with insulting his country, and challenged him to single combat. At a more advanced period of his life, La Fayette exhibited in all his conduct and behaviour a peculiar remoteness from stratagem, intrigue, and duplicity; and graced a generous ardor, which years and experience could never chill, with that dignity of disposition which in noble minds corresponds with the growth of an illustrious reputation. We have seen Britain, in the year 1836, nobly return good for evil, and by her mediation enable France to escape from an unjust and dangerous contest which she had provoked with North America.

[2] In the month of October, 1776, the Spanish monarch, by a public proclamation, announced, "that, in consequence of the amity subsisting between himself and the king of Great Britain, he should maintain a perfect neutrality during the present war; that he should not give any aid to the Americans; *but* that he should not refuse their admission into any ports of his dominions, while they conformed to the Spanish laws." See Anderson's *History of Commerce*, and *Annual Register for* 1776. Yet *the most Catholic*, in imitation of the policy of *the most Christian* king, had already secretly contributed both arms and money in aid of the Americans.

of the United States, in his diplomatic capacity. La Fayette, who was then at Cadiz, repaired to Madrid at the request of Carmichael; and, after some negotiation, informed the Spanish minister, Count Florida Blanca, that Carmichael would quit Spain, if he were not acknowledged before a certain day, — adding, that in such case it would be long enough before Spain would see another ambassador from America. Thereupon the Spanish court acknowledged Carmichael.

La Fayette has contributed to elucidate the history as well as to promote the liberty of America. Botta informed me that some of the most valuable part of his historic narrative was derived from information and materials furnished to him by La Fayette.

NOTE XXXVII. Page 550.

The late William Dillwyn of Walthamstow informed me that the British government remitted ten thousand pounds to his brother, a pious and respectable Quaker inhabitant of New Jersey, to be distributed among the families of the two Quakers who were hanged.

Garden, in his *Anecdotes of the Revolutionary War*, mentions an occasion on which a party of Quakers, hastening to tender a congratulatory address to the British on a victory which they had obtained, unluckily accosted Colonel Lee at the head of a troop of American dragoons, whom the Quakers mistook for a neighbouring British detachment commanded by Colonel Tarleton. Under this impression, they delivered their address to the very persons whose cause it loaded with reproach and was intended to injure; and had scarcely concluded, when one of the dragoons with a pistol shot the leader of the party through the head. The others, however, were spared and dismissed by the humane interposition of Lee.

Some Quakers have indulged their favorite strain of declamation in complaints of the *persecution* which their American brethren underwent from their own countrymen, during the Revolutionary War. But these complaints have awakened little sympathy; and impartial men have been more disposed to partake the indignation which was kindled against the Quakers, and to admire the forbearance which these sectaries experienced. While America was a prey to all the misery and horror of a war conducted with the most barbarous license and savage cruelty, the voice of Quaker thanksgiving was heard to celebrate every additional disaster that befell her arms, and every increase of peril that menaced her liberty.

The American Quakers, however, were not universally the friends of their country's foes and oppressors. Lydia Darrah, a female Quaker inhabitant of Philadelphia, having detected a project of General Howe to surprise and destroy Washington and his army by a nocturnal attack, contrived to defeat the scheme by conveying intelligence of it to Washington, under whom her own son was serving at the time as an officer. *American Quarterly Review.*

Brissot, whose unbounded admiration of the American Quakers has betrayed him into some remarks upon their conduct more encomiastic than correct, relates, that Washington, during the Revolutionary War, partook the prevailing prejudice and animosity of his countrymen against the Quakers; but that he afterwards adopted very different sentiments, and assured Brissot that he considered their simplicity of manners, good morals, economy, and general reasonableness, a powerful support to the new government which the Revolution had established in America. The simplest and most intelligible explanation of this change of sentiment seems to be, that Washington disliked the Quakers when he was struggling against established monarchical power, for the same reason for which he liked them when he was administering established republican authority, — that is, for their peaceable and unresisting submission to existing forms of government. Their weight against him in the one case became weight in his favor in the other.

NOTE XXXVIII. Page 551.

It is melancholy to remark the inefficiency (not to say the pernicious efficiency) of the schemes that have been devised to eradicate or even mitigate all or any of the varied and abominable evils involved in the system of negro slavery. Once planted, the root of this tree of bitterness seems to be fatally permanent. The Quakers and other citizens of America manumitted their slaves; but they could not, or at least they did not, make them more than nominally free, or promote them to the condition of a happy and respected portion of the community. In proportion as the manumitted negroes have increased in number has been the increase of their social degradation, till their treatment has finally become, if possible, even more inhuman than that of the portion of their race that continues enslaved. La Fayette, during his last visit to America, expressed a deep and painful surprise at the increase which the prejudice of the whites against the blacks and mulattoes had undergone since the Revolutionary War, when, in the season of general danger, soldiers of every hue partook their meals together.

With the professed design of extirpating this evil, and of laying a foundation for the total abolition of negro slavery, a project of colonizing a part of Africa (which has been called Liberia) with freed negroes from America was engendered by a coalition between deluded philanthropy and active fraud, injustice, and hypocrisy; and has produced only aggravated misery to the freed negroes, and more confirmed and rigorous bondage to the slaves. See *An Inquiry into the Character and Tendency of the American Colonization and American Anti-slavery Societies*, by William Jay, — a work which every man who desires the welfare and happiness of the African race ought carefully to peruse.

The justest and most liberal tribute ever rendered by municipal authority in America to the rights of the African race was a statute enacted (March, 1780) in the middle of the Revolutionary War by the legislature of Pennsylvania, — the preamble of which I shall here transcribe, because the sentiments it expresses are such as ought to inhabit and predominate in the breast of every American who owns allegiance to God and professes attachment to his country and her freedom.

"When we contemplate our abhorrence of the condition to which the arms and tyranny of Great Britain were exerted to reduce us, — when we look back on the variety of dangers to which we have been exposed, and how miraculously our wants in many instances have been supplied and our deliverances wrought, when even hope and human fortitude have become unequal to the conflict, — we are unavoidably led to a serious and grateful sense of the manifold blessings which we have undeservedly received from the hand of that Being from whom every good and perfect gift cometh. Impressed with these ideas, we conceive that it is our duty, and we rejoice that it is in our power, to extend a portion of that freedom to others which hath been extended to us, and a release from that state of thraldom to which we ourselves were tyrannically doomed, and from which we have now every prospect of being delivered. It is not for us to inquire why, in the creation of mankind, the inhabitants of the several parts of the earth were distinguished by a difference in feature or complexion. It is sufficient to know that all are the work of an almighty hand. We find in the distribution of the human species, that the most fertile as well as the most barren parts of the earth are inhabited by men of complexions different from ours and from each other; from whence we may reasonably as well as religiously infer, that He who placed them in their various situations hath extended equally his care and protection to all, and that it becometh not us to counteract his mercies. We esteem it a peculiar blessing granted to us, that we are enabled in this day to add one more step to universal civilization, by removing, as much as possible, the sorrows

of those who have lived in undeserved bondage, and from which, by the assumed authority of the kings of Great Britain, no effectual legal relief could be obtained. Weaned by a long course of experience from those narrow prejudices and partialities we had imbibed, we find our hearts enlarged with kindness and benevolence toward men of all conditions and nations; and we conceive ourselves, at this particular period, extraordinarily called upon, by the blessings which we have received, to manifest the sincerity of our profession, and to give a substantial proof of our gratitude.

"And whereas the condition of those persons who have heretofore been denominated negro and mulatto slaves has been attended with circumstances which not only deprived them of the common blessings that they were by nature entitled to, but has cast them into the deepest afflictions by an unnatural separation and sale of husband and wife from each other and from their children,—an injury, the greatness of which can only be conceived by supposing that we were in the same unhappy case:—In justice, therefore, to persons so unhappily circumstanced, and who, having no prospect before them whereon they may rest their sorrows and hopes, have no reasonable inducement to render the service to society which otherwise they might; and also in grateful commemoration of our own happy deliverance from that state of unconditional submission to which we were doomed by the tyranny of Britain,—Be it enacted, that no child born hereafter shall be a slave," &c. Gordon.

A forcible and excellent, yet calm and temperate, exposition of the evil and unrighteousness of slavery has lately been given to the world by the accomplished Dr. Channing, of Massachusetts. Most American writers who have ventured to bear testimony against slavery appear to handle the subject as if they dreaded to burn their fingers. Their confusion and timidity contrast strikingly with the distinctness and audacity of the advocates for the vile institution.

NOTE XXXIX. Page 552.

In the historical portion of the *Annual Register* for the year 1772, which was written by the illustrious Edmund Burke, this great statesman, after condemning the impolitic tameness with which Britain and France forbore to withstand the partition of Poland, thus contrasts the sickly state of liberty in Europe with its happier condition and brighter prospects in America:—"In a word, if we seriously consider the mode of supporting great standing armies, which becomes daily more prevalent, it will appear evidently that nothing less than a convulsion that will shake the globe to its centre can ever restore the European nations to that liberty by which they were once so much distinguished. The western world was the seat of freedom, until *another more western* was discovered; and that other will probably be its asylum, when it is hunted down in every other part. Happy it is that the worst of times may have one refuge still left for humanity." These remarkable words (which it is interesting to compare with a passage from Smollett, cited in a note near the end of Book X., Chap. I., *ante*) amount very nearly to a prophecy of the triumph of liberty in America, and of the connection of this triumph with the explosion of the French Revolution.

NOTE XL. Page 553.

One of the most interesting pictures that ever were painted is that noble composition of Trumbull, the American artist, which represents the members

of this congress in the act of adopting the Declaration of Independence. It is impossible to survey the countenances there delineated, without acknowledging that *these* are men worthy of the great transaction in which they are engaged, and whom their country may well be proud of having produced. No affectation appears in their looks, — no coarseness, no dramatic extravagance, no turbid passion, no effeminate refinement; but a graceful plainness and simplicity, manly sense, deliberate thought and courage, and calm, determined possession of noble purpose. Comparing this picture with the corresponding French one, representing the *Serment du Jeu-de-Paume* (as I earnestly did one day in the house of La Fayette at Paris, while this great man directed my attention to them both), we behold a striking illustration of the contrasted character of the two nations. What fiery, turbid, theatrical aspect and gestures the French artist has ascribed to his countrymen! The one ceremony appears a fleeting, fantastic, extravagant dramatic show. In the other we seem to behold the edifice of national liberty considerately erected on solid, durable, and respectable foundations. The pictured aspect of the American statesmen is in perfect harmony with the style and tone of the Declaration of Independence. Of this immortal manifesto, which no praise can exalt and no criticism depreciate, it has been most justly observed, that, if it had been more argumentative, it would have shown a want of confidence in the justice of its cause; and that, if it had been less so, it would have been inconsistent with the respect it professed for the opinion of mankind.

Since the foregoing note was written, the Second French Revolution (of 1830) has occurred, and produced scenes of which the remembrance will constitute the pride and glory of France, and the pictorial representations will teach a grand and animating lesson to all the world.

NOTE XLI. Page 555.

"I AM well aware," says John Adams, in a letter to his wife, "of the toil, blood, and treasure that it will cost us to maintain this declaration and support and defend these States. Yet, through all the gloom, I can see the rays of ravishing light and glory. I can see that the end is worth more than all the means; and that posterity will triumph in that day's transaction, even although we should rue it, — which I trust in God we shall not." *Letters of John Adams, published by his Grandson, C. F. Adams.*

"I will not," says the greatest poet and one of the most admirable men that Scotland has ever produced, "I cannot, enter into the merits of the cause, — but I dare say the American congress in 1776 will be allowed to be as able and as enlightened as the English convention in 1688; and that their posterity will celebrate the centenary of their deliverance from us as duly and sincerely as we do ours from the oppressive measures of the wrong-headed House of Stuart." Burns's *Letters*, 1788.

Proud, the Quaker historian of Pennsylvania, deemed the American Revolution the certain cause and commencement of the decline of national virtue and prosperity in America. See Note XXIX., at the end of Volume I., and a note to Book X., Chap. I. Paine, who judged and felt very differently, thus beautifully ponders on a more distant eclipse of American glory: — "A thousand years hence, perhaps in less, America may be what Britain now is. The innocence of her character, that won the hearts of all nations in her favor, may sound like a romance, and her inimitable virtue as if it had never been. The ruins of that liberty

which thousands bled to obtain may just furnish materials for a village tale, or extort a sigh from rustic sensibility; while the fashionable of that day, enveloped in dissipation, shall deride the principle and deny the fact. When we contemplate the fall of empires, and the extinction of the nations of the ancient world, we see but little more to excite our regret than the mouldering ruins of pompous palaces, magnificent monuments, lofty pyramids, and walls and towers of the most costly workmanship: but when the empire of America shall fall, the subject for contemplative sorrow will be infinitely greater than crumbling brass or marble can inspire; it will not then be said, Here stood a temple of vast antiquity, here rose a Babel of invisible height, or there a palace of sumptuous extravagance; but, Here, ah, painful thought! the noblest work of human wisdom, the greatest scene of human glory, the fair cause of freedom, rose and fell." Paine's *Letter to Washington*, 1796.

THE END.

INDEX.

Abercrombie, general, loses the battle of Ticonderoga, ii. 280; is recalled, 282.

Acadia, conquest of, ii. 29; ceded to the French, 237; reverts to France, 283.

Adams, Samuel, his zeal in the cause of Independence, ii. 493, *note;* establishes committees of correspondence, 495; a free pardon offered to the revolutionists, excepting Samuel Adams and John Hancock, 510.

Agriculture, state of in the middle States, ii. 205.

Albemarle, Duke of, encourages Phips' project of removing treasures from wrecks of Spanish vessels, i. 263; his success, 261; settlement named after him, 362.

Alexander, a chief of the Narragansets, i. 239; dies of mortification at the failure of his plans, 239.

Allen, Ethan, his energetic conduct in the taking of Ticonderoga and Crown Point, ii. 509.

Alsop, George, his account of the colony in Maryland, i. 319.

America, discovered by Christopher Columbus, i. 25; Cabot's discoveries, 27; neglect of his discoveries, 29; Spanish conquests, 31; maritime adventures under Elizabeth, 33; rise of the slave trade, 35; project of a colony under Sir Humphrey Gilbert, 37; colony at Roanoke, 39; further attempts at colonization, 41; Gosnold's voyage, 43; the London and Plymouth Companies, 45; colonial code of James I., 47; sufferings of the colonists, 49; Smith's adventures in Virginia, 50; influence over the Indians, 51; exploration of Chesapeake, 53; Smith's administration, 55; Lord Delaware appointed governor, 57; anarchy and famine at Jamestown, 59; administration of Lord Delaware, 61; expeditions against Port Royal and New York, 65; first representative legislature in America, 67; migration of young women to Virginia, 69; Indian conspiracy, 71; massacre of the colonists, 73; dissensions of the London Company, 75; dissolves itself, 77; effect of its dissolution, 79; Governor Harvey's tyrannical conduct, 81; the king assumes the government of the colony, 82; provincial liberty restored, 83; Virginia espouses the royal cause in the troubles of Charles I., 85; navigation system of England, 87; revolt of Virginia, 89; the navigation act, 91; impolicy of the exclusive system, 93; the navigation act a grievance, 95; Indian insurrection and war, 97; Bacon's rebellion, 99; death of Bacon, 101; rigorous punishment of the rebels, 103; commissioners criminate Berkeley, 105; tyranny and rapacity of Effingham, 107; effect of the British revolution, 109; civil and domestic state of Virginia, 111; futile attempt at colonization in the north, 123; policy and religious views of James I., 139; project of colonization by the Puritans, 143; sufferings of the Plymouth colony, 145; charter of the Plymouth colony, 147; tyrannical civil policy of Charles I., 151; charter of Massachusetts Bay, 153; intolerance of the settlers, 159; transfer of the Massachusetts charter, 161; active emigration, 163; representative government, 169; settlement of Connecticut, 171; the Pequod war, 173; treatment of the Indians, 175; restraints on emigration, 183; surrender of the charter demanded, 185; domestic state of New England, 187; sides with the parliament, 191; New England confederacy, 193; coinage of money by Massachusetts, 195; impeachment and defence of Winthrop, 197; missionary labours among the Indians, 201; synod of the New England churches, 203; favour of Cromwell to, 205; projects for removal of the colony to Jamaica, 207; the Quakers persecuted, 211; Massachusetts asserts her rights, 221; royal letter to, 223; Rhode Island charter, 225; common interest of the New England States, 227; appointment of commissioners for New England, 229; petition of Massachusetts to the king, 231; views of allegiance in Massachusetts, 233; disputes with the commissioners, 235; cession of Acadia to France, 237; Indian conspiracy, 239; king Philip's war, 241; invasion of Connecticut by Andros, 243; royal governor of New Hampshire, 245; laws of England deemed inoperative in America, 247; parties in Massachusetts, 249; portents in the same, 250; Quo Warranto threatened, 251; is issued against Massachusetts, 253; Kirk appointed governor, 255; Andros captain-general, 257; surrender of Rhode Island charter, 259; oppressive government of Andros, 261; Sir William Phips, 263; insurrection against Andros, 265; war with France, conquest of Acadia, 267; chicanery of the court in the case of Andros, 269; new charter of Massachusetts, 271; administration of Sir William Phips, 273; the witchcraft delusion, 275; war with the French Indians, 283; treaty of peace, Earl of Bellamont governor, 285; character of the early settlers, 287; early historics of New England, 289; general diffusion of knowledge, 291; political condition and sentiments, 293; state of religion, 295; society and manners, 297; reward of public services, 298; slavery, 299; charter of Maryland, 301; condi-

tion of the English Catholics, 305; opposition of Virginia, 307; legislative code, 309; discontent of Virginia quieted, 311; act concerning religion, 313; acts for security of political freedom, 315; overthrow of religious liberty, 317; general prosperity of the colony, 319; severe pressure of the navigation act, 321; transportations of felons to Maryland, 323; charges against Lord Baltimore, 325; pretensions of William Penn, 327; professions of regard by James II., 329; formation of a Protestant association, 421; review of the proprietary administration, 333; oppression of the Catholics, 335; civil and domestic state of Maryland, 337; early attempts of French and Spaniards in colonizing North and South Carolina, 340; Coligny's attempts at colonization, 341; grant of Carolina to Clarendon and others, 143; settlement at Albemarle, 345; second charter of South Carolina, 347; constitution of Albemarle, 349; fundamental constitutions, 351; old Charleston founded, 357; hostile intrigues of the Spaniards, 359; dissatisfaction of the proprietaries, 361; factious proceedings in Albemarle, 363; insurrection under Culpepper, 365; temporizing policy of the proprietaries, 367; administration of West, 369; sale of Indians into slavery, 371; discords in South Carolina, 373; dealings with the buccaneers, 375; resistance to the navigation acts, 377; Colleton appointed governor, 379; martial law proclaimed, 381; jealousies in regard to the Huguenots, 383; Archdale appointed governor, 385; his successful administration, 387; neglect of religion and education, 389; laws against Dissenters declared null, 391; civil and domestic state of Carolina, 393; Hudson's discovery of New York, 387; Dutch West India Company, 399; contentions with the English, 401; Swedish settlement in Delaware, 403; mutual jealousies of the Dutch and English, 405; conquests of the Swedes in Delaware, 407; feeble policy of the Dutch company, 409; hostile designs of Charles II., 461; noble spirit of Stuyvesant, 413; capitulation of New Amsterdam, 415; administration of Nichols, 417; reconquest of New York by the Dutch, 421; arbitrary administration of Andros, 423; a legislative assembly granted, 425; colonel Dongan's administration, 427; the Five Indian nations, 429; missionary labours of the Jesuits, 431; treaty with the native nations, 433; New York annexed to New England, 435; general dissatisfaction in New York, 437; Leisler's usurpation, 439; scheme for the invasion of Canada, 441; renewal of the treaty with the Five Nations, 443; spirit of the Connecticut people, 445; temper of Fletcher's administration, 447; Lord Bellamont appointed governor, 449; captain Kidd, 451; factions in New York, 453; administration of Lord Cornbury, 455; civil and domestic state of New York, 457; sale of the territory of New Jersey by the Duke of York to Berkeley and Carteret, 461; Carteret assumes the government, 465; fraudulent views of the Duke of York, 467; the Quakers, 469; sale of New Jersey to Fenwick and Byllinq, 473; constitution of West Jersey, 475; pretensions of the Duke of York, 477; first assembly of West Jersey, 479; domestic state of East Jersey, 481; incitement to emigration, 483; surrender of the East Jersey patent, 485; constitution of New Jersey, 487; civil and domestic state of New Jersey, 489; Pennsylvania, first settlement of, 492; birth and character of William Penn, 493; solicits a grant of territory, 499; charter of Pennsylvania, 501; preliminary terms to settlers, 503; first settlers, 505; Penn's first frame of government, 507; grant of Delaware to Penn, 509; first assembly of Pennsylvania, 511; controversy with Lord Baltimore respecting the Delaware grant, 513; Penn's treaty with the Indians, 515; second assembly of Pennsylvania, 517; Penn's return to England, 519; his favour at the court of James II., 521; his letter of complaint, 523; rumoured conspiracy of the Indians, 525; conduct of Penn at the revolution in 1688, 527; schism under George Keith, 529; adverse circumstances of Penn, 533; third frame of government, 535; second visit of Penn to his domain, 537; efforts in favour of slaves and Indians, 539; fourth frame of government, 541; Penn's final return to England, 543; complaints against Penn, 545; civil condition of Pennsylvania and Delaware, 547; domestic state of Pennsylvania, 549; state and prospects of the North American provinces at the close of the 17th century, 551; American provinces disappointed with the fruits of the British revolution of 1688, ii. 1; popular acts of Nicholson, governor of Virginia, 5; his ambitious schemes, 7; politic appointments in Massachusetts, 9; popular administration of Lord Bellamont, 11, Dudley's effort to extend the royal prerogative, 13; Queen Anne's war, 17; attack on the Connecticut charter, 19; charges against Connecticut, 21; progress of the war in New England, 23; expedition against Port Royal, 25; projected invasion of Canada, 27; capture of Port Royal and Acadia, 29; expedition against Canada, 31; disastrous results of the expedition, 33; Hunter and the New York assembly, 35; peace of Utrecht, 37; evil consequences of the war, 39; Earl of Orkney governor of Virginia, 41; Dudley superseded in Massachusetts, 43; bill to abolish New England charter, 45; the Yamassee war, 47; Gookin and the Pennsylvania Quakers, 49; Sir William Keith's administration, 51; piracy on the American coast, 53; Theach, or Blackbeard the pirate, 55; chief justice Trott, 57; revolt of South Carolina, 59; trade between New York and Canada, 61; John Law's Mississippi scheme, 64; administration of Shute in Massachusetts, 65; violent opposi-

tion to, 67; intrigues of Rasles, 69; lieutenant-governor Dummer, 71; war with the Eastern Indians, 73; explanatory charter of Massachusetts, 75; Burnet, governor of, 77; Belcher, governor of, 79; French Fort erected at Crown Point, 81; the Carolinas surrendered to the crown, 83; Thomas and John Penn, their visit to Pennsylvania, 85; Bishop Berkeley's project, 87; state of affairs in Virginia, 91; in New England, 93; in Maryland, 99; in South Carolina, 103; in New Jersey, Pennsylvania, and Delaware, 105; general state of the colonies, 107; unpeopled and defenceless state of the southern frontier of South Carolina, 109; colonization of Georgia projected, 111; royal charter of Georgia, 113; treaty with the Creek Indians, 115; fundamental laws of Georgia, 117; John Wesley and his brother visit the province, 119; emigration of Scotch Highlanders, 121; intrigues against the Wesleys, 123; hostile preparations of the French, 125; difficulties with Spain, 127; intrigues of the Spaniards, 129; Oglethorpes invasion of Florida, 131; unhappy result of the invasion, 133; Spanish invasion of Georgia, 135; triumph of Oglethorpe, 137; prosperity of South Carolina, 139; condition of Georgia, 141; progress of the States of America till the peace of Paris, in 1763; affairs of New York, 143; Zenger's trial, 145; prosperity of Connecticut, 147; boundary questions in Massachusetts, 149; intrigues against Belcher, 151; parties in Pennsylvania, 157; military organization in, 159; Indian grievances, 161; war with France, 163; projected reduction of Louisburg, 165; preparations for the expedition, 169; siege of Louisburg, 171; capture of, 173; general rejoicing in the provinces, 175; emigration of Scotch Highlanders, 177; preparations for invading Canada, 179; formidable French fleet, its dispersion, 181; ravages of the French and Indians, 183; naval impressment, 185; impressment and tumult at Boston, 187; treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, 189; British Dominion in Nova Scotia, 191; bill abolishing American charters, 193; scheme of an Episcopal establishment, 195; policy of importing slaves into America, 197; scheme of a federal league, 199; state of affairs in Pennsylvania, 201; in New York, 203; agriculture in the middle States, 205; in the State of New England, 207; origin of Vermont, 209; German emigrants in Massachusetts, 211; the Ohio company, 213; sciences and literature in America, 215; collision of the French and English, 219; French pretensions in the Ohio valley, 227; mission of Washington to the French, 229; the Albany plan of union, 233; Franklin and Shirley's correspondence, 235; provincial dissensions, 237; preparations for war, 239; the French neutrals of Nova Scotia, 241; Braddock's expedition, 243; his defeat, 245; ravages on the Virginia frontier, 247; expedition against Crown Point, 249; abandonment of the expedition, 259; Morris and the Pennsylvania Assembly, 253; resignation of civil power by the Quakers, 255; war declared between France and England, 257; French success at Oswego, 259; recall of Shirley, 261; Loudoun's fruitless schemes, 263; success of the French, 265; Loudoun's dispute with Massachusetts, 267; state of parties in Massachusetts, 269; Pitt appointed Prime Minister, 271; Franklin's mission to England, 273; political views of Pitt and Franklin, 275; siege of Louisburg, 277; repulse at Ticonderoga, 279; reduction of Fort Duquesne, 281; salt manufacture, 282; bankrupt law, 283; reluctance of New England to further levies, 285; battle of Niagara, 287; siege of Quebec, 289; battle of the heights of Abraham, 293; death and character of General Wolfe, 295; apprehended restoration of Canada, 297; dislike of titular honours by the Americans, 299; progress of hostilities, 300; entire conquest of Canada, 302; war with the Cherokees, 303; affairs of Massachusetts, 307; conclusion of the Cherokee war, 309; discontents in Massachusetts, 313; affairs of North Carolina, 316; treaty of Paris, 319; general rejoicing, 321; Indian war, 325; treaty of peace with the Indians, 333; Franklin's second mission to England, 335; affairs in Virginia, 337; in New England, 341; in Maryland, and the Carolinas, 343; in New York, New Jersey, and Georgia, 345 schemes of taxation first broached, 347; of an Episcopal hierarchy, 349; unpopularity of the British troops, 351; Indian affairs, 355; system of commercial restrictions, 365; extension and aggravation of control, 367; foreign colonial trade, 369; project of a domestic tax, 371; proposed stamp duties, 373; confused counsels in New England, 375; views of internal and external taxation, 377; intrigue of Hutchinson, 372; colonial petitions against the proposed tax, 381; parliamentary debates on the stamp act, 383; passage of, 385; New York manifesto, 387; resolutions of the Virginia Assembly, 389; general ferment, 391; riots in Boston, 393; in Rhode Island, 395; convention at New York, 397; political clubs, 399; Massachusetts declaration of rights, 401; non-importation agreement, 403; the stamp act set at defiance, 405; its injunctions disobeyed, 406; Franklin's examination, 407; declaratory act, 409; repeal of the stamp act, 411; compensation to sufferers by the riots, 415; American popular leaders, 417; resentment against the abettors of the stamp act, 421; act imposing a duty on tea, 423; act suspending the New York Assembly, 425, French emissaries — De Kalb, 427; non-importation agreement renewed, 429; circular letter of Massachusetts, 431; rigorous enforcement of the trade laws, 433; Massachusetts refuses to rescind her circular, 435; convention in Massachusetts, 437; violent proceedings in the British parliament, 439;

resolutions of the Virginia Assembly, 441; of the Massachusetts Assembly, 443; impolicy of the British measures, 449; affray with the troops in Boston, 453; partial repeal of the tea-duty act, 455; project of an Episcopal hierarchy renewed, 457; writers on the American controversy, 459; insurrection in North Carolina, 465; affair of the Gasper, in Rhode Island, 467; governor Hutchinson's royal salary, 469; committees of correspondence, 471; attempt to enforce the tea-duty act, 473; disclosures in Hutchinson's letters, 475; question of conquering America, 479; emigration to America, 481; Boston Port Bill, 483; innovations on Massachusetts charter, 485; effects of the recent acts, 487; operation of the Boston Port Bill, 489; determined obstruction of the British measures, 491; first Continental Congress, 493; proceedings of Congress, 495; defensive measures of Massachusetts, 497; proceedings in parliament, 499; Quincy urges resistance, 501; acts restraining trade, 503; attempted seizure of military stores in Salem, 505; affair of Lexington, 507; capture of Ticonderoga and Crown Point, 509; battle of Bunker's Hill, 511; address of Congress to the British people, 515; Washington chosen commander-in-chief, 517; Georgia accedes to the Union, 519; violent proceedings of Lord Dunmore, 521; ravages by British cruisers, 523; Richard Penn's examination on American affairs at the bar of the House of Lords, 525; invasion of Canada, 527; popular and public policy in America, 530; progress of independence, 531; European interest in the cause of America, 533; negociations with France, 535; condition of the American army, 537; ravages of Lord Dunmore on the Virginia coast, 539; the British evacuate Boston, 541; the Indian alliances of Britain, 543; German mercenaries, 545; defection from the British service, 547; conduct of the Quakers, 549; emancipation of slaves by the Quakers, 551; Declaration of Independence, 553.

Amherst, general, takes Fort Ticonderoga, ii. 286; conduct in the Canadian war, 290.

Andros, appointed Captain-general and Vice-admiral of Massachusetts, New Hampshire, Maine, &c., i. 257; his tyranny, 261; is seized and imprisoned, 265; sent to England to answer the charges preferred against him, 267.

Andros, Sir Edmund, supersedes Lord Baltimore as Governor of Maryland, i. 333; his severity and rapacity, 334; claims for the Duke of York part of the Connecticut territory, and marches upon it, 243; is opposed, and abandons the enterprise, 243; his claims to New Hampshire and Maine, 244; his change of character and deportment, ii. 6; promotes the interest of the colony, 6.

Annapolis, substituted for St. Mary's, as the capital of Maryland, i. 337.

Anson, Capt. (afterwards Lord), keeps off a Spanish armament from Carolina, ii. 60.

Archdale, John, a Quaker, made governor of Carolina, with fuller powers than had before been granted, i. 385; proves himself worthy of the trust, 385; receives an address of thanks from the body of proprietors, 386.

Argal, Captain, conspires against the liberties of Virginia, i. 75.

Arnold, Benedict, assists in the seizure of Ticonderoga and Crown Point, ii. 509.

Arundel and Surrey, Earl of, makes preparations for forming a colony in Carolina, i. 343.

Ashley, Lord, (afterwards Earl of Shaftesbury) obtains, with others, a charter for Carolina, i. 343; draws up the Fundamental Constitution of the colony, 351.

Augustine, St., garrison of, established in Florida by the Spaniards, i. 359.

Ayscue, Sir George, commands an expedition against the Virginian royalists, i. 86; enters the Chesapeake, and overcomes the resistance opposed to him by Berkeley, 87.

Bacon, Nathaniel, his history, i. 98; his rebellion, 99; and death, 101.

Baltimore, Lord, Secretary of State to James I., and one of the original members of the Virginia company, i. 301; first founds the settlement of Ferryland, in Newfoundland, 301; obtains from Charles II. a grant northward of the Potomac, and determines to settle it with Catholics, 302; his project interrupted by death, but resumed by his son, 302.

Baltimore, Cecilius, son of the above, carries out his father's project of erecting his grant into an asylum for the Catholic faith, i. 302; names his province Maryland, in honour of the Queen of Charles I., 302; tenor of the charter, 303; first emigrants come over in a vessel named *The Ark and the Dove*, commanded by Leonard Calvert, 306; Lord Baltimore's wise administration, 307; opposition of Virginia, 307; finds a competitor in Clayborne, 308; triumphs over his arts, 309; forms a legislative code, 309; quiets the discontent in Virginia, 311; pacifies the Indians, 312; draws up his memorable "Act concerning Religion," by which entire religious toleration is established, 313; his acts for the security of political freedom, 315; his wise plans counteracted, and his religion maligned, 317; reposes confidence in Fendal, surrenders the administration into his hands, and is betrayed, 318; dies at a venerable age, 322.

Baltimore, Charles, succeeds his father as proprietary, i. 323; carries out his views of religious toleration, 323; has a conference with William Penn relative to settlement of boundaries, 327; sees the territory now composing the State of Delaware dismembered from Maryland, 328; is accused of obstructing the Navigation Acts, 328; the Protestant party seek a cause of quarrel with him, i. 330; rumours of a Popish plot, 331; formation of a Protestant Association, 331; countenanced by King William, 332; Lord Baltimore surrenders the powers of

government, and is cited before the privy council, 332; is superseded by Sir Edmund Andros, 333.
Barclay, David, a Quaker, descendant of the celebrated Barclay, labours to adjust the differences between England and America, ii. 500.
Barré, Colonel, opposes the British measures against America, ii. 485; his eloquent appeal against, 486.
Bavington, governor of North Carolina, a weak, intemperate man, ii. 82.
Bartram, John, a Pennsylvania Quaker, establishes the first botanical garden in America, ii. 216.
Bartram, William, his botanical tour in the southern states, ii. 480.
Belcher, governor of New Jersey, an active and efficient officer, ii. 345.
Bellamont, Earl of, appointed governor of New York, Massachusetts, and New Hampshire, i. 285; his wise and equitable administration, 286; his popular career, ii. 11; dies in New York, 12.
Bellamy, Capt., a noted pirate, is wrecked off Cape Cod, and his accomplices who escape are executed at Boston, ii. 54.
Berkeley, Sir William, governor of Virginia, i. 83; ameliorates the condition of the colony, 84; is obliged to yield to the forces sent by Cromwell against the royalists, 87; obtains, with others, a charter for Carolina, 343; nominates a President and Council, 345.
Berkeley, Bishop, his project of improving the education of the colonists, and converting the Indians, ii. 87; visits America, where he composes his 'Alciphron, or Minute Philosophie,' 88; presents his library to Yale College, and returns to England, 89; his prophecy, 89, *note*.
Bernard, governor of New Jersey, concludes a treaty of friendship with the Indians, ii. 283.
Berry, Sir John, sent with an armament from England against Bacon, i. 101.
Betcher, governor of Massachusetts, ii. 79; his pompous vanity, 79.
Blake, Humphrey, arrives with a colony of dissenters in Carolina, i. 372.
Bland, advocates the cause of American liberty, ii. 459.
Blunt, Sir John, originator of the South Sea Company, ii. 64; ruinous consequences of the failure of the project, 65.
Bolland, agent for the provinces of America, presents a petition to the Parliament, ii. 499.
Bonnet and Worley, two pirate chiefs, form a stronghold at the mouth of Cape Fear River, are compelled to surrender, and are executed at Charleston, ii. 54.
Boston, first dramatic entertainment in Boston, ii. 207; creates a disturbance, and leads to an act of the Legislature against theatrical entertainments, 207; general ferment caused by the Stamp Act, 385; riots, 393; political clubs, 399; compensations to sufferers by the riots, 415; non-importation agreement, 403; the Stamp Act disobeyed, 405; repeal of the Stamp Act, 411; resentment against the abettors of, 421; non-importation agreement renewed, 429; act imposing duties on tea, 423; affray with the English troops, 453; partial repeal of tea-duty act, 455; attempt to enforce the tea-duty act, 473; the Port Bill, 483; its operation, 489; fresh troops and armaments are continually poured into Boston, 491; jealousies excited by, 491; popular meetings, 492; General Gage's threats to disperse them are despised, 492; the inhabitants of Suffolk county declare that 'no obedience is due to the recent acts of Parliament,' 492; acts restraining trade, 503; progress of the public discontent, 510; attempted seizure of military stores at Salem, 505; battle of Bunker's Hill, 511; ravages by British cruisers, 523; the British evacuate Boston, 541; progress of the cause of independence, 542; declaration of, 553.
Bouquet, Colonel, his address in foiling the Indians, and saving Pittsburg from their fury, ii. 329.
Braddock, General, his expedition, ii. 243; his defeat, 245; dies of his wounds, 246.
Bradstreet, Colonel, attacks Fort Frontignac, ii. 280; success of his gallant enterprise, 280.
Brainerd, David, his talents and character, ii. 154.
Branford, town of, settled by Davenport, Eaton, and others, i. 172.
Bray, Dr. Thomas, promotes the establishment of free schools and public libraries in Maryland, i. 335.
Brooke, Lord, projects a settlement in Connecticut, i. 171.
Brown, a merchant of Providence, attacks with a party in whale-boats the Gasper war schooner, boards her, and sets her on fire, ii. 467.
Brownists, rise of, i. 135; persecution of, 137.
Buccaneers, a race of pirates, infest the American coast, i. 374; law against them, 375; Sir Robert Holmes despatched to suppress them, 375.
Buchan, Earl of, colonizes Port Royal Island with a body of his countrymen, i. 372.
Bull, Stephen, Surveyor-General of Carolina, assigns lands to the Dutch emigrants, i. 361.
Burke, Edmund, eloquently opposes the British measures against America, ii. 485; his project for conciliating Americans, 504.
Burnet, William, son of the celebrated bishop and historian, is made governor of New York and New Jersey, ii. 60; labours to promote the welfare of the province, 60; is superseded by Colonel Montgomery, and transferred to the government of Massachusetts, 76; honours paid him, 76; quarrels respecting salary, 77; dies, and his faults forgotten in his good qualities, 78.
Beverley, his History of Virginia, i. 115.
Byron, Captain, destroys the last French na-

val force sent for the recapture of Canada, ii. 303; dismantles two batteries at the Bay of Chaleurs, 303.
Cabot, Sebastian, despatched by Henry VII., visits the coast of North America, i. 26; his discoveries, 27; neglect of his discoveries by Henry VII., 29; commercial enterprise under Henry VIII., 30.
Calvert, Leonard, commands *The Ark and the Dove*, the vessel that brought over the Maryland pilgrims, i. 306.
Calvert, Charles, appointed resident governor of Maryland, i. 320; conciliates the Indians, 320; removes the Dutch intruders, and takes possession of Cape Henlopen, 320; first frames a law for the naturalization of aliens, 321.
Camden, Lord, advocates in the house the cause of the Americans, ii. 410.
Campbell, Captain Lachlan, transports to New York a colony of Highland families, ii. 146; experiences the bad faith of the governor, 147.
Canada, expedition against, ii. 31; disastrous results of, 33; preparations for invading, 179; formidable French fleet sent for its protection, but are dispersed, 181; progress of the war, 182; ravages of the French and Indians, 183; naval impressment, 184; peace of Aix-la-Chapelle, 188; idea of abandoning it entertained, 317; Earl of Bath earnestly recommends its retention, 318; Franklin publishes a pamphlet recommending the same, 318; its final cession by the treaty of Paris, 319.
Carolina, North and South. Coligni's attempts at colonization, i. 341; grant of Carolina to Clarendon and others, 343; settlement at Albemarle, 345; second charter of South Carolina, 347; constitution of Albemarle, 349; the fundamental constitutions, 351; old Charlestown founded, 357; hostile intrigues of the Spaniards, 359; dissatisfaction of the proprietaries, 361; factious proceedings in Albemarle, 363; insurrection under Culpepper, 365; temporizing policy of the proprietaries, 367; administration of West, 369; sales of Indians into slavery, 371; discords in South Carolina, 373; dealings with the buccaneers, 375; resistance to the navigation acts, 377; Colleton appointed governor, 379; martial law proclaimed, 381; jealousy in regard to the Huguenots, 383; Archdale appointed governor, 385; Archdale's successful administration, 387; neglect of religion and education, 389; law against dissenters declared null, 391; civil and domestic state of Carolina, 393; the Yamassee war, ii. 47; piracy upon the coasts, 53; Theach, or Blackbeard, the pirate, 55; Chief Justice Trott, 57; revolt of South Carolina, 59; the Carolinas surrendered to the crown, 83; state of in 1730, 101; prosperity of South Carolina, 139; war with the Cherokees, 303; conclusion of the Cherokee war, 309; state of in 1765, 343; population 130,000, 343.
Carolina, North, a conspiracy of the Coree and Tuscarora Indians, ii. 34; insurrection, 465; the first Congress rejects the plan of federal association, 520; afterwards comes heartily into the measure, 550; rejects the proposition of separation from the mother country, 520; Martin, governor, causes his house to be surrounded by cannon, part of which is seized by the people, 522; Colonel Ashe espouses the cause of the people, and the governor is forced to fly the province, 522; progress of the cause of Independence, 533; Declaration of, 553.
Carolina, South, expedition of the Spaniards against, ii. 22; vigorous measures of governor Johnson, and departure of the squadron, 23; project of invasion by Great Britain and Spain, ii. 58; martial law proclaimed, 59; the Spanish fleet proceeds to New Providence, where they are repulsed by Commodore Rogers, and afterwards dispersed in a storm, 60; John Rutledge is elected governor, 548; in an address to Lord, William Campbell, the new governor, declares its adhesion to the British crown, though taking arms against tyranny, 520; population in 1700, 5506; in 1723, it had risen to 32,000, ii. 100; in 1730, the rice exported, during the ten preceding years, was 264,488 barrels, 100; in 1730, the negro population amounted to 28,000, and were detected in a plot for a general massacre of the whites, 100; printing introduced in 1730, and a newspaper established in 1734, 101; a religious frenzy among some families of the French refugees, leading to frightful disorders, 101.
Carr, Sir Robert, is sent as one of the commissioners for the reduction of New York, 229.
Carroll, Charles, of Carrollton, advises burning the tea in Baltimore, ii. 497.
Carteret, Sir George, obtains, with others, a charter for Carolina, i. 343.
Cary, collector of the proprietary quit-rents in Carolina, affords an early example of the repudiation system, i. 392; he and his partizans obliged to fly the colony, 392.
Catholics, on occasion of the rebellion of the Pretender, they are accused of conspiracy in his cause, i. 177.
Catholic priests doomed by the New England laws to punishment, and to death in case of return, i. 188.
Catholics, English, condition of, i. 305; emigration of to Maryland, 306; act concerning religion, 307; opposition of Virginia, 307; discontent of Virginia quieted, 311; overthrow of religious liberty, 317; professions of regard to the Catholics by James II., 329; formation of a Protestant Association, 331; oppression of the Catholics, 335; are excluded from the act of toleration, 336; persecution of, 336.
Chalmers, George, advocates the prerogative of Britain, ii. 459.
Chauncey, Charles, flies from persecution, and joins the colony at Massachusetts, i. 181.

Charleston, foundation of, i. 370; named in honour of Charles II., 70.
Chase, Samuel, is characterized as the Samuel Adams of Maryland, ii. 494, *note*.
Cherokees, seven of their chiefs conducted to England by Sir Alexander Cumming, ii. 83; the attentions paid them, 83; war with, 303; their ravages, 304; besiege Fort Prince George, 304; lay siege to Fort Loudoun, 305; their treachery, 305; vain attempts to conciliate, 306; mediation of the chief Little Carpenter, 309; Captain Kennedy proceeds against them, drives them back, and reduces to ashes their principal town, Etehoe, 310; they sue for peace, 310; a deputation of Cherokee chiefs invited to England, 354.
Chicheley, Sir Henry, governor of Virginia, i. 106; his prudence and inactivity, 106.
Christison, Wenlock, a Quaker, condemned to death by the laws of New England, but escapes with flogging and exile, i. 217.
Chubb, commander of Fort Pemmaquid, his obstinate defence, i. 284.
Church, Captain, distinguishes himself in the war of Philip, i. 242.
Church, Colonel, his services in the war with the Five Nations, ii. 18.
Clarendon, Lord Chancellor, obtains, with others, a charter for Carolina, i. 343; his inconsistency in regard to toleration, 344.
Clarke, Dr. John, succeeds in obtaining a charter for Rhode Island, i. 225.
Clayborne, William, secretary of the province of Virginia, i. 308; his opposition to Lord Baltimore, 308; is defeated, 309; renewed intrigues, 312; espouses the cause of Cromwell, 316.
Clinton, George, governor of New York, ii. 147.
Colden, of New York, an accomplished scholar and philosopher, ii. 345.
Coligni, admiral, equips two vessels, and, landing at the mouth of Albemarle river, names the country Carolina, after his sovereign Charles IX., i. 341; settles the country with Huguenots, 342; massacre of the same by the Spaniards, 342; retaliation upon the Spaniards, 342.
Colleton, Sir John, obtains, with others, a charter for Carolina, i. 343.
Colleton, James, replaces Moreton in the government of Carolina, i. 379; proclaims martial law, 381; is impeached and banished, 382.
Compton, Bishop of London, his zeal for supplying religious instruction to the colonies in America, i. 389; misrepresents the state of the Catholic religion in Maryland, 325.
Congress, first continental, assembled at Philadelphia, ii. 493; proceedings of, 495; publishes an address to the people, 505; dissolves, and advises meeting the year ensuing, 506; second continental congress, 514; address to the inhabitants of England and Ireland, 515; Peyton Randolph the first president, 519; he vacates, and John Hancock is elected as his successor, 519; its first title, "The Twelve Confederated Colonies," 519; by the accession of Georgia, the title "The Thirteen States of North America" is adopted, 519.
Connecticut, settlement of, i. 171; attack on its charter, ii. 19; charges against, 21; evil consequences of the war with Canada, 39.
Connecticut and New Haven are united by a charter of Charles II., 173.
Connecticut resists the oppression of the government, 266; distinguished by her prompt action on the threatened attack upon New England by Count Frontignac, 284; furnishes her contingent of 5000 men for the war in Canada, 285; population of in 1700, 30,000; in 1753, 100,000; in 1756, 131,805; prosperity of, 147; responds cheerfully to the requisition made to co-operate with the English troops against the Indians, 332; state of in 1765, 342; population 145,500, 338.
Conway, Secretary, expresses a desire to see the stamp act repealed, ii. 406.
Cooke, John, his intrigues in Maryland, i. 327; forms a Protestant Association, 331; is indicted for treason and blasphemy, and flies the province, 335.
Cornbury, Lord, his odious administration, ii. 12; persecutes the Quakers in New Jersey, 22.
Cornwallis, Colonel Edward, governor and commander-in-chief in Nova Scotia, ii. 191.
Colton, John, retires to New England, i. 165; popularity of his religious works, 288.
———, John, son of the celebrated Colton, removes from Plymouth to Charleston, and is successful as a minister, i. 388.
Cranfield, governor of New Hampshire, becomes embroiled with the colonists, i. 245, insurrection against suppressed, 245; is recalled, 245.
Craven, Charles, governor of Carolina, popularity and success of his administration, i. 380.
Craven, governor of South Carolina, distinguished for his humanity and valour, ii. 46; his energetic conduct in the Yamassee war, 49.
Craven, Lord, obtains, with others, a charter for Carolina, i. 343; succeeds the Duke of Albemarle as palatine, 357.
Cromwell, Oliver, believed to have visited New England, i. 184, *note;* his elevation to power beneficial to the New England States, 206; his project for transferring the New England settlers to Jamaica, ii. 207.
Coxe, Daniel, proposes a scheme of a federal league, ii. 199; it proves the germ of subsequent action, 199.
Crosby, Colonel William, governor of New York, an officer of talent, but of arbitrary principles, i. 143; proceeding against Zenger, printer of the New York Weekly Journal, 144; he is acquitted, 145; Crosby's death, 146.
Crown Point, French fort at, ii. 81; expedition against, 249.
Culpepper, Lord, governor of Virginia, i. 106;

returns to England, 107; is put in confinement for returning without leave, 107; excites commotions at Astley river, 364; is despatched to England to offer submission, 365; is arrested in the Downs, brought to trial, and acquitted by the influence of Shaftesbury, 366.
Dale, Sir Thomas, is appointed to the command of the colony in Virginia during the absence of Lord Delaware, i. 60.
Dalzell, Captain, his project to surprise the Indians, but himself falls a victim to their artful manœuvres, ii. 328.
Danforth, deputy governor of Massachusetts, obstructs the appointment of deputies, i. 249.
Davenant, Sir William, the poet, his expedition to found a new colony in Virginia, i. 85; is taken prisoner, and owes his life to the friendship of Milton, 85.
Delaware, the territory composing this State is dismembered from Maryland, i. 328; situation of in 1720; Lord Baltimore makes an effort to regain it, but failing, concludes an agreement with the heirs of Penn, ii. 99.
Delaware, Lord, is appointed governor and captain-general of the colony of Virginia at Jamestown, i. 52; his administration, 56; is appointed governor of Virginia, 57; his wise administration, 60; returns to England, 61; anarchy and famine at Jamestown, 59.
Demeré, Captain, defends Fort Loudoun against the Cherokees, 305; is captured by the Indians, and afterwards ransomed, 305.
Denison, Captain, distinguishes himself in the war of Philip, i. 242.
Denny, governor of Pennsylvania, concludes a treaty of friendship with the Indians, ii. 283.
Dickinson, advocates the cause of American liberty, ii. 459.
Dissenters, laws against in Carolina, i. 391.
Dobbs, Arthur, governor of North Carolina, his instructions to enlarge the royal prerogative provoke resistance, i. 237.
Douglass, William, of Boston, a profound mathematician, ii. 216.
Dramatic performances, the first in the British colonies, were at Williamsburg, in Virginia, ii. 91; first in New England, ii. 207; create a disturbance, and lead to an act of the legislature against theatrical entertainments, 207.
Drummond, a man of prudence and ability, appointed first governor of Carolina, i. 345.
Dudley, Joseph, governor of Massachusetts, his arbitrary administration, i. 13; is arrested in a popular outbreak, and conveyed a prisoner to England, 13; is reinstated, 14; his efforts to extend the royal prerogative, 15; superseded in Massachusetts, 43; is appointed chief justice of New York, 269; condemns to death Leisler, who excited the movement against King William, 270.
Dummer, William, governor of Massachusetts, ii. 71; his prudent and liberal administration, 75.
Duquesne, Fort, is abandoned, and falls into the hands of the English, 281.
Dutch, lands assigned to Dutch emigrants, i. 361; West India Company, 399; contentions with the English, 401; mutual jealousies of the Dutch and English, 405; feeble policy of the Dutch Company, 409; Stuyvesant, noble spirit of, 413; reconquest of New York by the Dutch, 421.
Dyer, Mary, a Quakeress, is put to death for her religion by the New England laws, i. 217.
Earthquake in New England in 1727, ii. 94.
Eastchurch, is appointed governor of Albemarle, i. 363.
Education, promoted in New England, i. 290.
Edwards, Jonathan, president of Princeton college, his talents and character, ii. 153.
Effingham, Lord, governor of Virginia, i. 107; his tyranny and rapacity, 108; his continuance in office irritates the colonists, ii. 4.
Elizabeth, of England, spirit of maritime adventure under, i. 32; coasts of Labrador and Greenland explored by Martin Frobisher, 32; Sir Francis Drake's expedition, 33; grants a patent of discovery to Sir Walter Raleigh, 37; is an accomplished smoker, 40, *note*.
Eliot, John, his missionary labours among the Indians, i. 199; his Indian Grammar, 199; publishes a treatise against monarchical government, 221; is cited to answer for the same, and obtains forgiveness, 221, *note*.
Endicott, governor of New England, makes a treaty with France in relation to Acadia, or Nova Scotia, i. 195; puts an end to flogging for religious opinions, 218.
England, Henry VII. neglects Cabot's discoveries in America, i. 31; maritime adventures under Elizabeth, 33; project of a colony under Sir Humphrey Gilbert, 37; colony at Roanoke in Virginia, 39; further attempts at colonization, 41; Goswold's voyage, 43; the London and Plymouth companies, 45; colonial code of James I., 47; exploration of the Chesapeake, 53; colony at Jamestown, 57; Lord Delaware sent as governor to Virginia, 61; disasters of the London Company, 75; dissolves itself, 77; James assumes the government of Virginia, 82; royal cause, in the troubles of Charles I., espoused by Virginia, 85; navigation system, 87; navigation act, 91; impolicy of the exclusive system, 93; navigation act a grievance, 95; effects upon America of the revolution under Cromwell, 109; policy and religious views of the Stuarts, 139; Charles I. transfers the Massachusetts charter, 161; royal letter to Massachusetts, 229; petition of Massachusetts to the king, 231; cession of Acadia to France, 237; royal governor of New Hampshire, 245; laws of England become to be considered imperative in America, 247; sale of the territory of New Jersey by the Duke of York to Berkeley & Carteret, 461; William Penn solicits a grant of land from the crown, 499; charter of Pennsylvania, 501; revolution of

1688 disappoints the Americans, ii. 1; Queen Anne's war, 17; expedition against Port Royal and Acadia, 25; projected invasion of Canada, 27; capture of Port Royal and Acadia, 29; expedition against Canada, 31; disastrous results of the expedition, 33; peace of Utrecht, 37; evil consequences of the war, 39; war with France resumed, 163; siege and capture of Louisburg, 171; emigration of Scotch Highlanders, 177; preparations for invading Canada, 179; dispersion of a formidable French fleet, 181; ravages of the French and Indians, 183; treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, 189; French pretensions in the Ohio Valley, 227; Washington's mission there, 229; Braddock's expedition, 243; his defeat, 245; war declared anew between France and England, 257; French successes at Oswego, 259; continued success, 265; siege of Louisburg, 277; repulse at Ticonderoga, 279; reduction of Fort Duquesne, 281; battle of Niagara, 287; siege of Quebec, 289; battle of the heights of Abraham, 293; death and character of General Wolfe, 295; a disposition shown to restore Canada to the French, 297; progress of hostilities, 300; entire conquest of Canada, 302; treaty of Paris, 319; projected schemes of taxation, 347; of establishing an Episcopal hierarchy, 349; the British troops become unpopular, 351; project of a system of commercial restrictions, 365; of a domestic tax, 371; of stamp duties, 373; Governor Hutchinson incurs the odium of introducing these measures, 379; parliamentary debates on the stamp act, 383; passage of, 385; Franklin is examined at the bar of the House of Commons, 407; repeal of the stamp act, 411; act imposing a duty on tea, 423; proceedings in the British parliament respecting the resistance to this act, 439; British and American troops, collision between them, 453; partial repeal of the tea-duty act, 455; project of an Episcopal hierarchy removed, 457; attempts to enforce the modified tea-duty act, 473; question of conquering America, 479; the Boston port bill is passed, 483; meets with determined obstruction, 491; acts passed laying restrictions on trade, 503; orders issued to secure the military stores of the government, 505; affair of Lexington disastrous to the British, 507; their loss at Bunker's Hill, 511; Lord Dunmore is urged to rigorous proceedings, 521; cruisers are sent to sweep the coasts, 523; Richard Penn's examination at the bar of the House of Lords, 525; the British evacuate Boston, 541; defections from the British service, 547; America declares herself independent of the mother country, 553.

Episcopacy, scheme of an Episcopal establishment in America, ii. 194; suggested by Secker, archbishop of Canterbury, 194; Cutler, rector of Yale College, and several other clergymen, retract Presbyterianism, and support the project, 195; renewed attempts, 349, 457.

Ewing, John, of Maryland, his lectures on natural philosophy, ii. 481.

Faubord, a Quaker, seeks to imitate the Sacrifice of Abraham, but is prevented, i. 215.

Fendal, Josias, a profligate adventurer, raises an insurrection in Maryland, i. 317; gains the confidence of Lord Baltimore, who surrenders the administration into his hands, 318; his treachery, 318; re-excites commotions, 326; is prosecuted for seditious practices, and banished, 327.

Ferdinand and Isabella, of Spain, espouse the plans of Columbus, i. 26.

Five Nations, i. 429; treaty with, 433; renewal of treaty with, 443.

Fothergill, Dr., labours to adjust the differences between England and America, ii. 500.

Fox, George, the founder of the Society of Friends, i. 210.

France, war between France and England, i. 267; Acadia wrested from her, 267; war with England, ii. 17; loss of Port Royal and Acadia, 29; Canada invaded, 31; the English repulsed with great loss, 33; preparations for invading British America, 125; meet with a warm reception, 163; lose the stronghold of Louisburg, 171; Canada invaded, 179; its fleet dispersed, 181; successes of, in connection with the Indians, 183; treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, 189; pretensions of France in the Ohio Valley, 227; mission of Washington to their head-quarters, 229; they defeat Braddock, 245; war declared anew between France and England, 257; the French arms victorious at Oswego, 259; continued successes of the French, 265; siege of Louisburg, 277; are repulsed at Ticonderoga, 279; lose Fort Duquesne, 281; loss at the battle of Niagara, 287; siege of Quebec, 289; their severe defeat in the battle of the heights of Abraham, 292; their commander-in-chief, Montcalm, killed, 297; progress of hostilities, 300; entire loss of Canada, 302; treaty of Paris, 319; send emissaries into America, De Kalb, 427; America negotiates with France, 535.

Franklin, Josiah, father of the philosopher, his method of attracting herring into a river they had never before visited, ii. 207.

Franklin, Benjamin, his origin and early history, ii. 156; is elected Colonel of the Philadelphia regiment, but prefers serving as a private, 159; his mission to England, 273; political views of Pitt and Franklin, 275; preserves his popularity, though advocating the policy of the stamp act, 397; advocates the cause of American liberty, ii. 459; is dismissed from the office of postmaster-general of America, 478; as agent for the provinces of America, presents a petition to the parliament, 499.

Frontignac, Count, governor of Canada, attacks the settlements of New England, i. 267.

Gage, General, replaces Hutchison as commander-in-chief of the royal forces in North America, ii. 487; renders himself generally odious, 490.

Gage, General, shut up in Boston, ii. 509.
Gates, Sir Thomas, obtains a patent for territories in North America, i. 32; is appointed temporary governor of the colony in Virginia, 53.
Georgia, unpeopled and defenceless state of the southern frontier of Carolina, 109; colonization of Georgia projected, 111; royal charter of Georgia, 113; treaty with the Creeks, 115; fundamental laws of Georgia, 117; emigration of Scotch Highlanders, 121; hostile preparations of the French, 125; difficulties with Spain, 127; intrigues of the Spaniards, 129; Oglethorpe's invasion of Florida, 131; unhappy results of the invasion, 133; Spanish invasion of Georgia, 135; triumph of Oglethorpe, 137; a provincial constitution established, 140; John Reynolds the first governor, 140; character of the inhabitants, 142; a race of vagrant men named *Crackers*, 142; fourteen hundred Apalachian Indians are transplanted by Governor Moore of Carolina to the territory afterwards known by this name, i. 388; a convention held with the Creeks and Cherokees, for the cession of their lands, ii. 482; a convention declares its adherence to the American cause, 522; Sir James Wright, the governor, is arrested and imprisoned, 523; progress of the cause of independence, 533; declaration of, 553.
Germaine, Lord George Sackville, his strenuous opposition to the British measures against America, ii. 485.
German mercenaries, ii. 545.
Glover, the author of *Leonidas*, his eloquent appeal in behalf of America, ii. 504.
Godfrey, Thomas, of Philadelphia, the Pascal of America, inventor of the American orrery, ii. 216.
Godolphin, Sir William, concludes a treaty with Spain, in which rights of England to territories sold in America by the Spanish monarch are recognized, i. 359.
Goffe, General, one of King Charles's judges, escapes to America, i. 219; order for his apprehension, is pursued as a regicide, 222; finds an asylum in New Haven, and ends his days there, 226, *note*.
Gookin, governor of Pennsylvania, disputes between him and the assembly, ii. 50.
Gordon, Samuel, his fanaticism, i. 181.
Gorges, Sir Ferdinand, governor of New England, i. 183; procures a royal patent for the State of Maine, 244.
Gosnold, Bartholomew, project for colonizing North America, i. 43; is the first navigator who reaches America by a northwest course, 43; names the two islands, Martha's Vineyard and Elizabeth's Island, 44; lands on the region now forming the State of Massachusetts, and returns to England, 44; assists in the foundation of Jamestown, 49; falls a victim there to privations and disease, 49.
Granville, Lord, fills the office of palatine in Carolina, i. 390; his enmity to dissenters, 390.
Grant, Captain, his intrepid conduct in the Indian war of 1762, ii. 398.
Grenville, Sir Richard, commands a squadron fitted out for the West Indies, i. 23; his character for valour and honourable enterprise, 23; lands at Roanoke and makes a settlement, 24; his followers reduced to distress, and carried back by Drake to England, 25; second expedition to Virginia, 26.
Guilford, town of, settled by Davenport, Eaton, and others, i. 172.
Hakluyt, Richard, vessels fitted out by merchants of Bristol, at his instigation, to verify the discoveries of Gosnold, i. 44; obtains a patent for territories in North America, 45.
Hallowell, comptroller of the customs in Boston, his house broken into, and furniture demolished, ii. 394.
Hamilton, Duke of, his claims in Connecticut, i. 232.
Hampden, the patriot, believed to have visited New England, i. 184, *note*.
Hancock, J., succeeds Randolph, of Virginia, as president of the first Congress, a free pardon offered to the revolutionists, excepting Samuel Adams and John Hancock, 510.
Harvard College founded, i. 182.
Harvey, Sir John, governor of Virginia, i. 81; his tyrannical conduct, 82; is recalled, 83.
Hawkins, Sir John, the first Englishman to introduce the slave-trade, i. 34; voyages undertaken by him for that purpose, 35, &c.
Heath, Sir Robert, obtains a patent for Carolina, but neglecting to fulfil its conditions, it is revoked, i. 343.
Henry VII. of England, propositions made to him by Columbus, for a voyage of discovery to the West, i. 26; neglects the discoveries of Cabot, 29.
Henry VIII., during his reign the coast of Brazil is visited by English merchants, i. 35; trade entered into with the Portuguese colonial settlements, 36.
Hobby, Sir Charles, his intrigues in Massachusetts, ii. 15.
Holmes, the Baptist, persecuted in New England for his faith, i. 208; receives thirty lashes for his obstinacy, 209.
Holmes, Sir Henry, despatched with an expedition to suppress the buccaneers, i. 375.
Hooker, founds a colony on the Connecticut, i. 171; popularity of his religious works, 288.
Howe, Lord, labours to adjust the difficulties between England and America, ii. 500.
Hughes, the stamp distributor for Pennsylvania, refuses to resign, and is supported by the Baptists and Quakers, and by the partisans of the English church, ii. 397.
Huguenots, driven from France by the revocation of the edict of Nantes, i. 376; a large number settle in Carolina, 377; jealousy in regard to them, 383.
Hunter, governor, disputes between him and the New York assembly, ii. 35.
Hutchinson, Anne, her fanaticism, i. 177; is exiled, 180.

Hutchinson, governor, his house broken into, and his valuable books and manuscripts destroyed, ii. 394; receives a royal salary, 469; it is declared an infraction of the charter, 470; disclosures of his letters, 475; his triumph is short, he is recalled, 478.
Hutchinson, a historian of merit, ii. 352.
Immigration into Pennsylvania in 1729, six thousand two hundred and eight settlers, principally from Ireland, ii. 84; a law entitled "an act to prevent poor and impotent persons from being imported into this province," and imposing a tax of five shillings a head, discreditable to Pennsylvanian sense and generosity, 84; this law repealed, 85.
Independence, progress of, ii. 531; European interest in the cause of, 533; Declaration of, 553.
Indians, insurrections in Virginia, i. 97; war, in 1703, instigated by the Spaniards against Carolina, desolating war between the Five Nations and New England, ii. 17; conspiracy of the Coree and Tuscarora tribes, ii. 34; the Six Nations are recognized as subjects of England, 36; the Yamassee tribe, conspiracy of, 46; sanguinary war in Carolina, 47; the Norridgewock Indians carry on a furious war on the New England frontiers, 72; grievances in Pennsylvania, 161; grand assembly of the Indian nations at Easton, and treaty of friendship concluded, 282; war with the Cherokees, 303; jealousy of on the successes in Canada, 325; a report is spread of a scheme formed for their extirpation, and consequent excitement, 326; the Shawnee, Seneca, and Delaware tribes act in concert, 326; a furious incursion is made into Virginia, Maryland, and Pennsylvania, 328; project of Captain Dalzell to surprise them, but himself falls a victim to their artful manœuvres, 328; his detachment, after severe loss, brought off by the coolness and intrepidity of Captain Grant, 328; Pittsburg is threatened, and relieved by the intrepidity of Colonel Bouquet, 330; treaty of peace, 333; a deputation of Cherokee chiefs invited to England, 354; the Five Nations, 429; treaty with, 433; renewal of treaty with, 443.
Inoculation first introduced into New England by Cotton Mather, in 1721, ii. 94.
James I. of England, his accession favourable to colonization in America, i. 43; divides North America between two companies, 47; his antipathy to tobacco, and treatise against, 65.
Jamestown, foundation of, i. 38; is abandoned, 57; re-established by Lord Delaware, 58.
Jay, John, assists in the composition of the Declaration of Rights, and other public acts, ii. 494.
Jeffreys, Colonel, succeeds Sir William Berkeley, i. 103; concludes the Indian war, 104; investigates the cause of Bacon's rebellion, 105.
Jesuits, doomed by the New England laws to banishment, and to death in case of return, i. 88; missionary labours of, 431.
Johnson, Sir Nathaniel, governor of Carolina, under his administration the colony is involved in a fruitless expedition against St Augustine, i. 388.
Johnson, Sir Nathaniel, governor of South Carolina, his vigorous conduct, ii. 22.
Johnson, William, a native of Ireland, begins life as a common soldier, ii. 248; the command of the expedition against Crown Point entrusted to him, 248; the address with which he counteracts the Indians, 248; vigorous measures, but final abandonment of the expedition, 251; routs the French at the battle of Niagara, 287; Fort Niagara capitulates, 287.
Johnson, Dr., advocates the prerogative of Britain, ii. 459.
Keith, Sir William, governor of Pennsylvania, his time-serving character, ii. 51; his scheme for taxing America, 52, *note*; falls into merited contempt, and closes his life in London, in poverty and obscurity, 52.
Kennedy, Captain, his vigorous movement against the Cherokees, ii. 310; drives them back, reduces to ashes their principal town, Etchoe, and dictates terms of peace, 310.
Knowles, Commodore, recruits his crews by impressment at Boston, ii. 186; tumult in consequence, 187.
Knox, Henry, his services in the revolutionary war, ii. 516.
Kyrk, Sir Richard, an Irishman, is made governor of Carolina, i. 374.
Lane, Captain, is active in the settlement of Virginia, i. 23; fails in the undertaking, and returns to England, 25.
Law, John, originator of the Western or Mississippi Company, ii. 63; the mania excited by the scheme, and its ruinous consequences, 64.
Lee, Richard Henry, assists in the composition of the Declaration of Rights, and other public acts, ii. 494.
Lee, agent for the provinces of America, presents a petition to the parliament, ii. 499.
Leon, Ponce de, discovers Florida on the Sunday before Easter (*Pascua de Flores*), and hence its name, i. 340; seeks the miraculous Fountain of Youth, 340.
Levi, General, who succeeded Montcalm, attempts the recovery of Quebec, ii. 301.
Lewis, Colonel, conducts the war in Virginia against the Ohio Indians, and restores peace, ii. 482.
Lexington, affair of, ii. 507.
Libraries, Library Company in Philadelphia, i. 550, ii. 182.
Lincoln, Benjamin, is made secretary of the provincial congress, ii. 498.
Littleton, governor of South Carolina, his attempts to accommodate matters with the Cherokees, ii. 303.
Livingston, Philip, assists in the composition of the Declaration of Rights, and other public acts, ii. 494.
Locke, John, assists in drawing up a consti-

tution for Carolina, i. 354; is created a landgrave of Carolina, in recompense for his services, 357.

Logan, James, a Quaker, secretary of the State of Pennsylvania, i. 550; composes several works in Latin, 550; enriches Philadelphia with a valuable library, and in his old age composes an admirable translation of Cicero's *De Senectute*.

Logan, the Indian chief, his affecting harangue, ii. 483, *note*.

London Company fit out a squadron for Virginia, i. 45; dissensions among, 81; the company dissolved, 85; effect of their dissolution, 87.

Lothrop, Captain, defeats the Narragansetts, i. 241.

Loudoun, Lord, the British commander, his incapacity, ii. 262; his fruitless schemes, 263; loses Fort William Henry, 263; general gloom and discontent, 265; his dispute with Massachusetts, 267; his recall, 271.

Louisburg, on the Island of Cape Breton, built by the French, ii. 163; projected reduction of, 164; it is called the Gibraltar of America, 164; siege of, 170; capture of, 173; general rejoicing in the provinces, 175.

Ludwell, Colonel Philip, is entrusted with the government of Carolina, i. 382; is suspected of courting popularity, and deprived of office, 384.

Maine, State of, a royal patent for, procured by Gorges, i. 244; Gorges's claims to New Hampshire and Maine, 244; population of in 1750, 10,000.

March, Colonel, his expedition against Port Royal, ii. 24.

Maryland, charter of Maryland obtained from Charles the first by Lord Baltimore, i. 301; terms of the charter, 303; condition of the English Catholics, 305; opposition of Virginia, 307; legislative code, 309; discontent of Virginia quieted, 311; Act concerning religion, 313; edicts for the security of political freedom, 315; general prosperity, Alsop's account, 319; severe pressure of the navigation Acts, 321; transportation of felons to Maryland, 323; charges against Lord Baltimore, 325; pretensions of William Penn, 327; professions of regard by James II., 329; formation of a Protestant association, 331; review of the proprietary administration, 333; oppression of the Catholics, 335; civil and domestic state of Maryland, 337; situation of in 1714, ii. 99; a conspiracy among the Indian tribes, and furious incursion made by them, 328; the last inheritor of the title of Lord Baltimore disgraces his descent, and dies at Naples in 1771, 343; a vessel laden with tea is burned by the advice of Charles Carroll, 497; a popular congress assumes the functions of the provincial assembly, 522.

Massachusetts, charter of, i. 153; the charter government transferred from England to Salem, 161; settled, 152; church at, 157; transmits relief for the sufferers by the great fire of London, 236; embarrassments caused by the depreciation of its currency, 148; boundary questions, 149; the Land bank, pernicious effects of, 150; its letters patent annulled, 254; furnishes her contingent of 6,500 men for the war in Canada, 285; despatches 300 more to Quebec, where they served as pioneers, 298; departure of Pownell, the last governor she was to receive from England, 306; honours bestowed upon him at his departure, 307; politic appointments in, ii. 9; popular administration of Lord Bellamont, 11; Joseph Dudley's efforts to extend the royal prerogative, 15; Queen Anne's war, 17; Dudley superseded, 43; joint-stock company in London for purchase and cultivation of waste lands in Massachusetts, 65; administration of Shute, 65; violent opposition to, 67; intrigues of Rasles, 69; lieutenant-governor Dummer, 71; war with the Eastern Indians, 73; explanatory charter, 75; Burnet governor, 77; Belcher governor, 79; boundary question, 149; intrigues against Belcher, 151; preparations for invading Canada, 179; formidable French fleet, its dispersion, 181; ravages of the French and Indians, 182; naval impressment, 185; tumult in Boston, 187; treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, 189; bill abolishing American charters, 193; German emigrants, 211; recall of Shirley, 261; Loudoun's dispute with Massachusetts, 267, state of parties, 269; Bernard, governor, 307; discontents, 313; requisition to cooperate with the English troops against the Indians, 332; evasion of the call, 332; state of in 1765, 337; population 241,000, 338; Society for promoting Christian knowledge among the Indians, 349; ferment caused by the passage of the Stamp Act, 385; declaration of rights, 401; non-importation agreement, 403; the Stamp Act disobeyed, 405; repeal of the Stamp Act, 411; resentment against the abettors of, 421; non-importation agreement renewed, 429; circular letter, 431; rigorous enforcement by England of the trade laws, 433; refusal to rescind the circular, 435; convention, 437; violent proceedings in the British Parliament, 439; resolutions of the Massachusetts Assembly, 443; Governor Hutchinson, 469; committees of correspondence, 471; attempts to enforce the tea-duty Act, 473; disclosure of Hutchinson's letters, 475; innovation on the Massachusetts charter, 485; effects of the recent Acts, 487; defensive measures, 497; Governor Gage suspends the meeting of the assembly at Salem, 497; the legality of the measure denied, and a provincial congress meets at Concord, and elects Hancock president, 497; Gage warns them to desist from their proceedings, 497; they adjourn to Cambridge, 497; appoint a council of safety, and form the minute-men corps, 498; elect Benjamin Lincoln as their secretary, 498; send delegates to different States, and adjourn, 498; proceedings in the British Par-

liament, 499; Josiah Quincy, Jr., urges resistance, 501; Acts restraining trade, 503; attempted seizure of military stores at Salem, 505; ravages of British cruisers, 523; declaration of independence, 553; population of Massachusetts in 1731, 122,600; in 1742, 164,000; and in 1753, 220,000.

Makin, Thomas, a Quaker, one of the earliest settlers of Pennsylvania, composes a Latin poem of merit, *Descriptio Pennsylvaniæ*, i. 550.

Mather, Increase, is sent to England to lay before the government the grievances of Rhode Island, i. 262; a day of thanksgiving appointed for his return, 272.

Mather, Colton, his disapprobation of the severities to the Indians, i. 287; popularity of his religious and other works, 288.

Matthews, the last governor of Virginia appointed by Cromwell, i. 89.

Maverick, Samuel, sent as one of the commissioners for the reduction of New York, ii. 229.

Mayhew translates the Bible into one of the native Indian languages, i. 201.

———, a popular preacher of Boston, preaches against the Stamp Act, ii. 394.

Maynard, Lieutenant, distinguishes himself against the pirates off the Carolinas, ii. 56.

Milford, town of, settled by Davenport, Eaton, and others, i. 172.

Miller, appointed collector in Carolina, i. 363.

Monk, Duke of Albemarle, obtains, with others, a charter for Carolina, i. 343; is installed in the office of palatine, 355.

Montcalm, the French commander, lays siege to Fort William Henry, ii. 263; carries it, 265; is mortally wounded, 296; his character, 296; Senezargus, the second in command at the battle of Quebec, is killed, ii. 294.

Montgomery, governor of New York, his indolent administration, ii. 81.

Montgomery, Colonel, his vigorous conduct in the Cherokee war, ii. 304; relieves Fort Prince George from the blockade of the Indians, 304; clears the Dismal Swamp of the enemy, 304.

Moore, James, governor of Carolina, i. 388; under his administration the colony is harassed with Indian wars, 388; he defeats the tribes inhabiting the region between the Alatamaha and Savannah, 388.

Moreton, Joseph, appointed governor of Carolina, i. 371; assembles a parliament, 373; is deposed from office, 374; displeases the colonists, and is replaced by James Colleton, 379.

Moravians, their introduction into America, character, and institutions, ii. 112; their origin, 358; their missionary labours, 359.

Morison, Captain, is killed in the battle with the Cherokees in the Dismal Swamp, ii. 304.

Murray, Lord John, his gallant conduct, and that of his Highland regiment, at the battle of Ticonderoga, ii. 280.

Murray, general, opposes the French in their efforts to recapture Quebec, ii. 301.

Mutiny Act, the British, is extended by parliament to North America, ii. 240; excites general indignation in the provinces, 240.

Narragansets, character of, i. 173; treatment of, 175; make a treaty of peace with the colonists, 193; conspiracy of, 239.

Navigation act, its impolicy, i. 91; is felt as a grievance, 95.

New England States, attempts of the Plymouth Company to colonize the northern coasts of America, i. 121; Popham establishes a colony at Fort St. George, 122; sufferings and return of the colonists, 123; Captain Smith's voyage and survey of the country, which is named New England, 123; emigration to America determined on, 142; a congregation of Independents retire to Holland, 141; they resolve to settle in America, 191; their negotiation with king James, 142; they arrive in Massachusetts, and found New Plymouth, 144; hardships and virtues of the colonists, 145; their civil institutions, 146; charter of the Plymouth Company, 147; plantations by Weston and Gorges, 148; settlement of Salem, 152; charter of Massachusetts Bay, 153; second emigration to Salem, 156; church at Salem, 157; intolerance of the settlers, 159; demonstration of royal favour to the colony, 160; the charter government transferred from England to Massachusetts, 161; active emigration, 163; the foundations of Boston, Charlestown, Dorchester, Roxbury, and other societies laid, 163; settlement of Connecticut, 171; foundations of New Haven, Guilford, Milford, Stamford, and Branford laid, 172; the Pequod war, 173; treatment of the Indians, 175; colonization of Rhode Island, New Hampshire, and Maine, 181; jealousy and fluctuating conduct of the king, 183; restraints on emigration, 183; surrender of the charter required, 185; measures adopted against the liberties of Massachusetts interrupted by the civil wars in England, 186; domestic state of New England, 187; laws, 188; manners, 189; embraces the cause of the parliament, 191; plot of the Narraganset Indians, 192; the New England confederacy, 193; new ordinance for the colonies, 194; coinage of money by Massachusetts, 195; impeachment of governor Winthrop, 197; presbyterian malcontents, 198; attempts to convert and civilize the Indians, 199; discords in the confederacy, 203; surrender of charter a second time demanded, 204, favour of Cromwell to New England, 205, his proposition to the colonists of transplanting them to Jamaica, 207; persecution of the Anabaptists in Massachusetts, 209; conduct and sufferings of the Quakers, 211; effects of the Restoration of Charles II., 219; address of Massachusetts to the king, 220; alarm of the colonists, 220; their assertion of their rights, 221; the king's message, 223; how far complied with, 224;

royal charter of incorporation to Rhode Island and Providence, 225; and to Connecticut and New Haven, 226; apprehensions of royal displeasure, and petition to the king, 226; rejected, 228; policy pursued by the royal commissioners, 229; their disputes with the government of Massachusetts, 229; and recall to England, 230; measures for conciliating the king, 231; cession of Acadia to the French, 237; prosperity of New England, 238; Indian conspiracy, 239; Philip's war, 241; war with the Eastern Indians, 242; renewal of disputes with the crown, 242; invasion of Connecticut by Andros, 243; royal governor of New Hampshire, 245; progress of the dispute between the king and the colony, 246; state of parties in Massachusetts, 247; surrender of the charter of Massachusetts demanded by the king, 251; refused by the colonists, 250; writs of Quo Warranto issued against the colony, 251; firmness of the people, 252; the charter adjudged to be forfeited, 253; designs and death of Charles II., 255; government of Massachusetts under a temporary commission from James II., 255; Andros appointed governor of New England, 257; surrender of Rhode Island charter, 259; effort to preserve the charter of Connecticut, 260; oppressive government of Andros, 261; colonial policy of the king, 262; Sir William Phips, 263; movement against Andros, 265; insurrection in Boston, 261; Andros deposed and the ancient government restored, 266; war with the French and Indians, 267; Sir William Phips conquers Acadia, 267; ineffectual expedition against Quebec, 268; disastrous results of the war, 268; impeachment of Andros by the colony discountenanced by the English ministers, 269; the king refuses to restore the ancient constitution of Massachusetts, 279; tenor of the new charter, 271; administration of Sir William Phips, 273; the New England witchcraft delusion, 275; departure of Phips, 282; war with the French and Indians, 283; treaty of peace of Ryswick, 285; moral and political state of New England, 286; character of the early settlers, 287; early histories of New England, 289; general diffusion of knowledge, 291; population, 292; political condition and sentiments, 293; state of religion, 296; society and manners, 297; rewards of public service, 298; slavery, 299; population in 1673 amounted to 120,000; progress of the war in, ii. 23; expedition against Port Royal, 25; projected invasion of Canada, 27; conquest of Port Royal and Acadia, 29; disastrous results of the expedition, 33; evil consequences of the war, 39; bill to abolish the New England charters, ii. 45; intrigues of Rasles, 69; lieutenant-governor Dummer, 71; war with the Eastern Indians, 73; state of, 93; comparison of New England and Canada, 97; intrigues against Belcher, 151; scheme of an Episcopal establishment, 195; state of in 1750, 207; war with France, invasion of Canada, 270; the honour of Britain and safety of America absorb all party jealousies, 271; determination to resist the common enemy, 271; Massachusetts raises 7000 men, 271; Connecticut, 5000; New Hampshire, 9000, 271; are ready to take the field in May, 271; requisition to co-operate with the English troops against the Indians, 332; evasion of the call, 332; treaty of peace with the Indians, 333; state of in 1750, 339; in 1765, 341; has 550 congregational churches, 341; confused counsels, 375; ferment caused by the passage of the stamp act, 385; non-importation agreement, 403; the stamp act set at defiance, 405; affray with the English troops, 453; the Boston Port Bill, 483; the indignation which it calls forth, 489; determined obstruction of the measure, 491; progress of the public discontent, 510; attempted seizure of military stores at Salem, 505; battle of Bunker's Hill, 511; the coasts ravaged by British cruisers, 523; the British evacuate Boston, 541; progress of the cause of liberty, 542; Declaration of Independence, 553.

New Hampshire, a royal governor appointed over, i. 245; jurisdiction of Massachusetts over it is annulled, 245; reverts spontaneously to its old jurisdiction, 245; improving state of, in 1750, ii. 339; violent disputes with New York, arising from rival pretensions to the government, 340; state of in 1765, 337; population, 52,700; institution of Dartmouth college, 445; furnishes three regiments for the revolutionary war, 508; governor Wentworth accelerates the advance of the revolution by vacating his post, 521; progress of independence, 531; declaration of, 553; population of in 1700, 10,000 in 1749, 30,000.

New Jersey, sale of the territory by the Duke of York to Berkeley and Carteret, i. 461; Carteret assumes the government, 465; fraudulent views of the Duke of York, 467; the Quakers, 469; sale of to Fenwick and Byllinge, 473; constitution of West Jersey, 475; pretensions of the Duke of York, 477; first assembly of West Jersey, 479; domestic state of East Jersey, 481; incitements to emigration, 483; surrender of the East Jersey patent, 485; constitution of New Jersey, 487; civil and domestic state of N. Jersey, 489; situation of in 1700, ii. 105; Princeton college founded, 105; population in 1700, 15,000; in 1738, 47,367; Governor Franklin remaining firm to the British prerogative, is deposed and imprisoned, 522; Aaron Ogden, with a detachment of militia, embarks in a coasting vessel, and captures a large British ship, with stores for the troops at Boston, 525; progress of the cause of independence, 533; declaration of, 553.

Newfoundland, is taken by a French squadron, i. 313; retaken by Lord Colville, 313.

New Haven, settled by Davenport, Eaton, and others, i. 172.

New Haven and Connecticut are united by a charter of Charles II., 173.
New Inverness, in Georgia, founded by a colony of Highlanders, ii. 121.
New Plymouth, resumes its old form of government, 266.
Newport, library established in, ii. 182.
———, Captain, commands the first squadron fitted out for North America by the London Company, i. 36; lands on the promontory which he names Cape Henry, in honour of the Prince of Wales, 38; founds Jamestown, the oldest existing institution of the English in America, 38; returns to England, 39; commands a squadron to Virginia, and governs the colony till the arrival of Lord Delaware, 53.
Newspapers, the first established in Maryland, in 1745, ii. 101; in Connecticut, in 1755, i. 342; in Virginia, ii. 91.
New York, Hudson's voyage of discovery, i. 397; Dutch West India Company, 399; contentions with the English, 401; Swedish settlement in Delaware, 403; mutual jealousies of the Dutch and English, 405; conquest of the Swedes in Delaware, 407; feeble policy of the Dutch Company, 409; hostile designs of Charles II., 411; noble spirit of Stuyvesant, 413; capitulation of New Amsterdam, 415; administration of Nichols, 417; reconquest of New York by the Dutch, 421; arbitrary administration of Andros, 423; a legislative assembly granted, 425; Colonel Dongan's administration, 427; the Five Indian Nations, 429; missionary labours of the Jesuits, 431; treaty with the Five Nations, 433; New York annexed to New England, 435; general disaffection in New York, 437; Leisler's usurpation, 439; scheme for the invasion of Canada, 441; renewal of the treaty with the Five Nations, 443; spirit of the Connecticut people, 445; temper of Fletcher's administration, 447; Lord Bellamont appointed governor, 449; Captain Kidd, 451; factions in New York, 453; administration of Lord Cornbury, 455; civil and domestic state of New York, 457; Hunter and the New York assembly, ii. 35; peace of Utrecht, 37; trade with Canada, ii. 61; the French erect a fort at Crown Point, 81; state of in 1720, 103; feeble and negligent administration of Montgomery, 143; his successor Colonel William Cosby, an arbitrary and corrupt governor, 143; Zenger, conductor of the New York Weekly Journal, proceedings against, 144; is defended by Andrew Hamilton of Philadelphia, 145; is acquitted, and presented with the freedom of the city, 146; state of in 1750, 203; expedition against Crown Point, 249; abandonment of the project, 251; war declared between France and England, 257; French success at Oswego, 259; Loudoun's fruitless schemes, 363; successes of the French, 265; Fort William Henry falls into their hands, 266; siege of Louisburg, 277; repulse at Ticonderoga, 279; reduction of Fort Duquesne, 281; battle of Niagara, 287; termination of the war with France, 318; treaty of Paris, 319; general rejoicings, 321; Indian jealousies, 325; general Indian war, 327; state of in 1765, 344; population, 110,000; a society for the promotion of arts, agriculture, and economy, established, 345; ferment excited by the stamp act, 385; New York manifesto, 387; convention, 397; political clubs, 399; non-importation agreement, 403; the stamp act disobeyed, 405; repeal of the stamp act, 411; resentment at the abettors of, 421; act suspending the New York assembly, 425; non-importation agreement renewed, 429; capture of Ticonderoga and Crown Point, 509; ascendancy of the American arms in the councils of the province, 518; decree of Congress representing the Thirteen States, for maintaining in New York a body of 5000 forces, 519; ravages by British cruisers, 523; invasion of Canada, 525; progress of independence, 531; declaration of, 553; population in 1700, 30,000; in 1732, 60,000; ii. 102; public schools founded by the legislature, 103.
Nescambouit, an Indian chief, his reception at the French court, ii. 24.
Niagara, battle of, ii. 287; surrender of Fort Niagara, 287.
Nichols, Colonel, is sent as one of the commissioners for the reduction of New York, i. 229; conquers the Dutch settlement of Nova Belgia, or New Netherlands, 360.
Nicholson, Francis, his ambitious schemes in Virginia, ii. 5; is advanced to the presidency, 6.
Nicholson, his return with increased powers gives general discontent, 61.
Nicholson, Sir Francis, governor of S. Carolina, his spirited and judicious administration, ii. 82; cultivates the friendship of the Creeks and Cherokees, 82.
Non-importation agreed upon by the merchants of Boston, ii. 403; and afterwards of Philadelphia, 403.
Nova Scotia, British dominion in, ii. 191; hostilities in, 240; is wholly reduced under the dominion of Britain, 241; French neutrals, 241; Beau Séjour, the principal French fort in Chignecto, is compelled to surrender, 241; the other French forts reduced, 241.
Ogden, a delegate from New Jersey, for refusing to adopt extreme measures, is hanged and burnt in effigy, ii. 398.
Oglethorpe emigrates to Georgia, ii. 114; lays the foundation of Savannah, 115; his conference with the Creeks, 115; brings with him the Wesleys from England, 121; his misunderstanding with them, 123; establishes forts Augusta and Frederica, 124; is ordered by a commissioner from Spain to evacuate the territory, 125; difficulties with Spain, 127; invades Florida, 131; unhappy results of the invasion, 133; Spanish invasion of Georgia, 135; triumph of Oglethorpe, 137; dies at the age of one hundred and four, 138, *note*.

Ohio Company, the, ii. 213.
Oliver, the brother-in-law to Hutchinson, the distributor of stamps, is hung in effigy, ii. 392; stamp office burnt, 393.
Osborne, Sir Danvers, governor of New York, ii. 238; his instructions inveighing against the provincial assembly, fall into the hands of the assembly, and foment the growing indignation, 238.
Otis, an able lawyer in Boston, incites the popular discontent, ii. 314; is elected to the provincial assembly, 315.
Otis, James, advocates in his writings the cause of American liberty, ii. 459; his life terminates in insanity, caused by his exertions in behalf of his country, 459.
Owen, Dr. John, an eminent scholar and theologian, i. 228; is invited to the presidency of Harvard College, and arrested at the moment of departure, 228.
Paine, Thomas, advocates the cause of American liberty, ii. 453.
Pemmaquid, fort, erected on the Merrimack, i. 273; its importance, 273.
Penn, William, birth and character of, i. 493; solicits a grant of territory, and obtains the charter of Pennsylvania, 501; preliminary terms to settlers, 503; Penn's first form of government, 507; grant of Delaware to Penn, 509; first assembly of Pennsylvania, 511; controversy with Lord Baltimore respecting the Delaware grant, 513; Penn's treaty with the Indians, 515; second assembly of Pennsylvania, 517; Penn returns to England, 519; his favour at the Court of James II. 521; his letter of complaint, 523; conduct of Penn at the revolution in 1688, 527; adverse circumstances of Penn, 533; his third frame of government, 535; second visit of Penn to his domain, 537; his efforts in favour of slaves and of the Indians, 539; fourth form of government, 541; Penn's final return to England, 543; complaints and accusations against him, 545.
Penn, Thomas, son of the founder, arrives from England, in Pennsylvania, ii. 88; his cordial reception, 85; was little fitted to sustain his hereditary honours, 85.
Penn, John, arrival of, ii. 85; obtains a still more affectionate reception, 86.
Pennsylvania, the territory granted to William Penn, i. 492; terms of his charter, 501; first settlers, 503; Penn's first frame of government, 507; first assembly of Pennsylvania, 511; Penn's treaty with the Indians, 515; second assembly of Pennsylvania, 517; rumoured conspiracy of the Indians, 525; schism in the colony under George Keith, 529; Penn's second frame of government, 535; his third frame of government, 541; civil condition of Pennsylvania and Delaware, 547; domestic state of, 549; Gookin and the Quakers, ii. 49; Sir William Keith's administration, 51; Thomas and John Penn, 85; state of, in 1720, 106; parties in, 157; military organization, 159; Indian grievances, 161; war with France, 163; projected reduction of Louisburg, 165; preparations for the expedition, 169; siege of Louisburg, 171; capture of, 173; general rejoicing in the provinces, 175; state of in 1750, 201; unsuccessful attack upon Fort Duquesne, 230; Braddock's expedition, 243; his defeat, 245; Morris and the Pennsylvania assembly, 253; resignation of civil power by the Quakers, 255; war declared between France and England, 257; successes of the French, 265; Franklin's mission to England, 273; political views of Pitt and Franklin, 275; Franklin's second mission to England, 335 a conspiracy among the Indian tribes, and terrible incursion made by them, 328; are repulsed by Colonel Bouquet, 329; horrible retaliation upon the Indians, and massacre of them, 361; ferment caused by the passage of the Stamp Act, 385; non-importation agreement, 403; refusal of Quakers to submit to the Stamp Act, 404; the Stamp Act disobeyed, 405; Franklin's examination at the bar of the House of Commons, 407; repeal of the Stamp Act, 411; resentment against the abettors of, 421; non-importation agreement renewed, 429; rigorous enforcement by England of the trade laws, 433; the day of the first operation of the Boston port bill is observed as a day of mourning, 488; first continental congress assembled at Philadelphia, 493; proceedings of, 495; address of, to the British people, 515; Penn examined at the bar of the House of Lords, 525; progress of independence, 531; the Germans of Philadelphia form themselves into a company of veterans, and give the command to a man nearly a hundred years of age, 531; population in the year 1750, 230,000; in 1760, 266,500.
Penobscots, remnant of the tribe, confess their rebellion and surrender, i. 306.
Pepperell, Colonel Wm., command of expedition against Louisburg given to him, ii. 169; his gallant conduct in the capture of this stronghold, 173; is rewarded with the title of baronet, 174.
Pequods, character of, i. 173; treatment of, 175.
Percy, George, a brother of the Earl of Northumberland, sails for North America in the first squadron fitted out by the London company, i. 36.
Philadelphia, founded by William Penn, i. 516; first continental congress assembles there, ii. 493; Declaration of Independence signed there, 553.
Philip, a chief of the Narragansets, i. 239; forms a plot against the colonists, 239; the war named after him, 'Philip's war,' breaks out, 240; devastating effects in Massachusetts and Plymouth States, 241; Philip is killed by one of his own tribe, 241.
Phip, Sir William, his project of recovering treasures from wrecks of Spanish vessels, 263; is patronized by the king, but his first attempt is unsuccessful, 263; is subsequently successful, 264; is appointed sheriff of New England, 264; opposes the tyranny of Andros, but is compelled to quit the pro-

vinces, 264; attacks Canada, unfortunate issue of the expedition, 268; returns to England, 269; defeats the malignity of his accusers, 282; prepares to return, but dies, 282; the only American knighted, 299.
Pickering, Colonel, opposes the seizure of military stores in Salem, his energetic conduct in this first military enterprise of the revolutionary war, ii. 506.
Piracy, the coast of the Carolinas infested with, ii. 53.
Pitt, appointed prime minister, ii. 271; determines to send a powerful armament against the French in America, 271.
Plymouth is forcibly annexed to Massachusetts, i. 270.
Plymouth Company, fit out a squadron for Virginia, i. 45.
Plymouth Company, build Fort George, 122; further attempts at colonization, 123.
Plymouth Colony, sufferings of, i. 145; charter of, 147.
Pocahontas, favourite daughter of Powhatan, chief of the Virginian Indians, i. 51; intercedes and saves the life of Captain Smith, 61; marries Rolfe, 63; her honourable reception in England, 70.
Population of New England, in 1691, one hundred and fifty thousand, i. 291; Boston, in 1699, ten thousand, 292; in 1720, twenty thousand, 292; of Pennsylvania, in 1749, two hundred and twenty thousand; in 1755, two hundred and fifty thousand; of Massachusetts, in 1763, two hundred and forty-one thousand, 338; Connecticut, one hundred and forty-five thousand five hundred, 338; Rhode Island, forty thousand, 338; New Hampshire, fifty-two thousand seven hundred, 338.
Port Royal Island, settled by a colony of Scotsmen, under Lord Cardross, i. 372; are dislodged by the Spaniards, 372; expedition against, ii. 25; conquest of, 29; recaptured by the French, and its re-annexation to France ratified by the treaty of Ryswick, 283.
Porter, Judge of the admiralty court in North Carolina, his corrupt and brutal manners, ii. 84; is impeached and dismissed, 84.
Potato, introduced into Europe by Sir Walter Raleigh, i. 42.
Powhatan, his conspiracy against the colony, i. 71; massacre of the colonists, 73.
Pownal, Governor, his repulse of the French on the frontiers of New England, ii. 282; receives the approbation of the government, 282.
Prescott, Colonel, his patriotic services on the outbreak of the revolution, ii. 511.
Price, Dr., advocates the cause of American liberty, ii. 459.
Prideaux, General, invests Fort Niagara, ii. 286; loses his life by the bursting of a cohorn, 286.
Priestley, Dr., advocates the cause of American liberty, ii. 459.
Price, Thomas, of Boston, the historian, ii. 216.
Printing-press established at Cambridge, i. 237; license refused to print Thomas A. Kempis's "Imitation," 238; the first printing-press established in Carolina, in 1730, i. 393; first introduced into Virginia, in 1729, and first Virginian newspaper appeared at Williamsburg, in 1736, ii. 91; first introduced into Maryland, in 1726, ii. 99; introduced into South Carolina, in 1730, and a newspaper established in 1734, ii. 101.
Puritanism, rise of, i. 127; act of uniformity, 129; measures for enforcing, 131; liberal principles of the puritans, 133; persecution of, 137; policy and religious views of James I., 139; religious views of John Robinson, 141; determination of a party of puritans to seek an asylum in the new world, 142; Robinson's exhortation to them, 143; the Plymouth colony, 145.
Purrysburg, in S. Carolina, founded by Purry, a native of Switzerland, and his followers, ii. 83.
Putnam, Israel, is colonel in one of the regiments furnished by Connecticut for the war in Canada, ii. 285; distinguishes himself at Lake Champlain, leaves the plough to serve his country, ii. 508.
Quakers, their origin, i. 210; their peculiarities, 212; persecution of in the New England States, 214; condemned to the loss of an ear, 214; their fanaticism, 215; persecuted in New Jersey by Lord Cornbury, ii. 22; heavy penalty against their introduction into Virginia, 90; intolerant laws against, 112; their resignation of civil power, 255; in 1760, formed a fifth part of the population of Pennsylvania, 344; conduct of, 549; emancipation of slaves by, 551; many traced their lineage to the most ancient nobility in England, 550; their patriarchal hospitality, 550.
Quebec, siege of, ii. 289; battle of the heights of Abraham, 293; death and character of General Wolfe, 295; efforts to recapture Quebec, 301.
Quelch, the pirate, and his accomplices, tried in Boston and executed, ii. 53.
Quincy, Josiah, his efforts in the cause of independence, ii. 501.
Quo Warranto, writ so called, i. 248; recourse to had by Charles II. in the case of Massachusetts, 251.
Raleigh, Sir Walter, his adventures, i. 36 obtains a patent for a colony in America, 37; an active promoter of the colonization of Virginia, 38; failure of first colony there and second attempt, 41; assigns his patent to Sir Thomas Smith, 43; brings into fashion the smoking of tobacco, 40, *note;* introduces the potato into England, 42.
Raleigh, Gilbert, brother of Sir Walter, obtains a patent for discovery, i. 37; joins his brother in fitting out an expedition to America, 37; perishes by shipwreck off Cape Breton, 38.
Randolph complains to his government that the navigation Act is disregarded, 246; is

appointed collector of the customs in Boston, 248; visits England, 252; returns with the writ Quo Warranto, 253.
Rasles, Sebastian, the Jesuit, his accomplishments, ii. 68; instigates the Indians against the colonists, 69; he is forced to fly, 71; is killed in an incursion of the New England officers, 73.
Rauch, a Moravian missionary, his labours among the Indians in Connecticut and New York, ii. 356.
Rhode Island, purchased of the Indians for a trifle, i. 180; surrender of its charter, 259; affair of the Gasper, an armed British schooner, 467; is boarded by Brown, a merchant, and Whipple, a shipmaster, and set fire to, 468; population of in 1730, 17,935; in 1748, 32,773; in 1753, 35,000; state of in 1765, 337; population, 40,000, 338.
Robinson, John, religious views of, i. 141; exhortation to the emigrants on their preparing to quit for America, 143.
Rogers, Commodore, gallantly repulses the Spanish fleet from New Providence, ii. 60.
———, John, establishes a sect of wild enthusiasts, called Rogerenes, or Singing Quakers, ii. 95.
Rolfe, marries Pocahontas, i. 63.
Ryswick, treaty of, establishing peace between Britain and France, i. 285.
Salem, citizens of, present a patriotic remonstrance against the Boston Port Bill, 488; the Massachusetts Assembly is adjourned from Boston to Salem, 489; expediency of a general congress of deputies from the States agreed upon, 490.
Sassachus, principal sachem of the Pequods, his great influence, i. 174.
Savannah, foundation laid by Oglethorpe, ii. 115.
Say and Seal, Lord, projects a settlement in Connecticut, i. 171.
Sayle, Colonel William, conducts the expedition for founding a colony at Port Royal, i. 356.
Schuyler, Colonel, his vigorous measures in New England, ii. 25.
Shakers, origin of the sect so called, ii. 480.
Sherwood, a Quaker, agent for Rhode Island, makes a strong remonstrance against the policy of England in regard to taxes, ii. 380.
Shirley, governor of Massachusetts, projects the reduction of Louisburg, ii. 164; plan proposed to the general court of Massachusetts under the seal of an oath of secresy, 166; passed by a majority of a single voice, 167; the command of the expedition given to Colonel William Pepperell, 169; capture of Louisburg, 173; his recall, 261.
Shutes, governor of Massachusetts, violent opposition to, ii. 67; his vindictive measures at the court of London, 74.
Slave-trade, introduced into England under Elizabeth, i. 35; policy of importing slaves into America, ii. 297.
Smith, Captain John, is commissioned by the London Company to form a settlement in America, i. 47; his superior talents and address, 48; fortifies Jamestown, 50; is taken prisoner by the Indians, 50; his life saved by Pocahontas, daughter of Powhatan the Indian chief, 51; prevents the desertion of the colony, 51; explores the Bay of Chesapeake, 53; his administration, 55; excites jealousy, and is superseded, 56; Lord Delaware appointed governor, 57; Smith returns to England, 58.
Smith, Thomas, raised to the dignity of landgrave of Carolina, i. 384; introduces the cultivation of rice, 385.
Smith, Adam, advocates the prerogative of Britain, ii. 459.
Somers, Sir George, obtains a patent for territories in North America, i. 32; is appointed temporary governor of the colony in Virginia, 53.
Sothel, Seth, is appointed governor of Carolina, but is captured on his voyage by the Algerines, i. 367; reaches Carolina, and gives early proof of the badness of his character, 368; excites public indignation, is deposed, and imprisoned, 368; sent to England, and sentenced to one year's banishment, 368; obtains letters of recall, but is again deposed, 382.
Southampton, Earl of, equips an expedition for North America, i. 44.
Spain, Spanish discoveries and conquests in America, i. 31; intrigues of the Spaniards in Florida, 359; difficulties with, 127; their schemes of invasion, 130; invade Florida, 131; result disastrous to the colonists, 133; invade Georgia, 135; are opposed by Governor Oglethorpe, and repulsed with great loss, 137.
Spottiswoode, governor of Virginia, conducts an expedition to explore the Appalachian chain, ii. 42.
Stamp duties proposed, ii. 373; parliamentary debates on, 383; passage of the stamp act, 385; repeal of, 411.
Stamford, town of, settled by Davenport Eaton, and others, i. 172.
Stark, John, a native of New Hampshire, energetic conduct in arousing his countrymen, ii. 508.
Stevens, Samuel, succeeds Drummond as governor of Carolina, i. 348; dies, and is succeeded by Cartwright, i. 363.
Stith, his history of Virginia, i. 116.
Story, the deputy registrar of Boston, his house broken open, and all his papers destroyed, ii. 394.
Stoughton, Captain, defeats the Pequods, i. 174; succeeds Sir William Phips as lieutenant-governor, 283; prepares to resist the attack of Count Frontignac, 284.
Stuart, Captain, is generously ransomed in the Cherokee war by an Indian chief named the Little Carpenter, and conducted in safety to Virginia, ii. 305, *note*.
Sullivan, John, his intrepid conduct in surprising the castle of Portsmouth and carrying off the powder, ii. 498.

Sweden, Swedes form a settlement on the Delaware, i. 403; conquests of, in Delaware, 407.
Tar, early and extensive manufacture of in New Hampshire, i. 294; taxes paid in this article, 294.
Taxation, schemes of, on the part of Britain, ii. 347; project of a domestic tax, 371; proposed stamp duties, 373; views of internal and external taxation, 377; colonial petitions against the proposed tax, 381; parliamentary debates on the stamp duties, 383; passage of the stamp act, 385; repeal of the stamp act, 411; act imposing duties on tea, 423; partial repeal of, 455.
Tea duty act, attempt to enforce it, ii. 473; resisted in Boston and other quarters, 474.
Tennison, archbishop of Canterbury, is active in furnishing religious instruction to the inhabitants of Charleston, &c., i. 389.
Theach, John, called Blackbeard, his adventures and death, ii. 56.
Thompson, Benjamin, a native of Massachusetts, embraces the cause of the parent state, and receives the honour of knighthood, ii. 353; better known as Count Rumford, a title which he received from the Elector of Bavaria, 353.
Ticonderoga, unsuccessful attack upon, ii. 279; Lord Howe falls at the first fire, 279; dreadful slaughter at, 280.
Titular honours, dislike of by Americans, ii. 299.
Tobacco first brought into England by Captain Lane and his associates, i. 25; is patronized by Sir W. Raleigh, and grows into fashion in Europe, 26.
Tomochichi, his conference with governor Oglethorpe, ii. 115; himself and his queen accompany Oglethorpe to England, where they are presented to the king, and his eloquence on the occasion, 116.
Tories, appellation given to all functionaries and others who supported the British pretensions, ii. 390.
Townsend, Colonel, a gallant officer, is killed by a cannon-ball in reconnoitering fort Ticonderoga, ii. 286.
Townsend, General, takes the command after the death of Wolfe, ii. 296.
Trade Laws, rigorous enforcement of, ii. 433.
Trott, Chief Justice of South Carolina, a man of talent, but unprincipled, ii. 57; his intrigues, 57.
Tryon, Governor of N. York, seeks shelter on board a British ship-of-war, ii. 519.
Utrecht, peace of, ii. 37.
Vane, Sir Henry, joins the New England colony, i. 170.
Vaudreuil, Governor of Canada, proposition of neutrality between Canada and New England, ii. 23; makes a last stand in defence of Canada, 302.
Vaughan, George, a citizen of New Hampshire, recommends the extension of the British land-tax to New England, ii. 45; is made deputy-governor of the province, but shortly after dismissed, 46.

Verazzan, an Italian navigator, attempts discoveries in America, i. 341.
Vermont, origin of, ii. 209.
Vetch, Colonel, his effective command in the conquest of Acadia and Port Royal, ii. 29.
Villabon, Governor of a French settlement on St. John's river, tampers with the Norridgewock Indians, and encroaches upon the British settlements, ii. 12.
Virginia, so named in honour of Queen Elizabeth, i. 38; first settlement at Roanoke, 39 misfortunes of the colonists, 40; their return, 41; further attempts at colonization, 41; terminate unsuccessfully, 42; Gosnold's voyage, 43; its effects, 44; the London and Plymouth companies, 45; tenor of their charters, 46; colonial code of James I., 47; the first body of colonists embarked by the London company, 48; arrive in the Bay of Chesapeake, and found Jamestown, 48; dissensions of the colonists, 48; hostility of the Indians, 49; distress and disorder of the colony, 49; energetic character and important services of Captain Smith, 49; he is taken prisoner by the Indians, 50; is rescued from destruction by Pocahontas, 51; his influence over the Indians, 52; he preserves the colony, 52; he explores the Bay of Chesapeake, 53; elected president of the colony, 54; his effective administration, 55; intrigues against him, 56; Lord Delaware appointed governor, 57; Newport, Gates, and Somers, sent to preside till Lord Delaware's arrival, 57; are wrecked on the coast of Bermudas, 57; Captain Smith returns to England, 58; anarchy and famine at Jamestown, 59; Gates and Somers arrive from Bermudas, 60; abandonment of the colony determined upon, 60; prevented by the arrival of Lord Delaware, 61; his wise administration, 61; his return to England, 61; Sir Thomas Dale's administration, 61; martial law established, 62; expeditions against Port Royal and New York, 65; cultivation of tobacco, 65; first assembly of representatives convened in Virginia, 67; new constitution of the colony, 68; introduction of negro slavery, 68; migration of young women from England to the colony, 69; Indian conspiracy, 71; massacre of the colonists, 73; dispute between the king and the colony, 73; dissensions of the London company, 75; the company dissolved, 77; effect of the same, 78; the king assumes the government of the colony, 80; his death, 80; Charles I pursues his father's arbitrary policy, 80; tyrannical government of Sir John Harvey, 81; Sir William Berkeley appointed governor, 83; the provincial liberties restored, 84; Virginia espouses the royal cause, 85; subdued by the long parliament, 86; restraints imposed on the trade of the colony, 87; revolt of the colony, 89; Sir William Berkeley resumes the government, 89; restoration of Charles II., 89; the navigation Act, 91; its impolicy, 92; discontent and distress of the colonists, 94; naturalization of aliens, 96; progress of the provincial dis-

content, 97; Indian hostilities, 97; insurrections, 98; Bacon's rebellion, 99; death of Bacon, 101; rigorous punishment of the rebels, 102; restoration of tranquillity, 103; bill of attainder passed by the colonial assembly against Sir Wm. Berkeley, 105; he is superseded by Colonel Jeffreys, 106; tyranny and rapacity of Effingham, the new governor, 107; dispute with the assembly, 108; effects of the British revolution on the colonies, 109; complaints of the colonies against their governors discouraged by King William, 110; civil and domestic state of Virginia, 111; population, 112; laws, 113; literature, 115; manners, 118; is disappointed in William III., who connives at the tyranny of Lord Effingham, ii. 3; Nicholson's ambitious schemes, 7; the Tramontane order, or Knights of the Golden Horseshoe, ii. 43; printing first introduced in 1729, and first Virginian newspaper appeared at Williamsburg, in 1736, ii. 91; Earl of Orkney, his government, 41; state of, 91; the Ohio company, 213; French pretensions in the Ohio valley, 227; mission of Washington to the French, 229; stockade fort erected by him at Great Meadows, 230; unsuccessful attack upon Fort Duquesne, 230; quarrel with New York, 237; Braddock's expedition, 243; his defeat, 245; ravages of the Virginia frontier, 247; war with the Cherokees, 303; conclusion of the war, 309; treaty of Paris, 319; enthusiastic rejoicings, 321; Patrick Henry, 323; Indian jealousies, 325; general Indian war, 327; treaty of peace, 333; state of Virginia in 1764, 337; resolution of the assembly, 389; renewed resolutions, 441; a war with the Ohio Indians, peace restored, 482; Hampden-Sidney college established, ii. 481; a deep impression produced by Jefferson's "Summary view of the rights of British America," 487; the Earl of Dunmore succeeds the popular Lord Botetourt, and dissolves the provincial assembly, 488; previous to their separation, the members recommend all the American States to meet annually in general congress, 488; the day of the first operation of the Boston port bill, is kept as a day of humiliation and prayer, 488; convention declares that they bore true faith to the king, and would disband when the liberties of America were restored, 520; violent proceedings of Lord Dunmore, 521; George Wythe exerts himself in the public cause, 521.

Wadsworth, Captain, seizes the charter of Rhode Island, when its surrender was demanded by the government, and conceals it in an old oak, i. 261.

Waddell, Colonel, his vigorous conduct against the Cherokees, ii. 303.

Warner, Seth, assists in the seizure of Crown Point, ii. 510.

Warren, Commodore, assists in the capture of Louisburg, ii. 170; his services rewarded with the title of baronet, 174.

Warren, Dr. Joseph, author of the famous Suffolk resolution, ii. 492; he falls in the battle of Bunker Hill, 492.

Washington, his mission, in his nineteenth year, from Governor Dinwiddie to the commander of the French Fort on the river Le Bœuf, ii. 229; performs his mission with vigour and ability, 229; erects a stockade fort at the Great Meadows, 230; projects the construction of forts at points selected, 231; advances towards the new French fort Duquesne, 230; the expedition unsuccessful, but Washington obtains a vote of thanks for his zeal, 230; resents the extension of the British Mutiny Act to America, 249; his skill and presence of mind on occasion of Braddock's defeat, 246; the command of the Virginian forces given to him, 247; in the predatory warfare on the banks of the Ohio, qualifies himself for the arduous task reserved for him, 247; Washington declared commander-in-chief of the revolutionary war, 516; takes up his headquarters in New York, 544.

Weiser, Conrad, is despatched to treat with the Six Nations, ii. 356.

Wesley, John, accompanies Governor Oglethorpe to Georgia, ii. 121; builds the town of Ebenezer, 122; his rigid manners displease the colonists, 123; he leaves for England, 124.

West, Joseph, appointed temporary governor of Carolina, i. 357.

West, Governor, convokes a parliament at Charleston, ii. 371; incurs displeasure by selling Indian captives, 371.

West, Benjamin, his origin, ii. 352; goes to Rome and rises to the head of his profession, 353.

Weston attempts to settle a rival colony in New England, i. 148; its failure, and misery consequent on the same, 149.

Wheatly, General, one of King Charles's judges, escapes to America, i. 219.

Whigs, the title assumed by the partisans of American liberty, ii. 390.

Whipple, a ship-master, boards with a party in whale-boats the Gasper war-schooner, and sets her on fire, ii. 467.

White, Captain, forms a settlement on Chesapeake Bay, i. 41; is appointed governor of the city of Raleigh in Virginia, 42.

Whitfield, George, visits America, ii. 121; a remarkable revival of religion follows his labours, 175.

Wilkinson, Henry, appointed governor of the northern portion of Carolina, i. 367.

Williams, Roger, emigrates to New England, i. 166; theological discussions, 166; he is banished from the colony, 168.

Wilmington, Swedish church there, one of the oldest in North America, i. 550.

Winthrop, governor, his impeachment and defence, i. 197.

———, John, a native of Boston, a profound mathematician, ii. 216; his friendly relations with Charles, ii. 226; professor of Har-

vard College, an astronomer of merit, ii. 252.
Witchcraft delusion, the, in Massachusetts, i. 274; its origin, 275; spread of the delusion, 276; trial and execution of the accused, 277; nineteen hanged and one pressed to death, 279; charges preferred against Lady Phips and some of the nearest relations of Dr. Increase Mather, 279; an assembly of divines convoked by the governor, who recommended the rigorous prosecution of persons accused of witchcraft, 279; Sir William Phips reprieves the three persons last convicted, 280; house of assembly appoints a general fast and supplication for the pardon of errors committed, 280; Paris, the minister, who had been the first to instigate these proceedings, becomes an object of public indignation, resigns his charge, and quits Salem, 281.
Witherspoon, Dr., advocates the cause of American liberty, ii. 459.
Wolfe, General, issues a proclamation to the Canadians, ii. 289; carries the Heights of Abraham, 293; battle of Quebec, 294; death and character, 295.
Wollaston, Captain, attempts the establishment of a colony in New England, i. 149; its failure, 149.
Wolves, New England long infested with, i. 295; bounties for their destruction, 295.
Wooster, David, projects the taking of Ticonderoga and Crown Point, ii. 509.
Wright, Sir James, holds a convention with the Creeks and Cherokees, for the cession of their lands, ii. 482.
Wythe, George, one of the foremost of the Virginians in the public cause, ii. 521.
Yale College founded, i. 291.
Yeamans, Sir John, settles with emigrants from Barbadoes on the southern bank of Cape Fear, i. 348; his authority extended, 357; is accused of mismanagement 362.
Yeardly, Sir George, assumes the administration of Virginia, i. 66; made governor, 41.
Yearmans, drives off the Spaniards who invade Carolina, i. 360.
Zinzendorf, protector and bishop of the Moravians, sends a colony to Georgia, ii. 119.

THE END.

BIBLIOTHEQUE SAINT-SULPICE

CATALOGUE

OF

BLANCHARD & LEA'S PUBLICATIONS.

CAMPBELL'S LORD CHANCELLORS. New Edition—(Just Issued.)

LIVES OF THE LORD CHANCELLORS

AND

KEEPERS OF THE GREAT SEAL OF ENGLAND.

FROM THE EARLIEST TIMES TO THE REIGN OF KING GEORGE IV.

BY LORD CHIEF-JUSTICE CAMPBELL, A. M., F. R. S. E.

Second American, from the Third London Edition.

Complete in seven handsome crown 8vo. volumes, extra cloth, or half morocco.

This has been reprinted from the author's most recent edition, and embraces his extensive modifications and additions. It will therefore be found eminently worthy a continuance of the great favor with which it has hitherto been received.

Of the solid merit of the work our judgment may be gathered from what has already been said. We will add, that from its infinite fund of anecdote, and happy variety of style, the book addresses itself with equal claims to the mere general reader, as to the legal or historical inquirer; and while we avoid the stereotyped commonplace of affirming that no library can be complete without it, we feel constrained to afford it a higher tribute by pronouncing it entitled to a distinguished place on the shelves of every scholar who is fortunate enough to possess it.—*Fraser's Magazine.*

A work which will take its place in our libraries as one of the most brilliant and valuable contributions to the literature of the present day.—*Athenæum.*

The brilliant success of this work in England is by no means greater than its merits. It is certainly the most brilliant contribution to English history made within our recollection; it has the charm and freedom of Biography combined with the elaborate and careful comprehensiveness of History.—*N. Y. Tribune.*

BY THE SAME AUTHOR—TO MATCH—(Now Ready.)

LIVES OF THE

CHIEF-JUSTICES OF ENGLAND,

From the Norman Conquest to the Death of Lord Mansfield.

SECOND EDITION.

In two very neat vols., crown 8vo., extra cloth, or half morocco.

To match the "Lives of the Chancellors" of the same author.

In this work the author has displayed the same patient investigation of historical facts, depth of research, and quick appreciation of character which have rendered his previous volumes so deservedly popular. Though the "Lives of the Chancellors" embrace a long line of illustrious personages intimately connected with the history of England, they leave something still to be filled up to complete the picture, and it is this that the author has attempted in the present work. The vast amount of curious personal details concerning the eminent men whose biographies it contains, the lively sketches of interesting periods of history, and the graphic and vivid style of the author, render it a work of great attraction for the student of history and the general reader.

Although the period of history embraced by these volumes had been previously traversed by the recent work of the noble and learned author, and a great portion of its most exciting incidents, especially those of a constitutional nature, there narrated, yet in "The Lives of the Chief-Justices" there is a fund both of interesting information and valuable matter, which renders the book well worthy of perusal by every one who desires to obtain an acquaintance with the constitutional history of his country, or aspires to the rank of either a statesman or a lawyer. Few lawyers of Lord Campbell's eminence could have produced such a work as he has put forth. None but lawyers of his experience and acquirements could have compiled a work combining the same interest as a narration, to the public generally, with the same amount of practical information for professional aspirants more particularly.—*Britannia.*

NIEBUHR'S ANCIENT HISTORY—(A new work, now ready.)

LECTURES ON ANCIENT HISTORY,

FROM THE EARLIEST TIMES TO THE TAKING OF ALEXANDRIA BY OCTAVIANUS,
CONTAINING

The History of the Asiatic Nations, the Egyptians, Greeks, Macedonians, and Carthaginians.

BY B. G. NIEBUHR.

TRANSLATED FROM THE GERMAN EDITION OF DR. MARCUS NIEBUHR,
BY DR. LEONHARD SCHMITZ, F.R.S.E.,

With Additions and Corrections from his own MSS. notes.

In three very handsome volumes, crown octavo, extra cloth, containing about fifteen hundred pages.

From the Translator's Preface.

"The Lectures on Ancient History here presented to the English public, embrace the history of the ancient world, with the exception of that of Rome, down to the time when all the other nations and states of classical antiquity were absorbed by the empire of Rome, and when its history became, in point of fact, the history of the world. Hence the present course of Lectures, together with that on the History of Rome, form a complete course, embracing the whole of ancient history. * * * * We here catch a glimpse, as it were, of the working of the great mind of the Historian, which imparts to his narrative a degree of freshness and suggestiveness that richly compensate for a more calm and sober exposition. The extraordinary familiarity of Niebuhr with the literatures of all nations, his profound knowledge of all political and human affairs, derived not only from books, but from practical life, and his brilliant powers of combination, present to us in these Lectures, as in those on Roman history, such an abundance of new ideas, startling conceptions and opinions, as are rarely to be met with in any other work. They are of the highest importance and interest to all who are engaged in the study, not only of antiquity, but of any period in the history of man."

The value of this work as a book of reference is greatly increased by a very extensive Index of about fifty closely printed pages, prepared by John Robson, B. A., and containing nearly ten thousand references; in addition to which each volume has a very complete Table of Contents.

MEMOIRS OF THE LIFE OF WILLIAM WIRT.

BY JOHN P. KENNEDY.

SECOND EDITION, REVISED.

In two handsome 12mo. volumes, with a Portrait and fac-simile of a letter from John Adams. Also,

A HANDSOME LIBRARY EDITION, IN TWO BEAUTIFULLY PRINTED OCTAVO VOLUMES.

In its present neat and convenient form, the work is eminently fitted to assume the position which it merits as a book for every parlor table and for every fireside where there is an appreciation of the kindliness and manliness, the intellect and the affection, the wit and liveliness which rendered William Wirt at once so eminent in the world, so brilliant in society, and so loving and loved in the retirement of his domestic circle. Uniting all these attractions, it cannot fail to find a place in every private and public library, and in all collections of books for the use of schools and colleges; for the young can have before them no brighter example of what can be accomplished by industry and resolution, than the life of William Wirt, as unconsciously related by himself in these volumes.

HISTORY OF THE PROTESTANT REFORMATION IN FRANCE.

BY MRS. MARSH,

Author of "Two Old Men's Tales," "Emilia Wyndham," &c.

In two handsome volumes, royal 12mo., extra cloth.

NEW AND IMPROVED EDITION.

LIVES OF THE QUEENS OF ENGLAND,

FROM THE NORMAN CONQUEST.

WITH ANECDOTES OF THEIR COURTS.

Now first published from Official Records, and other Authentic Documents, Private as well as Public.

NEW EDITION, WITH ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS.

BY AGNES STRICKLAND.

In six volumes, crown octavo, extra crimson cloth, or half morocco, printed on fine paper and large type.

Copies of the Duodecimo Edition, in twelve volumes, may still be had.

A valuable contribution to historical knowledge, to young persons especially. It contains a mass of every kind of historical matter of interest, which industry and resource could collect. We have derived much entertainment and instruction from the work.—*Athenæum.*

The execution of this work is equal to the conception. Great pains have been taken to make it both interesting and valuable.—*Literary Gazette*

A charming work—full of interest, at once serious and pleasing.—*Monsieur Guizot.*

LIVES OF THE QUEENS OF HENRY VIII.

AND OF HIS MOTHER, ELIZABETH OF YORK.

BY MISS STRICKLAND.

Complete in one handsome crown octavo volume, extra cloth. (*Just Issued.*)

MEMOIRS OF ELIZABETH,

SECOND QUEEN REGNANT OF ENGLAND AND IRELAND.

BY MISS STRICKLAND.

Complete in one handsome crown octavo volume, extra cloth. (*Just Issued.*)

(NOW READY.)

MEMORIALS AND CORRESPONDENCE

OF

CHARLES JAMES FOX.

EDITED BY LORD JOHN RUSSELL.

In two very handsome volumes, royal 12mo., extra cloth.

THE GARDENER'S DICTIONARY.

A DICTIONARY OF MODERN GARDENING. By G. W. Johnson, Esq. With numerous additions, by David Landreth. With one hundred and eighty wood-cuts. In one very large royal 12mo. volume, of about 650 double-columned pages.

This work is now offered at a very low price.

(NOW READY.)

WISE SAWS AND MODERN INSTANCES.

BY THE AUTHOR OF SAM SLICK.

In one royal 12mo. volume.

THE ENCYCLOPÆDIA AMERICANA;

A POPULAR DICTIONARY OF ARTS, SCIENCES, LITERATURE, HISTORY, POLITICS, AND BIOGRAPHY.

In fourteen large octavo volumes of over 600 double-columned pages each.

For sale very low, in various styles of binding.

Some years having elapsed since the original thirteen volumes of the ENCYCLOPÆDIA AMERICANA were published, to bring it up to the present day, with the history of that period, at the request of numerous subscribers, the publishers have issued a

SUPPLEMENTARY VOLUME (THE FOURTEENTH),

BRINGING THE WORK THOROUGHLY UP.

Edited by HENRY VETHAKE, LL. D.

In one large octavo volume, of over 650 double-columned pages, which may be had separately, to complete sets.

MURRAY'S ENCYCLOPÆDIA OF GEOGRAPHY.

THE ENCYCLOPÆDIA OF GEOGRAPHY, comprising a Complete Description of the Earth, Physical, Statistical, Civil, and Political; exhibiting its Relation to the Heavenly Bodies, its Physical Structure, The Natural History of each Country, and the Industry, Commerce, Political Institutions, and Civil and Social State of all Nations. By HUGH MURRAY, F. R. S. E., &c. Assisted in Botany, by Professor Hooker—Zoology, &c., by W. W. Swainson—Astronomy, &c., by Professor Wallace—Geology, &c., by Professor Jameson. Revised, with Additions, by THOMAS G. BRADFORD. The whole brought up, by a Supplement, to 1843. In three large octavo volumes various styles of binding.

This great work, furnished at a remarkably cheap rate, contains about NINETEEN HUNDRED LARGE IMPERIAL PAGES, and is illustrated by EIGHTY-TWO SMALL MAPS, and a colored MAP OF THE UNITED STATES, after Tanner's, together with about ELEVEN HUNDRED WOOD CUTS executed in the best style.

YOUATT AND SKINNER ON THE HORSE.

THE HORSE.

BY WILLIAM YOUATT.

A new edition, with numerous Illustrations.

TOGETHER WITH A GENERAL HISTORY OF THE HORSE; A DISSERTATION ON THE AMERICAN TROTTING HORSE; HOW TRAINED AND JOCKEYED; AN ACCOUNT OF HIS REMARKABLE PERFORMANCES; AND AN ESSAY ON THE ASS AND THE MULE.

BY J. S. SKINNER,

Assistant Postmaster-General, and Editor of the Turf Register.

This edition of Youatt's well-known and standard work on the Management, Diseases, and Treatment of the Horse, embodying the valuable additions of Mr. Skinner, has already obtained such a wide circulation throughout the country, that the Publishers need say nothing to attract to it the attention and confidence of all who keep Horses or are interested in their improvement.

YOUATT AND LEWIS ON THE DOG.

THE DOG. By William Youatt. Edited by E. J. Lewis, M. D. With numerous and beautiful illustrations. In one very handsome volume, crown 8vo., crimson cloth, gilt.

LIBRARY OF ILLUSTRATED SCIENTIFIC WORKS.

A series of beautifully printed volumes on various branches of science, by the most eminent men in their respective departments. The whole printed in the handsomest style, and profusely embellished in the most efficient manner.

☞ No expense has been or will be spared to render this series worthy of the support of the scientific public, while at the same time it is one of the handsomest specimens of typographical and artistic execution which have appeared in this country.

DE LA BECHE'S GEOLOGY—(Just Issued.)

THE GEOLOGICAL OBSERVER.

BY SIR HENRY T. DE LA BECHE, C. B., F. R. S.,
Director-General of the Geological Survey of Great Britain, &c.

In one very large and handsome octavo volume.

WITH OVER THREE HUNDRED WOOD-CUTS.

We have here presented to us, by one admirably qualified for the task, the most complete compendium of the science of geology ever produced, in which the different facts which fall under the cognizance of this branch of natural science are arranged under the different causes by which they are produced. From the style in which the subject is treated, the work is calculated not only for the use of the professional geologist but for that of the uninitiated reader, who will find in it much curious and interesting information on the changes which the surface of our globe has undergone, and the history of the various striking appearances which it presents. Voluminous as the work is, it is not rendered unreadable from its bulk, owing to the judicious subdivision of its contents, and the copious index which is appended.—*John Bull.*

Having had such abundant opportunities, no one could be found so capable of directing the labors of the young geologist, or to aid by his own experience the studies of those who may not have been able to range so extensively over the earth's surface. We strongly recommend Sir Henry De la Beche's book to those who desire to know what has been done, and to learn something of the wide examination which yet lies waiting for the industrious observer.—*The Athenæum.*

KNAPP'S CHEMICAL TECHNOLOGY.

TECHNOLOGY; or, CHEMISTRY APPLIED TO THE ARTS AND TO MANUFACTURES. By DR. F. KNAPP, Professor at the University of Giessen. Edited, with numerous Notes and Additions, by DR. EDMUND RONALDS, and DR. THOMAS RICHARDSON. First American Edition, with Notes and Additions by Prof. WALTER R. JOHNSON. In two handsome octavo volumes, printed and illustrated in the highest style of art, with about 500 wood-engravings.

The style of excellence in which the first volume was got up is fully preserved in this. The treatises themselves are admirable, and the editing, both by the English and American editors, judicious; so that the work maintains itself as the best of the series to which it belongs, and worthy the attention of all interested in the arts of which it treats.—*Franklin Institute Journal.*

WEISBACH'S MECHANICS.

PRINCIPLES OF THE MECHANICS OF MACHINERY AND ENGINEERING. By PROFESSOR JULIUS WEISBACH. Translated and Edited by PROF. GORDON, of Glasgow. First American Edition, with Additions by PROF. WALTER R. JOHNSON. In two octavo volumes, beautifully printed, with 900 illustrations on wood.

The most valuable contribution to practical science that has yet appeared in this country.—*Athenæum.*

Unequalled by anything of the kind yet produced in this country—the most standard book on mechanics, machinery, and engineering now extant.—*N. Y. Commercial*

In every way worthy of being recommended to our readers—*Franklin Institute Journal.*

***ILLUSTRATED SCIENTIFIC LIBRARY*—(*Continued.*)**

CARPENTER'S COMPARATIVE PHYSIOLOGY—(Just Issued.)

PRINCIPLES OF GENERAL AND COMPARATIVE PHYSIOLOGY; intended as an Introduction to the Study of Human Physiology, and as a Guide to the Philosophical Pursuit of Natural History. By WILLIAM B. CARPENTER, M. D., F. R. S., author of "Human Physiology," "Vegetable Physiology," &c. &c. Third improved and enlarged edition. In one very large and handsome octavo volume, with several hundred beautiful illustrations.

MULLER'S PHYSICS.

PRINCIPLES OF PHYSICS AND METEOROLOGY. By PROFESSOR J. MULLER, M. D. Edited, with Additions, by R. EGLESFELD GRIFFITH, M. D. In one large and handsome octavo volume, with 550 wood-cuts and two colored plates.

The style in which the volume is published is in the highest degree creditable to the enterprise of the publishers. It contains nearly four hundred engravings executed in a style of extraordinary elegance. We commend the book to general favor. It is the best of its kind we have ever seen.—*N. Y. Courier and Enquirer.*

MOHR, REDWOOD, AND PROCTER'S PHARMACY.

PRACTICAL PHARMACY: Comprising the Arrangements, Apparatus, and Manipulations of the Pharmaceutical Shop and Laboratory. By FRANCIS MOHR, Ph. D., Assessor Pharmaciæ of the Royal Prussian College of Medicine, Coblentz; and THEOPHILUS REDWOOD, Professor of Pharmacy in the Pharmaceutical Society of Great Britain. Edited, with extensive Additions, by PROF. WILLIAM PROCTER, of the Philadelphia College of Pharmacy. In one handsomely printed octavo volume, of 570 pages, with over 500 engravings on wood.

THE MILLWRIGHT'S GUIDE.

THE MILLWRIGHT'S AND MILLER'S GUIDE. By OLIVER EVANS. Eleventh Edition. With Additions and Corrections by the Professor of Mechanics in the Franklin Institute, and a description of an improved Merchant Flour Mill. By C. and O. Evans. In one octavo volume, with numerous engravings.

HUMAN HEALTH; or, the Influence of Atmosphere and Locality, Change of Air and Climate, Seasons, Food, Clothing, Bathing, Mineral Springs, Exercise, Sleep, Corporeal and Mental Pursuits, &c. &c., on Healthy Man, constituting Elements of Hygiene. By Robley Dunglison, M D. In one octavo volume.

ACTON'S COOKERY.

MODERN COOKERY IN ALL ITS BRANCHES, reduced to a System of Easy Practice, for the Use of Private Families; in a Series of Practical Receipts, all of which are given with the most minute exactness. By Eliza Acton. With numerous wood-cut illustrations; to which is added a Table of Weights and Measures. The whole revised, and prepared for American housekeepers, by Mrs. Sarah J. Hale. From the Second London Edition. In one large 12mo. volume.

THE DOMESTIC MANAGEMENT OF THE SICK-ROOM, necessary, in aid of medical treatment for the cure of diseases. By A. T. Thomson, M. D. Edited by R. E. Griffith, M. D. In one volume royal 12mo., extra cloth.

LANGUAGE OF FLOWERS, with illustrative poetry. Eighth edition. In one beautiful volume, royal 18mo., crimson cloth, gilt, with colored plates.

AMERICAN ORNITHOLOGY. By Charles Bonaparte, Prince of Canino. In four folio volumes, half bound, with numerous magnificent colored plates.

LECTURES ON THE PHYSICAL PHENOMENA OF LIVING BEINGS. By Carlo Matteucci. Edited by Jonathan Pereira, M D. In one royal 12mo. volume, extra cloth, with illustrations.

GRAHAM'S CHEMISTRY, NEW EDITION. Part I.—(Now Ready.)

ELEMENTS OF CHEMISTRY;

INCLUDING THE APPLICATIONS OF THE SCIENCE IN THE ARTS.

BY THOMAS GRAHAM, F. R. S., &c.,

Professor of Chemistry in University College, London, &c.

Second American, from an entirely Revised and greatly Enlarged English Edition.

WITH NUMEROUS WOOD-ENGRAVINGS.

EDITED, WITH NOTES, BY ROBERT BRIDGES, M. D.,

Professor of Chemistry in the Philadelphia College of Pharmacy, &c.

To be completed in Two Parts, forming one very large octavo volume.

PART I, now ready, of 430 large pages, with 185 engravings.

PART II, preparing for early publication.

From the Editor's Preface.

The "Elements of Chemistry," of which a second edition is now presented, attained, on its first appearance, an immediate and deserved reputation. The copious selection of facts from all reliable sources, and their judicious arrangement, render it a safe guide for the beginner, while the clear exposition of theoretical points, and frequent references to special treatises, make it a valuable assistant for the more advanced student.

From this high character the present edition will in no way detract. The great changes which the science of Chemistry has undergone during the interval have rendered necessary a complete revision of the work, and this has been most thoroughly accomplished by the author. Many portions will therefore be found essentially altered, thereby increasing greatly the size of the work, while the series of illustrations has been entirely changed in style, and nearly doubled in number.

Under these circumstances but little has been left for the editor. Owing, however, to the appearance of the London edition in parts, some years have elapsed since the first portions were published, and he has therefore found occasion to introduce the more recent investigations and discoveries in some subjects, as well as to correct such inaccuracies or misprints as had escaped the author's attention, and to make a few additional references.

INTRODUCTION TO PRACTICAL CHEMISTRY, including Analysis. By John E. Bowman, M. D. In one neat royal 12mo. volume, extra cloth, with numerous illustrations.

DANA ON CORALS.

ZOOPHYTES AND CORALS. By James D. Dana. In one volume imperial quarto, extra cloth, with wood-cuts.

Also, an Atlas to the above, one volume imperial folio, with sixty-one magnificent plates, colored after nature. Bound in half morocco.

These splendid volumes form a portion of the publications of the United States Exploring Expedition. As but very few copies have been prepared for sale, and as these are nearly exhausted, all who are desirous of enriching their libraries with this, the most creditable specimen of American Art and Science as yet issued, will do well to procure copies at once.

THE ETHNOGRAPHY AND PHILOLOGY OF THE UNITED STATES EXPLORING EXPEDITION. By Horatio Hale. In one large imperial quarto volume, beautifully printed, and strongly bound in extra cloth.

BARON HUMBOLDT'S LAST WORK.

ASPECTS OF NATURE IN DIFFERENT LANDS AND DIFFERENT CLIMATES. With Scientific Elucidations. By Alexander Von Humboldt. Translated by Mrs. Sabine. Second American edition. In one handsome volume, large royal 12mo., extra cloth.

CHEMISTRY OF THE FOUR SEASONS, SPRING, SUMMER, AUTUMN, AND WINTER. By Thomas Griffith. In one handsome volume, royal 12mo., extra cloth, with numerous illustrations.

A NEW TEXT-BOOK ON NATURAL PHILOSOPHY.

HANDBOOKS
OF NATURAL PHILOSOPHY AND ASTRONOMY.

BY DIONYSIUS LARDNER, LL. D., ETC.

FIRST COURSE, containing

Mechanics, Hydrostatics, Hydraulics, Pneumatics, Sound, and Optics.

In one large royal 12mo. volume of 750 pages, strongly bound in leather, with over 400 wood-cuts, (Just Issued.)

THE SECOND COURSE, embracing

HEAT, MAGNETISM, ELECTRICITY, AND GALVANISM,

Of about 400 pages, and illustrated with 250 cuts, is now ready.

THE THIRD COURSE, constituting

A COMPLETE TREATISE ON ASTRONOMY

WITH NUMEROUS STEEL PLATES AND WOOD-CUTS, IS NEARLY READY.

The intention of the author has been to prepare a work which should embrace the principles of Natural Philosophy, in their latest state of scientific development, divested of the abstruseness which renders them unfitted for the younger student, and at the same time illustrated by numerous practical applications in every branch of art and science. Dr. Lardner's extensive acquirements in all departments of human knowledge, and his well-known skill in popularizing his subject, have thus enabled him to present a text-book which, though strictly scientific in its groundwork, is yet easily mastered by the student, while calculated to interest the mind, and awaken the attention by showing the importance of the principles discussed, and the manner in which they may be made subservient to the practical purposes of life. To accomplish this still further, the editor has added to each section a series of examples, to be worked out by the learner, thus impressing upon him the practical importance and variety of the results to be obtained from the general laws of nature. The subject is still further simplified by the very large number of illustrative wood-cuts which are scattered through the volume, making plain to the eye what might not readily be grasped by the unassisted mind; and every care has been taken to render the typographical accuracy of the work what it should be.

Although the first portion only has been issued, and that but for a few months, yet it has already been adopted by many academies and colleges of the highest standing and character. A few of the numerous recommendations with which the work has been favored are subjoined.

From Prof. Millington, Univ. of Mississippi, April 10, 1852.

I am highly pleased with its contents and arrangement. It contains a greater number of every day useful practical facts and examples than I have ever seen noticed in a similar work, and I do not hesitate to say that as a book for teaching I prefer it to any other of the same size and extent that I am acquainted with. During the thirteen years that I was at William and Mary College I had to teach Natural Philosophy, and I should have been very glad to have such a text-book.

From Edmund Smith, Baltimore, May 19, 1852.

I have a class using it, and think it the best book of the kind with which I am acquainted.

From Prof. Cleveland, Philadelphia, October 17, 1851.

I feel prepared to say that it is the fullest and most valuable manual upon the subject that has fallen under my notice, and I intend to make it the text-book for the first class in my school.

From S. Schooler, Hanover Academy, Va..

The "Handbooks" seem to me the best popular treatises on their respective subjects with which I am acquainted. Dr. Lardner certainly popularizes science very well, and a good text-book for schools and colleges was not before in existence.

From Prof. J. S. Henderson, Farmer's College, O., Feb. 16, 1852.

It is an admirable work, and well worthy of public patronage. For clearness and fulness it is unequalled by any that I have seen.

NEW AND IMPROVED EDITION.—(Now Ready.)

OUTLINES OF ASTRONOMY.

BY SIR JOHN F. W. HERSCHEL, F. R. S., &c.

A NEW AMERICAN FROM THE FOURTH LONDON EDITION.

In one very neat crown octavo volume, extra cloth, with six plates and numerous wood-cuts.

This edition will be found thoroughly brought up to the present state of astronomical science, with the most recent investigations and discoveries fully discussed and explained.

We now take leave of this remarkable work, which we hold to be, beyond a doubt, the greatest and most remarkable of the works in which the laws of astronomy and the appearance of the heavens are described to those who are not mathematicians nor observers, and recalled to those who are. It is the reward of men who can descend from the advancement of knowledge to care for its diffusion, that their works are essential to all, that they become the manuals of the proficient as well as the text-books of the learner.—*Athenæum.*

There is perhaps no book in the English language on the subject, which, whilst it contains so many of the facts of Astronomy (which it attempts to explain with as little technical language as possible), is so attractive in its style, and so clear and forcible in its illustrations.—*Evangelical Review.*

Probably no book ever written upon any science, embraces within so small a compass an entire epitome of everything known within all its various departments, practical, theoretical, and physical.—*Examiner.*

A TREATISE ON ASTRONOMY.

BY SIR JOHN F. W. HERSCHEL. Edited by S. C. WALKER. In one 12mo. volume, half bound, with plates and wood-cuts.

A TREATISE ON OPTICS.

BY SIR DAVID BREWSTER, LL. D., F. R. S., &c.

A NEW EDITION.

WITH AN APPENDIX, CONTAINING AN ELEMENTARY VIEW OF THE APPLICATION OF ANALYSIS TO REFLECTION AND REFRACTION.

BY A. D. BACHE, Superintendent U. S. Coast Survey, &c.

In one neat duodecimo volume, half bound, with about 200 illustrations.

BOLMAR'S FRENCH SERIES.

New editions of the following works, by A. BOLMAR, forming, in connection with "Bolmar's Levizac," a complete series for the acquisition of the French language:—

A SELECTION OF ONE HUNDRED PERRIN'S FABLES, accompanied by a Key, containing the text, a literal and free translation, arranged in such a manner as to point out the difference between the French and English idiom, &c. In one vol 12mo.

A COLLECTION OF COLLOQUIAL PHRASES, on every topic necessary to maintain conversation. Arranged under different heads, with numerous remarks on the peculiar pronunciation and uses of various words; the whole so disposed as considerably to facilitate the acquisition of a correct pronunciation of the French. In one vol. 18mo.

LES AVENTURES DE TELEMAQUE, PAR FENELON, in one vol. 12mo., accompanied by a Key to the first eight books. In one vol. 12mo., containing, like the Fables, the Text, a literal and free translation, intended as a sequel to the Fables. Either volume sold separately.

ALL THE FRENCH VERBS, both regular and irregular, in a small volume.

ELEMENTS OF NATURAL PHILOSOPHY;

BEING

AN EXPERIMENTAL INTRODUCTION TO THE PHYSICAL SCIENCES.

Illustrated with over Three Hundred Wood-cuts.

BY GOLDING BIRD, M.D.,

Assistant Physician to Guy's Hospital.

From the Third London edition. In one neat volume, royal 12mo.

We are astonished to find that there is room in so small a book for even the bare recital of so many subjects. Where everything is treated succinctly, great judgment and much time are needed in making a selection and winnowing the wheat from the chaff Dr. Bird has no need to plead the peculiarity of his position as a shield against criticism, so long as his book continues to be the best epitome in the English language of this wide range of physical subjects.—*North American Review*, April 1, 1851.

From Prof. John Johnston, Wesleyan Univ., Middletown, Ct.

For those desiring as extensive a work, I think it decidedly superior to anything of the kind with which I am acquainted.

From Prof. R. O. Currey, East Tennessee University.

I am much gratified in perusing a work which so well, so fully, and so clearly sets forth this branch of the Natural Sciences. For some time I have been desirous of obtaining a substitute for the one now used—one which should embrace the recent discoveries in the sciences, and I can truly say that such a one is afforded in this work of Dr. Bird's.

From Prof. W. F. Hopkins, Masonic University, Tenn.

It is just the sort of book I think needed in most colleges, being far above the rank of a mere popular work, and yet not beyond the comprehension of all but the most accomplished mathematicians.

ELEMENTARY CHEMISTRY;

THEORETICAL AND PRACTICAL.

BY GEORGE FOWNES, PH. D.,

Chemical Lecturer in the Middlesex Hospital Medical School, &c. &c.

WITH NUMEROUS ILLUSTRATIONS.

Third American, from a late London edition. Edited, with Additions,

BY ROBERT BRIDGES, M. D.,

Professor of General and Pharmaceutical Chemistry in the Philadelphia College of Pharmacy, &c. &c.

In one large royal 12mo. volume, of over five hundred pages, with about 180 wood-cuts, sheep or extra cloth.

The work of Dr. Fownes has long been before the public, and its merits have been fully appreciated as the best text-book on Chemistry now in existence. We do not, of course, place it in a rank superior to the works of Brande, Graham, Turner, Gregory, or Gmelin, but we say that, as a work for students, it is preferable to any of them.—*London Journal of Medicine.*

We know of no treatise so well calculated to aid the student in becoming familiar with the numerous facts in the science on which it treats, or one better calculated as a text-book for those attending Chemical Lectures. * * * The best text-book on Chemistry that has issued from our press.—*American Med. Journal.*

We know of none within the same limits, which has higher claims to our confidence as a college class-book, both for accuracy of detail and scientific arrangement.—*Augusta Med. Journal*

ELEMENTS OF PHYSICS.

OR, NATURAL PHILOSOPHY, GENERAL AND MEDICAL. Written for universal use, in plain, or non-technical language By NEILL ARNOTT, M. D. In one octavo volume, with about two hundred illustrations.

NEW AND IMPROVED EDITION.—(Now Ready.)

PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY.

BY MARY SOMERVILLE.

A NEW AMERICAN FROM THE LAST AND REVISED LONDON EDITION.
WITH AMERICAN NOTES, GLOSSARY, ETC.

BY W. S W. RUSCHENBERGER, M. D., U. S. N.

In one neat royal 12mo. volume, extra cloth, of over five hundred and fifty pages.

The great success of this work, and its introduction into many of our higher schools and academies, have induced the publishers to prepare a new and much improved edition. In addition to the corrections and improvements of the author bestowed on the work in its passage through the press a second time in London, notes have been introduced to adapt it more fully to the physical geography of this country; and a comprehensive glossary has been added, rendering the volume more particularly suited to educational purposes.

Our praise comes lagging in the rear, and is wellnigh superfluous. But we are anxious to recommend to our youth the enlarged method of studying geography which her present work demonstrates to be as captivating as it is instructive. We hold such presents as Mrs Somerville has bestowed upon the public, to be of incalculable value, disseminating more sound information than all the literary and scientific institutions will accomplish in a whole cycle of their existence.—*Blackwood's Magazine.*

From Lieutenant Maury, U. S. N.

National Observatory, Washington, *June* 26, 1853.

I thank you for the "Physical Geography;" it is capital. I have been reading it, and like it so much that I have made it a school-book for my children, whom I am teaching. There is, in my opinion, no work upon that interesting subject on which it treats—Physical Geography—that would make a better text-book in our schools and colleges. I hope it will be adopted as such generally, for you have Americanized it and improved it in other respects

Yours, truly,
M. F. MAURY.

Dr. W. S. W. RUSCHENBERGER, U. S. N.,
Philadelphia.

From Thomas Sherwin, High School, Boston.

I hold it in the highest estimation, and am confident that it will prove a very efficient aid in the education of the young, and a source of much interest and instruction to the adult reader.

From Erastus Everett, High School, New Orleans.

I have examined it with a good deal of care, and am glad to find that it supplies an important desideratum. The whole work is a masterpiece. Whether we examine the importance of the subjects treated, or the elegant and attractive style in which they are presented, this work leaves nothing to desire. I have introduced it into my school for the use of an advanced class in geography, and they are greatly interested in it. I have no doubt that it will be used in most of our higher seminaries.

JOHNSTON'S PHYSICAL ATLAS.

THE PHYSICAL ATLAS

OF NATURAL PHENOMENA.

FOR THE USE OF COLLEGES, ACADEMIES, AND FAMILIES.
BY ALEXANDER KEITH JOHNSTON, F. R. G. S., F. G. S.

In one large volume, imperial quarto, handsomely and strongly bound. With twenty-six plates, engraved and colored in the best style. Together with one hundred and twelve pages of Descriptive Letter-press, and a very copious Index.

A work which should be in every family and every school-room, for consultation and reference. By the ingenious arrangement adopted by the author, it makes clear to the eye every fact and observation relative to the present condition of the earth arranged under the departments of Geology, Hydrography, Meteorology, and Natural History. The letter-press illustrates this with a body of important information, nowhere else to be found condensed into the same space, while a very full Index renders the whole easy of reference.

SCHMITZ AND ZUMPT'S CLASSICAL SERIES.

Under this title BLANCHARD & LEA are publishing a series of Latin School-Books, edited by those distinguished scholars and critics, Leonhard Schmitz and C. G. Zumpt. The object of the series is to present a course of accurate texts, revised in accordance with the latest investigations and MSS., and the most approved principles of modern criticism, as well as the necessary elementary books, arranged on the best system of modern instruction. The former are accompanied with notes and illustrations introduced sparingly, avoiding on the one hand the error of overburdening the work with commentary, and on the other that of leaving the student entirely to his own resources. The main object has been to awaken the scholar's mind to a sense of the beauties and peculiarities of his author, to assist him where assistance is necessary, and to lead him to think and to investigate for himself. For this purpose maps and other engravings are given wherever useful, and each author is accompanied with a biographical and critical sketch. The form in which the volumes are printed is neat and convenient, while it admits of their being sold at prices unprecedentedly low, thus placing them within the reach of many to whom the cost of classical works has hitherto proved a bar to this department of education; while the whole series being arranged on one definite and uniform plan, enables the teacher to carry forward his student from the rudiments of the language without the annoyance and interruption caused by the necessity of using text-books founded on varying and conflicting systems of study.

CLASSICAL TEXTS PUBLISHED IN THIS SERIES.

I. CÆSARIS DE BELLO GALLICO LIBRI IV., 1 vol. royal 18mo., extra cloth, 232 pages, with a Map, price 50 cents.

II. C. C. SALLUSTII CATILINA ET JUGURTHA, 1 vol. royal 18mo., extra cloth, 168 pages, with a Map, price 50 cents.

III. P. OVIDII NASONIS CARMINA SELECTA, 1 vol. royal 18mo., extra cloth, 246 pages, price 60 cents.

IV. P. VIRGILII MARONIS CARMINA, 1 vol. royal 18mo., extra cloth, 438 pages, price 75 cents.

V. Q. HORATII FLACCI CARMINA EXCERPTA, 1 vol. royal 18mo., extra cloth, 312 pages, price 60 cents.

VI. Q. CURTII RUFI DE ALEXANDRI MAGNI QUÆ SUPERSUNT, 1 vol. royal 18mo., extra cloth, 326 pages, with a Map, price 70 cents.

VII. T. LIVII PATAVINI HISTORIARUM LIBRI I., II., XXI., XXII., 1 vol. royal 18mo., ex. cloth, 350 pages, with two colored Maps, price 70 cents.

VIII. M. T. CICERONIS ORATIONES SELECTÆ XII., 1 vol. royal 18mo., extra cloth, 300 pages, price 60 cents.

IX. CORNELIUS NEPOS, 1 vol. royal 18mo., price 50 cents.

ELEMENTARY WORKS PUBLISHED IN THIS SERIES.

I.

A SCHOOL DICTIONARY OF THE LATIN LANGUAGE. By DR. J. H. KALTSCHMIDT. In two parts, Latin-English and English-Latin.

Part I., Latin-English, of nearly 500 pages, strongly bound, price 90 cents.
Part II., English-Latin, of about 400 pages, price 75 cents.
Or the whole complete in one very thick royal 18mo. volume, of nearly 900 closely printed double-columned pages, strongly bound in leather, price only $1 25.

II.

GRAMMAR OF THE LATIN LANGUAGE. BY LEONHARD SCHMITZ, Ph. D., F. R. S. E., Rector of the High School, Edinburgh, &c. In one handsome volume, royal 18mo., of 318 pages, neatly half bound, price 60 cents.

SCHMITZ AND ZUMPT'S CLASSICAL SERIES—Continued.

III.

ELEMENTARY GRAMMAR AND EXERCISES. By Dr. Leonhard Schmitz, F. R. S. E., Rector of the High School, Edinburgh, &c. In one handsome royal 18mo. volume of 246 pages, extra cloth, price 50 cents. (Just Issued.)

PREPARING FOR SPEEDY PUBLICATION.

LATIN READING AND EXERCISE BOOK, 1 vol., royal 18mo.

A SCHOOL CLASSICAL DICTIONARY, 1 vol., royal 18mo.

It will thus be seen that this series is now very nearly complete, embracing eight prominent Latin authors, and requiring but two more elementary works to render it sufficient in itself for a thorough course of study, and these latter are now preparing for early publication. During the successive appearance of the volumes, the plan and execution of the whole have been received with marked approbation, and the fact that it supplies a want not hitherto provided for, is evinced by the adoption of these works in a very large number of the best academies and seminaries throughout the country.

But we cannot forbear commending especially both to instructors and pupils the whole of the series, edited by those accomplished scholars, Drs. Schmitz and Zumpt. Here will be found a set of text-books that combine the excellencies so long desired in this class of works. They will not cost the student, by one half at least, that which he must expend for some other editions. And who will not say that this is a consideration worthy of attention? For the cheaper our school-books can be made, the more widely will they be circulated and used. Here you will find, too, no useless display of notes and of learning, but in foot notes on each page you have everything necessary to the understanding of the text. The difficult points are sometimes elucidated, and often is the student referred to the places where he can find light, but not without some effort of his own. We think that the punctuation in these books might be improved; but taken as a whole, they come nearer to the wants of the times than any within our knowledge.—*Southern College Review.*

Uniform with SCHMITZ AND ZUMPT'S CLASSICAL SERIES—(Now Ready.)

THE CLASSICAL MANUAL;

AN EPITOME OF ANCIENT GEOGRAPHY, GREEK AND ROMAN MYTHOLOGY, ANTIQUITIES, AND CHRONOLOGY.

CHIEFLY INTENDED FOR THE USE OF SCHOOLS.

BY JAMES S. S. BAIRD, T. C. D.,

Assistant Classical Master, King's School, Gloucester.

In one neat volume, royal 18mo., extra cloth, price Fifty cents.

This little volume has been prepared to meet the recognized want of an Epitome which, within the compass of a single small volume, should contain the information requisite to elucidate the Greek and Roman authors most commonly read in our schools. The aim of the author has been to embody in it such details as are important or necessary for the junior student, in a form and space capable of rendering them easily mastered and retained, and he has consequently not incumbered it with a mass of learning which, though highly valuable to the advanced student, is merely perplexing to the beginner. In the amount of information presented, and the manner in which it is conveyed, as well as its convenient size and exceedingly low price, it is therefore admirably adapted for the younger classes of our numerous classical schools.

SCRIPTURE GEOGRAPHY AND HISTORY.—(Just Ready.)

OUTLINES OF

SCRIPTURE GEOGRAPHY AND HISTORY.

Illustrating the Historical Portions of the Old and New Testaments.

DESIGNED FOR THE

USE OF SCHOOLS AND PRIVATE READING.

BY EDWARD HUGHES, F. R. A. S., F. G. S., &c. &c.

In one neat volume, royal 12mo., extra cloth, of about four hundred pages, with twelve colored Maps.

The intimate connection of Sacred History with the geography and physical features of the various lands occupied by the Israelites renders a work like the present an almost necessary companion to all who desire to read the Scriptures understandingly. To the young especially, a clear and connected narrative of the events recorded in the Bible, is exceedingly desirable, particularly when illustrated, as in the present volume, with succinct but copious accounts of the neighboring nations and of the topography and political divisions of the countries mentioned, coupled with the results of the latest investigations, by which Messrs. Layard, Lynch, Olin, Durbin, Wilson, Stephens, and others have succeeded in throwing light on so many obscure portions of the Scriptures, verifying their accuracy in minute particulars. Few more interesting class-books could therefore be found for schools where the Bible forms a part of education, and none, perhaps, more likely to prove of permanent benefit to the scholar. The influence which the physical geography, climate, and productions of Palestine had upon the Jewish people will be found fully set forth, while the numerous maps present the various regions connected with the subject at their most prominent periods.

HISTORY OF CLASSICAL LITERATURE.—(Now Ready.)

HISTORY OF ROMAN CLASSICAL LITERATURE.

BY R. W. BROWNE, M. A.,

Professor of Classical Literature in King's College, London.

In one handsome crown octavo volume, extra cloth.

ALSO,

Lately Issued, by the same author, to match.

A HISTORY OF GREEK CLASSICAL LITERATURE.

In one very neat volume, crown 8vo., extra cloth.

From Prof. J. A. Spencer, New York, March 19, 1852.

It is an admirable volume, sufficiently full and copious in detail, clear and precise in style, very scholar-like in its execution, genial in its criticism, and altogether displaying a mind well stored with the learning, genius, wisdom, and exquisite taste of the ancient Greeks. It is in advance of everything we have, and it may be considered indispensable to the classical scholar and student.

From Prof. N. H. Griffin, Williams College, Mass., March 22, 1852.

A valuable compend, embracing in a small compass matter which the student would have to go over much ground to gather for himself.

GEOGRAPHIA CLASSICA:

OR, THE APPLICATION OF ANCIENT GEOGRAPHY TO THE CLASSICS. By SAMUEL BUTLER, D D., late Lord Bishop of Litchfield. Revised by his Son. Sixth American, from the last London Edition, with Questions on the Maps, by JOHN FROST, LL. D. In one neat volume, royal 12mo., half bound.

AN ATLAS OF ANCIENT GEOGRAPHY.

By SAMUEL BUTLER, D. D., late Lord Bishop of Litchfield In one octavo volume, half bound, containing twenty-one quarto colored Maps, and an accentuated Index.

ELEMENTS OF THE NATURAL SCIENCES—(Now Ready.)

THE BOOK OF NATURE;

AN ELEMENTARY INTRODUCTION

TO THE SCIENCES OF

PHYSICS, ASTRONOMY, CHEMISTRY, MINERALOGY, GEOLOGY, BOTANY, PHYSIOLOGY, AND ZOOLOGY.

BY FREDERICK SCHOEDLER, PH. D.

Professor of the Natural Sciences at Worms.

First American Edition, with a Glossary and other Additions and Improvements.

FROM THE SECOND ENGLISH EDITION,

TRANSLATED FROM THE SIXTH GERMAN EDITION,

BY HENRY MEDLOCK, F. C. S., &c.

Illustrated by six hundred and seventy-nine Engravings on Wood.

In one handsome volume, crown octavo, of about seven hundred large pages.

To accommodate those who desire to use the separate portions of this work, the publishers have prepared an edition, in parts, as follows, which may be had singly, neatly done up in flexible cloth, at very reasonable prices.

NATURAL PHILOSOPHY, . .	114	pages, with	149 Illustrations.
ASTRONOMY, ...	64	"	51
CHEMISTRY, ...	110	"	48
MINERALOGY AND GEOLOGY,	104	"	167
BOTANY, ...	98	"	176
ZOOLOGY AND PHYSIOLOGY, .	106	"	84
INTRODUCTION, GLOSSARY, INDEX, &c., 96 pages.			

Copies may also be had beautifully done up in fancy cloth, with gilt stamps, suitable for holiday presents and school prizes.

The necessity of some acquaintance with the Natural Sciences is now so universally admitted in all thorough education, while the circle of facts and principles embraced in the study has enlarged so rapidly, that a compendious Manual like the BOOK OF NATURE cannot fail to supply a want frequently felt and expressed by a large and growing class.

The reputation of the present volume in England and Germany, where repeated editions have been rapidly called for, is sufficient proof of the author's success in condensing and popularizing the principles of his numerous subjects. The publishers therefore would merely state that, in reproducing the work, they have spared no pains to render it even better adapted to the American student. It has been passed through the press under the care of a competent editor, who has corrected such errors as had escaped the attention of the English translator, and has made whatever additions appeared necessary to bring it completely on a level with the existing state of science. These will be found principally in the sections on Botany and Geology; especially the latter, in which references have been made to the numerous and systematic Government surveys of the several States, and the whole adapted to the nomenclature and systems generally used in this country. A copious Glossary has been appended, and numerous additional illustrations have been introduced wherever the elucidation of the text appeared to render them desirable.

It is therefore confidently presented as an excellent Manual for the private student, or as a complete and thorough Class-book for collegiate and academical use.

Written with remarkable clearness, and scrupulously correct in its details.—*Mining Journal.*

His expositions are most lucid. There are few who will not follow him with pleasure as well as with profit through his masterly exposition of the principles and primary laws of science. It should certainly be made a class-book in schools.—*Critic.*

NEW AND IMPROVED EDITION—(Now Ready.)

OUTLINES OF ENGLISH LITERATURE.

BY THOMAS B. SHAW,

Professor of English Literature in the Imperial Alexander Lyceum, St. Petersburg.

SECOND AMERICAN EDITION.

WITH A SKETCH OF AMERICAN LITERATURE.

BY HENRY T. TUCKERMAN,

Author of "Characteristics of Literature," "The Optimist," &c.

In one large and handsome volume, royal 12mo., extra cloth, of about 500 pages.

The object of this work is to present to the student a history of the progress of English Literature. To accomplish this, the author has followed its course from the earliest times to the present age, seizing upon the more prominent "Schools of Writing," tracing their causes and effects, and selecting the more celebrated authors as subjects for brief biographical and critical sketches, analyzing their best works, and thus presenting to the student a definite view of the development of the language and literature, with succinct descriptions of those books and men of which no educated person should be ignorant. He has thus not only supplied the acknowledged want of a manual on this subject, but by the liveliness and power of his style, the thorough knowledge he displays of his topic, and the variety of his subjects, he has succeeded in producing a most agreeable reading-book, which will captivate the mind of the scholar, and relieve the monotony of drier studies.

This work having attracted much attention, and been introduced into a large number of our best academies and colleges, the publishers, in answering the call for a new edition, have endeavored to render it still more appropriate for the student of this country, by adding to it a sketch of American literature. This has been prepared by Mr. Tuckerman, on the plan adopted by Mr. Shaw, and the volume is again presented with full confidence that it will be found of great utility as a text-book, wherever this subject forms part of the educational course; or as an introduction to a systematic plan of reading.

From Prof. R. P. Dunn, Brown University, April 22, 1852.

I had already determined to adopt it as the principal book of reference in my department. This is the first term in which it has been used here; but from the trial which I have now made of it, I have every reason to congratulate myself on my selection of it as a text-book.

From the Rev. W. G. T. Shedd, Professor of English Literature in the University of Va.

I take great pleasure in saying that it supplies a want that has long existed of a brief history of English literature, written in the right method and spirit, to serve as an introduction to the critical study of it. I shall recommend the book to my classes.

From James Shannon, President of Bacon College, Ky.

I have read about one-half of "Shaw's Outlines," and so far I am more than pleased with the work. I concur with you fully in the opinion that it supplies a want long felt in our higher educational institutes of a critical history of English literature, occupying a reasonable space, and written in a manner to interest and attract the attention of the student. I sincerely desire that it may obtain, as it deserves, an extensive circulation.

HANDBOOK OF MODERN EUROPEAN LITERATURE.

British, Danish, Dutch, French, German, Hungarian, Italian, Polish and Russian, Portuguese, Spanish, and Swedish. With a full Biographical and Chronological Index. By Mrs. Foster. In one large royal 12mo. volume, extra cloth. Uniform with "Shaw's Outlines of English Literature."

s.)

RE.

burg.

E.

pages.

rogress
course
minent
e more
s, ana-
v of the
f those
as thus
but by
s of his
a most
and re-

a large
the call
for the
. This
aw, and
of great
course;

y depart-
which I
tion of it

y of Va.
f a brief
an intro-

pleased
long felt
ccupying
on of the
culation.

URE.

nd Ras-
cal and
volumes,